

Sui Tomoto  
十本スライ

◆ 山崎 俊悟  
Symgo Sumaki

勇者四人に  
巻き込まれた  
ユニークチート

# 金色の 文字使い



ファンタジア文庫

**Table of Contents**  
**EPUB/PDF generated by**  
**[Lnwnepubs.wordpress.com](http://Lnwnepubs.wordpress.com)**

1.	<i>Translators and Editors that has been involved in this Project</i>
2.	<i>Chapter 1</i>
3.	<i>Chapter 2</i>
4.	<i>Chapter 3</i>
5.	<i>Chapter 4</i>
6.	<i>Chapter 5</i>
7.	<i>Chapter 6</i>
8.	<i>Chapter 7</i>
9.	<i>Chapter 8</i>
10.	<i>Chapter 9</i>
11.	<i>Chapter 10</i>
12.	<i>Chapter 11</i>
13.	<i>Chapter 12</i>
14.	<i>Chapter 13</i>
15.	<i>Chapter 14</i>
16.	<i>Chapter 15</i>
17.	<i>Chapter 16</i>
18.	<i>Chapter 17</i>
19.	<i>Chapter 18</i>
20.	<i>Chapter 19</i>
21.	<i>Chapter 20</i>
22.	<i>Chapter 21</i>
23.	<i>Chapter 22</i>
24.	<i>Chapter 23</i>
25.	<i>Chapter 24</i>
26.	<i>Chapter 25</i>
27.	<i>Chapter 26</i>
28.	<i>Chapter 27</i>
29.	<i>Chapter 28</i>
30.	<i>Chapter 29</i>
31.	<i>Chapter 30</i>
32.	<i>Chapter 31</i>

33.	<i>Chapter 32</i>
34.	<i>Chapter 33</i>
35.	<i>Chapter 34</i>
36.	<i>Chapter 35</i>
37.	<i>Chapter 36</i>
38.	<i>Chapter 37</i>
39.	<i>Chapter 38</i>
40.	<i>Chapter 39</i>
41.	<i>Chapter 40</i>
42.	<i>Chapter 41</i>
43.	<i>Chapter 42</i>
44.	<i>Chapter 43</i>
45.	<i>Chapter 44</i>
46.	<i>Chapter 45</i>
47.	<i>Chapter 46</i>
48.	<i>Chapter 47</i>
49.	<i>Chapter 48</i>
50.	<i>Chapter 49</i>
51.	<i>Chapter 50</i>
52.	<i>Chapter 51</i>
53.	<i>Chapter 52</i>
54.	<i>Chapter 53</i>
55.	<i>Chapter 54</i>
56.	<i>Chapter 55</i>
57.	<i>Chapter 56</i>
58.	<i>Chapter 57</i>
59.	<i>Chapter 58</i>
60.	<i>Chapter 59</i>
61.	<i>Chapter 60</i>
62.	<i>Chapter 61</i>
63.	<i>Chapter 62</i>
64.	<i>Chapter 63</i>
65.	<i>Chapter 64</i>
66.	<i>Chapter 65</i>
67.	<i>Chapter 66</i>
68.	<i>Chapter 67</i>
69.	<i>Chapter 68</i>
70.	<i>Chapter 69</i>
71.	<i>Chapter 70</i>
72.	<i>Chapter 71</i>

73.	<i>Chapter 72</i>
74.	<i>Chapter 73</i>
75.	<i>Chapter 74</i>
76.	<i>Chapter 75</i>
77.	<i>Chapter 76</i>
78.	<i>Chapter 77</i>
79.	<i>Chapter 78</i>
80.	<i>Chapter 79</i>
81.	<i>Chapter 80</i>
82.	<i>Chapter 81</i>
83.	<i>Chapter 82</i>
84.	<i>Chapter 83</i>
85.	<i>Chapter 84</i>
86.	<i>Chapter 85</i>
87.	<i>Chapter 86</i>
88.	<i>Chapter 87</i>
89.	<i>Chapter 88</i>
90.	<i>Chapter 89</i>
91.	<i>Chapter 90</i>
92.	<i>Chapter 91</i>
93.	<i>Chapter 92</i>
94.	<i>Chapter 93</i>
95.	<i>Chapter 94</i>
96.	<i>Chapter 95</i>
97.	<i>Chapter 96</i>
98.	<i>Chapter 97</i>
99.	<i>Chapter 98</i>
100.	<i>Chapter 99</i>
101.	<i>Chapter 100</i>
102.	<i>Chapter 101</i>
103.	<i>Chapter 102</i>
104.	<i>Chapter 103</i>
105.	<i>Chapter 104</i>
106.	<i>Chapter 105</i>
107.	<i>Chapter 106</i>
108.	<i>Chapter 107</i>
109.	<i>Chapter 108</i>
110.	<i>Chapter 109</i>
111.	<i>Chapter 110</i>
112.	<i>Chapter 111</i>



113.	<i>Chapter 112</i>
114.	<i>Chapter 113</i>
115.	<i>Chapter 114</i>
116.	<i>Chapter 115</i>
117.	<i>Chapter 116</i>
118.	<i>Chapter 117</i>
119.	<i>Chapter 118</i>
120.	<i>Chapter 119</i>
121.	<i>Chapter 120</i>
122.	<i>Chapter 121</i>
123.	<i>Chapter 122</i>
124.	<i>Chapter 123</i>
125.	<i>Chapter 124</i>
126.	<i>Chapter 125</i>
127.	<i>Chapter 126</i>
128.	<i>Chapter 127</i>
129.	<i>Chapter 128</i>
130.	<i>Chapter 129</i>
131.	<i>Chapter 130</i>
132.	<i>Chapter 131</i>
133.	<i>Chapter 132</i>
134.	<i>Chapter 133</i>
135.	<i>Chapter 134</i>
136.	<i>Chapter 135</i>
137.	<i>Chapter 136</i>
138.	<i>Chapter 137</i>
139.	<i>Chapter 138</i>
140.	<i>Chapter 139</i>
141.	<i>Chapter 140</i>
142.	<i>Chapter 141</i>
143.	<i>Chapter 142</i>
144.	<i>Chapter 143</i>
145.	<i>Chapter 144</i>
146.	<i>Chapter 145</i>
147.	<i>Chapter 146</i>
148.	<i>Chapter 147</i>
149.	<i>Chapter 148</i>
150.	<i>Chapter 149</i>
151.	<i>Chapter 150</i>
152.	<i>Chapter 151</i>

153.	<i>Chapter 152</i>
154.	<i>Chapter 153</i>
155.	<i>Chapter 154</i>
156.	<i>Chapter 155</i>
157.	<i>Chapter 156</i>
158.	<i>Chapter 157</i>
159.	<i>Chapter 158</i>
160.	<i>Chapter 159</i>
161.	<i>Chapter 160</i>
162.	<i>Chapter 161</i>
163.	<i>Chapter 162</i>
164.	<i>Chapter 163</i>
165.	<i>Chapter 164</i>
166.	<i>Chapter 165</i>
167.	<i>Chapter 166</i>
168.	<i>Chapter 167</i>
169.	<i>Chapter 168</i>
170.	<i>Chapter 169</i>
171.	<i>Chapter 170</i>
172.	<i>Chapter 171</i>
173.	<i>Chapter 172</i>
174.	<i>Chapter 173</i>
175.	<i>Chapter 174</i>
176.	<i>Chapter 175</i>
177.	<i>Chapter 176</i>
178.	<i>Chapter 177</i>
179.	<i>Chapter 178</i>
180.	<i>Chapter 179</i>
181.	<i>Chapter 180</i>
182.	<i>Chapter 181</i>
183.	<i>Chapter 182</i>
184.	<i>Chapter 183</i>
185.	<i>Chapter 184</i>
186.	<i>Chapter 185</i>
187.	<i>Chapter 186</i>
188.	<i>Chapter 187</i>
189.	<i>Chapter 188</i>
190.	<i>Chapter 189</i>
191.	<i>KNWM- CSpecial P1</i>
192.	<i>KNWM- CSpecial P2</i>

193.	<i>Chapter 190</i>
194.	<i>Chapter 191</i>
195.	<i>Chapter 192</i>
196.	<i>Chapter 193</i>
197.	<i>Chapter 194</i>
198.	<i>Chapter 195</i>
199.	<i>Chapter 196</i>
200.	<i>Chapter 197</i>
201.	<i>Chapter 198</i>
202.	<i>KNWM- Nikki looks</i>
203.	<i>Chapter 199</i>
204.	<i>Chapter 200</i>
205.	<i>Chapter 201</i>
206.	<i>Chapter 202</i>
207.	<i>Chapter 203</i>
208.	<i>Chapter 204</i>
209.	<i>Chapter 205</i>
210.	<i>Chapter 206</i>
211.	<i>Chapter 207</i>
212.	<i>Chapter 208</i>
213.	<i>Chapter 209</i>
214.	<i>Chapter 210</i>

# Translators and Editors that has been involved in this Project

Unlimited Novel Failures

Yoraikun, Tired, Tenshiroe, NightRacoon, NetBlazer, CAPSUSINGSHIFT, XCrossJ

Dalmenuis, NetBlazer, Yoraikun, XCrossJ, ELYSION, CAPSUSINGSHIFT, Loliquent, Pummels, InsigniaPierce

Loliquent, InsigniaPierce, Kiriko, CAPSUSINGSHIFT, Pummels, XCrossJ, NetBlazer, Yoraikun, EnTruce, LoliQ, Chuck, Chuckoy

Kiriko, Yoraikun, EnTruce, Chuckoy, NetBlazer, Anri, Noob, RIP Translations

Noob, BlazingTranslations, RIP Translations, DekinaiDiary Translators

Arsl31 (Current Translator)

# Arc 1: The Wanderer with the Unique Cheat

## Chapter 01: Dragged into another World

Okamura Hiroyuki calmly analyzed the scene in front of his eyes. There stood people he had never seen before.

Furthermore, the several men were dressed like priests as one would hardly come across in Japan and amongst them was one girl, wearing a pink dress, too.

He checked out the surroundings by looking around. The building was an atrium, so he could see outside well even while sitting.

But since he could see a mountain range in the distance and not just the ground, he concluded that he was up fairly high.

The building was a tower or alike. The ceiling was supported by various pillars and had unfamiliar and strange drawings on it. It were mysterious drawings like the Egyptian mural art.

What he recognized were the four people near him, wearing the same high school uniform.

They were his classmates, but he had never talked to them. So, why was he here together with them?

A magic circle like from a game was drawn on the ground to his feet.

Obviously foreign people, an unfamiliar scenery and a magic circle.

He could more or less guess what had happened from the current situation. And the girl in dress confirmed it with her words.

“I, I welcome you, Heroes!”

Yeah, this was a so called different world.

Up until now he had been at school. Skipping classes by sleeping the whole time on the rooftop, he had went back to the classroom to fetch his bag after school. There he found these four people here.

Like always, he had headed for his desk without so much as looking at them. They had frowned a bit upon see him, but he had ignored them as he didn't care.

But then a bright light had suddenly gushed out from under his feet. All five present, Hiroyuki included, had frozen up on the spot from the all too sudden surprise.

Everything had turned snow-white in front of him and in the next moment, he found himself in the current situation.

The priests cheered merrily. Frolicking with "Yes!" and "It's a success!", they ignored the five of them, who were confused from the sudden happening.

However, they all looked rather exhausted and they were sweating as if they had just run a marathon.

On the other hand, the girl had long orange hair till her waist, which made her unthinkable as a Japanese. She was overall pretty, had big eyes and adorable facial features.

She was without a doubt an eye-catching beauty.

Same as the men, the girl showed a broad smile. Most likely the five of them were summoned unquestioning.

He should never have imagined it possible that he would experience something like that. Although Hiroyuki had been rather composed so far, a part of him still refused to believe it even now.

The others seemed to feel the same from being summoned as their faces showed that they couldn't keep up with what was happening to them. Then one of them finally spoke.

"H- Heroes? What do you mean?"

The guy named Aoyama Taishi had bleached hair, but an earnest



expression and gentle aura.

To add, he was tall and handsome, so he was overwhelming popular with the girls in class.

The girl lowered her head flustered on Taishi's question.

“Ah, my apologies! His Majesty personally will explain this matter to you! So please follow me!”

She looked apologetic as she said that. On a closer look, she appeared rather pale. It was hard to tell from her smile earlier, but like the men, she was sweating on the face as well, probably exhausted from the summoning.

Taishi seemed to notice her condition as well and likely thought it would be better to listen to her for now instead of staying here longer, since it would probably allow the girl to get some rest then.

Taishi exchanged looks with the everyone except Hiroyuki and nodded affirming.

“Okay. I've a rough idea of what happened, but we'll listen to what you have to say.”

Seemingly the other four also kind of understood their situation.

Like that, the five of them headed to King in the <<Throne Room>> with the girl's guidance. Hiroyuki didn't neglect to observe the area on the way.

Judging by the colour of the hair and eyes of the servants and the soldiers, stationed here and there, he once more concluded that this wasn't Japan.

The building they had been in was indeed a tower and stood in the middle of a big castle.

“Ohh, I appreciate your coming, Heroes.”

The man sitting on the throne said that with a refreshing smile. No need to tell him that they didn't come of their own will.

“I am sure you must be confused from the abrupt circumstances. But rest assured, I will properly explain it now.”

After saying that, he first started with a self-introduction.

The kingdom's name was «Victorias» and the king unified the 'Humas' of «Edea», of this world here. The continent was partitioned and each race had its own country.

The so called 'Gabranth' were a race that had animal traits like a 'Werewolf' or 'Werecoat' and lived in «Pasion», the country of beasts.

Likewise, the 'Evila', commonly known as demi-humans, were a race of 'Demons' and 'Ghosts' and lived in «Xaoc», the country of demons.

Lastly, the 'Pheom' were a race consisting of 'Faeries' and 'Spirits', but they didn't have a country on their own. They lived in a small settlement as there were extremely few of them. Hardly anyone had seen them, since they don't interact with other races.

And in front of them sat Rudolph van Strauss Arcliam, the unity king of «Victorias».

Next to him sat the queen Māris and the girl, who guided them here, was the first princess Lilith.

'Humas', 'Gabranth' and 'Evila'. Between these three races currently existed a tension like never before.

Particularly the Demon Lord of «Xaoc» plotted to destroy the 'Humas' and 'Gabranth'.

He seemed to think that only his race was suited to rule over a united «Edea» with their superior strength. So he tried to make a world solely for the 'Evila' by eliminating the 'Humas' and 'Gabranth'.

The 'Evila' indeed had an enormous magic power and possessed an all too brutal battle strength.

Magic existed in this world and needless to say, the stronger the magic power, the stronger the magic. The 'Humas' had magic powers as well, but it was relatively low.

Of course magic wasn't everything in a battle, but the magic used by the 'Evila' was quite powerful and a human had close to no hopes of defeating even a lower demon by himself.

Even a high ranked adventurer from the adventure guild had to form a team to fight against the 'Evila'.

The king feared that they would be destroyed sooner or later at this rate and considered destroying the 'Evila' before that. On that occasion, they used summoning magic, which had been sealed as an old magic.

But it was sealed for a reason. It showed that the summoning magic wasn't omnipotent.

The summoning magic consumed a lot of magic power and if used by someone untalented, it ran the risk of <<rebounding>> and making the used magic power go out of control.

Essentially, the summoning magic could only be used by the royal family, but it didn't mean that anyone could use it as long as they were royalty. Failed attempts always resulted in a mental breakdown from being exposed to such enormous magic power, or sometimes even in death.

It wasn't a simple summoning magic. It was a heretic magic that opened a path to another world and thus carried an adequate risk.

So King Rudolph had an idea. He had a couple of daughters and let them use the summoning magic.

At this rate, 'Humas' would be exterminated. To avoid that, it was necessary to summon Heroes from another world at all costs. An old book told the tales of Heroes being summoned in the past and saving 'Humas' from a terrible calamity.

Heroes possessed an incredible magic power and could utilize physical abilities and magic unthinkable for 'Humas'. Learning of

this, Rudolph hardened his heart and asked his daughters. But the fourth and third princesses both failed and lost their lives from the <<rebound>>.

(He sacrificed his own daughters...?)

Listening to the King's explanation, Hiroyuki scowled on his insanity. But speaking up here would make complicate matters, so he kept his mouth shut.

The Queen lamented the death of her daughters one after another, but she herself had married into the royal family and was an outsider, so she didn't have the pure royal blood and couldn't use the summoning magic. The second princess was next in line..

She managed to avoid death, but was bedridden and still unconscious at this point. That left Lilith and Rudolph as the only ones, who could use the summoning magic. As they couldn't afford any more failures, he decided to do it himself.

However, everyone was against that. Precisely the losing of the King, the buttress of the country, was what could lead to the immediate demise of the 'Humas' by the 'Evila'.

Lilith understood that and offered herself for the country. She was scared, very scared, but at this rate everything would vanish. If she was going to get killed anyway, she would rather choose the moment by her own will. She conducted the summoning ceremony with these feelings.

The ceremony was held with the priests' and Lilith' magic power as a medium. Lilith felt her consciousness fading during the ceremony and when she gave up, thinking that she was no-good either, the magic circle released an obscure light.

And then the five people appeared.

"I see. So you brought us here to protect the 'Humas' from 'Evila'."

Aoyama Taishi nodded a few times while listening to the explanation.

“Yes. According to the documents, there are four Heroes in total. Mh? Speaking of, I just noticed, there’s... five of you.”

Exactly. Five people were summoned this time. The king looked questioning at the nearby scholar. The scholar adjusted his glasses flustered.

“I, I have no clue! But I guess, all of them are Heroes...?”

“Mhm... Then we just have to find out. All of you, show me your abilities.”

Rudolph said that, but Hihiro and the others tilted their heads puzzled.

“Mh? What is the matter? Do not tell me you are unable to show me your abilities?”

Taishi answered as their representative with “Indeed”.

“Recite <<Status>> in your mind.”

Everyone did as told. Of course Taishi recited as well. Upon that a status screen like from a game appeared in front of him.

-----

Hihiro Okamura

LVL 1

HP 24/24

MP 120/120

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 13

DEF 8

AGL 27

HIT 11

INT 23

«Magic Attribute» None

«Magic» Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked)

«Titles» Innocent Bystander – World Traveller – Word Master

-----



## Chapter 02: Classmates

A few questions arose. He realized that his level was one. If this was a RPG-like world, this was only natural, since he hadn't fought with anyone yet.

But why was his MP (magic power) so high? It must be the benefit of being a world traveller, who had high magic power as he was informed just now.

By the way, HP referred to endurance, MP was magic power, EXP experience and NEXT indicated the necessary experience points for the next level. ATK, DEF, AGL, HIT and INT respectively symbolized attack strength, defence, agility, hit chance and intelligence. These were expressions often used in games.

He was surprised at his unexpectedly high AGL, but what he was most surprised about was this:

«Innocent Bystander»

It perfectly showed that he was just dragged along with the four Heroes. In other words, he himself wasn't a Hero, but just an ordinary person. Although he was concerned about his magic too, he rather pondered how to explain this situation.

While he was in thought, Rudolph asked them.

“How is it? When you look at the title, it should display Hero.”

Taishi was the first to answer.

“Y- Yes, it does! It says Hero here! Uwah~ Awesome, I'm really a Hero.”

He uttered with a somewhat excited voice.

“Hey, what about you, Chika?”

The one answering Taishi's question was Suzumiya Chika. She was

a talkative and popular girl in class. Her open and direct attitude in dealing with people gained her their goodwill.

Her short hair was bleached like Taishi's, albeit paler. Her breasts were somewhat lacking, but her slender figure as a sport ace was quite attractive.

"Yeah, I have it too, Taishi."

"Good. And you, Shuri, Shinobu?"

He called out to the other two girls. Minamoto Shuri had pretty, glossy and long black hair.

Unlike Chika, she had a voluptuous body that attracted boys. She belonged to the tea club and the boys sometimes came by to ogle her in her kimono. Her charming points also included the kind of drooping eyes and the mole under her eye.

The other girl, Akamori Shinobu was brimming with curiosity. Active in the newspaper club, she also planned to find employment in that field in the future. She was talkative as well and smart on top, so everyone often asked her for tips on the exams.

Her slightly wavy, black hair hang over her shoulders. From her cattish eyes, you could feel the strong resolution of never letting go of her prey. Moreover, she came from Kansai.

As for what these three girls had in common: They were all eye-catching beauties. And as members of Taishi's harem, they were always around him.

Shuri and Shinobu seemed to have the Hero title too. And as a matter of course, the gazes faced Hiroyuki next.

"What about you?"

"...Nope."

He answered with a single word. Upon that, the others made a ruckus.

“Then... can you tell us what kind of title you have?”

It annoyed him how he was talked down to, but answered honestly nevertheless. But only one of them.

“«Innocent Bystander»...”

Now his four classmates changed their attitude on these words. They frowned and left their mouths gaping open in disbelief.

“«Innocent Bystander»...? Lilith, do you know what that means?”

“Eh, uhm... Yes. Most likely...”

Lilith looked downward, hesitant to answer. Hiiro sighed while looking at her. Then he answered in her stead.

“I’m just an ordinary person. I just happened to be in the classroom back then and got mixed up with these guys. Right?”

“Uh- Uhm...”

“Hey, wait! Okamura! What’s with that tone!”

Chika said by pointing at me. But he completely ignored that and continued.

“Originally four people should’ve been summoned here. And that’s these four here. I’m an irregular so to speak. What’re you going to do about it?”

He merely stated it indifferently without any hostility or animosity. And yet, Lilith turned pale as she was the one who summoned them.

“Well, it’s not just about me. These guys were brought here at your conveniences too. I’m sure our families are worried about us.”

Lilith’s expression became more and more heartbroken.

“You are right. I can only ask for your pardon on this matter.”

The king offered his apology like that. Hiiro thought he would

make excuses, but the king was unexpectedly aware of the significance of their actions.

“We were left with no other choice.”

“No, to be honest, I don’t care about your circumstances.”

“Huh?”

Time stopped for everyone upon Hiiro’s words.

“I have no connections whatsoever to these four.”

“Hey, Okamura! Aren’t we classmates!”

Taishi yelled enraged.

“Yeah, we’re classmates. But we’re merely studying together in the same room by the school’s decision.”

“Th- That’s going too far...”

“Yes, after we finally got together~”

Shuri and Shinobu stated their opinions too.

“So you say, but I haven’t spoken a single word with you in the four months, since we’re in the same class.”

It was a fact. Hiiro basically liked being alone, so he kept his distance from everyone, not just these four. Sleep, eat and read. That was Hiiro’s custom.

The other four fell silent from his words. Like he had said, they hadn’t talked to each other, even though they were classmates. It was also a fact that they never tried to speak to him on their own accord, even if he was hard to approach.

“Okay, as I said just now, I’ve no connection to these four. You guys want the four Heroes, right? Then I seem useless?”

“Mh- Mhm...”

Rudolph groaned with a difficult expression. He was perplexed about what to do.

“Since they’re Heroes, they can fight the ‘Evila’ in some way, right? But I’m a no-name. You wouldn’t send me out to fight these dangerous guys too, would you?”

“...Then let me ask you: What do you want to do?”

“Go home?”

“Th- The documents speak of the Demon Lord knowing a magic to send you home.”

Rudolph’s word resounded through the throne room and Lilith’s expression turned gloomy at once. Seeing that, Hiiro quietly shut his eyes.

“S- So we just have to defeat the Demon Lord quickly!”

What an idiot, Hiiro thought. Even if the Demon Lord knew such magic, why would you defeat him? Hiiro was disgusted at Taishi’s thoughtless statement.

“In- Indeed. Besides, our country is wonderful, so you will surely come to like it. You are all basically part of my family now.”

Seeing Rudolph desperately trying to persuade him, Hiiro shrugged his shoulders.

“Ah, if I may add, I’m worried about my family.”

The others felt worried as well, not just Chika.

“Th- There is no need to worry about that. Right?”

A nearby scholar was addressed.

“Ah, y- yes! As a matter of fact, you all have been forgotten now!”

“F- Forgotten, you say!?”

It was quite a shocking statement.

“Ah, please rest assured. There are forces at work to keep things coherent in your world. Once you return, it will be changed back... yes.”

(That’s... a lie.)

Hihiro definitely felt that from their attitude.

(Everything they said is surely a lie. Likely just a made-up reason to somehow convince us. A return magic, in other words a method to send us back... doesn’t exist. At least not right now. And I’m dubious about the forgotten part too...)

He looked at the other four to see if one of them had realized that. Taishi hadn’t noticed at all. Same for Chika. Only Shuri and Shinobu were frowning on this story.

(Well, I don’t care about them. As for myself... I can make do anywhere.)

Okamura Hihiro grew up in an orphanage. His parents didn’t leave him, they died in an accident when he was still young.

Then he was handed over to an orphanage. He made some friends there, but more than that, he loved books, so he read nothing but books all day. The books were more a friend to him than humans.

Of course he still had other relatives, but he had no real reason to return to his world. So it wasn’t really troubling for him when there was no way to return.

Lilith, knowing that there was no way to return, had clouded her expression for a while now. She might feel guilty about the lie.

Taishi and the girls started to talk about what to do from now on after understanding that as of now there existed no way for returning from Rudolph’s explanation.

“Like Okamura said, you selfishly called us here. I think that’s really rich of you.”

Being told so by Taishi as well, Rudolph looked sullen.



“But...”

While saying so, Taishi looked at the three girls. They all snickered and he looked at the king again.

“We’ll do it!”

“Really, you will?”

Rudolph raised a voice.

“Yes, we always wanted to travel in such a world.”

“Yeah! We four are playing an online game together too!”

As Chika had said, the four of them had played an online RPG game in their world. They often met up and discussed about where to venture, just like they did after school before this.

Right before they were summoned here, they were just talking about their desire to venture a world like this.

“Th- Then you will accept!”

“Yes, but in exchange...”

Shinobu spoke after the king.

“From what I can see in the <<Status>>, we still seem to be level 1. In other words, beginners.”

“Y- Yes, that is correct.”

“We can’t fight the Demon Lord like this. So... I want you to teach us in fighting.”

“Do not worry about that. For that matter...”

At that time, a person clad in armour showed up.

“I will take over here, Heroes.”

He kneeled down and lowered his head while he said that.

“My name is Vale Kimble. I was entrusted with the duty to teach you in fighting.”

“Incidentally, he is the captain of the second division of our army.”

He was a handsome guy with a noble face. Just by looking at his body, you could tell how well trained he was. His hair was green and short, whereas his eyes emitted a great willpower.

Naturally the gazes of the females focused on him. Only Chika looked at him inexpressively, as she had no interest.

“In other words, that hunk is going to train us?”

“Yes. Right now, matters have quieted down at the borders. I want you to grow stronger before it becomes turbulent again.”

“Ah, where’ll we be living?”

“We have prepared rooms for you here in the castle. Lilith will show you around later.”

The discussion proceeded and Takashi and the others seemed to have resolved to fight. At this point, Hihiro raised his hand.

“Sorry, but I’m going to act on my own.”

Time stopped again for everyone on these words.

“You see, I’ve no obligation, nor reason to fight for this country. Neither am I a hero like you guys. So there’s no point in staying here any longer.”

“Mhm... But”

“Sorry, I’m not as sensible as these four. Well, since I’m already here, I just want to do as I want. You won’t mind, will you?”

Rudolph looked worried. Hihiro was indeed no Hero, but just an ordinary person. He didn’t look all that strong either. Black hair, dark pupils and around 1,80m tall, but not really muscular.

His only charming point were his glasses. In terms of looks, he was inferior to Taishi.

With an appearance like that, it was unthinkable that he could fight. But it was a fact that they summoned him. Throwing him out without doing anything for him would be unreasonable.

“Mh- Mhm, I am feeling really sorry about your case. Is there anything I can do...”

“Nothing.”

“N- Nothing, you say?”

“Yeah. And it’s not like I resent you. This world should’ve some novel books, so it seems quite interesting.”

Hihiro was a guy as well. Of course he admired adventures. It didn’t need to be a great adventure like for the protagonists of his books, but he certainly wanted to travel this world.

“I’ve no more business here. See ya.”

Saying that, he was about to leave, but Taishi grabbed his arm.

“Hey! Acting all apathetic, do still call yourself a man?”

“Huuh?”

Hihiro made an annoyed utterance.

“They’re lowering their heads here! Don’t you feel like helping them out even a bit?”

“Nope.”

“Why!”

“Because I’m no Hero. Or what, do you want to use me as a bullet trap?”

“Wha... Bullet trap...?”

Taishi let go of his arm.

“Forget about this guy, Taishi.”

Chika said with a sharp look.

“Don’t you two agree?”

“Ehm... I’m...”

Shuri cast her look down bewildered. Shinobu stared at Hiiro, then snickered.

“Ahaha, sure, why not. I mean, this looks like a game, but it’s still reality. In other words, we’re putting our lives on the line here. We’re Heroes, so we’ll get stronger, but it’s different for Okamuracchi. He’s just a normal guy. So try putting yourself in his shoes.”

Shinobu’s words shut up the other three. Because she made a sound argument. This wasn’t a game. As a matter of fact, people died in the attempt to summon them. They were this serious about it.

“R- Right. Let’s just do it ourselves.”

Taishi consented. Hiiro gave them a glance and tried to leave. At that time,

“Uh- Uhm!”

The voice belonged to Lilith. Hiiro stopped and looked over his shoulder.

“Uhm... I, I am sorry!”

She looked at him worried. Hiiro said as he turned his head back.

“Don’t sweat it.”

Then he left the place for sure.

## Chapter 03: Magic and Magic Power

Hiiro left the castle and got out onto the streets, mulling over what to do next.

(Now then, gathering information first is a must in RPG)

Technically he could have asked the king and such, but there was a risk of getting dragged into something unforeseen and becoming unable to leave the country when he stayed there any longer.

Therefore he left the place as fast as possible. Besides, there were four very capable people. He had concluded that he wasn't needed.

(First of all, what's with this «Word Magic» in the magic column in my «Status»...? I kinda get that it's unattributed.)

Accessing his knowledge from games and books, he also remembered the term Guild when thinking about magic. The king had told him that a Guild existed in this world.

Hiiro decided to ask the townspeople about the location of the Guild. By doing so, he came to know that it was close by.

He headed there to register as an adventure for now. Living and travelling here wasn't free. Somehow or another he had to save up money.

By the way, the money of this world could be stored on a Guild Card. Likewise it was possible to pay with the card. That's what the townspeople taught him.

When he arrived at the Guild, the interior was rather crowded. Sturdy guys, likely adventures, lined up in front of various counters. The nearest counter had a sign above it with register application written on it.

As his black hair and dark eyes were unusual, Hiiro became the center of attention as soon as he entered. Naturally, since he was dressed in an unfamiliar school uniform. He reminded himself to

buy some gear later on.

He went to the counter, assuming indifferent to all the gazes on him.

“Hey, I want to register.”

When he bluntly said that, the woman at the counter explained with a business smile.

Various quests were filed to the Guild. An adventure earned a reward by carrying out these requests. The quests were classified into levels of difficulty from F, E, D, C, B, A, S, SS till SSS.

A Guild Card was handed out upon registering, but it served the same purpose as the Citizen Card that all citizens had. An ID so to speak.

The adventurers were ranked into the same categories as the quests as well. Although there were very few adventures with a rank S or above. Particularly the SSS rank had only three adventures from the ‘Humas’.

The woman at the counter gave him a white card and told him to drip his blood onto it. He pricked his finger with the small needle he received. After dripping the blood on it, the card started to disperse and vanished.

“Huh? It’s gone?”

“Please recite <<Guild Card>> in your mind.”

When he did as he was told, the card appeared in his hand. But the card was different than before. It had been completely white, but now it had a blue border.

“The colour represents your rank. From the lowest blue to violet, green, yellow, orange, pink, red, silver, golden and finally black.”

Hiroyuki listened to the explanations with nods. Looking at his new Guild Card, he confirmed the inscription.

-----  
Name: Hiiro Okamura

Sex: Male

Age: 17

From: Unknown

Rank: F

Quest:

Equipment:

-Weapon:

-Guard:

-Accessory:

Rigin: 0  
-----

He was glad that the FROM column listed his birthplace as unknown. If there had been written that he was from another world, it would have been troublesome to explain. Equipment meant his gear. It was subdivided into Weapon, Guard and Accessory. But he asked about the one thing that bothered him more.

“Hey, what’s this Rigin stuff on the card...?”

“Mh? That is the currency...”

The woman tilted her head baffled. Naturally the people of this world knew that Rigin was the currency. But just as natural, Hiiro didn’t know that as he was only summoned here a while ago.

On further inquiring, he learned that Rigin nearly had the same value as Japan’s yen and that the sixth column Quest displayed his

currently active quests.

(Quite a handy card)

With just one single card he could trade and identify himself. Moreover, the card was usually within him and could be taken out at any time.

“Where can I take quests?”

“Please choose from the bulletin board over there. But remember that you are a rank F. You can only accept quests up to one rank above yours, meaning E.”

“I see. How do I raise my rank?”

“When carrying out quests and raising in levels, your rank will go up naturally.”

“In short, after I completed a number of quests, this blue border will turn... uhm, what was it again?”

“Violet.”

“Then it’ll turn violet?”

“Yes.”

Hihiro was awestruck at the serviceableness of the card.

“Better not waste any time.”

Saying that, he headed for the bulletin board.

-----

Church Roof Repair F

Help repairing the roof of the Amaruq Church. Experience preferred.

Reward: 10000 Rigin



-----  
Lucky Herb Harvest F

Collect Lucky Herbs on the Asbit Plateau.

Reward: 300 Rigin per bundle

-----

Goblin Hunt E

Kill 10 goblins in the Clair Forest.

Reward: 35000 Rigin

-----

There were various other quests, but he chose “Lucky Herb Harvest” without hesitation. To be honest, he was uneasy about hunting quest, since he was still level one. Although even a beginner should be able to hunt goblins.

But he decided to only go for hunting quests after he went up a few levels and got used to fighting.

“I understand. But please be careful about the 10000 Rigin penalty fare in case you cancel a quest midway.”

He accepted the quest by bringing the quest note to the counter. Since there was a penalty fee, he had to avoid cancelling a quest by all means. At least for now, when he didn’t got any money.

First he asked where the “Asbit Plateau” was. Luckily for him, it was right outside this land. And he was shown a picture of the “Lucky Herb” in a reference book to know what they looked like.

(I would like to read that reference book)

As he loved books, Hihiro’s thirst for knowledge awoke. He seriously considered to hole himself up in a library for a while after he saved up some money.

After seeing the picture of the plan, he got a big bag and left the Guild. The bag surely was meant for his harvest.

On his way out of town, he remembered the <<Status>> again. The <<Word Magic>> from it weighted on his mind.

And even if he had high magic power, it was a waste of talent when he didn't know how to use it. He needed to learn how to use magic as soon as possible.

He regretted a bit that he didn't ask about it at the counter. Magic was nothing unusual in this world. About anyone could use it and had magic power to a greater or lesser extent.

Speaking of, he could just someone around here. Hihiro stopped and looked to his right. There sat a person on a chair in front of a crystal ball on a desk.

(...A fortune-teller?)

The person wore a black robe and a hood hid the face, but it certainly seemed like a fortune-teller.

"Oh my? How about it, Sir?"

From the voice he concluded that it was quite an old woman.

"Nah, I don't have any money."

"Oh, is that so. But you look like you want to ask something."

"..."

"Are you not from here? I have never seen you before."

"Your point?"

He looked at her a bit suspicious.

"Fuehehe, don't look so grim. How about I tell you a bit about your fortune in commemoration of coming here?"

"Not interested."

“Fuehehe, don’t say that. Take a seat.”

Since he wasn’t really in a hurry, he sat down on the chair in front of the desk like he was told.

“Fuehehe. Then let me begin.”

She put her hands on the crystal ball and concentrated. Hiroyuki silently watched over her with crossed arms. It didn’t escape him that she suddenly narrowed her eyes.

“...Oho, you have a strange star fortune.”

“Strange?”

“Fuehehe, everyone has a star in their heart. Each has its own shape, colour, size and radiance. My divination allows me to see them. And while I have seen many up till now, I have never seen such a powerful star like yours before.”

“Mhm~”

“It’s powerful and to shut out a burning red, a dark blue rules over its surroundings. The shape is an immaculate sphere without a single corner and it shines so bright that it opens the eyes of anyone who looks at it. I see... This country aside, you are not even from this world.”

He stood up at once with a clattering of the chair. How did this fortune-teller know this? Hiroyuki felt doubtful.

(Can fortune-telling do this? No, maybe it’s... magic?)

Thinking that, he glared at her with a sharp look. He didn’t care that she know, but he got wary on reflex.

“...Sit down. I’m not going to spread it. And while people from other worlds are indeed rare, it’s not my first time meeting you.”

“...You met one before?”

“Yes, just once when I was still young. The person back then had a

strange star as well.”

“...I see. So, what’s the deal?”

“Fuehehe, you will get, no, you already have the wings of freedom. These wings will grow wide and warm in all aspects.”

He didn’t get what she was talking about, but it didn’t seem to be anything ill.

“Many will likely gather at the light you are in pursue for these wings.”

“Geh, that’s bad. I prefer to be alone.”

“Fuehehe, well, it’s nothing but one possible future. By hearing this today, this future became more likely for you. That’s all.”

“Mhm~ I don’t get it. I’ll just do what I want.”

“Fuehehe, do that. Incidentally, didn’t you want to ask something?”

“Yeah. Like you said, I come from another world. There’s no magic in my world, so I can’t really grasp the magic here, nor do I know how to use it. I’ve to learn it as fast as possible...”

“Oho, I understand. A world without magic, interesting.”

There Hiiro suddenly realized and looked at the old woman.

“Hey, could you teach me how to use magic?”

“I don’t mind.”

He had thought she would turn him down, but apparently she accepted.

“Do you know where magic power comes from?”

“Nope.”

That’s why I’m asking, was what he stifled to say.

“Maybe the heart or brain?”

“No, no. The magic power comes from the blood.”

“Blood?”

“Yes, every living organism has blood. That is the source for magic.”

“Oh.”

“That’s why you focus on the flow of your blood in your veins, when concentrating magic power.”

“The flow of blood?”

“Yes, look closely.”

Saying so, the old woman showed him his hand. Something like blue smoke gushed forth from her palm. It gradually assumed shape until it was a sphere in her hand.

“That’s magic power.”

“Wow. So it’s something this visible?”

“Well, it takes a lot of training to make it visible like this. I focused on the flow and imagined it gathering in my hand.”

“Imagine, huh.”

“Magic is the power to imagine. And also the power of flow. A flow of magic power is currently circulating inside this sphere like blood.”

“Sounds a bit complicated, but I get the gist of it. Anyway, it wouldn’t be wrong to say blood flow = magic power, right?”

“Indeed.”

“And to utilize the magic power, I imagine the blood flowing through my entire body. Going by that...”

While saying so, he imagined the flow of blood only going to his index finger. Upon that, his fingertip glowed pale and became a little bit warm.

“So you can even do stuff like that. I see, so this is magic.”

The old woman in front of him had her mouth gaping open in surprise.

“Oh, what a surprise! You said it’s your first time using magic, right?”

“Mh? Yeah.”

“Nevertheless, you can control it already. You must have an incredible imagination.”

“Well, I AM a bookworm, so I’m confident in my imagination.”

Books consisted only of words and one had to imagine the written text in one’s head. To visualize the place, person and action in one’s mind from the narrative needed imagination.

Hihiro had buried himself in books since he was small, so his imagination was well trained. Or rather, it was his only strong point he felt confident about. When he stopped imagining, the light and warmth disappeared from his finger tip.

“Thank you. Now I get what magic power is.”

“Glad to hear.”

“One more thing, do I just chant a spell while I focus on the flow of magic power like just now when I want to use magic?”

“Quite so. Look. <Fire Ball>”

The old woman held up her index finger and chanted, then a fire ball with the size of a tennis ball appeared.

“Ohhhhhhhh”

Hihiro raised an excited voice in admiration. His interest in magic was piqued by using it for the first time.

“I kept it small now, but it can become bigger depending on your imagination and magic power.”

“I see. But I don’t think I can use <<Fire Ball>>.”

“Mh? Is your attribute different?”

“Yeah, it’s unattributed.”

“...Now that’s a rare attribute. Those unattributed are unique magic users without fail. Could it be you...”

“Wait a sec. Unique? You mean a special magic just for oneself?”

“Yes.”

According to the old woman, there were eight attributes to magic: Fire, Water, Earth, Wind, Lightning, Ice, Light and Darkness. Unattributed meant having none of these attributes. In other words, someone unattributed could not cast magic of other attributes.

In exchange, one had a magic only usable to oneself, also called unique magic.

“By the way, unique magic is precious even in this world. Actually, not many can actually control it.”

“What do you mean?”

“Unique magic is always powerful. And I heard it’s difficult to control. And most people die from <<rebound>> as their own magic power explodes.”

That story sent a shiver down Hihiro’s spine. He never thought unique magic would be that dangerous.

“Control is important, but knowledge even more so.”

“Knowledge?”

“Yes, because one ends up with a «rebound», since he does not fully understand what his own magic actually is. Knowledge of magic power, of magic and of oneself. When all these are mastered, one will be a first-class magic user.”

“I see. Thank you for telling me all this.”

“The pleasure is all mine. It’s been a while since I enjoyed a light like yours.”

He still couldn’t see the old woman’s face, but she must have been smiling as she raised her voice.

“I am always here, so drop by if you need something. Though I will charge you next time of course.”

“So shrewd.”

Then he parted with the old woman and headed for the town gate.



## Chapter 04: Word Magic

(I think the “Asbit Plateau” is due east of here)

Hihiro started walking towards the plateau while remembering the picture of the “Lucky Herb” he was shown. After walking for a while, he found it rather easy. It looked exactly like on the picture.

It had a small, white bud at its head and was growing all around.

(Even a kid could do this quest)

It was close to the town and could be collected easily as it grew in large quantities. An easy task, even for a beginner.

(No one’s around here)

Looking around, he noticed that no one besides him was here. Then he recited «Status» and looked at the column where «Word Magic» was written, lightly touching it with his finger. Upon that, the panel changed and showed an explanation about the «Word Magic».

(So the help shows up after all when I click it. This really is like a game)

Hihiro didn’t just wanted to read the help. He wanted to try the magic here.

If possible, he would like to avoid showing off his unique magic, because he feared that he would get dragged back to the king if he stood out, after he finally obtained freedom.

(Well, it depends on the magic anyway)

If all unique magic were indeed powerful, it was quite possible that his fear came true. Besides, it was necessary to understand the magic to grasp his self, like the old woman had told him earlier.

But he didn’t intend to be reckless, since there was the so-called

«rebound». Hiirō just wanted to find out what his magic was, not to die here already.

«Word Magic» MP cost: 30

Imagine the magic power gathering in your finger and draw a word. An effect in accordance with the meaning of the word is brought forth. It is a unique magic with the phenomenal power to apprehend and contort the underlying principles. «Single Chain unlocked» refers to the possible chain length of words. This magic was once ?%&GR!&\*

For some reason the last part was corrupted and unreadable. He was quite bothered about it, but he somehow understood this magic. Still, he wouldn't know if he was right unless he actually tried out the magic.

(So it's called Word Magic. Let's try it for now)

With that in mind, he took a deep breath and concentrated magic power in his fingertip in the same way as in front of the old woman. Before it took him a little while, but on his second try, his finger lighted up with magic power rather smoothly.

(A word, huh... Will anything do? But since it's manifesting the word...)

He drew on the ground with his finger. Upon that, the pattern glowed in a pale light. He had written the kanji for “hard” while imagining the ground hardening. It was easier to imagine with kanji.

And the moment he recited «Activate» in his mind, the magic power from the word flowed into the ground while making sizzling sounds like on an electric discharge.

(Did that do it...?)

He knocked onto the ground. It was hard. Incredible hard. Pretty much like concrete. Until a moment ago, it had been loose dirt without a doubt.

He went around, checking the range of effect.

Clonk, Clonk, Clonk...Splat.

The ground was hardened in an area roughly  $6.5\text{m}^2$  wide.

The glowing word dispersed and vanished too. It was quite convenient that it left no traces behind, because it lowered the likelihood of his magic getting exposed. Then he reverted it with the kanji for “Origin”.

The electrical discharge happened again and the ground returned to how it had been before.

(This is... more overpowered than I thought)

Hiirou realized the incredible potential of his own magic. A magic to apprehend and contort the underlying principles. It meant affecting anything with a single word.

For example, if he gave the “lucky herbs” around here the effect from the word “wither”, then they would wither. If he gave a rock the effect “split”, then it would break into two.

(It can change all kind of phenomena regardless... Moreover)

With that in mind, he concentrated magic power in his finger once more and wrote another word into the ground. Upon that, a fire suddenly broke out and scorched the grasslands. The word he had written was “fire”. But this time, the fire extinguished after one minute.

(Creating from nothing... Looks like I got my hands on some awesome magic)

He exhaled in awe, realizing that the unique magic held a far greater power than he had imagined.

Still, he was happy about the usefulness of his magic. He should be able to live here without a problem with it. An almighty magic sure was handy.

(But I shouldn't forget that I still don't know everything about it. Part of the help text was corrupted and considering the output...)

He called up the <<Status>> again by saying so.

Hihiro Okamura

Lvl 1

HP 24/24

MP 30/120

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 13

DEF 8

AGL 27

HIT 11

INT 17

<<Magic Attribute>> None

<<Magic>> Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked)

<<Title>> Innocent Bystander, World Traveller, Word Master

(I knew it, it costs quite some MP)

His full MP was 120 and now it was down to 30. He had used the magic thrice, so it consumed 30 MP per usage, just like the description said.

He couldn't compare it to other magic, but the consumption was most likely quite high. His MP being higher than the other numbers was a peculiarity from being a world traveller, or so he heard.

A three-digit number was quite unthinkable for a normal level one. It should usually be around the same as the HP. And the consumption for beginner magic should correspond with that.

In all the games he had played so far, there never had been a magic that cost 30MP right from the beginning. It was an established fact that the strength of a magic, and in accordance its MP cost, increased with level ups.

(I can cast it four times with my current max MP. I need to level up quickly)

After all, the more often you could use a magic, the better. Even more so with an almighty magic like <<Word Magic>>.

(Okay, I got the magic down. Time to bring this stuff back)

He returned to the town with the bag filled to the brim with „Lucky Herbs“. It would be common to get attacked by nearby monsters in such a situation, but to his luck, he reached the town without any incidents.

There he headed to the Guild to complete the quest.

„Allow me to verify the details of your quest, Hihiro Okamura-sama. You accepted the rank F quest „Lucky Herb Harvest“. Please show me your loot.“

Told so by the woman at the counter, Hihiro put the „Lucky Herbs“ from his bag on a big weighing scale.

„...Okay, that makes twenty-two bundles. Your rewards amounts to 7700 Rigin in total. Please give me your card.“

When he handed over the card, she took it somewhere. After a while she came back and returned his card. Looking at the currency column of the card, the earlier value of 0 had turned into 7700.

“The quest is completed. Good work.”

She lowered her head politely and showed him a business smile like always. Hihiro gave a small nod and left the Guild.

(Good, I have money now. Guess food comes first. I still haven't eaten anything since I came here)

Asking the villagers, he looked for a restaurant. «Victorias» was a big walled town, divided into the trade, craft, pleasure and living districts where a lot of people lived.

With each district being rather big, it was structured as if various towns had been merged into one.

Hiirō went to the trade district for a restaurant. When he entered one that he found on the way, it turned out that it served delicious fish cuisine. He didn't hate fish, so he decided to stay and checked the menu.

But as expected, all the dish names didn't mean anything to him. He ordered today's suggestion, since he had no clue.

„Okay~ One serving of ‚Addicting Seafood Noodles‘! Please wait a moment~“

The waitress cheerfully took his order. While he waited for his food, he checked his «Status» again. There he noticed that his MP recovered up to 40 after having sunk down to 30 from using «Word Magic» three times.

It probably recovered over time when he rested, just like his stamina. But the recovery rate wasn't really profitable as it only recovered 10 MP since he used the magic over an hour ago.

(Well, rather than resting, I just walked around the town without using MP)

If he rested in the true sense of the word, meaning sleep, then the recovered amount should be different. As he pondered about that, his steamy food was served.

A lot of seafood swam in a ramen bowl. It was full of eggs from a fish like a salmon roe, something like shrimps and kelp or brown seaweed. He took his chopsticks and stirred it.

By doing so, an exquisite fragrance tickled his nasal cavities.

Instantly his stomach reported in with a growl as to demand food at once. He munched on something exquisite like a shark fin.

“Oh!”

He couldn't hold in his voice. The fin was well flavoured and its fish flavour spread in his mouth. It tasted and smelled so good that he couldn't help but crave for more.

Then he drank the broth with the spoon. It was good enough to be served as a separate dish. The broth with plenty seafood was so addicting that he would gulp it down in one-go if he didn't pay attention. It was lightly flavoured, yet superb.

Next he tried the noodles. On a closer look, something like small grains were kneaded into it. From one mouthful, a sea flavour assaulted his taste buds. Mashed fish was kneaded into the noodles. Truly Seafood Noodles.

(Yeah, the addicting in the name isn't just for show)

He finished his meal in a matter of few minutes and could go for another two or three bowls, but he resisted the temptation, since he was tight on money. Still, 450 Rigin was cheap for it.

After he stomached the satisfying aftertaste, he looked for an inn and made plans for the future, involving levelling up and collecting money, for a while.

## Chapter 05: As for the Heroes

In the meantime, the four heroes received training in magic right away. Vale Kimble, the captain of the second division from the Victorias army, was in charge of it.

-----  
Taishi Aoyama

Lvl 1

HP 35/35

MP 35/35

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 28

DEF 23

AGL 13

HIT 19

INT 9

«Magic Attribute» Fire, Wind, Lightning, Light

«Magic» -Fireball (Fire, Attack)

-Wind Cutter (Wind, Attack)

-Thunder Shock (Lightning, Attack)

-Lighting (Light, Effect)

«Title» Hero, World Traveller



-----  
-----  
Chika Suzumiya

Lvl 1

HP 28/28

MP 30/30

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 25

DEF 20

AGL 21

HIT 17

INT 12

<<Magic Attribute>> Fire, Earth, Ice, Light

<<Magic>> -Fireball (Fire, Attack)

-Grave (Earth, Attack)

-Ice Needle (Ice, Attack)

-Lighting (Light, Effect)

<<Title>> Hero, World Traveller

-----  
-----

Shuri Minamoto

Lvl 1

HP 18/18

MP 60/60

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 9

DEF 10

AGL 15

HIT 10

INT 20

«Magic Attribute» Wind, Water, Light

«Magic» -Wind Cutter (Wind, Attack)

-Water Wall (Water, Support)

-Heal (Light, Recovery)

«Title» Hero, World Traveller

-----

-----

Shinobu Akamori

Lvl 1

HP 22/22

MP 52/52

EXP 0

NEXT 10

ATK 13

DEF 13

AGL 24

HIT 14

INT 24

«Magic Attribute» Water, Lightning, Light

«Magic» -Mist (Water, Support)

-Paralyse (Lightning, Effect)

-Heal (Light, Recovery)

«Title» Hero, World Traveller

-----

Each of the four told Vale their «Status».

“Oh, all of you are so outstanding!”

Listening to them, Vale widened his eyes and leaked an astonished voice.

„What’s so outstanding?“

Taishi asked as their representative with a doubtful look.

„Let me explain: Originally one is supposed to only have one attribute. Of course there are exceptions and talented individuals possess more than one, but I never heard of anyone having three or even four attributes. Moreover, the light attribute is basically only used by ‚Pheoms‘. That all of you have it shows that you are truly Heroes.“

Everyone smiled embarrassed on the exaggerated praise. They were

happy, albeit the cheating status.

„And as far as I can tell from your magic, Taishi-sama and Chika-sama are the vanguard type, whereas Shuri-sama and Shinobu-sama are the rearguard type. Your basic statistics seem to confirm this, too.“

Indeed, Taishi's and Chika's «Status» emphasised on attacking, whereas Shuri's and Shinobu's emphasised on defending and supporting. Their magic were in accordance with that too.

„It's quite the balanced party.“

„Haha, just like in our online game!“

„Yep!“

Taishi and Chika looked at each other and smiled. The four of them had formed a party in an online RPG before. Even there, Taishi and Chika had been attackers, whereas Shuri and Shinobu were supporters, just like now. They were given the exact same roles in this world.

„I'm sure our «Status» will grow according with our role when we level up.“

„Oho, just like a RPG. By the way, what about you, Captain Vale?“

„You can call me just Vale, Taishi-sama.“

„Mh, really? Okay, Vale, what's your level?“

„Mine? I am level 48.“

„Woah~ Nothing less from a captain. I guess you get experience points from defeating demons?“

„Indeed. Completing quests will also gain you experience points.“

„Quests!?“

All four got hooked.

„Jesus! There are quests!? That means there’s a Guild too?“

„Ah, yes. Adventures are registered in a Guild.“

They all were in awe with „Ohh~“. The words quests and guild certainly pique their interest as they had always admired the game world.

„C- Can we register there too?“

„Why, of course. After some basic training, I would like you to register and polish your skills.“

„Hell yeeeeeeah~!“

Vale blinked with surprise on their excitement.

“Y- You are this happy about it? Danger always follows an adventurer. I am quite surprised to see you so excited about it.”

“Man, it’s a Guild! Adventurer, you know! And quests to boost! Naturally this excites you as a gamer! Right, everyone!”

“Yeah, I’m itching to act.”

“Yes. I’m a bit scared, but it’ll be fine with everyone together.”

“Yeah~ You can’t really do without a Guild~”

Each of them voiced their opinion.

“That sounds quite promising.”

However Vale misunderstand their optimistic thoughts, he felt hope in their brave words and showed a smile.

“Ah, but what about him?”

Taishi asked as he suddenly remembered. Chika reacted to it.

“Him?”

“I mean Okamura.”

“Oh, right...”

Chika replied indifferently as she wasn't interested.

“He got involved in all this because of us, right? You know, I feel a bit sorry for him.”

“Oh come on, he said he wasn't resenting us, so don't need to worry about him.”

“Mhm~ But...”

“To begin with, I don't like his attitude.”

“Oh?”

“Yeah, he's always by himself and gives off the vibe that he can do everything by himself. It's not pleasant to watch.”

The other three kept silent on Chika's outburst of anger. Sure, they had been in the same class, but they never talked to each other. And not just them, they never saw him speaking with anyone else.

He was like air and gone before you noticed it. Either he skipped class altogether or paid no attention during class, since he slept or read a book.

“Be a loner elsewhere!”

“Hey, Chika, why're you so angry?”

“It just pisses me off! He rarely attends class, yet always scores full marks on the tests! Just why!”

“W- Well, don't ask me...”

Yes, Okamura Hihiro certainly didn't attend classes regularly. And even if he attended, he was either asleep or didn't listen. Yet for some reason, he got perfect scores on his tests. Chika was angry at that unfairness.

“F- For all you know, he could properly review and prepare at

home.”

Shuri uttered so merely as a possibility, not in his defence.

“Well~ There’s cram school or a private tutor too.”

Shinobu added to that.

“I don’t care!”

Chika turned away, pouting. Taishi made a weary sigh.

“Okamura-dono was a friend of yours?”

That Vale added dono instead sama to his named showed the difference in their assessment.

“He’s no friend!”

“You might say... he’s a classmate, someone who studied together with us.”

“Mh, I see. But will he really be alright on his own?”

“Eh?”

“Our world is overflowing with danger. The ‘Evila’ for one, but there are strives between the same race as well. To survive on his own, it is very likely that he will become an adventurer. But it does not seem like he possesses outstanding fighting talents like you, so...”

He might end up dead. Everyone present thought that. A heavy silence hung in the air. Although he wasn’t their friend, it was indeed unpleasant to lose a classmate.

During that, Chika was the first to start a conversation.

“Aw, geez! There’s no use to worry about such a selfish guy! Instead, let’s think about getting stronger first!”

“You sure are vigorously, Chika.”

“What, got a problem? Besides, when we defeat the ‘Evila’ and bring peace, then he can live in peace too, right?”

Everyone had her mouth gaping open on these words. No one imagined that Chika, angry until a moment ago, would voice such a view.

“Chika-chan... You’re so kind.”

Saying so happily, Shuri showed a smile, whereupon Chika turned bright red and shouted.

“N- No! I was just... Aw, geez! We’re done with this topic! No more! Got it?”

The other three looked glad as if to say “Sure, sure”.

“Chika-sama has a point. We have to think about training you now.”

Everyone nodded upon Vale’s words. Then their magic trained started.

Hihiro found an inn for the time being and brooded over what to he needed to buy from now. He concluded that he wouldn’t last a day with his current funds.

(I really need to save up money quickly. And there’s a lot of stuff I want to try out)

Saying so, he fell into deep thoughts on the bed in the single room of the inn.

(...My heart’s beating faster?)

He repeatedly opened and squeezed his hand. By doing so, he felt that his body was unusually hot, he felt excitement.

(I’m unusually excited? Haha, guess I’m a guy after all)

The RPG-like world gave him a racing heart. A world he could only experience through books or games. Not even in his dreams would



he have thought to experience one in real life.

After completing a quest and trying out magic, he felt his excitement growing. Since he was already here, he wanted to try out everything on his mind.

Luckily enough, he had an overpowered magic. If he could make good use of this unfair magic, he surely would have a worthwhile life, even here.

(Anyway, I should get some sleep for tomorrow)

His MP fully recovered after eating the “Addicting Seafood Noodles”. He could go out to level up right away, but so many things happened all at once today, so his mind couldn’t keep up.

As that was only inevitable, he decided to go to bed for today to recovery his mentality too and genuinely start taking action from tomorrow onwards.

“Are you sure you want to accept this quest?”

“Yes.”

The first thing he did after getting up on the next day, was looking at the quests at the Guild and choosing one.

-----  
Goblin Hunt E

Kill 10 goblins in the Clair Forest.

Reward: 35000 Rigin  
-----

## Chapter 06: The Battle against Demons

He had checked out the quest yesterday already. It was reasonable for a beginner and yielded quite the reward.

“The Goblins are the weakest demons, but they attack in groups, so please be careful.”

“Sure.”

He answered curtly, left the Guild and wanted to leave the town right away, but he had things to buy, so he went into the shopping district.

He visited a weapon shop to buy a weapon, since even the weakest demon was hard to fight against with just bare hands, looking for a weapon within the range of his funds.

When he looked around with his funds in mind, he would have to go with a short weapon like a knife. Amongst these, he found a relatively robust one with a thick blade and a good grip.

“This one.”

Saying so, he showed it to the shop owner.

“Gladly. A solid knife, that’ll be 2650 Rigin.”

After paying, he received the weapon and appreciated the scabbard that he got as an unexpected freebie. Then he brooded over what to do about armour. A shield might be useful, but he concluded that he could just use his <<Word Magic>> when necessity arose, and left the shop.

Leaving the town, he headed for the “Clair Forest” in the west. He could reach it by following a straight path called the “Toll Road”.

During his search for an inn yesterday, he had stopped by a general store and bought five “crispy beans” for HP restoration, three “honey toffee” for MP restoration along with a map of this world.

Even if they were necessary expenses, they completely emptied his wallet. He had to complete the quests by all means or he would have to sleep outside tonight. That sounded fun in itself, but he wanted to avoid a sudden hobo lifestyle.

During his trip, he spotted something weird in front of him.

(What's that...?)

It looked like a big volleyball. However, it didn't have a fixed appearance and contorted itself spongy, blocking his path.

(Wait, could it be...?)

The famous monster for levelling up as a beginner in a RPG...

“A slime!”

His voice was somewhat filled with excitement. There the slime suddenly charged into his direction, startled by his voice.

“Wait, a battle out of nowhere!?”

He drew his solid knife from the scabbard. The slime was slow, but Hihiro got the chills when he thought about coming in contact with that disgusting substance.

The moment the slime jumped up, he swung his knife downwards accordingly. There was no resistance and the slime was cut into half, but the two parts still moved meandering. To put it bluntly, it was disgusting.

“Don't tell me it multiplied from being cut in half?”

In that case, a blade would be useless, so he wondered about what to do, whereas the demon writhed agonizing on the ground and stopped moving before long. Hihiro timidly poked it with his knife.

(Wait, there's a faster way!)

He opened his «Status». The NEXT (required experience points until level up) column had been 10, but now it turned into 8. The

fact that he had received experience points meant that the demon was defeated.

“Oh~ It was a demon after all. I bet it’s a weak one like the goblin. It only gave 2 EXP anyway.”

Still, he felt somewhat accomplished from his first battle and victory. At first he had feared it would pain him to kill, but it surprisingly turned out alright.

“...Still feels like a game... Or rather, like it’s none of my beeswax.”

When he analysed it calmly, he heard another rustling sound from behind. He turned around and there were more slimes, three even.

“They seem perfect for levelling up. But I wish there were four of them.”

Then he could have levelled up. At the time he clicked his tongue, three more slimes appeared from behind him as to ridicule him. Hihiro was totally surrounded.

“Grr, a pincer attack on a beginner?”

While he grumbled bitter, he focused on defeating the three in front of him first. After he cut down the first and second one, an smacking impact hit his back. A slime seemingly attacked him with a charge.

“Kuh... It unexpectedly hurts quite a bit.”

It felt just as if he was hit by someone. He took his distance and checked his <<Status>>, seeing that his HP decreased by 3.

“Looks like I can’t play around.”

Bracing himself once more, he took a stance with his knife. Since two slimes attack him simultaneously, he dodged them and cut one down immediately. But two more were coming from behind.

“No more pain!”

By swinging his knife around, he managed to cut down two at once. One slime remained. Hihiro killed it by charging in on his own.

Upon that, he heard a weak PLIIINK sound over his head and opened his <<Status>>.

-----

Hihiro Okamura

Lvl 2

HP 21/30

MP 120/145

EXP 12

NEXT 12

ATK 15 (25)

DEF 10

AGI 30

HIT 12

INT 25

<<Magic Attribute>> None

<<Magic>> Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked)

<<Title>> Innocent Bystander, World Traveller, Word Master

-----

“Figures. That sound was from the level up. Anyway, my MP sure has an amazing gain. It went up by 25 in one level. Well, not that I’m complaining.”

Though he complained a bit about not recovering the health upon

levelling up. Some games did that, so he had preferred it here too.

On his way to the “Clair Forest”, he kept defeating the appearing slimes.

He reached the “Clair Forest” alright, but he had no clue where to look for the goblins. As slimes had appeared various times, he was level three now.

With no other ideas, he advanced into the forest pre cautious and left marks on the trees as not to lose his way. He would use them as landmarks on his way back.

Then he heard the brushwood rustling and took a stance, thinking it was a goblin, but it was just a slime again.

“...’nother one of you.”

Although he was sick of them already, he killed it instantly as he was already familiar with them. The quest was to kill ten goblins. As proof, he had to bring the “goblin fang” back with him.

Incidentally, slimes dropped “slime substance” as part of a hunt quest, but he ignored it as it was too disgusting to touch.

Going through the forest, he encountered another slime. The moment he felt annoyed about it, something appeared from the bush to his side. And it attacked him with some kind of weapon.

WHOOSH!

He dodged it by bending his body at once, but he broke out in a cold sweat.

(C- Close call... I see, that’s a goblin.)

Its appearance was identically to the picture in the reference book he was shown. A stature small like a child, but an ugly face and a club in its hand.

“Must hurt to get hit by that...”

When he glared at the goblin, he received another attack on the back and groaned. He had totally forgotten about the slime. Moreover, the goblin used this chance to attack too.

(Damn. Goblins come in groups, I can't waste time here!)

He parried the club with his solid knife. The goblin let out a creaky voice like grinding one's teeth, with drool spilling out of its mouth. Hiroyuki definitely didn't want to get bitten and sent the goblin flying with a kick.

(Fuh, a humanoid demon... Will I be able to kill it...?)

Speaking to himself, he narrowed his eyes as he stared at the goblin. Needless to say, he never killed anyone when he was in Japan. He had killed bugs, but never animals, so he was insecure about whether he was able to kill a living creature with a human appearance, even if it was a demon.

"...Hah. Well, I gotta survive here."

He muttered as to convince himself.

"Sorry... but you'll be a stepping stone for me."

Saying so, he rushed at the goblin with all his might. Hiroyuki had a lot of agility, although he didn't know why. The goblin didn't move as it intended to take him on upfront.

SLAAAAASH!

He cut down the goblin. That made him somewhat sick in the stomach, but he swallowed it down and glared at the goblin.

"You're next!"

Afterwards he defeated the slime, whereupon another level up sound resounded. His level turned to four now. It was going well.

His joy only lasted for a moment as one goblin after another appeared in front of him. The earlier battle seemed to have attracted them.

However, Hiiro had waited for them. He concentrated his magic power into his finger tip and quickly draw a word onto the ground. The group of goblins came at him all at once.

(Good... Come here!)

Just when the goblins were right before him,

“Activate!”

He shouted and the electrical discharge occurred in the word. In the next moment, various sharp objects appeared from the ground and pierced the goblins.

“Haha, it worked.”

The goblins desperately tried to move while grimacing in pain, but they couldn't. After a while they stopped moving as they died.

The word Hiiro had written was “needle”.

The area of effect was roughly 6.5m<sup>2</sup> wide, just like with the word “hard”. He had waited for the goblins to enter that area. The ground had turned into a cactus and killed all the goblins on it.

(Kuh... It's more tiring than I thought.)

Lot of blood was flowing out from the pierced spots of the goblins. Seeing that, Hiiro painfully became aware that this was a real battle, that he did this and that he could have turned into this himself if he was careless. It was taught to him in a forcible manner.

(Fuh, anyway, first things first)

He took action again right away. There were still goblins around, but confused by his weird attack, they were reluctant to attack him.

“Then let's try the next one”

While saying so, he picked up a stone and wrote onto it the word “stop”.



If all went well, it might stop the goblin's movement. He threw the stone at a goblin. The moment the goblin was hit at the shoulder, he activated it. However, only the stone was stopped. It stopped right in midair.

(Mhm, so it can't emit magic)

As he had written it onto the stone, probably only the stone itself was influenced.

Hiirō had hoped that the effect from the stone would affect the goblin too, but sadly that wasn't the case. Only the stone itself was affected, leaving the goblin unaffected.

(Okay, next one!)

Next up he wrote "extend" on the blade of his knife. Then he readied the knife and turned his body like a spinning top.

"Activate!"

WHOOOOOSH!

In a flash, the blade extended manifold and the goblins in the distant were cut. Three of them went down at once. As far as he could tell, that left three more.

"I only need two more for my quest, but I won't let anyone escape."

He slaughtered the goblins by swinging his extended knife around and was so immersed in it that he didn't notice the level up sound during it.

After he defeated all of them, he collected the "goblin fangs". It was the only sharp tooth on the upper jaw. But before that, he transformed his knife back by writing "origin" on it.

As soon as he finished collecting them, exhaustion befell his whole body. His MP was empty too, so he ate "honey toffee" to restore it.

(Oh right, I gotta fix the ground too)

With his MP replenished, he fixed the ground by writing “original”. Anyway, it had been a while since he moved around so much and he somehow endured that battle, which was akin to a massacre, albeit of only demons.

“Puh, never thought I was this emotional”

He sighed while saying that as he didn’t expect himself to get worn out mentally to such an extent. It really made him realize that this was not a game.

The smell of lots of blood, the sensation of cutting through flesh, the dying screams and corpses. All of that gave Hihiro, a citizen of a peaceful country, a dreadful shock.

Feeling more exhausted than expected, he sat down on the spot to rest. But a rustling sound announced the arrival of something. It was a goblin.

“Fuh~ Guess I can only keep going until I’m used to it...”

He made a resigning sigh and glared at the goblin.

“Then bring it on! Come at me! Until I get used to it!”

Somewhat out of frustration, he swung around his weapon.

“Aw~ I’m pooped~”

Hihiro had returned to the town, but took a rest on a bench on the street. The slimes and goblins had attacked him without rest. He had defeated them while their blood splashed onto him, so he was completely out of fuel now.

(Though I quite raised my level thanks to that)

-----  
Hihiro Okamura

Lvl 7

HP 31/65

MP 34/250

EXP 222

NEXT 87

ATK 25 (35)

DEF 21

AGI 46

HIT 20

INT 37

«Magic Attribute» None

«Magic» Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked)

«Title» Innocent Bystander, World Traveller, Word Master

-----

## Chapter 07: Bon Voyage!

He planned to go to the Guild for his quest reward after he rested a little bit more. His blood-spattered appearance drew the attention of by-passers, but he was so exhausted that he paid it no mind.

(Hah... Maybe, I can clean... my clothes with magic)

With that in mind, he moved somewhere without people and wrote “clean” on his clothes. And when he activated it, the bloody clothes became all clean again in an instant.

(When I write it on my body, I won’t be needing a bath...?)

He kept it in mind to try it out later. And if it worked, he would be delighted about such a convenient power.

At the guild, the woman at the counter widened her eyes in surprise. Because he completed the quests, which demanded to hunt ten goblins, with a far higher number: 22.

She looked at the 22 “goblin fangs”, which he presented as proof for the quest.

“I am impressed you managed to hunt so many. Especially considering that you only registered yesterday, Okamura-sama.”

“Whatever, evaluate it already.”

He wanted to get over with it before he was dragged into something troublesome. The woman apologized on his words and properly did her job.

“The advertised reward is 35000 Rigin, but I can give you an extra 10000 Rigin for all these ‘goblin fangs’ you are turning in. What do you say?”

“Yeah, do that.”

He had no use for the “goblin fangs” anyway.

“Then please wait a moment.”

Saying that, she took his card and went somewhere. After a while she came back and returned his card. The money had been added to it. He brought the card closer to his chest and recited disappear, whereupon the card dispersed and vanished.

Now he had enough funds for the inn for a while and could even buy a fair number of MP restoration pills. With this quest he realized that MP pills were an absolutely necessity for him.

When he wanted to use the <<Word Magic>>, which by itself already had a high MP consumption, numerous times, he should have a large number of restoration pills at hand.

(I got to test out a lot of stuff and realized how important the MP pills are. I better buy as much as I can carry.)

Hence he went straight to a general shop and bought the necessary items for battles, including a new weapon. It was the cheapest kind of a sword, but still cost 30000 Rigin. The reason he bought a new one was because the blade of his knife was chipped. Well, naturally that happened when he fought so many demons. Lastly, he bought a red robe as a protection gear.

He chose it, since it had a high magic resistance and an unexpected high protection value. The red was kind of flashy, but he made do with it, thinking that he will get used to it.

(Wait, couldn't I have fixed the chip in the blade with magic... Like if I wrote 'new' or 'original' while remembering how I bought it... Moreover...)

Various things came into his mind, but he had already bought the sword.

(Well, it was just a knife anyway. I'll use magic from now on)

The knife was only bought due to a shortage of funds at the beginning and he had intended to buy a sword when he saved up some money anyway, so he would now first try magic to repair the blade before buying a new one.

And when the blade actually chipped and he tried <<Word Magic>> to repair it, the blade really turned as good as new with the word “new”. His own magic apparently knew no bounds.

For one week then, Hihiro completed quests from morning till evening. At first he just wanted to save up money and level up, but it was surprisingly fun when he tried it.

He saw flowers he never saw before and encountered various demons. It was also quite enjoyable to think of ways to defeat these demons.

He didn’t consider himself to be a battle maniac, but he might have to reflect about himself as he unintentionally got elated about how to kill a strong opponent, the real thrill of an RPG.

And by this and that, his Guild rank raised as well, turning from the blue F rank into the violet E rank. Not to mention his pile of money and levels.

The woman at the counter called him a new rising star as there certainly were hardly any beginners that completed twenty to thirty quests in one week.

(It’s likely that things will get troublesome when I work here any more and the king hears about it)

He feared that he would get told to fight with the heroes if he was that strong, which would be horrible. His freedom was the only thing he wouldn’t surrender. He didn’t want his fun life in the other world get spoiled from obligations.

(I guess it’s about time)

He made his resolve while checking the contents of his big bag.

(Tomorrow I’ll leave this country)

Yes, he resolved to go on a trip.

Enough money on his hands, a good level and above all, his mentality toughened up. With that, he could even survive during a

trip.

-----  
Hiiro Okamura

Lvl 18

HP 210/210

MP 640/640

EXP 4672

NEXT 480

ATK 89 (100)

DEF 65 (80)

AGI 137 (139)

HIT 77 (85)

INT 102 (106)

<<Magic Attribute>> None

<<Magic>> Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked)

<<Title>> Innocent Bystander, World Traveller, Word Master

-----  
-----  
Guild Card

Name: Hiiro Okamura

Sex: Male

Age: 17

From: Unknown

Rank: E

Quest:

Equipment:

-Weapon: Short Sword

-Guard: Red Robe

-Accessory:

Rigin: 567000

-----

On the next day, Hiirō groaned while spreading his map on the “Toll Road” outside the town. It was necessary to decide where to go.

He technically had an idea. Going south, there was a big town called “Frentor”, albeit not as big as “Victorias”. It was a famous trade town.

But Hiirō rather tended to go to “Surge” instead, a town in the west. “Surge” was close to the country border, right next to the continent, where the “Gabranth” lived.

Since he came to another world, he naturally wanted to meet a “werewolf” or “werecat” by all means.

But right now, there was a tension between both countries. He didn’t think he would be able to pass the border easily. However, being an adventurer, he heard some news.

That the countries certainly had placed restrictions on each other, but lot of “Gabranth” were adventurers and often went on jobs together with “Humas” adventurers.

The individual and nation’s opinion were different things. In other



words, the nation's opinion didn't represent the whole race. Some people worked together with each other.

Still, a lot of people in this world detested other races right now. They were especially out of sorts with the fighting "Evila".

Nevertheless, Hihiro believed that he had to confirm it with his own eyes. To begin with, he wasn't interested in the opinion of others, priding himself with the conviction to come up with his own answer by experiencing it himself.

Therefore, he decided to head to "Surge". Crossing the border would be possible one way or another as well if necessary.

But it was quite a distance to "Surge". A long trip called for resolution and good feet.

On his way, he came by the "Clair Forest", where he had been before. There was no more need to be wary about this forest, but he needed to get through there. He entered the forest and defeated the demons that attacked him flawlessly.

With his current AGI, the movement of his opponents looked like they were standing still. Their difference in strength was that obvious.

(Well, I'm not a beginner anymore)

Hihiro was experienced fighting even stronger demons, so the slimes and goblins appearing in the forest weren't worth mentioning.

He easily passed through the forest and got onto the "Tempus Highway". Following it straight lead to a small town called "Ames". His plan was to stay the night there and go on tomorrow.

"Oh, a jewel slime in such a place?"

He spotted a sparkling slime shining like a jewel in front of him. As he had read the Guild's reference book once, he got a hold of the different kind of demons.

"I can sell its 'jewel slime core' for quite a sum. No escape, dude."

Hihiro drew his sword with the eyes of a hunter. Money was important after all. After he killed it without letting it escape, he nodded satisfied.

“That’s a good sign. Mh? Now it’s a yellow rabbit.”

The next demon that appeared was a literal yellow rabbit. Its attack power wasn’t all too strong, but it was quite fast. Still, not so fast as to bewilder him, because right now, he could move even faster than the yellow rabbit.

“Haah!”

He cut it into two with his sword. Three of them had shown up, but one seemingly got away. He kept the hunt quest drop “yellow rabbit tail” just in case. Defeating the appearing demons, he headed towards “Ames”.

## Chapter 08: An average guy that won't work for free

In “Ames” he looked for an inn first of all. Luckily for him, not many adventurers dropped by here, so there were enough empty rooms, only one double room was booked.

“A single room please.”

“Eh, ah, yes. Ex- Excuse me... Are you... an adventurer?”

“...Yes?”

“I... see.”

“...?”

Hihiro inclined his head as he somehow didn't feel welcomed. It was his first visit to this village, nor did he ever did something to them.

Yet, the inn keeper treated him anxiously. It bothered him, but for now, he reserved his room and went to look around the village.

But there he noticed something strange. For some reason, he felt gazes on him. And from all directions at that. It was an atmosphere like he was an uninvited guest.

Just like the inn keeper, they frowned at him. Maybe this village didn't welcome outsiders. Well, Hihiro was only going to stay for one night, so he didn't let it bother him.

“Hey, Mister.”

At that moment, someone called out to him. When he turned around, there stood a kid. It was a boy around the age of seven. He glared at him with eyes like looking at someone suspicious. Hihiro ignored him, since he didn't like that attitude.

“Hey, don't ignore me!”

The boy got angry. Why would he have to deal with a brat? Hiiro dropped his shoulders.

“What’s up, shorty?”

“Don’t call me shorty! Not when you’re wearing some weird red robe yourself! It’s intimidating!”

“...Are you a bull or what?”

Not like he wore the red robe to be intimidating. It simply wore it for protection purposes. Although he grew attached to it after wearing it all the time.

With his black school uniform underneath, it was a surreal combination, but Hiiro didn’t care at all.

“Mister, you’re an adventurer, right? Why did you come to such an isolated place?”

“Isolated place?”

“Don’t call it an isolated place!”

“You called it that.”

Why was he so aggressive...? Hiiro couldn’t come up with an answer to that, so he ignored him and walked away as it was too troublesome after all.

“H- Hey, wait!”

Ignore, ignore.

“I told you to wait!”

Turn a blind eye.

“Hey, man! Listen to me!”

Just the wind.

“Hey... Please... don’t ignore me.”

His voice gradually started to tremble. He must have gotten sad from being ignored. Hihiro made a light sigh and stopped.

“What do you want?”

He stopped ignoring him as it would be difficult to stay in the village if he made him cry here. Upon that, the boy smiled energetically, but went back to glare at him right away.

“Sh- Sheesh, you’re such a meanie! All adventurer are like that!”

“I’m me. Don’t lump me together with others, it’s discomforting.”

When he glared at him in a bad mood, the boy cowered with a shiver.

“...Hah. So, what’s up? I’m busy looking around, you know.”

“Eh? Why’re you looking around?”

“What does it matter? It got nothing to do with you, brat.”

“Uh... Uhh...”

The boy got close to tears again, so Hihiro pressed on his temples with a sigh.

“Hah. Just killing time. I got here just now and plan to stay here one night during my travel.”

He looked at the boy, hoping that this satisfied him.

“Oh? You’re not going to sham the village?”

“Sham? Say what?”

According to the boy, certain adventurers lately dropped by the village, barged into the general or weapon store and forcefully haggled products, doing whatever they wanted.

“It was a group of two and they falsely charged the inn to get to stay for free.”

While he grinded his teeth frustrated, the boy clenched his fist.

“Why didn’t you refuse? You could’ve chased them out with all the villagers.”

“We cannot do that.”

It wasn’t the boy, who replied to Hiirō.

“Ah, Uncle Panis!”

The man called Panis looked like in his late 30s. In reality he might be younger, but his gloomy expression made him look older.

“And you are?”

“You seem to be an adventurer. My name is Panis. I run a humble shop.”

That meant he was a victim of the two adventurer.

“Is it true what the brat said?”

“Yes, it is. They currently picking at the general store.”

“...You said you can’t chase them out. What do you mean?”

Panis looked troubled and made a big sigh.

“For some reason, they got title deed of the village.”

“Huh? Why would they have that? Doesn’t the village chief usually keep it?”

“Yes, but the title deed was suddenly gone from the village chief’s house...”

In other words, the two stole it.

“How careless. You reap what you sow.”

“Haha, you got us there.”

Yet another new person answered Hiiro.

“You are the adventurer that arrived earlier? I am the village chief of ‘Ames’, Brey.”

“What are you doing here, Chief?”

Panis asked.

“Same reason as yours. I was told there is an outsider, so I came to check.”

Appearing Hiiro’s arrival was immediately reported to the village chief and he came to see the suddenly visiting adventurer with his own eyes. He seemingly was relieved to see that Hiiro was just an average adventurer.

CRAAACK!

Suddenly the sound of wood breaking resounded. Everyone present faced the origin of the sound taken aback. The door of a house was burst opened and someone was thrown out.

“Mick!”

The village chief widened his eyes and shouted. The man called Mick was thrown onto the ground and crouched. Then two people appeared from the house, where he was thrown out from.

One man was fat with a bald head, the other one slender with a spiky hairstyle like a broom. Mr. Spiky Head spit out while looking down on Mick.

“Keh! Try saying that again!”

The slender man, also qualified to be called spiky beanpole, scowled fiendish. Next to him, the other guy took a bite out of a fruit that was probably from the store. Hiiro named him bald chubby.

Mick desperately pleaded. They most likely told him to hand over the products for free and he refused to. However, spiky beanpole

showed an irritated vein on his forehead and kicked Mick's face.

Quite a lot of blood splashed around. Seeing that, the villagers rushed over to him. Spiky beanpole glared sharply at the village chief.

"Huuuh? Look who we have here, the chief. Got something to say? Mh?"

Hihiro calmly observed, taking him for a third-rate gangster, no, delinquent.

"M- More food."

Bald chubby tried to go back into the house while drooling, probably in search for more food.

"Hey, Junior, give it a rest, we're leaving."

"B- But I'm hungry."

"Tch. Make it quick."

"Okay."

"Stop it already!"

Unable to watch any longer, the village chief shouted, but winced when spiky beanpole glared at him. The others close by didn't approach either, scared by spiky beanpole's look of menace.

(Looks like they're being compelled to accept it because these guys are beyond their power, not just the title deed)

The village didn't have any capable people, so they didn't resist as they would only get killed if they challenged them.

(They could ask the army for help, but I guess the guys would just run away with the title deed then. And there's a fear for their revenge. The best solution would be for someone to subdue them)

While Hihiro pondered like that, the boy next to him looked up to



him. Pretty much ask if he was asking him to do something about it.

“No idea what you want, but this doesn’t concern me.”

“Wha! And you still call yourself human!?”

“What? Do I look like a demon or what?”

“You do! Why aren’t you helping! As a fellow adventurer, you have to stop them!”

“...Listen, brat, I may be an adventurer, but I ain’t some advocate of justice. Ask the Heroes if you want justice for free.”

Hihiro said composed while crossing his arms. The boy gave him a look filled with anger, it was no concern of his.

“Forget it! In the end, all adventurer are like this!”

Saying so, the boy went straight for the two guys.

“Ah, wait, Nies! Don’t go there!”

Panis tried to stop him, but the boy called Nies ran with all his might. Then Panis glared at Hihiro while grinding his teeth. Still, he relaxed soon enough and sighed.

“No, I get it. This has nothing to do with you. A Hero that works for people without charge like from fairytales does not exist.”

“Mh, no idea if such a person exists, but at the very least, I’m not like that. I pass on working for free.”

Hihiro kept it to himself that sadly enough, he considered unprofitable things as bothersome.

“...For free.”

“Huh? What?”

Panis suddenly leaked a voice, so Hihiro inadvertently asked back.

“So it just... has to be paid?”

“.....”

Hihiro got a bad feeling.

“In that case, I will give you my finest weapon when you help us.”

“.....”

“Will you help us?”

“.....”

Panis looked at him earnestly. It was a pain and to be honest, it didn't concern him at all. However, the finest weapon was appealing. Just taking care of this scum for it was rather cheap.

While thinking so, he made eye contact with Panis. Looking into his eyes without averting his gaze, they stared at each other for a while. After a while, Hihiro sighed like being outlasted.

“Fine. I'll lend a hand. But keep your promise.”

Panis' face instantly brightened up, but turned gloomy again.

“I, I know I asked you, but... are you strong?”

He asked while looking anxiously at Hihiro from head to toe.

“Dunno. But at least good enough to do something about them.”

Hihiro said so by looking at the chubby & beanpole combo. Panis had his mouth gaping open from that confidence, but Hihiro ignored that and swiftly went into action.

Nies picked up a pebble from the ground and threw it at spiky beanpole. It pleased him how it hit him right into the face, but needless to say, the other villagers all went pale.

Spiky beanpole's expression as he slowly looked at Nies spoke volumes: This brat is as good as dead.

Feeling his killing intent, Nies froze on the spot.

“St- Stop it!”

The village chief stopped covering in front of Nies, but was sent flying with hard punch. Then spiky beanpole drew the sword on his waist and pointed it at Nies. Paralyzed by fear, Nies didn't move an inch.

“Brat, any last words?”

“D- Don't...”

Nies shook his head while shedding tears, but that didn't stop spiky beanpole. He smiled happily and raised his sword into the air, then swinging it down from there.

WHOOOSH!

Everyone gulped and closed their eyes. They all thought Nies' life was over now. However!

“OWWWW!”

The one screaming in pain and bleeding was spiky beanpole. Something was pierced into his sword arm.

Everyone looked dumbfounded at this scene. A blade, yes, it was a blade. His arm was undoubtedly pierced by a blade.

But the length of it was clearly too long. And they looked at the end of the blade, at the person, who performed the attack. It was Okamura Hihiro.

## Chapter 09: Sword Encounter

He had extended the blade by writing “extend” on it, fully aware that its length was now roughly seven metres. However, no one present understood what had happened in this bizarre scene.

Hihiro reverted his sword by writing “original”. The blade slipped out of spiky beanpole’s arm with a whoosh and he groaned.

He dropped his sword from the intense pain and his arm trembled. A great deal of sweat was accumulating on his face.

“Stand back, brat.”

“M- Mister... Wh- Why?”

“I get paid, so I’ll lend a hand.”

When Hihiro said so bluntly, Nies made a slightly happy sigh of relief.

“Wh- Who are you, dude!?”

Putting up with the pain, spiky beanpole frantically shouted while opening his bloodshot eyes wide.

“I don’t have to answer you. See ya.”

“Wha!?”

Hihiro leaped in with an incredible speed and spiky beanpole couldn’t react at all. Then Hihiro slashed at him with his sword.

“Take this.”

SLAAAASH!

In one swing, the blade cut from the left shoulder into his right flank, splashing blood everywhere. Like this, spiky beanpole got on his knee and collapsed onto the ground.

“Im... possible...”

Everyone thought he was dead, but he was convulsing with twitches as he was still alive. But it seemed like he completely lost consciousness. Hereupon, bald chubby finally seemed to notice that something was wrong and came out of the store.

“Ah... What’s this? Why’s Brother on the ground?”

“Keep the questions to yourself.”

Saying so, Hiiro once again leaped in towards him in a flash and swung his sword like before, but

CREAAAK!

he was stopped by a metallic sound.

(Damn! He’s wearing a chain mail!)

Although he had slashed him, there was no feeling of having cut flesh. Instead the sensation of a metallic resistance remained in his hand.

“M- My clothes. How dare you!”

When bald chubby said so, the already torn clothes ripped some more. Hiiro wanted to retort why he got angry over the clothes, but as he had figured, there was a chain mail underneath the clothes.

Bald chubby drew the broadsword from his back and swung it with a buzz.

“Mhm~ I’ll die if I take a hit from that upfront, considering my gear”

With that in mind, Hiiro took some distance for now.

“I, I’ll turn you into minced meeeaaat!”

“Shut up, pig. Bring it on already.”

“Grrrr!”

Bald chubby swung his word with all his might. Since Hihiro knew that he aimed at his head, he dodged it by squatting down and slashed at his legs without a moment's delay. But there was a metallic sound again.

“Oh man, this pig wears a full body armour? Impressive that he can move around.”

Normally it would be too heavy to even walk around. But while his movements were dull, he still managed to move around, so he must have quite the strength.

“But there's no meaning if he doesn't hit. Besides, I can fight like this too.”

While saying so, Hihiro put away his sword and toyed with his opponent by moving around swiftly.

“U- Uh, where? Where's he?”

With his characteristic speed, Hihiro had gone around to his back. The opponent was still looking around restlessly in search for him.

Concentrating magic power in his fingertip, he then wrote a word onto bald chubby's back.

After quickly taking his distance, he recited activate in his mind, whereupon bald chubby suddenly turned bright red in the face and started to roll around on the ground.

“H- Ho- Hoooot!? Wh- What's this! Why's it so hot!?”

He currently felt like being grilled by a fire. Moreover, his whole body was hot, not just his back.

It was a sensation like being enveloped by flames. Not something a human could endure. The word written on the back was “heat”. It wasn't on the level of hot water as it even melted the chain mail. The flesh burned with a sizzle and a scorching smell hung in the air.

The villagers were dumbfounded at the suddenly collapse of bald chubby.

“Okay, all done.”

Looking down on bald chubby, Hiiro showed a faint smile.

“Guh... H... Hot... What did... you do...?”

“Who knows? You’ll never find out, chubby.”

He hit him into the face with all his might while saying that.

“Gueh!”

Bald chubby lost his consciousness while his body smoked. In that moment, Hiiro heard a familiar sound in his head.

(Oh, even these guys give EXP?)

Then he went over to spiky beanpole and searched his pockets.

“Ah, found it. Here.”

Saying so, he passed it to the village chief.

“Don’t come crying to me for it again.”

It was the village’s title deed.

“And call the army to take these guys away. They won’t wake up for a while, but properly tie them up.”

“Uh- Uhm...”

The village chief had no clue what was going on, gradually caught onto the current situation and looked at the defeated two once more, smiling then.

“O- Ohh...”

And then...

“YAAAAAY!”

The overwhelming cheer of the villagers reached his ears. Hiiro

mumbled “So noisy” with one eye closed, but no one heard him.

The village chief took his hand and thanked him in tears.

“Thank you! Thank you so much!”

“S- Sure.”

A bit bewildered, he answered. There Panis came over as well.

“Y- You are quite an remarkable adventurer.”

“No clue. Aren’t these two just weak?”

“No, no, there are known as the ‘Harios Brothers’ and are quite skilled adventurers. Although notorious.”

He nodded short. To be honest, he wasn’t interested in their life story. Then he suddenly felt a light hit on his bottom. On a look, there stood Nies.

“Man! If you’re that strong, you could helped us from the beginning!”

“Hey, Nies!”

The village chief rebuked him, but in the next moment, everyone was surprised at Hihiro’s action. Because he lightly nudged Nies’ head with a thump.

“Oww! What’cha doing!”

“I told you, I’m no Hero. I don’t help people for free. The old man requested it this time with a reward, so I helped.”

“Wha...”

“Anyway, it was one-time thing.”

“Wha!?”

Ignoring the pouting Nies, Hihiro turned the topic to Panis. Needless to say, it was about the reward.



“Now then, can I look around your store?”

“Y- Yeah, sure.”

Panis showed an empty smile by looking at Nies, who glared at Hiirō with teary eyes and his cheeks puffed out. The village chief even offered to remit his lodging fees and he gladly accepted it.

After that, he headed towards Panis’ shop, but every time he run into a villager, he was thanked. Earlier he wasn’t welcomed, but now he was like a VIP.

(So self-interested)

Of course he could relate, but he didn’t have a favourable impression of them due to their sudden turn-around in attitude.

“This is my store.”

“Oh, you have armour too, not just weapons.”

Looking around the shop, he roughly checked the products.

“So, you said you would give me your finest weapon, but which is it?”

“Fufufufufu. I’m glad you asked.”

His laugh was a bit annoying. Not the least bit coquetted. Then he went to the back of the store and brought back a single sword.

“This is it!”

“Oho.”

“It’s called ‘Piercer’.”

It looked like a Japanese sword and had the same blade length as one. The only difference was that the blade was clear like ice. It certainly was breathtakingly beautiful.

“It’s a Katana specializing on piercing. It’s a kind of sword that was originally created by some people of the ‘Gabranth’. Unlike the

swords made by 'Humas' which focus on slashes with all one's might, it has a sharp blade to cut apart the prey with speed instead of power."

Being a Japanese, Hiiro knew all that, but he kept silent.

"Of course I guarantee the sharpness of 'Piercer', but its speciality are thrusts. Like the name implies, it's a Katana that can pierce anything. It may look like this, but it's sturdy without a doubt."

"Where did you get such a sword?"

"Through some connections. I kept it dearly so far, since I wanted to make it a heirloom."

"I'm surprised these two didn't take it."

"Duh, I hid it in the basement."

He said proudly while throwing out his chest. It must be that important to him.

"Can I really take it? I mean, it's a heirloom, right? In other words, not for sale. I thought you would give me something from your assortment?"

As it wasn't displayed in the store, Hiiro thought it wasn't an article for sale.

"Well, it's a bit regrettable, but I feel like I can entrust it to you."

"...Aren't you giving me too much credit? It's not like I took these guys out because I wanted to. As I told the brat already, I ain't a Hero."

"That doesn't matter."

"Mh?"

"You saved this village. We are incredible grateful about that, no matter how it came to be."

Hihiro looked at the sword once more and for some reason got the urge to hold it.

“...May I?”

“Sure, take it.”

“Okay, thanks.”

Saying so, he accepted “Piercer”. Even though he touched it for the first time, it stuck to his hand like he had used it in forever. When he put it on his waist, it was yet again a perfect fit. His face inadvertently brightened up.

As a Japanese male, it was quite satisfying to have a Japanese sword hanging on one’s waist.

(What a lucky found)

He gained a level and found a good sword, so he had nothing to complain. After Panis thanked him again, he left the shop and returned to the inn as there was nothing more to do today.

But on the way someone was blocking his path.

“Mister, got a minute?”

It was Nies. He got angry when Hihiro made a big sigh.

“Why’re you looking so annoyed!”

“.....Hah.”

“Again!”

Hihiro wanted to tell him not to point at other people, but there would be no end to it once he started to pay heed to him, so he wanted to get this over with quickly.

“What do you want, brat?”

“Don’t call me a brat! I’m already seven!”

“Yeah, a legit brat.”

“Gr~!”

“...Hah. So, what’s up?”

“Tell me your name.”

“...Huh?”

“Your name! My father told me to ask you!”

“Your father? Who’s that?”

“The village chief.”

“...You’re his son?”

“Fufu, awesome, right~”

Nies said proudly, but Hihiro wasn’t the least bit envious.

“Ah, sure, sure. Really amazing~ I’m sooo surprised~ Amazing alright~”

“.....You don’t think that at all.”

“Duh.”

“You just admitted it!?”

He had his mouth open wide in shock, but at this rate this would really take a lot of time, so Hihiro reluctantly decided to tell him his name.

“I’m Hihiro. Hihiro Okamura.”

“Hero... So cool!”

“Huh?”

Hihiro was puzzled as he didn’t know why Nies suddenly sparkled his eyes.

“I see~ Hero~”

“...I don't get you, but you have to report to the village chief, right? Shouldn't you be going?”

“Ah, right! Dad's busy tying up these guys! See you, Mister!”

“Sure, sure.”

Nies left while waving his hand energetically, so Hihiro thought how nice it must be to be young again. Although he himself wasn't all that sophisticated, and shook his head. After all, he was only seventeen yet.

Then he returned to the inn and was treated by the inn keeper like a totally different person.

He was served a luxury dinner without ordering it, and while he was grateful for it, he wondered if his personality became twisted as he was somewhat disgusted, so he shook his head again.

After a while Nies appeared together with the village chief now. The village chief apparently came over to properly thank him again as he was busy dealing with the aftermath before.

As each villager would shower him with gratitude when he walked around the village, Hihiro secluded himself in his room in the inn, since it was annoying for him. His physical strength wasn't exhausted at all, but he was worn out mentally.

He once again checked his «Status».

-----  
Hihiro Okamura

Lvl 20

HP 320/320

MP 900/900

EXP 5672

NEXT 520

ATK 139 (200)

DEF 100 (115)

AGL 210 (212)

HIT 112 (120)

INT 189 (193)

«Magic Attribute» None

«Magic» Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked, Air Writing Unlocked)

«Title» Innocent Bystander, World Traveller, Word Master, Awakened One, Ripper

-----

## Chapter 10: Evila

A few inconsistencies popped up. First was the abnormal gain in the «Status». Of course he was happy about gaining two level at once as he had been level eighteen before.

But considering that his HP had been scarily past 200 until just now, this was certainly strange, even if he went up two levels. Same for his MP or other stats, which mostly had been still in the double digits.

(Well, I'm happy about it, but...)

Thinking so, he shifted his gaze at the «Title». The «Awakened One» caught his attention. He figured that he got the «Ripper» one from defeating the Chubby & Beanpole combo. But he had no explanation for the former one. For the time being, he clicked it to see the help.

«Awakened One»

Enhancement for a World Traveller. Great addition to the status upon reaching level twenty. Level ups will give a small bonus from now on.

He inadvertently let his surprise show on this cheat. Being a World Traveller had its benefits. Hiiro was quite pleased about this blessing despite not being a Hero. The next thing that caught his eye was «Air Writing Unlocked».

«Air Writing» MP cost: 100

Able to write words into the air with magic power. Activates by coming in contact with the target. It is also possible to shoot the written word and let it activate then, though it only flies straight like an arrow.

As he didn't really understand it, he tried it out. He concentrated magic power in his finger tip and wrote in midair while he imagined how he usually wrote on the ground. Upon that, a pale

word appeared. It showed “float”.

When he moved his finger, the word followed it and he imagined shooting it at the vase in the room like pulling a trigger, whereupon the word headed straight for the vase.

The moment it hit, the word stuck to the vase. After reciting activate then, the vase surprisingly floated.

“Wow, that’s handy.”

Like this it was possible to attack the opponent by firing at it without having to set up a trap on the ground.

Hihiro was astonished about his own power becoming more and more unfair, but felt somewhat happy as well. Incidentally, the floating vase suddenly fell down after around one minute.

The next day, the village chief was waiting in front of the inn to say his thanks to Hihiro again, when the inn keeper came rushing outside.

“Wh- What’s the matter?”

“Y- You see...”

Hihiro was gone. His room was completely empty with no sign of him.

“Say what!?”

In fact, he had left the village early in the morning before the sun was even up. Needless to say, he did so, because he predicted the village chief’s visit. And because it would get troublesome when the army arrived.

“Oh god, we still haven’t thanked him enough...”

“That’s so like him...”

Nies said with a smile and Panis nodded agreeing too.



“I wonder if I will ever see Hero again.”

The village chief petted Nies’ head and answered.

“You will. He’s our saviour after all.”

Everyone nodded in agreement with the village chief’s words.

“Acchoo!”

While making a big sneeze, Hiiro was making his way to “Surge”, a city near the country border. His <<Status>> had increased drastically, so he mowed down the appearing demons like weed.

He tried out his new “Piercer” too and it was easy to handle, killing demons with one strike due to its high attack power.

“Okay, I gotta pass the ‘Torchu Mountain Range’, then the ‘Maritone Highway’ leading to ‘Surge’.”

On the spread map, he confirmed his route.

“It’s still a long way.”

Grimacing from the scorching sun above him, he gazed upon the ‘Torchu Mountain Range’ in the distance.

On his way, he reviewed the possibilities of his <<Word Magic>>. He had tried out various things and got to know that the <<Word Magic>> had words with temporary and permanent effects.

For example, the word “float” only lasted for one minute, then lost its effect, whereas “extend” extended his blade and remained like that until he did something.

Likewise “hard” and “soft” were permanent effects while “flame” or “heat” stopped after one minute.

(Guess it goes like this? Changing the target’s nature or shape is permanent and everything else last for one minute?)

This thesis needed practical tests. It would be fatal to get a

«Rebound» when he used it unreasonable. His power was outstanding. He could easily see himself receiving quite the damage from a «Rebound» if he was unable to control it.

So he decided to refrain from using words that directly affected life and death of living creatures as much as possible. A «Rebound» from that would surely be lethal.

Magic meant imagination. Without a clear image, it wouldn't activate and even if it activated, it would cause a «Rebound» if the control was insufficient.

Hihiro fully understood why the old woman in the capital told him that knowledge was important.

Along the way he tried out various «Word Magic». He carried plenty of MP restoration pills, so he could noodle around to his heart's content, discovering a few merits and demerits.

(I wonder what the Heroes are doing right now)

He had started to forget their face [how cruel], but he faintly recalled Takashi and the others.

“OK! Now we're all E rank in the Guild.”

While holding the Guild Card with the violet border, Aoyama Takashi stroke a triumphant pose. The other three Heroes held a similar card.

“As expected of the Heroes. I am amazed how fast you raised your rank.”

Their instructor Vale Kimble brightened up his handsome face happily.

“Yeah! We also reached level fifteen! It's going well!”

Suzumiya Chika happily gave a thumbs-up.

“But it's still not enough to fight the ‘Evila’, right?”

“Indeed. The ‘Evila’ exceed ‘Humas’ in in physical strength and magic power by birth.”

“Haah~ The race traits aren’t to be trifled with.”

“Yeah, even in games, humans are all-purpose, but don’t have a specialized trait.”

“So we can only rely on tactics and weapons?”

“No, that only applies to the average ‘Humas’.”

Vale denied Takashi’s utterance.

“What do you mean?”

“You come from a different world. Heroes have various traits. Increased physical strength and magic power, not to forget the light magic, the weakness of ‘Evila’. That will be a great advantage.”

“Ah, right. I think we heard that before.”

“Yes. But there is also an attribute only the ‘Evila’ can use.”

“Darkness... I guess?”

The one, who answered, was Minamoto Shuri. Vale made a slightly long face.

“Yes. Darkness magic is quite strong. Many ‘Humas’ already fell victim to it.”

“And our light magic copes with it, right~”

Akamori Shinobu talked with a carefree smile.

“Right. While light magic is indeed powerful, it consumes a lot of magic power. If you use it wrongly...”

“That’s why we’re working on our team play.”

“Yes. Two attackers and two supporters. That gives a clear distinction for using light magic.”

“Well~ Unlike in games, we don’t have a turn system here. You don’t get much time to think during a fight~”

Shinobu made a valid point. One was always risking one’s life in a battle. Planning each attack in detail during battle would make one fall behind and at worst, cost one’s life.

For that reason, they formed a team and supported each other. By doing so, they could at least buy time for someone to analyze the situation carefully.

That way they could determine when to use light magic as well. But a perfect teamwork was needed for that.

“Listen, there are all sorts of ‘Evila’. You can defeat a weak opponent on your own, but I want you to refrain from doing so against the so-called ‘High-class Evila’.”

“Are they that dangerous?”

Shuri asked anxious.

“Quite so. Especially the guardian squad ‘Cruel’ under the direct control of the Demon Lord. Please never fight one of them with just two or less people. They are ‘Top-class Evila’, even above the ‘High-class Evila’.”

“Isn’t the ‘Cruel’ a force that protects the Demon Lord? I think they only consist of six members?”

“Yes and from them, the ‘Evila’ called Aquinas is once again in a different league.”

Vale turned pale as he recalled something.

“I- Is he that strong?”

Takashi asked with a gulp.

“In- Indeed. Back in the days when I guarded the border, I ran into him once. Aquinas is so terrifying that you could call him the devil incarnate.”

Back then, Aquinas just had passed near the border by chance. But his overwhelming aura prompted Vale's fellow soldiers to open fire against their better judgement.

Needless to say, their attacks couldn't harm him, whether they hit or not. Still, it caught his attention.

He had been flying through the air, stopped in midair and looked down on them with his sharp, red eyes. At that moment, every single guard there expected certain death without exception.

Some even thought about how they could die without pain. Just by being stared at, they realized what an abnormal existence he was and that they would all die.

For some reason all their weapons turned into ash and no one knew if he used magic for that or not. But in the next moment, his red hair fluttered and he left.

Except for a small number, everyone had fainted.

"You sure it wasn't the Demon Lord?"

Takashi speculated from the dreadful story, but Vale shook his head in denial.

"But I'm surprised you're still fighting after such an experience."

"Yeah, it makes no difference anyway."

"No difference?"

"Yes. Even if I do not fight, 'Humas' will be annihilated sooner or later. As a soldier, I would rather die fighting."

"Ohh~ So imposing~"

"Not really. Because I have given up hope either way."

Judging by his way of talking, he didn't think they had a chance for victory.

“But then the matter about summoning, about Heroes was brought up. Saviours, who protected us ‘Humas’ with their enormous strength in the past. We found our last hope.”

Vale looked the four into the eyes with a smile. They all reacted kind of bashful.

“I see. But if they are that strong, an attack is possible at any time, right?”

“Yes, the king was doubtful about why they do not attack when they are this strong, too.”

“Mhm~ But that works in our favour~”

“Yes. However, we cannot be lenient. We need to be ready at any time for their all-out attack.”

“Yeah, we just have to get stronger!”

“Leave it to us!”

“We’ll give our best!”

“Well, we’ll do everything in our might~”

Vale responded with a handsome smile to the reassuring words of these four.

## Chapter 11: Conference in the Demon Country

The country of Demons <<Xaos>> was located far north of <<Victorias>>.

One room in the castle of the Demon King, located within the country, had ‘Evila’ warriors sitting at a long table, looking at each other.

Three chairs were arranged on each side of the long table in the fashion of confronting each other. Five of them were occupied while another one person sat at a position overlooking them with an attendant standing next to it.

That made a sum of seven people in the room. The only standing person, a woman by the name of Kiria, spoke.

“I would like to open the demon conference now. First allow me to take attendance, beginning with the lowest ranking one like always.”

Then Kiria shifted her gaze to the person sitting the farthest away from her.

“<<Rank 6>>, Grayald-sama.”

“Yep.”

A young man in his 20s with darkish skin answered.

“<<Rank 5>>, Shublars-sama.”

“Here~ Fufu.”

A sociable and voluptuous woman answered with a smile.

“<<Rank 4>>, Ornoth-sama.”

A man with the face of a wolf nodded.

“«Rank 3», Teckil-sama is absent today due to other commitments.”

A small click of the tongue could be heard. It came from

“«Rank 2», Marione-sama.”

a man with a grim face, obviously a hardliner. He was frowning in a bad mood. Kiria continued without paying him any heed.

“«Rank 1», Aquinas-sama.”

“Yeah.”

A man with red hair muttered quietly.

“Now onto today’s agenda. If you please, Your Highness Eveam.”

Kiria turned the topic to the blonde girl sitting next to her, Eveam.

“Okay.”

She opened her closed eyes and was about to speak, when «Rank 2» Marione promptly raised his hand.

“...What’s wrong, Marione?”

“It is wrong on so many levels, Your Highness. Why are we missing one person for the conference?”

“Because I gave him a job to do.”

“A job? Is it more important than this conference?”

“Yes. Besides, I was going to touch upon this in the conference anyway. Hear me out first.”

“....Is that so.”

He still didn’t look satisfied, but backed out for now.

“Okay, I will be frank with you: The ‘Humas’ succeeded in summoning Heroes.”



“Is that verified, Your Highness?”

Shublars asked, so she nodded.

“Yeah, Teckil reported it. There is no doubt.”

“I see. You sent him into the <<Human Territory>>.”

Marione nodded understanding.

“Yeah, although I am having him look into the <<Beast Territory>> now.”

“Right, we need to be more wary about the ‘Gabranth’ than the ‘Humas’ anyway.”

“Indeed. The other day I got a report of my subordinators getting attacked. Of course they retaliated at once.”

Grayald stated as a matter of fact, but with a definite anger.

“Yeah, the Heroes certainly are a threat, but we can ignore them for now. The ‘Gabranth’ with their stronger physical abilities and their ‘disguise technique’ are extremely troublesome. Moreover, they’re belligerent.”

“They can’t use magic, but have this weird power instead. I think it’s still developing, so now’s the time to strike.”

Marione said that, but Eveam shook her head.

“No, as I told you before, we will not go to war.”

Marione suddenly slammed onto the table, attracting everyone’s attention.

“Are you out of your mind? Our brethren are getting killed! We have to smash them before they become an even greater threat!”

“No, then we will just follow the same path as the previous king! We are pursuing a world, where all races can live in peace!”

“So we just need to eliminate all hindrances!”

“No! Doing that will only bring about hatred! Conflict calls for more conflict, instigates the flames of war and ultimately destroys our <<Edea>>!”

“Then what! Are you telling us to sit back and accept their actions!?”

“Exactly!”

“Wha...!?”

He didn't expect her to affirm it, so he froze up.

“The previous king... My brother took power by killing our father and tried to create a world for only us 'Evila'. As a result we have the current situation. Is this what we want? Do you call a world, where each race glares, fight and hurts each other, a righteous one?”

Everyone shut up and listened to her words.

“My brother was too radical and was assassinated because of it. The 'Gabranth' were probably responsible for it, but that does not matter now. Anyway, excessive domination will result in strains without fail. These strains will increase, eventually turning into conflict. Isn't that sad? All living beings in this world have a right to live. Why do we have to fight over that...”

She expressed her words by casting her eyes down saddened. Kiria noticed that her shoulders were lightly trembling and softly placed her hand on her shoulders.

“I'm fine, Kiria. Thanks.”

Then she raised her face and looked at everyone.

“All races joining hands would be the best outcome, but even without that, there should be a way for us not hurt each other!”

“Such idealism.”

Marione discarded it with that.

“Yes, it is. But at this rate, the flow of blood will never end.”

“We are the ‘Evila’. Why do we have to watch out for other races?”

“Life in itself is a wonderful thing!”

“...”

Eveam was seventeen, but looked like eight years old. In Marione’s eyes, she was nothing but a brat. But the power in the gaze of this brat took away his breath for a moment.

“That is why we don’t fight at full power! Waging war is just absurd!”

“Mh~ But Your Highness, all the other races ignored your letters for a peace treaty.”

Shublars was right. Eveam was repeatedly sending out letters to reconcile, but there was no reply. They didn’t respond at all.

“That’s just as unreasonable. During the previous king’s reign, the killing was endless and he used to stab them in the back through means of letters too. It’s not strange to say that we are bound together with them through hatred. So it’s no wonder that they consider a treaty for peace from our side as some prank.”

With sighs, Grayald uttered like speaking to himself.

“Presumable neither the ‘Gabranth’, nor the ‘Humas’ can ever forgive my brother’s atrocities. I understand that. However, unless someone severs the chain of hatred, the sorrow will only increase.”

“Are you suggesting we are to be the edge to sever that chain?”

Marione said with a mocking smile.

“Indeed.”

“Impossible. We lost people too. You can’t expect them to suddenly accept that. Are you saying we should stay low until peace is achieved? When will that be? Maybe at our ruin?”

“No! I’ll protect the ‘Evila!’”

“Don’t make me laugh. Everything you said so far only endangers us!”

Even Eveam showed an expression troubled for words towards Marione’s vigour.

“Nevertheless... I’ll...”

“The ‘Humas’ will train their Heroes and attack us before long. The ‘Gabranth’ are just waiting for their chance, too. Either way, we’re out of time. We can only kill each other until one side perishes. Please withdraw the ceasefire!”

Yes, the reason the ‘Evila’ didn’t attack other races was that Eveam used her authority as the Demon Lord to enforce a ceasefire. The Demon Lord’s orders were absolute. Since ancient times, capital punishment awaited the one that went against them.

“Let us remove all hindrances with all our might before it’s too late! Your Highness!”

Hearing these words, Eveam fell silent for a while. Lifting her head, she looked at Marione. But her expression showed no signs of yielding to him and seeing that, Marione frowned.

“I will not withdraw the ceasefire!”

“Your Highness!”

“Why don’t you calm down a bit, Marione-dono?”

“Shut up, you beastman defect!”

Marione scowled at Ornoth, who had interjected, ready to kill him.

“To begin with, why is a <<Taboo>> like you here! You’re just—”

“Shut up!”

“!?”

A sudden bellow. The atmosphere became stiff from Eveam's shouted words. She glared fiercely at Marione.

"Are you defying the Demon Lord's order?"

"Grr.... Hmpf!"

He left the room with a snort.

"Shouldn't you be stopping him, Your Highness?"

She showed a faint smile to Shublar's question.

"N- No... My conviction will not falter."

Then Aquinas, silent until now, spoke.

"He has a short temper, but that's just his own way to worry about the future of the ,Evila'."

Of course he meant Marione.

"I know."

"His wife and child were killed by the 'Gabranth'."

Orneth quietly closed his eyes. Eveam clenched her fist frustrated by looking at him. She understood had Marione held an extraordinary grudge because of that incident. Still, she believed it to be wrong to dominate out of hatred.

"You are dismissed for today."

Looking the complete opposite from before, she left the place spiritless and heartbroken together with Kiria. The others left one by one too, only leaving Aquinas and Ornoth behind.

"Don't take it to heart. As I said just now, Marione just has a short temper."

Ornoth inadvertently smiled on the sudden words from Aquinas.

"No, I'm more worried about Her Highness."

“...?”

“What do you think about her ideals?”

“...I think it's naive. Too naive.”

“....”

“However,”

“Mh?”

“If a world without grief really exists, I would like to see it.”

“...Yeah.”

“But as long as we're the only ones striving for it, it will be futile.”

“You're right.”

“...Someone.”

“Mh?”

“If there was someone unbiased against races who could act as a mediator...”

“It's not feasible for Her Highness?”

“It's impossible for the princess... no, Her Highness on her own. Besides, she's the representative of us ‘Evila’.”

“Right. We need someone that is neither affiliated with the ‘Humas’, ‘Gabranth’, ‘Pheom’ and ‘Evila’. He could act as a mediator.”

“Now that's idealistic.”

“Still, you'll continue to support Her Highness, right?”

“Yeah.”

“And I swore to support you back then.”

“.....How duteous.”

Giving each other a faint smile, they stood up from their seats.  
Aquinas thought:

(A mediator... That's really idealistic.)

## Chapter 12: Desire for Meat

The “Torchu Mountain Range” was a hangout for demons. Our protagonist Hiroyuki Okamura had to pass through there to get to his destination “Surge” and thus was...

“UWAAAAH!”

running away with all his might. As for the reason, an annoying amount of demons was chasing after him.

“D- Damn! Who would’ve thought that this was the ‘Torchu Disaster Plant!’”

He slipped into a gap in the cliff, letting the demons go past him.

How did it come to this? He had finally arrived at the mountain range, but noticed that his food was running out.

While he roamed around, he found a plant growing on the roadside. That plant bore fruits, which emitted a sweet fragrance like strawberries. Moreover, the fruits were rather large and he plugged the plant, thinking it could serve as food.

However, underneath the plant didn’t have roots, but was shaped in a creepy humanoid form out of wood. It suddenly started screaming, so his heart nearly stopped beating.

And then he remembered that the woman at the counter in the Guild taught him about the demon called “Torchu Disaster Plant” before coming here.

It wasn’t a plant, but a full-fledged demon. Once pulled out, it screamed shrill and attracted all nearby demons.

Not knowing that it was the “Torchu Disaster Plan”, he froze up on the spot without understanding what was going on, whereupon a swarm of demons advanced upon him.

(Oh man, this world’s really interesting)



Even while thinking so, he held his breath and checked the surroundings. It looked like the demons were gone.

“Fuh. I think I could’ve beaten them, but so many showed up so suddenly...”

There were easily over ten of them. For now it was the right decision to hide.

He walked on, reminding himself to be careful about the “Torchu Disaster Plant” from now on.

“Still, I’m hungry.”

Even more so after running. He restlessly looked around for something eatable and sniffed out an aromatic smell from somewhere.

“Guess I’ll check it out.”

He headed towards the smell. After a while, he found a small stream and some fishes being grilling nearby on skewers at a fire. The great smell stirred up his hunger.

Gulping down, he surveyed the area, looking for the one responsible for this. But as far as he could tell, no one was around.

“Mhm~”

No one around. Delicious grilled fish right in front of him. An empty stomach. And again, no one around.

“.....Time to dig in.”

He couldn’t hold himself back. Just at the moment he tried to take the fish,

“Get awaaaaay!”

A terrible killing intent came from behind him, so he jumped widely to the side. At the place where he had been at before, now stood a man thrusting a wooden pole into the ground.

“Get away! I won’t give you any! That’s my food!”

While saying so, he pointed the pole at him like pointing a finger. The man had short ruffled hair in blue colour. He looked like in his 30s. Even covered by armour, it was noticeable that he had quite a muscular build.

He carried a broadsword on his back, which lead Hihiro to think that things would get troublesome if he drew it.

(Still...)

Glancing at the fish, his stomach growled again.

“Boy! Name yourself! Trying to snatch food from me, the great Arnold, is inexcusable! State your name!”

With half-opened eyes, Hihiro thought: What a bothersome fellow.

“I’ve nothing to give to you! State your name and begone!”

It seemed he had to state his name no matter what, but he considered what to do.

“.....Mh, first, hear me out.”

“What’re you acting all composed for, you thief! I won’t be tricked! This is my food! After all, I caught it!”

The man asserted by impressively throwing out his chest.

“These fishes are yours?”

“Yeah! What about it?”

“Okay, hand it over.”

“Don’t take me for a fool!”

“I’m starving here, so hand it over.”

“G- Grrr! So demanding. How did your parent raise you, you damn brat!”

“Who cares about that. First of all, hand it over, grumpy old man.”

“Say what! Who are you calling grumpy!”

He flew into a passion, making you think he would explode if angered any more. Just when Hiiro thought the man might actually transform, someone came out of the bushes with a rustling.

“U- Uncle...”

It was a girl around the age of ten. She had silver hair that reached till her waist, but she wore a headgear like a woollen hat that concealed her hair.

Her big eyes had clear sky-blue pupils. But right now, these eyes were filled with anxiety and her small body trembled lightly.

“O- Oh, Muir~! Give me a moment! I’ll educate this ruffian with my fist of love now!”

For some reason the man was running his mouth about him, but Hiiro glanced at the little girl, whereupon she hid herself startled.

“.....Hah. I understand.”

“Mh? You understand what, brat?”

“I won’t ask for all the fishes, just share a few with me.”

“Were you never taught how to ask for a favour, brat!”

“Huh? I won’t compromise any further.”

“You’re in no position to say that!”

Tightly grasping his pole, the man became inflated with hostility. Then he leaped at Hiiro with quite a speed. Hiiro stepped back right away, dodging the pole attack from his opponent.

(So fast... And he isn’t even serious yet.)

While dodging, Hiiro measured his opponent’s strength by observing him. But his opponent did the same.

(Mhm, this brat has some good moves)

Arnold was just testing him, but having his attack so easily evaded from seeing it the first time, he concluded that Hihiro was quite capable. Then the two of them glared at each other from a distance.

Hihiro grabbed the hilt of his “Piercer”. The man also seized the broadsword on his back. Tension was in the air and silence spread, whereupon a scream resounded. It came from the girl called Muir.

Three Barbarous Kong, oversized gorilla demons, had appeared behind the girl. They were probably lured in by the smell of the grilled fish and ready to attack the girl at any moment.

“MUIIIIIIIIR!”

The man drew his broadsword and went straight for the Barbarous Kong. His speed was in a whole different league than before. The demons were startled as if there were dazzled.

Arnold succeeded in cutting off the arm that tried to seize Muir by applying the momentum of his charge in his sword swing.

“GUAAAAH!?”

While spraying blood around, it swung its other arm, but the man parried it with his sword and desperately protected Muir behind him.

“U- Uncle...”

“It’s okay! Leave this to me and take cover.”

He tried to tell her to take shelter, but another Barbarous Kong appeared behind him.

“Damn!”

At this rate, Muir was in danger. But he had his hands full with the three demons in front of him right now.

(Kuh! What now! Do I use it... No, it would endanger Muir too...!)

At that time, he heard a voice from the distant.

“Hey~ Can I eat now?”

In a completely inappropriate mood, Hiroyo gazed upon the grilled fishes in front of him.

“Hey, hold it! Eating now!? Colour me surprised! Read the atmosphere, damn it!”

“Say what you will. By the way, having trouble?”

“I- If you see it, help me!”

“Nope. Why would I’ve to work for free? Ridiculous.”

“Say what!”

The man ward off the demon’s attack while his eyes became bloodshot. With the momentum of repelling it at once, he stood in front of Muir. But four Barbarous Kong were surrounding them. With one moment of carelessness, Muir would be in danger.

...What to do?

Seeing Arnold cornered, Hiroyo remained composed. His hunger won over him, his stomach growling endlessly.

(So, what to do... The growling is annoying. Do I secretly snatch some food? Nah, he’ll notice...)

Just as he was staring at the sweet-smelling fish, a knife was thrown at his feet. Taken aback by the knife pierced into the ground, he looked at the culprit.

“Hey, what’s your problem, old man.”

Yes, Arnold had thrown that knife.

“Okay~ Listen well, fool! Y- You can have these fishes! So help me out! Th- This is a deal! If you want to eat, obey me!”

“Nope.”

“Wha!?”

He never expected him to turn him down at this point.

“Right now, I can just snatch the fishes and run away!”

“You devil!”

“Can’t take a joke, huh.”

“Don’t ask for the impossible in this situation!”

Hihiro truly handled things at his own pace.

(Oh well, let’s work a bit for the fish...)

The moment he thought that, Arnold cut off a demon’s arm and that very arm brilliantly fell down on the fire.

“....Aw.”

“N- No waaaaaay!?”

The fishes were cruelly squashed by the arm and got coated with sand and pebbles, making them non-edible. Seeing that, Hihiro gradually lost his spirit and then...

“...Well, time to move along.”

“Hey, hey, hold it!”

Hihiro was about to leave when he was hastily stopped.

“What? Since my pay turned into this, I lost all my motivation.”

“Grr...”

He could’ve forced Hihiro to take responsibility if it had been due to his ineptitude, but Hihiro hadn’t agreed yet and the negotiations in form of the fishes had failed due to Arnold’s fault, albeit accidentally.

But if he couldn’t get Hihiro’s cooperation, he would have to fight

the ferocious demons while protecting Muir. He would've no trouble against them on his own, but since he had to protect Muir, it was difficult.

"F- Fine! Listen, brat!"

"Mh?"

Hihiro, about to leave, turned around on Arnold's shout.

"Sheesh! It's my last resort! I- I'll give you some of the 'Aqua Hound Meat', so help meee!"

"....What's that?"

"You don't know!? It's a first-grade meat! Eating it grilled, will make your tongue melt and get you addicted!"

".....Oho."

Hihiro's eyes sparkled.

"Addicted, huh..."

Hearing that reminded him of the "Addicted Seafood Noodles" that he had eaten in <<Victorias>>. It had been delicious. Incredible delicious. He wanted to eat it again by all means.

Therefore he reacted to the word "addicting" from Arnold. As Hihiro loved eating, it was the perfect opportunity to eat something good.

"Hey, you better not be lying."

"Huh? Of course not! But don't get me wrong! Not everything, you hear! Whoops!"

Arnold narrowly dodged the claw of a Barbarous Kong.

"Damn it! Listen, brat! I guarantee the taste! But I'm only giving you one portion!"

At that time, a Barbarous Kong seized Muir and lifted her towards its mouth. Apparently it attempted to eat her.

“Kyaa!”

“Shit!”

Just when he thought that Muir had fallen into the enemy’s hands, its arm was chopped off.

“GUAAAH!?”

The girl fell from its hand towards the ground. Muir tightly shut her eyes, rolled herself up and braced herself for the impact. Arnold saw that and shouted. Then...

“Easy there.”

“...Eh?”

However Muir only received a soft sensation. Not a shred of pain. When she slowly opened her eyes, there stood Hihiro with “Piercer” in his hand.

“...Can you stand?”

“Eh, ah... Yes.”

“Then stand up. And you’re in the way, stand back.”

Muir looked at Hihiro absent-minded. Arnold made a sigh of relief once he confirmed Muir’s well-being. However, Hihiro frowned displeased, bothered by their attitudes.

“Hey, get away already, shorty.”

“Ah, yes...”

While saying so, she distanced herself from him.

“Old man, don’t stare into empty space and fight!”

“Sh- Shut up! Right back at you, don’t blame me when you die!”

“Ridiculous. As if these guys could kill me.”



Arnold took a stance with his sword for attacking and felt a shiver running down his back as he sensed Hiiro's thirst for blood.

Hiiro totally intended to slaughter the enemy. To kill them without mercy. That was how he handled demons attacking him.

His hostility void of any other emotions turned into bloodlust and overruled the area. Even the Barbarous Kong reacted to that and all four focussed onto Hiiro.

"Too troublesome to deal with them one after another. Old man, line them up."

"Huh!? Say what?"

"Just do it. Talking later."

"You little... Fine!"

Sighing resigning, Arnold sharply glared at the scattered Barbarous Kong.

"I'll do it, but fall back if you don't want to get dragged into it."

"So bossy."

Even while complaining, Hiiro took a step backwards, curious about what he would do. Then Arnold held his broadsword with a backhand grip and pushed the sword from the ground upwards while spinning.

"<<Explosive Wind Claw>>!"

Suddenly an enormous blast raged upwards from the ground, no, with Arnold as the centre. Even Hiiro, standing apart, got a bit wobbly.

The demons in the maelstrom were lifted up into the air with no way to resist.

"Oho, not bad."

Seeing that, Hihiro muttered in admiration. Arnold could've sent them flying like that anytime, but didn't do so as Muir had been close by.

(I don't feel any magic power from it. It isn't magic?)

The Barbarous Kong were whirled up in midair while vacuum blades cut up their bodies. Before long, they fell down, all lined up like Hihiro had requested.

"Hmm, good enough in the air?"

"Yeah, perfect."

Hihiro answered, then aimed at the Barbarous Kong falling before his sword.

"H- Hey, what are you...?"

"Shut up and watch."

He bluntly discarded Arnold's question. Arnold became sullen, but watched attentively like he was told.

Hihiro concentrated magic power in his fingertip and wrote "extend" on his blade. Yes, he used «Word Magic».

"Perforate, 'Piercer'."

Then the rapidly extending blade pierced through the falling Barbarous Kong. It smoothly went through the flesh, uncertain if it was due to the gravity or the sword's sharpness.

Arnold had his mouth gaping wide open on this scene. Knowing little of that, Hihiro slowly let his sword drop to in front of him after he was sure that it had pierced all four of them.

The ground shook greatly upon the impact from the fall of four Barbarous Kong. The four were tied together through the extended "Piercer".

Hihiro felt through the blade how they passed away one after

another while groaning.

“One skewer of Barbarous Kong ready.”

These words marked the end of the battle.

## Chapter 13: Tasting the Aqua Hound Meat

The battle ended and Hiiro reverted the length of his sword by writing “original” on it. At any rate, the sharpness of the piercing could only be called first-rate. It easily went through the opponent like a hot knife through butter.

(Nothing less from a sword specializing in piercing)

“Y- You... what did you do?”

“Shouldn’t you be worrying about the shorty instead?”

He had no intention to explain it, so he quickly changed the topic. Then Arnold quickly shouted Muir’s name. She slowly appeared from behind a rock, where she had been hiding.

“A- Are you hurt?”

“N- No.”

“G- Good~”

As he was relieved from the bottom of his heart, he sunk down on the ground. After a glance at him, Hiiro sheathed his sword. At that moment, his stomach growled and he headed towards Arnold.

“Hey, old man. Keep your promise.”

“.....What are you talking about?”

“Oho...”

Hiiro drew his sword from the sheath a bit with a clink.

“J- Just kidding! Put that away!”

The man shouted in a panic. Hiiro sighed in a bad mood.

“Just give me that addicting meat. My stomach is totally empty.”

“.....Hah. Sorry, Muir. I never imagined we would eat it here...”

He dropped his shoulders with a boo-hoo-hoo, but Muir shook her head shortly.

“N- No. He helped us after all. B- Besides, food tastes better with more people.”

“Uohhh! What a good child you are, Muir!”

He embraced Muir while shouting emotionally. Normally this would be a heart-warming scene, but Hiroyuki said while pressing onto his stomach.

“Just get on with it. I’m starving here.”

A vein stood out on Arnold’s forehead due to his attitude, but he realized that it was no use saying anything to Hiroyuki, so he lead the two with a sigh.

“Come here. I’ll prepare it.”

The two of them followed after Arnold to the earlier fireplace.

“Ehm~ I think it was... Ah, here it is.”

He rummaged about behind some rock and got out some large bag. Opening that bag, he took out yet another bag. Something thick and heavy seemed to be inside that bag.

“Is that it?”

“Yeah, inside is.... this!”

What he pulled out was meat tied up with a string so that it wouldn’t fall apart.

“This is <<Aqua Hound Meat>>. Moreover, it’s the shanks, the most delicious part!”

He thrust it before him as if to ask for his opinion.

“Whatever, let me eat already.”

“You sure are a self-important brat. Eat some fruits until it’s done. But leave some for me.”

“...I’ll try my best.”

“No, no. Leave some for me!”

Hihiro ate two out of the six red fruits with the size of a fist, which Arnold took out of the bag. It was a <<Gorin Fruit>> that he had often eaten before.

“More.”

“Already! I gotta prepare the meat too, so show some patience.”

Saying so, the man took out a big stone from the fire place. By the looks of it, the bright red stone was insanely hot.

The meat was placed on top of it. Then it sizzled appetizing and gradually changed colour brilliantly, releasing meat juice and an aromatic smell.

All three couldn’t help but gulp down their saliva. The young Muir was unable to take her eyes off the meat too.

“Hey, isn’t it good already?”

At the end of his patience, Hihiro asked, but Arnold shook his head.

“No, not yet. A certain procedure is needed to bring out the best taste of this meat.”

“Certain procedure?”

The juice temporarily stopped oozing out of the meat, so the string holding it together was cut. By doing so, the meat gradually swelled up.

“O- Oh, what’s this!?”

“That’s meat swelling, unique to <<Aqua Hound Meat>>! Letting out

the excess fat from the meat, it swells up. It approximately becomes thrice as big.”

Amazing. Its original size was already around the size of a volleyball. Three times of that was rather big.

When the swelling hit its peak, it was similar to jelly, not like meat at all. He questioned if it was really meat, but the smell answered it for him. Before he knew it, his drool overflowed.

“Okay, Muir, get the containers!”

Arnold was pretty excited too. Muir took out three containers from the bag while nodding happily.

Arnold quickly cut the meat in a straight horizontal line with the knife hanging from his waist. Surprisingly enough, the knife cut through it without any resistance as if it was pudding. After splitting it into three portions, he put it into the three containers.

“H- Here you go! Ah, don’t eat yet, brat!”

Hihiro tried to dig in without delay, but Arnold stopped him.

“What? Do you want to torture me?”

His stomach was giving the alarm for a while now. If left alone any longer, something might happen.

“Don’t be stupid. It’ll only be perfect with this!”

Saying so, he pulled out a long container with a sauce from the bag.

“And that is?”

“A special sauce made from the <<Orczy Fruit>>!”

“Whatever. It’ll taste even better with that?”

“Yeah, forget about getting addicted, it’ll send you straight to heaven.”

“Heh, interesting. Count me in!”

The sauce had a colour like ketchup, but was more fluid than solid. It had a faint sweet and fruity smell.

“Okay! Now it’s perfect!”

“Yep!”

“Mhm.”

Each of them responded.

“””Time to eat!”””

Hihiro used the received fork in place of a knife and cut into the meat very easily. It was incredible tender. He cut an appropriate mouthful and ate it.

“Ohh.....!?”

A tingling ran through his head.

(It- It’s gone!?)

Yes, the piece in his mouth had melted and disappeared. Still, he was by no means unsatisfied. The meat had disappeared, but its strong flavour intensely stimulated his taste buds.

(Th- This is...!)

He took another mouthful. And yet another.

(I can’t stop!)

It was like his body was moving on its own. His whole body was craving for more meat. Each mouthful of the tender and juicy meat felt like his mouth was stuffed, but he didn’t become stuffed at all. He could still go for more. And it was emphasised by...

(This sauce!)

This sweet, yet somewhat sour sauce gave the meat a refreshing



flavour, stimulating your appetite even more. He could really eat this with no end. The other two were devouring it in a frenzy too.

Then the quite large piece of meat was gone in no time. All three had an entranced expression. Hihiro never expected such an effect from it.

“....Fuh, so what do you say about this meat, brat?”

Hihiro closed his eyes and immersed himself in the aftertaste. Then he opened his eyes a bit and leaked a tepid sigh.

“Well done, my servant.”

“I know, right. After all, this meat, wait, who are you calling your servant!”

“Just a joke. Don’t make a fuss, you’ll just ruin the mood.”

“It’s your damn fault!”

“Awawah!”

Seeing their exchange, Muir was bewildered.

“Hmpf, whatever. So, brat, what’s your name?”

“Name yourself first.”

“You’re really so damn self-important! Geez, I’m Arnold Ocean. An adventurer and cook!”

“A cook? I see, that explains your cooking method.”

“Yeah, I travelled all around the world for cooking receipts. Consider yourself lucky.”

“And this shorty is?”

“Hey, listen to me!”

Arnold retorted, then continued with a sigh.

“She’s Muir Castreia. I picked her up during my travel.”

“Oh, so in this world children are lying around.”

“As if! They aren’t treasure chests!”

“Not?”

“Of course not! Some stuff happened in her village.”

It indicated that he didn’t want to tell more about it. Muir also cast down her eyes somewhat sorrowful.

(Got their reasons, huh. Well, I ain’t interested anyway)

A rather pragmatic protagonist.

## Chapter 14: First Comrades?

“So, what’s your name?”

“Why do I have to give you my name?”

“Huh? Come again?”

Arnold was troubled how to react to every single of Hihiro’s unforeseen replies.

“Just kidding.”

“It was a joke!? That’s so annoying!”

“I’m Hihiro Okamura. An adventurer and... bookworm.”

“What the! The last one’s just a hobby!”

“Fufufu”

There Muir suddenly let out a small voice.

“Oh, Muir’s cute when laughing after all.”

Being told so, Muir blushed bashful. Arnold made a disgustingly delighted expression as well.

“.....Are you pervert into little girls?”

“Hey, hold it! I can’t let that pass!”

“Uhh.... I’m not... a little girl.”

The two of them got angry.

“Right! She might not look like it, but she’s twelve already! She can even give birth!”

Arnold said proudly with a thumps-up, but the little girl next to him glared at him intensely.

“D- Don’t say such embarrassing things!”

Seeing her talk angrily with her cheeks puffed up, Hihiro realized something.

“So different from before.”

He had imagined her to be a quiet child that never got angry, far away from being cheeky.

“Mh? You mean Muir? Well, duh, anyone would shrink back when a crude villainous guy with an evil look appears, not just my cute Muir.”

“Okay, sounds like you would like to taste my sword!”

Hihiro emitted a bloodlust with his glasses glittering.

“Pft! Just try! If it’s to protect Muir, I’ll even eat poop!”

“.....You fail as a human being.”

Muir was stumped with mixed feelings too.

“Pah! She’s just that important! By the way, I got a question for you, Hihiro.”

“I’m not gonna tell you a thing about my ability.”

“Grr...”

It was about that after all.

“But I never saw a magic that stretches a sword before.”

“It’s not just a sword, but a katana.”

“A katana? Now that you mention it. So that’s a katana? Looks pretty well-made.”

“No clue, but it’s easy to handle.”

“Mhm~ So regarding the—”

“I ain’t telling you anything about my magic.”

“Why! What’s the harm! I shared my meat with you!”

“That was compensation for my help. The matter is closed.”

“Ugg...”

There was nothing to be done about it.

“Anyway, I’m surprised you can chit-chat with a total stranger.”

“Mh? Well, someway we ended up eating together after all. Besides, you don’t look like a bad guy.”

“What makes you think that? I’m human after all. I might attack that ‘Gabranth’ shorty.”

“!?”

In an instant, Muir turned pale and Arnold seized his broadsword. His expression was full of hostility. But Hiiro calmly looked at them.

“Wh- Whatsoever could you be talking about?”

“Your reaction tells me more than enough.”

Arnold’s reaction proved that Hiiro had been right.

“Kuh.... How did you know?”

“....Mm.”

He pointed his finger at a certain place. It was Muir’s bottom.

“B- Bastard! You were lusting after Muir!?”

As he seemed to have a huge misunderstanding, Hiiro reluctantly spelled it out for him.

“Take a closer look. It’s moving around the whole time... her tail, that is.”

“Eh?”

This time, Muir exclaimed surprised. She quickly checked behind her and had her breath taken away.

“H- Hey, Muir...”

Arnold had frozen up too.

“S- Sorry!”

Apparently her tail, hidden inside her clothes, had unintentionally popped out due to the delicious meal.

“The tail is a trait of the ‘Gabranth’, right? And that hat is hiding the other trait, the animal ears, right?”

The two fell silent on Hihiro’s utterance. Arnold then spoke with a troubled expression.

“.....Indeed, she’s a ‘Gabranth’. But Muir... we have done nothing wrong! So don’t tell anyone!”

He looked at him earnestly. At the same time, Arnold got ready to draw his sword anytime... but that was needless.

“Tell anyone? Why would I? I don’t care at all if you’re human or a beastman.”

“...Huh?”

The two had their mouths gaping wide-open.

“That she’s from a different race doesn’t change the fact that she’s a living being, right?”

“Y- You...”

“To be honest, I don’t give a fuck. What’s so fun about spreading rumours?”

Hihiro too asked earnestly with a frown. Seeing that, Arnold burst out in a laughter.

“Kakakakaka! You’re a funny guy, Hihiro!”

“Don’t laugh at me. I’ll stab ya.”

“No, I see now. Of course there are guys like you...”

Saying so, Arnold turned his bottom to him.

“....What’s the big idea?”

Hihiro grimaced from suddenly having an ass shoved into his face. He seriously considered stabbing him once.

“Just look.”

There a tail appeared from above the trousers. Hihiro widened his eyes a bit.

“....You are one too.”

“Yeah. I- we are ‘Gabranth’.”

Then he heard from them that they were on their way to cross the border into the ‘Gabranth’ continent. But since this was the ‘Humas’ continent, it would without a doubt call forth a disaster when their true identities were found out, given the current state of affairs in the world.

People were more understanding towards them than with the “Evila” and didn’t kill them on the spot, but they undeniable attracted attention. Not to forget the radicals. Arnold had seen more than enough of these.

For that very reason, they had hid their true identities and pretended to be humans.

Hihiro glanced at Arnold’s head in search for a certain something when faced with a beastman. Noticing his gaze, Arnold laughed shortly and asked.

“Wondering why I have no animal ears?”

Yes, Arnold wore no headgear. Yet no animal ears could be seen.

“Wanna know?”

“Not really.”

“I see, if you want to know that bad, I’ll tell you.”

“Didn’t you hear me?”

“Don’t be like that. Besides... it’s not completely unrelated to you.”

After these words, Arnold started talking before Hiiro could reply.

“You see... I lost them.”

“Lost them?”

Hiiro asked back by reflex.

“Yeah, because I’m a former slave.”

The slave system. It was a system mainly established for humans to persecute beastman. Kidnapped at a young age, they got a crest called «Magic Lock Crest» engraved onto their bodies. The mark prevented them from running away or rebelling by letting the magic power in their bodies react to such attempts, giving them intense pain.

Long ago, when the beastman had no own country, no status or authority, many of them were turned into slaves by humans as domestic animals.

Nowadays the slave system was abolished, but was still used behind the scenes in form of slave markets.

Arnold was a victim to that and the human, who bought him as a slave, had his animal ears ripped out. His ears, the pride of a beastman, had been taken away eternally just because the human had happened to be in a bad mood.

“I see now.”



It was related to Hiiro, since he was a human too. One of the 'Humas', who persecuted the beastmen, not just Arnold.

"One way or another, I got rid of the <Magic Lock Crest> and fled."

"Can it be removed that easily?"

"Nah, no one but the master can erase it. Though it automatically disappears when the master dies."

"Then you..."

"Yeah, I couldn't do it myself, but I had a guy that knew about how I, how we slaves were treated, do it."

With the death of his master, Arnold officially became free. Hearing this story, Muir too became despondent and looked saddened.

"Well, after I got my freedom, I became a travelling cook! Sparkling, ain't I?"

"The sparkling aside, you sure had a tough life. Normally it wouldn't be strange to have a trauma about humans."

The fact that he was talking with Hiiro like this now was a mystery in itself.

"Let bygones be bygones. Not to forget, the one, who helped me, was a 'Humas' as well."

"I would totally go for revenge. Doing this and that..."

"Y- You're scaring me... Pooh! Anyway, I'm happy right now and that's all that matters."

He said while petting Muir's head. She narrowed her eyes pleased.

"Reminds me, what're you doing in this area, Hiiro? A quest?"

"I have no obligation to—"

“answer me. Yeah, yeah, enough of that. What’s the harm in telling me at least that?”

Sure, there was no harm, but he had no reason to either. It was merely Arnold’s curiosity. And not just his, Muir also stared at him attentively.

“.....Haah. I intend to...”

The two hung on Hihiro’s every word. He spoke slowly...

“cross the border.”

“...Eh? Y- You mean...?”

“Yeah, just like you two.”

“Why! Why’s a human like you going to the beastman continent!”

“Huh? Obviously because I wanna see it.”

“....Come again?”

“I don’t give a damn about politics. I do what I want and stop at nothing, not even killing, if someone stands in my way.”

“.....Pft.”

Arnold burst out in laughter again.

“What’s so funny, pervert?”

“Hey, is that title a given now!?”

“Anyway, I’m just doing the same as you guys.”

Arnold suddenly said with a serious look.

“It’s not a field trip, man. The ‘Gabranth’ are currently trigger-happy in more than one way. If they spot a human, it won’t end well.”

“Fine by me. I’ll turn the tables on them!”

“...Are you serious?”

“Naturally. I’ve no reason to run away.”

“The beastman are strong.”

“But I’m stronger.”

Since he had the <<Word Magic>>, he believed that it would work out.

“You don’t say now. I’m getting more and more interested in you.”

“Stop it, you’re giving me shivers. I don’t swing that way.”

“Neither do I, damn it!”

Arnold then shouted “Can’t you take this serious?” angrily, whereas Hihiro responded “Probably not” indifferently. Watching over their exchange, Muir once again spilled a small smile.

“Anyway, our meeting must be some kind of fate. And we’re heading in the same direction too. Wanna go together?”

“Stop messing around. What nonsense is that? I’m just fine by...”

Saying so, he suddenly made a somewhat musing face and fell silent, so Arnold asked him.

“Wh- What’s wrong?”

“You meant to say: Please come with us. Right?”

“Grr... I swear... this brat is...”

He glared at him while grinding his teeth, but sighed right afterwards.

“Haah~ I can’t win against you with words. Fine, we’ll come with you.”

“Do want you want.”

Originally Hiroyuki had planned to act alone, but this was a good opportunity to learn about the beastman. It was definitely better to have some background knowledge about his destination, the beastman continent. Therefore he permitted them to accompany him.

“Ah, before I forget it.”

Suddenly Arnold glared at him with narrowed eyes.

“What?”

“Just a warning.”

“Tell me.”

“.....Don't lay hands on Muir.”

“I'm normal, you pervert.”

“Don't screw with me! I'm super normal, you fool!”

“Mh? That's a first. I certainly don't have an interest in little girls, but I was sure you had?”

“Okay, let's take this outside, you worthless brat!”

“We're already outside, Mr. Paedophile.”

“Don't call me that!”

Muir wearily shrugged her shoulders on their never-changing exchange and whispered with a voice so quiet that it couldn't be heard by anyone.

“Muh, I'm not a little girl.”

Her utterance was gone with the wind.

## Chapter 15: The Heroes hear Rumours about him.

“Aw, my shoulders are so stiff~”

The one rolling his shoulders exhausted was one of the Heroes summoned to <<Victorias>>, Aoyama Takashi. Next to him stood the other three Heroes, looking just as exhausted.

The captain of the second division of the army, Vale Kimble, stood in front of them while watching these four.

“Good job. The current quest was quite rewarding again.”

The quest had been to hunt Stinger Bats in the <<Droke Cave>>. It was put up because their population was too big and they lately started to attack the town.

Moreover, since poisonous demons were living in the <<Droke Cave>> too and footing was bad in the dark, it was given a rather high rank, namely C.

However, the four of them had a high level and a superb teamwork, so they managed to hunt over a hundred Stinger Bats. That should take care of the quest, so they returned to the castle.

“The EXP from all the demons sure was worth it.”

When Takashi said that, everyone nodded in response.

“Yes and we discovered some flaws in our teamwork, so we can work on that now.”

Suzumiya Chika wiped her sweat with a towel.

“Then let us take a look at your <<Status>> now.”

They confirmed it like Vale told them.

-----

Taishi Aoyama

Lvl 23

HP 120/406

MP 89/370

EXP 7200

NEXT 987

ATK 212 (263)

DEF 195 (210)

AGL 130 (137)

HIT 152 (158)

INT 119 (122)

«Magic Attribute» Fire, Wind, Lightning, Light

«Magic»      Fireball (Fire, Attack)

Flame Lance (Fire, Attack)

Wind Cutter (Wind, Attack)

Cyclone (Wind, Attack)

Thunder Shock (Lightning, Attack)

Thunder Break (Lightning, Attack)

Lighting (Light, Effect)

Light Arrow (Light, Attack)

«Title» Hero, World Traveller, Harem Creator, Awakened One

-----

-----  
Chika Suzumiya

Lvl 23

HP 134/373

MP 65/340

EXP 7200

NEXT 987

ATK 200 (250)

DEF 200 (210)

AGL 140 (155)

HIT 145 (148)

INT 120 (128)

«Magic Attribute» Fire, Earth, Ice, Light

«Magic»      Fireball (Fire, Attack)

Flame Lance (Fire, Attack)

Grave (Earth, Attack)

Earthquake (Earth, Attack)

Ice Needle (Ice, Attack)

Ice Tornado (Ice, Attack)

Lighting (Light, Effect)

Light Arrow (Light, Attack)

«Title» Hero, World Traveller, Sport Queen, Awakened One

-----  
-----  
  
Shuri Minamoto

Lvl 23

HP 200/310

MP 29/530

EXP 7200

NEXT 987

ATK 107 (119)

DEF 110 (121)

AGL 130 (135)

HIT 118 (120)

INT 200 (215)

<<Magic Attribute>> Wind, Water, Light

<<Magic>>      Wind Cutter (Wind, Attack)

Green Bind (Wind, Support)

Water Wall (Water, Support)

Bubble Shot (Water, Attack)

Heal (Light, Recovery)

Antidote (Light, Recovery)

Charge (Light, Support)

<<Title>> Hero, World Traveller, Yamato Nadeshiko, Awakened One



-----  
-----  
Shinobu Akamori

Lvl 23

HP 90/342

MP 34/500

EXP 7200

NEXT 987

ATK 115 (127)

DEF 113 (124)

AGL 165 (170)

HIT 120 (122)

INT 207 (222)

<<Magic Attribute>> Water, Lightning, Light

<<Magic>> Mist (Water, Support)

Aqua Spiral (Water, Attack)

Paralyze (Lightning, Effect)

Acceleration (Lightning, Support)

Heal (Light, Recovery)

Cleaning (Light, Recovery/Support)

Ray (Light, Attack)

<<Title>> Hero, World Traveller, Curious One, Awakened One

-----  
(Looks all good, but I could do without the Harem Creator title)

Taishi wasn't satisfied with his own title, because he didn't have a single memory of ever creating a harem.

"What're you spacing out for, Taishi?"

"Eh? Ah, n- nothing! Ahaha!"

He was surprised when Chika suddenly called out to him, because there was no way he could tell her about his title.

"Weirdo. Anyway, we got rather strong."

"Yeah, our hard work paid off."

"Yep, Shuricchi is right. We have to continue like this~"

"Yes, you are all right."

Vale also brightened up his expression happily.

"Still, I'm really pooped today~"

"Geez, Taishi, you're so sloppy."

Chika cautioned Taishi, who lay down on the ground.

"Let me for today~ Ah, reminds me, Vale, did anything strange happen lately?"

"Anything strange? Let me think..."

Vale put his hand against his chin and looked musing.

"Now that you mention it, some wanted men were caught in 'Ames' the other day."

"I think 'Ames' is a village west of here?"

Vale affirmed Shinobu's question with a nod.

“Yes.”

“And the caught men were rather famous, weren’t they?”

“Yes, the ‘Harios Brothers’. They are notorious adventurer that murdered and thieved. Though they were stripped off their adventurer title when their crimes became known. So it is more correct to call them former adventurer.”

“Mhm, these guys were caught?”

“Indeed and the testimony of the villagers is rather garbled.”

“What do you mean?”

Everyone, not just Shinobu, curiously paid attention to Vale.

“Every villager is saying that a Hero clad in a red robe came to their rescue when the ‘Harios Brothers’ preyed the village.”

“A red robe? A hero? What the?”

“All I know is that he had black hair, used a magic that extended his sword and had a power to make his opponent faint just from a touch.”

“Black hair... couldn’t be?”

“Th- The report also mentioned he had a self-important attitude.”

“Black hair and self-important?”

Shinobu looked at everyone’s faces and apparently everyone was reminded of the same person. But they all believed it to be some kind of mistake.

“Nah... not him. He said himself that he’s just an average person after all.”

“He would never help anyone with that twisted personality of his.”

“Haha, that’s going too far, Chika.”

“Mh~ But, I wonder what’s true. Actually, where’s he now anyway?”

No one knew the answer to that. Vale shook his head too.

“Well, thinking won’t get us anywhere. We’ll just do what we can!”

Chika declared encouraging to everyone. Everyone responded with a nod.

Hihiro’s party arrived at “Surge”, the town near the border, but an unforeseen situation took place there.

“Hey, what’s the meaning of this?”

“N- No idea...”

Hihiro frowned sullen, whereas Arnold next to him twitched his cheek muscles.

A large number of people had set up stalls and attracted a crowd in front of them. Hihiro, not a fan of crowds, got irritated by this confluence and thereby resulting enthralled atmosphere.

“M- Maybe a festival?”

Muir inclined her head lovely and her eyes were sparkling. The endless line of stores might have fascinated her.

“Wait, isn’t today the first day of ‘Urui’?”

“Indeed, Uncle.”

By the way, ‘Urui’ referred to the month name.

January: Nalwine

February: Nunui

March: Guweron

April: Guviris

May: Losron

June: Norui

July: Kelves

August: Urui

September: Ivanness

October: Nalbress

November: Hisui

December: Grison

These were the months of this world with twenty-eight days each. Incidentally, the year was called “Anol“, currently it was “214 Anno Anol”.

“What’s so special about today?”

“You don’t know, Hiiro? The «Raer Festival» is held annually today.”

“«Raer Festival»?”

This world knew of seasons as well.

Spring: Esuil

Summer: Raer

Autumn: Jarvas

Winter: Riu

“It’s ‘Raer’ right now. To blow off this heat, they’re holding stuff like this here and there.”

(I see. Just a simple summer festival)

His discomfort only grew from realizing that. It was already hot to

begin with, there was this obnoxious guy next to him and this crowd on top of that only added oil to the fire. It was really irritating.

“Hey, were you thinking something rude just now?”

“Me? Nah. I only thought you were annoying, old man.”

“Listen here! Can’t you deny it, even if you have to lie? What are you answering honestly for, damn it!”

“That’s what’s so annoying about you.”

“S- Seriously, one of these days...”

He clenched his trembling fist. At that time, Arnold’s vision fell onto Muir. Her face was flushed and she watched at the bustling people.

“...Okay, I’ve decided! Say what you want, but I’m determined!”

“What’s that out of the blue? You finally lost it?”

“Shut up!”

Muir blinked her eyes in puzzlement too.

“We’re staying the night here, right? Then let’s enjoy the festival too!”

On these words, Muir’s expression lit up with energy. She seemed rather delighted. Actually, she wanted to go around the festival, but was fretting as she couldn’t say it out loud.

“I see. Then have a good time, you two. I’m at the inn.”

“Wait.”

Hihiro tried to leave, but was stopped at the shoulder.

“Let go.”

“No, no, how can you be like this now? Let’s enjoy the festival.”

“Not interested.”

“Mhm, you sure you want to act like that?”

“.....What do you mean?”

Arnold put up one finger and smirked. Hiiro felt like knocking him down for that, but resisted.

“Listen, the <<Raer Festival>> here in ‘Surge’ is quite big.”

“.....”

“There are tons of shops~ Moreover, there’s a super popular stall here.”

Hiiro’s shoulders twitched as the words super popular piqued his interest.

“To add to that, they’re holding a competition to see which is the most popular stall in ‘Surge’. A food stall wins every year... but see what I’m getting at?”

“.....Certainly. It serves really good food?”

“I think you would be quite pleased.”

“Mhm.”

Arnold was well versed. Seemingly it wasn’t his first time at the festival in “Surge”. It didn’t seem like he was lying either, nor had he any reason to. Then came the bait in form of good food.

As a result, Hiiro went ahead of the two.

“H- Hey.”

Arnold was disappointed, thinking is persuasion had failed, but Hiiro said without turning around.

“Lead the way already. What if the good stuff sells out, pervert?”

“Don’t call me pervert!”

He shouted angry, but his mouth formed a small smile. Muir was thrilled from anticipation too. The three of them settled on enjoying the festival for a while.



## Chapter 16: Raer Festival

“...«Burning Peach Candy»?”

Hihiro muttered while looking at the sign of a store.

“Oh, they’re selling quite the rare fruit!”

“Hello, please come closer!”

The stall owner, an energetic old man was radiating with courtesy. Muir looked at the «Burning Peach Candy» displayed at the stall with sparkling eyes.

“Old man, give us three!”

“Sure thing! Ohh, the little missy’s cute, so I’ll give you an extra big one!”

“Th- Thanks... Ehehe.”

Muir spilled a happy smile.

“Is it good?”

“Yeah, you bet~ The fruit is shaped like a burning fire and while it’s candy, it’s soft enough to masticate it. Well, you’ll understand how burning it is once you try it.”

Being told so. Hihiro ate a mouthful. He certainly could bite it off easily and its taste spread in his mouth while he chewed it. Then suddenly something popped inside his mouth.

“Mh?”

“Hehe, surprised? The prickling on the tongue is the secret of the «Burning Peach»!”

This flavour was addicting for sure. It was damn sweet, yet a treat to your taste buds. This was surely popular with the kids. Muir too was holding her cheek with an entranced expression.

“Okay! Onto the next one!”

Arnold took the lead and the other two followed him.

(So this is a festival. If it got good food, it isn't all that bad)

Hihiro never went to a festival back in Japan, so he was quite drawn to this new experience. Though it was typically for him to wish that this crowd wasn't here.

A lot of stalls were similar to the ones in Japan, like a shooting range or drawn lots. Muir was enjoying it to the fullest, but after walking around for a while, Hihiro's mentality finally started to reach its limit.

(Aw, this sucks. People bump into me and step on my feet... Can't they all disappear?)

His thoughts started to wander into dangerous waters. Then he spotted a rather large stall. The sign of the stall read as following:

«Happiness Shark Sandwich»

Arnold, looking at the same sign, showed a surprised expression.

“N- No way... THAT Happiness Shark?”

“You know it?”

“Yeah, of course! It's an ingredient each cook would like to prepare at least once!”

Hihiro presumed that it must be something really good from his excited attitude.

“Listen, the Happiness Shark only lives in the «Great Bull Sea». Moreover, only at its deepest part, so it rarely comes up to the surface. It's like super rare, but it appears for a short while for laying eggs. Its body has a beautiful pink colour and a jade-green horn on its head. It's said that every single part of its body, be it the horn or fangs, can be eaten!”

Arnold spoke with passion, but Hiiro basically had no interest in animals, so it went in one ear and out the other.

“So, is it good?”

“Of course! Listen, its taste is said... to top even the ‘Aqua Hound Meat’!”

“Buy it. Now.”

In an instant, Hiiro’s look changed to something close of a killing intent.

“S- Sure.. b- but.”

“What?”

“Look there.”

“Mh?”

Arnold pointed at a cylinder lottery like you often saw at shopping districts.

“They have a limited stock... so you have to win that to eat it.”

“Say... what!?”

A shiver run all over his body. Coming all the way here and not getting to eat this delicious food? Hiiro bit his lips on this torture.

“Each person has one try and it looks like several won already... Oh, the plate says they only have six portions left... The line’s pretty long too, so I guess it’s no good.”

Hiiro clenched his fist frustrated as he saw Arnold throwing in the towel.

(Wait, wait. That ‘Aqua Hound Meat’ was awesome. But I can’t eat the food in front of my eyes that’s even better? How’s that possible... No, the word giving up isn’t in my dictionary)

Hiiro raised his face with a jerk and glared at the stall.

“Let me give you my thanks, old man.”

“Huh?”

“My thanks for showing me this.”

“Gladly, but you can’t eat it...”

“No, there’s no reason to give up.”

He looked at the people spinning the cylinder lottery. Apparently you won when a golden ball dropped out.

(In that case...)

He concentrated magic power in his finger tip.

“Show me your hands, you two.”

“”...Eh?””

The other two looked blankly.

The line in front of the lottery slowly became shorter. With some winning, there were only three portions left at last.

But fortunately, no one else won since then. And then finally...

“My turn.”

Hihiro had its chance. He gulped and slowly spun the cylinder. It clattered and then...

....PLOP

Everyone swallowed their saliva. The ball that dropped out was...

“FUAHAHAHA! Nothing is impossible for me!”

Hihiro burst out in laughter in a exaggerated manner. Yes, he perfectly got a golden ball. And a pale glowing word was written in his fist that was raised high into the air. It said... “good luck”.

He had been worried over what to write. The word “luck” could’ve worked as well, but he wasn’t sure if his luck would increase or decrease through it. What about “come out” then? A ball would have dropped out for sure, but not necessarily a golden one.

Therefore he had written “good luck”, since he could easily imagine becoming lucky through it. Magic meant imagination. Any unnecessary thoughts would reduce its power. So he chose the easy to imagine word “good luck”. His magic was really like a cheat.

Moreover, it was a triple pack. He had written the same word for the other two, because that increased the chance of one of them winning even more.

Still, it meant exposing his magic to them.

(Well, I regret nothing. It’s for the food anyway)

His appetite won over the troubles of having it exposed. As a result, all three of them won in a row. Of course the other two had their mouths gaping wide-open on this scene, but Hihiro considered explaining it to them as he was in a really good mood.

“H- Hey, Hihiro...?”

“I know what you want to ask, but for now... eat!”

In his hands was a dish like a hamburger. The filling was the Happiness Shark of course. It had a light pink colour and was wrapped in some vegetables like lettuce with a salty-sweet sauce.

“MUNCH.... Ohh!?”

Where am I? For a moment, he felt like he was inside the sea with the pressure of the deep sea squeezing his body. Such a rich flavour. The compatibility with the bread was extraordinary and just a single bite let him feel the soul of the ocean.

His body melted away from the stimulation on his tongue, no, inside his whole mouth. Furthermore, he tasted something crunchy. It was the horn that Arnold mentioned before.

Delicious. The fried gristle with excellent seasoning was indescribably delicious, too. His body readily ingested everything, even the bones and fangs.

(Holy cow. Who knew something so delicious existed!)

It was more delicious than any fish he had eaten before. The inside of this stomach was frolicking as if the food was still alive. It was earth-shattering good. Moreover, his body felt like it was brimming with power.

Wow... Just wow...

(Definitely... a win...)

His cheeks naturally slackened. He might fall asleep on the spot from the rapture if he were to relax. It was a really pleasant sensation, like he was leisurely swimming in the sea under the warm sun.

When he looked at the other two, Muir was relishing the food too. She seemed to like eating as well, so she was in a good mood from getting to eat something so good. As for Arnold... He was crying for some reason.

To be honest, it was not a pleasant sight to see an old man crying over food. Well, the food was certainly worth crying over, but it somewhat spoiled the mood, so Hihiro decided to smack him afterwards.

“Oh~ I’m stuffed! Stuffed to no end~”

Arnold smiled happily.

“Yeah, it was delicious. Ehm... well...”

Muir looked at Hihiro.

“Uhm... Th- Thank you.”

Seemingly she had wanted to express her gratitude. Hihiro replied with a simple “No prob”, but this triggered Arnold to ask about the

<<Word Magic>>.

“So, will you tell me about what you wrote on my palm earlier?”

“.....Fine.”

“Eh? You’ll really tell me?”

Arnold had thought he would refuse again, so he asked back on reflex.

“What? I can just keep it to myself then.”

“Ah, no, no. Let me hear it! That word... is that your magic?”

“Yes, it’s called <<Word Magic>>. An unique magic.”

“An unique magic!?”

“You’re too loud! I won’t tell you more!”

“S- Sorry. B- But is it really an unique magic?”

“Yeah. See the word on your palm?”

“Y- Yes.”

“That’s a word from where I lived and I can draw out the effect from the word.”

This world didn’t know of Kanji, so the other two couldn’t read it, so he frankly explained the magic. Both of them listened with a dumbfounded expression.

“Actually, isn’t your magic unfair?”

“\*NOD\*”

Muir nodded asserting to Arnold’s words.

“Who cares. It’s like an inborn talent.”

“Well, sure, but... Still, I’ve heard of unique magic, but none as

powerful as this.”

“Oho, like what for example?”

Hihiro was interested in unique magic besides his own.

“Let’s see, magic that controls space, magic that brainwashes people and... magic that manipulates other magic.”

“They indeed sound powerful.”

Especially the brainwashing one sounded dangerous. He didn’t know how it worked, but a magic that bewitches other people’s hearts was too powerful.

“But with your «Word Magic», you can use any of these magic I just mentioned too, right?”

To be honest, he could. Maybe he couldn’t control it as perfect as the original, but it was possible to use a word with a similar effect.

“Indeed, I can.”

“I knew it, so unfair~ You’re a damn cheater~”

“\*NOD\*”

“It might be omnipotent, but it’s not invincible.”

“What do you mean?”

“Who knows? I’ve no reason to tell you.”

“Grr... Well, you aren’t a fool that would tell others your weakness.”

“Indeed.”

“But leaving that aside, your magic’s still too fascinating! Truly paradisiacal!”

“Whatever. I’m tired, so I’m going to the inn. Also, don’t tell anyone about this.”



“Listen to me!”

Hihiro acted at his own pace as always, whereas the other two sighed and followed him.

“Mh? Enough of the festival already?”

“Eh? Ah, yeah, I’m satisfied...”

“I had fun too!”

“There you have it.”

“Then go book a room, servant.”

“I’m repeating myself, but I ain’t your servant! Also, pay some respect to your elders!”

“Don’t be so arrogant just because you were born earlier.”

“It let me experience more of life! Apologize! Apologize to me right away!”

Hihiro looked at the suddenly shouting Arnold and said.

“.....Don’t become like him, shorty.”

“What do you mean, you damn brat!”

Hihiro shifted his gaze to Muir, but she was troubled how to react.

Ignoring Arnold’s annoying outburst, Hihiro headed to the inn. But a problem occurred there.

“....Eh? No free rooms?”

Arnold had his mouth gaping wide-open at the front desk. Behind him, Hihiro was emitted a displeased aura to the max.

“My deepest apologizes. Due to the festival, we have no vacant rooms at the moment.”

What to do now? Arnold sweated bullets, wondering how to reason

with the devil behind him that glared at him with a killing intent.

Arnold slowly and quietly turned his head around and looked at the black-haired boy in question.

“What’s the deal, old man?”

“N- Nothing I can do here, can I? When they’re booked out, they’re booked out.”

“....Hah, sleeping outside even though we’re at a town...”

Hiiro muttering so with empty eyes was a rare sight. To be honest, he had hoped to sleep in a proper bed after camping outside for so long, but sadly enough, it was an unaccomplished dream.

“Damn... Stupid festival... Just explode.”

He said something dreadful, but he had enjoyed the festival himself, so he didn’t snap for real. They should’ve booked a room beforehand. No, even then, the rooms might have booked out already, but he regretted not checking it.

“Excuse me...”

The inn keeper at the front desk called out to them, so the three of them looked at him dispirited.

“If I may suggest, why don’t you try out the Guild?”

“The Guild?”

Arnold tilted his head.

“Ah, yes. The Guild has resting rooms for their staff, but if you talk to them, they might give you a room?”

Upon that, Arnold’s expression brightened up and he nodded.

“I see. On a day like this, they really might give us a room.”

“Are we going there?”

Muir looked at him with an upturned gaze and Arnold placed his hand on her head.

“Yeah, it’s our last hope.”

“I hope it won’t be in vain.”

“Brat! Why’re you saying that! Don’t be so damn negative!”

“Let’s hurry.”

“Again, listen to me!”

Hihiro swiftly left the inn, whereas the other two followed in a rush.

## Chapter 17: Guild Master

The Guild housed quite a few people, but some way or another, they had a room for the three to sleep in. The party was relieved that their trip wasn't in vain.

They were taken to a rest room and laid down on the beds. It definitely was better than sleeping outside.

“By the way, what are you going to do from now on?”

Arnold asked, whereupon Hiiro answered while closing his eyes.

“...It would be bad to just slip by the checkpoint, right?”

“Yeah, unless you have an official <<Visa>>.”

“Do you?”

“Yeah, for Muir and me.”

“How did you get it?”

“Wait, you don't even know that? How did you want to cross the border?”

“Talk my way through and if that doesn't work... through force.”

“Scary! Normally I would laugh at your stupidity, but now that I know of your magic, it only sounds scary!”

Arnold feared that he would cross the border by beating the clerks with his <<Word Magic>>, because his power was more than able to.

“Listen, the <<Visa>> is issued at the Guild. Look.”

Saying so, he showed him a piece of paper slightly bigger than a train ticket. Written on it were the issued and expiration date.

“Then I can just get one here...”

“No, even if you apply for one here, it takes quite some time until it’s approved, you know?”

“...Seriously?”

“Seriously. Usually you get it from the Guild in the capital of the country. And even then, it takes around one week. In your case, you apply for it here, then the Guild in the capital verifies it and you only get your «Visa» once they approve.”

First you applied for it, then your personal history and origins were investigated. Needless to say, you wouldn’t get an approval when you had a criminal record. But if there were no problems and a valid reason for crossing the border, the Guild Master gave his approval on the permit. That was the «Visa».

“Oho, so the Guild Master in the capital is quite the big shot?”

“Come again? You were in the capital, right? How come you don’t know?”

“I had no interest.”

“.....Hah. Listen and remember this well, Hihiro. Do you know how many SSS rank adventurer are amongst the humans?”

“Three, I think?”

“Yeah and one of them is the Guild Master in the capital.”

“Mm.”

“Don’t give me a ‘mm’!”

That was Hihiro’s only reaction, since he had no interest in other people.

“He’s amazing, you know? Only people with superior strength and popularity are chosen for the position. They even say his physical ability is equal to a beastman. Truly a monster.”

“I understand that this monster is lost in his status and prestige.”

“H- Hey... It’s certainly said that the Guild Master has an equal power to the King in emergencies, but... aren’t you going too far?”

“Dun care.”

“...Haah. Anyway, his name is...”

“Mh? Oh, it’s been a while, Vale!”

“It has indeed been a while, Judom-sama.”

The man that greeted Vale, the caption of the second division of the <<Victorias>> army, with a generous smile was Judom Lankars.

He wore a splendid white beard, but was only in his late 40s. His shortly trimmed white hair had other reasons than from old age.

His gentle expression gave off an aura that put even children at ease. But his abnormal figure became obvious when standing.

The height of his body was over two metre and his trained arms looked as hard and robust as steel.

His whole body was so muscular that you would think his clothes would rip on the slightest movement.

“Fuhaha. Stop with the sama. You’re a prominent captain yourself now!”

He clapped Vale on his back while laughing openhearted. But even though it should’ve been a light pat, it felt like a strike that gradually cut down his HP to Vale.

“\*COUGH\* I- I see that you have not changed, Judom-sama.”

Vale showed a happy smile while rubbing his back.

“So, what’s up? It’s rare for you to come here.”

“I came here to ask a favour of you, the Guild Master.”

Currently they were inside the Guild, in the room of the Guild Master.

“Oho, something troublesome again? Forget it, I’m retired. Leave the frontlines to the youngsters.”

“What are you talking about! Even now, no one is able to hold a candle to you as an adventurer!”

“Fuhaha! You’re giving me too much credit! Besides, I heard that the Heroes were summoned. ...It’s their era now, right?”

Judom asked with a slightly sharp gaze, but Vale didn’t notice it.

“No, no, a strong person is always in demand. Especially someone as strong as you.”

Hearing Vale’s answer, Judom clouded his expression a bit, but brightened it up again right away.

“And I tell you, my era is over. As I am right now, I am only a close match for a SS rank. I can’t move around like in my SSS rank days anymore.”

Judom said kind of self-deprecating with an insightful expression.

“You are being too modest. ...Just now you said to leave the front lines to the youngsters.”

“Yeah, I did.”

“I would like to ask you to train these youngsters for battle.”

“.....The Heroes?”

“Yes.”

For a while, the two gazed at each other. Judom looked at Vale, who confronted him with an earnest look, and laughed faintly.

“The same look as back then, when you asked to become my disciple.”

“Although you turned me down in the end. Back then you said to me: You’re not good enough to be my disciple. I only take in

someone that can fight on the same level as me.”

“Did I really say that?”

Judom smiling, reminiscing about his juvenility.

“And now people, who can fight on your level, have appeared.”

“.....Is that so.”

Wiping off his smile, he answered Vale.

“Please teach them! It is for the sake of the future of us ‘Humas’!”

“For the future of ‘Humas’, huh...”

Vale looked at him with determined eyes, with straightforward eyes. Judom took out his pipe and lighted it. Then he slowly blew out some smoke.

“Hey, Vale.”

“Yes?”

“Do you know why I became the Guild Master?”

“That’s... No, I do not.”

“Because the Guild Master can give commands with the same authority as the King in emergencies.”

“Judom-sama...?”

“When I was an adventurer, I always wondered why this country, no, this continent keeps waging war.”

“...”

“Every day I prayed that someone would bring peace to the world. Salvation by faith, so to speak. But the dispute between races escalated and spread to this country too. Of course I took up arms, because there were things I wanted to protect. But what do you think the then Guild Master did at that time?”



“....”

As he knew the answer, Vale looked shameful.

“The Guild Master went far away. He abandoned the country. Abusing his authority as a Guild Master, he escaped for his own good. Due to that, the command chain of the adventurer broke down and many lives that could’ve been saved were lost.”

“Judom-sama...”

“The King had appointed that Guild Master.”

Vale kept silent on his words. The King had been responsible for appointing that Guild Master. Judom was angry at himself too for not being able to see his true character.

“So I desperately grew stronger and aimed to be the Guild Master. Then I asked the King for authorities to command during emergencies. And thus the Guild Master became another King for the county.”

“...”

“I aimed for the one and only position that could correct the King’s mistakes. That was the best I could do as an adventurer. But...”

Judom clenched his fist frustrated. Vale widened his eyes from seeing this. Even now, the King’s orders were absolute. But the Guild Master had the right to decide about all emergencies regarding adventurers.

Judom gave Vale a quiet and cold look.

“The King then committed another mistake.”

“Wha! How can you say that!”

Vale was shocked about the sudden criticism of the King. Going any further would be defamation.

“The Kind sacrificed three people for what? Wait, one’s still barely

alive, I guess.”

Then he threw a glance at Vale, telling him to answer.

“Th- That’s...”

“The Hero Summoning... Sure, our country is in danger. But I advised the King that there other things to do before summoning Heroes.”

“You did such a thing...?”

Vale didn’t know that, so he frowned at him.

“Why did we reject the peace treaty?”

“Peace... treaty? What are you talking about?”

“Mhm, I guess you weren’t informed. Well, naturally.”

Judom shook his head wearily.

“Ex- Explain yourself, Judom-sama!”

“A few years ago, there should have been a peace treaty from the ‘Evila’.”

“Impossible! I never heard of such a thing!”

“The top brass must have swept it under the carpet.”

While blowing out some smoke, Judom said so.

“B- But still! Even if such a letter came from the ‘Evila’, we cannot trust it!”

“Why didn’t we seek a dialogue?”

“...”

“You don’t know the outcome unless you try it.”

“That’s...”

Vale understood very well that it was a sound argument, so he couldn't object.

"I know how you feel. I also know how they betrayed us on previous meetings initiated through letters. But there should be other methods before sacrificing your own daughters, no?"

"H- His Majesty was grieving about that as well."

"One does not simply grieve over your daughters' deaths!"

His earlier gentle expression changed completely, turning into dreadful intensive one. Vale broke sweat on his whole body. That was the spirit of an retired adventurer...

Judom sighed while shaking his head.

"Either way, if he had just consulted me, I would have come along to wherever the meeting would have been. Youn like many others, may not know, but there are good guys amongst the 'Gabranth' and 'Evila' too."

"Th- That certainly is true, but it's likewise a fact that the 'Evila' king tries to destroy us 'Humas'."

"A fact?"

"Yes!"

"Then do you know about this? The 'Evila' King has changed."

"...Eh?"

"When a King changes, so does the policy. The letter was sent by the new King as well. Nevertheless, the King ignored my advise and called strangers from another world."

"Calling them strangers... For our sake, the Heroes are—"

"risking their lives...?"

"..."

“I don’t know what world they came from, but I don’t think they care enough about our world to risk their lives for it. If I were in their shoes and suddenly brought here against my will, I would leave everything behind and go on a trip.”

That was exactly what Hihiro did, but Vale was shocked from Judom’s words and froze up.

“B- But the Heroes seriously are...”

“They just haven’t faced a life-or-death situation. Not many recover after tasting despair.”

“.....”

“They’ve a home too, right? As the one who called them here, the King has to make sure they are returned alive... hasn’t he?”

Vale looked downward and closed his eyes.

“From what I heard, another guy was summoned, but he left as he had no reason to comply?”

“Ah, yes.”

“I can trust that guy more than the Heroes.”

“Wh- What do you mean!?”

“That you don’t understand it shows how inexperienced you still are, Vale.”

“Judom-sama...”

Then Judom showed a gentle expression again, placing his pipe on the desk.

“We’re done here, Vale.”

“B- But!”

“Think it over once more about what you have to do. It’s your turn to advise the King now.”

“I could never...”

“How can someone save the world, when the advice from friends or retainers goes unheeded?”

After that Judom didn't say another word and Vale left the room astonished.

## Chapter 18: A Method to pass the Check Point.

“Judom Lankars?”

“Yeah, Judom Lankars. A former adventurer that was well known as the «Impact King».”

Apparently it was a nickname, but Hihiro frowned upon hearing it.

“That name sounds like a delusional middle schooler came up with it...”

“Middle schooler?”

“Forget it.”

“Okay? Anyway, remember his name. It’s such a waste that he’s a ‘Humas’.”

“Oho, wouldn’t expect that from someone who’s lost in status and prestige.”

“I keep telling you, he isn’t like that! He took care of me once too, albeit a long time ago.”

Arnold narrowed his eyes reminiscing.

“Well, I couldn’t care less about that guy, but at this rate, I won’t be able to pass the check point, right?”

“Yeah, it takes quite some time to pass through there.”

Hihiro pondered about what to do with a pensive face. It seemed it would work out with time, but it already took one week in the capital, so it would take even longer here. He definitely wasn’t patient enough for that.

“Hey.”

“Mh?”

“The check point is in front of a large bridge, right?”

“Yeah, that bridge is the only connection between the human and beastman continent. Well, it isn’t impossible to cross over the sea, but...”

“But it’s no good? I thought about taking that route if anything else fails.”

“And how? The sea between the continent got a really rough stream and sometimes even whirlpools. Not to mention the ferocious demons. I heard it’s all due the particular terrain, so I guess crossing by boat is impossible.”

(I can’t pass it normally, since I don’t have a «Visa». That said, passing over the sea is out of the question, too. Wait, if I use my «Word Magic»... No, it’s quite likely someone will see me. Ah, right, I can just copy the «Visa» with the word “copy” ...But that’s so ordinary and no fun. Reminds me, I haven’t tried that experiment yet. Good timing. If the left is no good, try from the right, or so they say. Kukuku....)

Hihiro smirked as he thought of something. But the other two were astonished seeing him like that, thinking that he was up to no good again.

On the next day, they went up to a hill near the check point.

“Hey, are you really going to do it?”

Arnold looked doubtful, which pissed Hihiro off.

“Just do what I told you.”

Muir looked at them restlessly.

“Okay, let’s get started.”

Hihiro said so, then wrote “lightweight” onto his chest with magic power. He had trouble writing like this, but he didn’t use «Air

Writing» as the costs were too high. After that he activated it and counted until forty in his head.

“All set.”

“Okay. Ohh, you’re really light!”

Going by Hiiro’s stature, he would be around sixty kilo without a doubt, but right now he weighted no more than a few kilo. Arnold lifted him up like a spear.

“Y- You really sure about this?”

“Hurry up already. I told you it only lasts for one minute, so I only got twenty seconds left now!”

“Fine!”

Arnold mustered all his strength and then...

“WRAAAAAR!”

he threw Hiiro into the sky with all his might.

WHOOOOOOOSH!

“Uh!”

Hiiro squinted from the incredible air pressure and took off the ground with a lot of speed, feeling like a cannon ball.

(Oh~ Nice view from here)

He admired the wonderful scenery in his heart. Then the effect from “lightweight” vanished and he slowly lost momentum. As he was about to stop in midair, he wrote a word into the air.

This time it was “fly”. He aimed at his back and activated it, because he imagined flying freely like an animal with wings like that.

Of course he had previously checked that he was able to fly by writing it on his palm. Directing it at his back was mostly



whimsical.

(Mhm, wings... Maybe I should try if I can grow some next time)

He got a bit excited from having found a new challenge. This part of him showed how much of a kid he still was. Then the effect from “fly” manifested.

(Ohh~ I’m flying~ But kinda slow. I’m as fast as walking, I think?)

He imagined himself flying faster, but his speed didn’t change. Well, it didn’t interfere with his plan, so it was alright.

Slowly raising up even higher into the sky, he flew slantwise over the check point. At this height, he only looked like a small bird to those on the ground.

But then the one minute passed and the effect ended. He wanted to write “fly” again, but couldn’t.

(Seems I can’t write it twice in a row after all)

Writing the same word in succession was impossible. He had checked upon that previously too, so he didn’t panic.

(Then I’ll go with this next!)

He wrote the word “float”. Upon that, he stopped descending and came to a halt in midair. Floating in the middle of the air was a rather strange feeling.

“Mhm, how many have seen the world from so high up?”

From above, «Edea» looked beautiful. He could see green lands, blue seas and high mountains. A sight that truly made you aware of Mother Nature.

(Now I’ll just repeat writing “fly” and “float”)

With that in mind, he enjoyed the view while he waited for the effect from “float” to vanish.

Meanwhile, Arnold and Muir were at the check point.

“H- Hey, Uncle, will Hihiro-san be alright?”

“No idea. But I’ve never seen someone as reckless as him.”

Hihiro had explained them the plan yesterday in the following way: First he reduces his own weight by writing the word “lightweight”. Then he lets about thirty seconds pass.

As for the reason for this pause, apparently he could only activate the next word when one minute passed after a word with a temporarily effect. At worst, he could end up crashring into the ground during the one minute he was being thrown.

Therefore he had Arnold throw him after forty seconds. The remaining twenty seconds would pass while he was still in an upwards movement. Still, it was only feasible since Arnold possessed quite the strength as a ‘Gabranth’.

As the next step, he would fly through the air by using the word “fly”. Of course they asked why he didn’t use that from the beginning, but he couldn’t use the same word in succession and there was a high chance he would be spotted by someone as his momentum would be slow then.

Of course there was also a chance of him getting spotted as Arnold threw him, but one would surely think his eyes are playing him a prank as Hihiro took off with quite the speed.

The last step of the plan involved using “fly” and “float” alternatively and looking for an isolated place to land.

They had asked him if there wasn’t a simpler method by using words and Hihiro had checked upon that as well. He found a way to copy the «Visa» by using the word “copy”.

However, Hihiro had always wanted to try out flying like this and since this was a good opportunity, he went through with it.

“Seriously, I don’t know if he’s a genius or just stupid.”

“Ahaha...”

“Either way, he’s a brat.”

Arnold could only give a feigned laughter at this point. Still, it puzzled him how he was convinced that Hihiro would pull it off without problems.

The check point was a huge dome out of metal. Before going in there, an officer confirmed the «Visa» one by one.

“Okay, you may go on.”

Being told so, Muir entered first, followed by Arnold right afterwards.

The dome was filled with shops. Some were makeshift from peddlers, others were permanently located there. When they proceeded further in, there was a door, big enough to let one adult through, guarded by two male officers on the left and right.

(Strict as always. All that effort to check those who want to pass)

While thinking so, he headed towards the officers together with Muir.

A magic circle was drawn right in front of the officers. The circle lighted up blue when a ‘Humas’ stood on it, green for a ‘Gabranth’, red for ‘Evila’ and yellow for everyone else.

Discrimination against the ‘Pheom’? That thought crossed his mind, but no one of that race ever passed through a check point up till now. To begin with, they rarely showed themselves. It’s said that no ‘Humas’ ever even saw one.

Therefore the ‘Pheom’ were grouped together with everyone else.

“Going home, I see. You’re clear to pass!”

Upon the officer’s words, Arnold and Muir took the door outside, setting foot onto their own continent.

“Uwa~ Such a long bridge~”

Just like Muir had said, a bridge long enough to be called magnificent spanned in front of their eyes. It was approximately ten kilometre long, so her surprise was understandable.

“Let’s go, Muir.”

“Yeah.”

“But I wonder where he ended up in.”

“Yeah, me too~”

Of course they meant Hiiro. He wasn’t in sight, so they speculated that he was at the end of the bridge and started walking ahead.

## Chapter 19: Encounter: a Unique Monster

[TL : Translating Konjiki is difficult, because the author randomly shifts between first and third person. In english literature it's almost always one or the other, so I should probably just stick to one.]

At that time, just as the other two had suspected, Hihiro was on top of a nearby hill. From it, he could view the bridge without being discovered.

In truth, he had been forced to land on top of the bridge. Going at his slow pace, it cost way too much mana to get all the way to the other side.

There were a number of people on the bridge when he landed. Hihiro was forced to cover his entire body in his red robe to conceal his identity, and run for cover. However the Beast People on the bridge just thought that he was a flying demon swooping down hunting for food, so they paid him no mind.

(This bridge is way too long. Just how far does it run...)

Unlike in games, if you get too tired your HP will drop. So while running long distances, it will drop quite a bit. However it also recovers slowly if you rest.

The Beastman continent was covered in green.

The main difference between this one and the Human one was the amount of untamed wildlife. Of course, the human continent was also home to quite a bit of vegetation and mountainous environments as well.

However, here in the soil and the forests; in the lakes and rivers, the surrounding wildlife had much more energy.

(So each continent has its own merits)

The main selling point of the human continent was its human-made ecosystem. Manufacturing and trading; import and export. It was a

land of business.

(I wonder what the Evila continent has... I guess I'll have to see it with my own eyes sooner or later.)

(TL: Evila, written as magical being / demon, read as Evila)

As I think this, a carriage stops in front of me. From it comes a man who seems to be a peddler. Of course, he's a beastman.

(This is bad... I can't be found out here.)

Arnold said that unlike the human continent, this was a land where you could be randomly assaulted out of the blue. A war-ridden country. There's a possibility of being attacked just because of one being from the Human race.

If that happens I don't plan on losing, but I can't cause a commotion here. I don't want to get separated from Arnold when I can still get more information out of him.

(... I just thought of something.)

I write a character on my body, while thinking of something a certain person had.

"What are you doing here? Do you need a ride?"

In response to the man's frank questions, Hihiro takes off his hood.

"Oh, you have some splendid ears there!"

The man smiles happily.

"I apologize. My companions should be here soon. Thanks for the concern, but don't mind me."

"Oh? I see. I wish you safe travels."

And the man returns to his carriage.

(I somehow got through it. But that beastman was quite amiable)

I touch the ears that had sprung up on my head. They're quite soft to the touch. But the ears weren't the only thing that changed. Hiiro's hair had changed to a silver color. It was the same color as Muir's.

Using his 《Word Magic》 and holding an image of Muir's race in mind, Hiiro had written 『Copy』 on his body. However if he had been thinking of Muir herself then his facial structure would have been greatly altered and it would be hard to balance, so he tried to imagine something else. However he had only ever met 2 Beastmen in his life.

Hiiro's psych would not be able to handle turning into an Old man like Arnold, so he stuck with thinking of Muir's race.

And here marked the birth of a silver haired, bespectacled boy. The words only changed the basic qualities of its target, so the effects remained over time. Hiiro would have to write 『Return』 to turn back.

(It's weird to have a tail. My body feels oddly light, and my canines have gotten strangely strong.)

After waiting for a while, the other two finally got here. They were able to locate me by my red robe. But then...

“What's with that haaaaaaiiir!”

I had expected this to happen. Even Muir lets out a sound.

“Now then, let's depart.”

“Oy, wait, wait, wait! Why the hell are you acting like nothing's off!? There's many thing's I'd like to retort at right now! ”

“As always, you're being quite fussy. Just be quiet for a bit, like that shorty over there.”

“Muir is in too much shock to speak! Just explain yourself! Why is your hair the same color as my beloved Muir's!?”

And so I began explaining against my will. Muir stares at me in

excitement. She touches her own hair and stares at my ears.

“For you to be able to do something like that.... How broken are you?”

“Koku Koku”

I’m already bored of dealing with these two. I let out a yawn. I had set out early today so there would be few people to witness me, so I want to sleep.

“Well, it’s not like I’m the real thing. Only my form has changed.”

“Hm? So your physical abilities are still human?”

“Pretty much.”

“I see, but still, your magic is quite amazing.”

The two seem to have seen 《Word Magic》’s true usefulness. They let out sighs.

“Anyways, where will we be heading from here?”

As Hihiro asks, Arnold points his finger.

“If we head due west from here, we should find the village of 【Doggam】”

“What sort of place is that?”

“It’s a town of the 『Bearnt』 clan.”

(TL: Written as Bear People, read as Bearnt)

(『Bearnt』. I read about them in an encyclopedia. Apparently they’re quite a peaceful race, unlike bears.)

In the human capital, I tried to gather knowledge by reading the books stored at the guild.

“Well, the 『Bearnt』 are gentle folk, I don’t think you’ll be attacked even if you’re found out.”



So the information I attained was correct.

“Also the honey they produce is said to be quite a delicacy.”

“Ho? I’ll look forward to it.”

“Yeah.”

“What? The shorty’s never been there?”

Muir’s reaction is similar to my own, so It can be concluded she has never been to that village.

“Y-yes. T-the truth is, well...”

It seems to be difficult to say, but I can sense that she believes that it is something she has to mention. But Hihiro waves his hands.

“Ah, if you don’t want to say it, you don’t have to.”

“Eh?”

Muir stares blankly at Hihiro. Arnold follows in suit.

“I have no interest in you people’s past, so there’s no reason to force yourselves to tell me anything.”

“... T-that’s not it, but...”

Arnold looks towards the sad Muir, and tries to say something to lighten the atmosphere.

“As long as Hihiro’s fine with it, I guess we can leave it at that, Muir!”

“Uncle...”

“Let’s just go already.”

Hihiro begins walking off. Arnold begins patting Muir’s head, and then whispers into her ear.

“I know that you’re anxious, but Hihiro being Hihiro, if you tell him,

he'll probably just respond with something like, 'and so what?'"

"Y-yeah... that's true."

Upon hearing Arnold's words, it seems that a burden has been lifted from Muir's chest.

"I hope that you will be able to tell him one day."

"Yeah!"

"Now then, let's get going so we don't lose him!"

"Yeah!"

As he watched Muir running after Hiiro, he thought something like, 'how cute'. If Hiiro had seen Arnold's expression, he would have dragged him off to court already.

After walking for a bit, they come across the first monsters they have seen in a while.

"I think this was... a BukBuk?"

BukBuks are monsters that exist in the shape of books. It's size is quite large. Moreover, this monster's power comes from...

Snap Snap!

"Uoh! Quite a powerful bolt of lightning there."

Arnold shouts out as he avoids it.

Right, BukBuks are monsters with the ability to use magic. Whatsmore, different species of the monster could learn different varieties of magic .However it is difficult to tell apart BukBuk subspecies.

"It's been a while since I've met a monster worth fighting. Old Man, I'll leave that one to you."

"Perfect! Watch Arnold-sama's brilliant swordplay! Muir, back off!"

“F-fine!”

We each take them on one at a time.

(The old man’s one uses thunder. Mine is...)

Bang!

Suddenly a large hand emerges out of the ground, trying to grab Hiiro.

“I see, so your specialty is earth!”

Hiiro takes out Piercer and tears apart the earthen hand. But the BukBuk’s magic causes several small fissures to open up. The fissures advance towards him, halting his movement.

“Don’t be so conceited...”

Hiiro concentrates magic into his finger and writes 『Quiet』 in the air. He throws it at the ground and it activates.

The ground calms down, and the fissures stop in their tracks. The BukBuk seems to be quite confused, and it hesitates in casting its next spell.

“Perish!”

In that space of time, Hiiro quickly closes the gap between them. Quickly erects a wall of dirt in front of itself.

“That isn’t nearly enough to stop my advance!”

Without stopping, Hiiro thrusts his sword into the wall. And the blade passes through it quite easily. The BukBuk behind the wall is also impaled. And after letting out a sound like the sound of stacks of paper falling to the ground, the monster stops moving.

“And now, the Old Man is...”

He seems to have already finished up. After dodging the thunder and closing the distance, it only took a single swing of his massive

sword to end the BukBuk's existence.

“Did you see that!? That's my power! Nahahahahah!”

He seems to be in ecstasy. It may have been a troublesome monster, but it was definitely at a level we could have handled. Is it really that great to have beaten one of those? I let out a sigh.

After that battle, we met more monsters as we headed down the path. After overcoming numerous battlefields, we end up in a forest.

“If we get through this forest, we'll arrive at 【Doggam】!”

“Don't you find it odd?”

“What?”

“There were so many monsters before, but once we entered this forest, we haven't seen a single one.”

“Aren't they just afraid of us?”

“You sure are an easy going old man.”

“S-sorry, whenever Uncle gets conceited, he becomes like this.”

“I've already given up on him, so don't worry.”

“Y-yes... \*sigh\*”

Muir looks a little embarrassed as she stares at Arnold. It's as if she's a kid observing her father on Parent's day. (TL: event where a parent observes how their children do at school)

Arnold, who is strutting triumphantly suddenly halts his march. Hiiro becomes worried, and calls out to him. He is giving off a nervous expression.

“Oy, what's wrong?”

Hiiro asks that as he looks ahead, and in front, he sees a single boar. Hiiro thought it was just another monster, but strangely, it was a monster that wasn't in any of Hiiro's books. The boar had yet

to notice the party's approach, and it peacefully eats grass.

He had read about a similar monster, so he asks.

"Is that a Big Boar?"

"N-no, it's..."

Arnold is acting strange. He seems to be afraid. The Big Boar Hiiro knew of had short brown hair, however the monster in front of them was red.

"Hiiro... We're running away."

"Wha? What are you saying?"

"Don't worry, just try to move without making a sound."

Hiiro frowns upon seeing Arnold attempt to evade the quietly boar.

"What exactly are you doing, you pervert?"

"I keep telling you I'm not a pervert! ...ah."

Arnold lets out a large voice, and turns pale. Hiiro looks back at the boar and finds it staring angrily at them.

"D-damn... This is your fault, Hiiro!"

"And so what? Is that monster something special?"

"T-that's a Unique monster!"

"Unique?"

I believe that the books said that Unique monsters were exceedingly rare. And that they were exceedingly ferocious. Arnold's frantic expression seems to confirm this.

"T-that's a Red Boar. A Rank S Monster!"

"Hmm."

—

The Unique fights the Unique.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 20: The Restrictions of Word Magic

Hiiro looks at the Red Boar once more.

To fight a rank S monster, you usually have to be an adventurer of Rank S or above. Otherwise the danger level would be too high. However seeing his first Unique Monster only interested Hiiro further.

“Old Man, what rank are you?”

“Me? I’m C, Rank C.”

“Hm, you’re quite high.”

“What about you?”

“I think it was E... no I became a D.”

When he last checked his Guild Card, it had shown rank D. It seems that fighting monsters naturally improved his rank.

“C and D... It doesn’t look like we’re anywhere close to taking out an S.”

“Is that so?”

Unlike Arnold, Hiiro isn’t even flustered. However he still feels the hostility emanating from the Boar.

“W-we’ll have to run. We have Muir with us here.”

“Why must we do that? We can just bring it down.”

“Don’t ask for the impossible! Rank S is stronger than you thi-”

Before Arnold finishes his sentence, the Red Boar begins charging. It’s faster than any monster they’ve seen before. In an instant, Hiiro plants a kick on Arnold’s chest, kicking him out of the Boar’s path.

“Ow! Damn! It’s way too fast!”

Arnold is complaining, but Hihiro is the opposite.

(Amazing. So this is Rank S...)

The Red Boar has taken up a fighting stance. Its aura is quite formidable. What’s more, after they had avoided the charge, the boar was on a set course for a large tree; however, the one that broke was the tree. The Red Boar escaped with no injury.

(It’s skin and tusks seems to be quite hard. If I took that charge head-on, My HP would drop to 0)

If this were a game, he may have been able to stand it, but in real life a blow like that could cause instant death. Hihiro scowls, wondering which case applied to this world. Whichever the case, he would like to avoid pain.

“O-oy, Run away Hihiro! Muir, you too!”

Muir is shaking in fear, peeping out from a hiding place behind some trees.

The Red Boar faces us again.

“Alright, I’m going to kill that thing.”

“D-don’t be stupid! There’s no way you can beat that!”

“Quiet. For me, there is no impossible.”

“For the love of-! Where does that confidence come from! Look, it’s coming again!”

Arnold avoids it by jumping, but Hihiro doesn’t even move.

“I-idiot! Avoid it!”

The ground begins shaking, and cactus-like spikes emerge from the ground impaling the Red Boar... or not.

“Wha!?”



The spikes break upon contact with the Boars skin. And the Charge doesn't eve slow down.

"Damn."

Hihiro somehow avoided it by diving onto the ground, however he is angry at how his attack had no effect whatsoever. His dodge was a second too late, and his left hand came into contact with the Red Boar. The small impact rotates his entire body, and smacks him into the ground.

"Gu-!?"

His body is taken by intense pain.

"Hiro!"

Arnold calls out, but Hihiro has no spare time to answer. Ignoring the pain, he immediately stands back up. However he sways unsteadily.

"This bastard... You sure did quite a bit."

He glares at the Red Boar.

(Perfect, there's a character I've been wanting to test. I'll use it on this one.)

Hihiro concentrates magic on his finger and starts writing a character. It's hard to move, and for some reason, it's taking a long time to write. In that period of time, the Boar has already begun its next attack. It detaches its tusks and sends them straight at him.

(It can even do that!?)

Hihiro manages to dodge the tusks, but the Boar once again starts running at him. It's not giving him a chance to write anything.

Suddenly, Arnold slams his body into the boar's flank. The Boar braces his legs as not to fall, but as a consequence its charge is halted.

“How’s that! Did you see? This is Arnold-sama’s-”

The Red Boar’s eyes glow a dangerous color as it stares at Arnold in anger.

“Ah, um, that is...”

While Arnold confronts the monster, Hihiro rushes to write his word.

(Damn! Move, my fingers!)

But his fingers are shaking and he can’t write well. This only makes him more irritated. While he’s doing that, the boar charges Arnold.

“Uhyaa!”

He avoids it by taking a large leap to the side. But then the flying tusks come after him. He uses his large sword to guard against them, but the impact in itself sends him flying.

“Guha! ... A-as I thought. It’s too st....”

Arnold has a pained expression on his face, as he stares at his opponent who has yet to take a single point of damage.

(Just a little... Just a little longer and..... It’s done!)

He finished his character, and now all he has to do is hit the Boar with it. But the distance to the Red Boar is too long. At this distance, there is a high chance of missing.

“Old Man!”

“W-what is it! Did you finally decide to run?”

“You’re in the way, move.”

“Wha!”

Hihiro needed the Red Boar to target him alone, so having Arnold there was a hinderance.

“What are you saying!”

“Don’t worry, just go hide with the shorty. I’ll do the rest.”

“... As if I could- Owaah!”

The Red Boar’s tusks come at him again and he leaps to avoid them. Arnold looks at Hiiro’s face, seeing his determination. Thinking that he had some sort of plan, Arnold follows Hiiro’s words and escapes.

“Now come, you reckless bastard. Come straight at me.”

And as is he had heard Hiiro’s words of provocation, the Red Boar faces him with an angry face and begins kicking the ground. With one last kick, he starts running at Hiiro with an amazing speed.

Hiiro points his finger at the charging Boar, and makes a gesture as if he were pulling the trigger of a gun.

(Take this!)

The Boar seems startled for a second as the character flies towards him, but it keeps confidence in its charge and doesn’t try to dodge. As a result, the character hits the boar directly, and...

Whomp!

As if all of the power were drained out of its body, the Red Boar falls to the ground. The momentum from its charge causes it to slide on the ground for a distance.

(Good, it worked.)

Seeing the situation, the hiding Arnold and Muir slowly approach Hiiro.

“O-oy, Hiiro. What the hell did you do?”

“Ah? I put it to sleep.”

“Sleep!? H-how did you... ah, your cheating magic.”

“Yeah.”

Arnold notices something strange. Normally, Hiiro would take up a haughty attitude here, but it seems that his heart is elsewhere.

Hiiro looks back at the sleeping Boar.

(I put it to sleep. That's good. But I took way too long to do it.)

Unlike usual, it took him around 30 seconds to write a single character.

(Since I was using magic to forcefully change my target's state was that a 《Rebound》? Altering the state of a living being other than myself seems to produce this effect. Writing 『Sleep(眠)』 took this much effort. What would 『Death(死)』 take?...)

As he thinks this, a shiver goes down his spine.

(No, as long as I keep the image of 『Death(死)』 in my mind, I shouldn't get a 《Rebound》. Even for 『Sleep(眠)』, more than 《Rebound》, it felt like it was just difficult to write. It seems that some words require a bit of compensation. I wonder if different words require different obeisances.)

Right, a 《Rebound》 is supposed to bring disaster unto one's self. This time, the writing speed simple dropped. It doesn't feel like a 《Rebound》.

(『Needle(針)』 and 『Hard硬』 have an AOE of 4 tatami (6.61 m2). No matter how hard I tried to imagine the effect, that area was the limit. There's always a restriction. So each word has its own restrictions. That's all I need to know right now. And for now...)

Hiiro walks over to the sleeping Red Boar. The effect should last for 1 minute, so it should wake up soon.

“I'll be taking your life now.”

He tries to shove 『Piercer』 through its body, but it's quite tough. As expected of an S Rank monster.

“Ha!”

He uses all of his strength, and finally the blade goes through the skin. The Red Boar convulses violently and finally perishes.

Beeeeeeep. A sound that he hasn't heard in a while echoes through his head. Hiiro checks his status.

—

Hiiro Okamura

Lv 33

HP: 102/610

MP: 123/1290

EXP: 33089

NEXT: 4210

ATX: 216 (278)

DEF: 165 (180)

AGL: 301 (303)

HIT: 164 (172)

INT: 267 (271)

《Magical Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked|Air Word Unlocked|Parallel Writing Unlocked)

《Title》 Uninvolved Bystander, Other Worlder, Word User, The Awakened one, Ripper, The one who Imagines, Killer of the Unique, Gourmet Bastard, One Who Follows his Own Path

## Chapter 21: The Importance of Level

Hihiro has almost spent all of his MP in that encounter. However, it seems to be worth the effort. This S rank monster seems to have given enough experience to increase his level by 4.

It seems like Hihiro's hp has been reduced by a considerable amount. Only one light hit has reduced Hihiro's hp by over half of it's original amount.

Some new titles and skills have been added to Hihiro's status. Hihiro quickly opens a skill called 《Multiple Chain》.

《Multiple Chain》 50 mp consumption

You can write more than one character. Writing another character while another character is active will not stop the first character's effects. Also, you can write the same character continuously which produces a synergistic effect.

Hihiro smiles deviously. He realizes that he no longer has to wait 40 seconds before starting to write another character.

Writing a character continuously has many benefits. This skill would have been helpful when Hihiro had to pass through the checkpoint. Hihiro could have continuously written "fly" without alternating between "fly" and "floating."

This synergistic effect however...

"Did you see your status?"

Arnold's voice woke up Hiiro from his thoughts.

"So Hiiro, how many times did you level?"

"You leveled?"

"No, I didn't. I'm just curious."

"You are? Do you want to know how much experience the killing blow gave?"

"I just want to see how much experience being in a party that killed a S rank monster can give me."

I see. You can register a party with the guild. If you fight a monster with a party member both gain the same amount of experience. However, I and Arnold obtained different amounts of experience since we weren't in a party together.

"Oh, we could have registered as a party in Surge if you wanted to Hiiro"

"Me and uncle are in a party together!"

"Hey Hiiro what level are you?"

"Old man tell me what level you are first"

"Do I have to? I'm 35."

"Crap!"

"... Me? Wait what did you say?"

"..."

"So what level are you?"

I was a bit angry that my level is still slightly lower than Arnold's.

"By the way, Muir is only level 13."

"Yup!"

"So what level are you?"

"... 33"

"That's amazing! But wait was that your level before or after you beat the S rank monster."

"Before the I beat the Red Boar I was around 29."

"I wonder if there is anyone insane enough in this world other than you that would fight a unique monster ... and beat it while below level 30."

"Hey pervert. What did you just say?"

"I'm not a pervert! That monster was level 50 or higher! You were about half of that. That just leaves me speechless."

"Then just shut up!"(I added this to make it a bit better)

Hihiro thought about it for a while. It seems to be an abnormal situation if he was the average adventurer. However, in this world just because you have higher stats it doesn't mean that you are guaranteed to win.

Hihiro's hp was greater damaged when he took a single blow by the Red Boar. But with his word magic he was able to defeat the boar.

Unique magic is ridiculously over powered.

Without my word magic it would have been smarter to escape like Arnold said. Fighting the boar normally at this level is reckless.



"I'm going to get the parts of the Red Boar that can be exchanged at the guild."

"Which parts do you want?"

"The usual parts..."

"... I see."

Arnold nodded, and started to collect the body parts. The Red Boar's fangs seems to be discolored, but this is probably a characteristic of a unique monster.

"But I'm surprised .... To even encounter a Unique monster in this area."

"Is it that unusual?"

"Well ... it is unusual because they are so rare. In all the time I went around the world I never saw one before."

"I see. This guy has seen more than the regular adventurer, but has never encountered a unique monster before."

Without us killing this rank S monster there would have been many deaths. Many adventurers would have died from trying to kill it.

"However, since this guy died, I'm afraid that the monsters in forest might show up."

"Yea that might happen."

Since we came into the forest, we haven't encountered any monsters. The Red Boar seems to be the reason why all the monsters ran away.

"Well this seems to be a good thing. It seems like we won't have

any monsters attacking us immediately."

While Arnold was stretching his hands out, the monsters that were waiting suddenly appeared.

"The lie I..."

Arnold's thoughts weren't unreasonable, but turned out to be completely wrong.

"Hey Old man, I'm tired, so take care of them."

"What? Help me!"

"They aren't unique monsters. So you probably won't die ... so hang in there."

"Please help me!"

"Fine I'll protect Muir, but you do the rest of the work."

"Nooooo! Please help me!"

"So noisy. Just kill them already."

"Understood. I'll be thorough."

Arnold then jumps into the swarm of monsters.

Huh, I wonder if he will die?

Muir shyly looks at me expecting something.

"Well, fine I'll heal the old man if he manages to survive."

After Hiiro said this, Muir sits down next to the tree she was leaning on.

"Muir are you tired?"

"I am, but I'm going to stay awake. So I might help the old man if he needs me."

Muir says this with folded arms. She judged that she would help the old man more if she was fully recovered, and she decided to rest.

Muir without falling asleep watched Arnold's desperate fight as the day passed slowly.

After some time Arnold comes back to the place where Hiiro and Muir were resting.

"I'm tired"

"Good work Uncle!"

"That smile makes me feel so much better!"

Muir's smile makes Arnold feel a bit better. Arnold then glares at the sleeping Hiiro.

"You, kid. While I am desperately fighting, instead of watching Muir you sleep?!?"

While Arnold holds his fist while clenching his teeth, Hiiro says.

"Because I defeated a unique monster by myself I was tired."

"No ..... To refer to that as an ordeal is... This guy, what nerve!"

"Hehehe, yeah."

Arnold sits down next to the resting Muir and Hiiro. The sunlight coming down from the trees gently wraps around them like a blanket.

"Hiiro who are you really?"

"What do you mean?"

"You are stronger than most people with your unique magic. That arrogant attitude ... well leaving that aside. You are travelling alone, and you want to go to the beast's continent."

"Well ... I just wanted to go the beast continent."

"Well. The ordinary adventurer wouldn't have done anything similar to what you did so far. Also, the fight with the Red Boar from before was almost suicide."

"It was ..."

Muir also hears the truth in Arnold's speech and nods.

"Also for a level 33 your physical abilities are exceeding strong. Also, your personality..."

"Hehehe, personality shouldn't matter that much."

"This is the first time I see such a brat. I have never seen anyone like you before even among the Beastman."

"Yeah, I'm not interested"

"You look down on most guys, I fear that you will get into a bad situation soon."

" Eh, leave me alone."

Arnold looks at Muir's face which shows that she is confused.

"Muir are you still afraid of humans?"

"Yeah I am, but..."

"What about me?"

"Well ... Hihiro isn't that bad."

"Also, I don't think Hihiro is that bad" Arnold interjects. "He is completely different from the humans I met so far."

"Haha, am I?"

"Sadly, you seem to be the reincarnation of a demon. The way you look at Muir is sickening."

Muir laughs even though she knows about the existence of Evila.

"I'm glad that Muir is able to laugh like that."

"Uncle..."

"You were entrusted to me by that guy. I will do everything in my power to keep you safe."

"... No, even I will become stronger. I want to be like Uncle and the other beastman when I grow up!"

"Muir ..."

While Arnold and Muir both stare at each other, Arnold gently strokes her head. Muir smiles happily.

Hihiro slightly opens his eyes. After he sees these two in such a situation, he closes them and falls back asleep.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 22: The Bear People of Doggam

“Now then, let’s hurry.”

Hihiro slowly gets up and begins walking. Arnold glares at him with his eyes half closed.

“... If you’ve already healed, then I guess it’s alright. Wait, we were supposed to be waiting for you!”

“Fufufu, let’s go!”

With Muir’s urgings, the group presses onwards.

After walking a while, they found what seemed to be the forest’s exit.

“Oh, Finally!”

Arnold suddenly gets faster. After leaving the forest, the three found themselves in a large field of flowers.

“Uwa~”

Muir stares in silence, as if she had lost the ability to speak. A gentle wind causes the petals to sway back and forth. It’s a magnificent sight.

“This is the 【Doggam Garden】.”

“So these were planted by the 『Bearnts』?”

“Yeah. It’s pretty, ain’t it? The scent is also divine.”

A scent sweet enough to cause one to drool lingers in the air. The mixed varieties of flowers here probably carried a wide assortment of delicious nectars.

“And right after this, we should reach the 『Bearnt』 village,

【Doggam】!”

Past the field, they could see a village. The village was quite small, as if it were trying to hide itself from the world.

When they entered the village, Hiiro and co. see the Bearnt people gathered in a wide, open space. They try to see what’s going on.

“What’s up?”

“Eh? O-oh! It’s been a while, Arnold!”

“Yo, Max! You’re just as fat as usual!”

They grasp each other’s shoulders as they give greetings.

“Hm? Arnold... Your ears...”

“Ah? Haha, well yeah.”

Arnold’s face looks pained. But he quickly recovers, and takes on his cheerful persona.

“Let me introduce you. This is the 『Bearnt』 Max. We shared a drink the last time I came through this village.”

Arnold turns to Hiiro and Muir, and introduces the man. Max’s smile flashes a hint of sadness.

“Max, let me introduce these two.”

He turns again to Max.

“This child is my lovely angel, my cutie flower, Muir Castrea!”

Though he says this with a determined tone, everyone stares at him with a blank expression. Muir’s face slowly turns red.

“P-please treat me well!”

She quickly lower her head. The sight of her doing so causes those watching the scene to smile.

“Yeah~ and the other one is just as he looks. He’s a brat called Hiiro.”

His treatment is clearly different, but Hiiro doesn’t particularly care.

“The two of you are welcome here! My name is Max!”

His body is quite stalker. No, it’s more like he just has a lot of excess fat.

(He looks more like a pig than a bear)

(TL: So he’s like some sort of... Half Pig, Half Bear-Man?)

Hiiro thinks something incredibly rude, as Arnold questions Max on the reason everyone was gathered there.

And then Max’s face turns serious.

“Ah, the truth is that someone saw a Unique Monster in the forest. We’re here thinking up countermeasures.”

Arnold looks like he wants to say something.

“Even if we try to do something, our opponent is Rank S. This village has not the power to do anything about it.”

“R-rank S? U-um, Max...?”

“What?”

“W-was that Unique Monster possibly... a Red Boar?”

“Yeah, I’m surprised you know. You’re correct!”

‘More than simply knowing, we head on encountered it, and this brat killed it, you know.’ Arnold screams in his heart.

“Oh yeah, where did you guys come from, anyways? Did you go through the forest? Then luck must be on your side. If you encountered it, you would have died.”



“Well, something did die...”

“What do you mean?”

Arnold sighs, and then begins telling the truth.

“HHWWWAAATT!? You KEEEEELED the Unique Monster!?” (TL: His pronunciation is off here)

It’s not just Max. Everyone in the surrounding area has surprise written on their faces.

“Y-yeah. The one who did it was this brat. Here’s the evidence.”

And he brings out the salvaged monster parts as evidence. The crowd gets even more excited.

“WhaWhaWhaWhat’s going on, Arnold!? What is he!? Is he an SSS Rank?”

“N-no... He’s a D Rank Adventurer...”

“WHAAAAAAAAAAAA!?”

Max’s mouth hangs open as he stares at Hiiro.

“D-did this guy really kill it? This short, evil-eyed brat!?”

Max thrusts his finger at Hiiro. Hiiro grabs it.

Twist...

“Stoooooop!”

“I hate it when people point at me.”

The area becomes silent. Time seems to have stopped for the villagers. Arnold lets out a deep sigh.

“I’m serious, people. I can’t go that far in depth, but the Unique Monster is already gone, this guy is the one that killed it, and the village is now safe. Please just leave it at that.”

Hihiro seems to be slightly impressed. If Arnold had tried to explain his special magic, then he would have smacked him. But it seems that Arnold respects his privacy. Hihiro's impression of Arnold has improved a bit.

And so the village's crisis was averted. The Monster never reached the village, and no casualties arose. Hihiro's slaying of the Red Boar earned him quite a bit of attention.

The feeling of being stared at was quite uncomfortable, but as the villagers made his food extra tasty, Hihiro decided to put up with it.

—

—

—

—

—

“But I’m surprised that you’re alright, Arnold.”

Max stares at his sake as he speaks.

“What is this about?”

“I heard a rumor that a beast man that looked like you had been enslaved by humans. I thought that was definitely you... Your ears, did they do something to you?”

“...Pretty much.”

Arnold's ears which were firmly printed in Max's memory were nowhere to be seen. And he remembered the rumor of the beast man turned slave.

“It seems that you’ve been through a lot. The Humas race really does terrible things.”

Max did not get visibly angry, but his words seemed to carry a

menacing tone. Arnold feels a little happy that his friend is getting angry for his sake.

“Yeah, I definitely don’t want to return to that time. But right now, I am living quite happily, Max.”

“Arnold...”

“I’ve even started doing the things I wanted to. I became a chef, and I even have a daughter.”

“Oh yeah, when did you get that girl, anyways?”

Arnold squints as he looks at the smiling Max.

“Don’t get me wrong. Though she’s my daughter, we’re not related by blood.”

“Is that so?”

“Yeah. A good friend entrusted her to me.”

Arnold stares into the distance, and Max downs his sake in one swig. He sighs.

“It seems that you really have been through a lot.”

“Yep... Many things happened.”

The two are surrounded by silence for a while.

“Then what is that kid? He seems to be a Beast Man, of the same race as the girl.”

Arnold winces. Currently, Hihiro is using his magic to disguise himself. As a result, he has the same silver hair as Muir.

“Um... It’s that! He’s Muir’s brother!”

“So that’s it? No wonder they looked so much alike!”

(I think Hihiro is going to punch me later...)

Thinking about his dismal situation, Arnold starts to feel the air getting colder.

“But that kid really is crazy. I’ve never heard of someone taking out a Red Boar alone before.”

“Y-yeah. That guy is a bit strange.”

‘In many ways’ said Arnold in his heart

“I won’t press it any further. You guys are this villages saviors, so just take it easy for a bit.”

“Thanks, Max.”

—

—

—

—

—

“Oy, shorty. Don’t be so picky.”

Hiirō is holding up a green peas-like food that Muir seems to be avoiding.

“Eh... but...”

“If you hate it so much, then...”

He wraps the peas in some meat, and wraps that in more vegetables.

“Here, eat this.”

“... Okay”

Even as he hands it over, Muir’s eyes seem to show some resistance. Her upturned eyes seem to say, ‘Do I really have to eat it?’ And in

response, Hihiro's eyes seem to say, 'If you don't eat it, I'll force it on you.' And Hihiro shoves the food in her mouth.

Muir closes her eyes as she chews. And then opens them with a confused look.

(That terrible feeling is gone?)

As if he could read Muir's mind, Hihiro begins speaking.

"The reason you hated it was probably the texture, or the smell. All you have to do is get rid of that. This meat has quite a strong smell, and these vegetables have a firm texture. They'll help you get over your hatred of those beans."

"A-amazing. You're almost like my uncle."

Hihiro lightly hits Muir's head.

"Nyu!?"

"Who's like that old man?"

Hihiro frowns as he continues to stuff food in his mouth. Muir tilts her head, wondering where exactly he puts all of that food in his slender body.

(If I had a brother... would it feel like this?)

She gets a slight warm feeling inside of her chest. She had never thought of it before, but Hihiro's current hair color might be giving her such ideas.

Arnold watches the two, and stares at Hihiro as if he were going to shoot him to death.

But the Bear People around them simply misunderstood the situation and thought, 'Yep, those two are definitely siblings.' Arnold's concern was unnecessary.

—  
—  
—  
—

After the group continued eating for a while, a group of women in dancer like clothes that had high exposure rates came out. It seems that they will perform a folk dance.

A person comes out carrying a drum. He rhythmically beats it, and the dancers move to match the rhythm.

“Wow~! Those people are really pretty~ and the dancing is skillfull~.”

Muir holds her hands together, and admires them. But Hihiro seems to be more focused on the food in front of him. After filling his mouth, he glances at the dancers.

(I see. So the Bear Race has slender people as well.)

And once again, he thinks something rude before shifting his eyes back to the food. But Muir seems to be captivated, and Arnold seems to be enamored.

“Oh~ How indecent”

Muir feels as if his father had made lecherous eyes at some random girl. She’s quite embarrassed.

“Please contain yourself!”

And she heads towards Arnold. Hihiro continues pressing food to his lips, as he stares at the night sky. He sees a shooting star, and thinks, ‘How peaceful.’

—

Status

Arnold Ocean

Lv 35

HP 355/355

MP 189/189

EXP 50089

NEXT 6210

ATX 358 (402)

DEF 323 (339)

AGL 298 (303)

HIT 222 (224)

INT 102 ()

《Magical Attribute》 Wind

《Magic》 Fangs of Wind | Explosive Wind Claw | Blast Inversion

《Title》 Friend of the Wind | Former Slave | Chef | Doting Father |  
Man of Burning Soul | The Man Referred to as a Pervert

—

Guild Card

Name Arnold Ocean

Sex Male

Age 37

From Snyoll

Rank C

Quest

Equipment

Weapon Great Sword

Guard Plate Armor

Accessory Bracelet of the Wind

Rigin 1393000

—

Muir Castrea

Lv 13

HP 111/111

MP 82/82

EXP 12655

Next 2210

ATX 102 (105)

DEF 100 (108)

AGL 99 (102)

HIT 77 (78)

INT 54 ()

《Magical Attribute》

《Magic》

《Title》 Kidnapped | My Angel | Cutie Flower | Girl of Tolerance

—



Name Muir Castrea

Sex Female

Age 12

From Rince

Quest

Equipment

Weapon Knife

Guard Travelers Clothes

Accessory Nameless Bracelet

Rigin 56000

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 23: The Determination of Vale

[TL : Note, Shinobu talks in kansai-ben. Hihiro does not appear in this chapter.]

“...\*Sigh\*”

How many times had he sighed since then? The person sighing an uncountable number times was a certain Vale Kimble. He was sitting in a chair in the resting room for the soldiers on the training ground hanging his head.

“Hey, what do you think’s wrong with Vale?”

In worry, Aoyama Taishi asks his companions, Suzumiya Chika, Minamoto Shuri and Akamori Shinobu. The other three tilt their heads.

“It seems that he hasn’t been having any of his usual energy lately.”

“Since when was it again?”

Chika asks. The one that answers is Shinobu.

“It’s been like this since Vale left to visit the Guild.”

“I believe he said that there was a dependable person whose help he wished to request for.”

Shuri adds some information.

“And after he returned... He’s been like that.”

“What exactly happened to him?”

Chika asks as she wipes some sweat off of her forehead. The group had just been training with the soldiers. Chika trained especially hard, so she’s sweating profusely.

“What should we do? Should we ask him?”

“Yeah, but he’s kinda hard to approach.”

The air seems stagnant. It’s not really an atmosphere where they can talk to him.

After they watched him for a while, a girl dressed in pink entered the room. That person was the 【Royal Capital Victorias】’s oldest princess, Lilith van Strauss Arclaim.

She approached the four with a smile on her face.

“Good work, Heroes!”

“Lilith-sama must have some difficult work with public affairs as well.”

Taishi returns those words to the princess.

“Eh, um, what’s wrong?”

“Why are you talking so stiffly, Taishi-sama!”

“T-that is...”

Taishi fidgets as his eyes wander around the room.

“Didn’t you promise!? I told you to call me Lilith. Also, please stop talking to me like that. I thought Taishi-sama would understand!”

She approaches with her cheeks puffed up.

“G-got it! I got it, so don’t get so close, Lilith!”

“Ah, s-sorry!”

Lilith appears to be very flustered as she makes some distance with Taishi. Her face is died a deep shade of red.

“N-no, it’s not like I hate it. Haha.”

Taishi shyly hangs his head.

“Stop it, you two!”

Taishi suddenly feels an incredible amount of pressure on his foot.

“Oy, Chika! What are you doing!?”

Chika had stomped on Taishi’s foot with all of her might.

“Nothing really. I was just annoyed that your thoughts were written right on your face. Hmph!”

“Hey, that hurts!”

She steps on it again. Taishi begins tearing up as he pleads to the Lilith and Shuri to help him. Shinobu is laughing as she watches the scene.

“Ahaha! As expected, Taishi and Chika’s relationship is funny~”

“What’s with that! Idiot Taishi, your blushing face is unsightly!”

“Oh? Are you perhaps jealous?”

“Idi-! You’re wrong idiot!”

From watching this display, everyone present was able to understand Chika’s feelings. Except Taishi.

“Ufufunofu~ Falling for a dense man is tough~”

Shinobu teases Chika while smiling.

“I-I don’t care anymore! I’m going back to training!”

She says as she storms out of the room. Seeing her leave, Shinobu once again bursts into laughter.

“Chika’s so cute. She’s slender and polite. Taishi is a lucky one.”

“W-with what? I was just in a lot of pain. Where does this luck come from?”

Shinobu takes a deep sigh as Taishi attempts to explain that he’s

not a masochist.

“Ah, if you stay like that, Princess-sama and Chika will have a lot of trouble.”

She laughs as she sympathizes with them.

“Anyways, were you people talking about something before I arrived?”

Lilith asks. The group explains the contents of their conversation to her.

“So do you think something happened?”

“That’s what I can’t understand. I would ask, but he’s hard to approach right now...”

“There’s no helping it, I’ll go ask then.”

“Shinobu will?”

“Yeah, aren’t I the perfect person for this?”

“I’m not sure what criteria you’re using, but will you really be alright?”

“Leave it to me~.”

She says as she heads to the break room.

—

—

—

—

—

Vale was thinking over the things told to him by Guildmaster Judom Lankars.

(So the 『Evila』 King has changed, and that new King has sent multiple requests for peace talks, but our country has done nothing but ignore them...)

He was also told this: Before my daughter became a sacrifice, before you called over some bystanders to play Hero, wasn't there something we should have done?

And he was told that he was still much too immature.

(Why did the kingdom ignore... no, I understand the reason for that. There's still a high chance we'll get betrayed like before.)

When the previous 『Evila』 King had asked for peace talks and this country accepted, it was a trap, and many 『Humas』 had to become sacrifices. That's why the king could do nothing but reject these new offers.

(But...)

That's exactly why we have to communicate. That's what Judom said.

(And are the Heroes truly trustworthy individuals...?)

Judom asserted that the inhabitants of another world would be unable to sympathize with the populace. For now, everything is still fine. With their high physical abilities, and magical attributes the heroes should be able to easily overcome most obstacles.

But will they really fight with their lives on the line for the sake of another world? Do such philanthropists exist in this universe? When Judom told him this, Vale's mind became blank.

The reason for this was because Judom's argument was sound. It wasn't something based on opinion or bias. They would always use the word game. Like a game... If it was a game, then... Unlike a game... Whenever Vale heard these words, he somehow felt that these people had too little resolve.

(I thought it was because they were still young, and were not used to battle... but...)

Vale himself was still stronger than them individually at the moment. But they had the talent to take him out in an instant if they worked together. They're a major asset. But there's always someone stronger.

The 『Evila』 probably have plenty of people that could deal with them easily.

(If... If someone in their group were to die... would they...)

Would they still fight for us? Many questions that he couldn't answer surfaced in his head. Judom said that they had to return the heroes to their original world unharmed.

(What should I...)

As he closed his eyes tightly to think, Vale noticed the presence of someone behind him.

"What's up, Vale?"

"...Shinobu-sama?"

Behind him was Akamori Shinobu.

"You haven't been energetic lately, is something wrong? Everyone is worried."

"... I apologize."

"Eh? Ah, no it's nothing you have to apologize for."

Shinobu sits next to him and asks again.

"So, is something wrong?"

"\*Sigh\*... well..."

There's no way he could say it. That he had doubts of the person beside him. But he wanted to ask whether she could risk her life.

(If they learn the reality of death, will they leave the country...? Even after I've watched them grow to this level...)

His head could think of nothing but negative thoughts.

“Is Vale worrying about something related to us?”

Vale’s shoulders tense in response. Shinobu is able to effectively pick this up.

“Ah~ As I thought. So what is it? Will something happen to us?”

It’s not like Shinobu was especially sharp. It’s just that she noticed that Vale had been avoiding the four of them lately. As she looks at Vale, she feels a little sorry for him.

“... I can’t say it.”

“..... I see. Then you don’t really have to.”

“...What?”

Vale frowns.

“It doesn’t look like it’s something you have to answer immediately. You can take time and find your answer, right?”

“T-that is...”

“Or if you don’t get an answer now, will the world end?”

Shinobu shows a serious expression for a second.

“N-no such a thing won’t happen all of a sudden!”

“Then isn’t it fine?”

“...”

“I don’t know what you’re worrying about, but Vale should be doing the things he has to do!”

“Things I have to do?”

Returning you all to your own world? He wanted to ask.



“And that’s making us stronger.”

“S-stronger?”

“Of course. You don’t know when the 『Evila』 will attack, right? So what you have to be doing is preparing for that possibility by making the four of us stronger.”

“Shinobu-sama...”

“To be honest, I’m a little afraid. This place may look like a game, but it’s not a game.”

Once again, the word game came up. But this time it carried a greater resolve.

“I don’t really want to die, and I think I may run from fear.”

That’s a given. Vale and everyone else had thoughts like that too.

“However, if we all support each other, we’ll definitely be fine!”

Upon hearing these words, a single light shines in Vale’s empty mind. Vale stands up from his chair and faces the girl.

“Let’s go, Shinobu-sama! As you said, we must do what we can for now!”

“Yeah, that’s the spirit!”

Shinobu feels happy from the bottom of her heart that Vale was able to regain some of his energy. Vale was able to erase some of his doubts.

(That’s right. I can’t give up. I need to believe. In the King. In the Heroes. Once again... I’ll go meet Judom-sama once more!)

With a strong resolve, he walks out of the resting room into the outside world.

But he still hadn’t noticed. That the answer he reached right now didn’t really resolve anything. If he were to realize the truth, the

shock would only be greater now than before.

And he still hasn't noticed. That whether he liked it or not, he would have to put everything on the line to take from others their everything.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 24: Honey Gathering

“And? Why do I have to dress like this?”

Hihiro wasn't wearing his usual red robe. He was dressed in thick, white work clothes from head to toe, with a net covering his face. He was even wearing dense leather gloves.

This is that, isn't it? The clothes beekeepers wear in order to collect honey.

“Hey, old man. Could the honey here be produced by bees?”

“Bees? I don't know what you're talking about, but the honey here is made by Honey Bees.”

(TL: Hihiro is saying Bee in Japanese. Arnold says it in english)

Those are bees all the same, is what Hihiro wanted to shout out. But there was something he wanted to confirm before that.

“Old man, didn't you say the honey was something the 『Bearnt』 people produced?”

“Ah? Did I say something like that?”

“You definitely did. To forget what you said yourself, are you going senile, pervert?”

“It's been a while since you said it you bastard! Who's a pervert!?”

“Ga ha ha! The thing we make isn't the honey. We make 《Honey Confectionaries》.”

Max, dressed in the same garb as Hihiro says this. He's probably going as well.

“Hm? I think there was an MP restoring item called 《Honey Candy》. Is that one of your products?”

“Yeah, that’s an item made by mixing in the flower 《White Iris》 . We breed those flowers selectively and control the flow of the product in the world.”

“I see. And? Why do I have to dress like this?”

“Of course, because you’re going to go gather the honey, right?”

“Cut the crap, sexual deviant.”

“Ah, he changed my name again! I really don’t like this change!”

“Anyways, I’m not going.”

Saying that, Hihiro throws his gloves at the ground.

“Don’t worry. Right now, the Honey Bees shouldn’t be here. There’s no danger. C’mom.”

“Say that from the start... Is what you thought I would say? This Old Man has the resolve to get stung repeatedly in order to retrieve delicious honey for me, his lord.”

“Gununununu! Why would I get anything for you!? And when did you ever become my lord!?”

“’Twas a joke.”

I know, but still I’m angry!

Watching the two quarrel, Max goes to Muir.

“Are those two always like that?”

“P-pretty much...”

“I see...”

Hihiro ditches the work clothes, and once again dons his red robe. He seems to have absolutely no intention of going. Seeing him, Arnold begins smiling.

“Oy, oy. Are you sure about that, Hihiro?”

“Ah?”

“Of course, I could infiltrate the Honey Bee nest, take the honey and come back to let you eat it. It would probably be plenty tasty.”

“...What are you trying to say?”

“But do you know when Honey Bee honey, 《Honey Syrup》 is tastiest?”

“...”

“That’s right after it’s taken out of its holding area.”

Upon hearing those words, Hiiro’s index finger twitches for a moment.

“What’s more, look at this.”

Saying that, he takes out a biscuit from a bag.

“This is a biscuit specially made by the 『Bearnt』 people. You’re supposed to douse it in 《Honey Syrup》 the second you obtain it. Ah~ the taste of it is heavenly.”

“.....”

“How unfortunate. It seems you’re not going, so you’ll have to make do with the lesser quality 《Honey Syrup》 afterwards. Meanwhile, we’ll be savoring the best quality of goods... wait, what?”

Hiiro disappeared before his very eyes. Arnold looks everywhere to find him. But what comes into his vision is a full equipped Honey Gathering Expert.

“I’ve said this time and again, but mention that first. Now then, let’s go already Little Girl Kidnapper.”

“W-who’s a kidnapper you damn brat!”

Watching the two quarrel, Max goes to Muir.

“Are those two always like that?”

“P-pretty much...”

“I see...”

These two also follow closely behind Hihiro.

—  
—  
—  
—  
—

Hihiro, who had lost to his appetite, resolves himself to go through some trouble. His face is warped with the desire to eat the best quality food as he hurries towards the Honey Bee nest.

He was relieved that the place was supposed to be close by, but when he finally arrived, he stared at his destination in dismay.

In front of him was a big... very big bee hive. Its size was around that of a house.

“Oy, isn’t this a little too big?”

“Hahaha, actually, this is my first time gathering honey as well... This is a bit surprising.”

Watching the two, Max lets out a hearty laugh.

“Isn’t this to be expected? Honey Bees are about as big as babies. How would they live without a nest this big?”

“I think the books said they were around 30 Tails long.”

Hihiro searches through his memory and produces this information. By the way, this world’s measurement of Tail is about the equivalent of a centimeter. The only thing different is the name.

“Well then, should we go in?”

Max says this, and He leads Hihiro’s group to the other side of the hive. There, they find an area with something that looked like a handle sticking out.

Max places the large bag he had with him on the ground. He firmly grasps the handle, and pulls it with all of his might. As if it were a desk drawer, the section of the hive is slowly pulled out.

Immediately, the air fills with the sweet smell of honey. Enough to make Hihiro and his companions gulp unintentionally. After he pulled out around half of the drawer, Max stopped.

“Hey, look.”

Where Max was pointing was a series of crevices inside of the hive. The formation looked like a Sudoku board with the walls representing the frame.

And inside of these crevices was a soft spongy substance. Max takes that out and wrings it out over a bottle he produced from his bag.

And viscous liquid slowly flows from it. Steadily, the honey settles into the bottom of the bottle.

“You guys should try it as well.”

He steps aside and points Hihiro’s group to the spongy substance. Hihiro takes it in his hand.

(I see, so this is how they gather it)

Hihiro record the knowledge in his head as he begins to wring it out. But he quickly gets tired of it, and puts his hand on Arnold’s shoulder, saying he would leave it to him.

“Hey! You’ll get honey on my shoulder!”

It’s already on it anyways. Hihiro takes off his gloves, and takes a biscuit out of Arnold’s pocket.

“Oy, wait!”

“It’s fine, just do your job Old Man.”

“I don’t want to hear that from you!”

After Arnold’s shouting stops, Max shrugs his shoulders.

Hihiro soaks the borrowed in plenty of honey. The honey itself is orange in color, and quite thick. Its smell is enough to clearly convey its sweetness.

First, Hihiro puts the honey itself in his mouth.

“N.....ooh”

It’s an extreme concentrated sweetness. On top of that, it is a bit sour. It may be because it had been fermenting. This honey truly is top class.

Without losing any momentum, Hihiro shoves the biscuit in his mouth.

“... Yes. It’s quite tasty.”

Without a doubt, it’s tasty. This is an item that would definitely be popular with women. But Hihiro was a holder of quite a sweet tooth, so he enjoys it equally. Before he noticed it, the biscuits were gone.

“Uoooooooo! Did you eat all of them by yourself!?”

“Yes.”

“Don’t yes me! This is the true surprise! I’ve once again confirmed that you’re an irreconcilable bastard!”

“No crying over spilt milk. What a petty man.”

“How should I shut that mouth of yours?”

The force exerted on the sponge in his hand increases.

“Ga ha ha! If it’s biscuits, then I have plenty with me. Don’t worry.”



“I see. Good work.”

“You still plan on eating more!?”

“Don’t underestimate my power.”

“Wha!?”

“My stomach... Is still calling out.”

“I’m going to kill yooou!”

And after various things happened, they filled all of their jars with honey, and pushed the drawer back in. Finally, they shared a meal together.

“Oh! What a delicacy! As expected of 《Honey Syrup》!”

Arnold holds his hands together in praise.

“Quiet. Don’t be so rowdy in the middle of a meal.”

“Nu...kku... damn... brat...”

Arnold had felt a little embarrassed for his sudden outburst, but hearing this from Hiroyuki pissed him off.

“Ga ha ha! Arnold is quite a spoiled man!”

Max laughs happily as he snacks on a biscuit.

“NomNomNomNomNomNomNom”

Muir is wholeheartedly eating them... nibbling on them?

Seeing her, Arnold expression turns warm.

“Ha~ Why must she be so cute~?”

“You’re creepy.”

“What the hell!”

“Then let me rephrase that. You’re disgusting.”

“Don’t those mean the same?”

“Ga ha ha.”

“NomNomNom”

As the four happily (?) eat, a buzzing sound begins to sound out.

“It seems the lord is coming back.”

A large group of bees clouds the sky. The size of each individual bee is incomparable to that of a normal one.

“Oy, oy. Isn’t this nest too small for that amount?”

“This isn’t the only one. There are six hives in total.”

“I see, then it seems plausible.”

A large Honey Bee starts flying straight at them. Hiiro and Arnold immediately take a stance, but...

“Ah, I left my sword behind”

Arnold is the same. Arnold stands in front of Muir, and Hiiro prepares to write a word. But Max slowly stands up and laughs.

“Once again, thanks for the splendid honey.”

As if in response, the bee bobs up and down in the air.

“We’ll make another hive soon, so have fun until then.”

Up. Down. Up. Down.

After that short interaction the bee returns to the flock.

In exchange for the 『Bearnt』 building them sturdy hives, the Honey Bees offer a portion of their honey. That’s the agreement between the two parties. It was a contract that existed longer than anyone could remember. The Bee that stopped by earlier was the

Queen.

“Hey, wait a second. Then why am I wearing this?”

As Hihiro says this, the two besides Max nod.

“Well it’s not like there’s no meaning to it.”

“What do you mean?”

“This area is swarming with many bugs. Especially after we take out honey...”

Suddenly a swarm of smaller bugs descends on the group.

(T-this feels disgusting)

The various bugs crawl all over their bodies. Muir has an expression hinting at the end of the world before she loses consciousness. Arnold, who is carrying her, and even Hihiro pray to god for the end of this ordeal.

“Now then. Since we’ve been eating for a while, the amount of bugs will be considerable. What should we do?”

“”Run!””

“I see.”

With all their strength, the four leave the area.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 25: Tasty Honey Sweets

Hiiro went back to the village, and ordered for the making of 《Honey Candy》 with the 《Honey Syrup》. That was just how tasty he found the honey.

Arnold and Muir both went somewhere, so Hiiro was alone and planned to have a nice day relaxing. He went to the flower garden near the village and took out a book.

By the way, this was something borrowed from Max's house. Of course, with permission.

《The Adventures of Tyn Cal Weikl》.

Such was written on the cover. Somehow, he could read the language of this world, as it got translated when it entered his head. According to the guild, the language of this world was called 《Ranalyth》, and was quite different from Japanese.

But Hiiro could read the words as if they were written in Japanese. This was most likely an ability he got upon transferring worlds. His mind was able to instantly translate the words he read. However because of this, in order to write the language, he would need formal training.

To tell the truth, the four heroes have had practice writing this world's language. But Hiiro had already learned it. He could already write on the level of an average person of this world.

He had always had a good memory, especially in relation to things he was interested in. And Books were one of his passions. Though not perfect, Hiiro was able to remember most of everything he wanted to, so he was able to quickly memorize the letters of this world.

“This is....the story of a hero, right?” (Hiiro)

Anyway, looking at the cover of the book, there was a picture of a young youth with a sword.

(So books like this get written in this world as well. Let's see, the author is... Marquis Blue Note)

It was not a name he had heard of.

Hihiro turned the page and continued reading. He found that the story had an honestly common setting. The countries each claiming respective authority, and insisting that they are the top of the world. At first, it starts as a discussion, and then escalates to war.

The countries fight each other, and people feel the consequences and become impoverished. The world becomes painful. Meanwhile, a young boy unhappy with the situation of the world, and friends who have the same thoughts go to stop the war.

(That's a nice sense of justice, however the world is tough enough to survive through a little war)

As for the person who is called the hero, he is praised, but then killed later.

(... What? They kill off the main character?)

Furthermore, he was killed by the king of the country which called for the hero. In the end, the hero was executed with the crime of killing the daughter of the king. Of course, the hero was completely innocent. However, as the countries were rescued from war, the king envied the fame of the hero who became the symbol of peace and murdered him.

Then, confusion broke out as to who killed the hero, and from that, a new war started, going back the state the world was in before.

(The hero worked so hard, and died a miserable death. He wasn't even rewarded)

But the adventure hadn't ended yet.

(What do you mean by not ended!)

There still things he needed to do. So, he was still left with this mission when he died. Thus, he revived and came back to the world.

The hero searched, for a method to return the world to a peaceful state. On his journey, he came across a certain magic. Its power was absolute and could control the world as one desired.

However, his body was lost in the process, and he became just an existence, and could not use the magic. Thus, he decided to wait. Someday, a person will find the hero, and at that time, the hero will revive again, and bring back the peace. First, though, the whole country will be crushed.

(Oy, this Hero gives up quickly.)

I will eliminate all the countries with the bad ideas. Then, the world will be peaceful. A world I would be able to adventure freely in.

So, the hero continues to wait. Waiting, waiting.

Believing that the hope of light will come someday, he continues to wait.

The Man's name was Tyn Cal Weikl. A man heralded as a Hero.

(This man is definitely broken. But the ones who did it were the country and the world)

Hihiro slammed the book shut.

“And such is the end of a Hero. I definitely don't want to become one.”

The book didn't grant the Hero a happy ending. Though real life can take any sort of turn, a story is just a story. Fiction is just a fabrication.

Even the hero who made peace has many enemies. If you have war, there are people who benefit. Here, there are even some people who wish to fight. And in the midst of it, a young hero attempted to

push his selfish ideals of justice onto everyone else.

“Freedom is the best. Don’t force yourself to work. Just going with the flow is best.”

While murmuring this, Hihiro closed his eyes.

—

—

—

—

—

“There is the 《Fried Syrup》, 《Honey Tart》, and the 《Threesome》, and also the 《Honey Sap》!”

Max had arranged the 《Honey Candy》 on the desk and was pointing to different ones to teach Hihiro how to make them. There were even ones that he have never seen before. Muir is ecstatically looking at all of them.

As expected of a little girl. Arnold gulps as he stares at the honey candies, which are shining like jewels.

“Amu” (TL: Sound of putting food in mouth)

“Why are you already eating!?”

Hihiro starts to eat, and soon after, Arnold joins in. He realizes that his retorts will bear no fruit, so he starts eating as not to lose to Hihiro.

The 《Fried Syrup》 was something like honey fried in oil. It had a fierce, new texture, creating a new effect.

The 《Honey Tart》 was just a tart covered in honey. It seemed to be Muir’s favorite.

The 《Threesome》 was something similar to a pizza, with 3

different types of honey, the 《Blue Honey》, the 《Red Honey》, and the 《White Honey》, and then topped in different fruits. This appeared to be Arnold's favorite.

The 《Honey Sap》 was a nice finisher. It was made up of a white ball of rice cake, with the honey inside. When it was bitten into, it revealed its true taste. It combined the light taste of cake with the thick flavors of the honey mixed with jam within. This was Hiiro's favorite.

When the three companions were full, Max asked them what they were going to do from now on.

"Well, our purpose here is done. We also got the honey."

Hiiro opens up the bag, showing the bottle of honey inside.

"So, you're leaving soon?" (Max)

"Yeah." (Hiiro)

"Oh, where are you going?" (Max)

"The City of Pasion" (Hiiro)

"【Beast Capital Pasion】, hmm.... that's very far." (Max)

Right, the capital was quite far off. It would take around a week by foot.

"Well, there's no rush to get there." (Arnold)

"Oh, really? Then today we'll party 'til we drop!" (Max)

"Yeah!"

Arnold and Max bumped shoulders in high spirits, while Muir stared at them, not sure what to do.

(City of Pasion, huh. I would like to see that.)

Hiiro looked at the sky through the window.



-  
-  
-  
-  
-

【Beast Capital Pasion】. This is where the king of the 『Gabrenth』 lives. It was made around a big tree and is surrounded by a vast forest forest. Or rather, you could say that it is the forest.

All the houses and buildings are made of trees. It's truly a Kingdom in harmony with nature.

Meanwhile, a young man was standing on a big branch looking up the tree. Then, there was a voice from below.

“Hey, don't climb so far ahead!”

“Come down quickly!”

Two men clad in armor shout towards the young man.

“Shoot, they found me, dood.”

Reluctantly, the young man jumps off of the branch he was on, surprising the men.

“He jumped off!”

“I-is he alright?”

They are worrying for nothing. The young man lands stunningly on a branch... or not.

Snap!

The branch broke and the young man crashes into the thicket. The two men hurry towards him.

“Oy, are you okay!?”

While rubbing his head, the young man smiled.

“M-my apologies, dood. But I’m fine.”

“G-good. That’s good. Now don’t be climbing up that high again, you hear?”

One of the men offers his hand. The young man gladly takes it and gets up.

“Sorry, I just wanted to see the tree that is held so dearly by this country, dood.”

He looks at the large tree from underneath.

“Right. The first King Jingwald saw this tree, and made it the center of his country. It’s sometimes called the 《Tree of Beginnings》.”

“Yeah, this is the first time I’ve visited the 《Tree of Beginnings, Aragorn》, dood.”

“Now that I think about it, you’re an unfamiliar face. Where are you from?”

“Really, really~ far east from here, dood.”

“East... so 【Kalent】?”

“Even farther, dood.”

“What was there beyond that? Ah, are you from a newly established village or something?”

“Well, something like that.”

The youngster shows off his two white canines as he laughs aloud.

“But kid, how did you climb all the way up there?”

The man stares up at the towering tree as he speaks.

“How? I jumped, dood.”

“Jump... Well I can see from your ears that you’re of the 『Were Rabbit』 tribe. I guess I can be satisfied with that explanation.”

On top of the youngster’s hair, which was as green as the leaves of the trees, was a set of long ears that twitched back and forth.

“Oy, it’s time to change shifts.”

“Ah, is it already that time? Kid, don’t do anything too dangerous.”

“That’s for the warning, dood.”

And after saying that, the two guards left. The youth stares at the giant tree once more.

“It’s quite nice. This city that seems to grow around it.”

He puts on a brown robe, and starts walking away. As he leaves, he stares at the other tree. The dwelling of the king of the Beasts, the 《King Tree》 .

“I guess it’s time for me to get to work, dood.”

And with the sound of the wind, the young man disappears.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 26: The Meeting in the Country of Beasts

“Papa!”

“I told you to address me as Father.”

“Please forget about that for now and listen to what I have to say!”

The person having this conversation is a man with a stern lion-like face. This man is in fact the king of 【Beast Kingdom Pasion】, Leowald King. (TL: Yes, his last name is King)

And the person calling Leowald papa is his blood descendant, princess Kuclear.

Though her father sported a majestic mane and an intimidating aura, Kuclear was different. The only thing similar between them was her silky, crimson brown hair, which she kept cut short.

Though her eyes looked a bit sharp, the impression she gave off was one of a young girl loved by all. Perhaps this was due to the influence of her mother Blansa.

She is currently inside of the 《King Tree》, interrogating her father. The contents of their conversation...

“Hey, why is it that I am prohibited from going out to war?”

“I’ve said it time and again, but you are still much too young. You haven’t even managed learning the art of 《Binding》 yet, right?”

“... Well... that’s true.”

She breaks off eye contact with her father.

“Soon, we will be making preparations for war. We will engage in much bloodshed, and death will run rampant in our ranks.”

“B-but still I am this country’s princess! Do you expect me to stand

here while everyone goes off to fight?”

“Exactly.”

“Papa!”

“I don’t have the slightest feeling that we will face defeat, but just in case, I need to make sure that some royal blood stays behind.”

“Does that mean you will be taking all of my brothers with you?”

“Exactly.”

“Ku...”

Kuclear makes a downtrodden face as she clenches her teeth. She can understand her father’s point. If all those of royal blood go into battle and meet their ends, then the country will go through turmoil.

That’s why Kuclear is to be left behind while her two brothers go out to war. She can understand that this is for her country’s sake, but still she is unsatisfied by it.

“I-I can’t agree with that! We still have Mimir with us! That child can...”

“What sort of things are you expecting of a 9 year old?”

“Uu... but...”

Mimir was Kuclear’s younger sister. Of course, she was also a carrier of royal blood, but she was much too young to have a country left to her. Also, she had another problem.

“Though she has my blood, Mimir is facing a difficult problem, isn’t she?”

“T-that’s true, but... That child is very smart. More so than me.”

Leowald steps out of his role as king for a moment, and places his hand on Kuclear’s shoulder.

“You’ve already turned 18. You think more of this country than I do.”

“Papa...”

“Because of that, your brothers and I can go off to fight without worry.”

“...”

“I have no intentions of dying. I’ll slay all of the 『Evila』, and proceed to the 『Humas』. We’ll settle our old debts, and take the country.”

Leowald stares at Kuclear with his piercing eyes.

“But even I...”

Kuclear feels the warmth emanating from her shoulder.

“You are my daughter. The daughter of the 『Beast King』. You may be inexperienced, but I believe you will be a Beast Man that stands above all the others.”

“Papa...”

“So while we’re away, I leave this country to you.”

Upon saying this, Leowald nods, and leaves the room without waiting for his daughter’s reply. Kuclear, left behind, stares at her own hands lamenting her lack of power.

“If only I had more power... If only I was strong like my brothers...”

She wanted to fight. She wanted to protect her people, her country and the 『Gabranth』 race. But she realizes she doesn’t have such power. Kuclear stares at her father’s back, muttering to herself how far away he seemed.

—  
—  
—  
—  
  
A meeting was being held in the 《King Tree》. Taking his place at the round table, the king Leowald directed his gaze at the people before him.

“Everyone, the time has come.”

Upon these words, the eyes of the people listening fill with confidence.

“For a long time, we have faced unjust treatment. The 『Evila』 do whatever they please on our land, and the 『Humas』 see us as nothing more than slaves. Even now, many of our brethren are suffering.”

Everyone gives a firm nod.

“We have finally attained power. We, who have not been granted magic and have lost our racial abilities have gained the strongest art of 《Binding》! Now is the time for us to bare our fangs, and show those who looked down upon us! And we must teach them! The Beast Men are the beings that will stand upon the heavens!”

“Yeah!”

Strong voices of agreement fill the area. Leowald smiles upon seeing his subordinate’s reliability.

“First we must make a proclamation of war! We are different than those 『Evila』 who live through betrayal and deceit. We will fairly fight looking our opponents in the eye. And we will win! Such is the pride of the 『Gabranth』 people!”

“Yeah!”

“After we declare war, we must march onto enemy land. Of course, we will encounter 『Evila』 there... Hunt them without remorse.”

Everyone present gives a ferocious smile. They truly do carry the blood of beasts. Their animal instincts, their desire for battle, was inhuman.

“Leglos, did you finish writing up the formal proclamation?”

“Yes, I have written it exactly as you ordered, father.”

“Good.”

Leglos was Leowald’s eldest son. According to his vassals, he did not fall far behind his father in strength, popularity or intimidating atmosphere.

“Then after you send it, I will take my unit into 『Evila』 territory.”

The person saying this was the second son, Lenion. His face looked closer to that of his mothers. He looked quite similar to Kuclear.

“Understood, but don’t let your guard down. Upon receiving our proclamation, they will definitely amass their forces.”

“I know. But still I will hunt every last one of them.”

He was also a Beast Man. His eyes held a deep thirst for blood.

“Does everyone understand? This is war! Our main goal is to win and return home. This is a fight that we cannot risk losing! Everyone, carry your pride as a Beast Man as you march into battle! We’re aiming for eradication!”

“Yeah!”

“We will begin our march one week from now. Fierce battles await us. Everyone march back to your house, and spread the word to you kin!”

Everyone nods.



“Then from here on out, we will be increasing our fighting force.”

—  
—  
—  
—  
—

Just above the room Leowald was holding his meeting in, a single youngster was kneeling down with an unpleasant expression on his face.

“Ah, this has become quite serious, dood.”

(TL: This man or woman ends all of his/her sentences with –su. As such, I am going to follow suit with Nippon Ichi and use dood.)

Is seems he has heard the contents of the meeting. His ears twitch as he begins to think to himself.

“I never thought that things would proceed this quickly, dood. What should I do?”

He scratches his face as he ponders the future. His ears twitch once more.

“... Okay, nothing out of the ordinary here.”

A Soldier-looking Beast Man approached the area, but found no one there. The youngster had quickly left the area.

And when the coast was clear...

“That was close, dood. If I get caught, it wouldn’t be funny, dood.”

He says as he quietly returns to the place he was before. He had jumped and grabbed a higher branch on the tree when he sensed the soldier’s approach.

This is the 《King Tree》. It has thousands upon thousands of ridiculously thick branches extending in every direction. And carved on the insides of them are various rooms and passageways.

“For now, I guess I should deliver the message, dood.”

He looks over the town before the tree with a solemn expression.

“They made such a peaceful kingdom, yet they go to all the trouble of destroying it, dood.”

The youngster looks up at the sky.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 27: A Slice of Their Travels

Hihiro's party set 【Beast Capital Pasion】 as their destination and began their journey. They were not walking.

“To think there was such a convenient vehicle in this world.”

Hihiro's party sat on a vehicle... an animal. It had an appearance like that of an Ostrich, but it was several times larger, and it had a small chair strapped to its back.

“That's right! I really owe Max something now.”

As they were leaving 【Doggam】, Max appeared with it. Apparently, this bird was an essential item for crossing the vast, rugged terrain of the Beast Continent.

The animal was called a Raidpic, and it was a beast that was able to run while carrying its owner on its back. (TL: Literally written Ride Peak. I'm really questioning this author's naming sense, but that's not something new at this point in time)

Arnold's Raidpic had two seats placed on it, so Muir was riding next to him.

“At this speed, we'll be able to arrive at our destination several times faster than planned, right?”

“Yeah! But this'll take a bit of time to get used to.”

Just as Muir said, in a world without suspension, the seats put an uncomfortable amount of pressure on a certain part of the body when the birds' body bobbed up and down.

“Right, right. I thought my ass would split in half! Right, Muir?”

“D-don't bring me into this!”

Yes, her butt did hurt, but Arnold needed to learn some delicacy.

By the way, Hihiro had no such problems in that area.

This was because he had written the character 『Soft』 on it, giving it a texture similar to a sofa. Of course, he did not reveal this fact to the others and monopolized it for himself. Otherwise, Arnold would get mad.

At that moment, the Raidpic began decelerating. When the group looked around for the reason, they found that they were surrounded by several frog-shaped monsters.

“Great! It’s been a while since I’ve been able to fight!”

Arnold appeared to be ready to jump out of his seat. However, Hihiro felt that getting up, defeating the monsters, and getting back on would be a pain, so he began concentrating magic on his finger.

Bang!

“W-what was that!?”

The cause of Arnold’s surprise was a sudden explosion in front of his mount. No one in the group could use fire magic, and he couldn’t sense anyone else around them.

But it was clear that some magic was used.

“Let’s go.”

Hihiro was the only one who stayed calm.

“You did something, didn’t you?”

“Who knows?”

Though Arnold was sure that Hihiro had done something, Hihiro simply ignored him. Though the Raidpic was surprised, it quickly confirmed that the enemies around it were gone, and cautiously proceeded forwards.

(Yeah, 《Word Magic》 is needlessly useful)

The word he used was 『Burst』, and its effect was just as it sounds. Its firepower was considerable, and a single shot was enough to take the lives of several monsters. But as it also effected the caster, it was best to cast from afar.

—

—

—

Holding the book Max gave him in one hand, Hihiro read while enjoying his ride. Contrarily, Arnold felt annoyed while looking at him.

“... Hey, Muir?”

“What?”

“That guy... About that chair he’s using...”

“Y-yeah?”

“Doesn’t it look a bit soft?”

“D...does it?”

Arnold got up and tapped the bottom of his chair to confirm that it was rock hard. However, Hihiro’s chair seemed to sink under his weight. The back rest was the same.

(This is strange... My instincts are telling me something’s wrong. Is this extremely condescending feeling I’m getting from him my imagination?...)

It wasn’t his imagination, but eventually, Arnold sat down without coming to any conclusions.

—

—

—

The day came to a close, and the group set up camp. Though he was already used to it, the youth of the modern era did not particularly enjoy camping outdoors.

He often witnessed unknown animals and insects, and he worried whether or not they carried any pathogens.

But even if he got infected, he would be able to deal with it with his 《Word Magic》, so it wasn't a particularly pressing matter.

(But this sticky feeling I'm getting all over my body is unforgivable.)

As he thought that, he wrote a word on his body. The word was 『Clean』, and with it, the filth and sweat clinging to his body vanished.

(Yes, though I always use it, the feeling is quite refreshing.)

The feeling of having your body instantly cleaned through magic was like putting your full body into a bath.

“What are you doing?”

He was found by a troublesome person.

“Nothing.”

“It can't be nothing. I saw it! You used magic and then got a refreshed look on your face! Say it! Spill it out!”

Hihiro sighed at the bothersome display.

“Also, don't underestimate a Beast Man's nose! The smell of sweat on you has disappeared! What does this mean?”

Arnold pushed his finger at Hihiro's face, so Hihiro grabbed it.

Twist...

“OOWWW! What the hell do you think you're doing!? Are you a devil!?”

“Don’t point your finger at me, Perverted Demon.”

“I got another nickname, how wonderful. You really need to stop bullshitting with me!”

He began stomping his foot on the floor. While he was doing so, Muir came over.

“I’m also a little curious. What did you do?”

Hihiro found himself being stared at by two innocent eyes. Though, he got the slight feeling that they were hiding something.

“... \*sigh\* You really are troublesome people.”

Hihiro sighed deeply and stared at Muir with an expression as if he had given up.

“Come here for a second.”

“Eh?”

“Don’t worry about it, just get over here.”

“O-okay.”

Muir decided to follow Hihiro’s words and walked towards him. Then Hihiro took ahold of her hand.

“AAH! Don’t go around touching her hand! Are they that soft and cute? Father won’t forgive you!”

“Shut it, Criminal Wannabe.”

“Gu...”

As Arnold stared at the scene, he noticed that Muir’s body began to glow lightly. And then, just as with Hihiro, her scent disappeared.

“This somehow feels nice.”

Muir face is a little flushed, and she looks dizzy. Hihiro had 『Clean』 ed her as well. It seems the same feeling came over her as

well.

“O-oi, Muir?”

Arnold called out, a little worried about her.

“It’s amazing! Uncle, Hihiro’s magic made me feel great!”

“Eh? Is that so? I see, so as I thought, you used magic to wash yourself. Now then, please do me too.”

“Not happening.”

“Why!?”

“Because the shorty is a woman, for argument’s sake.”

“A-argument’s sake?”

Hihiro’s laconic speech put Muir in shock.

“The old man is already tainted. Trying to clean you now is a bit...”

“Don’t look at me with such eyes of pity! And I’m not that dirty!”

Arnold continued to shout, and Hihiro had had enough. He had anticipated this, so he released the 『Sleep』 he had started writing a while ago at him, and Arnold suddenly collapsed to the ground.

“Eh? U-um what did you do?”

“I put him to sleep. He was being loud. You should go to sleep soon too.”

“O-okay.”

While pitying Arnold in her mind, Muir quickly fell asleep while encircled by the comforting feeling of Hihiro’s magic.

Hihiro confirmed that Muir had fallen asleep, and he left the campground alone. But, he didn’t go too far.



(Now then, I guess I should continue testing out things today. Ah right, I haven't tested 《Parallel Writing》 or synergistic effects yet.)

He concentrated magic onto his finger. At that moment, he saw a light appear some distance away.

“What is that?”

He decided to go check it out. He found himself on top of a hill and surrounding him were many small lights dancing around the scenery.

(Fireflies? No, they're too big for that.)

He concentrated his eyes and tried to make out the finer details of the lights. There were small figures inside of them.

(Oi, could those be...)

They were shaped like Humans, but two wings sprouted from their back. They let out a faint trail of light as they flew freely through the sky.

“... 『Pheom』 ?”

## Chapter 28 – Fairy Garden

I gasped in surprise. Did they notice me? Crap. In an instant, the lights stopped moving.

(Those are <<Pheom>>... right?)

They looked like straight out of a picture book. The four of them floated over, each with a different hair color. Red, blue, yellow, and green.

“Hey! Hey! << Gabranth >>! Wait no, << Humas >>. Were you watching us? You were weren’t you!” (Pheom)

“So what << Pheom >>? Quit yapping about it.” (Hiiro)

“This is different from what mother told us!” (Pheom)

“Yeah! << Humas >> shouldn’t be able to see us!” (Pheom)

(How annoying... they buzz around your face, chatter endlessly. But there’s one thing that bothers me.)

“You. How did you know that I wasn’t a << Gabranth >>?” (Hiiro)

(Right now, I should be disguised as a << Gabranth >>, heck even they couldn’t tell me apart. Yet these << Pheom >> saw through it instantly!)

“Wow! It’s talking! It can really see us!” (Pheom)

For some reason the red one seems overjoyed...

“Anyways, answer me! How could you tell?” (Hiiro)

“Huh?!? Cause it’s not the real thing? I guess.” (Pheom)

With a blank look, she answers my question.

“Real?!? What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“Kyahaha! < < Humas > >, you seriously don’t know?” (Pheom)

The yellow one seems to be enjoying itself.

“Interesting! How interesting!” (Pheom)

“I’ll tell you! It’s cause we’re < < Pheom > >! The all-seeing race!” (Pheom)

Now you’re talking...

“All-seeing race? What does that mean?” (Hiiro)

“Kyahaha! He doesn’t know! He really doesn’t know!” (Pheom)

The red one is still flying, trying to mimic me. The green one continues...

“Our eyes see only the truth!” (Pheom)

“...so you can see the true form of anyone?” (Hiiro)

“Ooo! AMAZING! So good!” (Pheom)

The blue one’s laughing again... I’m seriously considering using < > to make him fall.

“Anyways, that’s how we know.” (Pheom)

The yellow one nods. I really would prefer to speak one on one with him right now.

The red one approaches me.

“Hmmm. This being... is it really a < < Humas > >? Really?” (Pheom)

“WHAT! Isn’t it?” (Pheom)

“He certainly looks like one...” (Pheom)

“Maybe he’s different?” (Pheom)

“Well I don’t know, he feels different from the rest of them.”  
(Pheom)

The red one smacks his hand.

“I know! Mother might know!” (Pheom)

“I see!” (Pheom)

“Are we going?” (Pheom)

“Are you sure about this?” (Pheom)

Hihiro sighs.

“Alright! Let’s go!” (Pheom)

ZUZUZUZUZUZUZUZUZU

In front of them, a rift opens up.

“What in the world?” (Hihiro)

The rift widens, to the size of a person. Nothing but darkness can be seen inside.

“This way to mother! Let’s go!” (Pheom)

“He... hey!” (Hihiro)

The red one pulls his hand.

(Who is this mother they speak of? But seriously... aren’t these guys being too trusting right now?)

(It seems that these < < Pheom > > aren’t very bright. Are their heads alright?)

(However, this piques my interest. You never know, I might find something interesting!)

Hihiro stepped into the rift.

“Huh!?!” (Hiiro)

The < < Pheom > > let out a light which penetrates the darkness. The interior looks like a part of the forest, but there are countless lights floating about.

A house. A tiny house. As small as a dollhouse.

(I feel like I’ve stepped into Lilliput...)

“Over here!” (Pheom)

The red one pulls him over. A massive, hollowed out tree comes into view, and a woman appears.

She isn’t tiny like the rest of them. Light blue hair, long enough as to reach the ground. Her hair shines. On her head rests some sort of a crown. Wings on her back. Slender features. She looks just like a goddess.

Holding a cane, with a glowing orb with feathers on top, she announces.

“Welcome traveller! To < < Fairy Garden > >.” (Woman)

“Thanks for inviting me, though I was pretty much forced to come.” (Hiiro)

The red one stuck out it’s tongue.

“Orun has a good eye. I don’t think she would bring an enemy.” (Woman)

Apparently, she trusts me.

“Hey! Hey! Mother!” (Pheom)

“Yes dear?” (Woman)

“This person, is he really a < < Humas > >?” (Pheom)

“No. He comes from another world. He isn’t from the world of < < Idea > >” (Woman)

The surrounding fairies raised their voices as if impressed. Hihiro smiled.

“By the way, are you behaving as I’ve asked? He is a visitor, show some courtesy will you?” (Woman)

Orun is being scolded. Ha! Serves you right.

“Anyways! Let me introduce myself properly. I am the head of the < < Pheom > >, Niño. If you would so kind as to tell us your name?” (Woman)

“Arnold Ocean” (Hihiro)

Niño laughs.

“... Hihiro Okumura. I look forward to working with you.” (Niño)

I reluctantly lower my head.

(I see... they can even see through lies.)

My fake name was seen through instantly. I wanted to make sure, but her ability really is amazing. This sort of deception doesn’t even faze her.

“By all means Hero, follow me.” (Niño)

We entered the tree. There was a fairly large space. Some snacks had been prepared for us.

“This food is called < < Vanyar > > ” (Niño)

It was shaped like a flower, and sparkled in my hands. There was a squishy thing on top.

(Is this... gelatin?)

But I can’t eat it just yet. It might be poisoned. I start writing under the desk.

“Rest assured. We aren’t trying to poison you.” (Niño)

“...” (Hiiro)

“And please stop writing under the desk.” (Niño)

It feels like they have eyes everywhere.

“Why should I believe you.” (Hiiro)

“Well then!” (Niño)

She takes the < < Vanyar > > and eats it.

“Of course, we haven’t put anything in the drink either” (Niño)

Or so you say... I frown.

“Quite paranoid, aren’t you” (Niño)

“Of course. I’m on my own right now. Isn’t that expected?” (Hiiro)

“Well... how about you check for yourself?” (Niño)

“... What?!?” (Hiiro)

“Use your < < Word Magic > >” (Niño)

Hiiro froze. He knew that they had the ability to ‘see’, but he hadn’t expected their ‘vision’ to be this powerful.

“Our power is the ability to see everything. Of course, that includes < < Status > > as well.” (Niño)

By seeing my < < Status > >, one would be able to find out about my < < Word Magic > >. But even then...

( < < Word Magic > > is quite strong.)

I let magic flow to my finger.

“If you don’t mind...” (Hiiro)

The word he wrote was < < Prying > >. And so, Niño’s status appeared before him.

(This power is seriously OP)

Niño

Lvl: 20

HP: 100/100

MP: 1000/1000

EXP: 10000

NEXT: 1000

ATK: 20

DEF: 30

AGI: 50

HIT: 100

INT: 300 (400)

< < Magic Attributes > > Fire, Water, Light

< < Magic > >

Fireball (Fire – Attack)

Mystic Flare (Fire – Attack)

Mist (Water – Support)

Bubble Rain (Water – Attack/Support)

Infinity Judgement (Light – Attack)

Lazer Prism (Light – Attack)

Holy Lance (Light – Attack)

Resurrection (Light – Recovery)



Full Clean (Light – Effect)

< <Title> > Fairy Queen, Seer, One who sees, Light Guardian.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 29: One Night's Experience

Using 『Pry』 to view her status, he found that lies would definitely not work on her. This power seemed to be able to see inside one's heart as well, and it was quite a high-class word, though its effects could be improved if he could imagine the effects better.

“So do you believe me now?”

“... A little...”

“That's unfortunate.”

She found the fact that she couldn't completely gain his trust a bit unfortunate, but she was delighted when she saw him cram the 《Vanyer》 into his mouth one after the other.

The 《Vanyer》 were tastier than he had expected, he thought as he ate them. They felt like Gummies to the touch, but they somehow made him want to stuff them into his mouth.

(It's that. Once you start, you can never stop. That sort of thing.)

In Japan, he had often faced the same problem with small candies. After you finish one, you find yourself reaching for another, and eventually you can't stop eating them. The taste came in many varieties, so it was impossible to get tired of it.

“Please partake in that 《Melnym》 as well.”

Hihiro gazed at the white, milk-like drink inside of his cup. Its smell was reminiscent of peaches. He took a sip.

(I see. It's a sweet, refreshing juice. But, it tastes more like apple than peach.)

He was able to determine that it was some sort of fruit juice. He had no idea what it was made out of, but it was the type of drink

you'd want to enjoy when you get out of the bath.

"Is it to your liking?"

"Well, it's not bad."

"Fufu. That's good."

She held her hands together and smiled as if she were a little girl. Her appearance was that of an adult woman in her late 20s, but when she smiled, she let out a youthful aura.

"But it seems like I've been ignoring the 『Humas』 for too long. For them to even be able to use summoning magic now."

"But in order to summon the Heroes, it seems they made their own princesses into sacrifices. It's a idiotic concept."

That was one of the reasons Hihiro wanted to leave the country as soon as possible. No matter the reason, he didn't want to serve a king who would kill off his own daughters.

"... Why do you not act with the other summoned ones?"

"Ah? Of course it's because I don't want to. Why must I bury my own will and listen to another's foolish orders?"

"..."

Hihiro's speech seemed to have hit something.

"Anyways, why do I have to travel and work with people I don't like. There's no way that would be any fun."

"Fufufu. I see. So does that mean that you consider the people you're travelling with right now to be your comrades, at least?"

"No, they just have their uses, so I just happen to be with them."

"Fufufu. Is that so? So from now on, you will never fight for the sake of the 『Humas』 race?"

"And I'm asking why I have to go out of my way to break my back

for this country. Can't these people sort out their own problems on their own?"

Niño narrowed her eyes and stared at Hihiro.

"Then what would you do if the ones at your side right now were to be injured?"

"I told you, didn't I? I'm merely with them because they have their uses."

"I... see."

"... Well, while I don't love it, we're together for now. If something cruel and unfair happens to them before my eyes, then I'll take the appropriate measures. However, if they bring misfortune onto me with their own carelessness, I have no obligation to stay."

"... You are a strange person. Perhaps you would call this tactlessness? Or maybe honesty?"

"Is that so? A majority of people only care about themselves, don't they? But they care about those watching them and public opinion, so they act like they're doing things for others. Wanting to become strong is never a desire for the sake of others. It's because you don't want your comrades to die and leave you alone. You become strong for yourself."

"T-that sure is a twisted thought process."

Of course, as it was his own mind, Hihiro did not think it was twisted in the slightest.

"I've decided to do the things I like for myself. If someone tries to unjustly take my things away, then I won't forgive them. If they don't involve themselves with me, then I won't bother them. Generally, I just don't have any interest in others."

"... I see. You sure are an interesting person."

She held her hand to her mouth and laughed.

“By the way, why can’t the others see 『Phoem』 ? The red one said something like that.”

“Hmm? Isn’t it because the others aren’t interested?”

“... You were that sort of character?”

Worrying that her true character was leaking out, Niño once again narrowed her eyes at Hiiro.

“Fufufu, I was a little mean in my wording. I apologize. About your previous question, in order to detect our existence, one requires a high level of magic. But that’s not all. It’s also based on the nature of the beholder.”

“Nature?”

“Yes, the people who talk about communicating with 『Spirits』 and 『Fairies』 are beings of similar constitution.”

“Wait a second. I’m human, and I have no wings.”

“That isn’t what I meant.”

Ah good. He was worried about what he would do if wings suddenly sprouted.

“We are a sort of existence that lives more in the world of the mind than the physical world.”

“The mind?”

“Yes. We’re a race heavily linked to magic. We definitely do have a physical body, but those are mostly vessels to house our magic.”

“I see. Is that why the 『Fairies』 all had similar appearances?”

The only difference was their hair color, and other than that, they were pretty much identical. If their hair was of the same color, Hiiro felt that he wouldn’t be able to distinguish them. It was as if they were identical twins.

“Yes, to say our physical body is but a costume... may be an overstatement, but to the 『Phoem』, there is no point in having differing physical forms. The 『Fairies』 are especially similar.”

“And? Since you’re mostly an existence made of magic, it’s hard for humans to see you? Then why is there such difficulty for 『Humas』 alone? The 『Gabranth』 don’t have much magic either, right?”

“That’s because the 『Gabranth』 were existences close to us from the start. They love nature, live alongside it, and die by its law. That environment has caused them to develop a nature that is able to perceive us.”

It was an answer Hihiro was satisfied with. It’s something that could be seen from looking at the difference between the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 continents. The Beastmen greatly valued nature. He had confirmed it from the sky.

The 『Humas』 were instead gifted with wisdom. They used nature and altered it to make their own lives easier.

However, as always, the Beastmen continued to live among nature. And it was that decision that allowed them to develop a nature that could see 『Phoem』.

“But why could I see them?”

“That’s because of your naturally high magic and because your soul is similar to ours.”

“Hmm... Anyways, I should see it as an advantage, right?”

“Um... Perhaps?”

“I mean it’s like that, right? I can do some things that other humans can’t. Talent truly is an unfair concept.”

“... Fufufu.”

“Why do you laugh?”

“No, I just found it interesting that there were people like you

among the humans as well. I understand Orun's interest in you."

"I don't really care, but..."

"Yes?"

"Seconds please."

Saying that, Hihiro held out his plate. Somehow, the mountain of 《Vanyer》 had vanished.

"Fufufu, you eat well."

For a while, they continued to talk and exchange questions. And eventually, Hihiro said it was time for him to return.

Niño made a gate like thing, linking him back to the hill he was on.

"Ah, please wait! Please wait!"

And suddenly, Orun came running over. The other three were with him.

"You're returning there, right? Right?"

"Y-yeah."

His habit of repeating his last line twice was getting annoying.

"I give you this! Give you this!"

What was handed over was a ring.

"What's this?"

"Fufu. That seems to be a 《Faerie Ring》. It's a sign that you've received the trust of the 『Faeries』. Orun was pleased with his first meeting with a human. If you'd like, I want you to accept it."

"Well, I'll take what's given to me."

Perhaps it could sell for a bit, he thought to himself. But he definitely wouldn't say it.

(TL: she can read your mind, dude.)

“And this is from me.”

Niño produced a mass of magic like the one he had seen from the old fortune teller, and she pushed it into his chest.

“O-oy, this is?”

He was a little shaken as he asked.

“That’s an item that links you here. It will let us meet again.”

“W-wait a second! I don’t really want-”

“The talk was very interesting.”

“Bye bye! Bye bye!”

“I-I’m not coming back.”

“Ah, and if you happen to meet the 『Spirit King』, make sure to give him my regards.”

“S-spirit? What are you ta-”

And the space around Hiiro twisted, and he was enveloped by darkness. By the time he came to his senses, he was on top of the hill again. And...

“It’s... Already morning.”

It seems he stayed up all night. He grimaced from the bright sunrise as he stood still for a while.



## Chapter 30 – Rumors of War

“Oy, Hiiro! What did you do to your face?” (Arnold)

“Seriously...” (Hiiro)

“What happened? You’ve got bags under your eyes.” (Arnold)

“Shut it.” (Hiiro)

I grumbled at Arnold. I couldn’t get a wink of sleep last night, or even practice my < <Word Magic> >

I certainly gained some valuable experience, but it feels like various things are being pushed onto me. Terribly annoying. But above all, I’m tired.

“That reminds me Hiiro. Yesterday, were you talking to someone? Anything important?” (Arnold)

“If you keep bothering me, I’ll seriously stab you.” (Hiiro)

“... Sheesh” (Arnold)

Frankly, you’re way too honest. It feels like the only thing keeping you alive now is God. And that’s just cause he’s in a good mood.

“Anyways, I’m gonna take a nap. If you anything happened, don’t bother me.” (Hiiro)

I hopped onto the Raidpic and started snoring.

“... It can’t be helped, we’ll travel slowly” (Arnold)

“Of course you will!” (Hiiro)

The party travelled towards < <Passion> > on the Raidpic. We passed by what seemed to be a town, but since we had enough food, and since Hiiro was asleep, we decided to skip it.

“At this rate, we’ll arrive in < <Passion> > pretty soon.” (Arnold)

TL: Or so you say...

Since the Raidpic's speed exceeded my expectations, we'll be arriving sooner than expected. However, my ass still hurts.

"Woah! A demon?" (Arnold)

A demon came into view. It looked similar to a rhino.

"That's a Funsai demon. It's not worth the effort, but whatever."  
(Arnold)

"Is.. is everything alright?" (Muir)

"If anything happens, wake up the sleeping beauty over there."  
(Arnold)

TL: Need help with そのグースカピーを起こせよ

"O... okay..." (Muir)

Arnold got off the Raidpic. With his broadsword sheathed on his back, he advanced. The Funsai charged.

"Let's go! <<Wind Fang>>" (Arnold)

Wind coiled around his blade. He spun his sword in big arcs, finally swinging down on the Funsai.

SFX: Bushaaaaa-tsu!

"Haha! Witness my <<Binding>>! I'll send you to hell!"  
(Arnold)

Arnold waved his sword around, shaking off the blood, and returned to Muir.

"Welcome back uncle" (Muir)

"Easy Victory!" (Arnold)

"But uncle's still amazing..." (Muir)

Muir was worried.

“You’re strong, you can use < <Binding> > . Unlike me...” (Muir)

Arnold patted Muir’s head.

“Don’t sell yourself short! When I was just like you, I didn’t know if I was strong enough either.” (Arnold)

“...” (Muir)

“However, when you do get stronger, don’t get cocky!” (Arnold)

“Uncle...” (Muir)

“Even I started out as merely a slave. Only later did I get stronger” (Arnold)

It was supposed to be a dark story. But he said it with a smile.

“I used to cry for help, but now I want to become stronger. Just like you!” (Arnold)

“...” (Muir)

“Do you think that you’re weaker than other < <Gabranth> > ? C’mom! You have ‘that’ family’s blood. Moreover you’re ‘his’ daughter.” (Arnold)

“... Okay” (Muir)

“Let’s get stronger together. Once we settle down in < <Passion> > , we’ll go through training together!” (Arnold)

“Re... really?” (Muir)

Muir’s face brightened, and she nodded.

“Ah! Don’t try to become ridiculously strong! I can’t have you beating me can I!?” (Arnold)

“Thank you uncle!” (Muir)

As Arnold patted her head. They looked just like family.

“By the way, is that guy still sleeping?” (Arnold)

“W... well...” (Muir)

The two were amazed that he was still sleeping soundly.

A few days later.

“Soon! We’re already at <<Rintenbu>>” (Arnold)

TL: リンテンブ

Arnold then explained.

“<<Rintenbu>> is a town near <<Passion>>” (Arnold)

“It’s where <<Werocats>> live.” (Arnold)

We’ll spend the night here and arrive in <<Passion>> tomorrow. In fact, since we’re so close, it’ll only take us another day considering the Raidpick’s pace.

“It’s been a while since I’ve slept in a proper bed.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro declared that being homeless was boring. He hadn’t read a book in a while and was looking forward to one.

As they continued moving, the town came into view.

“It’s the <<Werocat>> city of <<Rintenbu>>!” (Arnold)

As expected, the town was located in a forest, the size was impressive. I tethered the horse on the outskirts of the town. Muir reminds me to feed it. Arnold told us to head the general store first.

Upon entering the town, we saw crowds of <<Werocats>>. Of course, there were also other kinds of beastmen. Travellers like us, merchants. As expected, many people visited the town of <<Werocats>>.

(However, I did not like this for it reminded me of Nekomimi and

Japan. I don't have a fetish for this stuff. I'm not an old man. That reminds me. What race do the old man and pipsqueak belong to? I would say...)

Animal ears and tails, pretty standard features. Though there are some beastmen who have paws. Arnold told me to try touching them. Apparently being stroked feels pleasant.

More importantly, Hihiro was worried. He had a troubled expression on his face. It seems that Arnold also noticed. Arnold was wondering whether or not to ask about it when he entered the store.

“Wh... what!?!” (Arnold)

Upon entering the store, he heard the news. It seemed that the inhabitants were returning injured.

“Wha... w... WAR!?!” (Arnold)

Arnold was startled. The shopkeeper nodded.

“Ah, though I don't think they'll be marching tomorrow. Towards the border that is.” (Shopkeeper)

Hihiro was surprised. He had only heard rumors. While there was certainly tension between the races. A war was a sick joke. He didn't think that < <Passion> > would started moving so soon.

“A bunch of young men volunteered to go.” (Shopkeeper)

The volunteers who went out were in high spirits. But many of them had yet to experience war.

“Have you not heard the rumors about this town?” (Shopkeeper)

On the way here, there were some towns and villages, we passed them since we had enough food. It seems we missed some important information.

“Bu... but! A war... will the Evila fight? Is it alright to leave the kingdom completely undefended?” (Arnold)

Arnold was concerned. Although large, <<Passion>> did not have much war potential. Marching to their enemies was basically suicide.

“No, those are just rumors. Not all the soldier have been deployed.”  
(Shopkeeper)

“I see... they’ll gather more troops along the way.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro nodded.

“I can only pray for their well being.” (Shopkeeper)

“Th... thats” (Arnold)

Arnold was shocked. He had gone through much trouble to return to his homeland, only to find it on the brink of war.

“What will you do?” (Hiiro)

“What should I do... I’ll head to <<Passion>>. There’s someone I must see” (Arnold)

“I see. I’ll head to the inn and buy a few things.” (Hiiro)

Arnold will go to <<Passion>> to get some information. Nothing shocking. He’ll arrive at his destination. What should I do now?

“Oh yeah, is there a guild hall ahead??” (Hiiro)

We arrived at the guild hall and registered for a party of 3. In addition to sharing EXP, you can also take on higher level quests.

TL: Really not sure about this one, “besides of earning EXP points”? Seems a bit weird.

However, there was a pleasant surprise awaiting Hiiro. When he got his card back, he found that the frame had turned pink. Proof of B-Rank.

Hiiro, Arnold, and Muir were all surprised. I guess it’s cause he

defeated the Red Boar? Since he defeated an S-Rank demon alone, his rank had jumped up.

But still, to go from D-Rank to B-Rank, Arnold was terribly sad to learn that he had been one-upped. Delighted, Hiiro showed off his new card.

There was also a tremendous bounty on the Red Boar. Hiiro's card had been updated.

Name: Hiiro Okumura

Sex: Male

Age: 17

Origin: Unknown

Rank: B

Quests:

Equipment:

Weapon: Thorn Sword – Piercer

Guard: Red Robe

Accessory: Fairy Ring

Rigin: 3 869 000

He chuckled at having become a millionaire.

The three exited the guild hall and went to the inn. They would spend the night here and head to < <Passion> > tomorrow.

## Chapter 31 – The Four Heroes’ Strength and Premonitions of War

“I see, the Gabranth are finally moving.”

The king of <<Royal Capital Victorious>>, Rudolf van Strauss Arclain had a somber expression on his face.

He had just heard the news from his office. The state of affairs in the country. The Gabranth had finally declared war on the Evila. Of course, he had expected this, but the Gabranth’s speed had surprised him.

“Is that so... it seems the world is on the brink of chaos.”

“Training a Hero at a time like this is absolutely necessary to up our war potential for the upcoming battle.”

The minister’s was Dennis Norman. Dennis had also served the previous king.

“Hopefully, they’ll both fall together, then we can seize power.”

“That seems unlikely... the way the Gabranth are, defeat is inevitable. The Evila are quite strong.”

“Especially those <Cruel>, the elite serving directly under the Demon-lord. Fighting against them is insane. Each of them is said to be able to fight of thousands at once.”

“No, those are rather the Gabranth’s <<Three Warriors>>. They are beyond the ‘Cruel’. Someone who could stand against them...”

“The Beast-King?”

“Yeah, if it’s him, even the <Cruel> could be defeated. However, he’s only one person. There are few things one can accomplish alone.”

Really, no matter how strong one is, there’s no way you can win a



war alone.

“If they come up with good strategies, couldn’t it work? They aren’t foolish enough as to fight a losing war.”

“True. They may have a plan, but it doesn’t change the fact that the Evila are stronger.”

Rudolf folded his arms with a stern expression.

“Hypothetically speaking... if the Gabranth were to win... what would happen?”

“I wonder. The animosity between the Humas and Gabranth runs deep.”

“What about if the Evila win?”

“Hey, shouldn’t we check the authenticity of ‘those’ letters?”

“Ah, those letters. We’ve been receiving for a while now. Since last year. But as we couldn’t determine their real intentions, we’ve been leaving them alone.”

“ ... ”

“If that letter is indeed genuine, I doubt they plan on wiping out the Gabranth.”

“That’s just wishful thinking.”

“Assuming it is fake, they will exterminate them... right?”

“Whether it’s forged or not, the chances are quite high. Since we don’t know anything about the new Demon-lord, we should probably remain as spectators in this war.”

“Either way, we still have our trump card.”

“In the meantime, let’s wait for more news. Their country might get shaky, but I’ll leave you to deal with it.”

“Yessir!”

The citizens will surely start hearing talk of war. They'll probably get anxious then. But he thought that letting the minister deal with them would suffice.

“Speaking of which, where are the Heroes right now?”

“At < < Buckstorm Pass > >, with Vale.”

“Woah, doesn't a Dragon live there? They're gotten quite strong...”

“They must become stronger. For our sake.”

“ ... ”

“To your right Chika!”

“Got it!”

The Heroes were facing a group of demons. Taishi had sheathed his sword and was firing off blasts of magic. Meanwhile, Chika, with her quick movements, was cutting them apart.

The other two, Shuri and Shinobu, were supporting them from behind.

“ < Green Bind! > ”

The magic Shuri cast was < Wind Binding >. The demons were, bound, swept up, then dropped.

“ < Accel! > ”

Using lightning magic, Taishi and Chika's movements were sped up.

“Yaaaargh!”

“Chaaaaaarge!”

With their increased movement speed, they continued to hack and slash at the demons. In a matter of seconds, the battle was over.

\*Clap clap clap clap

“An excellent job everyone!”

That was Vale. He had only just been teaching them combat the other day, but there was no need for it anymore. He doubted he could win against the Offensive-Type Taishi and Chika in a straight out fight.

“As expected of Heroes! Those B-rank demons didn’t stand a chance!”

“Haha, are we really that strong?”

Grinning, Taishi scratched his head.

“Hey! Don’t get cocky. Didn’t you get careless the other day and take some damage?”

“Ah, haha... did that happen?”

He replied, glaring at Chika.

“Still, we’ve really gotten stronger!”

“Right, but are we going for the real thing now?”

Shinobu stared at Vale. Vale nodded with a serious expression.

“Errr... anyways, after this is the <<Buckstorm Dragon>>. Rank-S... A formidable foe.”

Taishi laughed to break the tension.

“Alright! Rest up, we’re finally going to fight it!”

Everyone answered Taishi. Using pots, they restored their HP and MP and began to ascend the pass. They had heard that no more monsters could be found beyond that point, as they were all scared away by the dragon.

Upon reaching the top, they found a sleeping dragon. Taishi glanced at Vale. He nodded quietly. They had found the <<Buckstorm Dragon>>.

It was massive. Its scales were green, claws sharp, with two giant wings on its back. In addition, its mouth was huge. Dragons were known for their <Breath Attack>.

Trying to catch it off guard, they quickly cast offensive magic. However the dragon had noticed them. It opened its eyes, startling them.

The dragon opened its mouth and sent out a gigantic sphere of compressed air. <Breath Attack> Most of their attacks were swept away. Only a few were able to reach its body, but it still did quite a bit of damage.

“Let’s go Chika!”

“Got it!”

The two of them drew their swords and jumped to the front line.

“<Accel!>”

Shinobu instantly raised their speed.

“Haaaa!”

They slashed the dragon.

SFX: Bushuuu

Blood sprayed out of the wound.

“Dammit! Too shallow!”

“Me too!”

It’s scales were quite thick, so their attacks weren’t very effective. The dragon, enraged, took to the skies and charged at them.

“<Water Wall!>”

Shuri’s water magic managed to protect them. However, the dragon fired off another <Breath Attack>. Shuri’s magic was dispelled and the two in the rear were sent tumbling.

“Shuri! Shinobu!”

Taishi cried out, but

“Focus Taishi!”

Chika warned him, this time the dragon slashed at them with its claws. Fortunately, they managed to scramble away in time.

“Shit! Eat this! < <Thunder Break> >!”

A blast of lightning flashed toward the dragon. Hitting it with a loud crackling sound. The dragon cried out in pain.

“It looks like magic is more effective than our swords!”

“Oh! Then next is this! < <Flame Lance> >!”

“Me too! < <Flame Lance> >!”

The two spears combined into one and hit the dragon, burning it.

“Gaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Dragon)

Crying out in pain, it tumbled onto the ground.

“Alright! Now!”

The two rushed forward to deal the finishing blow. But the dragon opened its mouth. < <Breath Attack> >

“Crap!”

At that moment,

“< <Green Bind> >!”

“< <Paralyze> >!”

Two shouts came from behind them. Shuri and Shinobu. The girls’ magic succeeded in stopping the dragon.

“Guys! Attack now!”

Taishi and Chika nodded at each other. They focused their magic on their hands. And...

“< <LIGHT ARROW> >!!!”

They thrust their fists forward, letting out of a burst of light which turned into an arrow. The arrow pierced through the dragon's body. After letting out a shrill cry, the dragon died.

“Whooooo!”

Taishi and the other three cheered. Though they weren't hurt, the release of tension from their battle caused them to sit down.

Though they had certainly gotten stronger, it was inevitable to receive high damage from a direct attack. Thanks to their experience, they were able to continue fighting.

“Though there were a few close calls, you performed magnificently!”

Vale was quite ecstatic.

“Alright, let's get the drops and head back.”

When they approached the body, a shadow fell upon them.

“What?!?”

When they looked up, they saw a shadow descending toward the dragon. Vale's face paled.

“W-who are you?!?”

Taishi shouted. The figure crossed his arms, and opened his mouth.

“I'll be taking this.”

With that, the man unfolded what appeared to be his wings. He couldn't be human. He was clearly a birdman.

“Wait a second! We're the ones who defeated it!”

The person stripped the dragon of its scales and tossed them their way. He glanced at them, as if saying ‘With this there should be no complaints.’ His attitude filled him with the same rage he had against ‘that’ classmate.

“Aaah, argh! Anyways, don’t just do as you please! Give us a reason, you!”

When Taishi raised his finger, Vale calmed him down.

“Taishi-sama! Stop!”

“W-what are you doing, Vale!”

“It’s fine! We got what we wanted. Don’t mind him.”

Seeing the two arguing, the bird-man grabbed the tail of the dragon and lifted off. Flying away with the entire dragon.

“A-amazing. The dragon’s massive.”

As Shuri was saying, he was holding the dragon in one hand. In addition to his vice-like grip, the strength of his wings was spectacular. Everytime the wings moved, a gale could be felt below.

And like that, the birdman disappeared into the sky.

“...Hey, Vale, he’s gone, but are you okay with that?”

“I-it’s fine. Right now, you wouldn’t stand a chance against him”

Seeing Vale sweating bullets, Shinobu asked.

“By any chance, is that Bird-san strong?”

“... Yes, that was Bird, and as you can see he is < <Bird-Man> >.”

“Well, anyone would be able to tell at a glance that he was a Gabranth”

“Why didn’t we fight him? Wasn’t it 5 on 1?”

Taishi’s question was natural. They had managed to defeat the S-

rank dragon. In addition, Vale was with them, they should be able to defeat Birdo. However, Vale shook his head.

“There are many factors. The beastman is unlike any other.”

“What do you mean?”

“He is one of Passion’s < < Three-Warriors > > . He serves directly under the King. If we fight, the Gabranth will not stay silent.”

“Th... that guy was from the top brass?”

“Yes... and I’m afraid his power exceeds ours... He should be at least Rank-SS. I’m sorry, but we wouldn’t last a minute against him. And besides...”

“Besides?”

Vale put on a difficult expression and closed his eyes, as if hesitant to say it. Then, he slowly opened his mouth.

“The fact that he’s gathering monsters means... the war has started.”

They were stunned. Finally, Shinobu asked.

“W-war? Are they going to attack us?”

“When I first saw him, I thought so. However, he didn’t show any signs of aggression.”

Vale looked up.

“If they were waging war on the Humas, he would have finished us off here. There’s no reason to let us live.”

“So you’re saying...?”

“Yes, their enemy is the Evila. They are moving faster than expected.”

Taishi was told that the Gabranth would soon be waging war against the Evila.



However, the King had said that there was still some time. But in fact, it would start soon.

“C-couldn’t this be a misunderstanding, Vale?”

Taishi asked. But Vale shook his head.

“No. Do you know why he’s gathering monsters?”

Everyone shook their heads.

“They have a method for reanimating demon corpses.”

“How come?”

“Doctor Yuhito. He is said to have researched the <<Humas>>, <<Gabranth>>, and even the <<Evila>>. There are rumors that he’s been working on a method to turn dead demons into zombies.”

Taishi and the others shivered at the thought of zombies.

“However, it doesn’t last too long. And I’ve heard that the corpse must be fresh. I guess that’s why he’s been collecting them.”

“War.... huh”

“Yes. They seem to be gathering dead demons to increase their forces.”

“That’s pretty serious... are the humans safe?”

“...Most will probably stay as spectators.”

“We won’t participate?”

“Yeah, since we aren’t allied with them, if we went and messed up, we’d be attacked by both parties.”

“I see...”

“Besides, we’re still in the middle of training right now! It’s not like we’ll send you off to your deaths.”

Hearing the word 'kill', the four paled. They had clearly been preparing to fight, but hadn't really given it much thought.

Suddenly, they didn't feel like it was their problem anymore. As Vale had said, if they joined now, they'd be killed immediately. The heaviness of the thought left their throats dry.

"If it's you, Hero-samas, you'll be able to become stronger than anyone else. Now is the time to train."

The four looked at each other and nodded.

"We understand, Vale. We know that we can't take it easy anymore."

"Yes! Let's get stronger than anyone else!"

"Yeah!"

The four had once again regained their motivation. Vale looked up at the sky, to where Birdo had disappeared.

(However, no matter who wins, the world will definitely fall into chaos.)

Thinking of the fate of the world, he too, vowed to become stronger.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 32: The Gree Caves

Hiiro and co. stayed a night in 【Lyntemb】 and immediately set off for 【Beast Kingdom Passion】.

“If we just go straight down this road, we’ll find 【Passion】, right?”

Hiiro posed a question, and Arnold answers.

“No, to get there we’ll have to go through the 【Gree Caves】. We’ll see it right after we get through them.”

“Is there something special about the caves?”

“Yeah. They’re crawling with monsters above Rank B, and we can’t really take the Raidpics with us.”

Apparently, the caves were teeming with narrow passages, making travelling through them on Raidpics impossible.

“Is there any detour we could take?”

“There are, but they’re quite long, and the monsters are stronger. Considering the risks, I think the 【Gree Caves】 are still the best option.”

“I see. So we just have to go straight?”

“Are you okay with that?”

“I don’t really care which way we go, but isn’t it best to get there faster?”

“Y-yeah.”

“That’s why I’ll listen to you this time. You better be grateful.”

“You sure sound important today!”

And so the group's next destination was settled.

After riding for a while, they came to the entrance of a large cave. The hole itself expanded greatly in all directions.

"Oy, are you sure we can't take these birds?"

Just from the outside appearance, it seemed that anything would be able to pass through easily.

"Yeah, the inside structure is a bit complicated, and there are quite a few narrow passages that we have to go through. It may seem a bit sad, but this is where we and the Raidpics bid Adieu."

Arnold said as he patted his Raidpic's head.

"Thanks for taking us here. Give Max my regards."

The Raidpic gave a sorrowful expression as it rubbed its beak against Arnold's face.

"Oy, do something about this one."

Arnold turned at these words and witnessed a Raidpic licking Hihiro's face with its long tongue. It seems that that one was also reluctant to part with Hihiro.

"Ahaha! It sure has become quite attached to you!"

"Quit messing around, bird! Want me to grill you?"

Even so, the Raidpic paid no mind and continued to soak Hihiro with its drool.

"For the love of... It's sticky."

Hihiro glared at the Raidpic with an unpleasant expression.

"Now, now. That's just how much he liked you as a master. Please leave it at that."

"... Yeah, you guys did make my ride quite comfortable. Here's a farewell present."

Hihiro started writing a character which he released at both of the Raidpics, and the two shook with expressions of delight.

“W-what did you do?”

“I used 『Comfort』. It should blow away their fatigue.”

The word should have also made them feel refreshed. Hihiro imagined them returning to their homes at a refreshing pace, but suddenly, the two birds cried out and ran off at an alarming pace.

“W-what’s wrong with them?”

“... No idea.”

It seemed that the effect was too strong. It raised their tension to too high of a level. Watching the Raidpics press onward like bullet trains, Hihiro concluded to himself that they would return home safely.

“And what’s with this turn of events?”

“What do you mean?”

“Well, I thought that would only give a reward to the one that carried you.”

Muir imitated Arnold’s questioning pose. She seemed to be of the same opinion.

The two of them had a slight grasp of Hihiro’s personality. The only time when Hihiro would move would be when he was in a good mood, or he was returning a favor.

He didn’t seem to be particularly happy, so they wondered what had moved him to this extent.

“What are you saying? They took good care of my servants. So isn’t it natural for me to grace them as the master?”

“Haha~n, I see, I see. To you, we’re all your servants, and you rewarded the two with your 《Word Magic》 for their hard work. I

see, I see. By the way, can I raise an objection now? Mostly towards being called a servant!?”

“Objection overruled.”

“Funnnnnnnnn! I keep saying this, but we’re no servants of yours!”

“I think I’ve said this before, but I was joking.”

“You bastard! Are you just trying to make me mad!?”

“Now then, let’s go.”

“Listen to me!”

Muir shrugged her shoulders as she followed the two.

The inside of the cave was dim, but it seemed to be quite wide. The sound of running water could be heard. It was coming from the left, and when the group turned towards it, they found a giant slug monster drooling as it stared at them.

“Right off the bat!? What’s more, this is the Rank B Gree Slugger!”

Arnold stood in front of Muir and brandished his sword.

“A slug... is it? I’ll test something.”

Hiroyuki spoke as he released a word. And suddenly, a white powder scattered over the slug. The already-slow slug’s speed dropped even further, and its body gradually began to shrink.

“Oh, so Slugs actually can be dealt with with 『Salt』.”

Right, the word he wrote was 『Salt』.

(As long as I have a clear image, this magic can even bring salt into existence. It really can do anything. Though instead of it being actual salt, it may have brought forth something with a similar effect. It’ll probably disappear in a minute.)

He groaned about his own power. But he did feel glad that he had used it from the depths of his heart. Since the Slug had become

small, Arnold impaled it on his sword.

“I’m not surprised anymore, but what did you do?”

“I just put into practice something I wanted to test since I was a kid.”

“...?”

Arnold and Muir stared at him with a blank expression. But they had long ago realized that at this point, they wouldn’t be able to get him to talk any more. So the group pressed forward.

After walking a while, the pathway became quite narrow. They could only tread along it one at a time, so they proceeded with vigilance. Eventually, they found themselves in another open space spanned by a small bridge.

“Can I... cross this bridge? Is it even crossable?”

Hihiro’s question was valid. The bridge was made out of wood, but several places were rotten, and the rope holding it up was visibly decayed. It didn’t seem that this bridge was able to support humans.

But it looked like this was the only way to the other side.

“What should we do, Hihiro? This distance is a bit far for a jump...”

“If I just use 『Fly』, all our problems will be solved.”

“Ah, right!”

But there, Hihiro thought.

(If I use that, we’ll definitely be able to get across. But if something were to happen when we were crossing, the other two...)

If there was some sort of trap laid, or a monster was lying in wait, it would be inconvenient.

(Instead of flying, it’ll be easier to deal with through walking. Though if something does come out, I could just abandon them...)

No, there was something wrong with that train of thought. They were currently important sources of information. For now, they were necessary. It would be too great a loss to lose them here.

“Oy, hurry up and cast magic on me!”

“No, I think I should...”

Hihiro approached the run down bridge. He concentrated magic on his finger and wrote 『Connect』.

“Good, no matter what happens, it’ll hold together for a minute. Let’s go.”

“Eh? O-oh? Oy!”

—

—

—

—

—

Though they were surprised at seeing Hihiro suddenly rush forwards, the sight of Hihiro crossing without a problem caused them to join hands and run after him. The bridge that seemed like it would collapse under their feet caused Arnold to apply pressure to the hand connected to his, but he reassured himself that Hihiro had done something again.

(Even so, what magic did he use this time...)

Even with all three of them running on it, though the bridge creaked dangerously, it showed absolutely no signs of collapsing.

(And, like, I kinda wanted to fly, you know...)

Not only Arnold, but Muir as well. Both of them have a disappointed expression.



The group succeeded in crossing the bridge within a minute, but the two beside Hihiro seem to be tired because they thought that the chances of falling to their deaths was high. As Hihiro believed in his own power, he could not understand their fatigue.

“Y-you... what did you do?”

“The word 『Connect』 made it so that for one minute, the ropes would not give out no matter what.”

“Y-you can even do that?”

Muir raised her voice while Arnold glared at him with his eyes half closed.

“Ye~ah, no matter how I look at it, that magic is unfair!”

“No idea. Anyways, let’s go.”

But at that moment, Hihiro experienced an extreme impact on his back, causing him to roll on the ground.

“Hihiro!”

“Kya!”

The two of them watched Hihiro get sent flying before their eyes. But immediately after, it appeared before them.

—

—

—

—

—

“G-Ganrock!?”

The Ganrock, as its name might imply, was a monster whose limbs and face were made of rocks. Its height was only around 50 cm, but

these monsters were able to build up amazing amounts of momentum, so getting hit by them was no joke.

(Ow... That hurt quite a bit...)

Hihiro lifted up his aching body and glared at the cause. But it wasn't only one, there were two more for a total of three.

(Right, this cave was supposed to be filled with monsters over Rank B...)

He briefly glanced at Arnold.

(I think it'll be a bit difficult for that old man...?)

Usually, he would just use 『Burst』 to take them out in an instant, but this was a cave. He didn't want to cause a cave-in here.

But with a body structure like that, a Sword probably wouldn't do much damage. It would be difficult for Arnold. Thinking that, Hihiro shouted out.

“Old Man, use your sword!”

That was his conclusion. Though it would definitely be difficult to deal with them with a blade, Hihiro had a reason.

“Old Man! Start with the one closest to you!”

“B-but with a sword, it's a bit...”

Arnold knew about the specialties of the Ganrock and knew that he wouldn't be able to do much with his current armaments.

“Don't worry, I'm going to use this!”

He said as he began writing a word. The word collided with the Ganrock in front of Arnold.

“Now!”

“I-I don't really get it, but Ora!”

But, the Ganrock dodged to the side

“Like I’d let you escape!”

He turned his blade sideways and slashed at it horizontally.

And, for some reason, the Ganrock’s body split perfectly in two.

“Eh? ...wha?”

The lack of resistance from his enemy shocked him. That’s right, there was barely any force acting against his blade. It felt as if he were swinging his sword through a ball of sand.

“Hey, on to the next one!”

Hiiro sent out another word. But perhaps the Ganrocks had become more vigilant. They jumped up to avoid it. The Word hit the ground and activated, and as soon as one of the Ganrocks landed, it sunk into it.

“Ah! I see, so that’s it!”

It seemed that Arnold finally understood the effect of the word. He turned his eyes to Hiiro.

“You have a word that makes things softer?”

Correct. The word that Hiiro used was 『Soft』. The first Ganrock felt its effect and was easily cleaved in half by a sword. When the ground was affected by it, the Ganrock buried itself with its own weight.

“Old Man, I’ll leave that buried one to you!”

Saying that, Hiiro once again began concentrating. Arnold turned his gaze to the Ganrock, who was desperately struggling to get out of the ground.

“Fufun. If it’s an immobile Ganrock, then all I have to do is concentrate my power and break it!”

He took a stance with his large sword.

《Wind Fang》!

The wind wrapped around the blade.

“More. I have to bind it stronger, or it won’t go through their bodies.”

With plenty of time, he continued to strengthen his sword. Eventually he positioned himself to thrust.

“HAAAAAAAAAAH!”

The sword passed perfectly through the Ganrock’s body. And it seemed that Hihiro was able to use his 《Word Magic》 to defeat the last one easily.

“Fuu~ That was hectic.”

Arnold lowered his back onto the ground and took a deep breath.

“You were suddenly sent flying. My insides went cold for a moment.”

“Are you alright?”

Muir let out a worried voice.

“No problem. But it consumed more magic than I thought.”

Air Writing cost 100 MP, so even with his large reserve of Mana, Hihiro couldn’t use it too often. Though he had MP recovery items, there was no telling what would happen next, so it was best to save them.

“Then we better get out quickly.”

“Right.”

“Let’s go.”

The Three pressed onwards. Eventually, they arrived at another

open area. But to their delight, they could see a light at the end of the gently sloping path.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 33: Muir's Awakening

"It seems that that is the exit."

"Yeah, let's get to a town quickly and pop into hot bath~"

"R-right. We did encounter quite a few monsters."

As the three try to approach the slope to the light, rocks start dropping from the ceiling. Shivers run down the three's spines.

"O-oy, Hiiro...?"

"... Hah, so like in games, we'll have fight a boss battle before we can reach the exit..."

Muir's body shakes. The three simultaneously look up. And there...

"SHAAAAAAAAA!"

Is an anaconda that looks perfect for the silver screen. It is skillfully wrapping itself around the formations on the ceiling as it slithers around.

"I believe that was... Clay Viper."

"Oy oy, is this for real!?"

Hiiro had seen it before in the encyclopedia. It's a Rank S monster. Its length could reach 30 meters, and its body is as thick as a tree. Its body is scaly and gives off a black luster. Its face is menacing as well. Its forked tongue darts in and out of its huge mouth. Its eyes are red and gives off a suspicious light as if to bind whoever gazes into them.

"Well, well. For now, you better keep your distance, shorty."

"Ah, y-yeah..."

Muir has no choice but to follow Hiiro's words. There is no way she can prove useful against this fearsome foe.

"Old man, can you do any long range attacks?"

"Well, to an extent."

"Then use those to distract it. I'll put it to sleep like with the Red Boar."

But for that, time is necessary. Writing the necessary characters requires concentration, so he can't have himself be a target.

"Got it, but you better make it quick. My level rose, but this is a bit much for me alone. Actually it may be impossible."

Normally, running would be the priority. However, in the Red Boar fight, the enemy was easily defeated with 《Word Magic》. Arnold is assured that Hiiro will be able to do something.

"It's coming."

While they were idling, the Clay Viper had started rushing at them with its mouth wide open. The two avoid it by jumping high. But, the viper knocks them out of the air with its tail.

"Guh!"

The two fall to the ground simultaneously. Arnold complains about its strength as he rolls on the floor. He seems to be in quite a bit of pain.

(Damn... It's quite skillful with its tail)

Hiiro grumbles as he takes some distance and begins writing a word. Arnold stands up and confronts the Clay Viper.

Suddenly, a fluid spews from the snake's mouth.

Though he's startled for a moment, Arnold is able to successfully avoid it by leaping backwards. The ground that comes in contact with the liquid begins to sizzle as it dissolves away.

“Oy, this thing even comes equipped with venom...”

‘This is no joke,’ Arnold thinks as he applies more pressure to the hand clenching his sword.

“《Wind Fang》! Take this!”

As he swings his blade, a magic-ish wind cutter is released. The sharp blade of wind slices the Clay Viper’s skin and blood scatters.

But in the next moment, the wound closes on its own. It seems that weak attacks won’t be able to overcome the beast’s natural regenerative powers.

Arnold seems taken aback, but the Clay Viper doesn’t rest. As if it were not slashed at all, it starts rushing towards him.

“Ku!”

He somehow dodges to the side and prepares to attack again. But, the Viper suddenly dives into the ground.

“Wha!? It can even do that!?”

Watching this scene, Hiiro clicks his tongue. At this rate, he wonders whether his 《Word Magic》 will hit. The Clay Viper is currently focusing on Arnold, so Hiiro was able to finish writing his word without problem though.

But, with that speed and its ability to burrow, it will be more than difficult to hit.

“Dammit! Where are you! Come out already, you slithery bastard!”

Arnold shouts out, but there are no signs of it resurfacing.

Suddenly, the ground begins to shake. The two fighters concentrate on their surroundings to sense where it will emerge.

“KYAAaaaa!”

The place it emerges is in the shadows where Muir is hiding. It uses



its long body to wrap around and bind her while heading back up to the ceiling.

“MUIIIIR!”

“Damn!”

Even Hihiro didn’t anticipate the non-combatant Muir being attacked. He wasn’t vigilant enough.

Hihiro immediately points his finger and aims his word. But perhaps because its feral instincts screamed danger, it glares back and gets into a position where it can move at any time. At this rate, the chance that it will dodge is high.

Hihiro isn’t going to waste the word he had wasted time writing.

“Old Man, do you think you can stop his movements!?”

“It’s not that I can’t, but Muir will get dragged in!”

Arnold grits his teeth as he stares at the Clay Viper.

—

—

—

—

Muir thinks that that her situation is pitiful. There is nothing she can do. Even though she can’t fight, even though she is useless, here she is being imprisoned and preventing Hihiro from attacking.

(Why... am I always being protected...? Even though I never wished for it...)

Her mind turns to the past. Her life was always one that would go out with the wind. There was nothing she could do about it. She would always watch other’s backs as they stood in front to protect her. That was what she found solace in.

(Even though... that's no good... Even though I promised uncle that I would get strong...)

As she feels pain from the Viper tightening its body, Muir opens her eyes. Reflected on them is Arnold's mortified face.

(Uncle...!)

Because of her, he's making such a face. From here on out, perhaps Arnold and Hiirō will be hurt because of her. Arnold's words play back in her head like a revolving lantern.

"You're the kid he entrusted to me. Even if I die, I'll protect you."

"... No, even I can get strong. I'm a Beastman like Uncle!"

She had vowed at that moment that she would get strong. But, she was unable to believe in herself. She was never able to do anything. She spent her days doubting whether or not she would even be able to influence her own life.

Fighting is scary, and being protected makes her feel relieved. But still, there are people she believes in.

"You're also a Beastmen. If we're talking about latent abilities, I don't think you'll lose to any Beastmen out there. No matter what you say, you've got the blood of that clan flowing in ya. And also, you're that guy's daughter."

She remembers Arnold's words and opens her eyes to look at him again. His face hasn't changed. She was the one making him make such a face. Then what should she do? There is only one answer.

"I just... have to do something!"

—

—

—

—

—

Hihiro analyzes the situation. At this rate, Muir will be strangled to death, and after that, the Viper will move around freely again.

(There's no choice. I'll put 『Sleep』 on hold for now. First, I have to cut off his movements... Hmm?)

The Clay Viper's body begins to shine. No, to be precise, only the part that was wrapped around Muir shines abnormally. And suddenly, that light collects.

(What is that?)

The moment he thinks that.

A violent, electrical discharge occurs. No, it isn't anything as pathetic as that. As if lightening had struck, power condenses in the glowing area.

“SHAAAAAA!?”

The sudden electrical current coursing through the Clay Viper's body causes it to go numb. Neither Arnold nor Hihiro have a grasp of the situation.

“Now!”

Hihiro sees this as an opportunity and releases 『Sleep』. It easily hits the immobile Clay Viper.

“Good! Old Man! Use all your strength to cut its head off!”

Hearing Hihiro's words snaps Arnold back to reality. He begins concentrating his power.

“《Wind Fang》!”

He takes some time to concentrate the power of wind onto his blade. The power wraps around it, and the blade appears to increase in size. Eventually, the green blade grows to about the size of three adults.

And Arnold lifts that blade high up, aims it at the Clay Viper's head, and swings down with all his might.

“Unhand MUIIIIR!”

The flesh cleanly separates. Only the head falls on the ground. And with that, the Clay Viper's life comes to an end. But it isn't over yet.

The lightning is one thing, but Muir's safety has yet to be confirmed. Even now, the Viper's body is coiled around Muir and she's staying immobile. But finally, the large body loses its strength and falls from the ceiling. And from that, Muir's body emerges.

Muir appears to be unconscious, but her body glows faintly. When Arnold moves to catch her...

“Gugagagagagagagagagadadadadada!”

He suddenly feels the pain of electricity coursing through his body.

“Old Man!”

Nevertheless, he holds her close without letting go.

“Kuga... g... thank god... Mui...”

He sheds tears as he wraps his large body around hers. After a while, the light fades. At the same time, the electric current flowing through Arnold stops.

“Just what was that?”

Hihiro furrows his brow as he looks over Muir.

“... It's this child's power.”

“So the shorty was the one who stopped the Clay Viper's movements?”

“Yeah. It seems she's finally awakened to her 《Binding》.”

“Just what is binding, anyways?”

“... You know how Beastmen can’t use magic, right?”

“Yeah.”

“To make up for that, a certain researcher came up with something amazing.”

“... What?”

“This.”

As he says this, Arnold presents the bracelet hanging from his right arm.

“That is?”

“This is the 《Nameless Bracelet》. When a Beastman truly desires power, it will unlock their latent abilities.”

“Something that convenient actually exists?”

If so, he wanted one. But being a human, he would probably be unable to use it.

“This bracelet establishes a link with the 『Spirits』. If one was to awaken to a 『Spirit Soul』, the bracelet’s name changes, it takes on a new form, and it grants power to the user. By the way, mine is a 《Bracelet of the Wind》.”

“I see. So that’s the power the 『Gabranth』 obtained to compensate for their lack of magic.”

“Yeah. To awaken is to establish a contract with a 『Spirit』. I exchanged a contract with the 『Spirit of the Wind』. And this child...”

“『Spirit of Thunder』 ... is it?”

Arnold nods in affirmation.

“But that surprised me. For her to be able to generate that much lightning.”

“Rather than generate, it’s more like she became lightning itself.”

“Is that how it is?”

“Well, I’ll explain the details after we arrive at 【Passion】. I want to let Muir rest.”

“Got it. You can head out first.”

“Why?”

“I’ll come after I get some proof we took that thing out.”

“Understood.”

Arnold exits the cave with Muir on his back. Hiirou approaches the recently-deceased Clay Viper.

(I think it was over here...)

The place he checks is the area that was wrapped around Muir. It isn’t only burned. It is as if the cells had been obliterated into nothingness.

“That’s some crazy output. With this, they’ll fare just fine against magic. The reason I didn’t feel any magic when Arnold used his 《Wind Fang》 was because it wasn’t magic I guess.”

He did a quick analysis, but suddenly, he feels a presence behind him. Thinking it was a monster, he moves his hand towards his sword, and he draws it while turning around. But, what stands before him is no monster.

“... Who are you?”

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 34: The Kitty Bastard's Invitation

From his appearance, he was a Beastman. His hair was pure black, and his cold eyes did not give off a friendly impression.

(A Beastman... is he a Black Panther type...?)

But from his appearance and atmosphere, Hiiro could tell he was no ordinary passerby. He felt that the one before him was a more troublesome opponent than the Clay Viper. That he was someone he wouldn't want to make an enemy out of.

That Beastman slowly opened its mouth.

“Was the one who killed this one nyu?” (TL: Ends sentences with Nya)

Hiiro almost fell over. Even though all of his instincts screamed that the one before him was a dangerous existence, his voice was as high as a child's, and there was that speech trait. With that appearance, the 「Nya」 wasn't cute at all, you know. It was more creepy than anything.

“Let me ask again nya. Are you the one who killed it nya?”

“Do I have any obligation to answer you?”

The Beastman put his hand to his chin and thought for a moment. After which, he balled one hand into a fist... and hit it on the other palm.

“Oh~ you really don't have such an obligation nya.”

The person he was facing was a bit out there, but still, Hiiro couldn't afford to let down his guard. His instincts told him not to be negligent. Behind his back, his hands were already prepared to cast 《Word Magic》.

“Well, I guess it doesn't matter who killed it nya. I'll bring it back

all the same nya.”

“Hmm? Wait a second, you’re bringing this thing back?”

“Yes nya. That’s my mission nya.”

(Mission? Bringing back something this big? What’s more, it’s already a corpse.)

Various questions surfaced in Hiiro’s mind, but he got the feeling that it was better to not get involved any further. He need not get involved with this cat of mysterious origin.

“Well, do what you want. Before that, let me get some proof that I took it out.”

“If it’s just that, then go ahead nya. But please make it quick nya.”

(Hmm? He’s surprisingly honest. It didn’t come out to steal the praise...?)

Hiiro looked at the immobile Beastman, and waited for it to take action. But as nothing was happening, Hiiro approached the Clay Viper Corpse.

(Let’s just get this over with and leave.)

Hiiro reached out his hand to grasp the 《Clay Viper Fang》 as proof of his kill, but as soon as his hand approached it, he sensed bloodlust. Hiiro immediately drew his sword and took a stance, but that Kitty bastard was already in front of him, grasping the blade.

“W-what are you doing!?”

In response, the cat smiled and kicked Hiiro away.

“Gu-!”

Hiiro was sent sliding, but he was able to brace his legs to avoid falling over. Still, the damage from the impact contorted Hiiro’s face.



“Y-you...!”

“As I thought, you’re strong nya. You didn’t kill it by luck nya.”

The cat’s happy face was annoying.

“Are you pickin’ a fight, you kitty bastard!?”

Hihiro shouted as he prepared to slash, but his opponent immediately appeared in front of him.

(He’s much faster than me!?)

Hihiro immediately moved his katana to guard, but he was blown away again. This time, he rolled along the ground, but rose up immediately and got into position again.

(Damn... How can he overcome my katana barehanded?)

Normally, he shouldn’t be able to grasp the blade or hit it. Especially if he was hitting the sharp edge. His hand should have taken severe damage. Even so, Hihiro’s opponent was completely unharmed.

“Nyaha! You can fight nya. You’re strong nya. If nyu try a little harder, I might hire you as my follower nya.”

The word ‘follower’ caused a vein to pop up on Hihiro’s head.

“Don’t screw with me, kitty bastard... I’ll show you something you’ll regret.”

Without breaking eye contact, he concentrated magic to his finger.

(Let’s imagine the Muir from before)

“Take this!”

He wrote the word 『Thunder』 and sent it at his opponent’s feet.

Though it wasn’t comparable to Muir’s, a powerful electric discharge went through the ground towards his enemy.

“Nya!?”

The cat opened his eyes in surprise for a moment, but he resumed his smile as he held out both of his arms in front. And, the electricity disappeared as it was sucked towards them.

“Wha!?”

“Nyaha! Nyu were a Lightning user nya? There was quite some power, but that isn’t enough to beat me nya.”

Hihiro couldn’t understand what had just happened.

(I understand that the electricity somehow disappeared into his hands... but what did that damn cat do?)

He could use 『Pry』 to gather information, but it takes time to use. There’s no way he would be able to cope with that speed.

(Then...)

Hihiro wrote a character on his own body. And...

He appeared before his opponent.

“Nya!?”

The cat was even more surprised than before. Hihiro’s speed was just that great.

(By writing 『Speed』 on myself, I can increase my own abilities! Now get pierced already!)

Using his momentum, Hihiro thrust 『Piercer』. But still, his opponent saw through him, and Hihiro cut nothing but air. The ease at which his attack was dodged made Hihiro believe he was fighting a true wild beast.

(Damn! I was dodged. So he wasn’t serious yet.)

Power, speed, atmosphere. Taking all of these into account, Hihiro guessed that his opponent was an existence high up in the ranks of

Beastmen. This damn cat was strong enough to play with Rank S monsters as if they were cute pets.

(I can't slack off for a single moment)

If he made a single mistake, he might die. Hiiro continuously pondered over just how he would conquer this person. If he wanted to run, it may be possible, but he wouldn't be satisfied with leaving after being treated as a fool.

(I'm still a child... but I get the feeling that I can't turn away here. More importantly, that cat... PISSES ME OFF!)

Hiiro glared at his enemy again and wrote 『Speed』 once more.

(I'll give you more and more surprises!)

With the speed of the wind, Hiiro closed the gap. He increased his speed much more than before, startling his opponent.

But for a split second, his enemy narrowed his eyes, and his legs swelled unnaturally. He nimbly dodged Hiiro's assault.

(Wha!? It can even react at this speed!?)

Hiiro had used parallel writing to write 『Speed』 on his body multiple times. The effects stacked, giving him overwhelming speed. Even so, his opponent dodged.

Hiiro slashed again and again, but all his swings were in vain. But there, he realized something was off.

(That bastard can grasp a sword bare-handed, so why has he been dodging all of these...?)

Right, from his initial actions, this cat should be able to defend easily. He has no reason not to.

(Since it's gotten to this, I'll add something more...)

Hiiro accelerates even more to try and force his opponent to guard. At that moment, he heard laughter.

“Nyaha! Yes, yes, you pass nya!”

“Hah?”

Hihiro heard an unexpected line.

“If it’s nyu, you could even become my successor nya.”

“What are you even talking about?”

“What’s your level?”

“Hah? 33, but... ah.”

He had been drawn into his enemy’s pace and unintentionally said his level. Hihiro was filled with regret.

“33!? And you’re that strong nya!? Yes, I’m satisfied with you nya!”

Hihiro was repenting in his heart.

“My name is Crouch nya. What’s yours?”

“... No idea.”

“Could this be that amnesia thing nya!?”

Crouch seemed shocked as his mouth hung open.

“This is serious nya! This is serious nya! Ah, I should have the professor look at you nya!”

“Professor? No, I’m fine! It was a joke!”

“I-is that so nya? That’s good nya.”

Crouch uses his forearm to wipe away sweat. It appears that he was truly worried.

(What’s with this one? Don’t throw off my pace... This cat may be more annoying than the old man.)

“Then, what’s your name nya?”

“... Tanaka Tarou.” (TL: Japanese version of John Smith)(ED: The most common name)

“Oh, so that’s your name nya! Then, Tarou, come with me nya!”

“Why?”

“The war will start soon nya. I’ll use you as my retainer nya!”

This was exceedingly bad. Hiiro’s head went blank. He never thought he would be invited to war.

(And as a retainer. That sounds like it comes with a bit of status. If this was based off of my strength, then I can understand it, but still this is bad... really.)

Crouch was completely eager. At this rate, Hiiro was going to be forcefully kidnapped.

(There’s no choice. Though I hate these sort of situations.)

As he thought that, Hiiro thrust with his katana.

“I’ll never serve below someone weaker than me. If you want me, then you’ll have to defeat me!”

Crouch’s eyes widened at Hiiro’s words. He seemed taken aback, but his face loosened and a crescent moon formed.

“How interesting nya...”

Sparks flew between them, and it seemed they would start duking it out at any moment. But suddenly, Crouch furrowed his brow.

“...Eh? Is that so nya? ... Got it nya.”

Crouch hung his head in disappointment.

“Tarou, our battle’s put on hold nya.”

“...”

Saying that, Crouch touched the Clay viper’s body and head. And in

the next moment, the items disappeared as if they were being sucked into his hands.

(W-what is this magic? No, he's a Beastman, so is it 《Binding》?)

In a few seconds, the giant Clay Viper disappeared completely. Crouch gazed at Hihiro.

“This is an urgent job nya. I wanted to bring you along, but there's no choice nya. There'll be another chance nya. I mean, you're going to 【Passion】, right nya?”

“Who knows?”

“Nyahaha, I've taken a liking to your impudent behavior as well. Well then, Tarou, let's meet again nya.”

Saying that, the cat disappeared as if he were being absorbed into the ground. Hihiro put up his guard as he walked to where Crouch was standing, but nothing happened.

It seems he's caught the interest of quite a person.

(I may have to get out of 【Passion】 quickly.)

Hihiro didn't want to meet that annoying kitty bastard again. He shrugged his shoulders... And then he realized something.

“... The proof of subjugation...”

It was impossible to recover it.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 35: Level Up to Power Up

Crouch took the proof of subjugation, along with the rest of the Clay Viper, so Hiiro had to leave the cave empty-handed.

But then, he realized something. His body had become heavily fatigued, though not to the extent where he couldn't walk. The reason was quite clear.

(It must be because I used the synergistic effect of parallel writing.)

He had written 『Speed』 on himself multiple times, and the effects stacked. It raised his speed just fine, but it put a strain on his body unbecoming of his level. His body creaked as it tried to keep up with his accelerated movements.

(This is quite painful...)

He thought, as he carefully walked forward as not to lose his way. When he finally got outside, he saw Muir sleeping under the shade of a tree, and Arnold looking after her.

As Hiiro was late, Arnold issued a complaint.

“What the hell were you doing? Did you not know what path to take back?”

“No. I see. So you didn't see?”

Crouch disappeared into the ground. Perhaps he came the same way as well. There's a high probability that Arnold never saw him.

“See what?”

“No, it's nothing. How's the shorty?”

“Well, she hasn't received any serious injuries, and she's just unconscious. There's no helping it. She let out that much power, and she was being squeezed by the Clay viper for a while.”

Muir was fast asleep. Even after releasing an amazing amount of lightning, her body showed no external injury. Even her clothes didn't look burned in the slightest.

"I'm sorry, but until Muir wakes up..."

As Arnold was about to say something, Muir opened her eyes.

"Uu..."

"Muir? Are you alright, Muir?"

"... Un... cle?"

Her eyes were still unfocused, but she could make out Arnold before her.

"Yeah, it's me. How is it? Does your body feel strange at all?"

Muir's vision slowly cleared, and she realized that she was already outside of the cave. Moving only her eyes, she shifted her gaze to Arnold.

"My body hurts a bit, but I'm fine. The monster...?"

"If you're talking about the snake, we took it out."

And Muir gave a sorrowful expression.

"I... I'm sorry... Because of me..."

Though the monster was defeated, Muir felt depressed over the pain she made the other two go through because of her. But the next words made her doubt her ears.

"Ahaha, what are you saying? It's because of you we were able to take out that snake, you know. Do you remember anything?"

"... Eh?"

Arnold bluntly explained everything he saw to Muir. The contents were things she couldn't believe herself. Her own power had stopped the Clay Viper's movement and had given an opportunity



to defeat it.

But Hiiro wasn't denying it. He simply stood with his eyes closed and his arms folded. Perhaps this was his sign of affirmation.

"Uncle... is this true?"

Even now, she couldn't believe it. But Arnold had absolutely no reason to lie. But the fact that her own power was able to change something, the fact that she was able to stand against that powerful monster was more shocking than anything.

At that point, Hiiro tried testing something. He wrote a word on the ground.

"Oy, Hiiro. What are you doing?"

"Shut up and watch."

And something began to be projected onto the ground. It was as if a Television screen had been created. And on it, scenes from the previous battle began playing back.

(It seems it was a success. Using 『Project』, I can show others scenes from my memory. How convenient.)

The other two seemed flabbergasted, but Arnold recognized the scene as one he had experienced himself, so he could understand the meaning behind Hiiro's magic.

"C-could this be the battle we just had...?"

"Yeah, shorty."

"W-what?"

"This is the truth. Take it however you will."

Hiiro spoke as he lowered his gaze to the footage on the ground. Muir copied him and looked upon the scene.

What was displayed was the moment when she was captured by the

Clay Viper. When suddenly, a huge electric outburst occurred, and Hiiro took the opportunity.

After that, her body continued to let out a faint light, and Arnold caught her. Arnold showed clear signs of being electrocuted. Even Hiiro and Arnold's conversations were clearly audible.

Seeing Muir's shocked face at the video, Hiiro thought to himself what a troublesome person she was while he wrote the word 『Project』 again. The effective time of one minute was nearing its end, so the footage would be cut off. That's why he had to use 『Parallel Writing』's stacking effect to lengthen the duration.

"Is this... true?"

As if she was still in doubt, Muir asked Arnold. And he nodded gently.

"Yeah, so you finally awakened. You did well, Muir."

"Fue..." (ED: Rishia is that you!?)

Muir broke out in tears and clung to Arnold. He patted her head and said.

"I told you, didn't I? That you would become strong. You still have a long way to go, but the 『Lightning Spirit』 has acknowledged your efforts."

"Sob... Sob.. Ueeeeeeen." (TL: What's here are crying onomatopoeia, I don't know what to put)

"Now you can fight too. But remember, you're just a beginner. Let's take this one step at a time. Okay, Muir?"

"Ye... sob... ye... Yeah!"

Arnold wiped off her tears, and she smiled happily.

"Um, can I have a moment of your time?"

During that scene, the words of someone who couldn't read the

mood rang out.

“H-hey, Hihiro. We’re currently going through an emotional moment.”

“Just look around you.”

“What do you... yes?”

They were surrounded by monsters.

“Oh... Oh my...”

His words were understandable.

“Well, it’s not like we’re in a safe area. It’s not like we care what they’re doing when we attack either.”

“You... you damn monsters! Read the mood for a second!”

“For now, let’s clean up. Shorty, you stay here. You can’t move yet, right?”

“Ah, yeah.”

Muir realized that nothing changed. That she was still someone who was protected. But then Hihiro spoke.

“Oy, shorty. If you’ve got some power, then you’ve got to earn your keep. Next time, you’re on your own.”

“...Yeah!”

Those words bestowed strength unto her heart. The fact that she wouldn’t be protected anymore made her slightly uncomfortable, but the happiness she felt from those words greatly outweighed that. In order not to let him down, Muir resolved to become strong.

She closely watched the backs of the two protecting her. Up ‘til now, she had always been watching the backs of people protecting her. But next time, she would be standing beside them. Muir unintentionally clenched her fist as she followed their fighting style

with her eyes.

“Fly away.”

Using 『Burst』, the enemies were blown away in an instant. But...

“UHYAAAAAH”

Hihiro had forgotten that Arnold was there too.

“W-what are you doing, Hihiro!? That was a close one!”

“... Well, I thought that if it was you, you would be fine.”

“There’s no way I would be fine, ninnyhammer!”

Even during battle, these two never changed.

“Okay, then old man, step back.”

“It’s too late for that!”

As he shouted that, Arnold noticed Hihiro writing another word, and he backed off.

“Next is this.”

Hihiro shot the words straight at a group of monsters. And when it reached the center of the group, he activated it.

And suddenly...

The entire area of effect of the word froze over, and the monsters within its scope were frozen solid. Its area of effect was just around 4 tatami. The vertical area was also the same.

“O-oh, amazing.”

Arnold stared at the block of ice in amazement. Hihiro could make use of Fire, Lightning, and even Ice. He was truly a first class magician.

Thinking that he didn’t want to lose, Arnold continuously used his

《Wind Fang》 to take down enemies. Perhaps because they were afraid of the two peerless fighters before them, the remaining monsters ran off.

“Alright, that’s all of them.”

“Yeah.”

The two of them sheathed their weapons and returned to Muir. They found her with an expression of shock frozen on her face.

“W-what’s wrong, Muir?”

Muir responded while keeping up the same expression.

“U-uncle... my level has...”

It seemed that she was surprised at her own sudden growth in level.

“Hah? So that’s it. Well, that sounds about right. Even though you didn’t actively fight, you’re acting in our group, so the EXP of the monsters we defeat flowed to you too. Of course your level would rise.”

They had registered as a Party at the guild, so the monsters they fought in the 【Gree Caves】, as well as the ones they fought now, gave EXP to Muir. Since her level was quite low from the start, her level was raised by quite a bit.

“And didn’t you feel the level ups in the cave as well? Didn’t you notice?”

“N-no, I noticed it, but I thought I would check later. But the level up sound only sounded off three times...”

“Ah, it’s that. You jumped multiple levels at once. So having it sound out three times doesn’t mean you leveled up three levels.”

As proof, when Hiiro defeated the Red Boar, his level raised by four. But he only got a single notification.

“S-so that’s how it is...”

“Well, I also didn’t check. I think I leveled up in the caves too, and I also leveled up in the fight just now.”

Arnold and Muir checked their 《Status》, so Hiiro decided to follow suit. He had heard the sound in his ears as well.

—

Hiiro Okamura

Lv 40

HP: 228/770

MP: 150/1500

EXP: 75632

NEXT: 5890

ATX: 258 (320)

DEF: 200 (215)

AGL: 350 (352)

HIT: 192 (200)

INT: 309 (313)

《Magical Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic (Single Chain Unlocked|Air Word Unlocked|  
Parallel Writing Unlocked | Double Chain Unlocked)

《Title》 Innocent Bystander, Other Worlder, Word User, The Awakened One, Ripper, The One Who Imagines, Killer of the Unique, Gourmet Bastard, One Who Follows His Own Path, Friend of the Fairies

—

## Guild Card

Name: Hihiro Okamura

Sex: Male

Age: 17

From: Unknown

Rank A

Quest:

Equipment:

Weapon Piercer

Guard Red Robe

Accessory Fairy Bracelet

Rigin: 4112000

—

Arnold Ocean

Lv 41

HP: 160/595

MP: 30/249

EXP: 86038

NEXT: 7660

ATX: 394 (438)

DEF: 359 (375)

AGL: 328 (333)

HIT: 252 (254)

INT: 114 ()

《Magical Attribute》 Wind

《Magic》 Fangs of Wind | Explosive Wind Claw | Blast Inversion

《Title》 Friend of the Wind | Former Slave | Chef | Doting Father |  
Man of Burning Soul | The Man Referred to as a Pervert | Blade of  
the Wild

—

Guild Card

Name: Arnold Ocean

Sex: Male

Age: 37

From: Snyoll

Rank A

Quest:

Equipment:

Weapon Great Sword

Guard Plate Armor

Accessory Bracelet of the Wind

Rigin: 1132000

—

Muir Castrea

Lv 34



HP: 235/280

MP: 54/180

EXP: 48604

NEXT: 1001

ATX: 276 (279)

DEF: 237 (245)

AGL: 222 (225)

HIT: 188 (189)

INT: 101 ()

《Magical Attribute》 Lightning

《Magic》 Fang of Lightning

《Title》 Friend of Lightning | Kidnapped | My Angel | Cutie  
Flower | Girl of Tolerance

—

Guild Card

Name: Muir Castrea

Sex: Female

Age: 12

From: Rince

Rank C

Quest:

Equipment:

Weapon Knife

Guard Traveler's Clothes

Accessory Bracelet of Lightning

Rigin: 56000

## Chapter 36: Demon King's Resolve

Hihiro's eyes widened as he saw a certain part of his status.

< <Double Word Chain (Unlocked)> >

As the result was as he predicted, his sense of expectation started surging uncontrollably within him. He wanted to test it immediately. However, for now his first priority was to ascertain its abilities.

< <Double Word Chain (Unlocked)> > MP Cost: 300

It has now become possible for Hihiro to chain two words. Compared to the single word invocation, this ability grant an exceedingly stronger effect when activated. Effective Range; Power of Influence; Versatility; even though all these aspects are exceptionally enhanced, there exists an adverse limitation. Depending on the word, words with incredibly short effective duration exist. Also, unless the image of the character is clearly imprinted in the mind when executing the skill, the word itself would not be able to be written.

In addition, should the writing of the two word be interrupted, the < <rebound> > will cause a 50% reduction in all status fields, as well as rendering the caster to be unable to use magic. All stats and abilities will be returned to normal after a 6 hour time lapse.

Hihiro: (This is another magic that has very strong abilities, but a nasty < <rebound> >, huh...)

If an attempt at writing two words failed or is interrupted, there seems to be a significant < <rebound> > effect in store.

Hihiro: (It reduces everything by half huh... Writing two words is something that takes time. Should I use it, I need to be extremely wary of my surroundings.)

Indeed, if someone disrupted Hihiro while he was writing, and if the opponent was a formidable foe, it wouldn't be strange if such a

penalty lead to immediate death.

Hiiro: (However, it is only this level of risk. As expected, it's only natural as its effects are reasonable compared to the risk.)

Nevertheless, Hiiro was thrilled. It couldn't be helped that he was looking forward to all the things he could do. He wanted to quickly set some time aside so he could be alone and try it out, or so he thought.

Arnold: "Ou~ Hiiro, did you also get something like a title?"

Hiiro: "Who knows, how 'bout you?" (Hiiro)

Arnold: "W-well, I kinda think you're completely to blame for one of these titles but, I want to have a thorough discussion with you about this. I got a title called < <Blade of the Wild> > "

Hiiro: "Hou~"

Arnold: "It seems that you can get any kind of < <Status> > correction. That's what I got. How 'bout you, Muir?"

Muir: "Ah, un. It's just too amazing, I don't quite know how to put it..."

When Muir read out her < <status> >, Arnold couldn't hide his surprise as his jaw dropped with a pop.

Arnold: "I-it really rose, huh....your level..." (Arnold)

Muir: "U, un. I feel a little happy, yet a little sad ....I think?"

Her feelings must be in turmoil. Being at Level 34 would be the sign of an experienced adventure. However, the girl in question has never stood on the front lines and fought. And yet, the fact that she has reached that level would probably feel like reality has become faded.

However, the fact that her body had become lighter and that she could feel some sort of power inside of her made her calm.

Arnold: “Well, isn’t it fine? A level is a level. No matter how high your level is, I think it is better to be like Muir and be doubtful of your own abilities instead of getting arrogant and overestimating them.” (Arnold)

Muir: “R-really?”

Arnold: “Yeah, well, I doubt Muir will become overconfident, but just accept the reality for now. You will become useful if you work hard. Everything starts from here, is what I’m trying to say.”

Muir: “U, un!” (Muir)

Saying thus to Arnold, Muir returned a vigorous nod. Indeed, it has been decided that from now on, she herself will also fight. It is precisely because of this that she must think about how to become stronger in anticipation of the future.

Arnold: “We should be happy that our guild rank also increased. Yours rose as well, right?”

Hiiro: “Aa”

Muir: “Un!”

Arnold: “As I thought, forming a party in this place was a life saver, huh...”

Put simply, even if a person fights and the other members watch, their experience will undoubtedly rise.

Arnold: “Since it was thanks to Hiiro and Muir that the clay viper was killed, making a party was definitely a good choice”

Although Arnold was the one who made the killing blow, he believed that if he were by himself he would have surely ran. Thus, he gave them the credit.

Hiiro: “Anyway, I’m going on ahead. That’s...that, isn’t it?”

What Hiiro pointed his finger to was a huge gate that could be seen in the forest ahead.

Arnold: "Aa, that's the entrance to the [Beast Kingdom: Passion]."

A few days before Hihiro and the others reached [Passion], the [Demon Kingdom: Xaoc] was wrapped in tension. This was due to a letter received a few days ago from the [Gabranth] (People of the Beast Kingdom).

The contents of the letter contained the conviction of battle. In other words, it was a declaration of war.

"....."

A large amount of soldiers of mixed ranks were lined up below the Demon Castle Terrace. Looking at this spectacle with a bitter face was none other than this Demon Castle's Lord, the one presiding over the [Demon Kingdom: Xaoc]: Eveam.

With beautiful blond hair that fluttered in the wind, a youthful looking girl had her slightly childlike facial features distorted as she was looking at the scene with her teeth gritted. Behind such a girl, her attendant, Kiria, who was silently watching over her until now began to speak.

Kiria: "Are you certain of this?"

Eveam: "....."

Kiria: "Should this continue, it would unmistakably turn into a war of total annihilation"

Eveam: "I know that!"

As if to deny Kiria's words, Eveam forcefully raised her voice. However, after coming this far, she herself was at a loss as to how to proceed.

Eveam: "To think that the Gabranth would move this fast..."

Kiria: "No, this was within my expectations."

Eveam: "Ku...."

Yes, she was not here because she had nothing left to do. She had also sent them a peace treaty similar to the ones they sent to the Humas (Human Race).

However, it was not even accepted by them. She had considered offering her own neck to quell the fighting, however, even then Kiria said that the beastmen would not stop.

As a result, she looked for other ways and tried various different methods to somehow establish conversation with them. However, it seemed to be a waste of time. A fool's errand.

Incidentally, there was one message that successfully got through. This message being, 'What are the Garanth trying to accomplish here?' The reply from the Beastmen, however, could only be determined as 'A decision has been made to eliminate the entirety of Evila.' Only that single intention of Evila's destruction was conveyed extremely clearly.

Eveam: "Why...did it turn into a battle...?"

Kiria: "It is most likely because it is the most effective method of persuasion."

Eveam: "How!? Why do we have to determine everything with strength?! Power is naturally unequal! Isn't it better if you use words that everybody possesses equally to debate rather than forcing people to submit with strength? If we talk things out, no blood will have to be spilled."

Kiria: "...is that really the case?"

Eveam: "What...do you mean?"

In response to Kiria's words of denial, the Demon Queen's eyes widened as she stared at Kiria.

Kiria: "Words...are light"

Eveam: "-tch!"

Kiria: "Certainly, words are something that everyone has access to

equally. However, in the first place, words are intrinsically empty in nature.”

Eveam: “Empty...?”

Kiria: “Yes. The heavy power of persuasion can be brought forth from those empty words. Not only can those words pass through a person’s ears, but they can also be engraved into the minds of another. However, Eveam-sama, do you think such words without weight can avert war?”

Eveam: “T-That’s....”

Kiria: “Perhaps in a peaceful world without war, if it was a negotiation conducted with a trade business, then perhaps Eveam-sama’s method would be successful.”

Eveam: “.....”

Kiria: “However, this is war. People will undoubtedly die. War is not a trifling matter like a negotiation in trade. It is most likely the greatest obstacle you will face. Are you able to face that obstacle and carry all the burdens and consequences of your decision?”

Eveam: “That’s.....”

Kiria: “It seems that you are still too naïve to become a demon lord. Thus, the will of the previous demon king will be succeeded by many. To begin with, the Evila is abundant and strong; a battle-hardened race. Showing such weakness to your own kind is unlikely to be able to quell their rage and anger those of your kind. Please take this into consideration...”

Eveam: “That’s enough.”

Kiria: “...”

Ivemu said as she ground her teeth and clenched her fists so hard that blood started dripping from them.

Eveam: “I...just do not want to hurt anyone. Everyone is family to me. If that family begins to start fighting...how would that make



anyone happy? But I...I'm powerless..."

From those strong willed eyes, a single tear slid down her cheek. She is the ruler of this land, and yet she was overwhelmed with the despair. Her anger towards the world was far outweighed by her feelings of frustration with her powerlessness.

Kiria: "Then, should we lower our weapons and surrender?"

Eveam: "...eh?"

Kiria: "It is possible that the Gabranth would understand our true motive."

Although that proposal sounded rather attractive, Eveam could only frown anxiously. Looking at such an expression, Kiria remained indifferent as she continued.

Kiria: "However, in the case where that proves ineffective, the Demon Race of Evila may be laid to ruin without being able to do anything."

Should they surrender, the Demon Lord will most likely be taken as a token of victory. Being stripped of her power and status, the Demon Lord would be imprisoned and sealed until ultimately being thrown before the populace to have them decide upon her fate.

In a more positive scenario, the complete annihilation of the Evila can be prevented. However, even then the possibility of the captives being executed is very high.

Furthermore, since the [Cruel Brigade] is too powerful to suppress, they will be a concern for the rest of the world should they be left alive. In order to take responsibility, they may be executed to serve as an example to the rest of the world.

But if she doesn't surrender, a lot of blood will be shed. Even if Evila is victorious, there is a high possibility that the other side will not accept surrender until the bitter end.

While pondering the circumstances as such, no matter whether she advances or withdraws, blood will still be spilled. Eveam's face

distorted into an expression of suffering as she gritted her teeth. Seeing such a face, Kiria lowered her head respectfully.

Kiria: "I, Kiria, have made such insensitive remarks. Please designate the appropriate punishment for my insolence."

Eveam: "It is fine. What Kiria has told me is accurate and indisputable. There is no need for such a punishment."

Kiria: "...very well. Then, I shall add one more thing in closing."

Eveam: "Eh?"

Kiria: "Rest assured that I, Kiria, will follow Eveam-sama no matter where you may go." (Kilia)

Eveam: "Kiria...forgive me."

For a short while, silence enveloped the atmosphere. However, in response to Kiria's words, Eveam's once gloomy face suddenly lifted.

Kiria: "Have you decided?"

Eveam: "Aa, I will protect [Evila]! Kiria, I want you to lend me your strength.]

Kiria: "...as you desire."

A strong will dwelled in those eyes. There was no more time for deliberating. There was no more time for hesitation. Therefore, all that could be done now was to use the remaining time to fulfil her objective.

Eveam: "I will not allow my family to be slain!"

Stepping across the firm floor of the Terrace, Eveam headed outside with Kiria following behind her.

## Chapter 37: Capital of the Beast Kingdom Passion

“What is wrong?” Aquinas, First Guard of the Demon Queen’s Cruel Brigade, said.

Right before him was the Demon Queen Ivemu, who let out a sigh.

He heard about of her decision, but he didn’t what the purpose was. The queen, Ivemu started at him intently and said, “I have a favour to ask from you, Aquinas”

Kilia was also beside the queen staring intently at him.

“I have a few more concerned, but it look like you have already made your decision” (Aquinas)

There was a glint of determination in her eyes, it was clear that whatever she planned to do has to do with the impending war.

“What is your favor?” (Aquinas)

“Well, it is...”

.....

.....

.....

.....

.....

Aquinas listened silently and soon after widened his eyes in surprise. To think that the queen would say something like that.

“I see, that is something that you will definitely be able to do, your majesty” (Aquinas)

Aquinas accepted the favor like a bitter medicine. If that is the solution his majesty struggled to bring about then it is fine with him.

“Actually, this is something that fits your personality” (Aquinas)

This is also one of the method that Aquinas himself has considered before.

“Will you have no issues protecting this secret?” (Queen)

Her personality of trusting others is both her weakness and her strength. That personality remained with her ever since she was young, and she never lost it since.

Even so, Aquinas believes that it is a great responsibility to everyone around her.

“How is it Aquinas?” (Queen)

The queen wasn’t sure herself, but she felt she was able to make a connection and pass on her intent to him.

“Your decision won’t resolve anything?” (Aquinas)

“Nonetheless, that is my decision” (Queen)

“.....” (Aquinas)

Aquinas returned the queen’s gaze. He knew, dejectedly, that whatever he says from this point onward will not change her decision.

Interesting, what happens to the queen as she go about this mission, will be something to look forward to, Aquinas thought.

“Alright, please give me orders” (Aquinas)

In response to those words, Ivenu took a sharp breath. Because if he says something like that, then it is clear that he agrees with her and will go along with her decisions.

“You are the Demon queen right?” (Aquinas)

Ivemu felt happiness from those words. Kilia was also faintly smiling behind her; she also rejoiced with the response.

“.....I understand, please work with me, Aquinas” (Queen)

Aquinas bent down on one knee and said.

“With pleasure” (Aquinas)

With this perhaps, the Beast-kin, Gabranth, and the Demon-king Evila can start getting along. It is not sure, but lets celebrate it for now.

---

Capital of the Beast Kingdom, Passion. At the center of this city is a gigantic tree named, “Tree of origin, Aragon.” The whole city seems to expand out from there.

It was completely different from a man-made city. All the houses were made out of trees. The residents just hollowed out a tree and lived in there.

There was also a sparkling stream flowing through the city. There were even small fish swimming casually in it. The city seems to be built in complete harmony with nature.

As there was district named “The King Tree,” this was where all the royalty lived, with their castle like dwellings made out of several large trees bunched together.

Nearby, there were numerous residents and travelers who was making offerings and prayers to the “Tree of Origin, Aragon.” The last king of Gabranth, selected that tree as a symbol for the Gabranth and built the city around it. To the Gabranth, the “Tree of Origin, Aragon” is a sacred entity to them.

Once a year, the “Origin festival” takes place at the center of the town. Lots of people come from all around the world, especially children. At that time, if you climb the Tree of Orgin, you’ll receive

a blessing from the tree.

It is believed that the blessing from the Tree of Origin, Aragon, will make the climber a strong, honourable, and respectable person. Such rituals has become a tradition. Generally, it is for the Gabranth children, but in the past there has been humas who has climbed the tree as well.

The Tree of Origin, is greatly revered by the Gabranth. Any other race who even touches the tree will be incur the ceaseless wrath of Gabranth.

“Well, that is what they say, either way never touch the tree in your human form” (Arnold)

With how intense Arnold gave the warning, Hihiro who is currently disguised as a Gabranth using the word ability [Copy], made sure to note is down as something to be careful of. That is to never touch the tree in his human form.

“I see that is how it is. It is certainly a very large tree, but that is not the only reason right?” (Hihiro)

While walking, hiro looked up at the tree; it was clearly over 200 meter tall, a ridiculous size for a tree. But Hihiro is unsure if you should appreciate a tree just because of its size.

“That is is not all. I’ve heard that if you are sick with a disease or injury, if you just touch the tree it will heal it. If you have baby that doesn’t stop crying, if you bring the baby into the vicinity of the tree it will stop crying. There are other mysterious rumor about what the tree has done or is capable of.”

“Huh, is that it?” (Hihiro)

“Is that it. If anyone came to this city they will all be stunned by the magnificence of the Tree of origin. It would be crazy not to appreciated it.” (Arnold)

“That is mainly for the Gabranth right, but I’m human being.” (Hihiro)

“...Well, that is true” (Arnold)

That was all, but Hiiro thought there was more to it. Either way, the Tree of Origin, Aragon, definitely something that the Gabranth would boast about.

Instead of hearing rumors about a tree, he wanted to know more information about what he wanted to do here.

“That aside, you came here with a purpose right, to meet that someone?” (Arnold)

“Right, yes, I’ve received their treasured honey from those people, so I have to at least fulfill their request.” (Hiiro)

“What, isn’t that the whole of point meeting the were-bears in the village?”(Arnold)

“Yes, that was the point, but if they don’t get the honey won’t they be in a bad mood” (Hiiro)

Arnold thought that bringing the sweet honey would create a better mood for negotiations.

“Still, the Gabranth has already started marching to war. Are you sure the were-bears aren’t already out hunting with that group?” (Hiiro)

The city seem to have a lot less people than usual. It is highly likely that all those that can fight have already set off with the vanguard in preparation for war. Currently, there is a high chance that only the minimal defence force is in this area.

“Hmm, I wonder...” (Hiiro)

“Hey, what do you mean? Do you mean the civilians?” (Arnold)

Unlike adventurers, ordinary citizens do not have enough strength to participate in a war. They are likely to continue living their ordinary lives.

However, Arnold shakes his head in denial.

“Well, certainly ordinary citizens don’t usually participate in a war, but many of us hunt and fight on a daily basis to fulfill their needs.” (Arnold)

“Is that true? Isn’t was a job for the soldiers?” (Hiiro)

“Everything is voluntary, but the Gabranth is a warlike race and they usually gather without anyone asking.” (Arnold)

(TL: Updated March 3, 2015, this should now be completely correct)

“That is the case but they responded?” (Hiiro)

“Probably...The army made a desperate request...” (Arnold)

“So what? If someone rejected the request wouldn’t that be the end of it?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, that would be the end of that. But there is also another problem.” (Arnold)

“What?” (Hiiro)

“That aside, lets finish one task first.” (Arnold)

“You are so full of yourself. So what is next? What kind of person are we meeting?” (Hiiro)

Muir looked at Arnold for a response. But for some reason Arnold was trembling as he was thinking of a response.

“What is wrong?” (Muir)

Seeing Muir ask that question, Arnold let out a side and said aloud.

“That person....is my master”



## Chapter 38: Arnold's master

[TL : Long chapter, I'll also be making some edits to the last chapter. Clearly my interpretation of the last part of chapter 37 was wrong. Enjoy!]

Before the party stood a residence similar to those in the area. However, it was much smaller than others. It also had a door but unlike the other houses, it looked rough and scratched up. Overall, it looked like an abandoned old house.

Arnold went up to the house and knocked on the the door, and frowned when there was no answer. There was a chance that the resident is pretending not to be home, mainly because it would be troublesome to deal with whoever was on the other side of the door.

With a light push the door opened with a creaking sound; the door was unlocked.

“Is is okay to enter without permission?” (Muir)

Muir looked at Arnold with uncertainty, and then he nodded in response.

“Well, look” (Arnold)

“What?” (Muir)

Arnold stuck out his finger and pointed at the bell hanging at near the top of the inside of the door.

“What does the bell mean?” (Muir)

“It is my mentor's habit. Whenever he heads out somewhere, my master always puts a bell on the door. Right now he is in.” (Arnold)

It does seem that way, since around the top of the door on both the interior and the exterior there was something that looked like a hook, and a bell was hanging on the hook on the inside of the door.

“I see, so?” (Muir)

“Well, it is just like Shishou, he is probably out drinking and then fell asleep somewhere inside.”

With that said, they enter the house. Like Arnold said, the smell of alcohol was thick in the air. They wrinkled their noses; it was clear that there was no ventilation in the house.

“It smells so bad, for the moment lets leave the door open” (Hiiro)

Looking inside, it could not be even called a house or even a barn, it was small enough to be labeled as a storage room. Nonetheless there were a lot of bottles scattered on the floor and placed on the shelves. They could not sense a presence inside.

“What is going on. Isn’t someone supposed to be here?” (Hiiro)

His question was obvious, but the strong smell of alcohol put him in a bad mood.

“Ahh, it is fine, it is fine. From that I remember...” (Arnold)

Arnold started rearranging the items on the the shelves. After he finished rearranging a lever appeared.

“There, I found it.” (Arnold)

When Arnold pulled the lever, a small part of the floor slid away revealing a trapdoor. By lifting the ring-like handle, it revealed a pathway small enough for a person to fit in.

(What is this, a ninja house? That aside, why was such mechanism installed?)

The reason for creating something like this was worrisome, but looking closer there seem to be a ladder leading down from the pathway. It looked like the trapdoor lead to the basement of the house.

“Oi, old man. There is no way...” (Hiiro)

“Wait, he is down here. I am sure of it.” (Arnold)

“It makes me wonder what kind of person lives in this kind of place.” (Hiiro)

“I.. I’m also interest as well.” (Muir)

Their conversation faded slowly as they lost themselves in thought about who might live here.

“Well, you’ll know when you meet him.” (Arnold)

Arnold started heading down the ladder.

“Well, lets go” (Hiiro)

“Yes, I guess?” (Muir)

Both Hiiro and Muir cautiously followed Arnold down the ladder.

Inside was lot bigger than expected. More like there were several openings in the room which looked like tunnel made by large ants. If a dubious person wondered carelessly in this area, then there is a chance that they’ll get lost.

There were also bottles on the floor but he just ignored them and started looking around. Right cavern, right cavern, left cavern, middle cavern, left cavern. Arnold proceeded like that through all the caverns in the area until finally he found the correct room and motioned the rest of the group to come over.

When they entered the room they saw what looked like a science lab. Various organic specimens decorated the room. There were also jars with strange liquid on the shelves.

(Incredible, instead of just a science lab, this looks like a research facility)

Hiiro looked around the area restlessly lost in thought. At that moment, Arnold stopped. Wondering what happened, Hiiro looked infront of where Arnold was. There in a makeshift bed, someone was sleeping on it.

\*Snore~...\*Snore~...\*Snore~ (Guga~, Guga~, Guga~)

The loud snoring can be clearly heard.

\*muttering sound\* (むにゃむにゃ .....)

When the other two saw Arnold's master, they were shocked. When Arnold saw this he looked as his master with an exasperated expression. To think that this was his master...

But it was the truth. His master, who was wearing only a white lab coat and underwear, was sleeping soundly with a bottle of alcohol.

Oh my.....this is a little girl

“Oi, gramps.....are you there...?” (Arnold)

As by instinct, Arnold said immediately.

“It is alright, it's alright, I know what you are thinking but I'm telling you are wrong” (Arnold)

“Why, then, why is there little girl in such a dimly lit place; She looks no more than 5 years old.” (Hiiro)

“Well, I lot of things could have happened. This person is my master you know.” (Arnold)

“Really, is this true?” (Hiiro)

“Uwaaaaaaaa” Muir looked at him with the same suspicious eyes.

“It is true isn't it? You are a loli-con” (Hiiro)

“Dammit Hiiro! I told you that is completely wrong. I'm normal!” (Arnold)

“Shut uuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuup!” (Arnold's Master)

A sudden voice shouted like a siren causing everyone one to cover their ears in surprise. Then, they looked at where the voice came from.

“So loud! I’ll personally deal with whoever is causing this ruckus... Arnold is that you?” (Arnold’s Master)

“Oh, hi, nice to see you again, master” (Arnold)

Arnold’s face twitched as he made the greeting.

---

“So, let me start the introduction. This person here is my master, her name is Rarashik Fan’naru. Well that is about all, as you can see.”

Abruptly, a slipper smacked him across his head sending him sprawling along the floor. Muir was surprised when she saw it happen. Hiirō on the other hand, casually observed that she had a lot of strength.

“Who do you think, you are calling ‘that is all’ you are so full of yourself Arnold-boya” (Rarashik)

“Huff. That was cruel master” (Arnold)

“Ignoring my orders and heading out by yourself, I don’t want to be called master by someone like that!” (Rarashik)

Coming out her small mouth, it didn’t sound scary at all. However, Arnold had an expression of complete dread. He felt that he was in a terrible situation.

“To head to the Humas continent at that time day, what were you thinking?” (Rarashik)

“But, master...”

“Why didn’t you bring me along?” (Rarashik)

“.....what?” (Arnold)

“How dare you leave your master in a lonely place like this? Do you know how much I suffered?” (Rarashik)

\*Slap (Pakeshi)

With that, Arnold's head smacked into the ground again from the impact.

(What is going on with this little girl...?)

Because of the unreasonable remarks, and actions, Hihiro looked at the little girl carefully. She had green hair that was bunched together in the shape of an "O" at the back of her head. From his first impression she looked like a grade schooler with her height and looks. The most distinguishing part of her is the long ears at the top of her head.

(From those ears, she would be called the were-rabbit race right?)

Drawing from his memory, with the green hair, and long ears, she had all the characteristics of the were-rabbit race.

In addition to that, there were so many more interesting things to look into. For example, why does Arnold call her master? If so, then there should be considerable age difference? Yet, the appearance, the cellar-like house, the research facility-like room. What she is doing or who is she is a complete mystery.

(I'm not interested in this individual...but I'm interested in finding out what she does exactly)

It was the first time Hihiro saw a were-rabbit like her, but from what he read from an illustrated book, there were no were-rabbits like her.

(Is it a 'mutant' Or is there just a problem with her growth?)

While thinking, Hihiro was disrupted by an unpleasant stare from Rarashik.

"What is wrong boya? You shouldn't stare at a girl like? Or could it be that you have an interest in this body? (Rarashik)

With a mean grin, he half-heartily listened and responded with casual voice.

“Do you think I would be interested in such a undeveloped body? I’m not a loli-con like Arnold” (Hiiro)

“Hey, idiot Hiiro” (Arnold)

Arnold raised his voice, and saw beside him the trembling body of Rarashik. He started sweating all over.

“Hey.... Arnold” (Rarashik)

“Ye, yes!” (Arnold)

He stood stiffly like a soldier.

“Oi, brat, do you want to do an experiment?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik said through her teeth with a villainous grin. Seeing so, Arnold started sweating even more.

“Nah, I don’t want to” (Hiiro)

It isn’t as if Arnold hasn’t considered the ‘experiment’ but if Rarashik rampaged now it was clear he will also receive some damage. He stood there and quickly took out a bag.

“M, master. Here!” (Arnold)

The moment she saw the object inside the bag, her face turned from one of wrath to one of happiness immediately.

“Isn’t that <Honey Drop>?” (Rarashik)

The moment he handed her the bag, she pulled it toward her chest as if it was a precious treasure.

Arnold finally let out a relieved breath when he saw her mood get better.

“Why, oh why? If you had something like this why didn’t you bring it out earlier?” (Rarashik)

“We-well, my bad...” (Arnold)

Arnold quickly wiped the sweat on his head, and put on a exhausted smile.

“Hmm, so why are you here and who are those two behind you?”  
(Rarashik)

“Finally, we can get a real talk going....” (Arnold)

Arnold proceeded to tell her about what kind of connection he had with Hiiro and Muir. While listening silently, Rarashik stared at the other two.

“Hmm, for an idiot like you be able to find companions”  
(Rarashiki)

It was unclear if it was complement or an insult, but even then there was a smile. However, there was a boy who couldn't read the atmosphere.

“That is wrong, we are just fellow travelers” (Hiiro)

Rarashik looked at Hiiro with a blank face. The remaining two just shook their head in exasperation. It was fine just being a fellow traveler but it is just like Hiiro to say it like that.

“Traveler? What you saying? You are not companions?” (Rarashiki)

“Well that is...” (Hiiro)

Hiiro summarized the time he spent with Arnold's party. Of course, he made sure to leave <Word Magic> out.

“Oh, isn't that okay? As the teacher or Arnold, wouldn't it be fine for me to join your party?” (Rarashik)

“Nah, we don't need a little girl like you.” (Hiiro)

At that moment, the air between them seem to crack with electricity. Arnold couldn't help but regret bringing Hiiro along.

“You arrogant bastard. You who hasn't even lived 1/10 of my life, do you want to die?” (Rarashik)



“If you can do it go ahead!” (Hiiro)

But at that moment, Hiiro felt cold steel at his neck.

(What? No way....!?)

Before he can react, Rarashik was behind him with a small knife, pressed against his neck. Muir was so surprised that she wasn't able to say anything. Arnold just let out a sharp breath and watched.

“You see? I am no just little girl, nor do I have an undeveloped body. Even though I looked like this I've lived for over 200 years. The next time you call me a little girl, I'll turn you into a human experiment. Understood?” (Rarashik)

After saying that she returned to her original position. Hiiro felt a unpleasant drop of sweat flow down his head. His whole body felt a very strong killing intent.

(I had no idea what happen...if she was serious I would have been...)

Without touching his neck, he could feel his heart pounding. It was as if he barely escaped with his life. From that sensation, he realized, for the first time, the terror that resides in this world.

(This kind of person exists, huh...A person I can't even react to... that person)

If he used Word Magic before the encounter he might have been alright. If he used the word [vision], he would be able to see the other person's movements, if he used the word [speed] he might have been able to react.

Even then, Hiiro knew that if that person fought for real, he was guaranteed to die either way.

## Chapter 39: The Unstoppable War

[TL : enclosed in () is what the main character Hiiro is thinking, unless it is beside a quotation mark]

“Were you surprised? Even though shishou looks like this, she’s at the SSS rank. Wait, I think that was a while ago..?”. ” (Arnold)

“Fun!, even if it’s been a long time since I’ve been active, a midget like you wouldn’t even be a decent warm up.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik said as she laughed. Hiiro felt frustrated. However, he could not say anything. In reality, he couldn’t even lift a finger against her. And to think she wasn’t even using her full power.

(What a monster...to think these kinds of people were called top rankers.)

Even if they’re human, can an SSS ranker be this powerful?, As if reading Hiiro’s thoughts, Arnold began to explain.

“They’re strong. The difference between a person with an SS rank and one with an SSS rank is significantly huge. Honestly, the only people that can obtain an SSS rank are freaks of nature.” (Arnold)

“Who you callin’ a freak?” (Rarashik)

\*Smack (or Punyuchi~tss)

Ignoring Arnold whose face was buried in the ground, Hiiro looked back at Rarashik.

(Should I use it? The word [Pry]...?)

If he used the word [Pry] he would be able to view the target’s status. He was tempted to use it in order to obtain an absolute numeric evaluation of her strength. But in order to use the skill, he would have to write the word. If he were seen...no. Without a doubt, Hiiro was convinced that he would be noticed before he could even initiate the skill.

He really wanted to confirm her abilities, however, if his strange movements attracted her attention and caused him to be cornered, that would be the end. Thus, he decided to stop for now. Hiiro determined that a chance will definitely arise at a later date. This was definitely the first time that Hiiro displayed any signs of weakness.

“A-alright then. I kinda want to get the conversation going so... Hiiro, don’t do anything unnecessary, okay?” (Arnold)

Hiiro remained silent. Seeing this rare sight, Arnold’s eyes widened.

(To be able to get that Hiiro to shut up, my shishou is impressive as always.)

Thinking as such, Arnold turned his gaze towards Rarashik.

“Actually, Shishou, I want to ask you a few things about the war.” (Arnold)

Hearing this, Rarashik’s face instantly turned became hostile. She gave him a glare that made Arnold jump in panic.

“I don’t believe it but, are you guys saying you want to go off to war as well? (Rarashik)

“Eh? Ah, no, that’s not what I’m trying to say... but when you say it like that, then it’s as we thought. A war is starting, right?” (Arnold)

“The question’s not whether there will be a war or not, our forces should’ve already reached the border by now.” (Rarashik)

“Seriously?! Then what’s gonna happen to this continent now?” (Arnold)

“Who knows?” (Rarashik)

“Master!? What do you mean, ‘Who knows!?’” (Arnold)

“If war has already started then there isn’t much you can do about it. Unless, Arnold, you want to try and persuade the king to

withdraw?” (Rarashik)

“T-that’s kinda...” (Arnold)

There was no way for a group of mere adventurers would even get a hearing. However, it also didn’t feel right to leave the issue as it is and continue to act as a bystander.

“What happens, happens. The thing about war is that it can only end when one side is declared the loser. But I doubt that the Evila or the Gabranth will surrender.” (Rarashik)

“So you say, but we’re talking about a war. Wouldn’t it leave the world in ruins?” (Arnold)

“Well, seeing how we rushed into war in such a state, we will never know when it will end. The days of rigorous everyday battles may continue indefinitely.” (Rarashik)

“Earlier, I’m pretty sure you said that they are already at the border...” (Arnold)

Arnold took a map out of his pocket as he inspected the layout of the continents.

The Gabranth continent was connected to the Evila continent by a bridge. It was very similar to the bridge that connected the Humas Continent and the Gabranth continent. However, the structure and materials of the bridges were completely different.

The bridge that connected the Humas and Gabranth continents was 10km long and 10 meters wide.

However, the bridge that connected the Gabranth continent to the Evila continent was 30km long and 30m wide. Furthermore, it was constructed out of a special ore called “Xrude Ore” which boasted supreme toughness and was incredibly firm.

There was even a rumor about an SSS ranker that used such ore to create a sword that slaughtered countless monsters. Ever since such a rumor was confirmed, the usefulness of Xrude Ore was substantiated and irrefutable.

The reason behind the substantial difference between structure and material of the bridges is quite lengthy. Once upon a time the Humas and Gabranth worked together to create a bridge just as long and wide as the Gabranth-Evila Bridge. However, there were numerous strong and powerful sea monsters that attacked the bridge. The people managed to fend those monsters off for some time but eventually it collapsed from the relentless onslaught.

Construction of a more robust bridge was undertaken with incremental progress over the years. Ever since its completion, it continues to withstand attacks from sea monsters, remaining firm and reliable as it provides safe passage from one continent to the other.

“The Gedult Bridge, huh...if they cross that, then it’ll turn into a full blown war...” (Arnold)

“Yeah, and it’s looking like it’ll happen real soon..” (Rarashik)

Hearing Rarashik’s words, Muir face showed a dejected expression.

“Why....why would they start a war?” (Muir)

“Muir...” Arnold

Arnold gently rubbed Muir’s head. Upon seeing Arnold committing such an act, Rarashik began teasing Arnold. “Hou~ If you do something like that, it’ll look like she really is your daughter.” (Rarashik)

“Of course. Muir really is my daughter” (Arnold)

“...he~” (Rarashik)

In reality, Rarashik expected Arnold to grow flustered at her teasing, and was genuinely impressed with Arnold as he calmly made that declaration.

“You’ve grown up a bit, didn’t ya? Arnold-boya” (Rarashik)

“Of course, I’m already 37 this year.” (Arnold)

“Hahaha! True, true, so you’re finally at that age huh?” (Rarashik)

In the face of her unbridled laughter, Arnold stared at her with half-opened eyes.

“More importantly, why didn’t shishou go to war? Were you not invited?” (Arnold)

“Hmm? Of course I was. Isn’t it a given that I was invited?” (Rarashik)

“So? You didn’t go?” (Arnold)

“I have no interest in fighting a losing battle.” (Rarashik)

“A losing battle?! There’s no way to know that at this point....” (Arnold)

“Who do you think I am? Of course I can tell.” (Rarashik)

“...haa? But, our king isn’t so stupid that he would start a war with no chance of victory, right?” (Arnold)

“Well, it seems that the King has something up his sleeve. Besides, it seems that my damn brother went with him.” (Rarashik)

“Your brother did?” (Arnold)

“Aa, because my damn brother was there, they were capable of going to war.” (Rarashik)

“Well, your brother was the one behind the creation of the < <Binding> > skill.”

Muir and Hihiro, having no idea what they were talking about, tilted their heads to the side with a puzzled expression. Noticing their confusion, Arnold immediately gave an apologetic smile.

“My bad, my bad. Shishou’s brother is a researcher for this kingdom. He’s the one responsible for devising the method of using the < <Binding> > skill” (Arnold)

“That method involves this bracelet...but” (Rarashik)

Rarashik showed them the bracelet fitted on her wrist. It was the same bracelet that Arnold and Muir had. It seems that the person that created those bracelets was Rarashik’s brother.

“I’m pretty sure it was called... < <nameless bracelet> > , right?”” (Hiiro)

“Aa, although if the owner is able to establish a contract with a spirit, the bracelet will be granted a name.” (Rarashik)

Arnold contracted with a wind spirit so his bracelet became a < <Bracelet of Wind> > . Muir contracted with a thunder spirit so her bracelet became a < <Bracelet of Thunder> >

“This bracelet allows one to draw upon the < <binding> > skill during battle. By the way, the person that conceived the < <binding> > skill was shishou.” (Arnold)

Hearing this info, Hiiro was honestly surprised. He could not believe that the person who gave the Gabranth the ability to fight with magic was the person right in front of him.

(Actually, considering the movements she displayed earlier...)

Seeing Rarashik placing her hands on her hips and puffing out her chest proudly, Hiiro felt the bitter emotions he had earlier resurfacing.

“Oji-san, you became the disciple of a really amazing person!”

Muir, deeply moved by what Rarashik accomplished, rejoiced by raising both of her hands in the air.

“Nahahaha! Keep praising me little lady! Nothing will come from it, though.” (Rarashik)

Seeing his master passionately laughing due to her good mood, Arnold became slightly embarrassed, his cheek stiffening as his face contorted into a wry smile.

“...haha, so, shishou? Continuing where we left off, what makes you think that they are going to lose? Don’t they have the <<Binding>> skill that you developed? Even with that, you wouldn’t be able to say whether they are going win or lose” (Arnold)

“Are you an idiot?!” (Rarakshik)

“An idiot!?” (Arnold)

Due to the sudden insult, Arnold involuntarily repeated her words.

“For the Gabranth who are unable to use magic, being able to use the <<Binding>> skill would definitely be something that the Evila will not be able to overlook so easily.” (Rarashik)

“T-then!?” (Arnold)

“Even so, abilities and the history of the magic itself are two different things.” (Rarashik)

“Magic history, huh?” (Arnold)

“I think I get it. So to summarise....” (Hiiro)

Before Hiiro could conclude his summary, Rarashik’s eyes lit up with sparkled curiosity. It seemed that it couldn’t be helped but to voice his thoughts about her now before he could move the conversation along.

“...you’re a chibi-usagi.” (Hiiro)

“What kind of summary is that!?” (Arnold)

Arnold plunged in with a tsukkomi. The person in question, however, having her expectations popped like a balloon, began to laugh uncontrollably..

“Nahahaha! That’s certainly a great summary, bad eyes-boya!”

As if stuck onto a key point of Hiiro’s summary, Rarashik was held her stomach as it convulsed due to laughter. Hiiro obviously raised



his eyebrows, making an expression that seemed to ask, ‘something the matter?’ In face of Rarashik’s sudden laughter, both Muir and Arnold could only tilt their heads in amazement.

“Nahaha! You are an interesting fellow, ain’t ya! Well, you’re free to call me what you want. As long as it’s not ‘little girl,’ I’ll make an exception just for you.” (Rarashik)

“Ho-oh, ossan, your shishou has a quite an unfathomable depth of character, huh.” (Hiiro)

“Kora! What’s that supposed to mean!?” (Arnold)

“Of course! Don’t compare me to a fellow like Arnold who resembles a decrepit old man!” (Rarashik)

“W-wait, shishou!?” (Arnold)

‘You’re obviously the older one here, shishou!’ is what Arnold want to say, however, he obviously could not say it even if his tongue was ripped out. If he did, he would undoubtedly wind up kissing the ground again.(TL: just imagine him sent flying into the ground, that is what “kiss the ground” would look like)

“So? You were in the middle of saying something, right?” (Rarashik)

Ignoring Arnold, Rarashik asked Hiiro.

“Well, magic has a very long history. Research from various areas and subjects has been conducted on various magic to improve its power and effectiveness. Compared to that the <<Binding>> skill was created fairly recently, correct?” (Hiiro)

Rarashik said that she had thought of the skill, however, she herself, who had only lived for over 200 years, did not think that the history of <<Binding>> was very long. That said, the history of the <<Binding>> magic could only be about 100-150 years in length..

“If experience was a stat that could be used to determine fighting capability, the difference between traditional magic and our

< <Binding> > is certainly quite overwhelming. Compared to the fleshed out traditional magic, < <Binding> > has pretty much just entered its development phase.” (Hiiro)

Listening to Hiiro’s calculated response, Arnold inhaled sharply as he redirected his gaze towards Rarashik.

“You’re pretty smart, ain’t ya. What was your name?” (Rarashik)

“...Hiiro, Okamura” (Hiiro)

“Okamura? That’s a pretty strange name. It seems like you’re the little girl’s brother or relative, but...?” (Rarashik)

\*Giku-\* Arnold started trembling. It was clear that Rarashik noticed that Muir’s hair that protruded out of her knit cap and Hiiro’s hair are of the same tint. She assumed that due to this similarity that Muir and Hiiro were siblings.

As Arnold was at a lost to how he should respond to this, Hiiro spoke up.

“We are of the same race, but not necessarily siblings” (Hiiro)

“Fun, the same race, huh” (Rarashik)

Rarashik compared the two of them as if she was searching for something.

(Let’s see... that silver-blue hair and those ears... no, that couldn’t be. If that was the case, then that ear shape should be slightly different...)

As soon as she determined that it was no longer possible, she discarded that idea. Immediately following that, she chuckled to herself before she once again laid her eyes upon Hiiro.

“Well, whatever. It is just as you said, boya. Do you get it, Arnold?” (Rarashik)

“Um, the < <Binding> > skill which has a shallow history, can’t win against magic?” (Arnold)

“That’s a given. The Evila will be able to use magic that <<Binding>> users will not be able to use. Compared to them our magic is inferior. (Rarashik)

“But shishou’s level of <<Binding>> is different, right?” (Arnold)

“Well, I’m the one who thought of it after all. After me would probably be...just the king.” (Rarashik)

“Wait a minute! What about the “Three Beast Saints”?” (Arnold)

(Nn? The three beast-saints?)

Hearing an interesting word appear, Hihiro raised his eyebrows.

“Isn’t it obvious? They’re all just snotty nosed brats if you ask me.” (Rarashik)

“Snot nosed...you know that they’re very influential people of this kingdom...”

Hou~ Hihiro felt something click as he gained an understanding due to Arnold’s words.

(Even among the Gabranth, there are people who are classified as being in the top class...huh? The Three Beast Saints? If presumably there is only 3 of them, that’s not a very notable amount)

It seemed that, according to Arnold, the three-beast saints were ranked next to king in terms of combat ability and influence. In Rarashik’s eyes, however, she seemed to have deemed them as ‘snot nosed brats’.

“Well, leaving out the whole snotty brats thing, the number of people that can bring out the true power of the <<Binding>> skill besides me is only 1. Incidentally, they’re one of the people that are heading off to war. Do you really think those amateurs who take the lead in this war will stand a chance against the Evila?” (Rarashik)

Arnold was left unable to reject those words. From first hand

experience, he can attest to the <<Binding>> skill's strength. However, he also knew that he wasn't able to realize the skill's full potential. If you apply Arnold's situation to Rarashik's explanation, the obvious conclusion drawn is that all the beastmen are unable to fully utilise the <<Binding>> skill.

Those handicapped Gabranth are going to fight the Evila, who have studied and compiled their knowledge of magic, to the point of being able to use their magic like their own limbs. What Rarashik is try to convey is that it is correct to assume that the Gabranth will not be able to stand a chance against the Evila.

"It's too soon. It's way too soon to be stirring up trouble with them." (Arnold)

Putting her hands in her white lab coat's pockets, Rarashik let exasperated.

"So, you tried to stop them, Shishou?" (Arnold)

"If I was talking to people that listened then maybe I could have convinced them...It's just that everyone was so enthusiastic about being able to use magic with the <<Binding>> skill for the first time. There will always be someone stronger no matter how strong you get." (Rarashik)

"To think that shishou's words couldn't stop them..." (Arnold)

"Well, to them, I'm just a former martial arts teacher. I don't have that much authority in the first place. If I had some achievements under my belt like my damn father, perhaps they may have heeded my warnings."

"Is that so...? No, I think what shishou has achieved so far is definitely something worth respecting." (Arnold)

The ability to bring out the Gabranth hidden potential by using the <<Binding>> skill is already a great feat. However, in Rarashik's eyes, something of that level was probably not what she would consider an accomplishment.

"In any case, this is a war. It'd be nice if we are able to return from

it without experiencing something tragic...” (Rarashik)

True, this was not a measly quarrel. This is for the Gabranth to measure the power of the Evlia, to find their own weaknesses and learn something from it. There is a high probability that they will experience something painful before retreating to safety.

“Sadly, the Gabranth are simple and naive. There is a possibility that they may get wiped out.” (Rarashik)

“N-no way...” (Muir)

Muir voiced her dismay as her face grew pale. If the Gabranth army was annihilated, there is a high chance that the end of the Gabranth would draw closer. Even if Evila retreated, there is a chance that the Humas would take the opportunity to invade.

In the event that they do invade, the Gabranth would be enslaved by the Humas. Realizing this, both Muir and Arnold felt a shiver run down their spine.

Arnold and Muir knew all too well that the true horror of the Humas wasn't their strength or their magic prowess, but their desire for domination, control, and greed. It is because of this that a future enslavement to them had to be prevented at all cost.

“I-is there nothing we can do?” (Muir)

“Didn't I say it before? All we can do is let things run their course.” (Rarashik)

“Y-yes, but...” (Muir)

“Or what? Do you plan on joining the war effort in order to prevent enslavement? With those puny arms?” (Rarashik)

Even though Rarashik's words were harsh, they were indisputably correct. No matter what he would do, the situation would remain unchanged. Involvement in the war effort would only bring about several more corpses of Evila soldiers. Worst case, it would only increase the number of Gabranth bodies.

Seeing Arnold clenching his teeth, Rarashik could only spit out sigh.

“Well, we won’t be able to completely stop the flames of war, but in theory, we can delay the opening spark.” (Rarashik)

“R-really!?” (Arnold)

Arnold tried to think of a method to delay the war, but he was unable to come up with anything. He had given up and thought that there might be no way to do something like that.

“Kind of. If it works, both sides will stay put.” (Rarashik)

“What method is it?” (Muir)

“Didn’t I say? This is only a theory?” (Rarashik)

“Eh?” (Muir)

“It seems that neither side is likely to benefit from it. And even then, we need to find someone capable of doing it...” (Rarashik)

Arnold brought his hand to his chin, tilting his neck as he stared at Rarashik.

“E-exactly what kind of method is this?” (Arnold)

“...hmm? I think that boya over there already knows, right?” (Rarashik)

Saying this, Rarashik’s casually gaze laid upon Hiiro’s reflection. He held his arms crossed over his chest in an uninterested manner, however, after being spoken to, Hiiro turned his gaze towards Rarashik. Facing her, he spoke.

“Aa.” (Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro’s expression of affirmation, Muir and Arnold’s jaws dropped in disbelief.

“Hou~” (Rarashik)

Rarashik grinned in admiration.

‘Oi Hiiro? Are you serious?’ (Arnold)

“Yeah, although I’m beginning to wonder how much of that you understood. Were you asleep the whole time, old man?” (Hiiro)

“Nahahahaha! To be treated like that by someone younger than you, you should be ashamed, Arnold!” (Rarashik)

“Gununununu....Argh, whatever! I don’t care anymore! Tell me already!” (Arnold)

As Hiiro noticed Muir’s curious, glittering eyes staring at him as if pleading him to teach her what he had realized, ‘ha~’ Hiiro could only sigh.

“Why don’t you say it bo-ya? I want to see if you’ve actually got the right idea.” (Rarashik)

Seeing Rarashik’s playful smile that felt like she was testing him, Hiiro felt pissed. However, even if he remained silent, the other two’s stares started to become a nuisance. Therefore, Hiiro reluctantly began his explanation.

“...ha~Listen carefully, got it. That method is...” (Hiiro)

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 40: War Commences! And a Sudden Development!?

《Gedalt Bridge》. That was the only bridge connecting the 『Gabranth』 and 『Evila』 continents. And at this very moment, from both sides of the bridge, the 『Gabranth』 and 『Evila』 glared at one another.

“Those bastards. I was sure that they would deploy their troops to our side already...”

The person who muttered that was 【Beast Kingdom, Passion】’s King, and the one serving as supreme commanding officer of the country’s forces: Leowald King. His gallant mane flowed in the wind, as his sharp lion-like eyes stared at the other side of the bridge.

He had acted under the assumption that the 『Evila』 would station their troops on this side to prevent them from crossing. But it appears he was mistaken

“Damn, if only they were on our side of the bridge, I would make mincemeat out of them.”

The person saying this with a regretful expression was the second prince, Lenion.

“As expected of war. Not everything will go as planned...”

For a different reason than Legion, the first prince Leglos also had a regretful expression.

“Father, what should we do? They’ve positioned quite a force on that side. I believe it would be best to wait and see what move they will make.”

“Yes, this is still within expectations. We’ll keep to our initial plan. First... we’ll use that.”



Upon those words, the people surrounding him gave off dangerous smiles.

“Are the preparations ready, Yuhito!?”

Upon calling the name, a man in a white lab coat appeared behind him.

“Nyohohohoho! We’re ready whenever you are! Let’s confirm the results of my research to our hearts content! Nyohohohoho!”

His hair was unkempt and his coat was worn out. The man wearing spiraling glasses and giving off a generally dirty disposition gave off a loud laugh.

“Good, then release the first 《Decaying Legions》!”

“Nyohohohoho! Crouch, do it!”

A black panther Beast-man with his entire body covered in black stood before everyone.

“Understood-nya.”

He placed his arms on the ground in front of the bridge.

“Now, it’s time for work-nya. Come out-nya.”

The bracelet on Crouch’s arm gave off a dubious light.

Zuzuzuzuzuzuzuzzuzuzuzu...

The shadow around his feet gradually increased in size. And from then, the shapes of monsters began to form. However, those were no ordinary monsters.

Various parts of their bodies were eroded away, and their skin was festering. A smell of decay enough to break one’s nose permeated the air. But the monsters’ eyes did give off a sense of life along with a red light.

Monsters endlessly poured out of the shadows. And with a casual

pace, they start spanning the bridge.

“Nyohohoho! Go forth! My immortal zombie legions!”

—

—

—

—

—

At that time, on the other side, having seen the 『Gabranth』’s movements, the soldiers reported to the one who requested Demon King Eveam to put him in that position: 《Cruel》’s 《Rank 2》, Marione.

“I see, I see. So they began moving. Those filthy brutes, I’ll send them to oblivion!”

Bloodlust, powerful enough that even the soldiers on his side trembled in fear, surged through his body. Both his wife and child had been killed by the 『Gabranth』. For that reason, he had an insatiable rage directed at the beast race.

The reason he personally asked to participate on the front lines was because he believed it would allow him to slaughter as many Beast-men as possible.

“... Marione-sama”

“Oh, what is it, Chugay?”

The one who suddenly appeared behind him was a man called Chugay. On his head was a single, long horn. Like a mask, his face never showed a change in emotion.

“It seems they’re employing monsters as their front-line. What course of action do you wish to take?”

“Hmm, from what I’ve heard, one of their researchers discovered a way to get monsters to fight for them.”

“It appears that was true. There are some Rank S monsters among them.”

“Hmm, did they think they could do anything with some measly Rank S’s?”

“I believe they are disposable pieces to elicit a reaction from us.”

“That means that there’s a high possibility they have much stronger monsters with them. Hmm, those beasts desperately scrambled for power due to their declining forces. They gained some unnecessary knowledge.”

He clicked his tongue in an annoyed manner.

“Marione-sama.”

“Hmm?”

“Please grant me, Chugay, a part in this. Let me determine whether the forces those filthy beasts put together will be a threat or not.”

Upon receiving those words, Marione laughed.

“Fine. But stop at the monsters. The Beasts will... be killed by my hand.”

“Understood!”

Chugay vanished into thin air.

“Watch closely, damn brutes. I’ll exterminate every last one of you.”

—

—

—

—  
—  
“How’s the situation?”

As Leowald posed the question to Yuhito, he laughed as he responded.

“Nyohohohoho! It appears they only sent one person! But he seems to be quite a skillful! Nyohohohoho!”

“So they’re going to engage us in the middle of the bridge. What’s more, with one person? Who is he?”

“I used my precious Zombie-chans’ eyes to observe him. It seems they sent Chugay!”

“Father, I believe Chugay was Marione’s subordinate.”

Leglos commented, and Leowald opened his eyes a bit wider.

“I see, so one of the 《Cruel》 is in command.”

“They’ve already sent out the Demon Lord’s personal fighting force, the Cruel. What’s more, Marione should be 《Rank 2》. For such a person to be on the frontlines... is there a reason?”

“Nyohohoho! Based on my research, he harbors a great hatred for Beast-men!”

“So that’s it, he want to reap our lives with his own hands... that’s probably his intention.”

Leowald’s words were right on the mark.

“If it’s just Chugay, the monsters should be able to hold him off, but what should we do?”

“I’ll go forward.” (TL: Uses Ore-sama)

“Lenion.”

“I can’t laze around forever. Someone needs to open the way, right?”

“Wait a second, Lenion, there’s no reason for a prince to set out yet.”

“Aniki, this is war. If you want to win, you’ve got to use whatever you’ve got. Luckily, my 《Binding》 is perfect for use in open places like this.”

Lenion glanced at the bridge that extended in a straight line.

“Also, if they’re just monsters, it doesn’t matter if I drag them into my attacks too, right? Well, perhaps the soldiers would be satisfied if they were to die by my attacks.”

Looking at his ferocious smile, Leglos thought to himself, ‘If his heart was just a little warmer, Lenion would be a better prince than him.’

Based on ability, Lenion’s was higher. In the Beast-man world that put strength over all else, the next king would have been him. Regrettably, his personality was not one that was well liked.

He was too militaristic, and he didn’t care for the people. He would be a disgrace as a King.

“Oy, Old Man, whatcha gonna do? Can I go out?”

Hearing Lenion’s words, Leowald thought for a second.

“... Understood. But wait for a second.”

As he said those words, the soldiers who were observing the bridge raised their voices.

“What’s wrong!?”

Leowald shouted out, thinking that perhaps the other side had made some drastic movements.

“Ah, no, something from the other side...”

Upon the soldier's words, everyone redirected their gaze.

"What do you mean by something...?"

They concentrated their attention on the other side of the bridge. And above it, two items were floating in mid-air.

"What... are those...?"

That was the question on everyone's mind.

—

—

—

—

—

"What's going on!?"

Marione's angry voice cried out. The reason for this was that unrest was breaking out among the soldiers, and the camp was getting noisy.

"Did something happen to Chugay?"

That was what came to his mind. He had left taking care of the monsters to him because he asked. Could it be that he lost?

"N-no..."

The soldier's faces are pale. Some of them have blank expressions. It's as if they saw something they couldn't believe.

"All of you! If something happened, explain it!"

"Y-yess!"

Marione's wrath returned them to their senses. They knelt before him and explained the events that had transpired. And upon

hearing their words, Marione's expression gradually stiffened.

"What do you mean!?"

"Hii!"

"Why did something like that!?"

"I-I-I Dooooooooon't Know!"

The soldiers desperately responded, but nothing entered Marione's ears anymore. His mind was in disorder from the words he just heard.

He turned his eyes to the space above the bridge to confirm it. There were definitely two things there.

(W-why... what does this mean...?)

He grit his teeth, and he murmured to himself.

"Why are those two people here...?"

—

—

—

—

—

Both sides had noticed the existence of the two objects. They were both enquiring as to what their purpose was. The objects floated to the very center of the bridge and stopped.

Both of the objects were, as the 『Evila』 side surmised, people. The first had beautiful golden hair and was lightly clad in red armor. It was Eveam. The second had blood-red hair and was wearing pitch black armor. It was Aquinus. Both of them had sprouted large wings from their backs.

Both of them turned their eyes to the battle below, between the zombie monsters and Marione's subordinate, Chugay. Chugay noticed their presence and was dumbfounded that the existence he was fighting to defend boldly wandered onto the battlefield.

"Fall back, Chugay!"

Eveam said as such, but Chugay had no idea what was going on. His mind could not keep up with the sudden development. He never heard that anything of the sort was set to happen, and even though she was accompanied by 《Rank 1》 Aquinus, for the Demon Lord to nonchalantly come out was just reckless.

"If you don't want to get involved in this, step back."

In an indifferent voice, Aquinus spoke, but to Chugay, Aquinus wasn't his master. He didn't take orders from him. For him, Marione was the one deserving of being 《Rank 1》.

So he honestly did his part by defying Aquinus's orders. But seeing his immobility, Eveam angrily shouted at him.

"Just move it already! The Demon King is ordering you here!"

"Y-yes!"

Even he couldn't defy the Demon King's words. If he did, then the responsibility of his actions would fall to Marione. But still, this place was left to him, so he was a bit dissatisfied with leaving without an explanation.

"I'll leave explanations to later. Just get out of here quickly! Also relay my command, let no one else get close to here!"

He understood not the intent of Eveam's words, but an erratic situation was playing out before him. He determined that he would have to report it to Marione, so he sprouted wings from his back and departed.

"Are you ready, Aquinus?"

"Yeah."



And the two lowered their backs and drew their swords. For some reason, those blades found themselves lodging into their wielder's left arms. From their cut arms, a large amount of blood flowed. The blood dripped steadily towards the ground.

"Let me ask again. You're sure about this, right?"

Aquinas inquired, and while Eveam's face was stiff, she responded in a strong voice.

"Yeah, I've already decided it."

She lifted up her bloody left arm, and above her head, a large magic circle manifested. Her blood was drawn towards that magic circle and dyed it red.

Aquinas flew up higher than that circle and held his left arm towards the ground. A similar magic circle appeared before him. The two circles were separated by exactly 30 meters

Aquinas's blood was also absorbed into his circle, and his circle turned red.

All of a sudden, a sound like that of the earth rumbling sounded out. The clear sky suddenly became clouded with dark clouds, and lightning began racing across it.

In-between the two circles, a black mass was brought forth. Black lightning surged around it, as it gradually got larger.

And from both sides, people began to realize exactly for what purpose the two had appeared.

## Chapter 41 - Interruption of War

[TL : Note:

- There was no proofreading.
- I romanized the Demon King's name to Iveam, as that was what was written in Unlimited Novel Failures' translation. In Netblazer's translation, it's written as Eveam. I have no idea which one will be used in the future.
- Names changed to match those in Yoraikun's Chapter 40
- Correction: Aquinas is a man, not a woman. Specifically stated so in 42. ]

"W-What is that tremendous magic power!? I-Is it the Demon King!?"

On the Gabranth side, witnessing the actions of Iveam and Aquinas, Leglos judged that it was indeed the work of the Demon King.

"Yeah. This amount of magic power, there's no mistake." (Leglos)

In the face of such an extreme amount of magic power surpassing his own, even Lenion was clenching his teeth. His hands naturally became sweaty.

"Nyohohohoho! Well now, this is bad!" (Yuhito)

"What is it, Yuhito? What's bad? Because they're going to fire it in this direction?" (Lenion)

As Lenion asks, Yuhito shakes his finger.

"Non non. If that were the case, they'd have to be closer in order to annihilate us. But they stopped at the middle of the bridge, yes!" (Yuhito)

"...You can't mean!?" (Leowald)

King Leowald gasps as Yuhito confirmed what he wanted to say.

"That's correct. I'm afraid they..." (Yuhito)

---

"To use such large magic... It can't be!? N-No, but..." (Marione)

On the Evila side, the very first to realize was Marione. Even though he came to that conclusion, however, he could not believe it.

"To think Her Majesty would do such a thing..." (Marione)

Among the soldiers, there are those that are impressed feeling the enormous magic power. They did not understand what was going to happen, but they are deeply moved witnessing the power of the one they were supposed to protect.

However, Marione was beside himself with worry. If those two do what he thought they were going to do, he thought that he must stop them. However, there is no longer a way to stop them. The soldiers ask Marione what they plan to do.

He clenches his teeth and tells them as if spitting out his words.

"They are..." (Marione)

---

"They need to break the bridge." (Hiiro)

Hiiro gives an answer to Rarashik's question. Everyone aside from her, however, has a blank look on their faces.

"Oh, and your reasoning?" (Rarashik)

"If they break the bridge then just as you said, it won't be able to stop the war but it will delay it." (Hiiro)

"W-What do you mean?" (Arnold)

Arnold asks while furrowing his brow.

"Isn't that so? That bridge is the only thing connecting the two continents, right?" (Hiiro)

"...Ah!" (Arnold & Muir)

Both Arnold and Muir seem to understand what he said.

"I get it! Destroying the bridge will stop their advance!" (Arnold)

"Y-Yeah, and if everything goes well, then just like Ms. Master said, both sides may come out uninjured..." (Muir)

(TL: It sounds kind of awkward, but I thought it'd be better than leaving it as Shisho-san)

Then, Rarashik grinned and started applauding.

"Congratulations. You're a smart one, boy." (Rarashik)

"Hmph" (Hiiro)

Hiiro didn't feel bad being complimented, but since he was done so while being looked down upon by a little girl, he felt conflicted.

"No, wait... There's no merit for them if they do that..." (Arnold)

Arnold mutters while crossing his arms. To that, Muir asked.

"What do you mean?" (Muir)

"Because, they're at war. Especially because it was the Gabranth side that started it. It not likely that they'll do something to lose their standing. There were rumors that the Evila were also plotting war. Rather, they've advanced across that bridge several times. The war this time around is a convenient turn of events for the Evila. Because the Gabranth are the ones that started it. They wouldn't go out of their way and destroy the bridge, would they? Since the Evila are stronger anyway." (Arnold)

"Ah, you're right." (Muir)

"It's like I said, right? Theoretically, it's possible. But there's no merit, and someone that could break such a large bridge... Well, even if there were someone that could, he'd have to use close to all his power, so while it's theoretically possible, there's no one that would do it." (Arnold)

The Gedult Bridge, having been destroyed in the past by monsters, has been developed so that such a thing would not occur again.

It may be possible to damage it a little, but something like completely destroying it would be difficult and there would be no reason to do so, so only the methodology of doing so has ever been presented.

"Well, if the Evila have a reason to not fight and there is some merit that outweighs the demerit of losing the bridge then they might do so. There probably isn't though." (Rarashik)

Rarashik says so, but they did not know that there is someone in the Evila who has a reason to not fight.

"Is that so... So the war can't be stopped after all..." (Arnold)

Arnold mutters, and Muir has a downcast look.

"If only there was some miraculous irregular happening... But, the world isn't such an easy place." (Rarashik)

Listening to Rarashik's philosophical words, Arnold and Muir get more depressed, but Hihiro was thinking of something different.

"The Evila, there is definitely a reason why they haven't attacked despite being so powerful. If that reason was... No, I wonder..." (Hihiro)

If the reason was related to avoiding the war, it doesn't necessarily mean that anything may happen in this war. Though this was nothing more than Hihiro's conjecture, the answer would be known soon.

Whether it will become a full-scale war, or it won't... The answer would be known soon.

---

"We're releasing it! Aquinas!" (Iveam)

Iveam, who was building the magic array, continues to pour in magic from her pitiful left arm.

"Okay." (Aquinas)

Followed by Aquinas, who was pouring in an equal amount of magic. The black mass that appeared grew in size, filling the gap between the two magic arrays.

"Let's go, Aquinas!" (Iveam)

Her yell acting as the trigger, the black mass wrapped around the magic arrays as if to cover them.

"Disappear into darkness! 《Cosmo End》!"

RUMBLE RUMBLE RUMBLE RUMBLE!

(TL: What's a good onomatopoeia for earthquakes and such?)

The black mass that was fired off with tremendous speed and headed towards the bridge.

It was an instant. Yes, it happened in an instant.

The monsters that were supposed to be on top of the bridge were sucked into the black mass...

The black mass touched the bridge and instantly wrapped around all 30km of it.

And then a few seconds later, the giant Gedult Bridge disappeared without a trace. It was as if a bridge never existed there in the first

place...

The weather suddenly cleared up. There were almost no casualties on both sides. Only the path that connected them had disappeared. Only that.

"Uh..." (Iveam)

The wings on Iveam's back disappeared and she fell towards the sea. However, Aquinas appeared and caught her.

"I... I may have used up too much blood..." (Iveam)

"..." (Aquinas)

Her face looks pale, but she felt happy that she was able to follow through with what she wanted to do. Aquinas carried her and started leaving from where they were. When suddenly!

Whooooooooooooooooosh!

(TL: Sound of cutting through air. I need better English onomatopoeia)

"!?" (Aquinas)

Something was fired towards them from the Gabranth. Aquinas instantly dodged it. It looked like a spear, but it was surprising because it was a spear.

(If there is someone who could throw a spear all the way here, it would be...) (Aquinas)

Thinking that, Aquinas focuses her eyes towards the Gabranth.



Where she is right now is approximately 15km from the Gabranth forces. Throwing a spear accurately from that distance is no easy feat.

There was also a fair amount of power behind it. Aquinas determined that if the spear had hit its target, she would have taken considerable damage. There was only one person Aquinas knew who was capable of such an attack.

"...The Beast King, huh" (Aquinas)

---

"Shit! She dodged it!" (Leowald)

Leowald spat out those words while his face contorted in anger. Even for him the distance was too far and he was unable to hit his target.

"How dare you... How dare you! Evilaaaaaa!" (Leowald)

Leowald screamed into the sky. It couldn't be helped. They assembled their forces in order to fight a war today. They formulated a plan, determined that they could wipe out the Evila this time, and decided to go to war.

Despite that, their enemies left the scene before the fighting even began. They didn't even think that such a thing could have happened.

"If it's like this, one might think they were being sincere with their peace treaty." (Leglos)

Lenion replies to Leglos's muttering.

"Even though I thought it must've been a trap or something. Are they really seeking peace? There's no way!" (Lenion)

It wasn't just to the Humas. The Evila had also sent a peace treaty to the Gabranth. Of course it was not taken seriously until now, but with what happened today they were able to determine some of the intention behind the treaty.

"You shiiiiits! Fiiiiight! You Evila traaaaash!" (Leowald)

Everyone watched Leowald scream with resentment, as if he had lost himself.

"Anyhow, we need to talk about what we will do from now on. We have to stop Father, Lenion." (Leglos)

"Tsk, what a pain in the ass." (Lenion)

The two went to stop their father who was taking out his anger on the ground and nearby rocks. After watching those two, Yuhito looks towards Iveam and Aquinas, who disappear into the sky, with a smile on his face.

(Nyohohohoho! To think it would end like this. It seems like I need to hurry in completing 'that'. Nyohohohoho!) (Yuhito)

## Chapter 42: Another Conference in the Demon Country

Marione: "What exactly are you trying to do?!"

Slamming the desk in front of him, Marione, the < <Number 2> > of the < <Cruel Brigade> >, revealed his foul mood.

As the [Gedult Bridge] was destroyed by Eveam and Aquinas, a Demon Conference was suddenly initiated in order to ascertain the meaning behind such actions. Being the Demon Lord, Eveam recognized the need to explain their motive and so immediately permitted the meeting.

Marione: "Your majesty...you will give us a satisfactory explanation, yes?"

Seeing Marione's face turn scarlet with rage, the brigade's < <Number 5> > Shublars spoke as she gave a bewitching smile.

Shublars: "Chotto chotto~, don't get too heated, alright? I'm sure that her majesty will definitely explain it to us."

Upon hearing those words, Marione redirected his scowl towards Shublars. However, he realized that if he kept talking, the conference would not be able to progress. Thus, Marione reluctantly controlled himself. Sitting down in her seat, she blasted Aquinas who was sitting next to him with a murderous glare. However, Aquinas, who had his eyes closed, did not react to it.

After confirming that silence had completely enveloped the atmosphere, Eveam began to speak.

Eveam: "Firstly, I must apologize to everyone for any misgivings. Especially to Marione, I apologize for not informing you of our actions."

The reason for their deception was obvious. Anyone could figure

out the reason. If Marione knew of their plans, he would undoubtedly object. Therefore, time would need to be spent in order to convince him of their plans. In the worst case scenario, they would not be able to execute their plan in time.

If the knowledge of an outrageous plan to destroy the bridge was spread in advance, even the soldiers would become confused. Also, should the Gabranth catch wind of their plan, they might take measures to prevent it.

It is precisely because of this that Eveam only consulted her aid, Kiria, and Aquinas about her plan.

Greyald: "But don't you think you overdid it? Your majesty's ideas were already established in the last meeting. By destroying the bridge, you managed to delay the war while preventing any harm that would befall the Evila."

Following the [Number Six] Greyald's statement, Shublars tacked on her own thoughts.

Shublars: "Speaking of which, doesn't destroying that bridge contradict her majesty's philosophy?"

Greyald: "Yeah. It's exactly as Shublars-nee-san says. That bridge was the only thing that tied our two races together. Doesn't breaking that mean your majesty has given up on the possibility of bringing the two races together?"

(TLN: I'm not sure if Greyald says this. I'm making an assumption based on context that it is him. If anyone has any concrete ideas, please feel free to correct me.)

What Eveam desired was a world where everyone would lay down their arms and come together and support each other. She didn't want to just make peace between continents, but she wanted every individual to live as equals under the same sky.

In a world where the various races loathed each other, the bridge was the last remaining symbol that acted as a connecting thread between the two countries. As long as that bridge existed, there was

still hope that the countries could eventually be able to treat each other as if they were friendly neighbours.

However, Eveam had decided to sever that very thread. It was all well and good that the war could be avoided, however, to the Gabranth that had spent so much effort cultivating the stage of war, it would feel as if their pride had been trampled on. Obviously, the chance for successful reconciliation between the two races had decreased dramatically.

In fact, the Gabranth would probably never forgive the Evila from fleeing the so-called stage of combat.

Shublars: “Our preparations have been wasted’...this is probably what those Gabranth are thinking. Haa~”

Shublars’ callous words pierced Eveam’s heart. It was without question that Eveam did not choose this method willingly. However, in order to prevent the outbreak of war, she couldn’t think of any other way.

Marione: “Even we Evila had made preparations, you know! And yet, all that work was wasted by her majesty in one fell swoop!”

Marione once again unleashed his pent up complaints.

Eveam: “...I have no words to refute your distress. However, all I want is to protect the Evila!”

Marione: “Protect them!? No matter what kind of power those Gabranth have, us Evila will undoubtedly be victorious!”

Eveam: “That’s not what I mean.”

Marione: “...ha-?”

Eveam: “If we did go to war, we may indeed come out as the victors just as Marione says. We Evila have always prided ourselves with our peerless strength.”

Marione: “Then why!?”

Eveam: “Even with our strength...a lot of blood will still be shed, will it not?”

Marione: “Mu...what naïve things are you spouting! We’re talking about a war, you know! It’s an obvious thing that blood will spill!”

Eveam: “That’s what I don’t want!”

Eveam harshly raised her voice in denial. It was at that precise moment that the scene fell silent.

Eveam: “Not only will there be wounded, piles of corpses will come from both sides. We won’t be able to come out of this battle unscathed!”

Marione: “Y-yes, while that certainly is the case, all that matters is our victory, right?! Everyone wishes to place their lives on the line and fight to the death for the sake of this continent!”

Eveam: “Risking your lives over a war riddled with misunderstandings is completely ridiculous!”

Marione: “...”

Eveam clearly had no intention of fighting. However, the other races wished to put an end to Evila’s Demon Lord as they were under the misunderstanding that the Demon Lord wanted to eradicate them.

Eveam: “The era of the late king has already passed. We are entrusted with the task of creating our own future. Why do the other races not understand? There is no worth in ruling over a world where everything has been laid to waste. Parents; siblings; friends; lovers...why can’t we just live peacefully in this world that already has such wonderful things?”

Marione: “Such ignorance! Your majesty, you’re completely ignorant about this continent’s current state of affairs! I understand that the one who sparked the flame of this feud between the other races was none other than the late king! However, that flame has already transformed into a war. In order to protect the Evila, no, to protect our family, we have no choice but to take up arms and

fight!”

Eveam: “If we started the fire, then there must be a way we can put it out!”

Marione: “And I’m saying the only way to erase that flame is with force! This flame is not so weak as to be put out by those thoughtless words that your majesty keeps spouting! If it was, then those guy would have thought the same and come over her to start a conference! Since they didn’t, it can only mean they have turned to battle! Piling up accumulated hatred, the chain of vengeance cannot be severed so easily!

As the two were arguing, Aquinas was the only one who attempted to enter the conversation.

Aquinas: “Knock it off, both of you.”

Eveam: “Aquinas...”

Marione: “Who are you to say anything!? You’re in the same position as her majesty!”

Aquinas: “Don’t say any more than that.”

Marione: “Wha...?”

Aquinas directed a sharp glare towards Marione, overwhelming him.

Aquinas: “If you say any more, it will be regarded as an insult.”

Marione: “Ku...”

Certainly, no matter how hot-headed Marione was, determining that the actions of Eveam was foolish would certainly be regarded as slander towards royalty. Even Aquinas was of a higher position than him. He would certainly not forgive anymore of Marione's ranting.

Shublars: “He’s right, you know~~ Why don’t you go cool your head off for just a littlebit, huh Marione?”

Accepting Shublars soothing words, Marione exhaled as he decided to restrain himself.

Shublars: “Well, I think both her majesty’s sentiments and Marione’s ideals have their own merits, you know~. However, the bridge is already gone and, on top of that, the time is running out. With that said, instead of throwing about complaints about things that have already happened, wouldn’t it be more constructive to start thinking about what’s gonna happen from now or something?”

Eveam nor Marione were able to refute her reasoning.

Shublars: “Well then, your majesty? You’ve obviously thought about what to do now, right?”

Eveam: “Of course. It is inevitably that the Gabranth will come up with some other method to try and attack us again. The time we have before then is valuable.”

Shublars: “Yeah~”

Eveam: “Within this time, we have to make the Gabranth think that it is impossible to attack us.”

Indeed, if there was a way to deter the Gabranth from attacking, there will no longer be any offensives launched against the Evila. However, as she made her proposal, everyone in the room scowled at Eveam in doubt.

“Does such a method exist?”

Eveam quietly shut her eyes as she opened her mouth to speak.

Eveam: “We Evila will form an alliance with the Humas.”

At that moment, the atmosphere in the room immediately froze. Everyone in the room doubted their own ears. They couldn’t believe that in such a situation would those words be formed from her mouth.

Marione: “W-what do you think you’re saying your majesty?”



Marione once again failed to restrain himself as he spoke up.

Eveam: "I will repeat myself as many times as necessary. Evila is going to form an alliance with the Humas."

Marione: "Inconceivable! What do you think you're saying!? In the span of this meeting, you've said many incomprehensible things, but an Alliance with the Humas!? Stop playing around!"

Eveam: "I'm completely serious!"

Marione: "W...wha..."

Eveam: "In light of this war, the Humas who were bystander should have, at the very least, be willing to become the Evilas' allies."

Marione: "...what are you trying to say?"

Eveam: "The letter."

Marione: "Letter? Aa, you mean that peace treaty that was sent so many times, yet never received a reply?"

Although Marione's words contained some sarcasm, Eveam proceeded to explain without concern.

Eveam: "That's the one. Due to the events of the previous war, it credibility had considerably wavered. Probably due to the fact that they were betrayed after they believed in it."

The Humas have experienced being caught in a trap due to the letter so they naturally doubted it. Of course, this happened in the era of the previous king.

Eveam: "However, thanks to our actions, I believe that our intentions of not desiring conflict has been conveyed to them. At the very least, they will have some doubts concerning our motives."

Certainly, the Humas' king Rudolph had devoted his time on the sidelines to properly evaluate the integrity of the peace treaty.

Eveam: "In which case, depending on the circumstances, we should

be able to bring about a conference with them.”

Marione: “A conference...you say?”

Eveam: “Aa, of course once the conference has been approved, I plan on travelling to the human world.”

Marione: “Impossible! If you accept such a thing, this time it’ll be us who would be deceived!”

Eveam: “Aa, I am aware that we might be betrayed.”

Marione: “T-then-!?”

Eveam: “However, if I don’t take the risk, we won’t ever be able to regain their trust.”

Marione: “Uu...”

Seeing Eveam’s sombre eyes, Marione finally understood that Eveam was completely serious.

Eveam: “Of course, I will pay the utmost heed. I will take care to investigate the inner workings of the human world as I make my way to the conference.”

Marione: “B-but even so-!”

Yes, if they were to endeavour to hold a conference, they must in return bear some level of risk. The number of escorts she could bring would most likely be limited. It was also possible that she would be surrounded and ambushed by all of the Humas’ forces. After all, it was their territory.

Honestly, sending their lord to such a dangerous place would be insane.

Marione: “Y-you realize that you’re the Demon Lord, right?”

In an attempt to cast away their dismay, Eveam answered with a small smile.

Eveam: “Yes, I am. That’s why I won’t waver in the face of death.”

“...”

Accepting those words, all eyes silently turned to her.

Eveam: “I don’t care how dangerous the place is. I’ll drag myself through the mud. I’ll even crawl on my hands and knees. If it’s for the sake of the Evila, I’ll gladly trek through death valley.”

Marione always thought that Eveam was a naïve girl that had the intelligence of a little girl. An idiot who refused to look at the reality before her eyes, whose head was only full of ideals.

Marione: (An idiot can only advance like an idiot, I guess...)

Eveam’s eyes was devoid of any hesitation. She put into words her serious and unshakable conviction. Her way of thinking was still immature. Her declaration was unlike a King issuing an order. Being immediately chosen as the successor to the late king that died suddenly, one could only say that she was a naïve girl.

Marione: “...I’m sorry, but I cannot give you my approval. You are treating your own life too lightly.”

Eveam: “I know. However, I must go through with this. Because I believe I can change the future. If I don’t do this, I’m certain that I’ll deeply regret it.”

She would never allow a senseless war like this to happen again. She has already rested long enough.

Marione: “In the end, it all depends on the Humas, though.”

Eveam: “Aa, well, until we get the Humas’ approval, please voice anything you’re unsure of. Unless we’re clear about this plan, the Peace Treaty Conference won’t be very useful.”

Shublars: “I see~ Even if we form a truce with the Humas, they won’t necessarily intervene in a war between the Gabranth and Evila, right~?”

Eveam returned a nod towards Shublars' words.

Greyald: "But even so, I doubt the Gabranth will just remain silent without doing anything. They might do something unexpected, you know? And also, those fellows may know other ways of getting to the Demon World..."

What Greyald said also had merit. Even if they earned some time, it would be unheard of for the Gabranth to sit back and do nothing. Basically, they had a time limit.

Eveam: "It is as Greyald said. Kiria, please prepare the letter post haste. I beg of you."

Kiria: "As you wish."

Kiria, who had been silently standing besides Eveam throughout the entire meeting, respectfully lowered her head.

Eveam: "This Conference is done for today. If the situation shifts, then I will immediately convene another conference. Dismissed."

In response to her words, the [Cruel Brigade] departed from the room. The ones who remained were once again Aquinas and the <Number 4> Ornoth.

Ornoth: "There's something I want to discuss with you, Aquinas."

Ornoth wanted to hear his friend Aquinas' thoughts about something other than the destruction of the bridge.

Aquinas: "I feel bad for you. It seems like some of Marione's subordinates have been snooping around in your affairs."

Ornoth: "True. Marione-dono seems to have little faith in me."

Aquinas: "Well, if it gets to be too much of a pain for you, I'll try and do something about it."

Ornoth: "No, please spare me from that. If you feel like doing something, then please do it discreetly."

Ornoth spoke as he chuckled to himself.

Ornoth: "In any case, what do you think of her majesty's decision?"

Aquinas: "The alliance?"

Ornoth: "Yeah. Don't you think it's a bit reckless?"

Aquinas: "Even if it's reckless, it's not impossible...apparently."

Ornoth: "...I see."

For a moment, Ornoth's face showed a blank expression. It was true that if you read the meaning of the words, being reckless means that the possibility of success exists.

Ornoth: "But still, an alliance, huh...The Gabranth will surely not remain silent."

Aquinas: "Aa."

Ornoth: "And even so, didn't the Humas wanted to defeat us Evila so badly that they summoned heroes?"

Aquinas: "Aa."

Ornoth: "Aquinas, my friend, do you think this plan will succeed?"

Aquinas: "...I couldn't say. However-"

Ornoth: "However?"

Aquinas: "Our duty is to protect the Demon Lord. Even if...we have to eradicate everything else."

Ornoth: "...I genuinely hope that doesn't happen. Even I don't want to recklessly deprive people of life."

As Aquinas stood up and started to move, he suddenly paused.

Aquinas: "Our majesty makes a lot of mistakes. However, she is still our Lord. We cannot allow her to be killed."

Ornoth: "Aa."

Thus, the two men departed from the conference room.

## Chapter 43: Rarashik's Ability

"That aside, what did you really want to talk to me about?"  
(Rarashik)

Rarashik said as she tilted her head and looked at the three of them while she settled into a chair.

"You guys came here to hear about the war. However, that's not all you're here for, right?" (Rarashik)

"Aa. Actually, I have favor to ask." (Arnold)

"Favor? What is it?" (Rarashik)

"It's about this girl here..." (Arnold)

Arnold placed his hand on top of Muir's head.

"Her name is Muir, right? What's on your mind?" (Rarashik)

"I want you to be her mentor." (Arnold)

“Eh-?” (Muir)

Muir exclaimed her surprise. This was not because she was opposed to the idea, but because she never even dreamed that she would be taught by Arnold’s master.

“Nah, it looks like a pain.” (Rarashi)

Muir’s shoulders drooped the moment Rarashik rejected it.

“How could you, master!? I’m begging you! We struggled so much to get you the honey. The honey that you love. The honey to make your alcohol...”

“Well. This and that are completely unrelated. First of all, you ignored my orders and left. Then you suddenly come back with a child in tow. And now, you want me to take care of that child!? You’ve gotta be kidding me!?” (Rarashik)

Arnorld was unable to refute her argument. Everything she said was undeniably true. Nonetheless, with her ability and guidance, it was clear that Muir would grow up to be strong under her care.

“I was young and adventurous then... I mainly wanted to test my strength.” (Arnold)

“That’s what I expected you to say. You’re still a greenhorn, afterall.” (Rarashik)



“E-even if I look like this, I’ve become a bit stronger, you know! Go ahead and see for yourself!” (Arnold)

“Hou~?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik’s eyes lit up instantly. Feeling an uncomfortable atmosphere coming from her, Arnold started panicking.

“I’ll accept under one condition.” (Rarashik)

“C-condition...you say?” (Arnold)

“Aa. Spar with me. If you can touch me during the spar, even if it’s just a graze, then I’ll take up your request.”

“Just...a graze?” (Arnold)

“Aa, of course, it goes without saying that I’ll be given a handicap.” (Rarashik)

Hearing that, Arnold thought that if he tried his best, he believed that he could honestly touch her. However, his hopes were betrayed when Rarashik continued her explanation.

“However, the one who’ll be participating will only be Muir.” (Rarashik)

“...pardon?” (Muir)

“You got it? She gets 3 days. I’ll give the little miss the right to spar against me for 3 days. I don’t care about the method. If her

fingertips can even graze me, she will be declared the victor.”  
(Rarashik)

“Y-yes!” Muir

At the moment, they were currently in a room within the basement. A basement where monsters and creatures of all kinds were brought in for experimentation. It clearly had more than enough space and durability to withstand a simple spar.

(The space closely resembles that of a small gym, huh...To top it off, it's a basement. To be able to make something like this, that chibi-usagi really has a lot of free time on her hands...)

Hiiro folded his arms as he examined the room with admiration. He determined that it must have taken a very long time to build something like this.

“Uu, do you think Muir's gonna be ok...?” (Arnold)

It seemed that Arnold was the most worried about the situation. When Rarashik presented her condition, Arnold was puzzled and unsure what to do. The person who responded immediately to the challenge, however, was Muir.

It went without saying that Muir's response was “Please let me do it!” Obviously, Arnold was surprised, but Rarashik seemed to also be taken aback. Seeing the weak and frail Muir displaying such bold

determination would surprise anybody.

Rarashik, however, simply smirked at her response as she motioned everyone to follow her.

Rarashik's strength was overwhelmingly clear. Even with a handicap, it seemed unfathomable for Muir, who just became a novice fighter, to be able to even scratch an SSS ranker.

Imagining a tattered Muir breaking down and bawling her eyes out, Arnold could not help but be concerned.

In contrast to Arnold, Hihiro thought that such a turn of events was quite interesting. Even though he had just been screwed around with by Rarashik, he was now able to slowly and carefully observe her movements. Objectively speaking, this would be a great opportunity observe her ability to see just what she is truly capable of.

“Well, little miss. In regards to the handicap, I will be deprived of any means of attacking. This means that I won't be using my hands and my < <Binding> > skill will be restricted. Feel free to attack me all you want.” (Rarashik)

With this kind of a handicap, Arnold or Hihiro might have been able to do something. However, for Muir, the level gap was despairingly large. And even without taking level into consideration, the difference in their combat experience would be like the measuring the distance between the ground and the sky.

“Muir...” (Arnold)

“Well, all we can do is just see how this plays out.” (Hihiro)

As the two were watching, the game known as sparring had begun between Muir and Rarashik.

“Eei!” (Muir)

Muir honestly rushed towards Rarashik. However, as expected, she had missed. The moment Muir drew close enough to hit, Rarashik immediately vanished. Reappearing behind her without anyone noticing, she laughed.

“Ha ha ha, little miss, you’re gonna make me sweat at least a little bit, right?” (Rarashik)

Those words seemed to flip a switch within Muir. She also had the blood of the Gabranth running through her veins. She was not one who would simply accept being made fun of on the battlefield.

“I’ll definitely get you!” (Muir)

However, no matter how much Muir dived towards Rarashik, it seemed pointless. Rarashik seemed to purposely wait until Muir

drew close, waiting for the point where she would almost touch her. Immediately following, before that moment would classify as a 'touch', Rarashik would vanish and reappear in a completely different place.

This spectacle continued itself over and over. Muir rushed in countless number of time but each time Rarashik would do the same thing as if she was just playing with her. Eventually, Muir's shoulders drooped.

"Hah, hah, hah..." (Muir) (E: Panting.)

"What, you done already?" (Rarashik)

Muir continued intently, as if she was trying to grab onto a cloud. Muir was sweating profusely, her entire body being drenched in sweat. The climate of the basement may have partly contributed to her unfortunate state.

"Poor Muir..." (Arnold)

Arnold stared anxiously.

(As expected of the chibi-usagi. Even while moving around to such an extent, she's not even breaking a sweat. On the contrary, her smile has never faltered even once.)

The fact that Rarashik was enjoying herself so thoroughly that she was grinning wholeheartedly meant that she had a substantial margin for error. Being unable to even wipe that smile off of her face, it seemed that Muir's chance of winning was nonexistent.

(Hn? Actually, this is great timing. Now would be the perfect opportunity to investigate her stats...)

Thinking this, Hihiro wrote the word <<Pry>> and activated it. He didn't have a chance to try it before, however, now he was free to do so.

Thus, Hihiro opened Rarashik's <<Status>> screen. The moment it appeared, he was startled by what he saw.

Rarashik Fan'narū

Lv 123

HP: 7065/7065

MP: 696/696

EXP: 1884421

Next: 74980

ATK: 1211 ()

DEF: 1178 ()

AGL: 1119 ()

HIT (DEX?): 989 ()

INT: 800 ()

< <Binding Type> > Ice

(TL: I'll need help here to come up with viable names)

< <Binding Techniques> > Ice Fang | Assault of the Absolute Ice Beast | Roar of the Ice Beast | Absolute-Zero | Ice Prison | Final Fang |

(E: Here's my interpretation on the list of the techniques with their corresponding Japanese.

(氷の牙) – Frozen Fang

(絶氷獣撃 – ぜっひょうじゅうげき) – Assault of the Oppressive Ice Beast

(氷結転化 – ひゅうけつてんか) – Frost Conversion

(天世の凍波 – てんぜのとうは) – Divine Frost Surge

(現象の儀) – The Ritual of Phenomenon

(終の牙 – ついのきば) – Final Fang

If anyone has any better suggestions, they're welcome to say them.

Frankly, I've almost given up.)

<<Titles>> Companion of Ice | Little Girl | Binge Drinker |  
Blade of the Wild | Researcher | Demon Slayer | A Weirdo born  
from a Weirdo | The Creator of the <<Binding>> technique |  
Gabranth Fighter | One who can influence Phenomenon | A  
Determined Person |

(E: The last title can also be interpreted as an arrogant or unusual person. If anyone has any suggestions, feel free to make them. Jap: 極めた者)

Hiiro was dumbfounded. The level difference was clearly overwhelming. Lining up all of the numbers of her stats, it was easy to see that she had optimized her stats to be fairly balanced.

(Her stats exceed mine by over 100, huh...so these are the stats of an SSS ranker...it certainly is one heck of a surprise.)

He wasn't expecting her level to be this high. However, looking at those numbers, Hiiro took comfort in the fact that he was overwhelmed by her earlier.

(However...I kind of expected her to have it, the title of "Little Girl"...)

Although he was aware that Rarashik hated being called that, no matter how he looked at her, the title of "Little Girl" was the one that seemed the most fitting.



(But looking at these numbers, isn't this a bit too harsh for the chibi...)

(E: Hiiro's referring to Muir. He uses chibi when referring to her. If you don't know what chibi means, go Google it?)

Contemplating such thoughts in his mind, Hiiro continued to watch the two sparring. With this difference of ability, unless something unexpected occurred, Muir had no chance of winning.

Muir herself had started to take notice of the lack of progress. Needless to say, it was taking its toll on her spirit.

(S-she's fast...compared to Ojisan or Hiiro, she's faster...)

Muir could somehow follow her movements, however, her body was unable to react quickly enough. Even though she had suddenly leveled up substantially, she felt that she was unable to grasp to what extent her physical ability had grown.

(She'll keep avoiding me if I just rush in blindly..if I could just use the <<Binding>> skill from that time...)

After seeing the images from Hiiro's <<Projection>> she was able to see what had occurred at that time. She saw herself using that skill. She was sure that she would be able to do something if she could freely use that skill. However, after looking at the <<Projection>> of herself using the ability, she still didn't believe that she was that the one that triggered the skill. This prevented her from activating that ability.

(Ojisan told me about it before. That <<Binding>> is actually the power of belief...however, do I really have that kind of power inside of me?)

She tried to use <<Binding>> skill several times before, yet, each time was devoid of any response. In the first place, since Muir had not been told how in any great detail how to invoke the skill, she had absolutely no idea how to apply it, let alone use it.

“C’mon, hurry up and catch me. Or what, are you giving up?”  
(Rarashik)

At those words, Muir forced strength into her gaze.

“I-I won’t give up!” (Muir)

Placing strength into her legs once more, she rushed towards Rarashik.

“That’s the way! Come at me! If you don’t even reach out your hands, you’ll never be able to grasp at what you’re trying to catch!”  
(Rarashik)

“Taaaaaaa~” (Muir)

## Chapter 44: Muir's Test Complete!

Two days had past. The end of the last day left before the time limit drew closer. During this time, a chance to catch Rarashik had not yet presented itself to Muir.

Due to the fatigue caused by her constant attempts, Muir was barely able to stand. Her condition was in tatters. Throughout the two days, she had wasted a considerable amount of time due to losing consciousness several times.

As expected, without eating, drinking, or resting, continuing constant battle for three days was impossible. Therefore, breaks were provided throughout the spar (although they were fairly short). However, the benefits of having those breaks had yet to present themselves.

Even during those three days, the smile on Rarashik's face failed to disappear.

“Nn~, this is looking bad, huh.” (Rarashik)

Scratching her head, Rarashik gazed at Muir who was lying stretched out on the ground, exhausted. It would not be strange for Muir, who had been relentlessly continuing her assault for the last few day, to be devoid of energy.

“It’s good to see that you’re stubborn but, if you’re only at this level then you lack the power to become my disciple.” (Rarashik)

“Uu....” (Muir)

Muir desperately put all the strength she had into pushing herself up from the ground. Arnold closed his eyes, unable to stand looking at the spectacle any longer. Seeing his aversion, Hihiro opened his mouth.

“That’s surprising. I expected you to have told them to stop by now, but?” (Hihiro)

“As if I would stop them! That girl...to have such a desperate look on her face, there’s no parent in the world that would stop them now.” (Arnold)

“Fun.” (Hihiro)

“All I’m saying, is that I believe that Muir can win.” (Arnold)

Arnold held up both hands as if he were praying. Hihiro presumed that, considering Arnold’s personality, he would have stopped the spar. However, what Hihiro failed to realize, was that Arnold was always thinking about what was best for Muir.

As it was by her own will that Muir made this decision to struggle

against Rarashik, Arnold had to accept it. If Arnold stopped them, it would be as if he were denying Muir's will. If he were to do such a thing, he would be disqualified from being her parent.

(Well, those two can think whatever they want. Regardless, things will undeniably get harsh from here on.)

Throughout this two day period, there was barely any progress. Even if Muir's movements had gotten better, it seemed insignificant when compared to Rarashik.

Whether Muir passed or failed this trial, Hiiro didn't give a damn. This was simply because Hiiro was completely unrelated to this matter. However, seeing the tattered body of a girl who was putting out earnest effort, Hiiro thought that it was probably naturally to hold the other side in contempt.

Such a girl's opponent was emitting a conniving smile, as if the girl were dancing in the palm of their hands. Naturally, it did not give a very good feeling. Hiiro couldn't help but feel that he wanted to erase Rarashik's smirk with bewilderment.

Which is why Hiiro decided to open his mouth.

“Oi, Chibi” (Hiiro)

Everyone started at Hiiro who was the source of the sudden noise. Even Muir, who was battered and fatigued, reacted to Hiiro's voice.

“If you want to become stronger, then stop being so meticulous.”  
(Hiiro)

“.....?” (Muir)

“Remember what happened before. Even if it’s vague, just do what you felt at that time.” (Hiiro)

“A-at that time...?” (Muir)

Hiiro folded his arms as he closed his eyes. That was the sign which meant he had nothing left to say.

“Hiiro...you....” (Arnold)

Arnold eyes widened as he stared at Hiiro. It was unbelievable that that Hiiro had given someone advice. For better or for worse, Hiiro only cared about himself, and yet, he gave advice to Muir. Somehow, Arnold felt happiness spread somewhere inside of him.

“That’s right, Muir! Even if you have no faith in your own strength, place your faith in the me that believes in your strength!” (Arnold)

“O-Ojisan....” (Muir)

“Listen up! You’ll definitely get stronger! I guarantee it!” (Arnold)

Arnold’s words seemed to pierce Muir’s chest. Following this, Muir felt as if Hiiro’s words had wrapped around her entire body.

“Gee~z, they’re a noisy bunch. If you think those words will make her stronger, then...” (Rarashik)

Suddenly, Rarashik’s long rabbit ears tensed. She looked at the Muir who was staggering to her feet.

“Hiiro-san, Oji-san....thank you” (Muir)

A strong light dwelled within Muir’s once uncertain eyes.

“...fu~n, I see...” (Rarashik)

Rarashik wore a meaningful smile. Whether her eyes were filled with expectation or amusement at a weakling’s struggle was uncertain.

Muir closed her eyes and took a deep breath.

(Right now, I’m not sure if I really have strength. I don’t know if I can become stronger. However, Oji-san believes in me. Such a person has placed their faith in me!)

She clenched her hands tightly.

(I won't hesitate any more! I just need to remember what happened in that moment!)

Muir recalled the moment when she was captured by the clay-viper, when she had awakened to her power. It was fuzzy, however, at that time she herself had desperately wanted to escape. The thoughts of wanting to obtain power had definitely passed through her mind.

“That’s right! I’ll be able to somehow do something by myself!”  
(Muir)

In that instant...

\*pachi pachi pachi pachi pachi pachi pachiiiiiiii\* (E: Crackling sounds. Think static electricity discharging.)

A vaguely familiar sight had been achieved for the second time. Muir’s body shone brightly, giving birth to a tremendous amount of electrical discharge. The sparks ferociously scattered in all directions, as if they were beasts hunting for prey.

“Wha-?!” (Rarashik)

As expected, this outcome was outside of even Rarashik’s expectations. Her eyes widen as her pupil seemed to slightly convulse in bewilderment.



However, Rarashik wasn't the only target. Anything other than Muir had been determined as prey for the lightning to lash out at.

“W-whoa-!” (Arnold)

Arnold desperately dodged. A bolt of lightning scorched the ground black. It was a chilling sight. If one was directly shocked, it was possibly that they wouldn't walk away unscathed.

Following that, another bolt of lightning extended itself towards Hiiro.

“Unbelievable. I know I said not to think too much, but getting bystanders involved is a bit much, you know.” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro tried to evade to the side, another bolt had already made its way there as it flashed towards him. No, it was more like the discharge had practically surrounded him. At this rate, he would fall prey to the bolts of lightning.

Clicking his tongue, Hiiro was forced to write the word “Protect” in order to defend himself. A pale wall of magic wrapped around Hiiro's body, deflecting the incoming lightning.

“That's...-tch!?” (Rarashik)

Taking in the situation, Rarashik narrowed her eyes. However, lightning was steadily approaching her.

“This isn’t the time to be looking away.” (Rarashik)

Lightly clicking her tongue, Rarashik avoided the lightning with nimble movements. As she evaded, she contemplated.

(So it’s about this level of power that was released. I’m guessing that the little miss has lost conscious...wha-!?)

The torrent of energy was clearly in a rampant, uncontrolled state. Muir, who had produced such discharge, would seem to have been deprived of her consciousness. At least, that was what Rarashik had thought. And yet, Muir was staring directly at her.

Of course, Muir’s face contorted in pain. Yet, the light in her eyes had not faded, plainly capturing the image of Rarashik within them.

(No way! She’s still conscious!?)

Following this, Muir took off her damaged cap, revealing the appearance of her silvery white hair and splendid kemonomimi(E: Beast Ears).

(As I thought, isn't it exactly like that Hiiro or something boya...)

She remembered that Hiiro stated they were only of the same race. However, what happened in the next instance shocked Rarashik.

Suddenly, Muir's silver-grey ears started to glow with a silver light, transforming from ears that would be considered normal to a shape that resembled wings. The size of the ears had also double when compared to the original.

(That's the <<Silver Feather-Eared>>! That hair and those ears!? To think that there was a survivor of that clan!)

However, even that thought was fleeting, as while she was running and jumping, a bolt of lightning, similar to earlier, had flared up in front of her. Rarashik momentarily she stopped her legs as if she were applying a brake in order to avoid being hit. However, it was precisely this moment that Muir was aiming for.

(Now! This is the only chance I'll get! Put all my remaining strength in my legs!)

Even though Muir was still unable to freely control her power, light gathered at the base of her feet. In that moment, her ears fluttered as if they were wings.

\*Byun\* (E: \*Zoom\* Think of a car, or doppler effect.)

From her current position, as if she were a spring, she kicked at the ground.

“S-so fast!?” (Rarashik)

Seeing Muir rush towards her with tremendous momentum, Rarashik instinctively placed her right hand on Muir’s back as she jumped over her, avoiding Muir’s body blow.

However, it was highly likely that Muir would slam into a wall with such momentum.

“MUIR!!!” (Arnold)

Arnold yelled as he immediately brought himself between Muir and the wall.

\*Slaaaaaaaaaam\*

Arnold caught Muir with his own body, the sound of his body colliding with the wall ringing out. Arnold’s body served as a cushion, resulting in Muir’s body being unharmed. However...



Expressing her genuine relief, she collapsed into Arnold's chest in exhaustion.

“Muir!” (Arnold)

Arnold hastily supported her in his arms. However, after hearing her silent breathing, Arnold's countenance changed to one of relief. He gently placed his hand on her head.

“You really tried hard, Muir.” (Arnold)

Arnold affectionately caressed her head. The one who was being petted showed relaxed cheeks in a comforted expression.

Looking at the two, Rarashik intuitively displayed a wry smile.

“I don't believe it. To think that I lost the game in just three days...” (Rarashik)

Rarashik muttered as she stared at her right hand. Indeed, one of her handicaps the restriction of both hands. The fact that she use her right hand meant that it was her complete loss.

“With this, she’s now your disciple, huh Chibi-Usagi?” (Hiiro)

“Guess so. Honestly, even though I said it looked like a pain, all I wanted to do was measure her power and potential.”

“Oi, does that mean that even if you guys didn’t have this little spar, you would have made her your disciple anyway?” (Hiiro)

“Ah? More or less. Arnold’s an idiot but even so, wasn’t he being a bit too foolish? I didn’t think he’d bring along someone who lacked both the talent or the experience on a dangerous journey. Therefore, I knew that something was weird about that girl but...to think that she was a < <Ginryuu> > (Silver Dragon)”

(Ginyruu? Is that Muir’s clan? Ryuu ? Ryu as in Dragon? So basically, she’s a silver dragon? I don’t recall it being in the reference book, but...)

Even though Hiiro expressed interest since a word outside his realm of knowledge appeared, there was something else bothering him that he needed to take care of.

“Oi, Chibi-Usagi. Don’t tell anyone about my power, alright?” (Hiiro)

“Nn? Power? What’re you talking about?” (Rarashik)

“Don’t play dumb. When I used my skill, I noticed you looking my way.” (Hiiro)

“Ho~, got caught, huh.” (Rarashik)

“I don’t care. Just don’t tell anyone else.” (Hiiro)

“Well, from what I saw it looked like a unique magic. I guess you’ve got your reasons.” (Rarashik)

“...keep it quiet, alright?” (Hiiro)

“Now, what should I do~?” (Rarashik)

“Y-you fuckin’!” (Hiiro)

(But they’re full of peculiar things, this bunch. I have to keep the fact that little miss’ a [Ginryu] in check. The thing that’s really mysterious is this boya. Even though he’s a Gabranth, he can use magic? Not to mention it’s unique. Furthermore, he’s of the same race as the little miss, a [Ginryu]...)

If Rarashik were to discover the answers to her questions, riddle by riddle, Hiiro seriously considered using the word “Forget” to erase her memory. As he was contemplating this, Arnold walked towards them.

“S-Shishou, t-the test...?” (Arnold)

“Nn, Ah? Aa, she passed. Make sure to tell the little miss when she wakes up. We need to make sure we take extra care of the roots.” (Rarashik)

“Y-Yes!” (Arnold)

Arnold genuinely made a face of joy.



“Well, let’s head back for the time being. We have a lot to talk about regarding what’s gonna happen from now on.” (Rarashik)

\*pi~pi~pi~pi~pi~!\*

Just when they were about to leave, a series of ringing tones echoed.

“S-Shishou, what is this?” (Arnold)

“.....they came back? What in the?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik seemed to have understood what the signal meant. However, Rarashik scowled, seemingly unable to believe what had been conveyed to her.

“S-Shishou?” (Arnold)

“For now, we’re heading back”

In response to Rarashik’s suddenly serious expression, Hiirō and Arnold could only tilt their heads in befuddlement. However, in order to listen to her explanation, the two followed after her.

## Chapter 45: The Gabranth's Roots.

Compared to the time when they first met Rarashik, the science-like room they had returned to had one thing different about it.

“W-what’s the deal with this thing?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro, looking at the strange object that was right in front of him, asked with a furrowed brow.

(It’s white and small and looks like a rabbit...isn’t this?) (Hiiro)

“Oo, it’s been a while since I’ve seen Shishou’s < <Spirit> >.”  
(Arnold)

“< <Spirit> >? You mean this thing? ’ (Hiiro)

Hiiro involuntarily cast a suspicious gaze. No matter how you looked at it, what was in front of him looked exactly like the snow rabbit that children would make on snowy days. As it was bouncing energetically, it seemed impossible not to be surprised.

“More importantly, was that warning real?” (Rarashik)

When Rarashik asked the < <Spirit> >, it responded in affirmation as it faintly shook its head up and down.

“No way...what in the world...it couldn’t be that the irregular case would actually...?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik put a hand on her chin. Arnold acted as the representative of those in the dark as he spoke.

“A-ano, Shishou? What exactly...?” (Arnold)

“.....” (Rarashik)

“A-ano?” (Arnold)

“.....” (Rarashik)

“S-Shishou...?” (Arnold)

Not matter what Arnold said, there was no response. Rarashik just remained there, frozen in a thinking posture as if her time had been stopped.

Arnold scratched his head as he looked toward Hihiro for a response. However, Hihiro just shrugged his shoulders as he leaned against a wall. Arnold had no choice but to wait for Rarashik to break out of her trance. Therefore, Arnold placed the unconscious Miur in bed.

After waiting for a short time, the [<<Spirit>>] starting bouncing on top of Rarashik’s head. As if that attack stimulated something in her brain, Rarashik finally redirected her gaze towards the others.

“Ah, Shishou?” (Arnold)

“.....haa~” (Rarashik)

Rarashik let a about a big sigh. Not knowing why she displayed such a depressed attitude, Hihiro and his group looked at each other with their heads tilted to the side in confusion.

“Shishou? What in the world just happened?” (Arnold)

When Arnold asked a second time, it looked like they would finally get an explanation. Furthermore, the contents of the answer was startling.

“...The army is returning” (Rarashik)

“...hee~the army is, huh? I didn’t know that....wait a minute, S-S-S-S-SERIOUSLY!?” (Arnold)

Arnold had replied with great force. However, the contents of the answer was so astonishing that his brain skipped, causing his comprehension time to lag.

The King’s army should be in the middle of a war right now. Furthermore, they only started the war three days ago. It was a battle that would determine the fate of two powerful races. There

was no way that the war would end in only three days. He had passed off Rarashik's words as a joke. However, she had a serious expression on her face.

"Seriously. My <<Spirit>> thoroughly investigated it." (Rarashik)

Saying thus, Rarashik placed her hand on the head of her <<Spirit>>

"W-wait, you say investigated...huh? You mean the war, right?" (Arnold)

"Aa." (Rarashik)

"The war that just started 3 days ago?" (Arnold)

"Probably." (Rarashik)

"Yet, the King's army is returning just now?" (Arnold)

"Aa." (Rarashik)

"...even if we lost, isn't that too fast? No, even if they were victorious, it would be just as unbelievable." (Arnold)

It was just as Arnold assumed. Even if they lost, they would just gather the [Gabranth]'s elite and replenish their forces at the border. Numbers are a significant factor in war. They were not a force that could be completely subdued within 3 days.

The same thing could be said for the foe [Evila]. Behind their front lines was their home territory. Even if the [Gabranth] had obtained victory, they would wind up having to face the full force of the [Evila]. Completely invade within three days was impossible.

"??...are you sure the report isn't false?" (Arnold)

It was understandable for Arnold to think that. However, Rarashik just shook her head.

"No, I asked this child to monitor the fate of the war. I also ordered

him to sound an alarm if the king withdrew from the battlefield.”  
(Rarashik)

While explaining thus, Rarashik pointed to a red button installed in the wall. Certainly, a red button did exist there.

“Then...it’s really true?” (Arnold)

“That seems to be the case. If you want the details, this child can saw it all so if we listen then maybe we can understand what happened.” (Rarashik)

“Is the King’s army already in the country?” (Arnold)

“No, they haven’t arrived yet. However, we’re talking about that person so coming back shouldn’t really be...” (Rarashik)

As the two of them made a difficult expression as they thought about the current situation, Hiiro, who was listening silently, opened his mouth.

“Oi, more importantly, what’s a < < Spirit > >?” (Hiiro)

No matter the circumstances, he was really the same, self-paced Hiiro.

“Y-you’re unbelievable! The war just ended, you know, the war has! Instead of saying ‘more importantly’, be surprised a little, huh?” (Arnold)

Anyone would have shared Arnold’s sentiments. However, Hiiro sullenly wrinkled his forehead and looked at him with displeasure.

“I don’t give a damn about the war. Frankly, I’m more interested about the Jelly-like fellow.” (Hiiro)

(E: Punipuni is an expression that describes something soft and jelly like. Often used when referring to pudding or people with chubby cheeks. Or at least, that’s the best explanation I can come up with.)

Hiiro has met the [Pheom] before. He even directly spoke with the

Fairy Queen. It's precisely because of this that Hiiro held considerable interest in the existence known as Spirits. That is why he was interested in the small existence of the <<Spirit>>. Furthermore, he felt some sort of affinity with its shape.

"Y-you really are...." (Arnold)

Although Arnold, who was amazed Hiiro's nonchalant attitude, stared at him with a half-open eyes, Rarashik could only look at him with a blank expression. Then, as her stiff mouth began to relax...

"Nahaha! You're definitely an interesting person, boya~!"  
(Rarashik)

...she let loose a boisterous voice as she laughed.

"To think that someone would have no interest in this abnormal situation! Better yet, that person is the same as us, a Gabranth! Nahahahaha" (Rarashik)

'No, he's not a Gabranth though...' is what Arnold almost said without thinking. However, he managed to somehow stop himself.

Rarashik was laughing so hard that there were tears coming from her eyes. She rubbed her eyes lightly before she raised both hands towards the <<Spirit>> on top of her head, holding it between them.

"Alright, I'll tell you. This child is my <<Spirit>>, Yuki-chan."  
(Rarashik)

'So it's not food?' is what Hiiro thought but didn't say it out loud. In this world, it did look like snow was present. However, there was no way of telling whether their way of playing with snow was the same as Japan.

"So why's it here? In fact, can you even make a <<Spirit>> work?" (Hiiro)

"Nn~ Boya, even though you're a Gabranth, you don't know this? That reminds me, you don't seem to have a nameless bracelet...are

you really an adventurer, boya?” (Rarashik)

Hiiro was at a loss as to how he should respond. Hiiro was simply not a [Gabranth]. He only used <<Word Magic>> to disguise himself, not to equip himself with a <<Nameless Bracelet>>. From what he heard Arnold tell him, all Gabranth Adventurers wear a bracelet in order to draw its powers when in combat.

Not possessing the bracelet would mean he would be unable to use the <<Binding>> skill, severely limiting his battle potential. Arnold glanced at Hiiro, fidgeting as he also tried to come up with a response.

“Nn? No, a while back you used that strange skill, right?...boya, what in the world....” (Rarashik)

Hiiro remembered when he was seen using his <<Word Magic>>.

“Also, you’re of the same race as the little miss, right? You don’t possess a bracelet that she has, you’re able to use a strange skill. On top of that, your knowledge of the <<Spirit>> is severely limited...”

Hiiro was gradually being cornered. Seeing that, Arnold was unable to further witness the situation. However, Hiiro’s attitude did not change. It was the same, nonchalant demeanor as usual.

“Don’t return a question with a question. If you intend to pry further, you don’t mind if I go, right?” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro indifferently made his response, he narrowed his eyes as he met Rarashik’s stare. Thinking that Rarashik had been angered, Arnold shivered. However, the first to break the staring contest was Rarashik.

“Ha~, it can’t be helped. Even though my curious heart is aching, I guess I should leave the questions for later. Besides, since you seem to be insisting that I finish off my earlier explanation, I’ll stop asking you questions.” (Rarashik)

“Aa, although asking Ossan about it is fine with me.” (Hiiro)

“Aaaa~aaaa~, I really wanna know. Hey boya, want to become my experiment subject?”

“I refuse.” (Hiiro)

“Uu~, even though such an existence has sparked my curiosity~” (Rarashik)

Rarashik hugged her shoulders with both hands, wriggling about with her cheeks flushed. “What a disturbing little girl’ is what flashed through Hiiro’s mind.

“Meh, it can’t be helped. No one would agree to anything a stranger asked of them.” (Rarashik)

“Putting that aside, are you going to talk or not?” (Hiiro)

Putting on a displeased face, Rarashik spoke.

“I got it, I got it. I’ll tell you, alright? Listen up, this [ $\llcorner$  Spirit  $\lrcorner$ ] is a different existence compared to those that live naturally in this world.” (Rarashik)

“...what do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“I’m assuming that you already know that when you awaken the bracelet, you’ll form a contract with a [ $\llcorner$  Spirit  $\lrcorner$ ] which will grant the brace a name.”

“Aaah” (Hiiro)

“Arnold contracted with the  $\llcorner$  Wind Spirit  $\lrcorner$  which made his bracelet a  $\llcorner$  Wind bracelet  $\lrcorner$ , whereas the little miss formed a contract with the  $\llcorner$  Thunder Spirit  $\lrcorner$ , creating a  $\llcorner$  Thunder Bracelet  $\lrcorner$ . However, even if we say we form a contract, the  $\llcorner$  Spirit  $\lrcorner$  contracted are not those that are normally present in this world. The  $\llcorner$  Spirit  $\lrcorner$  is contracted are those that lay dormant within the contractor.” (Rarashik) (E: This was a bit tough. Basically, it’s something like a familiar that sleeps within the one who made the contract.)

“Dormant?” (Hiiro)



“Yeah. The Ganbranth were originally an existence formed by beasts that became integrated with [ < < Spirit > > s].” (Rarashik)

“Hou~” (Hiiro)

If what she said was true. The Ganbranth could be considered as < < Phoem > > that obtained a bigger frame.

“Well, a long time ago we were called < < Sacred Beasts > > . We didn’t have a humanoid form like now. As time passed, we slowly transformed to make living easier. It is ironic that we ended up with a humanoid form.” (Rarashik)

It is true that being in a human form is better than being in an animal form. In human form, one is able to freely use his or her arms and legs. With it would also be easier to create tools and objects as well.

“But at the same time the Grabranth < < Spirit > > also became weaker. I don’t know how and why but we seem to have lost the ability to use magic. However, it seemed that our physical abilities and life force was increased.” (Rarashik)

“I see, that could be the reason why you have beast-like flexibility, mobility, and vitality. You were able to manifest the strength of your < < Spirit > > .” (Hiiro)

“Yes, but it doesn’t change the fact that we are weaker than before. We have the power of the < < Spirit > > within ourselves.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik pounded her chest when she said so.

“I see, the < < nameless bracelet > > is the trigger to wake up that spirit right?” (Hiiro)

“Oh, you are pretty sharp. But if you don’t have enough strength this bracelet won’t activate though.” (Rarashik)

“So it is sort of similar to a booster then?” (Hiiro)

Truthfully, it was amazing for someone to be able to make

something like this. It is just like her father, it could be considered the discovery of the century.

“Booster huh? That is not completely wrong. It is something that draws out a person’s <<Spirit>> and then amplifies it to the limit.” (Rarashik)

“So, if we draw upon the <<Spirit>>, it means that we draw upon our own power right? Then, wouldn’t it mean that we are making a contract with ourselves?” (Hiiro)

“Well, simply put, the <<Spirit>>. is just another you. A soul that existed in the past, exists even now without and end. We call them <<Soul Spirit>>” (Rarashik)

“So you made a contract with this <<Soul Spirit>>?” (Hiiro)

“Aa, yes, Yuki you see before you is a manifestation of the <<Soul Spirit>>. However, only a few Gabranth are able to do something like this.” (Arnold)

Hiiro looked at Arnold with expectation.

“Either way, I am still unable to something something like <<Spirit Summoning>>” (Arnold)

He said with a sulking expression and dropped his shoulders. At that moment, Hiiro remembered the skill <<Spirit Summoning>> that he saw on her the status screen.

(That is the ability to summon that thing huh)

Hiiro looked at the cute rabbit Yuki who was doing things in it area of influence

(To think the roots of the Gabranth is <<Spirit>> this is very interesting)

It was a good idea to learn about this right now. If a person, pretending to be a Gabranth didn’t know something like this, it would raise the suspicion of those around that person. It was good fortune to be hear something like that right now

“U...” (Muir)

At that moment, Muir woke and Arnold hastily moved beside Mui and started talking to her.

## Konjiki no Word Master 46 – Hihiro's Decision

Arnold: "Are you alright, Muir?"

Muir: "Nn... Eh? E-Eh!?"

Muir doesn't understand why she was lying down and becomes confused. However, she suddenly gasps and remembers about how she had just been in a game with Rarashik.

Muir: "Um... I..."

Arnold: "Do you remember now?"

Muir: "Y-Yes... U-Um, the game..."

Muir looks towards Rarashik with an uneasy expression on her face. Seeing that, Arnold lightly pats her on her head.

Arnold: "It was your win"

Muir: "...Eh? R-Really?"

Muir's eyes gradually widen as Arnold's words start to sink in. Arnold nods his head again.

Arnold: "Yeah, you did really well"

Hearing those words, the realization that she had won starts welling up inside her and she began to get teary.

Muir: "Uu... Uuu... I'm so glaaad"

She must have truly felt happy. Up until now she had been nothing more than a burden, and she was afraid that she would ruin the chance Arnold gave her to be able to train under the best master.

However, she won the game and was to learn how to fight from Rarashik. She started to cry tears of joy thinking about how she

could finally be of use to Arnold and Hiiro.

Hiiro: “Hey, chibi. You might have won the game, but this is only the start”

(TL: chibi = midget; rude way to address kids or people shorter than yourself)

Arnold glares at Hiiro, as if to say he didn’t need to say that right now. Ignoring Arnold, Rarashik adds onto Hiiro’s words.

Rarashik: “Well, I lost so I’ll train the jou-chan, but if I ever feel like she doesn’t have what it takes I’m going to throw her out”

(TL: jou-chan = little girl)

Arnold: “No way!”

Arnold: “S-Shishou! Please train her until the end!”

(TL: shishou = master)

Rarashik: “Don’t say something so spoiled! I’ll certainly train her, but I don’t have the free time to waste on someone who can’t do something no matter how much I teach her!”

Arnold: “Ugh... But...”

Muir: “It’s fine, oji-san”

(TL: oji-san = uncle; male adult)

Arnold: “M-Muir?”

Muir: “It’s as Hiiro-san and Rarashik-san says. I can’t be spoiled forever”

Arnold: “...”

Muir: “I decided to become stronger. So I’ll do my best! I’ll do my best to become stronger! And then I want to be able to stand next to oji-san and Hiiro-san!”

There wasn't an ounce of hesitation in Muir's words. In her words, Arnold felt a strong determination. She was that serious.

Arnold: (...Gin. This girl is exactly like you...)

In this cute girl's face, Arnold also saw traces of an old acquaintance. Especially the eyes full of determination after one decides what to do. Those eyes were exactly the same as that person's.

Arnold: "...Shishou, please take care of her"

Arnold politely bows while saying so. Muir staggers while standing up and bows deeply as well.

Muir: "I'll be in your care!"

Looking at those two, Rarashik giggles.

Rarashik: "My training is strict. Arnold-boya over there can vouch for that. If you're still willing to train under me, then call me shishou from now on"

(TL: boya = boy)

Muir: "Y-Yes! Shishou-sama!"

Muir answers energetically. Rarashik nods as if satisfied by her response. Arnold sighs with relief, as if he had just finished an important job.

Rarashik: "By the way, Arnold, what are you going to do?"

Arnold: "Yes?"

Rarashik: "Are you going to train with this girl too?"

Arnold: "Um... Is that... No good?"

Arnold tries to take advantage of the opportunity. Arnold had also planned to become stronger by coming back. Rarashik glares at him for a bit, but sighs and shrugs.

Rarashik: “Well, one person, two people, there’s no difference. Back when I was still in active duty, my disciples said especially stupid things”

Hiiro: “Oh, is that so?”

Hiiro opens his eyes a little. Arnold responded to his question.

Arnold: “I told you, right? She is the one who created < <Binding> >. Everyone came trying to become her disciple. Rather, most of the people who stand at the top of this country are shishou’s disciples”

According to Arnold, the king and even the <Three Beast Saints> > were her disciples. Hearing that, Hiiro reaffirmed that this woman called Rarashik was an incredible individual.

Hiiro: “Rather than that, I’m surprised that a perverted old man like you was able to learn from her”

Arnold: “Don’t call me a pervert! It’s been a while but you haven’t forgotten about it, huh, you bastard!”

However, Hiiro was serious about his question. It wouldn’t be strange to wonder how Arnold, who was neither royalty nor a citizen, but just an adventurer and a cook, came to be taught by someone so amazing.

Arnold: “W-Well, I can understand why you might ask that. I was just lucky...”

Hiiro: “Lucky?”

Rarashik: “I was forced to take him in”

Arnold: “S-Shishou!”

Hearing this, Hiiro frowns and looks back and forth between the two. Muir blankly looks at them in the same way.

Rarashik: “It was a request from an old drinking buddy. Arnold-boya was brought by that person and he asked me to look after

him”

Hiiro: “Hmmm”

Arnold: “No, what do you mean ‘hmmm’? And, if it’s just by name then you know him”

Hiiro: “Huh?”

Arnold: “It was Judom-san”

Hiiro: “Judom? If I remember correctly, he’s the kingdom’s guild master, right?”

Arnold: “Yeah, that’s right”

Hiiro: “I see. You said he was an acquaintance, but it was that kind of a relationship”

Arnold: “Pretty much. I was introduced to shishou by that person, and that’s how I came to be trained by her”

Rarashik: “I didn’t want to. I was forced to do it”

Arnold cringed hearing those words. They were the truth so he couldn’t deny it and could do nothing but became depressed.

Rarashik: “But, it’s a pretty nostalgic story. When Arnold was young he looked so cute, unlike the old man face he has now”

Rarashik smiles as she recalls old memories.

Arnold: “W-Wait, shishou!”

As if embarrassed, Arnold raises his head and raises his voice.

Rarashik: “Ah, by the way, what are you going to do, boya?”

Hiiro: “Ha?”

Hiiro instinctively responded after being asked so suddenly.

Rarashik: “No, I’ll be training these two, but you... Arnold?”



Arnold: “Eh? Um...”

Arnold feels troubled and scratches his head. As for why, it is because Hiiro is not a Gabranth. This training is for Gabranth to learn the ability to use < <Binding> >. However, for a human like Hiiro, there is almost no meaning to this training.

Arnold: (I mean, Hiiro can't even use < <Binding> >... What do I do...)

Not knowing how to respond, Arnold looks towards Hiiro. Then, Hiiro answers curtly:

“I don't need it”

Hiiro: (I'm not some sports enthusiast. Like hell I'm doing training for Gabranth)

Rather than that, Hiiro wanted to do more training with his < <Word Magic> >. He determined that if he were to do such supposedly strict training, he would have no time left to train on his own.

Rarashik: “Hmm, I had an interest in boya, too”

Rarashik says so in a somewhat dejected tone.

Hiiro: (You have to be kidding me. She's seen me using < <Word Magic> >. If she gets too curious she'll happily turn me into her guinea pig)

Hiiro gets goosebumps as he thinks that. He thought that she'll probably ask him about his magic until she's satisfied and run experiments on his body. He decided that he will never become a disciple of hers.

Hiiro: “How long will the training take?”

Hiiro asked Rarashik, who turns to face Muir.

Rarashik: “Hmm... This jou-chan herself is... Well, in order to train her to the level of holding her own as an adventurer, it'll take at

least six months. Fortunately her level is already decent, so basic combat training, <<Binding>>, and practical techniques. With all of that, it'll take about that long"

Hearing that it would take six months, Hihiro had already come to a decision. He turns to face Arnold and Muir.

Hihiro: "Is that so. Then, this is goodbye"

Muir gasped and looked sad, while Arnold shrugged as if to say "I thought so".

Arnold: "I thought so. Well, it can't be helped"

Arnold has already given up, but Muir hasn't and begins to talk.

Muir: "W-Why? Even if you don't train, why don't you stay in this country?"

Hihiro: "Sorry, but I have my own goals"

Muir: "G-Goals?"

Hihiro: "Yeah, to see the world. I can't sit idly by for six months"

Muir looks downcast hearing Hihiro's words. It was only for a short time, but looking into Hihiro's eyes she understood that he wasn't the kind of person to change his mind just by listening to other people.

She understood that she couldn't do anything about it. Looking at her, Arnold has a bitter smile on his face. He knew that Hihiro was that kind of person so he wasn't surprised, but to Muir, he was someone who journeyed with them together, and she was sad to see him leave.

If you look closely they may seem like family, but they are of different races, and Hihiro definitely doesn't think of them as family. But Muir took a liking to Hihiro. If she were to honestly say so, she didn't want the person who was like an older brother to her to leave.

However, they knew that Hiiro would never change his mind once he decided something.

Arnold: (I don't think we can bait him to stay six months with food...)

Arnold thought that, noticing that Hiiro shows an abnormal tenacity when it comes to food, but decided it was impossible and shook his head.

Arnold: "...Hey, Hiiro. What are you going to do from now on?"

Hiiro: "Good question. After taking a little time to gather information I'll take a look around the continent, and after that..."

Hiiro was in the middle of talking, but noticing Rarashik was looking towards them with a curious expression on her face, he stopped.

Hiiro: "...Is none of your business"

Arnold: "...Haa, I thought so"

Arnold says so, but he had also noticed Rarashik staring at them and didn't press him further.

Arnold: (He's probably going to the Evila's continent. He's said something about it before)

If Rarashik had heard that, she'd probably ask about how he plans to get there, how is a Gabranth going to get there, and it would become troublesome. Because the two races had just been fighting a war with each other.

That being the case, Hiiro and Arnold decided to keep that to themselves. Sure enough, Rarashik frowned as if dissatisfied.

Towards the Muir who was depressed until now, Hiiro looks at her as if looking down on her.

Hiiro: "Hey, chibi"

She twitches, then slowly looks up. Their eyes meet.

Hihiro: "In six months, if I become bored I'll come back. Until then, make sure you become somewhat useful"

Hihiro didn't plan to say these words. Curiously, looking at her being depressed, Hihiro became annoyed. He didn't know whether he was annoyed towards her, or himself.

However, listening to his words, Muir smiled, and he felt as if the tense mood had relaxed a little.

## Chapter 47: Arnold's Other Objective

Hihiro, who had decided to leave the [Beast Kingdom Capital: Passion] in a week, was currently being guided through the city by Arnold. Obviously, Muir was also with them. Incidentally, Rarashiku was currently secluding herself in her lab, panting profusely as she said she was going to use the honey she got from Arnold to make her sake.

Arnold: "It looks like the citizens still don't know, huh."

Looking at the state of the people scattered around the streets, Arnold opened his mouth. The Suspension of War. Actually, it might be more befitting to say that the war had been ended. It seemed that the civilians were still unaware of what had transpired.

Of course, if they knew this, it would become quite a significant issue. Yet, commotion was absent from within the country.

After what happened, Rarashik's [Spirit] Yuki went to investigate the full details about the war. Hearing about this, Rarashik then told Arnold about the circumstances.

Arnold: "But to think that they would really demolish the bridge. What the hell is the Demon Lord thinking...?"

Muir: "B-but this way, nobody ended up getting hurt, right?"

Arnold: "Nn~, certainly it's as Muir says. However, to the Gabranth, it would be as if their Pride was uprooted and denied. I'll bet that they'd be pissed. Well, I'm also a Gabranth though..."

Hihiro: "I don't really get it, but if nobody died, then I'd consider it to be a good thing..."

Arnold: "Well, its fine to have those thoughts. But the main problem is for what purpose did the Evila do such a thing? If it was the Humas that broke the bridge then I could sorta understand. If they did so, the Evila wouldn't be able to cross into the Human Continent so easily. However, right now the Evila are fighting the

Gabranth. The Humas have got nothing to do with this.”

Unable to comprehend the Demon Lord’s motive, Muir also tilted her head to the side. Then, as if she suddenly realized something, Muir posed Arnold with a question.

Muir: "Nee, Oji-san. Speaking of which, why doesn’t the Humas destroy their bridge?"

Arnold: "Nn? What’re you talking about?"

Muir: "Hora, didn’t you just tell us? Even though they would be able to prevent the Evila’s advance, why haven’t they destroyed the bridge yet?"

It was exactly as Muir had indicated. Between every two continents lied a single bridge that would connect the two. Obviously, this meant that a bridge existed that joined the Humas continent and the Evila continent.

Being reffered to as the [Schlecken Bridge], both it’s size nor its durability could be compared to the [Gedult Bridge]. It was a structure that even the Humas were able to break if they wanted to.

Arnold: “It’s not that they didn’t want to destroy it, they were not allowed to."

Muir: ".....how come?"

Muir tilted her head to the side with a \*koku. (TL: Not sure how to translate this. Think of it like a sound effect that indicates confusion. You’ll probably encounter it in anime as wooden block sounds.)

Arnold: "The bridge always has an Evila guard posted there."

Muir: "Ah, is that so?"

Arnold: "Also, it seems that the person protecting the bridge is a troublesome fellow."

Muir: "Troublesome?"

Arnold: "Aa, I'm pretty sure their name was.....Iraora?"

Muir: "Is that person strong?"

Arnold: "Aa, they're ridiculously strong, or so they say. Once, Judom-san also affirmed that."

While overhearing the conversation as if it didn't concern him, Hihiro narrowed his eyes as he continued walking. If the SSS Ranker Judom Lankars had said so, then this Iraora's strength was probably the real deal.

To begin with, if they were entrusted with protecting such an important bridge, there is no doubt that they must be a person with substantial abilities.

Arnold: "Moreover, it seems that they used to be a member of the [Cruel Brigade]. They're probably really strong."

The Demon Lord's private bodyguards, the [Cruel Brigade], were a squad that consisted of only 6 people. It went without saying that those 6 possessed exceptional strength. Even if you gathered ordinary adventurers in hundreds, they wouldn't even be called an adversary for such veterans.

Muir: "I see, if such a person was protecting the bridge, it'd be hard to try and destroy it."

Arnold: "Well, even if the bridge was destroyed, the Evila would probably just cross the sea so I doubt it would make a difference..."

In a sea that contained horrifying monsters and treacherous whirlpools, trying to traverse such a location would undoubtedly be perilous. Even so, Arnold assumed that the Evila would cross the sea anyway.

Hihiro: "By the way, where are you planning on going from here?"

Arnold: "Ah? Obviously, I'm headed to the Guild. We got something that we can hand in for some cash, right? You know, like what we got from that damned snake."

Hearing Arnold's words, Hihiro paused as he suddenly recalled what had happened.

Arnold: "Nn? What's up, Hihiro?"

Hihiro: "....."

Arnold: "Oi, why're you looking away?"

Hihiro: "....."

Arnold: "..... you, did get the spoils, right?"

Hihiro: "....."

Arnold: "Yo~sh, yosh, yosh. Let's calm down a bit. At that time, thanks to the cute and angelic Muir, we were able to successfully kill the Clay Viper, right?"

Hihiro: "....."

Being called cute, Muir became flustered. However, Hihiro remained still as he continued to avert his gaze.

Arnold: "After that, Muir and I exited the [Gree cave] first, leaving you to go and get the spoils, right?"

Hihiro: "....."

Arnold: "You took quite a long time when you were in that cave..... you, what exactly were you doing in that time?"

Hihiro was met with a gaze full of suspicion. As the blistering stare was approaching him, Hihiro reluctantly used a scissors gesture to puncture Arnold in both eyes.

Arnold: "Angyaaaaaaaa!" (TL: Scream of agony.)

Arnold began rolling around on the ground while covering his eyes. Arnold's sudden strange behavior garnered the attention of all the surrounding people.

Hihiro: "Yosh, let's go Chibi."



Arnold: "Hold it, kora Oooooooooooooooooiiiiiiiiiii!"

Seeing Arnold's swift recovery, Hiiro was impressed.

Arnold: "Tenmeeeee! How bout you give us an explanation!?" (TL: An elongated 'Tenmee' which is a morphed version of 'Temee' which roughly translates to 'You Bastard'.)

As if he was a Yakuza, Arnold glared at Hiiro with bulging eyes. Hiiro considered poking Arnold's eyes again. However, Arnold was at a fair distance from Hiiro. Whether he consciously took such action due to his previous experience or not remained to be seen. Either way, Hiiro had no choice but to explain what had occurred.

(TL: In regards to the bulging eyes. This would be directly translated as 'googly eyes'. For those who can't get a good picture, think as if the eyes are wide open and the irises are small and convulsing wildly. That's what Arnold is doing.)

Arnold: "Did some weird fellow take all of the snake's spoils?"

Hiiro: "Aa."

Arnold: "Name?"

Hiiro: "..... no idea."

Arnold: "You forgot, didn't you."

Hiiro: "I just didn't have any interest in it."

Hiiro puffed his chest out, as if saying he didn't do anything bad.

Arnold: "Nn~ But is there such a fellow that's capable of doing that? In addition, Hiiro was their opponent, you know. In the first place, why the hell would they be gathering the snake's corpse?"

Hiiro: "-the hell would I know?"

Arnold: "As I thought. What do you think, Muir?"

Muir: "Etto...maybe they want to make them a grave...or

something?"

Arnold: "Oo~! As expected of Muir! What an adorable idea!"

Being hugged tightly, Muir painfully struggled slightly. Looking at the two, Hiiro spoke a single word.

Hiiro: "Lolicon."

Arnold: "At least call me Parent Baka you Boke~!" (TL: Boke is a variant of Baka which is usually used by, but not exclusive to, people who speak the Kansai Dialect.)

Arnold roared as if to say 'How are you going to compensate me if I get another title attached to me?'

Hiiro: "Well, to summarise, what happened to me was basically robbery. I had to give up on collecting the Snake's loot. Besides, we're not really in any financial trouble so you don't really care, right?"

Arnold: "...well, I guess it's fine. Actually, tell us about stuff like that sooner! I Actually, tell us the moment it happens!"

Arnold was absolutely right. (TL: The kanji for 'that street' is used here, yet the content seems to indicate that it meant 'it was as he said'. As I translate context, I have opted for this translation.)

Arnold: "In any case, let's go to the guild and redeem the rest of the loot from other monsters."

The trio carried their legs towards the guild.

The guild was devoid of any adventurers. As expected, it seemed that everyone had been deployed off to the front lines. Seeing Hiiro and company, the staff were completely taken aback. After saying that they had just returned from a journey, the staff were somehow convinced.

As they finished redeeming their spoils, they immediately left the guild.

Hiiro: "What're we doin next?"

Arnold: "There was another reason why I came to this country, you know."

Hiiro: "Aa, speaking of which, you did mention something like that. That you had plans to go somewhere..."

Arnold: "Ou, I just need to go to the [King's Tree] for a little bit."

Hiiro: "[King's Tree]? Do you know somebody from the noble family?"

[King's Tree] refers to a large tree that houses royalty. Because this country has been built using trees as a base to support life, there are no such houses constructed out of stone like those in the Humas Continent. All of them are built out of trees.

As such, the [King's Tree] held the same meaning as a King's castle. It was a place where the Gabranth Royalty resided.

Arnold: "No, no. I'm not going there to see the royal family. I have business with a guy that I know who's working there. If he found out that I came here and didn't give them a greeting, it'd turn into a pain in the ass."

Even though Arnold said it would likely be troublesome, the end of his words seemed to bleed with nostalgia. It seemed like he wasn't all that opposed to meeting them.

At the entrance of the [King's Tree], two people who looked like soldiers were standing guard. In short, they were gatekeepers.

Arnold: "Excuse me."

As Arnold called out to them, the two gatekeepers pointed their spears at him, piercing him with their sharp stares. The gatekeepers' gazes then moved on towards the other two.

Guards: "Who goes there?"

Of course, seeing as this was the King's residence, they had no

choice but to be wary. However, as they were in the middle of a war, they were considerably on edge. It was possible that they had yet to be informed about the war's conclusion.

Arnold: "I'm nobody suspicious. I just came here because I have something I wanna ask you."

Guard: "Something to ask..... you say?"

As if they were appraising Arnold, they carefully scanned him from head to toe with their stares. After which, a guard opened his mouth.

Guard: "We are currently in a state of emergency. You are aware that we are unable to permit any sort of meetings with the people of [King's Tree]?"

Arnold: "I'm already aware about the current emergency. However, even if it's just out here, I was kinda hoping to talk to somebody."

Guard: ".....who were you hoping to interview?"

Arnold: "Well, about that..."

As he said that, heavy footsteps carrying a tremendous momentum could be heard from far away. Following which...

Dokka-! (TL: \*Thud/Bang/Slam/etc.\*)

Arnold: "Gube-!?" (TL: A sound which signifies Arnold receiving a strong impact.)

Arnold suddenly soared due to receiving an impact from someone who had abruptly appeared. He began rolling across the ground with exceptional velocity. It was as if Arnold had been struck by a speeding car. Following this, Arnold's body had collided with a tree that was up ahead, finally causing him to stop.

Muir: "O-Ojisan!?"

Muir's eyelid shot open wide as she screamed. The two soldiers were completely stunned, unmoving as if they had their time

stopped.

Hiiro: "Did he croak?"

A sinister thought came out of Hiiro's mouth. However, after sparing a glance at Arnold, his line of sight transferred to the one who had appeared. That person was grinding their teeth, revealing their frustration.

???: "I can't believe you! How long are you gonna be daze for?! You Ou-Baka Arnold!" (TL: Ou-Baka = Big Idiot.)

From the tobacco held in their lips, smoke rose towards the sky. From what could be observed, this person was a Gabranth woman who seemed to belong to the same race as Arnold. The woman was an astounding beauty and had the same unyielding eyes as Arnold. And yet, her physical stature was very muscular. Furthermore, as the woman wore a Maid Outfit, her figure evoked an extraordinary sense of incongruity.

As Arnold's consciousness faded, he held his arm as he saw the figure of the woman glaring at him. Arnold answered with a trembling voice.

Arnold: ".....Ne..... nee.....-chan ....." (TL: For those who don't know, Nee-chan = Big Sister)

As the distance between Arnold and him was substantial, Hiiro was unable to hear what he just said. However, Muir had clearly heard him, alternating her gaze between the two siblings.

Muir: "Eeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeeehhhhhh!?"

...was how Muir expressed her shock. The two soldiers also displayed similar astonishment.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 48: His Sister, the Maid.

“Let me introduce you. This is my older sister.” (Arnold)

Rubbing his right cheek after getting hit, Arnold introduces the girl.

“Like I’d be satisfied with such an apathetic introduction!” (Sistah)

With a whack on the head, the girl made some distance between her and Arnold.

“T-that hurt!” (Arnold)

“You’re supposed to be an adventurer, aren’t you!? Do you want to get whacked?” (Sister)

Arnold wanted to retort that he had already been whacked, but saying as such would merely make her do it again, so he held back his words.

“U-um...” (Soldier)

The soldier tries to butt in with apologetic expressions. Arnold’s sister raises her hand, and answers them.

“Ah, these kids are fine. This one is my fool of a brother, and the other two seem to be with him. Please let them through.” (Sister)

“Is that true!? If that’s the case, then we can’t complain. Go ahead.” (Soldier)

With a smile, the soldier ushered the group inside.

(The Old Man’s sister... She seems to have quite a bit of trust here.)

Otherwise, her words would never have let others enter the dwellings of royalty during times of war. No, even if the country were not at war, getting in shouldn’t have been this easy. Even so, by her order, the group easily entered. The trust placed in her must

have been considerable.

What they entered was a space like a small dining hall. There were three wooden tables, and a counter with a kitchen area behind it. Hiiro's group took their seats at the various chairs enclosing the tables.

"I'll get you something cold. Stay put for a second." (Sister)

She gave a bright smile, and walked towards the kitchen. Hiiro continued observing her.

She had the same blue hair as Arnold, but unlike his short-cut hair, hers was long and neat. Her facial features weren't bad, and her height was on the higher end. She had a thin and soft-looking tail swinging back and forth behind her.

She was worthy of being called a beauty. But a maid that smokes tobacco as she works is a little bit off.

But one thing that did catch Hiiro's interest was the top of her head.

(... There's nothing there.)

Just like Arnold, she had no ears. Noticing where Hiiro's attention was directed, Arnold gave a bitter smile.

"So you noticed?" (Arnold)

"Noticed what?" (Hiiro)

He had no intention of prying into it, so he played dumb. However contrary to Hiiro's expectations, Arnold continued.

"Don't misunderstand. Sister isn't a former slave or anything." (Arnold)

Hiiro's eyebrows twitched. He was sure that Arnold lost his ears upon becoming a slave to the human race. He thought that she had lost her ears under similar circumstance.

But his thoughts were immediately refuted. This made Hiiro mildly curious, but he didn't speak up.

"Hey, thanks for waiting." (Sister)

Arnold's sister came carrying a tray of glasses, the number of which was that of the number of people present.

"It's 【Pashion】 specialty Schwartz." (Sister)

(TL: It's written as specialty, pronounced phonetically as Schwartz)

It was a clear, sky-blue drink. Looking closely, many bubbles rose and formed within the liquid. Could this possibly be...

(... It's cider.)

It truly was. A so-called carbonated drink. Hiiro never thought he would be able to put such a thing into his mouth after being transported to this world, so he was delightfully shocked.

Making a pleasant gulping sound, he downed the glass in one swig. It was perfectly carbonated, and the feeling of it going down his throat was quite pleasant.

"Oh, you drink well! I have more, so drink all you want." (Sister)

She showed her teeth as she laughed happily.

"Hit me." (Hiiro)

Saying that, Hiiro held out his glass. Muir also seemed to be enjoying it as she drained her cup.

After bringing a refill for Hiiro, Arnold's sister lowered herself into a chair. She took the cigarette out, and held it in her hand as she blew out a stream of smoke.

"First is that I guess. Could you tell me about those kids, Arnold?" (Sister)

"Yeah, this ridiculously cute apple of my eye, that pulls at the



strings of all of our hearts is the lovely Muir Castrea.” (Arnold)

Arnold’s eyes sparkles as he points at Muir.

“M-my name is Muir! It’s a pleasure working with you, Uncle’s sister!” (Muir)

“Haha, you can call me Raive, Muir. Nice meeting you.” (Raive)

“Ah, yes... Raive-san.” (Muir)

She embarrassingly fidgets as she stares at the woman in front of her. Live lets out a laugh

“Ahaha, what’s this? This child’s really cute, isn’t she!? Where didja pick her up, Arnold?” (Raive)

She speaks as she heartily pats Muir’s head. Following the motion of her hand, Muir’s head shook from side to side. However, Raive didn’t seem to notice it at all.

“By the way, Arnold, what was with that introduction? When did you become a Lolicon?” (Raive)

“You’re wrong! Muir is my daughter! Though our blood isn’t connected, we’re father and child!” (Arnold)

Even Arnold’s sister conferred with Hiiro. This was enough to depress Arnold considerably, so he began speaking rapidly.

“Ah, so that’s it? I thought that, due to your lack of popularity, you kidnapped someone’s cute daughter, to reap your crop after raising her exactly to your preferences.” (Raive)

“Who the hell do you think I am!? There’s no way I would do that! Do you really think of your cute younger brother as such a person!?” (Arnold)

“Ah, that was a joke, a joke. About half of it, at least.” (Raive)

“So half of it was serious!?” (Arnold)

Arnold took severe mental damage from his sister's words. Seeing Arnold hang his shoulders, Raive let out another spout of smoke, and hit him on the back.

“Geho! Geho! What are you doing!?” (Arnold) (TL: Sound of coughing)

“Go on. Who's the other one?” (Raive)

“Hmm? Ah, that guy. He's Hihiro Okamura.” (Arnold)

“T-that was quite a simple introduction.” (Raive)

Raive's smile cramps for a moment. She considered whether the two were on bad terms, but deduced that they were not.

“But he sure is quiet. He hasn't been saying anything for a while, but is he alright?” (Raive)

Hihiro was wholeheartedly drinking his cider. His expression didn't really show it, but he truly was in heaven. He was celebrating his fated reunion with soda.

(Fumu, if they mixed fruits or berries into it...)

As his head filled with thoughts of soda applications, he unintentionally let out smile. Seeing this, Raive asks Arnold once more.

“Is that child alright? He's started smiling for some reason.” (Raive)

“Y-yeah, he sometimes does that. Just leave him be.” (Arnold)

“I-is that so? By the way, you suddenly left, and came back just as abruptly. And with companions at that. You better not be planning to go to war, right?” (Raive)

Her gentle eyes suddenly became sharp.

“N-no, you're wrong. It's true that I was curious about the war, but I didn't come back to join it. I came here to get master to train someone.” (Arnold)

“Hmmm, so did you get permission?” (Raive)

“Yeah, I’ll be under her care along with Muir.” (Arnold)

“Hm? What about that Hiirō kid?” (Raive)

“Ah, that guy’s going to go on a journey after about a week.”  
(Arnold)

“Is that so?” (Raive)

“Until then, I thought I would show him around the city. Since I was here, I also decided to drop by and see you.” (Arnold)

“So I’m just an add-on!?” (Raive)

A fist came into contact with Arnold’s skull once more.

“O-ow!” (Arnold)

“Quiet down, and endure it!” (Raive)

“... By the way, how are things going on your end?” (Arnold)

According to Raive, she had been working here as a maid for a number of years. Contrary to her appearance and personality, she worked diligently and made it up the ranks to Head Maid.

The King was quite fond of the meals she made, and happily ate them. She had heard of the war, but did not participate in it.

It’s not that she couldn’t fight, but she obstinately stood by her position as not to.

She became a maid because she wished to make people happy. She didn’t want to use her powers to harm anyone after all this time.

That’s why she felt great relief upon learning that Arnold did not come to go to war. He wasn’t the best brother, but he was still precious family. She didn’t want him to be taken away by the war.

“Did you know about it, Raive?” (Arnold)

“About what?” (Raive)

“The war is over.” (Arnold)

The cigarette dropped from her mouth onto the floor. She hastily picks it up, and puts it into an ashtray-like fixture. But her eyes remained open wide.

“W-what are you saying?” (Raive)

“I understand your reaction. But this is information from master.” (Arnold)

“..... Is this for real?” (Raive)

She was still half in doubt, but Rarashik’s information was quite reliable.

“Yeah, it seems both sides suffered no casualties. They should be returning soon.” (Arnold)

At that time, a large noise sounded out. Everyone turned their attention to its source.

“I-is that true?”

Standing there was the first princess, who was held from battle. The princess, Kuclear.

## Chapter 49: Hiroy and the girl

“Hey! Were you serious, just now!? Tell me!” (?)

Arnold was lifted up by the scruff of his neck by the person that walked into the room. He looked like he was suffocating.

“Kuu-sama! What are you doing here!?” (Raiev)

Raiev was also bewildered by the princess’ sudden visit.

“Ugh....can’t breath...” (Arnold)

Noticing Arnold’s face growing pale, Kukklia quickly loosened her grip.

“Ah, S-Sorry!” (Kukklia)

Arnold, who had just been released from her grasp, took a deep breath as he thanked the heavens for extending his life. It really seemed like he was going to suffocate a moment ago. If worst came to worst, he would have passed on to the next world. Even though she was a girl, it was clear she inherited the Gabranth’s brute strength.

“S-so, can you please tell me! Is what you said really true? That the information came from that Rarashik?” (Kukklia)

Even though Kukklia had not moved a step towards him, Arnold felt so intimidated that he unconsciously swallowed his saliva.

“Ah, eh...yes. That is...” (Arnold)

Arnold told Kukklia what Rarashik had told him.

“Why would the Demon Lord do that to the bridge...?” (Kukklia)

Kukklia’s said the exact same question that was on everyone’s minds.

“Wouldn’t it just mean that they didn’t want to fight?” (Raiev)

Raiev casually commented.

“Actually, it might be just as Nee-chan said. It’s just, it was only just recently that the [Evila] declared that they wanted to annihilate everything.” (Arnold)

This was during the era of the previous Demon Lord, although nobody was aware of it. Incidentally, Rarashik knew about this, however, she forgot to pass this info on to Arnold and his compatriots.

“But, if what you said is true, then Papa and his army should be safe, right?” (Kukklia)

“I’ll bet. I’m sure we’ll be able to see them as lively as ever.” (Raiev)

Kukklia smiled joyfully at Raiev’s words. Even though it was she herself that had suggested to go to war, having her allies coming back home without any wounded was undoubtedly something worth celebrating.

“Hn? By the way, who are you guys? Also, earlier you called Raiev ‘Nee-chan’ but...” (Kukklia)

“Aa, Kuu-sama, this blockhead is my little brother. Also, that girl’s his daughter.” (Raiev)

“Heh, I am the child of the [Beast Kingdom: Passion]’s [Beast King] Leowald. The First Princess: Kukklia King. Nice to meet you” (Kukklia)

Hearing her introduction, Arnold hastily fell to his knees. Muir, as if imitating him, followed soon after.

“Aaah, it’s fine, it’s fine. I don’t like being so formal. It’s fine to treat me normally. Actually, please do.” (Kukklia)

Under such a strong influence, Arnold and Muir timidly rose to their feet. (E: Not accurate, but I don’t have the time.)

“Hmm, as I’ve heard you are Raiev’s....and Muir is your daughter.

Nice to meet you.” (Kukklia)

Although it was nice to hear her talk in such a friendly manner, because she was a princess, Arnold and Muir could not help but feel tense and confused.

“Ahaha, you’re so cute, aren’t you! I got it! Would it be alright for me introduce you to Mimiru?” (Raiev)

Raiev was about to say something, however, with the pretense that ‘surely she would also be glad to meet them,’ Raiev could only accept.

“Hah...somehow, this turned into something really unexpected... right Hiiro....eh?” (Arnold)

Although Arnold was bewildered when the princess appeared, something more surprising had happened while he was preoccupied. This being that Hiiro, who was beside him a few moments ago, had vanished.

“....Hiiro?” (Arnold)

Meanwhile, as Hiiro was wondering whether or not there was anything interesting in the <<King Tree>>, he had begun to wander around. Of course, this was all done without the soldiers noticing.

<<<Transparency>>

This was the first time he had activated the <<Double-Word-Chain>> skill. As of this moment, Hiiro had transformed into an Invisible Man.

(Yah~ this skill is so broken that I can barely hold in my laughter.)

The soldiers that Hiiro had passed had barely noticed him, to the point that it was as if he had walked through them. Well, there were some that had seemed to sense something was wrong, which caused Hiiro to hold his breath.

(The Gabranth are probably very good at sensing people. Well,

even though they can't see me, I still have a presence.)

The Gabranth have a more developed perception than humans. They have enhanced hearing, touch, taste, feel, and sight. Even if he became invisible to the naked eye, they would still be able to sense his presence.

After walking for a little while, he had encountered, what looked like, a garden. There were a large amount of branches that created a scaffolding, with crops and flowers being grown on top.

(...what?)

Surveying the area, he noticed a girl sitting on a nearby wooden bench as she held a plank of wood.

There was a small hole on the top of the plank. The plank hanged over the top of her head with a loop of string tied to the top hole. Even if she were to let go, the plank wouldn't fall to the floor.

Looking carefully, one would be able to see some white paper on it. It resembled a child's sketchbook.

Just when Hiiro was thinking that she might be drawing a sketch of the garden, she looked directly at him in surprise.

“.....?” (Hiiro)

At that moment, Hiiro thought that the <<Transparency>> word's effect had elapsed. However, he felt that the effect was still in place. He thought for the moment that she may just be looking at something in his direction, thus, he continued staring at her.

However, to his surprise, her eyes had remained tracked onto him. Hiiro looked behind him for something that might have garnered her attention...but there was nothing there. It was clear that she was looking at him. He didn't even consider that his supposedly transparent body was detected.

Hiiro pointed at himself without thinking. When he did, the the girl nodded her head up and down in affirmation.



(...what's going on?)

There were moments where perceptive soldiers had almost noticed him and looked his way. However, there wasn't a single person who looked at him directly, not to mention acknowledging his existence.

When he wrote <Transparency> once, the duration would only last about a minute. However, as he wrote it twice, using the <Double-Word Chain> skill, its effect has already lasted over five minutes.

When he used the new word, he had deduced that the word effect would remain in place unless deactivated.

This cheat-like effect was expected for a spell that costed 300 MP. He assumed that if he used <<Two-Word Chain>> with <<Aerial Writing>>, it would cost about 400 MP.

In reality, he had written two words with the Aerial Writing skill. After checking his status screen, he confirmed that it had consumed 400 MP. That much was certain.

400 MP is probably not an amount a regular adventure would have. While this may have been unfair, this didn't really concern Hiiro.

(I'm sure that the effect should still be in place. I should still be transparent. And yet...our eyes had definitely met...right?)

There was no doubt about it. The girl was looking directly at him. She did not just sense his presence, it was clear that she was able to completely acknowledge his existence.

Hiiro quickly surveyed his surroundings, searching for any other witnesses. It appeared that right now, both Hiiro and the girl were the only ones present in the garden. He deactivated his spell, becoming visible. He looked at the girl to see if there was a reaction, but...there was none. Hiiro confirmed that she had seen him.

“..how could you tell?” (Hiiro)

She bowed her head over and started to move her hands. It appeared that she was writing something. After she finished writing, she turned the board with the white paper over, presenting him with what she wrote.

[Ghost-san] (girl)

She tilted her head to the side in an adorable fashion.

“You’re mistaken. Or what? Could it be that since her ability to sense the paranormal was so high that she was able to see me?”

The girl blinked her eyes in confusion as she began to write.

[What’s the ability to sense the paranormal?] (girl)

“Instead of writing, couldn’t you just talk? It’s a matter of efficiency.” (Hiiro)

When the girl heard those words, she grew sombre as she made an apologetic face.

[I apologize. Mimiru, is unable to speak.] (Mimiru)

Hiiro was silent. He understood the significance of those words. She, for some unknown reason, had lost her ability to speak. Judging from her attitude, the cause wasn’t something as simple as a sore throat.

“...is that so? Sorry about that. Forgive me.” (Hiiro)

[No, please don’t worry about it.] (Mimiru)

As expected of Hiiro. He wasn’t foolish nor arrogant enough to treat a child, especially one with a disability, disrespectfully. Although his response was a little rough.

“In any case, about before. I’m not a ghost. Do you understand what they are?” (Hiiro)

[Yes. It seems the only one in my family that can completely see them is me.] (Mimiru)

“I see. No matter what world you’re in, there’s always somebody who has developed a sixth-sense. (Hiiro)

[.....?] (Mimiru)

Hiiro knew that she wouldn’t understand what sixth-sense meant. It would be troublesome to explain it to her. Thus, Hiiro just set it aside.

“Don’t worry about. It seem that your perceptiveness is much higher than normal.” (Hiiro)

[Is that something good?] (Mimiru)

“Who knows? But it’s better to have it than not, right?” (Hiiro)

[Then all is well.] (Mimiru)

Seriously considering it to be a blessing, she smiled. Following which, she then took out a handkerchief and wiped her forehead. As it was hot outside, it couldn’t be helped.

The girl looked no older than 10 years old. Yet, judging from her smile, she felt a lot older. It is as if she had the smile of an adult.

She had long, reddish-brown hair that grew past her waist. A large, green ribbon was tied around near the top of her head, prominent as if it were her trademark. She didn’t look voluptuous, yet her charming, hazel eyes and fair white skin practically ensured that she would grow up to be a beautiful lady in the future.

Her pico-pico beast ears and her flickering beast tail made her look so cute that Hiiro determined that she must be kept away from Arnold. Although Arnold was not a lolicon, Hiiro didn’t want to imagine what would happen should Arnold spot a cute girl standing before him.

(For some reason, though, when I look at her face, something keeps bothering me.)

Even though that smile was a genuine smile, it felt unnatural for some reason.

[Ghost-san. What are you doing here?] (Mimiru)

“I told you that I’m not a ghost, already. Besides, I just came here by chance.” (Hiiro)

[Do you know where this is?] (Mimiru)

“The < <King Tree> >, right? It’s not like I sneaked in here. As a matter of fact, I was brought here by my companions.” (Hiiro)

However, he made sure to leave out the fact that he was just wandering around the < <King Tree> > aimlessly.

[I see. Is this your first time being here?] (Mimiru)

“Aaah” (Hiiro)

[I like this place as well. When I was five, an illness took my voice. Ever since then, I come here really often.] (Mimiru)

From what she just said, it seemed that she wasn’t born a mute. A severe illness caused her throat to be so damaged, she lost the ability to speak.

Silence enveloped the area. This was a sign that meant there was nothing left to say.

(Well, I’ve solved the puzzle that had been bothering me. I guess I should...)

As Hiiro was about to leave, the girl’s leg had suddenly slipped.

“Tsk” (Hiiro)

Hiiro instinctively rushed towards the girl. As he prevented her from falling, he caught her in his arms.

“Darn...without thinking I just...” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro began making up excuses in his mind, he lied the girl down on the bench to rest. However, as he looked at the sky, he noticed a blazingly bright sun. It was currently the season of Raer

(Summer). If someone stayed out in such conditions for a long time, it will not doubt drain their vitality.

(The fever and her fainting. Along with this amount of sweat. Without a doubt, these are the symptoms of heatstroke.)

Hihiro contemplated about how he should deal with this situation. He had considered just leaving her on the bench, however, there were strong rays of sunlight beaming down which would only worsen her condition.

(A cold towel should be applied to the skin. The subject should be moved into the shade and laid on the side of their head with arms placed underneath. The feet need to be raised with a cold object applied to the sole...wait, am I seriously thinking of treating something like this?)

In that instant, treatment methods for heat stroke had surged through his mind. However, Hihiro realized that he such thoughts were unnecessary.

He carried her to the shade, placed a finger on her forehead and proceeded to write something before pausing.

“Why do I have to do this for her?” (Hihiro)

He let out a sigh as he removed his finger. He had no obligation to help her. The symptoms were nothing major either. He judged that if she just rested, she would recover without issue.

As he let go of her, the girl opened her eyes. She trembled as she desperately began to write on her plank of paper. After she was done, she showed it to Hihiro.

[Sorry for causing you trouble. Thank you for carrying me all the way here] (Mimiru)

She displayed an apologetic smile. Looking at her face, he saw a single tear drop fall from her eyes. Hihiro narrowed his eyes. He suddenly felt irritated for some reason.

(As I thought, this brat's face is really annoying.)

He had discovered the source of his discomfort throughout the encounter. It was that face filled with a sense of inferiority and pain. That smile, it was one that flipped between pain and happiness. Hiiro scowled as he noticed that expression plastered on to the face of a child.

If its painful then just say it hurts. Even if it's just an expression of agony on your face, its fine. Yet, for her to force a smile when exposed to such a situation would only make someone feel irritated.

(This brat's such a...even the Chibi's more honest than her.)

Whether it was good times or bad times, Muir was still honest with herself. Actually, she's trying to be true to herself. She has the will to be honest with herself. However, the girl before him probably put on that smile so as to not hurt those around her. It reeked of deceit, for a child to act mature and put on such a facade, it was not something that can be easily accepted.

If it was the usual Hiiro, he would have just ignored the girl. He would just tell it to her face. That he met her by accident while wandering around, taking that chance to leave.

However, in this instance, Hiiro felt that he shouldn't leave the situation in its current state. The feeling was the same as when he had approached the [Gree-Caves]. If he didn't face this properly, something unpleasant may happen.

He felt that if he didn't address the issue with the utmost effort, he would stray away from his path. However, he was unable to grasp the reason behind his current premonitions.

He was just grasping the situation by instinct. An important crossroad of his life was lying before him. He felt that if he made a mistake now, his existence would turn into a lie.

(I don't really have any deep connection with this person, but...)

Hiiro was a human from another world. This girl was a Gabranth living in this world. There was no way that there would be any sort of connection between them. Yet, at this moment, it was as if his

soul was telling him that this was the best choice.

Thus, Hiiro approached the girl whose name he did not know.

“Oi, what I’m about to do now, you are not allowed to tell anyone, got it?” (Hiiro)

Saying this, Hiiro approached the girl as he concentrated on his fingertip and started writing.

(Ku~, as expected, the finger’s barely moving.)

It was even slower compared to when he was writing the word [Sleep]. He thought of stopping, however, he was aware that if he stopped while trying to write two words, he would receive a harsh < <Rebound> > effect. The moment he had started writing two words, he had no choice but to go through with it.

The girl looked at Hiiro with a blank expression wondering what he was doing. Hiiro just ignored it and concentrated on writing the word. Unlike the [Transparency] word, Hiiro knew that if he lost focus he would definitely fail.

(This definitely feels like something that cannot be done without a lot of concentration.)

While thinking so, Hiiro focused really hard on moving his finger

[Restore]... Hiiro was writing a word created to help another person.

[Cure] and [Revive] also came to mind, but he felt that the word [Restore] would fit the situation better. In reality, the magic Hiiro chose by instinct was very similar to an already established magic. Of course, Hiiro was unaware of this.

This instinct, in regards to < <Word Magic> >, would actually become a very crucial factor in the future.

Although this was not the first time Hiiro chose a word by instinct, somewhere inside him, he felt satisfied with his word choice.

A brilliant white light appeared, wrapping her body in a pale aura. As the light seeped into her body, her sunburnt red skin returned to its former fair white. Her sweating had also stopped.

Following this, the girl felt that she wasn't as feeble as before. She suddenly shifted her gaze towards Hiiro, who was arrogantly looking down at her.

“Now then. Try talking, Ribbon.” (Hiiro)



## Chapter 50: Mimiru and the boy

This is from Mimiru's Perspective:

A strong feeling flowed through her body when she saw it for the first time. The air at that point was different, in the starry sky there was a pale light, a light that she never noticed before appeared. It was such a strong light that she had no choice but to look at it.

In a regular space before her, she saw space being distorted by something. When she looked at that point carefully, the figure of a person appeared.

(It that..ghost-san?)

The little girl was called Mimiru, ever since she was born, she was able to see these kind of things on a daily basis. She tried telling her family about but they just made fun of it.

A ghost in this place would mean a Evila's soul. Therefore, there is no way for them to exist here, if they were ever spotted it would be killed quickly by one of the Gabranth Guards in this area.

But in the past Mimiru has never lied before. There was definitely a ghosts that read books. The Soul of a dead person wandering around the world. the ghost never talks but it would float in the air and move through walls with ease.

Even if she talked about it no one would believe her. She didn't have a strong personality so she didn't push onto others the things she saw. She just retained, in her own mind, that such obscure beings could exist in this world.

It didn't hurt to look at them, and looking at them didn't change her way of life. However, the ghost that she saw before her right now was different, it was looking directly at her.

Usually, when she saw them, they would just look at her and move on without doing anything. But it was different this time.

When she noticed, it was already looking at her. It wasn't looking at her with swaying eye but it was looking straight at her with solid eyes as if a real person was there. Because of that the ghost piqued Mimiru's interest, and she stared back.

The ghost was a boy, a boy with black hair and glasses. She thought he looked scary but seeing how he was surprised as well the mood between them became lighter.

There was more than enough to represent a solid existence, especially the flowing red robe and the fact that it was standing steadily on the ground. It was her first time seeing this type of ghost.

The ghost pointed his fingers at himself, and then at her, which asked the if she sees him or not. She nodded continuously.

At that moment, she felt an even stronger presence from the ghost. The ghost felt no different than someone who is alive. In that state, it would not be strange if other people can see or interact with him as well.

“... How did you notice?” (boy)

The pitch of the voice was not too low or too high. But yet for some reason she wanted hear more of his voice. It was her first time communicating with a ghost. She hesitated at first but then she wanted to let him know that she can't speak, and wrote on her board.

[Ghost-san?] (Mimiru)

She waited with expectation for a response but was surprised at what he said next.

“You're mistaken. Or what? Could it be that since her ability to sense the paranormal was so high that she was able to see me?”  
(boy)

She blanked out in surprise. She heard about ghost who didn't know they were dead. She assumed that the person before him an example of that. Actually, she assured herself that was the case.

[What's the ability to sense the paranormal?] (Mimiru)

"Instead of writing, couldn't you just talk? It's a matter of efficiency." (boy)

She understood what he meant, but there was a reason why she couldn't speak. She made an apologetic face and said.

[I apologize. Mimiru, is unable to speak.] (Mimiru)

She was surprised when he understood.

"...is that so? Sorry about that. Forgive me." (boy)

[No, please don't worry about it.] (Mimiru)

What he said was a bit rude, but it didn't make the mood between them worse. It was probably that person's usual attitude. Everyone has a different version of normal. Being able to see ghosts is a normal for her. Thus, his informal way of talking didn't incite any joy or wrath from her.

"In any case, about before. I'm not a ghost. Do you understand what they are?" (boy)

[Yes. It seems the only one in my family that can completely see them is me.] (Mimiru)

"I see. No matter what world you're in, there's always somebody who has developed a sixth-sense. (Hiiro)

[.....?] (Mimiru)

"Don't worry about. It seem that your perceptiveness is much higher than normal." (Hiiro)

[Is that something good?] (Mimiru)

"Who knows? But it's better to have it than not, right?" (Hiiri)

[Then all is well.] (Mimiru)

She was happy. For someone to be able to understand made her

truly happy. If her family heard what she said right now they would just laugh, he just accepted it like it was natural.

However, looking at his face he seems displeased. She thought that he couldn't accept her explanation but the authenticity in the voice used before made it seem that was not the case. Something else seem to be causing his displeasure. Feeling some sweat on her forehead, she took out a piece of cloth and wiped it off.

[Ghost-san. What are you doing here?] (Mimiru)

"I told you that I'm not a ghost, already. Besides, I just came here by chance." (Hiiro)

[Do you know where this is?] (Mimiru)

"The < <King Tree> >, right? It's not like I sneaked in here. As a matter of fact, I was brought here by my companions." (Hiiro)

For the ghost to be guided in here by his companion; Mimiru inclined her head, she definitely wanted to meet them.

[I see. Is this your first time being here?] (Mimiru)

"Aaah" (Hiiro)

[I like this place as well. When I was five, an illness took my voice. Ever since then, I come here really often.] (Mimiru)

When she was 5 years old, she caught a severe cold. She had a high fever that lasted for a long time. When it was finally cured, the illness caused such a horrible throat infection, that it took away her ability to speak.

Everyone was shocked when it happened. Mimiru liked singing. She used to come to the garden often with her family to sing to everyone.

When the soldiers listened to her sing, it was like listening to an angel. She was very happy about it. She wasn't born with a talent for war and battle like her sister Kukulia, but to be able to sing with such a beautiful voice, and make others happy was something to be

proud of.

The family and the residents also enjoyed her singing. To just see their smile again, Mimiru worked even harder to perfect her singing skills.

But all her efforts ended in vain when she lost her voice. Her mother, father, brother, and sisters were all dejected when it happened. Seeing a sudden change in the situation, she decided to be less harsh on her self, but doing so made things worse.

When she noticed that her family was sad, it was too painful for her to bear. That is why Mimiru decided to put on a smile. One day she will recover her voice and sing again. She put on a smile to assure her family that everything will be fine.

The lost of her voice was not an emotional trauma. The country's top researcher determined that even with the current science and magic, there was no way for her to recover her voice.

But they people around her weren't sure, they thought that if they had more magic power, then it can definitely be cured. That is why Mimiru desperately made a smile. It was a lowly act but, because she smiled they thought that she'll be fine and felt better.

There was no doubt in her mind that this was the best approach. As long as she smiled everyone will feel happy, even if she never got her voice back she would keep smiling and something will...

Mimiru, who is sensitive to the emotions of others, was determined to smile for another person, to ensure that they'll not feel sad.

Yet at this moment, she wonder if she is still smiling. If she looked at a mirror, she was sure she would be smiling. It wasn't a smile with little emotion, but an authentic smile.

(But why does ghost-san look like he is mad)

Looking at the displeased ghost, she started panicking. She thought of opening her mouth and smiling, but the moment she was about to do so, the space distorted before her eye.

(eh?)

In an instant, she blacked out.

When she woke she found herself lying under the shade of a tree. Ghost-san was also beside her. She felt a weak warmth on her body. That was probably from this person carrying her to this location.

She didn't think a ghost would be able to touch another person. This might be a special ghost. She expressed her thanks by quickly writing something on the board.

[Sorry for causing you trouble. Thank you for carrying me all the way here] (Mimiru)

Yet after saying so, he still had a displeased look on his face. She was so nice to him, yet there was no improvement in his displeased expression. She thought that there was no way for her to express her concern except by speaking aloud.

With that in mind, tears started welling up in her eyes. She was still smiling, but she wanted to return the gratitude by saying something.

This was the first that she was moved to this extent. She felt that she had no choice but to express her thanks by speaking.

He looked like he was making a hard decision. He gritted his teeth and said with a serious expression.

“Oi, what I'm about to do now, you are not allowed to tell anyone, got it?” (boy)

She looked at him with a blank face. At that moment, white light started to appear from his finger, and moved it toward her body. It was a bit scary at first, but the moment his finger touched her body, she felt warmth spread throughout her body.

(< <Binding> > .....magic...?)

She felt something like a gentle breeze on a warm day flow through her body. It was a pleasant feeling; so comfortable that she forgot what she was concerned about a few moments ago.

Her body tingled for a moment and then warmth slowly flowed into her body. She even felt the mood become better as well. She had no idea what happened but she felt much better.

It felt like she was reborn. Then, the boy said to the bewildered Mimiru.

““Now then. Try talking, Ribbon.” (Hiiro)

## Chapter 51: Promise Between the Two

Hihiro gets irritated looking at the girl who's face is still blank, not having reacted to his words yet. Reluctantly, he lightly flicks her forehead.

“...ya” (Mimiru)

She was surprised at suddenly getting hit and held her head with both hands, but her voice, as faint as it was, had definitely been heard.

However, the girl seems to have not realized it herself and begins to write on her paper. Seeing that, Hihiro snatches it away from her.

She gasps, then extends both hands toward Hihiro. Though she has not said anything, it seems that she is demanding he give it back.

“If you want me to give it back, then try telling me so” (Hihiro)

“...!” (Mimiru)

Mimiru glares at him with eyes that say “You know that I can't talk”. Her eyes, however, were tearing up and she was not scary in the slightest.

“Listen. I hate kids that hold back despite being kids. If it hurts, say it hurts. If it's painful, say it's painful. If there's something you want to do, say you want to do it. The brat that I know is at least more honest about herself than you are” (Hihiro)

Because she doesn't have her paper she grinds her teeth, not being able to say what she wants to say. Seeing her like that, Hihiro lets out a small sigh and puts the board aside. Then...

Punii1...

Hihiro pulls on both of her cheeks.

“I-It hurts! It hurts!”2 (Mimiru)



“See, your voice did come out” (Hiiro)

“...Eh?” (Mimiru)

Unconsciously, the girl places her hand to her throat. She couldn't hide her confusion at the thought that she had just spoken.

Time seemed to have stopped for the girl, but ignoring that, Hiiro continued to speak.

“Listen, never tell anyone that it was me who brought back your voice” (Hiiro)

Mimiru widens her eyes, wondering why Hiiro would ask that. She thought that if Hiiro really did fix her voice, then she should tell her family so that she and everyone else could thank him for what he has done. But Hiiro told her not to do that.

“Eh... Why?” (Mimiru)

“No questions. I'll be the only one asking questions from now on. You will answer them. Deal with it” (Hiiro)

Being told these things in rapid succession, Mimiru unconsciously nodded.

“Alright, first thing. I've guessed it already, but are you related to the royal family?” (Hiiro)

Noting that she was relaxing by herself in the garden of the , Hiiro thought that she was not a civilian.

Also, her way of greeting him resembled that of Lilith, the princess of Victorias that had summoned him. From the mood, he had determined that she was related to the royal family somehow.

“Y-Yes. I-I am called Mimiru King” (Mimiru)

Hearing that, Hiiro clicks his tongue.

(If I remember correctly, the name of the king is Leowald King. That means... This is turning into a bigger deal than I thought it'd

be) (Hiiro)

He had thought that she was related to the royal family, but her being the daughter of the king was outside his expectations. He didn't think that a princess would be allowed to play by herself in a place like this.

(Guess it means that public order in this country is just that good)  
(Hiiro)

After thinking that, Hiiro asks another question.

“Like I said earlier, the fact that I fixed you with my magic has to be kept a secret. In fact, don't tell anyone that you even saw me here. Just tell everyone that you don't know the reason why you've been cured. Got it?” (Hiiro)

“B-But why?” (Mimiru)

“I told you ‘no questions’, right?” (Hiiro)

Mimiru looks downcast being told not to talk about Hiiro's existence. To her, it wouldn't be enough no matter how much she thanked him. She wanted to officially invite him to the < <King's Tree> > . But then, she suddenly realized.

(Ah, that's right. This person is a ghost. Everyone else can't see him...) (Mimiru)

She thought that was the reason why Hiiro didn't want her to speak about him to anyone.

In reality, Hiiro was panicking. Following a tingling sensation from his conscience, he ended up restoring her voice. He thought that it'd be a big deal if she were a civilian, but now even more so knowing that she is a princess.

If this were to be found out, he would without a doubt have the eyes of the kingdom's royal family on him. He wanted to prevent that from happening no matter what. He wanted to avoid anything that would restrict his freedom.

“I’ll be going now. If I stick around it looks like I’ll be involved in something troublesome” (Hiiro)

“Ah, please wait” (Mimiru)

“Listen, just be happy about the fact that you have your voice back. That’s what being a kid is. Just don’t tell anyone about me” (Hiiro)

Hiiro says so as if to discard what Mimiru wanted to say. Then he begins writing the word “Transparent” again.

“Ah, your name! Please tell me your name!” (Mimiru)

Mimiru shouts, wanting to know at least that much. Hiiro answers her while his back is still towards her.

“You don’t need to know” (Hiiro)

After saying that, Hiiro begins to turn transparent. In Mimiru’s eyes, however, he still appears as plain as day. Hiiro begins to run and leaves that place.

“Ah...!” (Mimiru)

She tried to call out and stop him, but Hiiro was soon out of her field of view.

(I couldn’t say anything... Thanks or even his name... Even though I received such a great present...) (Mimiru)

It was something great that no other person has been or would be able to give her. It was something that she had once lost, and though she had longed for it, there seemed to be no hope for ever getting it back.

However, Hiiro tore apart that truth with ease and gave back Mimiru’s most important thing. She wanted to thank him. She wanted to hear his name. And above all, she wanted to talk with him more.

(TL: Hiiro, the Loli Slayer)

Noticing that the board Hiiro took was lying on the ground she picked it up, then her eyes opened wide in surprise.

“This is a loan. I’ll have you pay me back sometime. Don’t forget it”

She didn’t know when he wrote it, but answered “yes” in a small voice. She decided in her heart that because no one else can see him, she must be the one that repays him for his favor.

(Ghost-san...) (Mimiru)

As she looks towards the direction Hiiro left, a guard who is on patrol in the garden came and called out to her.

“Mimiru-sama3, is everything alright?” (Guard)

“Yes, thank you for always worrying about me” (Mimiru)

“No no, Mimiru-sama is like an angel to us. It goes without saying that we protect you” (Guard)

“Thank you very much” (Mimiru)

The guard bows deeply.

“I do not deserve such thanks. I shall come again. Mimiru-sama, please look after your health and return to your room at an appropriate time” (Guard)

“Yes, I understand” (Mimiru)

Mimiru answers the guard while smiling, and the guard also smiles and leaves.

The guard who left the garden is lost in thought while walking with a smile on his face.

(Maaan, Mimiru-sama is as cute as always. And her voice... I’d love to hear her sing again. Ah, that’s right, I can hear it anytime. Because Mimiru-sama’s voice is... Her... voice...) (Guard)

He stops walking, and the spear he was holding drops to the

ground. His eyes open wide, his mouth agape, making the most surprised look he's ever made in his life.

"It's baaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaack!?"

It is said that his shout reached everyone within the <<King's Tree>>.

"Hm? What was that shout just now?" (Arnold)

Arnold tilts his head hearing the shout that reached all the way to the dining hall. Not only Arnold, but everyone else also had the same question.

"The voice just now... From the garden?" (Kukuria)

Kukuria, while moving her ears \*piku piku\*<sup>4</sup>, looks towards the west.

"Oji-san?"<sup>5</sup> (Muir)

"Hm? What is it, Muir?" (Arnold)

"I don't see Hiiro-san anywhere..." (Muir)

"Aah... He probably went exploring inside the <<King's Tree>> or something?" (Arnold)

"As I thought?" (Muir)

"It'd be good if he doesn't cause too much trouble" (Arnold)

This was not in the city, but the residence of the royal family. If he were to wander around as disrespectful as he always was, there's a chance he could be captured by the soldiers. Arnold starts sweating just thinking about what would happen if Hiiro wandered into one of the private rooms of the royal family.

(I-If it gets found out that Hiiro is actually a Humas, and if he does something stupid, I won't get off lightly either, will I... Haa<sup>6</sup>, I beg you, please don't cause any trouble) (Arnold)

Arnold begs from the bottom of his heart.

“It bothers me, so I will head towards the garden. What will you two do? I believe Mimiru, whom I talked about before, will be there as well” (Kukuria)

Kukuria asks Arnold and Muir.

“If I remember rightly, she is your sister, correct?” (Arnold)

Arnold asks to verify.

“Yes. She is still nine years old, but her way of thinking put adults to shame. Her intelligence can’t even be compared to mine. And her songs...” (Kukuria)

“Songs?” (Arnold)

“Ah, never mind! Anyway, let’s go!” (Kukuria)

What she neglected to finish saying bothered them a little, but as she had stopped talking and began to walk, Arnold and Muir hurriedly followed behind her.

“Ah, what are you going to do, nee-chan?” (Arnold)

“I have work to do. I don’t have free time, unlike you” (Raiev)

“Oh, is that right. Sorry for having so much time on my hands!” (Arnold)

Muir smiles like she’s having fun watching their exchange. Leaving behind Arnold’s sister Raiev, the three of them head towards the garden.

## Notes

1. Sound of cheeks getting stretched out
2. Her speech is warped for obvious reasons
3. Very respectful honorific
4. Twitching sound effect

5. Uncle; male adult
6. Sigh
7. Older sister; -chan more often used by children

## Chapter 52: Arnold and Company's Suspicions

A large amount of soldiers occupied the garden's entrance.

"What the hell happened here!?"

Arnold's group, who had rushed here after they heard a sharp cry, widened their eyes in wonder. As Kukklia saw what happened, she involuntarily shouted with a loud voice.

They couldn't believe that something would occur in the garden. Thinking that Mimiru could've gotten involved caused Kukklia to become frustrated. She had to first ascertain Mimiru's safety.

Kukklia: "Mimiru? Where's Mimiru?"

Soldier: "Ah, Kukklia-sama(1)! A-actually..."

Something had suddenly occurred to Kukklia. If something unfortunate had indeed happened to Mimiru, everyone's face would have been colored by despair. However, looking at their faces, Kukklia was unable to hide her confusion.

The reason for this was because there was nobody shedding tears. On the contrary, people were displaying expressions of joy. No, if you actually looked closer, tears were being shed by several people.

Kukklia: (W-what in the world happened here?)

Kukklia was taken aback by the soldiers' strange appearance. She tilted her head, wondering whether something worth rejoicing so frantically over really occurred here. But first, she had to find the cause of this commotion.

Kukklia: "What's wrong? Why're you making such an expression?"

Soldier: "Mimiru-sama..... Mimiru-sama is.....Uu~....."

Kukklia: "Aa~ Mou~!(2) Speak clearly, damn it! What happened to



Mimiru?! Actually, where is she?!"

Mimiru: "I'm here, Kuu Onee-sama(3)."

Kukklia's body instantly froze with a jolt.

Kukklia: (Just now...what did I just hear?)

She couldn't help but doubt her own ears. However, she could never forget that voice. The voice she had just heard was certainly a voice that she was familiar with a few years ago. But it was unfathomable. Even if one thought about hearing such a voice again, it was a voice that should be impossible to hear again.

It was precisely because of this that she had obviously assumed that the voice that entered her ears was an auditory hallucination. However, before the Kukklia whose body had been rigidly stuck in time, the figure of a girl slowly emerged.

From Kukklia's perspective, the image of the girl who had eaten breakfast with them this morning was projected onto this girl.

Forgetting to blink, Kukklia just stared at the girl. Looking closer, she realized that something was off.

She was not carrying her inseparable paper and board used for communicating her thoughts. As Kukklia was wondering what in the world had occurred, the girl's lips quietly moved.

Mimiru: "Kuu Onee-sama."

There was no mistake. At present, right in front of Kukklia's eyes, her little sister Mimiru had opened her mouth. Brought forth from those lips was a charming voice that conveyed a loving atmosphere.

Kukklia: "H..... how ..... are ..... you...?"

Kukklia was unable to comprehend it. However, it was indisputable. She was able to unmistakably recognize this voice as Mimiru's

Mimiru: "We..... we can now sing songs together again."

Mimiru's lips trembled as she began to shed tears. Seeing such an emotional Mimiru, Kukklia embraced her.

Mimiru: "I-it hurts, Kuu Onee-sama."

Even though Mimiru closed her eyes in pain, she smiled as felt her sister's joy.

Kukklia: "I'm happy...I'm so glad...thank god..."(4)

Mimiru: " .....yeah..... me too....."(5)

Both Kukklia and Mimiru had huge blobs of tears falling out of their eyes. Kukklia slowly brought her face in front of Mimiru. She gently used her fingers to wipe Mimiru's tears.

Kukklia: "B-but how? How come your voice suddenly-?"

Indeed, this was the most prevalent question. Mimiru's disorder was one that not only famous doctors couldn't solve, but even [Passion]'s most prided researchers couldn't cure.

Of course, it was undeniable that she was overjoyed about her improved condition. However, as expected, she also wanted to know what had cured Mimiru. Thinking such thoughts would be obvious.

Mimiru: "Eto(6), about that....."

Needless to say, Hiiro's face instantly floated to the surface of Mimiru's head. However, she remembered her promise to him which Hiiro expressly proposed, entailing that she would not mention him at all.

Mimiru: (I really want to tell her, though...)

No matter what he may be, he was the person who had saved her. Even if he was a ghost that was unperceivable to everyone else, she had the uncontrollable urge to tell everyone.

Kukklia: "Mimiru?"

Due to Mimiru not answering her question, Kukklia anxiously frowned.

Mimiru: "Even I'm not too sure what happened."

Kukklia: "I-is that so?"

Mimiru: "Yeah. Because today's wind was quite pleasant, I decided to sun bask in the garden. While I was sunbathing, I became drowsy and nodded off. However, when I woke up, my voice somehow came back."

Kukklia: "...?"

Of course, Kukklia blanked out(7). She was skeptical as to whether such a miracle could occur. Mimiru began panicking a little as she began to string words.

Mimiru: "B-but you know, in my dream, a [Spirit]-san(8) came out."

Kukklia: "A [Spirit] did?"

Mimiru: "Y-yes. And this [Spirit]-san told me this. 'This is a loan. I'll come back and collect my due so don't go forgetting it'. Maybe the [Spirit]-san just decided to cure me on a whim..."

Mimiru judged that this degree of story telling would be fine as she arranged Hiiro's words. However, Arnold, who was overseeing Mimiru and the others, suddenly turned pale as he heard her words.

Arnold: (Oi, oi. Those words just now..... they couldn't be..... right?)

From the flow of the conversation, one was able to observe that Mimiru, who had lost their voice, was suddenly able to become able to speak again. Moreover, from Kukklia's extreme delight, it could be determined that Mimiru's symptoms were considerably severe. However, what had cured her was just simply going to sleep.

Mimiru said that she was cured by a [Spirit]. However, are [Spirits] even capable of something like that in the first place? Even if they

did heal her, Arnold felt like they wouldn't do something like ask for repayment. Furthermore, those words that they had left her...

That use of words. Arnold felt like somebody else had used similar wording. A teenager with an arrogant attitude that Arnold was very familiar with.

Arnold: (F-for now, wouldn't it be better if I checked this...?)

Just as this thought entered his mind, Arnold felt someone tug on his clothes. It was Muir.

Muir: "N-nee~(9) Ojisan(10). That conversation just now..."

It seemed that Muir was also concerned.

Arnold: "A-aa(11). But what do you think that guy's motive is for doing this? I mean, the subject was the princess. Fixing such an illness in one go...well, if it's that guy then he could probably cure it. But wouldn't doing such a thing draw attention to himself?"

Muir: "B-but those words ....."

Arnold: "I-I know what you mean...I guess even princesses tell lies. If it was a total lie though, she'd dress up the message to make it sound [Spirit]-like and sacred. To me, those words felt strangely realistic."

As it was actually Hiiro himself who had said those words, it was obviously going to sound extremely realistic. However, as they were unaware of that fact, they were still undecided as to whether it was truly Hiiro who had cured the disorder.

The main reason for this indecision is because there was no merit. For Hiiro, who had inherently loathed noise, he would avoid anything that would make him conspicuous. Especially since he was not a Gabranth, he deliberately made sure he was wary of when and where he used his magic to avoid being found out.

Well, when food was involved, everything went out the window....

However, Hiiro was one who would act upon his gains and losses,

or at least that's how Arnold and the others had evaluated him.

It is precisely because of this that curing a princess with magic in one of this country's famous monuments, the [King's Tree], was something unfathomable for Hiiro to do.

However, the princess's words indicated that her disorder was cured instantly by a mysterious phenomena. Taking this into consideration, only the teenager that they had grown to become overly familiar with came into mind.

Arnold: "While I'm still uncertain, if this was Hiiro's doing, then it looks like a hush order was put in place. Although looking at the Princess' state, its likely that she met Hiiro."

Muir: "Wouldn't it be better if we made sure?"

Arnold: "You're right. Although I doubt I can...wait, can you go ask her, Muir?"

Muir: "Me?"

After processing what Arnold had asked her, it was no wonder that Muir became surprised.

Arnold: "Aa. The person in question's a nine year old kid. Wouldn't it be easier for you to approach her?"

Muir: "U-un(12). I got it."

As she was going to be talking to a princess, Muir nervously set off to complete the mission she had been entrusted with.

Notes:

1. (1)-sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
1. (2)Aa~ Mou~: Signs of exasperation. Alternate Translation: "Argh, Geez."

1. (3)Onnee-sama: A formal way of addressing an older sister figure in Japanese.
1. (4)TL Note: Kukklia repeats 'yokatta' which has a variety of translations. However, it is used as an expression of relief and joy.
1. (5)TL Note: Mimiru repeats 'hai' which literally means 'yes'. I assumed that she was expressing her agreement and acceptance in regards to Kukklia's joy.
1. (6)Eto: Japanese equivalent of 'Um'.
1. (7)TL Note: They use 'pokan' which is an onomatopoeia expressing blanking out (I think). I couldn't be bothered to try and incorporate that into the sentence so...yeah.
1. (8)-san: A suffix used to show respect (in this case) or distance to the one addressed. Less formal than '-sama' and can be used to address someone of any position.
1. (9)Nee~: Hard to explain. Something like 'hey' or 'you know'. Go google it. You'll probably get a better explanation.
1. (10)Ojisan: A formal/distant way of addressing an elderly male figure. Alternate Translation: "Uncle".
2. (11)Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like, "Uh-huh" or "Yeah".
1. (12)Un: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, feminine, submissive people. Kind of like, "Uh-huh" or "Yeah".

## Chapter 53: Identity of the ghost and friends

[TL : Mimir = Mimiru, Kukklia = Kukulia, Raiev = Raiev ]

“In any case, this is wonderful news! Whether it was the work of a spirit or not, father and the rest of the family will be thrilled!” (Kukklia)

Kukklia and the soldiers expressed great joy at what had occurred. Because it turned into such a commotion, Arnold could only let out a sigh.

“Um, Kuu Onee-sama, who are those people that you brought with you?” (Mimir)

“Ah, right. Let me introduce them to you. You guys, come over here.” (Kukklia)

Hearing what Kukklia said Arnold and Muir moved towards Mimir.

“Mimir, this man is Raiev’s younger brother. Also, the girl is his daughter.” (Kukklia)

“I’m Arnold Ocean, a chef and an adventurer” (Arnold)

“I-I’m Muir Castrea. An a-adventurer.” (Muir)

Mimir smiled as she slightly raised her skirt before bowing to them.

“I am the Second Princess of [Gabranth Kingdom’s Captial: Passion], Mimir King. It’s a pleasure to meet you.” (Mimir)

Faced with such polite greeting, Arnold and Muir unhesitatingly lowered their heads. She was, without a doubt, a young princess. Mimir held a certain air of authority, one that should not be disrespected. Arnold was especially wary as she had a connection with his older sister, Raiev, who was the person he had feared the most.

“...you look similar.” (Mimir)

As Mimir looked at Arnold's face, Arnold could only let out a dumbfounded “Eh?”

“You're Raiev's little brother, right? You have the same eyes” (Mimir)

As Mimir giggle right after looking at him, Arnold couldn't help but became embarrassed.

“That's right. Now that Mimir's illness is cured, I need to tell mother. You guys wait here and play with Mimir.” (Kukklia)

Kukklia left the area in a flash, her smile never leaving her face. She was truly overjoyed. The guards also returned to their posts as Mimir walked back to the garden.

“If it is alright with you two, shall we talk in the shade?” (Mimir)

Hearing this request, Arnold placed a hand on Muir as he pushed her body forward. Arnold could tell that Muir was a bit tense via eye contact as she felt that she needed to bow to Mimir or something.

Arnold wanted Muir and Mimir to be able to talk alone with just the two of them. Thus, he decided to stay there and watch over them.

“Ah, Arnold-sama?” (Mimir)

“Ah, w-well, I am a bit tired so I'll just stand over here.” (Arnold)

“...haaah” (Muir)

Unsure of what she should say, Muir remained silent. Normally, if someone was tired, then they would want to sit down and rest on a bench. However, as was overly nervous, he made a flustered response.

Muir blanked out for a moment before putting on a smile.



“Please come this way.” (Mimir)

“Y-yes!” (Muir)

Muir rigidly approached, causing Mimir to laugh.

“Fufu, please don’t be so tense. Even if I’m a princess, I wish to talk to you as myself right now. If it alright with you, may we be friends?” (Mimir)

Mimir offered her hand and looked at Muir. Muir pointed to herself and waited for a response. Mimir nodded.

“I-I’d like that as well! I-it’d be an honour!” (Muir)

“Fufu. In which case, Muir-sama-” (Mimir)

“P-please wait a minute!” (Muir)

“Eh?” (Mimir)

“W-well, you don’t need to put ‘-sama’ on the end.” (Muir)

“The how shall I address you?” (Mimir)

“T-There is no need to use honorifics!” (Muir)

“Fufu, is that so? Then please call me by my name, Mimir, as well. Make sure to leave out the ‘-sama’” (Mimir)

“E-eeeeeeeeeeh?!” (Muir)

As Muir was presented with huge hurdle, she couldn’t help but voice her surprise in a loud voice.

“If you do not wish to do so, then I shall keep addressing you as Muir-sama.” (Mimir)

“Eh...a...Uu~” (Muir)

Muir was speechless as thoughts whirled around inside her head. Seeing her flustered over such a small thing made Mimir laugh out loud.

“Fufu, you are an interesting person. Please just call me by my name.” (Mimir)

“E-eh...well...that....lets try...Mi-Mimiru...chan” (Muir)

“Okay, Muir-chan” (Mimir)

Muir felt a burden lifting from her heart when the Princess had called her by name.

“Aaah, I said it! I called the princess using ‘-chan’” (Muir)

Muir was worried, uncertain, and flustered when she realized she had called the Princess ‘Mimir-chan’. She placed both hands on her head, not sure as to what she should do or expect. Seeing Muir’s befuddled expression, Mimir laughed again.

“Please don’t worry about it. In this kind of situation, we need to stop using honorifics. That way we can get along as friends.” (Mimir)

“.....” (Muir)

Her offer made Muir happy, however, as Mimir was a princess, Muir was unsure as to what she should do. Arnold, who was overlooking the situation, had subtly encouraged Muir to keep going.

It seemed that Mimir possesses a formidable personality. She carried an air of authority. As one would expected of Kukklia’s younger sister.

“...I understa...Uun, I got it, Mimir-chan” (Muir) (E: Uun is different from Un. Un = Yes. Uun = No. Subtle, but there is a difference)

Muir summoned all her courage to say those words. As Mimir returned her sentiments with a happy expression, Muir felt relieved.

Mimir held both of Muir’s hands and stated.

“Today is truly a joyous day. I was able to meet that person, and I

was even able to make some new friends.” (Mimir)

When Mimir said ‘that person’, Muir’s shoulders twitched in response.

“Um, excuse me...” (Muir)

“Nh? What’s wrong, Muir-chan?” (Mimir)

“Eh, aa, that...that person you met a while ago...were you referring to that < >?” (Muir)

Mimir’s ears slightly twitched, however, Muir didn’t notice it.

“Oh, yes. Even though it happened in a dream, they were a very elusive person. Although our exchange was a bit one-sided, I’m still very grateful for what they did.” (Mimir)

Apparently, she possessed a great deal of gratitude to ‘that person’.

“Ah, well...Ah, no...You know...that. Um, was that [Spirit] wearing a red robe?” (Muir)

Mimir froze instantly. Following this, she grasped Muir’s hand with both of hers. The atmosphere between them had completely changed.

“M-Muir-chan! Could it be that you are also aware of them?! Can you also see [Ghosts]!?” (Mimir)

Mimir abruptly turned ecstatic.

“U-um, well, haha...eh, what?” (Muir)

Because of Mimir’s misunderstanding, Muir began to panic.

“If you know that person then please tell me!” (Mimir)

She pleaded with a sombre expression.

(What? She didn’t meet him? Ah, but the robe...she remembered that robe...then they met, but they didn’t talk?) (Muir)

Muir realized that Mimir had apparently no knowledge about Hihiro.

“Red robe...Yes, there was a red robe! And they also had glasses!”  
(Mimir)

Muir recognized it immediately. Even if Mimir didn't say anymore, it was clear who the [Spirit] was.

(So it was Hiro-san...but...a [Ghost]? What in the world happened?) (Muir)

Thinking such, Muir decided that this would be good time to go over the situation in detail.

“Neh, Mimir-chan, that person...he's not actually a [Ghost], right?”  
(Muir)

“What?” (Mimir)

“Because if he was a [Ghost], he wouldn't be wearing a red robe or have glasses, right?” (Muir)

“Ah...” (Mimir)

As she realized her mistake, Mimir shut her mouth. Her cheeks glowed crimson with embarrassment. She regretted that she had failed to keep her promise.

Because she was so excited that Muir was able to see ghosts like her, she involuntarily told her everything. That part of her is still juvenile in contrast to her mature demeanor.

“Ah, that, um, that is...” (Mimir)

Even though she was flustered she tried to come up with an excuse. Having felt that such a thing had occurred previously, Muir laughed as she spoke.

“It's fine, Mimir-chan. That person is our acquaintance.” (Muir)

“S-so you can see them after all!” (Mimir)

“Well, I don’t know exactly what you’re talking about but, they’re a living person named Hiiro. He’s a respectable huma-, no, a Gabranth” (Muir)

That was a close call. Muir had almost revealed that Hiiro was a Humas.

“Eh, Living?” (Mimir)

“Yeah? Although, I’m not sure why you thought that he was a ghost though...” (Muir)

“T-that is...” (Mimir)

In all honesty, the atmosphere surround that person was different. He had, at the time of their meeting, a ghost-like presence. It was because of this that she had presumed that Hiiro was a ghost.

(Come to think of it, that person was constantly telling me that he was not a ghost...) (Mimir)

She believed that he was ghost who wasn’t aware of their own death. Making such a big mistake, she felt ashamed.

“Wh-what was I thinking?” (Mimir)

She was so ashamed that she covered her face.

“Ahahah, you’re really cute, Mimir-chan” (Muir)

“Uu~, I have to apologize to him.” (Mimir)

“Hiiro is not a person to be angry over something like that so you don’t need to worry about it.” (Muir)

In reality, Muir thought that Hiiro wouldn’t care as it was something that didn’t pique his interest.

(For those who have no interest, they wouldn’t care about such things.) (Muir)

“Ah, Muir-chan. Can you please tell me the name of that person

again?” (Mimir)

“Eh? Okay. That person’s name is Hihiro Okamura. He’s a companion that we traveled with.” (Muir)

“I-I see, so that’s why!” (Mimir)

The ghost said he was led in here by some of his companions. It seems that those companions were Arnold and Muir.

“Yeah. We arrived here together, but then Hihiro-san suddenly disappeared. I guess he came here.” (Muir)

“Yes. We met here and talked for a bit” (Mimir)

“So what happened then? Did he use his magic on you or something?” (Muir)

At that moment, Mimir’s eye opened wide and nodded in understanding.

“As I thought, that was magic...wasn’t it. In which case, doesn’t that mean that he is a Humas?” (Mimir)

“Eh....Eeeh!?” (Muir)

Muir involuntarily let out a surprised voice. She turned pale upon realizing that she had just said [Magic].

“Eh, a, that..I said it wrong. It’s just that he’s a person that refers to the < > ability as [Magic].” (Muir)

It was a poor explanation, yet, Muir had to somehow convince her. Muir knew that they would not be let off easily if the fact that they brought a human to this place was brought to light.

However, Mimir realized what Muir was thinking and just laughed.

“Fufu, please don’t worry about it. I don’t have anything against the Humas people.” (Mimir)

“Eh? Is that so?” (Muir)

“Yes, it is not the first time that I’ve seen a Humas. Although the first time I met one was a [Ghost].” (Mimir)

It wasn’t unusual for Mimiru to see ghosts without any animal ears or a tail floating around.

“Huh...[Ghost]...” (Muir)

Muir gulped upon hearing about the ghosts. However, upon seeing Mimir casually talk about them, Muir decided to remain silent about any of her grievances.

“When I first saw him, he had black hair without any sort of beast ears.” (Mimir)

“W-wait a moment.” (Muir)

Hearing something that she didn’t expect, Muir panicked as she spoke hastily.

“B-black hair!? Is that true!?” (Muir)

“Yes. Black hair, glasses and a red robe. Aren’t these that person’s key characteristics?” (Mimir)

(Eh? How is that possible? Hihiro returned to his human form?...but why?) (Muir)

This question naturally surfaced to the top of her mind, however, she was unable to come up with any sort of answer. It was unfathomable that Hihiro would returned to his human form, especially in the place where the royal family of the Gabranth resided.

However, Muir clearly remembered Hihiro’s Humas form. She began pondering as she had no clue as to what this meant.

“Is something the matter?” (Mimir)

Mimir was worried about what Muir was thinking so she asked. Muir shook her head in a hurry.

“No! Nothing is wrong!” (Muir)

“Is that so?” (Mimir)

“Un! B-by the way, was his hair really black?” (Muir)

“Yes. Having such beautiful black hair made me a little jealous.”  
(Mimir)

Seeing her light chuckle, Muir began wandering why such a thing had occurred. She had determined that the chance of Hihiro revoking his magic was close to nil.

(From the old man, I heard that there were spirits called “Phoem” who can see the truth before them. I’ve heard that there are some Gabranth who also have that ability.) (Muir)

The one that can see the truth are the “Phoem.” If someone had that power, they would be able to see through Hihiro’s disguise, and see that he is human. There are some people known to have that ability.

Muir didn’t know if Mimir had that ability. However, she felt that to prevent Hihiro from being exposed she needed to say something.

“Is it possible, Muir-chan, that you know what magic that person used?” (Mimir)

“Yeah, I know. What about Mimir-chan?” (Muir)

“Yes. Using a mysterious power, he restored my voice.” (Mimir)

“Ah, he also said those words, right?” (Muir)

“Eh?” (Mimir)

“ ‘This is a loan. You’ll have to return it someday. Don’t forget’ “  
(Muir)

“Eh...Ah, yes”

“That’s definitely something that Hihiro would say. Well, that’s what



made me think the [Ghost] was him though...”

Apparently Arnold and company’s suspicions were right on the mark. (E: Chapter 52 Title Drop?)

“Excuse me, but...where would that person be right now?” (Mimir)

“Hmmm, I’m not sure.” (Muir)

“Oh, is that so.” (Mimir)

Mimir’s shoulders dropped as she made a crestfallen face

“Maybe, because he didn’t want to cause any more trouble here, he probably went somewhere else. You were probably also told not to tell anyone about him, right?” (Muir)

“Y-yes, that’s right.” (Mimir)

“As I thought. He might have already left from the < > and returned to the city. He’s someone that really hates standing out.”

“Muir-chan, you seem to really know a lot about this person, am I right?” (Mimir)

“Well, I guess so. Even though we only travelled together for a short time, ever since we met him, there was always one surprise after another.” (Muir)

In particular, she was bewildered when faced with Hiiro’s outrageous actions and dark motives.

“...I’m envious of you” (Mimir)

“Mimir-chan?” (Muir)

“I didn’t even have a chance to express my gratitude. He just cured my voice and then left right away...” (Mimir)

“Ahaha. That sounds just like Hiiro.” (Muir)

“Will we...not be able to meet again?” (Mimir)

“Hmm...it’s not that I don’t understand your feelings...but I think trying to do so will prove difficult.” (Muir)

“I-is that so? But he is your companion, no?” (Mimir)

“Yeah, but he’s a person that enjoys his freedom. He he probably wouldn’t listen to a word we said. Haha” (Muir)

She was unable to say that Uncle had been making all of the food for him. Even if he was treated to a scrumptious meal, she had a feeling that Hihiro would probably never set foot in the < > again. Should he be found out for some reason, it would cause an uproar.

Not only that, but Hihiro was Humas. If the Gabranth Princess Mimir and the Humas Hihiro met, it would spell trouble in several different ways. (E: This is not a challenge for those who are confident that they can break the English Language.)

“Also, it seems that Hihiro will be leaving this place soon.” (Muir)

“I-is that true?!” (Mimir)

Mimir raised her voice without thinking. The atmosphere instantly became silent. Upon noticing her outburst, Mimir sat down quickly and spoke in a softer voice.

“I-is that really true?” (Mimir)

“Yeah. I asked him not to go, but it didn’t work.” (Muir)

Muir said with a dejected countenance.

Looking at Muir’s expression, Mimir sharply inhaled.

(I-is there a chance that Muir...might be attracted to that person?)

In that instance, Mimir felt something swirl around inside of her. It was as if a tiny needle was prickling her heart. It was a sensation that seemed painful, itchy, and ticklish all at the same time.

However, no matter what she felt, she knew that this situation could not be left as it is. Mimir spoke as looked at Muir and held

both of her hands.

“Muir-chan, I will not lose!” (Mimir)

“Eh...a, um, yes...?” (Muir)

Muir didn't comprehend what Mimir's declaration was for.

“I mean, it's like that, isn't it? Muir-chan adores that person?”  
(Mimir)

“Adore...Eh.Eheeeeeeeeeeeeeee!?” (Muir)

Muir's face turned bright red as she stood up in bewilderment.

“That surprised reaction. It was as I had suspected.” (Mimir)

Biting her lower lip a little, Mimir stared at Muir.

“No, Its w-w-wrrroooooong! Hihiro is like a older brother to me!  
That is why...” (Muir)

Muir waved her hands and tail desperately in denial. However, Mimir still sent her a suspicious gaze.

(T-that can't be! I don't think of Hihiro-san as.....) (Muir)

As she began seriously considering this, she felt her face grow hot. She desperately shook off those thoughts. She hadn't been conscious of it, however, when Mimir suddenly said something about Hihiro, she felt a fuzzy feeling in her chest.

She wasn't aware whether this was love or not. She was also unable to accept nor deny it. Due to her lack of experience, when Mimir challenged her, she was so confused that she was unable to come up with a reasonable response.

“I won't lose, Muir-chan!” (Mimir)

“L-like I said, you're wrong!” (Muir)

When Arnold saw the exchange between those two, he had first thought it was pleasant. However, he suddenly had queasy feeling

in his chest.

(I have no idea why, but I really want to punch that Hiiro right now....) (Arnold)

Whether this was the power of an Oya-Baka, or whether Arnold had awakened as a parent for a moment...no one could say for sure.

## Chapter 54: A New Journey

“Oh, what are you thinking, packing your things?” (Rarashik)

The one who asks Hiiro is Rarashik, with her hands in her white lab coat and her ears moving \*pyoko pyoko\*<sup>1</sup>.

“I’m going to leave on a journey immediately” (Hiiro)

“Haa? Immediately... Didn’t you say you’d be leaving in a week?” (Rarashik)

She thought it was strange that Hiiro had brazenly come back to her basement and started packing. However, Hiiro says he’s leaving. Even though he said he’d stay for a week in order to gather information.

“This is rather sudden. Did something happen?” (Rarashik)

“No, I just did something a bit bothersome” (Hiiro)

“Bothersome?” (Rarashik)

“Don’t worry. It’s not something that’ll cause you any trouble, Chibi-usagi<sup>2</sup>... Maybe...” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean ‘maybe’! Well, I don’t really care, but do Arnold and the others know?” (Rarashik)

“...No” (Hiiro)

Hearing that, Rarashik lets out a small sigh.

“Are you fine with that? Without saying anything. How about at least waiting until they come back? To be honest, it’d be helpful if you stayed a little and assisted me in my research” (Rarashik)

Deep in her eyes, a light seems to shine \*pikaaan\*<sup>3</sup>, but Hiiro shakes his head.

“It’s not like I’ll never see them again. As long as they’re alive I’m

sure we'll see each other again" (Hiiro)

"Nahaha, same could be said of you, boya4" (Rarashik)

"I won't die" (Hiiro)

Hiiro frowns and thinks.

(If I use the word "Immortality", then... No, I don't want to quit being human. I'm fine as is for now) (Hiiro)

He thought that if he used "Immortality" then he'd be able to stay alive, but there is no guarantee it'll last indefinitely after he uses it, and thinking of the possible risk should he fail activating it, he couldn't bring himself to use that word.

While he was thinking that, Rarashik talks while smiling like she's having fun.

"Well, putting your level aside, you seem like you'll live a long life, boya" (Rarashik)

"I don't know about that. But, I don't plan on dying in a year or two" (Hiiro)

After checking his bag, he picks it up.

"...Are you really leaving?" (Rarashik)

"Yeah, I'm leaving before the king and his men come back" (Hiiro)

"Boya, just what exactly did you do...?" (Rarashik)

"Ask that ossan5 when he comes back. He can probably tell you about it" (Hiiro)

In reality, when Hiiro left the <<King's Tree>> while using "Transparency", he saw Arnold and Muir. He had verified that they were heading towards the garden. He figured that if it's them, they would probably be able to figure out most of the situation.

After that, Hiiro went to town and bought anything he thought

necessary and put them into the bag he's carrying now.

“Well, if you say you're going I won't stop you, but do you have a message you want to leave behind for them?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik asks while her ears move \*pyoko pyoko\*.

“Let's see... Nothing in particular” (Hiiro)

Rarashik stumbles forward with a \*gaku\*<sup>6</sup>

“‘Nothing in particular’, are you serious!?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik looks at Hiiro, thinking he couldn't possibly be serious.

“Even if you say that... Ah, that's right” (Hiiro)

“What is it?” (Rarashik)

“The next time we meet, let me eat good food to my heart's content” (Hiiro)

“...And to the jou-chan<sup>7</sup>?” (Rarashik)

“Tell her... to become strong” (Hiiro)

“Got it” (Rarashik)

After making sure Rarashik understood, Hiiro began climbing the ladder. Rarashik just stared as he left.

“Yare yare<sup>8</sup>, my disciples sure have a strange companion” (Rarashik)

Rarashik shrugs while sighing in exasperation.

Hiiro, after leaving Rarashik's place, heads immediately to the city exit.

(I didn't say anything before I left, but, well, it's ossan and company. After they shout and scream they'll probably calm down)

(Hiiro)

At first he had decided to travel by himself, but traveling with Arnold and Muir was more novel than he had expected. He thought that he wouldn't mind traveling together again if it were with people like them.

(Well, the next time we meet will at best be half a year's time, huh)  
(Hiiro)

While walking, he looks toward the <<Tree of Origin, Aragon>>.

(Ossan and Chibi9, I wonder how they're doing) (Hiiro)

He looked forward to it a bit.

Arriving at the city exit, Hiiro looks back toward the <<King's Tree>> where Arnold and Muir are.

"Later" (Hiiro)

Though he sounded a little reluctant, Hiiro continued walking and left the country.

"What did you saaaaaay!? Hiiro leeeeeft!?" (Arnold)

Long after Hiiro had left the country, Arnold and Muir, who had just returned to Rarashik's laboratory, were dealt a great shock.

"Yup, he left lickety-split" (Rarashik)

"N-No way... That's too sudden..." (Muir)

Muir says with a shaky face, her expression turning bitter.

"T-T-That bastaaaaaard!!" (Arnold)

\*bogon!\*10

Arnold hits the wall with all of his strength. On the wall is a small



crater, and fragments fall to the floor. Rarashik sighs while looking at Arnold, who is grinding his teeth.

“Come on, Arnold, don’t break the room. Also, there’s a message from the boya” (Rarashik)

“M-Message?” (Muir)

Muir asks.

“To jou-chan, no, Muir, he said to become strong” (Rarashik)

“...Hiiro-san said... Is... Is that so...” (Muir)

Muir understood after hearing those words that the fact Hiiro had left was neither a joke nor a lie.

“Shit! That Hiiro! Why’d he leave without saying anything!” (Arnold)

No, in reality he knew the reason why. He was able to determine after hearing Mimiru’s story from Muir that Hiiro would most likely leave the country as soon as possible. The king and his men would return soon. If it was discovered that Hiiro was the one who cured the princess, it would certainly cause a lot of trouble.

Because he didn’t want to deal with that, Hiiro left as soon as he could. Arnold understood that. However, he couldn’t stand that he left without even saying a single word to them.

“Why didn’t he say anything!?” (Arnold)

Arnold was upset, thinking that Hiiro thought that they were worthless and didn’t even deserve parting words. Arnold thought, though it was only for a short period of time, that they had gotten along well on their travels.

Because Hiiro didn’t say anything before he left, Arnold thought that he mustn’t have thought the same and became upset. However, Rarashik tells Arnold.

“Arnold, the boya said this. ‘The next time we meet, let me eat

good food to my heart's content'." (Rarashik)

"H-Hihiro did...?" (Arnold)

"Yeah. It seems like the bond between you three hasn't been severed yet" (Rarashik)

"Oji-san!" (Muir)

"Y-Yeah..." (Arnold)

Seeing Muir's joyful expression, Arnold's eyes started to get hot. If this continued, an old man pushing on years would end up crying because of a shitty conceited brat. His pride would never allow that to happen.

"H-Hmph! Don't kid me! I'm not his personal cook! Seriously, that Hihiro!" (Arnold)<sup>11</sup>

Muir looks at Arnold, who's putting on a strong front. He was smiling with the corner of his mouth.

"Fufu, Oji-san isn't honest" (Muir)

"W-What on earth is this girl saying! I'm just stating the obvious!" (Arnold)

"Okaaaay okay, I know you're happy, but let's get started with the program" (Rarashik)

Rarashik claps her hands \*pan pan\* in order to get the two's attention.

"Program?" (Arnold)

"Yeah, of course. I'm talking about the training. You want to become stronger, right?" (Rarashik)

"Ou12!" (Arnold)

"Hai12!" (Muir)

In order to one-up Hihiro. It goes without saying that this became

one of their objectives.

“Then while you’re in training, work hard without a single complaint! If anyone complains I’m kicking him out!” (Rarashik)

Listening to Rarashik’s words, Arnold and Muir look at each other and nod.

“”Hai!”” (Arnold & Muir)

They both give an enthusiastic response.

“Just you wait, Hiiro. I’ll punch you first thing the next time we meet!” (Arnold)

Muir, as if hiding her determination, clenched her fists tightly.

(I want to stand next to those two! So I’ll become strong! I’ll become strong enough to be accepted by Hiiro-san! By Hiiro-san... By Hiiro-san... Uuu, it’s because Mimiru-chan said such weird thiiings) (Muir)

Muir’s face steams as she becomes flustered. Seeing her like that, Arnold becomes irritated without knowing the reason and clenches his fist.

With strong resolve, the two begin taking steps towards the future. Of course, without knowing what’s going on, Hiiro is traveling somewhere by himself.

And then the reunion between the two and Hiiro, which comes to be due to unbelievable circumstances, but... that is a story to be revealed in the future.

## Notes

1. I’m really not too sure how to romanize this. Just imagine ears twitching
2. Small/midget + rabbit. Hiiro’s nickname for Rarashik

3. You guessed it. Sound effect for light shining
4. Boy; young boy;
5. Like oji-san, except a lot more informal/rude
6. I tried finding a picture example of this but failed. You've probably seen this if you watch gag anime
7. Young girl
8. Pretty much like "sheesh" or "geez"
9. Small kid; midget; Hihiro's nickname for Muir
10. Sound of dull impact
11. Weigh anchor! The ship is taking off!
12. ^ They both mean yes. "Ou" is more manly/crass. "Hai" is plain and proper

## Chapter 55: That Bird, Again!

A perplexed Hiiro folded his arms.

Hiiro: “Uu~n(1)....covering such a broad country on foot is gonna take some time. But if I try flying, I’m gonna attract attention. What should I...”

As he was contemplating, he suddenly thought of an idea. He began focusing his magic power in his fingertip.

Hiiro: “I doubt it will work...?”

Contrary to Hiiro’s expectations, the word was easily written and invoked.

\*Pishun\*(2)

From that location, Hiiro’s figure instantly vanished.

Hiiro appeared to be in a flower field he had seen once before. Hiiro involuntarily clenched his fists as he emitted a beaming smile.

Hiiro: “Oo~(3), it succeeded! This is great!”

Hiiro had written the word [Transfer]. As he wrote, he had an image of a certain location projected in his mind. It was a field of flowers that he had previously been in. It was called the [Doggam Garden].

Indeed, this was the village where Hiiro had first visited ever since he had entered the Gabranth Continent. However, this village was a place that was so far from [Passion], it would take well over 2 weeks of walking to cover the distance between them.

Which means that what Hiiro had accomplished was instantaneous movement. If you were to put it in a more magical context, it was what is referred to as teleportation. Thinking that this would be

possible with the word [Transfer], Hiiro half-heartedly attempted to write it. Nevertheless, it seemed that Hiiro was happy to have it succeed.

Succeeding in moving between a large distance in an instant. Hiiro couldn't help but crack a large grin.

Hiiro: "Yosh. With this, I can return to the Humas Continent whenever I want. This is such a cheat-like ability."

Incidentally, the reason why Hiiro came to this village was to obtain some legs. Last time, he was able to borrow a monster called a Raidpic. Hiiro was able to travel to [Passion] while riding on its back.

As Hiiro was thinking about going to explore more of the Gabranth Continent for a little while, he returned here with the intention of borrowing a Raidpic again.

As Hiiro entered the [Doggam] village with his own feet, he began searching for a particular person. He immediately spotted the person in question. Apparently, they seemed to be discussing something with the other villagers.

Hiiro: "Oi, Kuma no Ossan!"(4)

Max: "Ha? Eh...ah, aren't you-!?"

The one Hiiro was addressing was Arnold's good friend, Max. His stout physique made him resemble a pig more than a bear, or so Hiiro thought.

Max: "It was Hiiro...right? What happened? Where's Arnold?"

Hiiro: "I'm by myself. Ossan(5) is with the Chibi(6) in [Passion] at the moment."

Max: "He? Which means you're all by yourself? What'd you come all the way here for?"

Hiiro: "I came for the Raidpic you lent me last time. I'll pay gold. Lend it to me."

Max: "Aa, that guy! That reminds me that I got a report about them coming back last night."

Hihiro thought that this was good timing. Even though a few days have passed since their parting, there was still the possibility that the Raidpic had not returned yet. Although he would have settled on other Raidpics if necessary, it was preferable to borrow one that he has already grown accustomed to.

\*Dadadadadadadadadadadada\*(7)

Some sort of shadow began approaching with tremendous velocity. This shadow maintained this momentum as it ran up to Hihiro, hugging him while using its long tongue to lick his face.

Raidpic: "Kui kui kui kuiiiiiiii!"(8)

Hihiro: "Eei!(9) Cut it out! This fucking drool-bird!"

Hihiro desperately tried to tear himself away from the Raidpic. However, as he was being hugged with a considerable amount of force, it was not easy to remove himself from its grasp.

Max: "Gahahaha! I didn't think they'd be this attached to you! Yosha(10), I'll lend it to ya! Actually, there's also that! If it's good with you, you can also buy them but it's up to you?"

Hihiro: "Buy...?"

Hihiro replied with his face sticky with drool. As soon as they heard the word 'buy', the Raidpic froze, sending Hihiro a heated stare.

\*Kirakirakirakirakirakirakira\*(11)

They made an expression that almost pleaded Hihiro to buy them. Their eyes were shining as if they were Idol-Beams(12).

Hihiro: (Well, it's important that I have some 'legs'. This guy also seems to want to be bought for some reason ...)

While carefully examining the Raidpic, Hihiro gave his answer to Max.

Hiiro: "How much?"

With this, it turned out that Hiiro was obtaining a Raidpic. The Raidpic was so happy that it began to flap its wings that couldn't fly with \*batabata\*(13), all while running around in circles.

Hiiro: "Eei, so annoying! If you don't shut up, I'm gonna fry you into yakitori(14)!"

Raidpic: "Kuii-!?"

Responding to the word 'Yakitori', the Raidpick froze as it shuddered with a \*gatagata\*. As expected, it was afraid that it would be burned. It tried to use its eyes to appeal against being burned. Thinking that this was a pain, Hiiro spoke.

Hiiro: "It's a joke. We're leaving tomorrow so make sure you rest up for today."

Raidpic: "Kuii-!"

Even though it answered in the affirmative, it did not leave Hiiro's side.

Hiiro: "Oi, I'm done with you so you can go back now."

However, it did not return an answer. It sent an expectant gaze towards Hiiro, as if it was waiting for something.

Hiiro: "T-the hell's its problem?"

Max: "Aa(15), it wants you to give it a name."

Hiiro: "Name?"

Max: "Aa, if their new master doesn't give them a name, these Raidpics won't budge an inch."

Hiiro: "This bird is kind of a pain in the ass."

Exasperated, Hiiro placed his hand on his chin as he began contemplating.



Hiiro: "Let's see.....isn't 'Bird' fine?"

Raidpic: "Kui kui kui kui kui!"

\*Bunbunbunbun\*(16) The Raidpic began to shake its head extremely violently. It seemed to be saying that it was utterly displeased with what Hiiro had just said.

Hiiro: "It's quite a pampered bird."

Max: "Gahaha! It's cause a name is something that represents the individual. This guy's hoping that you'll give it a good name."

Hiiro stared at the Raidpic, as if analysing it. A yellow beak and white feathers. Large dark eyes. Also, for some reason, a mark in the shape of a crescent was present on its forehead.

Hiiro: "What's this mark?"

Max: "Nn? Aa, that was there when it was born. It's kind of like a mole if you were to compare it to a person."

Hiiro: "Fu~n.(17)"

As Hiiro observed the mark, he faintly nodded.

Hiiro: ".....yosh, you're now 'Mikazuki'."

Hiiro simply stated thus. However...

Mikazuki: "Kui kui kui kuuuuuuuuuuuuui-!"

It seemed to have taken a liking to its name as it began frolicking about. Its joy didn't reach the level of covering Hiiro with its bodily fluids, yet, Mikazuki seemed satisfied as it returned to the bird house.

Max: "Gahaha! Putting your naming sense aside, for a Raidpic to be that head over heels for you, as expected of someone who defeated a unique monster!"

As he chuckled heartily, Max began firmly patting Hiiro's shoulder.

As Hiiro's face distorted due to the sudden impact, he began to speak.

Hiiro: "By the way, I kinda want to go to the inn, but...?"

Max: "Oi, don't say something so cold. Come 'ver to my place. I'll even treat you to some [Honey Sweets]"

Hiiro: "Hou~.(18)"

Hiiro's index finger(19) twitched. Today, for one night, Hiiro decided to crash at Max's house.

As the day became the next, the sky presented itself with weather fit for a journey. Max was at the store's exit as he was sending-off Hiiro.

Max: "So where're you headed?"

Hiiro: "Who knows."

Max: "Have you not decided yet?"

Hiiro: "Aa, I'm a guy that follows wherever the wind takes me."

Max: "I see. Watch yourself, got it?"

Hiiro: "Aa, thanks for taking care of me."

Max: "Come again with the other two and eat some [Honey Sweets]."

Max laughed with a huge grin. Hiiro answered him while on top of Mikazuki.

Hiiro: "Only if the chance comes."

Thus, Hiiro departed from the village of [Doggam].

Hiiro: "Well, for the time being let's just look around."

Mikazuki: "Kuii-!"

After gaining a 'Reliable Companion?', Hihiro continued his journey. He wondered what would be his next destination. Wondering what kind of adventure it would bring, Hihiro looked forward as he carried a feeling of expectation.

Hihiro: "Well, go where ever you want. I'm gonna read that book I got from the Kuma no Ossan."

It seemed that Hihiro's forward gaze only lasted for a fraction of a second. Mikazuki almost fell to the ground in reaction to Hihiro's attitude, yet, it continued to follow its master's orders as it began to advance appropriately.

At the [Beast Kingdom Capital: Passion], Leowald, the Gabranth King, had finally returned from the unexpected events that had occurred during the war. Although he was thoroughly displeased, upon learning that his daughter, Mimir's voice had returned, his attitude had completely flipped as he decided to hold a feast in celebration.

He had heard the news from the soldiers first. Of course, he was unable to believe them so he went to ask his wife Blantha, as well as the First Princess Kukklia. Hearing what Kukklia had to say, he headed straight for Mimir's location.

Following this, as an angelic voice entered his ears, his foul mood was blown away, as if it was a lie. He began screaming as he hugged his beloved daughter.

He was grateful to the [Spirit] that had cured Mimir's voice. Leowald had stated to everyone that the [Spirits] had always been their only allies.

Following this, after toasting to the city, the feast had begun. Of course, they had also publicly announced the course of the war. Hearing that the [Evila] had retreated from war, there were many

Gabranth who expressed anger and frustration. However, due to Mimir's recovered voice, many had been rejoicing throughout the feast.

Leglos: "Father can't help but spoil Mimir, huh."

As Lewald had placed Mimir on his large shoulders, he began walking around as if showing off his daughter. Overlooking this spectacle, the First Prince Leglos could only shrug his shoulders.

Lenion: "Fun(20), I'm still hung up about the war, you know."

The Second Prince Lenion began grumbling.

Leglos: "No, it's not like father isn't worried about the war. When it's time fight, we fight. When it's time to celebrate, we celebrate. This is the law of this country. Even you're happy about Mimir's restored voice, right?"

Lenion: "Fun, am I?"

Lenion said as he looked away. However, there was a certain softness in his expression. Even to the sloppy Lenion, Leglos had reaffirmed his thoughts that his little sister was adorable.

Leglos: "It's fine to start thinking about the war after the feast. Now is a time for celebration. Don't you agree, Lenion?"

Lenion: ".....do whatever you want."

The two made the glasses they both held touch the other's before bringing it to the mouths. Everyone rejoiced as they celebrated Mimir's voice being restored. However, in the midst of the excitement, there was one person that had their gaze transfixed on Mimir. But there was a line of sight to stare at jitter and Mimiru only one person in it.

???: (Fumu.....why, whatever could this mean? For something that even I couldn't cure to have...it seems that a little investigating is needed.)

As a pair of round glasses glimmered, a mouth distorted into the

shape of a crescent moon.(21)

## Notes:

1. (1) Uun: Japanese equivalent of 'Hmm'. Sound indicating deep thought.
2. (2) Pishun: Think of \*Flash\* or something...(not sure. Consult Mr. Google).
3. (3) Oo: Not 2 'o' but an elongated O. Expresses surprise/amazement.
4. (4) Kuma no Ossan: Alternate Translation ('Bear-Old Man')
5. (5) Ossan: An informal way of addressing an elderly male figure. (Affectionate 'Old-man' or Rude 'Old-fart'.)
6. (6) Chibi: An informal way of addressing a person of short stature. Think 'midget'.
7. (7) Dadadada: Onomatopoeia representing loud, rapid footsteps.
8. (8) Kui: A sound made by Raidpics. (As I don't speak Raidpic, I am unfortunately unable to translate this. Any persons who are able to translate Raidpic, feel free to offer translations of what they are saying.)
9. (9) Eei: An expression of irritation.
10. (10) Yosha: An expression of affirmation that's often used for psyching up one self. Think 'Alright!' or 'Yeah!'.
11. (11) Kira: Japanese Onomatopoeia that basically means \*sparkle\*.
12. (12) Idol-Beams: I don't even...I think they're referring to [this](#).
13. (13) Bata: Japanese Onomatopoeia for the sound of wings flapping.
14. (14) Yakitori: Literally means fried chicken(bird). Go Google it.
15. (15) Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like 'Uh-huh' or 'Yeah'.
16. (16) Bun: Japanese Onomatopoeia for large air pressure

(cause the bird's shaking head causes its feathers to fan a large amount of air).

17. (17) Fu~n: An expression of scepticism? Basically, think 'Hmm' or 'is that so?'.  
18. (18) Hou: An expression of interest.
19. (19) TL Note: Kanji used for 'index finger' is for food and finger. Play on words, but basically, it means that Hihiro's 'food' switch was triggered.
20. (20) Fun: Equivalent of 'Hmph'.
21. (21) TL Note: This is another play on words. The romaji for 'crescent' is 'mikazuki' which is what Hihiro has named his Raidpic. It may/may not have any meaning here, but I thought I'd mention it.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 56: Movement in Victorias

A week after Hiirou set out on his journey once more, a handwritten letter from the Demon King arrived in the hands of Rudolf, the King of 【Victorias】.

After scanning it with his eyes, he made a complicated face as he left it on his desk. He was in the royal office, and with him was his trusted minister, Dennis Norman.

“Now what should I do...” (Rudolf)

“We’re already investigating the matter, but it appears that the fact the bridge was destroyed by the Demon King was true.”

“Yes... the Demon King...” (Rudolf)

“Unlike the previous king, she is lacking in both age and ideals, I believe.”

“I’ll bet. Otherwise, she would never make an appearance like this. But still, this is...” (Rudolf)

“Correct. With this, more animosity will be created between the 『Gabranth』 and 『Evila』. Though if the 『Gabranth』 were to accept their treaties, it would calm down.”

“... Yeah, that’s not happening.” (Rudolf)

“Yep, that’s impossible.”

This time, the 『Evila』’s actions equated to trampling over the pride of the 『Gabranth』 race. For the Demon King, her reasons may have seemed just, but the Beastmen would simply see it as a slight against their resolve to war.

Therefore, it is currently impossible for the 『Gabranth』 to make amends with the 『Evila』.

“I understand the Demon King’s goal. If this written peace treaty means just as it says, then they must be planning to ally with us to decrease the 『Gabranth』’s motivations for war.” (Rudolf)

“That’s plausible. But with just this treaty, we do not have definite evidence. Perhaps destroying the bridge was to get rid of an obstacle, so they could focus on destroying the 『Humas』 Race. There are other possibilities.”

“... This is hard. By forming an alliance, it’s not like there are no merits for our side.” (Rudolf)

“But you don’t wish to involve yourself in those two sides’ war... right?”

“If possible. But with this, I’ll be able to learn of the internal affairs of the 『Evila』.” (Rudolf)

“But that would be the same for them.”

If they do form an alliance, and increase their interaction, they’ll be able to get a better understanding of the other’s state of affairs. It would be easier to grasp for their weaknesses. But that would be true for the 『Evila』 side as well. It was both a merit and demerit.

“What sort of conditions did they propose for scheduling a meeting?”

“As written here, they give up all rights to choose, and leave it all in our hands.” (Rudolf)

“My, My. Are they placing faith in us, or are they confident that they would be able to take whatever we can throw at them...?”

“Or perhaps both...”

“But if we can decide all the conditions ourselves, then if we play this well...”

“Fumu, even so, it’s too early to make a decision. Even if we form an alliance in name only, there are plenty of humans who would object to it. I’ve also lost my daughter to them.” (Rudolf)



(TL: And a few more to yourself)

Rudolf's face turns bitter.

“... How are the Heroes?” (Rudolf)

“They're growing favorably. But according to Vale, they requested that legend, Judom Lankars to be their trainer, but have yet to receive a favorable response.”

“Judom...”

Rudolf closes his eyes, and gives a light sigh.

“That man is hard to deal with. He seems to be under the misconception that a mere Guild Master has the same authority as a king.” (Dennis)

Denis lets out words colored with anger.

“In emergencies, he is a dependable source of offensive power, and his trust lets him command large groups. The previous King agreed to give him quite a bit of power. But he's a commoner to the end.” (Dennis)

“Dennis, it's fine.” (Rudolf)

“... Understood.” (Dennis)

“Even so, he's my old friend. Don't badmouth him so much.” (Rudolf)

“I apologize.” (Dennis)

He lower his head, and apologizes.

“Most likely, Judom will learn of this meeting through his expansive information network. He'll ask me to hold it without a doubt.” (Rudolf)

He had said something similar before. About how Rudolf should accept their invitations no matter how many times they were sent.

He stormed on about how he would protect the King no matter what dangers lay in wait.

“Dennis, go call Judom over.” (Rudolf)

“... Are you sure?” (Dennis)

“Yeah, no matter what decision I make, I’ll need power. Isn’t that right... Dennis?” (Rudolf)

“... Understood.” (Dennis)

Dennis respectfully lowers his head, and leaves the room.

“It’s always best to have more pieces. The four Heroes, and Judom... For that purpose, let’s delay the meeting, and raise the Heroes.” (Rudolf)

With a stern face, he gazed out of the window.

—

—

—

—

—

“The war ended? Who won?” (Taishi)

The four heroes were doing team training as they did every day. Upon receiving such words from Vale, the only male in the group, the long, brown-dyed hair Ikemen, Aoyama Taishi asked as he wiped away his sweat with a towel.

“No, both sides are unharmed. It seems the Demon King made the war end.” (Vale)

Upon hearing of how she easily decimated such a large bridge, the four heroes were slightly taken aback.

“S-so they really are that strong... the Demon King...” (Chika)

The one speaking, while turning pale was a certain Suzumiya Chika. To instantly destroy a bridge spanning 30 kilometers was a little bit much.

“The amount of magic they possess is definitely over ours. Apparently that Aquinas was there as well.” (Vale)

“Ah, from that 《Cruel》 you told us about before?”

The one speaking this time was the one possessing the Kansai Accent, Akamori Shinobu.

“Yes, they are among the strongest of the demon race.” (Vale)

“S-so such people exist. As I thought...”

With an anxious expression, Minamoto Shuri spoke. They thought they had become strong, but they had not the power to accomplish the feats they were hearing of. The Demon King who could do that in an instant must be terrifying.

“I wonder just how high its level is.” (Taishi)

Taishi's questions was what everyone wanted to ask. With that strength, just how wide was the level gap between the Demon King, and the current them It was natural for them to be curious.

They would be fighting eventually, so it was necessary information. However, Vale did not have the means to get such information.

“I don't know their levels, but the former SSS Ranker Judom-sama fought Aquinas once, and almost died.” (Vale)

“Ah, that Guild Master you're always talking about? Last time you went to see him, he wouldn't meet you. I wonder if he hates us.” (Chika)

“No, I think the thing he hates is this country's system in itself... probably.” (Vale)

Vale gives a bitter smile as he answers. Upon seeing this, Shinobu hit him on the back.

“Well get yourself together, Vale! You can’t forget to be positive here!” (Shinobu)

Upon seeing her give off a bright smile, he couldn’t help but feel a little better.

“Yes, that’s right! If we work hard, something will happen!” (Shuri)

“That’s right.” (Shinobu)

Shuri and Shinobu smile at each other. Continuing the previous conversation, Vale coughs for a bit, and sighs, before speaking.

“At that time, I believe Judom-sama had just crossed the level 90 mark.” (Vale)

“N-ninety!?”

Taishi unintentionally cried out. Of course. They were only around half of that level at the moment. Yet such an amazing person almost died facing Aquinas...

“He’s really last-boss class...”

“And that might not even be his final form.”

Chika continues Taishi’s sentence, but Vale tilts his head, not understanding its meaning.

“C-can we win... against such people?” (Shuri)

“Shuri, it’ll be fine as long as we don’t give up! And they’re not attacking us at the moment, right?” (Shinobu)

“Yes, that seems to be the case.” (Vale)

“Then until they do, we just have to frantically raise our level! We’re aiming for the Counter Stop!” (Shinobu)

(TL: Counter stop is when the integer value for a stat is at its

maximum, so the counter won't increase anymore)

Shinobu raised her fist high into the air, but as Vale had no idea what she was talking about, a question mark continued to float over his head.

“Ah, but is 99 the max?” (Shinobu)

“No, we can't say for sure. I mean to almost kill someone at level 90, wouldn't they have to be over 100?”

“Hey, Vale?” (Shinobu)

“What is it?” (Vale)

“What's the highest level?” (Shinobu)

“I do not know. But from what I've heard, there are people who have crossed over level 100.” (Vale)

“I see. Is there even a counterstop...?” (Shinobu)

“Well, isn't it fine? That means that you can get as strong as you want, right? That makes training all the more worth it!” (Taishi)

Taishi speaks while smiling, but Chika gives a sigh.

“Really, you sure are care-free.” (Chika)

“I don't want to be told that by you!” (Taishi)

“W-what!? You're the one who's always laid back!” (Chika)

“What do you mean!?” (Taishi)

“Ah, yes yes yes, let's just leave it at that. If you have time to argue, then you better get back to training.” (Shinobu)

“T-that's right, you two. We have to try hard as not to lose.” (Shuri)

Upon hearing the other two's words, Taishi and Chika look down, and try to make their bodies smaller.

(TL: As in they're embarrassed)

“Haha, good teamwork. I'll be counting on you henceforth, everyone!” (Vale)

As Vale said that, everyone gave their various responses.

But he didn't know yet. The gears of war were still moving. Battle was drawing close.

And no one knew just what that war would bring them. It was not too long before they would learn the true meaning of the war.

## Chapter 57: One Month Later

“I got it!” (Hiiro)

Bushushushushu (Sound of running on a forest ground)

Hiiro stabbed a large rat with his Thorn Sword-Piercer. Blood gushed from the rat’s body as it collapsed on the ground and stopped moving. He flicked the blood off the sword before placing it in its scabbard.

“Fu~, there’re so many monsters here.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro grumbled. One month passed since he departed from Passion. He was currently in the [Glutton Forest]. It was also referred to as the “Forest of Gluttony.” Many monsters decided to make this forest their habitat.

Just walking around for a bit would cause someone to encounter a monster. Even up till this moment, Hiiro had barely made any progress through the forest. Of course, this greatly irritated him.

If one were to look behind him, they would see a numerous amount of monster corpses. Hiiro wanted to say that instead of this road being a Gabranth’s Trail, it was more like a Monster’s trail. However, as Arnold, who would usually interject with his tsukommis, was not here, Hiiro felt himself grow a bit lonely.

“I’ve been camping everyday, huh? My MP recovery is quite low. If possible, I’d like to avoid using magic...” (Hiiro)

He wanted to tear through the forest path with <<Word Magic>>, however, it wasn’t clear if a town was up ahead. There might still be a long way to go, so it was best not to use magic recklessly.

Gusa... (Sound of someone stepping on something)

Hiiro drew his sword, anticipating some sort of an attack

“Kuikuikuikui” (?)

“Oh...it’s you.” (Hiiro)

It was the Raidpic, Mikazuki. One month ago she (big surprise) started travelling with him. She was unable to help him fight off the monsters so Hiiro just told her to go hide somewhere whenever there was an encounter.

“Make sure you stay close.” (Hiiro)

“Kui” (Mikazuki)

They began advancing until Hiiro abruptly stopped.

“Gods, this is a gloomy forest. There is also this...” (Hiiro)

He looked at the thing before him. To be more precise, he looked UP at the thing before him.

“Is this the boss?” (Hiiro)

“Ku, kukukuikuikui!” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki let out a surprised cry as she looked at the giant before her.

It loomed over them at a height of five meters tall. Not only this, but it possessed arms that were large enough to destroy trees in one sweep and muscular legs that couldn’t be damage by flimsy attacks. It was a monster that held the ferocity of a gorilla and a bear. Fang-like teeth lined its mouth.

While observing the monster, Hiiro searched his memory, pulling up what he knew about his current foe.

“Although it’s my first time meeting one, I’m pretty sure this is an S-rank monster called a Troll” (Hiiro)

“Garugaaaaaaaaa!” (Troll roaring)

It was certainly making a racket. This was probably the leader of



this territory, and Hiiro just intruded into it turf.”

DonDonDonDonDonDonDonDon (Drumming)

As a warning, it began pounding on a drum. It was so loud that it hurt Hiiro’s ears.

The troll clasped both hands together, aiming at Hiiro as it swung its arms down on him like a hammer. (TL: Help here) (E: Not an easy one. I think it’s trying to say that the troll made a hammer with its hands by bringing them both together.)

“Run away.” (Hiiro)

“Kuiiiii!” (Mikazuki)

Following his order, Mikazuki fled and hid nearby.

“Yoto!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro barely dodged the attack. However, it was a careless move.

Dogoooooooo! (Sound of ground being smashed, sending a shockwave)

The ground shattered under the troll’s fists, causing Hiiro’s feet to become stuck in the rubble. He began to regret that he hadn’t moved further away when he was dodging.

The troll took that chance to try and grab Hiiro. Although he was off balance, Hiiro still managed to slash at its hand. From the wound, blood began spurting out.

“Come and get me, fat ass.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro’s words and movements angered the Troll. It threw a punch at him, yet Hiiro was already out of its range. He easily dodged the attack, however, he felt a blast of wind pressure from it.

The troll continued to try punching Hiiro over and over again, however, Hiiro dodged them expertly. Then, suddenly, it leaped into the air.

“What?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro thought that the Troll was using its body to attack him. Hiiro planned to take advantage of that moment to drive his sword through its heart. Yet, at that moment, the Troll took out a sharp fang and tossed it at him.

”Seriously?” (Hiiro)

Taken by surprise, Hiiro hastily guarded with his sword. In that instance

Dosuuuuuuuun (Sound of a something crashing in to the ground)

The ground shook, as if a small earthquake had just occurred. The Troll, thinking that it was over, slowly stood up and walked towards the area to confirm his victory.

However, when he got there, the wounded body of Hiiro was not what had appeared. It glared forward with bloodshot eyes and was enraged when Hiiro appeared unscathed before him.

“To make me use <Word Magic>, as expected of a S-Rank monster.”

Looking closely, the word <Speed> 『速』 had been written on his right hand. Using that word, he was able to accelerate his body and move away at the moment of impact.

“As I thought, it was a good idea to prepare this beforehand.” (Hiiro)

Seeing Hiiro’s smirk, the troll became even more furious as it uprooted a tree and began to swing it at Hiiro.

“Hey! What do you think you’re swinging around?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro knew that if he took a direct hit from that, it wouldn’t be good. He tried to create some distance, however, it was moving too fast.

“This bastard!”

Reluctantly, Hiiro stopped moving and ducked. Taking this opportunity the Troll used both hands to smash the tree above Hiiro's head.

Dogaaaaaaaaaan (Smash!)

The troll, thinking it had succeeded this time, grinned.

“Guki...ga....!?” (Troll)

Hiiro, skillfully dodging the tree, drove the sword into its neck from the left.

“I’m not done yet!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro pulled his sword from the throat, slipped into the troll's chest and stabbed its heart. Following his series of attacks, he created distance between himself and the troll.

He distanced himself to avoid any of the troll's wild, unexpected movements. The troll thrashed around for a while before its movements became sluggish. It spasmed one more time before becoming completely still.

A level up tone rang in Hiiro's head. His level had went up significantly in the last month, yet, consistently leveling up was something to be appreciated.

Hiiro Okamura

Lv: 68

HP: 578/1400

MP: 1870/2340

EXP: 364852

NEXT: 15500

ATX: 426 (488)

DEF: 340 (355)

AGL: 546 (548)

HIT: 304 (312)

INT: 477 (481)

Magic Attribute: none

Magic: Word Magic :

(| One-Word Chain (Unlocked) | Air Writing (Unlocked) | Parallel Writing (Unlocked) | Two-Word Chain (Unlocked) | Simultaneous Invocation (Unlocked) | Invocation Management (Unlocked) |)

Titles:

| Innocent Bystander | World Traveller | Word Master | Awakened One | Ripper | The One Who Imagines | Killer of the Unique | Gourmet Bastard | One Who Follows His Own Path | Friend of the Fairies | Mikazuki's Owner | Monster Slayer | Wanderer |

Guild Card

Name: Hiiro Okamura

Sex: Male

Age: 17

From Unknown

Rank S

Quest:

Equipment

Weapon: Thorn-Piercer

Guard: Red Robe

Accessory: Fairy Ring

Rigin: 7854000

When he reached level 50, he unlocked the skill <<Simultaneous Invocation>>. At level 60, he got <<Invocation Management>>.

<<Simultaneous Invocation>> MP cost: x 30

Before, when Hiirō wrote a new word, the previous word's effect would be erased. With this skill, this limitation has been removed. Hiirō is now able to write other words simultaneously, however, he can only activate words one at a time, thus, he still needed to exercise caution. Also, activating the same word will still trigger a synergistic effect as shown with the skill <<Parallel Writing>>.

<<Invocation Management>> MP cost: 250

It is now possible to manipulate the invocation of a maximum of 5 words. It is possible to activate a previously written word at any given time. However, this skill can only be applied to the <<One-Word Chain>> skill. In addition, the user must be within 300 meters of the words written before they can be triggered.

While reading the description didn't help at first, after applying the skills, he was able to comprehend their functionality. There cannot be skills any more useful than these.

The first skill was <<Simultaneous Invocation>>. Before if he invoked the word <<Protect>> 『防』, there would be a wall of magic to protect him for one minute. However, if he wrote a different word before the duration time elapsed, the effect of <<Protect>> would wear off straight away, overwritten by the new character

However, with <<Simultaneous Invocation>>, when the word <<Protect>> 『防』 is used, the <<Protect>> 『防』 word's effect will remain in place, and the word <<Thunder>> 『雷』 can be used to assault the enemy, or the word <<Fly>> 『飛』 can be used at the same time to fly away.

However, the restriction was that only one word skills can be

activated. Two-word skills cannot be invoked. Similarly, if Hiroyuki were to activate a two-word character while the one-word spell is still active, the effect of the one-word character would immediately dissipate.

Nonetheless, it is a very versatile skill. He would be able to use the word <Proof> 『防』 while he prepares his two-word spell. Furthermore, he could increase the effect of <Speed> 『速』 by writing another <Speed> right away.

If he didn't use the word he wrote, he needed to be mindful of the increasing MP costs. The first Simultaneous Word would cost 30 MP, the second would cost 60 MP, and the third would cost 90 MP, and so on and so forth depending on how many words he wanted.

The second skill was <<Invocation Management>>. Before, when he used word magic, he would write out a word in thin air and it would remain there, disappear only if it was left alone for a long period of time or if it was activated. With this skill, if he wrote with the <<Invocation Management>> skill, he would write the word as usual, but the word would disappear and remain at that location. This meant that it would be invisible to other people

As long as he is within a 300 meter radius, he can locate and activate those words at will.

Not only can this be used as a potential trap, he could also activate all five words at the same time for a full frontal assault. It's only limitation was that it could only be used with One-Word spells. This is definitely a cheat. Incidentally, writing a Two-Word Spell would cause any planted One-Word spells to disappear.

He also needed to take extra precaution if he moved outside the range of the words. Should he go out of range, the words installed would disappear. It was a little disappointing that only one-word spells could be used. This skill would prove much more versatile if it accommodated the use of two-words.

Also, the word <<Speed>> he had used earlier was triggered instantly because he set it up using the <<Invocation Management>> skill. Thus, this ability can be used to prepare

words on the body, equipment and weaponry, which could all be activated at will.

During the month that had passed, Hiiro practiced using his <Word magic>. Specifically, he was experimenting with the <Rebound> penalty incurred when he was disrupted while using the <<Two-Word Chain>> skill.

The description he received was proven correct. For six-hours, he was unable to use <Word Magic> and all his stats were halved. This was a significant penalty. If he had incurred this penalty in the middle of battle, he would be crippled and would have a high chance of getting himself killed.

For example, if he incurred the penalty while fighting the troll, it would be have been difficult to run, let alone fight when his stat were halved and his <Word Magic> sealed. He would most likely be killed if he made a single wrong move.

Although Word Magic is like a cheat, if a mistake was made, the user would suffer a harsh <Rebound> penalty. Thus, he had to be very cautious when using it.

“Either way, I have to get out of this forest and find a village!” (Hiiro)

He had encountered several monsters along the way, but none of them were as strong as the troll he faced. After a short while, he finally reached the forest exit.

“It is finally over. Now...” (Hiiro)

Hiiro stepped out of the forest and looked around, however, he could only see small hills in the distance.

“I guess I no choice. I don’t want to use too much MP” (Hiiro)

He wanted to find the nearest town as soon as possible so he wrote and activated the word <Search>. Immediately, a pale arrow appeared before him, pointing east. Apparently, there was something east of here.

“Alright! Lets go, Mikazuki” (Hiiro)

“Kui!” (Mikazuki)

Hiiro jumped on Mikazuki’s back and they started moving. He had a lot of MP left over, but his regeneration was still slow. There was no more point in staying in this demon infested area.

“Even if a demon appears, keep running” (Hiiro)

Hiiro then wrote the word <Speed> on Mikazuki.

“Kuikuikuiiiii!” (Mikazuki)

In that instance, a burst of energy surged through her body, her movement speed increased significantly. Looking around him atop of Mikazuki’s back, Hiiro was able to see a few demons. However, at this velocity, he confident that he would be able to run away without any issues.

They ran up and down a hill before, eventually, he was able to see a townscape up ahead.

Although the word magic’s effect was still active, Hiiro deemed it no longer necessary, and deactivated it.

“Come on, forward!” (Hiiro)

“Kuiiiii!” (Mikazuki)



## Chapter 58: Now, to the Evila Continent!

Author Note: It's finally time for the Evila Continent Arc~(1)

As Hiiro had arrived in the town of [Kalent], he parked Mikazuki close near the inn before immediately searching for a general store. Of course, he was looking to buy some MP recovery items.

Incidentally, Hiiro had attempted to write the word [Recovery], thinking that it may possibly recover his MP. Needless to say, this attempt did not go very well. Although his HP was restored, his MP would only drop, stubbornly refusing to recover. Hiiro thought it would be nice if it was possible, however, he didn't expect his power to be so broken as to allow such a cheat. (2)

Following this, he attempted to increase his stock of Recovery items using [Replication] and [Division]. When he took those items, his MP certainly did increase. Yet, after a minute had passed, the effects of his magic faded along with the corresponding amount of MP restored.

Thinking that the temporary increase in MP was good, however, Hiiro tried to use magic after he took some of the replicated Restoration items when his MP was near 0. Needless to say, he was able to use the MP. However, after a minute had passed, Hiiro had noticed a drastic decrease of his physical condition. As he checked his [Status], he was faced with a horrid sight. His previously full HP had dropped to a measly 1%.

Hiiro determined that this was probably the effect of a [Rebound] caused by trying to forcefully use magic when he had no MP. However, as it had been demonstrated that he could cut off his

Health in exchanged for the use of magic, Hiiro decided to resort to this as a trump card. As it was frightening considering what would happen should he have used magic twice, he placed a rule constraining himself to only using magic once when using HP as fuel.

In the meantime, Hiiro decided that he would spend today packing his pouch with Recovery agents as food would be purchased tomorrow. He stared towards the direction of the inn he was staying at, the place that he would be leaving tomorrow.

Hiiro: "Well then, I guess I'll buy Mikzuki's food before heading back."

As a side note, Mikzuki's favourite food was called [Puryun Fruit], a fruit that looked like an actual pudding. Although it wasn't as soft as a pudding, it held a taste unique to fruit, inducing a sweet and sour flavor which would make one reminiscent of a strawberry.

As Hiiro began walking towards the inn, he spotted a building that suddenly caught his attention.

Hiiro: "Is that...a Library?"

Hiiro's eyes began shining with a \*kirakira\*(3). His feet carried him towards the library as if it was a law of nature. As he opened the door and entered, he discovered that, while the space wasn't large, that place was without a doubt, a library.

Hiiro: ".....he~, I wonder if this place has a lending and purchasing area."

There were two counters one to the left and one to the right. Both had a sign propped up in front of them, one reading [Lending], the

other [Purchase].

The counter installed on the right had books available for Lending only, while the one setup on the left seemed to have books that could be bought.

Hiiro unhesitatingly moved towards the purchasing area. While Hiiro wouldn't have any issues about borrowing books if he was planning on staying long-term, as he was leaving tomorrow, he immediately sought to buy some books for the road.

Hiiro: ".....Nn?"(4)

As he was walking, Hiiro glanced at a certain title as he began to focus on a particular book. As he wanted to view the cover, he took the book from the shelf.

Hiiro: "As I thought."

Hiiro looked at the book, slightly nodding to himself as he had confirmed his suspicions.

Hiiro: ( [The Adventures of Tyn Cal Weikl]....while the color of the cover's different than the one I saw before, it looks like its contents are the same. The Author's name also matches.)

Hiiro recalled one of the books that he had borrowed from Max in [Doggam]. At that time, the cover was tinted livid, however, the title, contents, and author had matched the book that Hiiro currently held in his hands. He observed that, unlike other books, this one was apparently unpopular as there were 5 other copies lying around.

Hiiro: (Well, this is a Humas story. It probably just had poor reception among the Gabranth.)

As he thought this, Hiiro returned to the shelves as he planned to buy any books that seemed noteworthy.

After returning to the inn, he fed Mikazuki before heading to his room. He collapsed onto the bed as he heaved a large sigh.

Hiiro: "Looks like I'm heading over there tomorrow. About time."

As he thought this, Hiiro closed his eyes.

The next day, Hiiro, who had left [Kalent], had stopped after walking for a short while.

Hiiro: "Yosh(5), this should be far enough."

Mikazuki: "Kui!"(6)

Hiiro poured magic power into his fingertip as he began writing. What he had written was the word [Transfer]. He was trying to teleport to a certain location.

Hiiro: "Shall we go?"

Mikazuki: "Kui!"

Hiiro touched Mikazuki with empty hands as he invoked the word.

\*Pishun\*(7)

The two's figures instantly disappeared.

A vast sea of blue spread itself before Hiiro upon his arrival. However, as the floor that Hiiro was standing on had become the edge of a cliff, the shape he was overseeing was the ocean. Looking further ahead was a continent so huge, it appeared as if it was covering the sea.

Hiiro: "It hasn't changed from before, huh."

In actuality, Hiiro had visited this place before. As soon as he had parted from Arnold and Co., he came here. At that time, since the war had just ended, the place was littered with Gabranth. Hiiro had determined that they were soldiers based on their attire.

There were several reasons for Hiiro's visit to this location. It was the place where the distance between the two continents was at its smallest. He had wanted to see the place where the Gabranth had wanted to go to war with his own eyes. Also, he needed to visit this area once for a certain, specific purpose.

The [Gedult Bridge Site]. Previously, there had been a huge bridge built here.

It was the one and only bridge that connected the [Evila] and [Gabranth] Continents together. About one month ago, it had existed here. However, the [Demon Lord] literally wiped it off the map. However, as of now, it was no longer here. All that could be seen was the great, expansive ocean.

Hiiro, after surveying his surroundings, confirmed that no one was present and began to write a word. However, this time, he began to write on himself.

As he invoked it, Hiiro's Kemonomimi(8) and tail began to fade away. In place of this, his ears began to grow pointed and a small horn grew from his forehead. His undeniably pale skin also changed, growing even paler as it began to appear discolored. Furthermore, his silver-hair darkened as it turned into a thin shade of purple.

Hiiro: "Yosh, it looks like it succeeded."

Noticing his skin tone change, Hiiro alone nodded. What Hiiro had wrote was the word [Change](9). Initially, upon his arrival to this continent, Hiiro realized that having a Humas appearance would be unfavourable, disguising himself to look like a Gabranth. As such, this time...

Hiiro: "No matter what angle you look at this, doesn't this look an [Evila]?"

Indeed, Hiiro's purpose for coming here was so that he could travel to the [Evila Continent] that he could see off in the distance. In the past month, he had searched for and found a book about the [Evila], learning about all their different races and their appearances.

The [Evila] appearance he had taken on seemed to be the form belonging to a common race that was bountiful in numbers. As he had an 'image' of them, he was able to disguise himself.

Mikazuki: "Kui kui!"

Mikazuki returned Hihiro's question with a nod as she swung her head up and down with a \*kokukoku\*(10). Seeing this, Hihiro climbed on Mikazuki as he began to write the word [Flight] on its back.

As Mikazuki felt power swelling up inside of her, her body began convulsing with a \*buruburu\*(11).

Hihiro: "Yosh, let's move!"

Mikazuki: "Kuiiiii-!"

Responding to Hihiro's voice, Mikazuki spread her wings wide.

\*basabasa\* (12)

As she moved her large wings, Mikzuki's body loftily ascended. Should any outsiders witness this spectacle, they would surely be surprised.

Raidpics are inherently incapable of flight due to a defect in their wings. And yet, were it perhaps made known that one could fly, it would probably attract attention.

However, as a result of Hihiro's investigation, it seemed that Raidpics that could fly like Mikazuki were present within the [Evila Continent]. It appeared that depending on the environment, different parts of the Raipic evolved and/or degenerated.

It seems that Raidpics like Mikazuki, who were born in the [Gabranth Continent], have had their leg strength abnormally developed as they can run for long periods of time while maintaining a considerable speed.

Those who were born in the [Evila Continent] seemed to have been spared from their wings degenerating, as they were capable of flying around freely in the sky. Therefore, even if they were spotted flying around, Hihiro determined that they would be dismissed as a common sight, thus, he chose this method.

Hihiro and Mikazuki began rising up towards the sky. Hihiro began overlooking the [Gabranth Continent] from the sky.

Hihiro: "It was an interesting country, but perhaps another time."

As he muttered, Hihiro brought his sight forward, staring at the [Evila Continent]. As the smell of a new adventure drifted towards his nose, Hihiro couldn't help but grin.

Mikazuki advanced through the sky with substantial velocity. Although a Raidpic could not fly originally, thanks to Hihiro's magic, she was able to soar through the skies. This made Mikazuki very happy as a pleasant feeling spread through her. With her lord(13) on her back, being able to take to the skies made Mikazuki overjoyed.

She was truly glad that she had met her lord, Hihiro. Although his mouth and attitude were awful, Mikazuki felt that she would be able to experience fun and thrilling things that one would not normally be able to. She thought that no matter where or how far they traveled, she would like to remain carrying Hihiro on his



journey.

Hiiro: "Oi(14), if you don't watch it, you'll wear yourself out, you know?"

Even though Mikazuki could fly with Hiiro's word [Flight], they had already conducted an experiment that proved that they could move faster by flapping her wings. However, this would end up being very exhausting.

However, Mikazuki replied to Hiiro's words with cries that were constantly saying 'I'm fine'.

Hiiro: (Well, even if I don't worry about it, we'll arrive quickly at this pace...)

As he contemplated, Hiiro stared at the steadily approaching [Evila Continent]. If anything, the landscape was as naturally formed as the [Gabranth Continent].

He confirmed that vast forests and lakes were spread across the land. However, Hiiro noticed that the forests and lakes took upon strange hues.

Crimson Lakes and Obsidian Forests. Although a strange sight, a desert could also be found further away. However, unlike the [Gabranth] or [Humas] continents, there were barely any signs of buildings. The lack of them was so significant, it made one wonder whether they had any towns or villages.

As several mountains were blocking his view, Hiiro couldn't help but tilt his neck, wondering if there were any towns beyond them.

While thinking that he should prioritize gathering information, Hiiro began searching for a town or village. However, after restlessly surveying the landscape, he was unable to find one.

Hiiro: (Now what.....should I just keep flying around while sight seeing? No, this guy doesn't have an infinite source of strength and energy. I guess it can't be helped. Let's stop off somewhere nearby and then use the word [Search].")

Thinking thus, Hiiro indicated to Mikazuki that they would stop at a coast nearby.

## Notes:

1. (1) TL Note: About bloody time.
2. (2) TL Note: If only, Hiiro. If only...
3. (3) \*kirakira\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*sparkle\*
4. (4) Nn: Expression denoting interest or confusion.
5. (5) Yosh: An expression of affirmation that's often used for psyching up one self. Think 'Alright!' or 'Yeah!'.
6. (6) Kui: A sound made by Raidpics.
7. (7) \*Pishun\*: Think of \*Flash\* or something...(not sure. Consult Mr. Google).
8. (8) Kenomimi: A word literally meaning Beast (kemono) Ears (mimi). If you look at Yoraikun's KnW page, he should have an image that describes it quite well.
9. (9) TL Note: I'm aware that previous translators have used [Copy]. However, the kanji used here( 𐄂𐄃𐄄 ) denotes change or transformation and not specific to 'copying'. As such, I

have chosen to use [Change] as my translation.

10. (10) \*kokukoku\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*nod\*.
11. (11) \*buruburu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*tremble\* or \*shake\*.
12. (12) \*basabasa\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*flap\*.
13. (13) TL Note: In the previous chapter that I translated, the author used the kanji (主人) for master/owner. In this chapter, he uses the kanji (主) for lord/owner (basically the same, but without the 'person'/人 character). While I don't know why he changed, I have followed suit.
14. (14) Oi: Do I really need to explain this? It's basically like 'Hey!'.

## Chapter 59: The Threat of the Grand Slime!

When Hiiro landed on the coast, Mikazuki collapsed on the ground in exhaustion. Apparently, it was caused by the fact that she just flew across such a long distance for the first time. Not sure what could happen next, Hiiro wrote the word <Restore> 『全快』 on her body, restoring its stamina.

Hiiro, still having a high tension due to arriving on a new continent, began running around the beach shouting. After doing so to his heart's content, Hiiro used the word <Search> to look for the nearest village.

The moment he activated the word, an arrow appeared before him, pointing in the direction of the nearest village.

“There should be a village up ahead, huh.” (Hiiro)

The arrow that had appeared was pointing towards the mountains up ahead.

“Is the village hidden in the hill, or is it beyond the mountains? Either way, I need to be as careful as possible.” (Hiiro)

“Kui!” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki nodded and shook her back, telling Hiiro to get on. Hiiro ran beside Mikazuki for a moment before hopping onto her back and heading in the direction of the arrow.

After leaving the beach, Hiiro saw a vast grassland spread before him. Beyond the grassland was the hill and mountain range that he witnessed before.

(It feels calm right now but, I'll never know when something might happen.”

From what he read about the [Evlia] Continent, the monsters in this area were numerous and more formidable when compared to

the other Continents. He didn't feel that monsters would openly come out and attack, however, as he could be attacked anytime, he decided to prepare some words in anticipation.

Using <Simultaneous Invocation>, he was now able to set up five words at a time. He wrote the words <Speed> and <Protect> on himself and Mikazuki. He also wrote the word <Extend> on his sword. The words faded into the objects. With his preparations complete, he would now be able to activate any of these words at will.

And yet, if he used a Two-Word spell, all the One-Word spells he had set up at that moment would disappear. Thus, he need to be careful to avoid using Two-Word spells.

"If I level up, I might be able to do more than this. However, I better watch myself for now." (Hiiro)

The idea of being able to use Two-Words with his current abilities made him excited. He was determined to continue hunting monsters to raise his level.

While he was casually riding Mikazuki, he saw something move at the edge of his vision.

"Stop!" (Hiiro)

"Kui!?" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki skidded to a halt.

"Kui?" (Mikazuki)

"Look over there" (Hiiro)

Hiiro pointed at a monster before him.

It was a slime that was 10 times larger than normal slimes. As it moved around on the ground, it kept making a puni-puni sound. Its body was green, however, it was transparent, to the extent of being able to see the other side of its body. Near the center of the body, there was red mass.

“Could that red, heart-like thing in the center be its weak point? My first opponent is a monster that isn’t in the illustrated book huh...” (Hiiro)

Hiiro was surprised because this was a demon that he didn’t know anything about. He thought it was a unique monster, but he had also seen something similar a while back. Unlike the unique monsters, who generally wandered around alone, these monster looked as if they were working together.

“Just as I heard, the demons of the Evila continent weren’t listed in the encyclopedia.” (Hiiro)

The encyclopaedia that he had read, only listed the monsters in the Humas Continent and the Gabranth Continent. It didn’t look like it listed any monsters on the Evila Continent.

“I want to find a reference book for this area as soon as possible.” (Hiiro)

If he didn’t do something like that, he would be significantly disadvantaged when fighting the monsters in the Evila continent. He would definitely be more prepared if he knew about the monsters he was facing beforehand. Of course, he could use word magic to find out about the monsters, however, doing so would not be an efficient use of MP.

Thus, it would be much more efficient if he could find a reference book.

“That is true, but first off, let’s see what the first fight on the Evila Continent would be like.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro got off of Mikazuki’s back and drew out Thorn-Piercer.

“You, stay back.” (Hiiro)

“Kui!” (Mikazuki)

It was familiar exchange. Following Hiiro’s order, Mikazuki fled the battlefield immediately.

“First off, let’s try and look into something.” (Hiiro)

As the slime still didn’t notice Hiiro, he used this opportunity to write the word <Pry> in order to view the monster’s <Status>.

“Let’s see...its name is Grand Slime, Rank S. Seriously!? There are several S ranked monsters crawling around here?!” (Hiiro)

He looked around, noting that there were several other Grand Slimes nearby. He had met S-ranked monsters before, but they were generally considered unique and they were always by themselves. However, as expected, in the Evila continent, there were a lot of S-Ranked monsters wandering around.

(If a rank SS or a rank SSS monster came out...)

In the past month, Hiiro had fought with an SS rank monster in the Gabranth continent. Its strength and power were in orders of magnitude stronger than anything he had encountered thus far. He had barely managed to defeat it by making full use of his Word Magic. If he had made a single blunder during that encounter, he would undoubtedly have perished.

At that moment, he felt that he was dancing on a thin line between life and death.

He didn’t want to face another SS rank monster. As his affinity with the type of monster and topology had worked in his favour, he was able to somehow win thanks to good luck. He knew that it was way too soon for him to face an SS rank monster. If he didn’t level up significantly, then he would definitely die the next time.

(Ever since then, I haven’t wished for Arnold and Muir’s presence more strongly.)

Although he didn’t show it, when he was working together with Arnold and Muir, they were very helpful. If they were with him when he was facing that SS Rank monster, the battle would not have been so dangerous.

And yet, from now on, he was all alone. Furthermore, the monsters on the [Evila] continent would be much stronger than those he

encountered before. If his level was low, he could be killed off pretty easily.

(Taking all that into account, I have no choice but to raise my level as fast as possible.)

He had a strong premonition that he would eventually be fighting monsters that would be of a higher rank than SS in the future.

“For that purpose, these guys will be my food.” (Hiiro)

Sensing bloodlust, the Slime stopped and slowly turned to face him. Following this, it leaped at Hiiro with unexpected velocity.

“Fast!” (Hiiro)

Even though it had such a large body mass, it moved with the speed of a small animal. It was full of openings so Hiiro took this chance to jump past the Grand Slime and slice it with his sword.

Zuba (Sound of sword through a slimy body)

He thought he inflicted a significant blow to the slime, yet it was unfazed by it.

“Crap? It didn’t hit?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wanted to avoid physical contact with it. However, a bullet-like object suddenly detached itself from the slime’s body and flew towards him. Using both hands, Hiiro braced for impact. However, it was so soft that there was no impact or damage at all.

(What’s going on?)

He raised his eyebrow, wondering what had just occurred. However, something happened in the following moment.

Boutsu! (Sound of a puff of fire appearing)

The part of Hiiro that was hit with the Slime abruptly burst into flames.



“Hot!” (Hiiro)

He tried to put out the fire by waving it in the air, but nothing happened.

“Damn!” (Hiiro)

He squatted on the ground and pressed the burning part into the soil. At that moment, the fire went out.

“Hah, hah, hah...this bastard.” (Hiiro)

Not only did Hiiro suffer some burns, his red robe was scorched, left in tatters by the flames. He began to regret that he hadn't used the word <Protect>.

“Damn...this can't be easily restored either.” (Hiiro)

He drew his sword and slashed at the Slime again. He once again felt the weapon land a solid strike on the monster. Yet, similar to before, it had no effect. Looking closely, he noticed that the parts he had damaged had already been regenerated.

“I see. Physical attacks don't work on this thing. Now what.....”  
(Hiiro)

## Chapter 60: Resurrecting Butler?

Hihiro slowly understood the characteristics of the Grand Slime.

(Hm, if I used the word <Analyze> 『解析』, I would probably be able to find out everything about it. However, if I did, all the other words that I set up would disappear.)

The limitations of the two-word ability irritated him, yet, he felt that it would be interesting to analyze his opponent with his own abilities. He would also be able to find out what he was currently capable of.

(To start with, it seems that normal attacks have no effect. I'll have to...)

Hihiro distanced himself from the Slime and prepared a finger to write a word. The slime reacted by shooting another green ball of slime at him. Hihiro knew that blocking it was pointless so he skillfully dodged it.

The ball splattered on the ground and burst into flames. Looking at the fire, Hihiro judged that the <Fire> 『火』 word would be ineffective against the Slime. It was also clear that it wasn't a good idea to approach it more than necessary.

If the slime ignited its large body, he wouldn't be able escape with just small burns if he got close. Thus, it was decided that attacking from distance was a good idea.

(As expected of a S-Rank, it has some troublesome abilities.)

Not only was it fast, but it could split parts of its body to attack mid-range targets. This made it dangerous and difficult to approach. Without a doubt, this troublesome monster was an S-Rank.

(So what should I do? I'm sure that core like part in its body is the weak point. Should I pierce through it with my sword? But its movements are so quick. Not to mention, if that thing explodes after stabbing it, things would turn very dangerous...)

Considering all of the above, he came up with a plan. First, he will attack from afar, sheath his sword, and write something on the the slime to deal with its movement speed. As he had prepared the word, the <Search> effect dissipated.

He decided that he would use the word <Ice> to stop the monster's movement and then finish it off with his sword. However, just as he was preparing the word, something flew at him from behind. Luckily, it barely missed him as the object splattered on to the ground and burst into flames.

He sharply turned his head. As he had thought, there was another Grand Slime. It had probably noticed the commotion and decided to join the fray.

For Hiiro this was inconvenient. He wanted to face one at a time. Honestly, it would be quite difficult for him to face two S-rank monsters at the same time.

Hiiro shook his head in exasperation, distancing himself so that he could see his enemies. However, both monsters immediately closed in.

“Damn, they’re persistent!” (Hiiro)

He managed to create some distance between them, however, projectiles flew from their bodies as Hiiro desperately dodged them.

The situation began to grow increasingly annoying. As a blue vein of anger appeared on Hiiro's forehead, he clicked his tongue.

“Stop screwing with me, you puni-bastards!” (Hiiro)

At that moment Hiiro activated a word, instantly vanishing from his location. What Hiiro had activated was the word <Speed>. As it had been set up before, it took effect immediately.

Hiiro appeared behind one of the Grand Slime and quickly wrote the word <Ice> 『氷』. In an instant, ice spread from the location of the word and froze the Grand Slime. However, the other Grand Slime charged toward him from behind.

“I know you were going to do that!” (Hiiro)

At that moment, Hiiro activated the word <Protect> [防].

Biiinnn (Sound of something hitting a forcefield)

An invisible wall of magic shrouded Hiiro, and, with a bang, the charging Grand Slime was deflected and stunned.

At about the same time, Hiiro drew his sword and activated the word <Extend>.

Zushin! (Sound of a blade thrusting through an object)

The blade extended as it stabbed through the Grand Slime’s body. It skillfully pierced its red core as well.

The Grand Slime stopped moving.

“That must have been its weak point.... right?” (Hiiro)

But...

Dokun! (Boom!)

The moment the sword went through the heart, he felt a pulsing vibration on from the sword.

(Something bad?)

Hiiro instantly leaped away from his current position.

Bobobob bobobuuuu! (Sound of spluttering )

The moment the sword pierced its core, the body started burning and spluttering intensely. If Hiiro hadn’t moved away in time, he would have been caught up in the spectacle before him.

As it continued to burn away, it left a black scorch mark on the ground. He was relieved that it didn’t explode, as he had only instinctively moved far enough to avoid the sputtering flames.

Hiiro looked back at the frozen Grand Slime. He knew that if he

didn't defeat the other one within one minute, it would defrost and start moving again.

"Let's defeat this one like before." (Hiiro)

Hiiro rushed at the frozen slime and stabbed the extended Thorn-Piercer at the core of the Grand Slime before quickly stepping away

As expected, the Grand Slime burst into flames, setting everything nearby on fire, including the ice that it was encased in.

Hearing the level up tone ring, Hiiro checked his status. It had increased to level 69. It was satisfying. He wrote the word <Origin> 『元』 on the sword and returned it to its original length.

"Phew, that was pretty bothersome" (Hiiro)

When Mikazuki thought the battle was over, she walked toward Hiiro with an anxious expression on her face. Hiiro gently patted her beak and said.

"Don't worry, I won't lose in this kind of place" (Hiir)

"Kuii..." (Mikazuki)

Even after hearing those words, Mikazuki still had an anxious expression on her face. She was reminded when he fought with an SS ranked monster. It was very dangerous at that time. Her owner was in tatters and extremely close to being dead. He had barely survived.

When she remembered what had happened at that time, she became anxious as she saw him fighting those slimes. The part of her that felt she wasn't of any help to her owner began to grow.

"Well, let's continue" (Hiiro)

Even then, she looked at the Hiiro who was in front of her. She didn't know if he understood her feelings. However, even if he did, he wouldn't stop moving forward. Seeing such a straightforward master, Mikazuki had no choice but to let out a sigh and keep going.

Hihiro progressed straight toward his destination, fighting and defeating monsters to raise his level.

---

After walking through the plains for some time, the distant hill appeared to be a lot closer than before.

On his way there, he had fought with numerous monsters. The monsters of the Evlia continent were of a high quality. Most of them had a rank above A.

Because of that, he quickly leveled up. When his level hit 70, he thought he would get a new skill or an ability that he had would improve. Unfortunately, that was not the case.

Instead he got the title <Lightning Quick> 《電光石火》 and <Wise man> 《達人》. Viewing the description for the <Lightning Quick> title, he found that it was a title given to a person who has diligently raised their level several times within a short period. It seemed to amplify the rate of acquisition of experience, as well as the amount.

The <Wise Man> title seemed to be awarded to magic users who reached level 70. It was a title that increased the base MP value, something that Hihiro was grateful for.

As Hihiro had really wanted to learn a new Word-Magic skill, he fought and defeated every monster he had encountered. If he leveled up to this extent, he might not have to use Word Magic to defeat Rank A monsters.

Regardless, however, it seemed that he had no choice but to use magic when faced with an S ranked monsters.

As he made full use of his sword and magic, Hihiro and Mikazuki finally arrived at the foot of the mountain. However, they stopped abruptly.

The reason for this was because in front of him, a collapsed person had his face planted into the ground. The way that he collapsed didn't look like he was going to sleep.

“..Is he dead?” (Hiiro)

He slowly approached the person while riding on top of Mikazuki.

“Roll him over” (Hiiro)

“Kuii” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki followed Hiiro’s instruction and turned the body over. She placed her feet under the body and, using some strength, flipped the body over. The man had white hair that was swept all the way back.

He also had a well-formed mustache. Looking at his face, Hiiro could feel that this person was of considerable age. In terms of human years, he would be about 50 years old.

However, his mouth was wide open, and the white of his eyes was all that could be seen. The person seemed to be breathing, yet, why he had fallen in this place was a complete mystery.

The greatest mystery of all was that he was also wearing a remarkable tailcoat, making him look like a butler from a manga or anime.

“This old guy, is he a butler hired by a rich person or something?” (Hiiro)

Either way, as it had nothing to do with him, he simply left it where it was and continued.

Kuwa! (Sound of something moving)

The eyes that were white before, flashed with a light for a moment, before he began muttering a repeated word.

“Mumumu!” (Old Butler)

Following this, he leaped into the air as he spoke the word “Tou!”, and spun his body around several times in the air

Stashi! (Sound of perfect landing)

He landed admirably on his feet. He bent his back and bowed to Hihiro.

Dogon! (Sound of a body falling)

He fell back on the ground in that position, as if he were a marionette who had its strings suddenly cut.

(This old man...what the hell does he want...?)



## Chapter 61: The Insightful Butler Silvan

Both Mikazuki and Hiiro's jaws dropped in surprise when faced with the eccentric old man

"Megu...." (Old man)

"Huh?" (Hiiro)

Having heard something, Hiiro brought his ear closer to the old man. The old man reacted by raising a trembling hand.

"Ple.....please....food..."

Still unable to comprehend what the person was saying, Hiiro frowned with suspicion.

GugyururururuU~ (Sound of stomach grumbling)

A very loud rumbling came from the person's stomach as he grabbed his stomach in agony. Apparently, it seemed that he was just hungry.

However, even when faced with such a spectacle, Hiiro was undoubtedly Hiiro. Once he had understood the reason for the old man's collapse, he wore an apprehensive expression that told Mikazuki "We're leaving" as he began to walk away.

Although Mikazuki's expression asked "Is this okay?"

"There is no reason to help him" (Hiiro)

Hiiro flatly stated. As her master seemed to have decided thus, Mikazuki moved her feet and followed behind Hiiro.

"Please...please..." (Old man)

Hiiro ignored his voice and mounted Mikazuki. As the voice continued to ceaselessly cry as if it were a stomach worm, Mikazuki reluctantly walked passed the old man.

“Th...this...” (Old man)

Hearing the elderly man summon up his voice, Hihiro raised his eyebrows, widening his eyes in curiosity. Moving only his eyes, he saw the old man holding up a book that seemed slightly larger than a paperback book.

“Ri...right now...I only have...but this...very valuable...” (Old man)

Hihiro faced the old man, his gaze locked on to the book. It seemed that the old man wanted to negotiate by trading the book for food. Hihiro opened his mouth and spoke.

“What kind of book is it?” (Hihiro)

Hearing Hihiro’s voice, the old man desperately raised his head, making a thumbs up as he spoke with a beaming smile.

“E...Erotic book!” (Old man)

“As if those books can exist!” (Hihiro)

Hihiro unintentionally threw the book in his hand.

“Bahin!” (A book hitting something)

The book flew right between the old man’s face knocking him unconscious.

“Ah, crap.” (Hihiro)

Hihiro thought that he accidentally dealt the final blow as he approached the man in pity. Mikazuki also looked at Hihiro, its eyes saying that that was overkill.

“Kuikuiki” (Mikazuki)

“You could have at least given him some food” was what she wanted to say. Even without an interpreter, this message was easily understood.

“You know, I have no obligation to help this old man. Also, is there any point in sharing our limited supply of food with a hentai like this guy?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro desperately began to think that he did not want to associate himself with a hentai that would trade food for a erotic book.

“H...how about...this” (Old man)

The Old man revived once again as he took out another book. As it was the same size as the previous book, Hiiro was wary.

“This book...is written by...Mr. Marquis Bluenote’s...” (Old man)

Upon hearing that name, Hiiro narrowed his eyes as he looked at the book

“Marquis Bluenote...” (Hiiro)

It was a name he heard before. From what he can remember, it was the author of a heroic tragedy called <The adventures of Tyn Cal Weikle> 《ティンクルヴァイクルの冒険》. He doubt the same author would write an erotic book.

“Alright... I’ll give you food in exchange for that book. But I won’t forgive you if there’s any weird content in that book. Got it?” (Hiiro)

“T...thank...you” (Old man)

At that moment, the old man collapsed in exhaustion.

---

“Mogu mogu! Gokunshi! Hamu! Musha Musha! Gogu gogu gogu! Psha!”

(TL: Eating ravenously. Mogu mogu=large chewing sound, Gokunshi=swallowing sound, Hamu=biting in to sound, Musha musha=small chewing sound, Gogu gogu gogu=drinking sound, Psha=sound of finally breathing.)

The moment the old man woke up, Hiiro divided the food he prepared for the journey. The old man ate the food like a tiger who had just found its prey. The food flowed into the old man's stomach at a tremendous speed.

Hiiro and Mikazuki watched with dumbfounded expressions. The old man ignored them as he continued eating.

The old man then cleaned his teeth with a toothpick, wiped his mouth with a handkerchief, groomed his hair with a comb, and then bowed, his head plastered to the ground. Whether it was the fault of the butler clothes, Hiiro couldn't tell, but he felt that the gesture strangely suited the old man.

"For the act of saving my life today, I am very grateful to you. I am addressed by the name Silvan. I am truly pleased to make your acquaintance." (Silvan)

"A-Aah" (Hiiro)

"Kui...." (Mikazuki)

In response to the old man's strange gesture, the two returned their answers in a state of surprise.

"Nofofofo! Ah, I'm sorry for laughing. I thought that it was the end of me until you guys had arrived by chance. Because of that, I was saved. How lucky I was to meet you!" (Silvan)

His eyes shined in gratitude as he spoke aloud.

"What a great day! I thought I was going to die, yet, I am alive! The must be the will of the heavens! And this encounter must be heavensent. Please let me know your name.

Hiiro made an unpleasant face. Seeing that face, the butler felt Hiiro's discontent as he took a step back and bowed apologetically.

"That was rude of me, to displease my benefactor. However, if it is possible, would you please tell me your name" (Silvan)

It was a question was inevitable, but Hiiro prepared an answer to

escape from this moment.

“T-Tarou Tanaka.”

He used a false name. He thought that there was no problem using a false name as their relationship would only go this far. However...

“Mumumu!” (Silvan)

The old man coughed as he looked at Hiiro with partially observant eyes.

“That is a fake name, is it not?” (Silvan)

There was bright gleam in Silvan’s eyes as Hiiro was quickly exposed

“...on what evidence?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said with a calm expression. Silvan placed a hand on his chest as he lowered his head.

“Even though I look this way, I have been a Butler for a long time.” (Silvan)

Hiiro wanted to say “I know you’re a Butler because you look like that” but he just glared at him silently.

“As such, it is necessary for a butler to be competent in several fields. It is necessary for a butler to be able to carry out anything the master orders. And among them, the most important skill for a butler to have is to be able to read people.” (Silvan)

“...what do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“As people may desire a lord’s authority and status, they will use many underhanded methods to do so. It goes without saying that these people come in large quantities. In particular, there are those that weave lies, deceiving many with expertly constructed narratives. If one is an amateur in such a skill, then it would only leave their lord in misfortune. However, we butlers become very sensitive in detecting such lies in order to protect our masters.”

“.....” (Hiiro)

“It is sad to lie. Although sometimes, it is necessary to lie when trying to achieve an end, yet, I believe that it is still not good to lie. If I must say why, then those that know the truth will be left with a deep wound in their heart.” (Silvan)

In Silvan’s eyes, Hiiro could see a gleam of sadness and loneliness. Seeing such eyes, Hiiro let out a sigh as he spoke in a faint voice.

“...Hiiro. Hiiro Okamura” (Hiiro)

Doing so, Silvan smiled and bowed once again.

“Once again, my name is Silvan Pultis. It is a pleasure to make your acquaintance!” (Silvan)

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 62: A New Pervert (Companion)?

“Well, I’m going ahead.” (Hiiro)

He already got the book, and shared his meal. There was no more reason for him to be here, so he started off towards the mountain he had set as his destination. But Silva immediately stood in Hiiro’s path.

“... What?” (Hiiro)

“Could it be that... you plan on treading into that mountain?” (Silva)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

“I would not recommend it, sir.” (Silva)

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

Silvan started coughing, and corrected his posture before speaking.

“That mountain is 【Venom Mountain】. It’s also called the 【Mountain of Poison】.” (Silva)

“Mountain of... poison?” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro furrowed his brow, Silva lightly nodded.

“Hiiro-sama is my life’s savior. So I thought I had to warn you.” (Silva)

“Hmm. I see.” (Hiiro)

Upon saying that line, Hiro signaled Mikazuki to walk forward once more. Of course, in the direction of the mountain. Upon seeing him, Silva opened his eyes wide, and hung his mouth open. He was sure that Hiiro would turn back upon gaining that knowledge.

“P-please wait! Were you not listening to my words?” (Silva)

“What about them?” (Hiiro)

“W-what about them...?” (Silva)

Silva began matching Mikazuki’s pace as he spoke.

“Do you understand? All of the life forms inhabiting that mountain carry poisons, you see. And all of them can prove to be quite lethal.” (Silva)

“...” (Hiiro)

“From what I’ve seen, I do not believe that Hiiro-sama has a body with poison resistance. But because you are traveling alone, I assume that you have some confidence in your skills. However, I greatly advise you to avoid this route.” (Silva)

Seeing Silva desperately try to dissuade him, Hiiro assumed that he was telling the truth. But he had no intention of slowing down or turning back.

“Okay, I’ve heard your warning, but if you say any more, it’ll just get annoying. No matter what you say, Gramps, I’m still going forward.” (Hiiro)

Hearing those words, Silva stopped. As if he had given up, he let out a deep sigh. But suddenly, he let out a loud voice.

“Then I!” (Silva)

Silva leaped high into the air, and spun his body around and around. He once again stood in Hiiro’s path. Mikazuki seemed dumbfounded by the scene, and he stopped walking.

“... Quit it. Don’t hinder me any further.” (Hiiro)

After recovering his voice, Hiiro contemplated getting rid of the butler. But Silva lowered his head once more.

“Favors must be repaid in kind! Life must be repaid with life! If I,



Silva, were to heed your words and draw back here, if something were to happen to you, then I would never be able to get over that regret. I'll carry that regret for the rest of my life!" (Silva)

It probably wasn't anything that great, but Hiiro concluded that the man before him had a strong sense of duty.

"But stopping you seems next to impossible. Then I, Silva, will use this live to honor my duty! Let me accompany you!" (Silva)

"No, I'm fine."

Hiiro immediately shot him down.

"See here. That past exchange was the end of our negotiations. You exchanged your book for my food. That's the end. I do not wish for any more from you." (Hiiro)

More importantly, he didn't really want to travel with someone who was just collapsed in the middle of the road. The chance that he would just hold him back was high, so he wanted to deny him by all means.

With his ability to see through lies, perhaps Silva would be useful. But that could also prove to work against him. Hiiro's appearance was that of an 『Evila』, but he was a proper human.

If that fact came out, then he would be surrounded by trouble. He didn't want to make any careless decisions here, so it was safest to refuse.

"Don't follow me, Gramps. You had a reason for coming here, right? Shouldn't you be taking care of that?" (Hiiro)

Mikazuki starts moving again, and he passes by Silva.

"Then that's what I shall do." (Silva)

He said something troublesome again. And this time, his voice carried more resolution. Feeling a shiver run down his spine, Hiiro turned his eyes to Silva.

“Listen to this! The Butler Silva’s true objective was this mountain!”  
(Silva)

Hiiro’s eyebrows twitched. Sensing danger, Mikazuki stopped, and turned around.

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“The truth is...” (Silva)

And it somehow ended that Hiiro was to listen to Silva’s story.

According to him, he was definitely collapsed due to hunger. But he was no adventurer. He was, as he looked, a simple butler in the service of an estate.

On the other side of this mountain was the household he served, and his master ordered him to retrieve a certain item. The item could be found only within 【Venom Mountain】.

For a butler, the master’s will is absolute. Using all of his power, Silva thought it was his duty to completely devote himself to his master’s will. So he planned on carrying out his job regardless of the danger.

“My master has a bit of a twisted personality. They always give me impossible request. Nofofofofof!” (Silva) (TL: Laughing sound)

Hiiro wondered if he should retort at Silva’s description of his master, but he kept quiet, and listened.

“But I am a skilled butler. No matter the problem, I have succeeded in resolving them all. But my master thought that that wasn’t interesting enough, so the requests became more severe.” (Silva)

Hiiro concluded that the man had his share of grief.

“Anyways, the impossibility has started to become interesting for me too... It’s stimulating. And the master who keeps shoving impossible requests onto me is also cute, and lovable, you know. Nofof.”

(I take that back. He's just a masochist.)

He wasn't suffering at all. He has the mentality that converts his own grief to joy. Hiiro found the old man in front of his eyes to be scary

The pervert set out for the mountain right away. But then a problem emerged.

"The truth is, my Sky Carriage didn't want to listen to me." (Silva)

"Hmm? What's a sky carriage?" (Hiiro)

"... You don't know of them?" (Silva)

(TL: This is a bit of a pun. An unbridled horse is made of the Kanji for Sky and Horse, but in this case, it's a sky horse carriage.)

Dammit. Perhaps that was supposed to be common sense here. Since Hiiro was stopping by the 『Evila』's continent for the first time, he never learned of the existence of Sky Carriages. Perhaps his current behavior had given away his identity.

But Silva's next words cleared away Hiiro's unease.

"Is that so? Hiiro-sama appears to be of the 『Imp Race』. I've heard that they don't interact much with other races, but perhaps that has lead you to be a bit unaware of the affairs of the world." (Silva)

It seems he came to an understanding on his own. By the way, the 『Imps』 were a race of 『Evila』, and with dark skin, and pointed features. They're great in numbers, but possess a cowardly nature. Apparently, they avoid interactions with other races.

"The Sky Carriage is a service managed by couriers. A form of business." (Silva)

They charge money depending on the distance, and carry cargo and people to designated locations. Of course, they transport living things as well. As their names implied, Sky Carriages carried things through the sky.

(Like a Taxi, I guess)

Using the system, Silva set this mountain as his destination, and asked to be brought there. But as he approached the mountain, a problem occurred.

“It suddenly became impossible to control the carriage, and while it was planned that I would be dropped here, I was dropped far, far to the east...” (Silva)

He pointed his finger. In that direction was a sea of trees.

“The Eastern Forest... Also known as the 【Beguiling Woods】. I fell into that place.” (Silva)

“How unlucky.” (Hiiro)

“Yes... But I am a butler. I can’t give up because of such things. No matter how irregular the situation, it is my duty to follow my master’s orders. So I wandered around the forest alone.” (Silva)

“And you had used up all of your strength by the time you got here?” (Hiiro)

“It was a great dishonor to me.” (Silva)

Silva lowered his shoulders.

“If you were hungry, why didn’t you hunt, or forage?” (Hiiro)

“Unfortunately, the 【Beguiling Woods】 do not contain anything edible. There are things that look like food, but once you put them in your mouth, you get status afflictions strong enough to change your personality entirely.” (Silva)

That was the scary part of the forest. In it were devilish edibles. All of them have confusing side-effects, and their strong effects crumble’s one’s personality and purpose.

(A plain swarming with Rank S Monsters, a Mountain of Poison, and a Beguiling forest... I’ve come to an incredible place...)

There wasn't a single safe-haven. Hiiro decided that he would have to be more wary than he could imagine.

Silva himself took severe damage as he finally exited the forest, but he was constantly attacked by monsters, and there was nothing to eat. After desperately clawing his way here, he gave in to his own hunger, and collapsed.

"But I digress. Anyways, I have a reason that I have to enter this mountain." (Silva)

"..." (Hiiro)

"If you plan on crossing this mountain no matter what, then I think it best if I were to accompany you." (Silva)

Silva had to cross it to return home as well. Their destinations were the same.

(But...)

The problem was whether one not he wanted to bring along someone who may be a burden to such a dangerous place. It's not like they were comrades or anything, and he didn't have any particular attachment to him. And seeing the old man in front of him get beaten up and poisoned was not a good sight for the eyes.

Mikazuki was enough of a burden to him, but then he remembered something.

He survived the 【Beguiling Forest】, and the monsters that attacked him up until now. Perhaps this old man had a little bit of skill. Even though Silva was collapsed from hunger, he had nothing that resembled a serious injury.

Hiiro immediately cast doubtful eyes on Silva. No, perhaps they were appraising eyes.

(This guy... could it be...)

As he thought that, Hiiro secretly tried to write 『Pry (覗)』. He concentrated magic on his finger. But the next instant, Silva's

eyebrow's twitched, and he glared at Hiiro's face. Hiiro immediately stopped writing.

“... What happened?” (Silva)

“... Meaning?” (Hiiro)

“No, I just felt a slight flow of magic.” (Silva)

“!?” (Hiiro)

It was truly a shock. It seems that Silva was able to sense that Hiiro was trying to do something.

(I definitely let out magic, but no one's been able to sense that until now...)

Perhaps the 『Evila』 Race, which specialized in magic, were all sensitive to its flow. He would have to be careful not to use magic in excess from here on. In the end, Hiiro was unable to check Silva's 《Status》 screen..

“No, it's nothing.” (Hiiro)

That was all he could say. And Silva didn't press any further.

“About that, Hiiro-sama.” (Silva)

“... What?” (Hiiro)

“How about it? I think my knowledge will prove useful to you in some way.” (Silva)

It was true that Hiiro knew nothing of this land. It's always better to have information than to not. But this Old Man's aura made it seem that he would be hard to deal with.

(Is he weak or strong... I still don't know. I might be able to get directions from him, but...)

If he accidentally used 《Word Magic》 and got found out, a problem might emerge. It wasn't a magic he wanted to flaunt to

others, so he wanted to refuse, but as their destinations were the same, and as Silva still wanted to return the favor, it may end up that they would be travelling together regardless.

(If I can skillfully draw out whatever info I need, and take out monsters with just my Katana...)

Thinking that, Hihiro made up his mind, and turned back to Silva.

“Fine. However, don’t do anything unnecessary. We’ll just be traveling together, got it?” (Hihiro)

“Nofofofofo! Understood. I’ll repay my debt in all sincerity! Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

He respectfully bowed.

(It seems I’ve made a companion I have to be wary around.)

Hihiro gazed at the mountain, with doubts swirling around his head. But this was merely another part of travelling. He hit Mikazuki’s back again, and proceeded forwards.

## Chapter 63: Venom Mountain

[TL : Replaced quote marks "" with 「 」 to denote talking. As the author uses this format, I thought I should follow suit.

In addition, I'll be following NetBlazer's format for the words/characters.

This is how it will look: 「English Word 」 | 『Japanese Character』

NetBlazer uses Silvan, however, our reference list had Shyuba, so...yeah.

changed 'old-fart' to 'Jii-san'

changed 'Shyuba' to 'Silva' ]

【Venom Mountain】 was spread with carpet of lush and dense grass. One was able to discover a Evila road that was unlike any of the Gabranth paths.The trees held thickly grown black leaves. There were even uniquely large mushrooms that made their habitat here.

Hiiro: (That's obviously a poison mushroom.)

While thinking thus, Hiiro proceeded to walk down the grass road while being extremely wary of his surroundings. In front of him was Silva who was leading the way.

Silva: 「Please take care, Hiiro-sama(1). The monsters that inhabit this area are well-versed in mimicry. It is not uncommon for those to be killed by poison fangs before one notices. 」



Hiiro: 「 You seem to know a lot, huh? 」

Silva: 「 This is because I am a Butler. 」

As he contemplated upon the reason for this, Hiiro thought that Silva might have performed a preliminary investigation before coming here. He was completely different from Hiiro who improvised his actions. Hiiro thought that it became necessary for him to emulate a little bit of Silva's manner of operation.

Silva: 「 Please stop here! 」

As Silva's feet abruptly stopped, Mikazuki followed suit.

Hiiro: 「 What is it? 」

Silva: 「 It is those branches. 」

In the direction that Silva had pointed his finger were, indeed, thick branches that grew from a large tree. However, all that Hiiro felt when he looked at it was that those were just branches.

Silva: 「 Over there are monsters that are mimicking branches. I presume that they are the monsters referred to as Lagoon.(2) 」

The knowledge of such a monster did not appear in Hiiro's memory. It was probably a monster specific to the 【Evila】 Continent.

Silva: 「 Please observe. 」

As he said thus, Silva began to retrieve something from his pouch. What had sparkled with a \*kira~n\*(3) was clearly a knife used for eating. Throwing the knife with a \*shuba\*(4), he pierced the branch that he had pointed at with his finger earlier.

「 Gugya-!(5) 」

At that location, a fat, cobra-like monster appeared, squirming around painfully with a \*kunekune\*(6) due to the knife protruding out of its body. It tried to move, however, as the knife had fastened its body to the branch it was mimicking, it could not escape from that spot.

Soon after, it expelled green blood as its movements stopped, as if forfeiting.

Hiiro: 「 You're pretty knowledgeable, huh. 」

Silva: 「 That is because I am a Butler. 」

Hiiro: 「 .....whatever. 」

Hiiro convinced himself that this was due to Silva's eyes having good vision.

Hiiro: 「 By the way, is this annoying weed-zone gonna keep going? 」

As the area around one's feet cannot be determined well, it would be a pain if they were attacked from below.

Silva: 「No, we will soon be approaching an open location. Unlike this area that is lush with long weeds and bushes, this location seems to be a grassland. Should one advance further, they would be met with a zone of granite. Proceeding past this stony area will bring you to the exit of the mountain. 」

Hiiro: 「I see. In that case, we should probably aim for that open area or something first, huh? 」

Silva: 「Indeed. What I am searching for appears to be in that location. 」

It seemed that Silva had been ordered by his master to search for a certain something. As Hiiro had no interest, he didn't ask any further. After walking for a while, Silva once again abruptly paused.

Hiiro: 「Another monster? 」

Silva: 「.....I must apologize. 」

As Silva's eyes were staring straight ahead, he gave his apology.

Hiiro: 「What's up? 」

Silva: 「It appears that we have been completely surrounded.」

Hiiro: 「What was that?」

Saying this, Hiiro instantly grew increasingly vigilant. Standing on Mikazuki's back, Hiiro attentively surveyed his surroundings. However, no matter where Hiiro looked, all he could see around him were weeds. Following this, a leaves began to flutter through the air. Hiiro thought that this was caused by the wind.

However, the leaves headed straight for Hiiro.

Silva: 「Please evade Hiiro-sama!」

Hiiro: 「Eh?」

In the instant that Hiiro expressed his confusion, Silva threw the knife towards Hiiro's location. Of course, what Silva was aiming for was not Hiiro, but the leaves. The knife penetrated the leaves before piercing itself into a tree trunk with a \*ton\*(7).

Six legs began to grow from the leaves. Similar to the previous Lagoon, it struggled to escape from the knife, yet it drew its last breath as its existence faded.

Silva: 「That was a Venom Insect(8) that disguises itself as tree leaves! It may look small, however, they contain an extremely deadly poison!」

Hiiro: 「Ku-!(9)」

As he was surrounded by dancing leaves, Hiiro assumed that all of them were those insects as his thoughts raced. As he looked around restlessly, Hiiro began to ponder about how to deal with this situation when-

Silva: 「There is a certain point that you can use to distinguish them! In the center of the leaf, if there is a red dot then they are Venom Insect! 」

While splendidly avoiding the leaves, Silva accurately pierced the insects. With that said, in this blizzard of leaves, identifying only the Venom Insects was a daunting task.

Hiiro: (I guess I've got no choice. If I use this, then the Jii-san(10) will probably disregard it as just normal magic.)

As he determined thus, Hiiro cast the word 「Fire」 | 『火』 to wrap flames around themselves. Of course, he made sure to avoid targeting Mikazuki. The flames spread as if they were a barrier of fire, mercilessly consuming any of the leaves that touched them.

Silva: 「Oo!(11) So Hiiro-sama was a spell-caster of Fire! 」

Receiving the reaction that he had expected, Hiiro felt relieved. After one minute passed, the flames naturally extinguished. At the same time, it seemed that the leaves that were dancing around earlier were now neatly and refreshingly burned.

Silva: 「Nofofofofof!(12) In any case, that was quite impressive. Normally, using fire in such a place would result in the flames spreading out of control. I did not believe that you were such a spell-caster capable of controlling the flames so that they would burn only the surrounding area. A thousand pardons. 」

As the surroundings were full of weeds and trees, it would not be strange for such a flame to turn into a forest fire. However, as Hiiro's magic caused the flames to be erased after a minute has passed, he wasn't concerned. On top of this, as Hiiro had made created the fire precisely according to his image, Silva mistook Hiiro as a flame spell-caster that could completely control his magic, an extraordinary mage.

Hiiro: (It looks like it went well, huh.)

Silva: 「With this much magic, even among those of the 『Imp Race』, you must be an extremely talented person, am I correct. 」

Hiiro somewhat happily began to speak.

Hiiro: 「Aa(13), in regards to fire magic, I've never lost once. 」

Although this wasn't a complete lie, as he didn't want to reveal his < <Word Magic> >, he had no choice but to phrase his answer as such.

Silva: 「Nofofofofof! Indeed, indeed. It appears that one such as myself might not have been necessary! 」

Hiiro: 「More importantly, let's keep moving. It looks like the grassland is up ahead.」

As the three of them continued walking, they advanced through and exited the weed-zone.

Author's Note: It looks like the Butler's pretty skilled.<sup>14</sup>

## Notes:

1. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
2. TL Note: Lagoon = ルグーン. For those that have better translations, feel free to suggest. Although, I doubt that this will be used again so...
3. \*kira~n\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*shine\*.
4. \*shuba\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*woosh\* (I think). Just think of the sound that occurs when someone makes a rapid, sudden movement. The sudden movement causes friction with the wind (or fans it), making the sound.
5. Gugya: Sound of agony/pain/torment/death cry/etc.
6. \*kunekune\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*wriggle\*.
7. \*ton\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thump\*. Think of something striking wood.
8. TL Note: Venom Insect = ヴェノム虫 with the 虫 character read as ちゅう. Again, better translations are welcome.
9. Ku: An expression similar to a grunt of frustration.
10. Jii-san: An incredibly informal way of addressing an elderly male. Think friendly 'old-man' or rude 'old-fart'. This can be thought to be a variant of Ossan.
11. Oo: Not 2 'o' but an elongated O. Expresses surprise/amazement.

12. Nofofofofo: Silva's laugh. Get used to it. He does it a lot...
13. Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like 'Uh-huh' or 'Yeah'.
14. TL Note: The author uses the phrase なかなか| nakanaka. This usually denotes to the subject being 'pretty good'. As this made no sense when translated literally, I took some liberties in the translation.



## Chapter 64: The fight with the Cactus Man

As Silva had indicated earlier, the area was absent of overgrown weeds. Looking at the environment filled with a variety of numerous blooming flowers, it was as if they had entered another world.

Silva: 「 Please proceed with caution. 」

Hiiro: 「 You're trying to say that there are also monsters that mimic flowers here, right? 」

Silva: 「 Nofofo(1), precisely. 」

In response Hiiro's perceptiveness, Silva responded with a beaming smile.

As they plowed through the field while maintaining high vigilance, Silva began to grow restless.

Hiiro: 「 Is this about that thing you were looking for? 」

Silva: 「 Yes. It was supposedly growing around this area, yet... 」

As he examined a patch of flowers of various vivid hues, his gaze focused on a single flower.

Silva: 「 Oo~(2), here it is! 」

Hiirō similarly directed his gaze. What was present was a flower that blossomed with petals the shade of a rare gold. Its shape and appearance somehow resembled a rose.

Silva: 「Uu~(3), I was finally able to obtain it, Ojou-sama~(4)」

Taking a handkerchief from his pocket, Silva began to wipe his tears brought forth by overflowing emotions. Perhaps Silva's heart was moved due to the fact that he achieved his mission in such a treacherous area where one could die at anytime.

Silva: 「Nofofofofof! I have successfully retrieved the 《Golden Rose》 (5)!」

At that moment, as if Silva's sentiments were being interjected(6)-

\*Gogogogogogogogo\*(7)

The environment began to sway. The trembling was so substantial it would make one question whether a magnitude 5(8) earthquake was occurring. Following this, a crack ran across the ground that the 《Golden Rose》 was growing on. From the crack, something seemed to be squeezed out.

「Kiii~!(9)」

What had raised such a peculiar cry was a monster that had the 《Golden Rose》 appended to its head as hair. Its body length was about the size of a passenger carriage's height, and it had sharp needles covering its whole body. It was a monster that resembled a

cactus with arms and legs.

Silva: 「A-as I thought, this it's been infected by a parasitic cactus! 」

Hiiro: 「What kind of monster is it? 」

Silva: 「Parasitic Cacti usually sleep in the ground, however, they occasionally feed by latching onto high vitality flowers for their nutrition! The 《Golden Rose》 has oft been referred to as the ‘rose that will never wither’. Its not a plant whose vitality would be classified as minuscule. In addition, the flower also possesses special effects. I had anticipated that a Parasitic Cactus would feed on it, however, I sincerely wished that I would not have to encounter one. 」

Hiiro; 「I see. 」

As he returned a faint nod, he instructed Mikazuki to keep her distance.

Hiiro: 「Well then, although it was hard to do anything earlier, it looks like I'll be able to move as I please this time. I'll help you clean this up 」

Silva: 「Please wait, Hiiro-sama(10)! If you were to use fire, then-! 」

In as state of panic, Silva shot off a string of words.

Hiiro: 「I know. You're saying that I'll end up burning the 《Golden Rose》, right? Calm down, I'm not gonna use fire. 」

As he spoke, he drew out his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』. Seeing this katana(11), Silva was impressed as he widened his eyes.

Silva: 「Nofofo, that is the 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』, is it not!? 」

Hiiro: 「Nn?(12) You know of it? 」

Silva: 「Indeed. As- 」

However, as if restating that this was no time for leisure, the Parasitic Cactus' needles flew at them.

Silva: 「Nofo! 」

Hiiro: 「Yotto(13)! We'll talk later! First, let's crush this guy! 」

As the two evaded the needles, they distanced themselves from the cactus.

Silva: 「H-however, are you certain about this? This opponent is of substantially high skill. 」

Hiiro: 「Fun(14), it's perfect for leveling up. Oi(15), Cactus Man! If you're gonna fight then get your ass over here! 」

In face of Hiiro's provocation, the Parasitic Cactus approached while raising a fairly loud groan. If they were to collide, Hiiro would undoubtedly be skewered by the myriad of thorns growing all over the Cactus Man's body.

Silva: 「As those needles contain poison, please be cautious.」

Hiiro: 「Got it!」

Strongly kicking off the ground, Hiiro slipped past the Parasitic Cactus' right side, turning towards its back. As Hiiro was going to plunge his katana into the Cactus Man's back, the Cactus began to shoot the needles on its back towards Hiiro's direction.

Hiiro: 「This asshole-!？」

In an instant, Hiiro considered cutting down the projectile needles with his katana. However, as the number of needles were overwhelming, he determined that he would soon become prey to a countless number of the Cactus Man's thorns, being the end of him.

Hiiro: (Shit! If it comes to this, I should use the 「Protect」 | 『坊』 word and-!)

As Hiiro was about to attempt to use 《Word Magic》 out of necessity, Silva suddenly appeared in front of him, spreading his arms wide as if he were shielding Hiiro.

\*busubusubusubusubusubusubusu\*(16)

Hiiro: 「Jii-san(17)!」

The needles mercilessly pierced Silva's body.

As if it was exhausted after expelling all of its needles, the Parasitic Cactus' movements halted. Silva slightly moved his mouth.

Silva: 「....n-now...is the....time.....if you...sever the....flower from the head, then.....」

It seemed that the Cactus would be defeated if the flower from the head was cut. Thinking that he had to do something to the Parasitic Cactus, Hiiro placed a large amount of force in his feet as he made a huge leap.

Hiiro: 「Haa-(18)!」

Hiiro used his katana to cut the stem of the 《Golden Rose》. The 《Golden Rose》 was splendidly severed from the Parasitic Cactus' body. The body of the Parasitic Cactus that was of a green tint, changed to an earthly shade before collapsing as if it were made of sand. Only the 《Golden Rose》 remained.

Taking the 《Golden Rose》 on top of the sand that was once the Parasitic Cactus, Hiiro spat out a sigh with a \*Fu~\*(19). Following this, as if suddenly occurring to him, he looked towards Silva.

Seeing the state that Silva was in, Hiiro widened his eyes without thinking. As to why, this is because...

Silva: 「Fu~, yareyare(20).」

As if he were simply brushing off dust, Silva began to brush off the needles with a \*pasapasa\*(21). In addition, he was doing it nonchalantly.

Hiiro: 「...Jii-san, the poison?」

No matter how one looked at it, Silva's countenance was not one of somebody suffering from any sort of deadly poison. Hearing Hiiro's doubts, Silva returned his question with a pleasant smile.

Silva: 「There is no issue.」

Hiiro: 「.....ha-(22)?」

Silva: 「Because I am a Butler.」

Hiiro: 「.....」

As Hiiro's cheat was also outside the realm of the 'standard', he couldn't help but feel a connection with the elderly man before him who had apparently also exceed the norm.

Hiiro: 「Oi, weren't you speaking really painfully earlier?」

Certainly, during the time when Silva informed Hiiro of the weak

point concerning the flower, his face was distorted in considerable pain.

Silva: 「Nofofofofof.....let us just say, that I conformed with the atmosphere? 」

Hiiro: 「....this Jiji(23). 」

\*Piki\*(24) A blue vein appeared on Hiiro's forehead. It seemed that he had only put on an act in order to fit the situation.

Silver: 「In any case, Hiiro-sama. The 《Golden Rose》 is...? 」

Hiiro: 「...ha~(25), here. 」

Even if he were to pursue further, Hiiro somehow understood that Silva would just answer 'Because I am a Butler', shrouding the truth in a cloud of mist. As he determined that this meant the butler did not want to disclose any more, Hiiro simply answered him without investigating further.

Silva: 「Oo~, with this, I can finally return to the mansion! 」

As he received the 《Golden Rose》 from Hiiro by gently wrapping both his hands around it, he raised it towards the sky, using it as a background as he gazed at it.

Silva: 「I am eternally grateful, Hiiro-sama! It was truly thanks to you that I was able to obtain the item that I was searching for without harm! Nofofofofof! 」

Hiiro: 「Good for you. 」

As Hiiro said this without any particular feelings charged into it, he sheathed his katana. Seeing this, Silva expressed an 「Oo~ 」 as he tapped his hand with a \*pon\*(26).

Silva: 「Speaking of which, about our previous conversation... 」



Hiiro: 「 Ah? ...Aa, you mean about the katana? 」

In the middle of the encounter, Silva brought up a story concerning the 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』 . His atmosphere indicated that he was familiar with it.

Silva: 「 Indeed. I believe that is the 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』 , correct? 」

Hiiro: 「 Aa, what of it? It's not for sale. 」

Silva: 「 Nofofu! I am not indicating that I desire that katana. It is just that as it has been such a long time since I have seen that katana, I couldn't help but get a little emotional with my words. 」

Hiiro: 「 A long time? You've seen it? 」

Silva: 「 Indeed. That katana happens to be one produced by a dear friend of mine. Well, 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』 was a prototype that was developed in a single attempt, but... 」

Hiiro: 「 A prototype...you say? 」

Silva: 「 Indeed. Although he is a Gabranth, he is a sword-smith(27) that has an arm that cannot be compared with any other. How nostalgic~. I wonder as to how he is doing right now... 」

As he saw Silva's distant eyes immersed in nostalgia, Hiiro opened his mouth with a skeptical expression.

Hiiro: 「This is a prototype?」

If you were to put it succinctly, its sharpness was outstanding and its ease of use was admirable compared to other swords in its group. This katana, Hiiro couldn't count how many times he had been saved by it. He thought that its absence would undoubtedly have made his journey more difficult.

Hearing that such workmanship amounted to a prototype at most, Hiiro could not help but suspect those words.

Silva: 「That is, without a doubt, a prototype. I say this because his genuine works often have his signature applied to the hilt and the blade.」

Upon closely inspecting the katana, Hiiro could not find anything resembling a signature.

Silva: 「In addition, if that were genuine, a monster of that level would be sliced with one swing.」

Hiiro: 「...so his real works are at that level, huh?」

Silva: 「You are correct. Well, even if a prototype, his katanas tend to select their own owners. In my eyes, that katana appears to be very satisfied. Satisfied that it is in the hands of a good owner.」

In the face of this statement, Hiiro began to feel an itchy feeling infested in him. As he determined that should this continue, he would grow sick due to the cozy atmosphere, he began to change the topic.

Hiiro: 「A-any way. Where're you going from here? You've finished your errand, right Jii-san? 」

Silva: 「Eh? Ah, indeed. If we were to advance, we would soon reach the granite area. As it is a downward slope from there, the exit of the mountain will follow soon after. 」

Hiiro: 「I see. Then let's hurry up and move. 」

Silva: 「As you wish. 」

Hiiro: 「Oi, Yodare-Tori(28)! Show yourself! 」

As Hiiro called for Mikazuki, she poked her head out from behind a tree with a \*hyoko\*(29).

Hiiro: 「Yosh, let's quickly get out of this mountain. 」

## Notes:

1. Nofoto: Silva's laugh. Get used to it. He does it a lot...
2. Oo: Not 2 'o'o but an elongated O. Expresses surprise/amazement.
3. Uu: An expression denoting joy in this context.
4. Ojou-sama: A term used to refer to a female of high status. Alternate Trans: 'My lady' | 'Mistress'
5. TL Note: Konjiki no Rose Master...
6. TL Note: Term used for 'interject' is tsukkomi.[[http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Glossary\\_of\\_owarai\\_terms](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Glossary_of_owarai_terms)]

Couldn't be bothered to try and incorporate it into the sentence.

1. \*Gogo\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*rumble\*.
2. TL Note: Not sure if this is precise. Phrase used is 'Japanese Earthquake Measurement'.
3. Kiii~: Shrill cry?
4. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
5. TL Note: Katana|刀 is the kanji used here. As this is different from Sword|剣, I have translated it as such..
6. Nn: Expression denoting interest or confusion.
7. Yotto: Expression used when someone is casually demonstrating effort. Similar to 'hah!' or a groan.
8. Fun: Equivalent of 'Hmph'.
9. Oi: Kinda like 'hey'.
10. \*busubusu\*: Sound of something getting pierced. The sound a pin makes when pierced into a pincushion.
11. Jii-san: An incredibly informal way of addressing an elderly male. Think of the friendly 'old-man' or the rude 'old-fart'. This can be thought to be a variant of Ossan.
12. Haa: A grunt and/or shout used when someone is demonstrating effort.
13. \*Fu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia denoting the sound of exhalation.
14. Yareyare: An expression mildly denoting exasperation. Think 'good grief'.
15. \*pasapasa\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*patpat\* (I think?). Not sure. Consult Mr. Google.
16. Ha-?: 'Huh?'
17. Jiji: An alternative of Jii-san. As it does not have the suffix '-san', it is considerably more informal/rude.
18. \*Piki\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*twitch\* (I think?). Not sure. Consult Mr. Google.
19. Ha~: Exhalation | A sigh | Exasperation
20. \*pon\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*pop\* (I think?). Don't know how to explain this one. If you've watched anime, you've probably seen it.
21. TL Note: Literally read as Katana-Smith. I thought it sounded

weird so changed it to Swordsmith.

22. Yodare-Tori: Hihiro's nickname for Mikazuki. Literally means Drool (Yodare) Bird (Tori).
23. \*pyoko\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*poking out\* (I think?). Think of a wood block sound. If you've watched anime, you've probably seen it.

## Chapter: 65 Towards the Mansion

With assistance and information supplied by Silva, Hiiro passed through the rocky terrain, defeated various monsters, and exited [Venom Mountain] without encountering any major issues.

“Even so, I’m impressed that you are so strong! Nofofofofof”  
(Silva)

“Is that so? I’m surprised an old man like you can fight. But...”  
(Hiiro)

This was true. Silva had known a lot about the monsters that they faced and didn’t waste a single motion or movement when dealing with them. He was also able to precisely attack the vital points of his opponents. His actions and abilities were like those of an experienced adventurer.

Hiiro knew that the Evila had great combat ability. If even normal people like Silva were this strong, it was hard for him to imagine how powerful the Evila could become.

Silva was not an adventurer. As he was forced to become independent at an early age, he was hired to work for at a Residence due to some unknown circumstance. Ever since, he has been working as a butler.

Hiiro arrived at the conclusion that Silva acquired his combat skills and knowledge in order to protect his master. As a side note, Hiiro was able to acquire such information not because he had asked, but because Silva kept talking about himself after proposing that they should conduct some ‘Communication’.

“We’ll cross the mountains soon. Is there a town passed these mountains?” (Hiiro)

“A town...hmm, if you are searching for a settlement, then there is one far beyond these mountain.” (Silva)

“How far?” (Hiiro)

“Very, very far.” (Silva)

“.....” (Hiiro)

It seemed that there was still a long way to go.

“If it is fine with you, I would like to go back to the mansion and use my skill to treat you to a dinner with the [Gold Rose].” (Silva)

“...dinner?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro’s ears perked up as he swallowed.

“Indeed. Even though I may look like this, I have some confidence in my cooking skills.” (Silva)

“Really?” (Hiiro)

“Of course, there is [Puryun Fruit] as well” (Silva)

“Kui kui kui kui kui kui!” (Mikazuki)

Upon hearing the name of her favorite food, Mikazuki became overjoyed.

“Are you sure it is alright? Don’t you need your master’s permission?” (Hiiro)

“That is true, however, I believe there is nothing to be concerned about.” (Silva)

“What’s with that baseless confidence?” (Hiiro)

“In my opinion, the master is someone that would neither accept nor refuse a person.” (Silva)

“Fu~” (Hiiro)

“Well, if it is a person that master likes, the master will usually try to obtain that person regardless of the means.” (Silva)

“What a peculiar master...” (Hiiro)

Hihiro thought that what he described was no different than kidnapping.

“Master is also so cute. Aah...how long has it been...how I want to look at Ojou-sama’s adorable face as soon as possible...and then be commanded.”

(Aah...I almost forgot, this guy’s a big pervert...and also a M...)  
(M = masochist)

Seeing the old man, who had his cheeks flushed red from ecstasy, staring up in a trance, Hihiro quickly distanced himself from the him. Somehow also sensing that the old man was dangerous, Mikazuki also followed suit.

However, it was undeniable that Hihiro found Silva’s offer enticing. Even though there was indeed a town passed the mountain, it was quite a considerable distance away. He concluded that going with the old man would be a good opportunity to rest, and obtain some information as well.

Thus, Hihiro decided to change his next destination to Sylva’s house, and then continue his journey from there.

---

“Oooooooooojoooouuu-saaaaaaamaaaaaa!” (???)

A girl wearing a maid uniform hastily headed towards a room, sweat flying off of her forehead. Her twin tails colored a light peach swayed back and forth as she ran. She stopped in front of a door, pausing in order to try and control her ragged breathing before she unsteadily opened the door. However-

Pote (tripping sound)

Even though there was no obstacle nearby, the girl somehow tripped over her own feet, falling onto her face as she opened the door.

“Puni~” (Maid)



The girl began to tear up as she rubbed her nose.

“Fufue~, it hurts~” (Maid)

The girl had faint freckles apparent on her cheeks and something that resembled a red jewel was embedded in the center of her forehead. She possessed charming facial features with eyes that were large and round, resembling the shape of chestnuts. Her skin was saturated with a brown pigment.

She herself was at the age of 16, yet, as this was not very apparent in both her appearance or behaviour, she seemed to have a complex about it. However, her key feature was undeniably her chest. Her ample breasts would bounce (Purun Purun) with each motion.

Even though her proportions and style were good, her face and stature were relatively small. As she was constantly teased with this by the master that she served, it had become one of her recent concerns.

As the girl entered the dimly room, there were skulls, swords, eerie masks and various solemn devices scattered around. The dimly lit room looked as if someone was practicing black magic.

In the center of the room, there was a large magic circle. On top of said circle was a bed veiled by a dark curtain.

“You’re so noisy, Shamoe” (Master)

The voice came from the bed. A silhouette of a person could be seen behind the curtain veil. The person didn’t make any motions to revitalize herself as she just sat up. The maid, referred to as Shamoe, stood up in attention and spoke with a tense voice.

“I~I I I’mmmmmm sorry! I~I I I fell down again.” (Shamoe)

“That aside, did something happen?” (Master)

Upon hearing Shamoe’s words, the person let out a sigh. As the person was just a sleep, she appeared to be in a particularly bad mood.

“Th-th-thats right, u-um-um-um-um!” (Shamoe)

“It is alright so please calm down.” (Master)

“Ye-yes. Ha~fu~, ha~fu~” (Shamoe)

As Shamoe took several deep breaths to calm herself, her chest slightly moved up and down. Following this, she then brought both her hands between her chest.

“A-Actually, t-they c-came home.” (Shamoe)

She spoke with an excited voice and sparkling eyes.

“...came home?” (Master)

“Yes, Silva-sama came home.” (Shamoe)

“.....damn, he didn’t die, that pervert.” (Master)

“Yes? Did you say something?” (Shamoe)

“No, it’s nothing, that aside is he inside the house?” (Master)

“Eh, ah, yes! But...” (Shamoe)

“Hn? But what...?” (Master)

The sudden pause in Shamoe’s voice caused her to worry.

“U-um, that is, he brought someone with him” (Shamoe)

“...brought someone?” (Master)

“Y-yes, his savior who crossed the [Venom Mountain] with him, it seems that he is of the [Imp Race].” (Shamoe)

“Really?” (Master)

Having piqued her interest she opened her mouth in a smirk.

“F-first, we should prepare some appetizers for the guest. I-is something wrong?” (Shamoe)

As Shamoe understood that her master may be in a bad mood due to being abruptly roused from their sleep, she thought that she might have executed something offensive and became flustered.

“...First off, start preparing food for Silva and the guest” (Master)

“T-then?” (Shamoe)

“Aa, I was getting bored. It might be good to pass some time. I can talk leisurely with our guest while we are eating. Kukuku” (Master)

“U-understood!” (Shamoe)

Shamoe bowed her head once before leaving the room. On the way out, a “puni” sound could be heard. It was clear that Shamoe had tripped once again. The person that remained in the room was thinking carefully about the guest, so she did not pay it any mind.

“Kukuku, that idiot brought a person with him...I wonder what kind of fellow he is...?” (Master)

Within that dark room, only the eyes of the person within suspiciously glowed.

Author Note: What do you think about the new character lolol

## Chapter 66: The Chaotic Trio

Hiiro, who had passed by the guest room, looked back at the path that his journey had taken him through so far.

After he had hiked over the mountain, a forest had appeared before him. Speeding through such a forest, he was met with a small lake that spread itself across the horizon. In the center of the lake stood a lone island.

The lake was so peculiar, that it wouldn't be strange to expect to see a donut shape if one were to view the lake from the sky. In other words, the island played the perfect role as the donut hole. The lake water had a shade of deep crimson as the small floating island exuded an overwhelming presence.

The reason for this was due to what was on top of the island. Perhaps in an attempt to highlight the island's presence, a fairly large mansion had been erected upon it. Similar to the previously seen 《King's Tree》, a garden was spread, surrounding the mansion. It held gorgeous flowers and raised plantation that secreted a pleasant aroma.

Silva stated that that mansion was the one he served in. As a boat had been prepared nearby, they had decided to ride on it. It seemed that as this boat was facing the Mountain of Poison, it could be determined that Silva had used this when crossing the lake.

As they got on the boat, while leisurely making their way to the island, Hiiro was informed about the background of the mansion.

There seemed to be three individuals that lived in this house, including Silva. There was the Master, the Maid, and the Butler. This meant that other than these three, there were no other persons on the premises.

It seemed that the garden that was visible from the boat was created for the sake of the maid's hobby. In addition, Hiiro was told that as the Master was very whimsical, her personality was very difficult to deal with.

Certainly, one would not normally send their servant off towards the toxic 【Venom Mountain】. Was this an indication of the extent that the master trusted Silva, or...

As Hiiro thought thus, he arrived on the island. Mikazuki looked at Hiiro as if asking him what she should do. As Silva was obviously unable to grant her entry into the mansion, it was decided that she would be kept in a feeding ground for livestock. As it was fairly close, Hiiro waited while Silva led Mikazuki towards the feeding grounds.

Upon looking at it up close, the mansion's size seemed to have increased. It was without a doubt an establishment that emanated wealth. Yet as the only residents of the mansion were only three people, Hiiro certainly thought it was peculiar. As Hiiro was not particularly interested, however, he didn't bother to ask about it.

As Hiiro exited the garden and approached the mansion entrance, he encountered a lone girl, cleaning as she held a broom in hand.

Noticing their presence, the maid widened her eyes with all her might as she startlingly shrieked Silva's name. Following this, she kept weeping 「Thank goodness. Thank the Heavens.」 (1) with watery eyes. She then redirected her gaze towards Hiiro.

Upon realizing that she was completely visible to Hiiro, she winced for whatever reason as her body trembled in fright. As he had determined that he was not very welcomed, Hiiro approached as he wore a wry smile.

When Silva explained as to who Hiiro was, the frightened atmosphere surrounding her slightly subsided. However, her eyes immediately widened as she stuttered 「W-w-w-w-we need to report this!」, following which she opened the door with tremendous speed before entering the mansion. In the instant that she tried to enter the mansion, however, she flashily tumbled to the floor with a \*doka\*(2). As there was nothing that one would be able to stumble on within the vicinity, those who would bear witness to such a scene would feel exasperated.

As Silva looked over her situation while wearing a seemingly

pleasant smile-

Silva: 「Iya~(3) As expected, a young lady is pleasant, don't you agree~? That \*purunpurun\*(4) is absolutely irresistible~ Nofofofof~(5)! 」

Let us retract the previous statement(6). If one were to inspect closely, Silva's cheeks were slightly flushed and his nose was slightly extended. In addition, there was a dangerous light lurking in the depths of his eyes. Seeing this, Hiiro involuntarily backed away.

Silva: 「Now then, shall we proceed inside. 」

Even though he said this, Hiiro began to seriously consider whether it would be fine to follow after such a pervert. However, as he had come all the way here, he considered that it would be fine to enter as long as he remained vigilant of the pervert.

Although the inside was considerably dim, tall vases, paintings and other ornaments decorated the surroundings. The cleaning seemed to be very meticulous as there was barely any dust and the decorations were kept in very good condition. Although this was probably the maid's work, Hiiro was genuinely impressed as cleaning such a large mansion with such attentive detail was no easy feat.

As Hiiro passed the guest room, he was told to wait there. Thus, he did as he was told as he placed himself on a sofa.

Hiiro: (Putting that all aside, this is a pretty huge mansion, huh?)

Hiiro thought as he stared at the lake visible from the window. Although it was true that a mansion surrounded by a lake may certainly sound like a romantic place, Hiiro couldn't help but wonder why they would conspicuously build a mansion on top of an island as it seemed severely inconvenient.

Was it build due to the indulgence of wealth? Or was it built for some other reason...

Hiiro: (Well, I don't really give a damn. After I finish eating, I'm

outta here.)

It would be just as it was before. As he determined that he would continue his journey alone, he began to write words on his arm,

Hiiro: (For Mikazuki, I'll install 「Speed」 | 『速』 and 「Protect」 | 『防』 . Just in case something happens, I'd better be prepared.)

The words Hiiro wrote on his arm were 「Protect」 | 『防』 , 「Speed」 | 『速』 , and 「Pry」 | 『覗』 . The first two words were generally used to deal with a predicament should it arise. The third word, 「Pry」 | 『覗』 , when activated instantly allowed Hiiro to view the target's 《Status》 . As Silva was overly sensitive to magical energy, if Hiiro wanted to use magic, he would quickly draw his attention. As such, Hiiro deemed that his abilities would be eventually revealed.

As such, if he were to set up the words in advance, he could activate magic while eliminating the need to write the words by concentrating magic in his finger. Also, it was possible to activate the magic and obtain its effects, even in a short time period.

Hiiro: (Well, there's still the one minute time limit before I can activate it but...well, I doubt I'll get a chance to use it.)

Putting the matter of the time limit aside, Hiiro could now wait for Silva to come before activating the words. However, Hiiro doubted that Silva would come within a minute. He also set up the words not for the purpose of using them against Silva, but for investigating his master.

As he believed that he would not be simply taken straight to the dining table, Hiiro thought that even though the other party was wealthy, it would still be preferable to have information about them than not. To that end, seeing as he could get a glimpse of their 《Status》 , he was in a very advantageous situation.

Once he had made his preparations, Hiiro waited for a while before Silva returned. As his Butler Uniform that had been previously dirty was now clean, it was apparent that he had gone to change his clothes.

Silva: 「Now, please come this way, for I will introduce you to the master. 」

Following Silva's direction, Hiiro departed from the guest room. As Hiiro walked through a lengthy corridor, a pleasant aroma drifted into the passageway, tickling his nasal cavity.

\*Gugyuruu~\*(7)

Due to the smell, a stomach began to growl. However, the source of the sound did not come from Hiiro.

Silva: 「Iya~, I believe that my stomach seems to be quite famished~ 」

Hiiro: 「Bastard, you ate my food, didn't you!? 」

Before they had arrived here, almost all of Hiiro's food had now been supposedly residing in Silva's stomach. In spite of this, the fact that Silva's stomach was howling was truly shocking.

Silva: 「Nofofofofo! I must be ready for any situation that arises! Because I am a Butler! Nofofofofo! 」

Hiiro: 「Not that again... 」

As he looked carefully at the hungry, perverted butler, Hiiro could only spit out a sigh. Hiiro wanted to make a tsukkomi, saying that being a butler was utterly unrelated!.

Silva: 「Behold, we have arrived. 」

As Hiiro was stopped in front of the door, Silva began to slowly open it. What appeared before him were several long desks covered in pure white table cloths, on top of which were a variety of dishes neatly arranged. The odor was so stimulating it made one involuntary swallow salivation.

At the end of the long tables was someone sitting in a chair.

??? 「I welcome you, unusual visitor. 」



She possessed long hair that seemed to look like flames as it maintained a hue of fiery crimson. As she raised her strong, assertive eyes towards Hiiro's direction, her lovely little lips distorted into the shape of a crescent moon. Her pure white, Gothic Lolita style dress matched her red hair splendidly.

Although being watched by evaluating eyes was unpleasant, there was something else that caught Hiiro's attention.

Hiiro: (This person couldn't be...?)

As he thought thus, Hiiro glanced at Silva, to which Silva responded with a small nod.

Silva: 「I shall proceed with the introductions. This is the master of this mansion. Liliyn Li Reysis Redrose-sama.」

Hearing Silva's introduction, Hiiro carefully looked at Liliyn.

Hiiro: (As I thought..... but even so.....)

He once again examined Liliyn. He lightly exhaled.

Hiiro: (.....isn't she just a brat?)

Indeed, her appearance was indisputably a child. She was very much similar to Muir. Well, as Muir was too young, perhaps the comparison would apply better to Mimiru.

What was before him could only be described as a girl around the age of ten. However, Hiiro knew that Silva would not tell such a pointless lie. As such, the little girl that was in front of his eyes was really the master of this mansion, the person Silva served.

Hiiro: (So this kid was the perpetrator responsible for sending Silva to the mountain of poison?)

It was natural to doubt this suspicion, however, Silva simply pulled out a comb from his pocket and began to adjust his hair.

Silva: 「Oh dear oh dear, Nofofofofo.」

As Silva said thus, Liliyn began to pout as her face was filled with disgust. Whether or not Silva noticed her expression, he continued.

Silva: 「Aa...as usual, such a beautiful and adorable Ojou-sama(8)...」

As he wondered what the hell Silva was saying, Hihiro merely looked at him.

Silva: 「No, I am mistaken. Compared to before, you shine as if a you were a bewitching moon upon a mystical dark night. Your charm that knows not of tranquility. I...I...」

Seeing this, Liliyn simply shook her head in grief.

Silva: 「I AM INDESCRIBABLY OVERJOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOOYED!!!!」

As Silva's body was trembling, he abruptly leaped towards Liliyn. Following this.....

Silva: 「Ojjoussamaaaaaaaaa~n-!!!!」

While enthusiastically pouting his lips, Silva flew through the air with his arms spread wide. Although Hihiro had seen many of Silva's eccentricities, even he was stunned, left speechless by the current situation.

\*Dogo!\* \*Baki!\* \*Bako!\* \*Bogo~n!\*(9)

After a few moments had passed, Silva's head was plunged into the floor. The figure that had trampled on his back with a single foot was Liliyn. The maid that was close to the two began to panic as she unconsciously kept spouting 「Awa awa(10)」.

Liliyn: 「Unbelievable, this perverted Jiji(11) bastard! Why the hell doesn't he just die!?」

Although it seemed that the little girl had spoken something outrageous, a muffled voice could be heard from under the floor.

Silva: 「This....this is....what they call...love....」

\*Bakin!\*(12)

Silva: 「Bufo-!(13)」

It seemed that the girl had apparently dealt the finishing blow to the pervert. As the body was trampled by her foot, it made an unpleasant sound. Ever since, the perverted Jiji was remained silent.

After dusting herself off with a \*ponpon\*(14), she placed herself down onto the seat that she had sat down in previously.

Liliyn: 「Well, I have exterminated the creepy insect. Shamoe, introduction.」

Liliyn continued the self-introductions as if nothing had just occurred. The provoked maid let out a 「Feh!?(15)」 as she hurriedly lowered her head.

Shamoe: 「A-awawawawawa! S-Shamoe is, well-! Um, Shamoe is a maid so I do the cleaning, the cooking, and gardening as a hobby for a maid, i-i-i-i-i-f you were to put it simply, then I am just an average maid!」

Hihiro(16): 「...you said that you were a maid three times in your introduction though?」

Shamoe: 「Fe-!? I-I-I-I've failed again!」

Her face flushed a bright scarlet. And then-

\*Gongongongongongongongon!\*(17)

She began hammering her forehead against the wall.

Shamoe: 「Baka baka baka baka-!(18) Shamoe is a big baka! Even though I decided that I would do it correctly~~!」

Hihiro began to reassess the situation. Buried under the floor was the head of a perverted butler. Near the wall was a maid that suddenly panicked, slamming her head repeatedly in tears. Lastly, the one who was grinning while overlooking the maid's antics, a

little girl

Hiiro: (This is undoubtedly chaos...)

Hiiro began to suspect that he was largely mistaken in coming to this mansion.

Author Note: Iya~ such an amusing trio lolol.(19)

## Notes:

1. TL Note: She repeats Yokatta | 良かった which is basically an expression of relief. I have used variations as I think it fits it better.
2. \*doka\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thud\*.
3. Iya: Hard to translate. Means, 'Well~' or 'Oh man~' (I think). Go Google it.
4. \*purun\*: はぁぁ、この変態執事...Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*jiggle\*.
5. Nofofo: Silva's laugh.
6. TL Note: This is hard to translate without introducing an entity. The Japanese is 前言撤回 which basically means 'Previous Statement Withdrawal'. While I could have simply used this, I felt it was clunky so I introduced a 'narrator' entity for this sentence only. I could have used Hiiro, however, it is not indicated that this is Hiiro's thoughts.
7. \*Gugyuru\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*growl\*.
8. Ojou-sama: A term used to refer to a female of high status. Alt Trans: 'My Lady' | 'Mistress'
9. TL Note: I'm not gonna bother. Basically, sounds like \*Bang\* \*Crash\* \*Pow\*. Just go to Mr. G if you want accurate interpretations.
10. Awa: Expression conveying that the person is flustered.
11. Jiji: An alternative of Jii-san. As it doesn't have a suffix '-san', it is considerably more informal/rude.
12. \*Bakin\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*crunch\* I think. Refer to [Note 9](#).
13. Bufo: Cry of pain/agony/misery/etc.
14. \*pon\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*pat\*.

15. TL Note: フエ | Fe is an expression of startlement. I'm fairly certain that it is different from a certain girl's popular saying 'Fue'.
16. TL Note: Not sure who's speaking here. I'm assuming Hiiro but could very well be Liliyn.
17. \*Gon\*: Japanese onomatopoeia which basically means \*bang\*. Think of a more hollow sound.
18. Baka: If you don't know what this is...then you're a real idiot (baka).
19. TL Note: Lol is expressed as 'w' in Japanese. w is short for warau | 笑う which means 'laugh'. As there were two 'w's I opted for two Lols. The more you know...?

## Chapter 67: The Devious Girl - Liliyn

After a while, the maid had slightly calmed down, allowing Hiiro to elicit her name. Shamoe Arneil. That was her name. If she were to remain silent, she would undoubtedly be a pretty girl, despite the freckles on her cheeks. However, as she stutters throughout her speech and often trips over nothing, she was practically the definition of a clumsy girl.

Liliyn: 「 Well then, isn't about time we heard about you? 」

Liliyn's eyes sparkled with intrigue as she stared at Hiiro. However, Silva, who had imperceptibly revived, lowered his head as he respectfully bowed.

Silva: 「 In which case, please allow me. 」

Liliyn: 「 ...-tch, you already revived, huh. 」

As she literally clicked her tongue, she unleashed words full of disgust.

Silva: 「 Nofofo(1), well then. The person before you is Hiiro Okamura-sama(2). He is the benefactor who saved my life at the entrance of the toxic 【Venom Mountain】. 」

Liliyn: 「 Fumu(3). I have heard this much from Shamoe. Hiiro or whatever, even if he is a pervert, he is my possession. I give you my thanks. 」

Hiiro: 「 More importantly, can I eat now? 」

No matter where he was, Hiiro was unwaveringly honest to his desires. As he had been forced to wait while a scrumptious meal had been prepared before him, Hiiro was at his limit. The only thing reflected in Hiiro's eyes was the enticing cuisine laid about the tables.

Hearing Hiiro's bluntness, Liliyn could only stare blankly while blinking several times. Her gaze shifted towards Silva. He simply nodded while faintly smiling. It was as if he were saying that the person before them was an intriguing individual.

Liliyn: 「 Ahahahaha! I see, I see! He looks like such an interesting boy! 」

Although Hiiro would normally scowl at those words, as he was wrestling with hunger, he seemed to be in a half-crazed state.

Liliyn: 「 Yosh(4), I guess we can continue as we eat. Silva, Shamoe. 」

Silva|Shamoe: 「 「 Yes, as you command. 」 」

As expected, the two of them bowed. Following this, Shamoe approached Liliyn as she handed her a napkin. Silva, on the other hand, pulled out a chair immediately in front of Hiiro, as if trying to aid him. As Hiiro sat down, Liliyn began to speak.

Liliyn: 「 Now, let's eat. 」

However, before she even spoke those words, Hiiro had begun to ceaselessly shove pieces of food down his mouth.

Liliyn: 「 ...w-well, I guess it's fine. It's good to be able to enjoy it fully. 」

Although she was stunned, after seeing Hiiro stuffing his face, she faintly smiled. It seemed that the other two were overwhelmed as they observed Hiiro, however, Hiiro was absolutely oblivious to them.

Liliyn: (Kukuku(5), I get it.)

Liliyn gloated before she began to similarly bring food towards her mouth.

As Hiiro was smacking his lips, relishing in the buffet, he began to speak as he suddenly noticed something that concerned him.

Hiiro: 「 Oi(6), aren't Jii-san(7) and the maid gonna eat? 」

Liliyn: 「 Mu(8)? You alright with that? This was made with the intention of thanking you, you know? 」

Hiiro: 「 Like you can talk. You're also eating, aren't you? 」

Liliyn: 「 Isn't that obvious? What the mansion owns is mine. 」

Hiiro: 「 Fu~n(9). Well, not that I care, but there's a substantial amount of food. Even if they eat, shouldn't it be fine? 」

Since Silva's stomach was howling earlier, there was a slight reluctance to continue eating should it be only the two of them.

Liliyn: 「 I see. Well, that's how it is. You two, sit down. 」

Shamoe: 「 B-but I-!? 」

Silva: 「 Shamoe, the Master's orders are? 」

Silva posed a question to Shamoe.

Shamoe: 「 A...absolute. 」

She sat down while shrinking her body.

Silva: 「 Well then~, Itadakimasu(10) zo~(11) 」

Silva emitted these words joyfully. Shamoe's expression also seemed to somewhat soften as she took some bread and began to eat it.

Liliyn: 「 But you're a pretty unusual fellow, aren't ya? 」

Hiiro: 「 Nn?(12) 」

Liliyn: 「 You know that normally, people wouldn't let servants sit on the same table and allow them to have a meal together, right? 」

Hiiro: 「 I could say the exact same back to you. 」

Ultimately, Liliyn was the master of the mansion. Even so, she



allowed her employees to share the same dining table with her with little resistance, something that was most uncommon. Therefore, it could be observed that rather than the guest, it was Liliyn who was the peculiar one.

Liliyn: 「Fun(13), if everyone eats together, isn't it more efficient? 」

Hiiro: 「Well, I guess there's that. But don't most people care about appearances? 」

Liliyn: 「This is my mansion. I don't take crap from no-one. 」

Apparently, the individual known as Liliyn prioritized her freedom, as opposed to those close-minded aristocrats that are stubbornly fixated on social status. Hiiro felt that such an attitude was appealing as he continued to fill his mouth with food.

Hiiro: (Putting that aside, this fish is really good.)

Hiiro stared at the fish fillet pierced by his fork.

Silva: 「Nofofo, that is a fish that exclusively inhabits this lake, the 《Hammock》. It's white meat is full of protein. If left to simmer until the meat has darkened, the flavor becomes even richer. 」

Hiiro: 「I see. It's certainly not bad. \*hamu\*(14) \*mogumogu\*(15)...what's this? 」

Following this, he began to eat something resembling ham that was wrapped up with many layers, forming into a cylinder. Curious, he inquired its identity.

Silva: 「Oh yes, those are 《Grand Slime Spring Rolls》. 」

Hiiro: 「Gohho! Gohogohogoho!(16) The hell'd you say!? 」

Hiiro felt that he noticed a word that he could not let pass by.

Silva: 「Indeed, those are 《Grand Slime Spring Rolls》. 」

Hiiro: 「..... 」

It seemed that Hiiro was not mistaken. Upon inspection it was colored red and significantly resembled ham, even though it seemed slightly jelly-like. Also, according to Hiiro's memory, Grand Slime's should be colored green.

Silva: 「Although most of the Grand Slime is inedible, a part that resides in its center, referred to as the 《Red Sphere》, is said to be a palatable delicacy.」

It suddenly came to Hiiro that he remembered the Grand Slime possessing a red part that acted as its nucleus. He also had the feeling that upon attacking it, it would burst into flames.

Silva: 「With that said, it is a fairly difficult recipe. Are you aware that 《Red Spheres》 will ignite upon reckless stimuli.」

Hiiro: 「Aa(17), as I fought some on my way here I know all too well.」

Liliyn raised her eyebrows upon hearing Hiiro's words. Of course, Hiiro did not notice.

Silva: 「Is that so? To cook the 《Red Sphere》, it is necessary to braise it in boiling water for several hours. Once preparations are complete, you must apply a knife in a way that will not ignite the sphere. After which, the taste-」

Silva popped the 《Red Sphere》 into his mouth.

Silva: 「Nofofofof! The flavor is so strong it would melt one's palate!」

Hiiro followed suit and began to eat it. Although he was slightly concerned whether it would burst into flames, upon experience it's aroma and flavor spreading throughout his mouth, his anxiety was completely dispelled.

Hiiro: (This is pretty good. It's so crunchy that I can't believe it came from that over-sized slime. It's as if I was eating cartilage(18). The more I chew, the more the rich flavor spreads.)

Just as Hiiro thought that this would be perfect as a side dish with

sake, the little girl before him brought out a wine bottle as she continued to eat the 《Red Sphere》 .

Hiiro: (From what I've observed, the Chibi-Usagi(19) seemed to be an exception but...are all little girls in this world alcoholics?)

Upon recollection, Chibi-Usagi was Arnold's Shishou(20) who went by the name of Rarashik. As she had the appearance of a five year old that seemed to constantly be holding onto liquor bottles, she seemed to registered as a fantasy figure in Hiiro's eyes.

However, as Liliyn was drinking out of a wine glass, it was a mystery as to why the scene seemed strangely picturesque. It seemed that she was quite accustomed to drinking.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, by the way, Hiiro or whatever, I've heard that you're not too shabby. How about it? 」

Perhaps noticing Hiiro's gaze, Liliyn spoke as she locked eyes with him.

Hiiro: 「How about what? 」

Liliyn: 「Don't play dumb. From what I've seen, you're of the 『Imp Race』 , however, those guys usually act in herds. Well, I have heard that sometimes they move independently. Alright, let's make it so you're one of those solo Imps. However, you being in the mountains doesn't really make sense, right? 」

Hiiro: 「...what doesn't? 」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, didn't you say earlier that you fought Grand Slimes? 」

Hiiro: 「Aa. 」

Liliyn: 「In other words, you've come from beyond the 【Gloomy Grasslands】 , correct? 」

Hiiro: 「That's right. 」

Wondering what the hell she was trying to say, Hiiro scowled.

Liliyn: 「Certainly that is the Grand Slime's habitat. However, it is a place where monsters of Rank S and above are plentiful. Following this, you crossed that mountain of poison and made it here.」

Hiiro: 「...」

Liliyn: 「You are quite remarkable. To be able to consume the 『Imp Race's』 most despised food, the 《Red Sphere》.」

Hiiro: 「-!?」

Hiiro involuntarily strained his face. Apparently, Liliyn had doubts about Hiiro's identity. With that said, the conversation they just had was not necessarily true. As such, Hiiro could not afford to break his poker face.

Staring closely at Hiiro's face, Liliyn snickered as she made a huge grin.

Liliyn: 「Aa. By the way, when I say despised, I'm not talking about simple preferences. When consumed, their bodies would reject it so much that it could be fatal...this is the level of loathing that I'm talking about.」

This was bad. Although he was still unsure whether what she had said was true, if it was, his disguise of being one of the 『Imp Race』 would be revealed.

Hiiro: (Actually, why wasn't any of this mentioned in the book?! That fucking author!)

Although Hiiro had an extreme urge to burn that picture book, the problem right now was how he was going to survive in such a situation.

Liliyn: 「Yet, you nonchalantly popped that 《Red Sphere》 into your mouth. Actually, it is even weirder for you not to have known its existence. Even if you had some sort of resistance against it, to not know your race's number one weakness is truly strange.」

It was as she had indicated. Hiiro began to gradually grow

cornered.

Liliyn: 「Aa. And another thing, those 《Hammock》 are the 『Imp Race's』 natural enemy.」

Hiiro: (This brat...)

Hiiro realized that this entire meal was a trap. Glancing at the other two, Hiiro saw that, in contrast to Liliyn, they wore apologetic expressions. It seems that these two had apparently been aware of it.

Hiiro clenched his hand into a fist. He quietly extended his forefinger, preparing himself so he could cast magic at any instant.

Looking at Hiiro's stern expression, Liliyn laughed as she was intrigued. She then began to speak.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, don't misunderstand me. I don't really care whether or not you are a part of the 『Imp Race』.」

Hiiro: 「...?」

Liliyn: 「You just simply piqued my interest. Why are you walking around in such an appearance...you're not a part of the 『Imp Race』, right? Eeh(21)? Unusual Visitor?」

Hiiro had remembered her using the phrase 'Unusual Visitor' when she greeted him. Then it suddenly clicked. Hiiro realized that ever since she met him, she had planned on satiating her curiosity.

Hiiro: 「Do I have any reason to tell you?」

Liliyn: 「Fumu. Certainly not. However, this is essentially the center of my stronghold(22). I don't mind if I have to resort to...extreme measures?」

Hiiro felt a certain stimulus in the back of his eyes. His throat involuntarily made a sound. Following which, Hiiro heard a hard cough \*gohon\*. He swerved around, the sight of Silva lowering his head entering Hiiro's eyes.

Silva: 「 Please excuse my rudeness, Hiiro-sama. 」

Hiiro: 「 ... 」

Silva: 「 However, I must also ask of you to engage in my Master's discussion. I also wish to know the truth about you, the one who saved my life. 」

Hiiro: 「 Jii-san... 」

Silva: 「 In actuality, the 『 Imp Race 』 is a race that is extremely vulnerable to poison. Yet, as Hiiro headed towards that toxic mountain, you were undeniably calm. This is something that has bothered me quite a bit. 」

It was at that moment that Hiiro suddenly remembered. Silva wore a desperate expression as he tried to prevent Hiiro from entering the mountain. This was most likely due to the fact that he thought Hiiro, being one of the 『 Imp Race 』 , would surely lose his life.

Silva: 「 I had also wondered whether or not you were truly of the 『 Imp Race 』 . It was most likely that my master had some misgivings about you due to your successful journey through the toxic mountain. Thus, she had prepared this elaborate investigation. 」

However, in the event that Hiiro was really a member of the 『 Imp Race 』 , then what would they do? Wouldn't he have died?

Silva: 「 However, please be at ease. As these dishes were prepared by professional hands, even if a member of the 『 Imp Race 』 were to consume them, their bodies would be in a condition capable of running as the severe pain coursing throughout their bodies would be slightly suppressed. 」

Hiiro: 「 Wait, you said slightly but- 」

Hiiro interjected without thinking. Although it was good that he wouldn't die, he wanted to make the critique that they were perfectly fine with inflicting pain onto their benefactor.

Silva: 「 However, it is as I thought. Hiiro-sama

certainly doesn't seem to be a person of the 『Imp Race』.」

The trio's eyes stared towards Hiiro's direction. Although Hiiro remained silent for a short period of time, he rubbed his head as he began to spit out a big sigh.

Hiiro: 「Aa, that's right. I'm not a part of the 『Imp Race』.」

## Notes

1. Nofofo: Silva's laugh.
2. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
3. Fumu: An expression that displays acknowledgement/agreement/understanding.
4. Yosh: An expression of affirmation often used to psych up oneself. Think 'Alright!' or 'Yeah!'.
5. Kukuku: Liliyn's laugh. More of a chuckle, smirk or snicker.
6. Oi: Hey!
7. Jii-san: An incredibly informal way of addressing an elderly male. Think friendly 'old-man' or rude 'old-fart'. This can be thought to be a variant of Ossan.
8. Mu: A Japanese variant of 'Hm?'.
9. Fu~n: An expression of scepticism? Basically, think 'Hmm' or 'is that so?'.
10. Itadakimasu: A Japanese expression that is customarily spoken before partaking in a meal. Often translated as 'Thank you for the food'.
11. TL Note: zo is a suffix often appended to sentences to display masculinity? Not sure about this, but didn't really know how to translate it so...
12. Nn: Expression denoting interest or confusion.
13. Fun: Equivalent of 'Hmph'.
14. \*hamu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*bite\*.
15. \*mogu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*chew\*.

16. Goho: Choking/coughing sounds, in case you couldn't tell.
17. Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like 'Uh-huh' or 'Yeah'.
18. TL Note: This is literally what it translates to. Consult Mr. G if you don't know what it is.
19. Chibi-Usagi: Hiirou's nickname for Rarashik. Chibi = Small/Deformed/Midget. Usagi = Rabbit/Bunny/Hare.
20. Shishou: Mentor/Master.
21. Eeh : A Japanese expression that displays intrigue. Think 'well?'.
22. TL Note: She actually states that Hiirou is in the 'center of her stomach'. Possibly some word play associated with Hiirou's appetite. Either way, as translating it directly left much to be desired, I took some liberties with the translation.



## Chapter 68: The The Butler's Finesse

At that moment, Hihiro clearly noticed Liliyn's eyes shine. It seemed that Liliyn had a personality similar to Rarashik.

If someone somehow found out he wasn't an Evila, it would become troublesome in the future. It would be even more troublesome if the Evila found out that he was human.

(What should I do...) (Hihiro)

He had no obligation to answer her question, however, unlike Rarashik, the person before him looked warlike, cunning, and generally uncontrollable.

(If it's come to this, I guess I should escape with the [Transition] word) (Hihiro)

Hihiro took a sharp breath and swallowed. He just remembered that he didn't know the location of Mikazuki. Silva lead her to a grazing ground nearby. However, remembering the words he set up before, Hihiro realized he could use them to gauge Mikazuki's location.

Closing his eyes, he could sense the whereabouts of his magic. He sensed two words nearby. It was undoubtedly Mikazuki. She was nearby, however, there was no way to accurately pinpoint her location unless he exited the house.

[Transition] 『転移』 can only be used to go to places that he has been to before. There is a chance that he could appear outside the house. Thus, it would be best to exit the house before casting the spell.

(This is bad. Even if I teleported outside, it would take some time to look for Mikazuki. I would also have to write the [Transition] word again to get out of this place. But...) (Hihiro)

It would take too much time. It takes a long time to just write the words. It was highly probable that he would be caught while doing so. Also, if he used a two-letter word, all the single-letter words

would disappear. This would also include the ones installed on Mikazuki.

Furthermore, they were people who can sense even the smallest amount of magic. If he was found out, they would be immediately grow wary and constrain him right away.

(...It would be great if I can complete the word [Transition] will less strokes.) (Hiiro)

Even though it was a word with a very useful effect, it takes a long time to cast due to the number of stroke required to write the word.

(That aside, this whimsical person. What would happen if I showed hostility...) (Hiiro)

Thus, even though the only word he could activate was [Pry], he was unable to cast it due to the circumstances. It was clear that the moment Hiiro released his magic power, he would be noticed. As such, it may be seen as Hiiro taking hostile action, making the situation even more bothersome.

Hiiro desperately tried to find a peaceful way to resolve the situation, yet, he was having a hard time coming up with one.

“So, who the heck are you?” (Liliyn)

Hiiro started back at Liliyn’s inquisitive eyes.

“...I am me, Nothing less or more” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, did you think that I would be satisfied with such a play on words?” (Liliyn)

At that moment, Hiiro felt a shiver down his spine. Although the air of intimidation surrounding her was different from Rarashik, he could still feel pressure coming from her.

“Feeeeeeee...” (Shamoe)

Shamoe looked alternately between her lord and Hiiro as she released a flustered cry. At that moment, Silva stood up stiffly and

spoke.

“Mumumu!” (Silva)

Silva suddenly took out something from his chest. The other three focused on him.

“Good! These are good!” (Silva)

Silva seemed to be looking at book, however, the nasal cavities increased in size while doing so.

“Nofo! Nofo! Nofo Fofof! This is it!” (Silva)

“.....” (Everyone else)

Unable to understand him at all, the other three just stared at him.

“...What are you doing, Silva?” (Liliyn)

Unable to endure the situation, Liliyn inquired. Silva opened the book and showed an image of a female figure wearing a swimsuit. In earth terms it would be a gravure photo. Silva cried in joy

“Please look princess! The line on the hip...such a beautiful line!” (Silva)

“.....” (Liliyn)

“Look at that attractive body, a body so unexpectedly fascinating that it’s full of dreams. Aah, how I long to be buried in such a fascinating curves...” (Silva)

“...I...I see...” (Liliyn)

She rotated her shoulder and then,

Shun~ (a swift and decisive movement)

Something approached Silva’s bosom at high speed.

Bogo~! (something hitting something hard)

“Nyo he~!” (Silva)

Like a world boxing champion, a fist collided with Silva’s chin.

Baki! (Sound of neck cracking)

Silva’s head flew and buried itself on in the ceiling and hanged there.

“If you wanted to be buried, then be buried in there for the rest of your life!” (Liliyn)

“Feeeeeeeeee~!? Silva-samaaaaaa!” (Shamoe)

Shamoe shrieked in panic, trying to confirm Silva’s well-being. Yet, it seemed that he had once again fallen silent.

“.....Phew, I’ve lost interest. Shamoe, I’ll be returning to my room. Please take care of guest when they get tired.” (Liliyn)

“I u-understand” (Shamoe)

Hiiro glanced at the girl who left the dining room and returned to her room. He exhaled in relief.

(Good grief. I somehow managed to survive but...)

Hiiro looked at the hentai whose body was still wiggling with his head stuck in the ceiling.

(This old man, he deliberately changed the topic...)

Even though it wasn’t beneficial to him, he interrupted his master’s conversation and saved Hiiro. It was likely because Hiiro was his benefactor. However, even putting that into consideration, Hiiro felt that Silva has a strong sense of duty.

---

“Nofofofofof! I thought I was going to die! Nofofofofof!” (Silva)

When Hiiro finally returned to the guest room, Silva returned as well without a scratch. Looking at Silva’s smile, Hiiro could not

help but look at Silva's body with scepticism.

"I guess I should be saying...thanks?" (Hiiro)

"Nh? What do you mean?" (Silva)

It seem that he was completely oblivious of it. If he wanted to pretend it wasn't a big deal, then Hiiro decided to follow suit as he pretended the previous event didn't occur.

"Mind if I ask you something?" (Hiiro)

"Yes, you may. You may ask me anything about a woman's body" (Silva)

"I don't give a damn about that." (Hiiro)

"...if that is your desire." (Silva)

He wanted to say it was too bad, yet, there is something else he wanted to ask.

"You sure it's alright? Bringing a suspicious person like me into this mansion?" (Hiiro)

"Suspicious? Whatever do you mean?" (Silva)

"A person who isn't of and Imp-Race yet has the appearance of one. A person like me. You let such an extremely suspicious individual approach your master, you know?" (Hiiro)

"Fumu.....mumumu" (Silva)

Silva groaned as he placed a hand on a chin, and when Hiiro thought he was going to respond he took out book.

Bokon! (Something hitting something)

As Hiiro thought he was going to read the book, he smacked Silva over the head.

"Nofofofof! You are aware that it hurts, yes?" (Silva)

“Don’t say something like that when you weren’t hurt at all! Hurry up and answer the question old man!” (Hiiro)

“No, certainly, ever since I had met you, I had planned to take you here.” (Silva)

“.....?” (Hiiro)

“As a butler, it is very important to understand people.” (Silva)

Hiiro remembered that he said something like this before.

“If I thought you would endanger my master, I would not have brought you to this mansion.” (Silva)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“Since I had determined that bringing you here would cause no problems, I wanted to express my gratitude to you by all means necessary.” (Silva)

Either way, it seemed that the master didn’t hold any hostility toward Silva since the beginning. His explanation is not something that can be accepted easily but it made Hiiro relieved either way.

“In addition to that, the most important thing is a person’s heart. That not only applies to me but also my master, and Shamoe as well.” (Silva)

“That Akai-Chibi (red-shorty)?” (Hiiro)

“Nofo!? Akai-Chibi?” (Silva)

Silva had a shocked and frightful expression on his face. Following which, he exhaled as he began to speak.

“Nofofofofo! To call my master by that name, you are certainly a reckless gentleman. Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

“What’s so weird about it? She has red hair and a short body, thus Akai-Chibi. Well? Isn’t it easy to remember?” (Hiiro)

“Nofofofofof! Usually if one were to insult the master, they would have to be brought to justice. Yet, hearing it from your mouth, it’s so strange that it is funny! Nofofofofof!” (Silva)

“Well, I don’t know what’s so funny about it but like you said before, the most important part of a person is their heart. Does the Akai-Chibi believe that as well? I can’t really tell?” (Hiiro)

As Liliyn seemed to be someone who would dispel their frustration through any means necessary, Hiiro did not believe that she held this belief.

“No, no. You are not mistaken. If my master wasn’t like that, we would have been kicked out of the mansion a long time ago.” (Silva)

“Is that so?” (Hiiro)

“Yes” (Silva)

“Fu~n” (Hiiro)

It seemed that the other two also had their circumstances, yet Hiiro wasn’t particularly interested.

“That aside, I’ve already eaten so I’m gonna leave, alright?” (Hiiro)

If Hiiro stayed here any longer, Liliyn would probably pursue him again.

“Well I do not mind, however, it is going to be evening soon. During the evening, lots of S rank monsters will appear.”

“Like the Grand Slimes in the grasslands a while back?” (Hiiro)

“No, much stronger ones” (Silva)

The grasslands was dangerous enough for Hihiro. Considering that he may encounter even stronger monsters at this time, he determined that it would be a good idea not to go outside.

“Is this mansion safe?” (Hiiro)

“Yes. Here, the master has set up a barrier.” (Silva)

“.....the Akai-Chibi is really strong, huh” (Hihiro)

“That is true...she is strong enough to make a dragon shake in fear..I think that is about right?” (Silva)

He was not sure how to digest this information. Regarding how strong little girls were in this world, it provided ample evidence to be wary and fearful of them. Given how the strength of Rarashik and Liliyn, Hihiro sighed as he thought that all the little girls in this world would be just as strong.

“Since that is the case, it would be a good idea if Hihiro-sama would pay attention to my master’s mood.” (Silva)

After saying that, Silva who guided Hihiro to his room, bowed and then left. From now on it will be night. Hihiro lied down on the bed in the guest room and let out a sigh.

(A lot of things happened today huh...)

Hihiro could leave anytime during the night, but thinking of the delicious fish he had this evening, he wanted to remain and taste it again by all means.

If something were to happen, he was optimistic that he could deal with it using Word Magic. As he was planning how he would leave tomorrow, he closed his tired eyes and went to sleep.

---

As midnight approached, and everyone was fast asleep, the door of the room which Hihiro slept in opened quietly...

Author Note: It seems that someone approaches.



## Arc 2: Into the Demon World

### Chapter 69 Majuu (Demon Beast) Girl – Shamoe

Hiiro was sleeping on his back, yet his body somehow felt heavy. Hiiro suddenly opened his eyelids. He was startled by the spectacle that appeared before him. He did not know when or who had mounted themselves on top of him. Hiiro attempted to raise his voice.

(Hiiro) “Wha...-!?”

However ~smack~ he was smacked on his mouth by that very someone’s hands.

(Hiiro) (why is this guy.....here!?)

He was shocked by who was there. Although he could not see who it was for a moment, he determined the person’s identity upon looking at their head, done up in twin tails. Yes, the person in question was the maid named Shamoe.

However, there was obviously a different atmosphere surrounding her compared to the time at dinner. Her previously pink hair was now stained in a pitch black darkness. Her eyes that seemed to faintly sag were now sharpened like a beast as they emitted a golden glow.

Furthermore, she possessed something that she clearly did not have during the dinner. This being a set of Kemonomimi and tail.

(Hiiro) (What the hell’s this guy trying to...-!?)

She looked at Hiiro with an expression that resembled a beast that had found its prey. She was looking down on him with a smile, licking her lips in delight. Hiiro found himself stunned at the changes that had occurred to her compared to the time at dinner.

(Hiiro) (I don’t really get what’s happening but for now-!)

He tried to grab her hands that were covering his mouth, it was only natural for a victim to struggle to break free. However, she had an iron grip on him. Hiiro could feel the pressure almost breaking his teeth

(Hiiro) (W-what kind of brute strength does she have!?)

Hiiro had no choice but to use his fist. However, she had reacted faster. Shamoe grabbed both of Hiiro's hands and head butted him.

「がっ！？」

(Hiiro) “Ga-!?”

Hiiro began to see stars from the considerable impact. Following this, the maid began to strangle him with both hands.

「ぐ.....が.....はっ.....っ！」

“Gu.....ga.....Ha.....-!”

She possessed tremendous force. If Hiiro had slackened his resistance even slightly, he would have been rendered unconscious instantly. As the situation would become really bad at the rate things were going, Hiiro invoked the previously installed “Protect” without particular regard for the consequences.

The characters he wrote on his arm appeared with a “powa” as it exhibited its effects. Pale blue magic appeared before Hiiro's eyes.

バシンッ！

(Bashin!)

Shamoe, noticing the magic, leaped backwards, away from the bed.

「ごほごほごほっ！」

“Gohogoho-!”

While Hiiro had one eye closed, he coughed as he rubbed his neck.

「グルルルルル！」

“Gururururu” Shamoe growls at Hiiro.

As if she were a famished beast, Shamoe growled as she slowly prowled around the room on all fours. She appeared to be searching for an opportunity to pounce on her target. Actually, that’s exactly what she was doing. Her eyes were glaring at Hiiro, filled with killing intent.

(Hiiro) (...if I don’t take this seriously, this could get pretty dangerous.....)

Immediately jumping out of the bed, Hiiro grabbed the “Piercer Sword” that was leaning against the bedside. Although Hiiro was wary of the opponent, Shamoe seemed to maintain a constant distance as she kept glaring at him with sharp eyes.

(Hiiro) (This fellow seems to have a good intuition. She seems to be extremely wary of this magic barrier.)

The word magic “protect” would still remain active for a little longer. After receiving such a mysterious attack, Shamoe deemed that it was worthless to draw closer at this particular time, seemingly basing it on pure animalistic instincts.

As the standoff continued for a while, Hiiro used that opportunity to once again install the word “Protect” onto his arm. The instant Hiiro finished writing, the magic barrier that had been protecting him up until now disappeared.

In that instance, the maid’s eyes flashed as she forcefully kicked the floor, launching herself towards Hiiro. While gritting his teeth, Hiiro took a stance as he prepared to swing his sword. However, in that moment...

「お待ち下さいませっ！」

“Please wait!!” (???)

Suddenly, the door burst open as Silva stood in the doorway shouting. Hiiro’s hands involuntarily paused. As Hiiro’s resolve to attack faltered at Silva’s words, he was utterly unable to avoid the approaching Shamoe’s assault, his left shoulder being bitten as a

consequence.

“Gu-a!” (Hiiro)

His face distorted due to excruciating pain.

“Gu..... t-this fucking-!” (Hiiro)

As he was being bitten, Hiiro activated the previously installed character, “Speed” and began to fly forward with full force. Naturally, they moved with tremendous velocity.

\*baki-!\*

“Kyan-!”

Shamoe, whose back collided with the wall at full force, involuntarily spat out salivation before collapsing directly onto the ground.

Hiiro used the word “Speed” in order to accelerate towards the wall. As Shamoe collided with the wall, Hiiro shoved the hilt of his katana into her stomach, inflicting some damage. It was obvious that the damage dealt was significant as her legs buckled and she tumbled to the floor.

Following this, her hair that was black returned to the same shade of pink that Hiiro noticed during their first meeting. Her Kemonomimi and tail also retracted.

“Haa, haa, haa.....”

Hiiro staggered as he held his wounded arm.

“Hiiro-sama!” (Silva)

Silva supported Hiiro from behind with both hands.

“Ku.....Y-you better explain this, Jii-san.” (Hiiro)

As Silva made an apologetic expression, he returned a faint nod. Yet, the remaining resident of the mansion began to speak.

“Let me take care of the explanations.” (???)

It was Liliyn. Wearing black negligee, she was carrying a plush teddy bear by the hand, the plush’s neck having cotton spilling out of it. Although she wore a sleepy expression, after taking a glance at the unconscious Shamoe collapsed on the floor, she moodily grunted.

“Silva, go carry Shamoe of to her room. After that, begin treating the boy.” (Liliyn)

“As you command.” (Silva)

Quietly responding thus, Silva let go of Hihiro as he carried Shamoe off to her room. Following this, Liliyn turned on the lights as she drew close to the sofa.

“Now then, for the mean time sit down. I have a lot of explaining to do. Not to mention, I also have some things that I want to ask.” (Liliyn)

Her current expression was unlike the suspicious smile she wore during dinner. Her eyes were narrowed and her mouth was slightly pointed in seriousness.

Hihiro similarly sat down on the sofa while suppressing the pain. As it was just the two of them, he sat down so that they could converse face to face.

In that moment, Silva returned with, what seemed like, a first aid kit. In reality, he did not need to be treated. If he used the word “Healing” then Hihiro’s wound would be neatly cured. Yet, as he could not afford to use his magic here, he had no choice but to accept the treatment.

As Hihiro was being bandaged by Silva, Liliyn began to speak once the treatment was over.

“I’ll say this first. I apologize on behalf of our kin.” (Liliyn)

Hihiro thought this was slightly surprising. Ever since he met her, he thought that she was the type who would never offer apologies. As

such, Hiiro could now determine that she was civilised, even if only slightly.

“Never mind that, just give me an explanation. Why the hell did she come here and attack me? Not to mention, her appearance.....” (Hiiro)

“Umu. Well, no need to rush. This was entirely caused by our carelessness. However, I’ll still explain it to you.” (Liliyn)

As she said thus, Silva, who had disappeared undetected, seemed to have gone to prepare tea as he returned and set down some tea in front of the two.

Liliyn took the tea with one hand, taking a sip before exhaling. Following this, she began to softly speak.

“I’m assuming that you already know that this place is the Demon World.” (Liliyn)

It seems that the [Evila] call their own world the Demon World, the [Gabranth] call theirs the Beast World, and the [Humas] the Human World.

“Although those living on this continent are mainly [Evila], there are some other races that secretly make their homes here.”

This was not a particularly unusual story. There were some Gabranths who lived on the Human Continent and vice versa. As the Demon World had harsh environments and strong monsters, it seemed more likely that other races living on this continent were rare.

“As you can guess from the flow of the conversation, Shamoe isn’t an [Evila]. Actually, in hindsight, perhaps saying that she’s not a pure blood might be better.” (Liliyn)

“Pure?” (Hiiro)

As he picked up an intriguing word, Hiiro echoed.

“Shamoe is a crossbreed between an [Evila] and a [Gabranth], she’s

an abandoned child.” (Liliyn)

“.....so she’s a half?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah. If we were to classify her, she’s of the Majuu (Demon Beast) race.” (Liliyn)

As Hiiro contemplated about the existence of such a race, as it had explained Shamoe’s Kemonomimi and tail, he somehow accepted it.

“But when I first met her, she didn’t have Kemonomimi or a tail, right?” (Hiiro)

Yes. If he was to say one or the other, she had the appearance of a normal person.

“Among the race known as the [Majuu], they can be split into 2 types: those with strong [Evila] blood and those with prevalent [Gabranth] blood. Shamoe is of the [Evila] group, thus she normally doesn’t have Kemonomimi.” (Liliyn)

“I see. So? The reason why it suddenly grew is?” (Hiiro)

“We were careless. Tonight is the night of a full moon.” (Liliyn)

“Ah?” (Hiiro)

As Liliyn peered out the window, Hiiro followed suit. What he observed was certainly a full moon floating in the night sky. It’s size was incomparable to Japan’s moon as it was magnitudes larger.

“On nights of the full moon, it seems that the [Gabranth] blood strengthens. But don’t misunderstand? Not all [Majuus] run wild like Shamoe. There are fellows who don’t lose to either blood line, to the point that they can control it completely.” (Liliyn)

In other words, Shamoe was simply still immature. It seems that there are [Majuus] who have matured and have a full understanding of their bodies, thus being capable of controlling their blood. However, as Shamoe has not yet become an adult, she does not possess the mental strength capable of preventing herself from going wild.

“Although lately, it seems that she was able to control her urges. Perhaps because a lot happened today, her heart was uneasy.” (Liliyn)

“My condolences.” (Silva)

Silva lowered his head apologetically. It seemed that today was the very first time she had to serve a guest. In addition, as Silva, who she was constantly worried about, had finally returned from the toxic mountain, she seemed to be extremely distressed.

As her heart’s stability had been impaired, she was unable to suppress her instincts, unlike usual, which led to her assaulting Hihiro due to her going out of control.

“But still, why did she come to my room? You guys have also been attacked, right?” (Hihiro)

“Yeah. Certainly, it’s as you say. The one who’s on the receiving end of these attacks is usually me, you know.” (Liliyn)

“Well, if I would rather enjoy I were the target of her assaults.” (Silva)

“Shut it, pervert!” (Liliyn)

“Gibyo-!” (Silva)

Receiving a magnificent hook, Silva flew towards the bed. No matter where he was, Silva would remain Silva.

“Her [Gabranth] instincts are stronger than most. It often reacts to dangerous people. Thus out of those in this mansion, Shamoe’s target was basically me.” (Liliyn)

Come to think of it, Silva indicated that Liliyn’s strength was on the level of making a dragon cry and beg. If this was true, then it was understandable that she would trigger the Gabranth’s instincts.

“But today.....a strange event happened.” (Liliyn)

Saying thus, Liliyn narrowed her eyes.



“Who Shamoe deemed as being dangerous was not me, but you.”  
(Liliyn)

It suddenly occurred to Hihiro. It was certainly as Liliyn had indicated. Shamoe’s instincts had judged Hihiro to be of a greater threat than Liliyn.

“Certainly, there’s many mysterious things about you. Even though you’re not of the [Imp Race], you have their appearance. In addition, there’s the previous struggle with Shamoe.” (Liliyn)

Thinking that he had been seen, Hihiro began tightly grinding his back teeth.

“You, I heard from Silva that you were a fire-user, yet I there were no signs of flames. In spite of this, there’s still the presence of magic being used.” (Liliyn)

“.....” (Hihiro)

“Not to mention, those last movements. It felt like your power spiked for a brief moment. During that time, your arm also emitted a faint glow.” (Liliyn)

As she said thus, Liliyn pointed towards Hihiro’s arm.

“Instead of me, Shamoe’s deemed you more dangerous. Her instincts thought such to the extent of trying to kill you. That has not occurred even to me.” (Liliyn)

She sounded a little angry. As she thought that Shamoe had chosen Hihiro over her, she displayed slight jealousy. However, it seemed that she was even more shocked when she witnessed Hihiro’s [Word Magic].

“I’ll ask again, boy. Who in the hell are you?” (Liliyn)

## Chapter 70: Little Girl – Strong? Weak?

This time she did not ask out of curiosity but out of wariness. Hiiro gulps and focuses his gaze towards her.

(Trying to fool her... might be dangerous) (Hiiro)

He felt that this time she might force an answer out of him. He was not at fault this time around, but to them there is no doubt that his existence is far too strange.

Also, for some reason or another, there was something else that was bugging him. He decided that until he knew what that was, he wouldn't reveal anything about himself to them.

Before that, however, it was necessary to prepare some insurance for himself. Thinking that, Hiiro puts on a sharp expression and...

“You can't even properly discipline your own servants. I can't believe it” (Hiiro)

“What did you say...?” (Liliyn)

Just like he expected, Liliyn knits her brow with an unpleasant expression on her face as she glares at Hiiro.

“To think you'd express your hospitality towards a guest with this kind of poor behavior. I'm at a loss for words” (Hiiro)

“M-Muu1...” (Liliyn)

What Hiiro was saying was correct, and Liliyn couldn't retort.

“And on top of that, you demand I identify myself? Are you sleep talking, oi2?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro and Liliyn were glaring at each other and Silva, who was standing nearby, had a complicated expression on his face.

“Giving me some half-hearted apology. If you're going to apologize, how about you show me some sincerity” (Hiiro)

“Ku3...” (Liliyn)

Even though she was at fault, Liliyn began to get irritated being told off so much by the rude and younger Hiiro.

Hiiro stared at that girl, as if observing her. Then suddenly, Hiiro gets up and moves to the corner of the room, distancing himself from the two.

Not knowing what was going on, Liliyn holds her breath and follows Hiiro with her eyes. Ignoring her gaze, Hiiro concentrates magic into his fingertip.

Obviously taking note of his actions, the glint in Liliyn's eyes grow stronger and Silva immediately stands in front of her as if to shield her.

(Oh, this went rather well) (Hiiro)

Smiling internally, he begins writing a word while making sure they can't see it. The word he wrote was [Transfer]. With this, it became possible for him to escape at any time.

In truth, his actions were a gamble. It would have been dangerous if they had assaulted him as soon as they sensed his magic. That is because he does not understand how strong Silva and Liliyn are. No, Liliyn is strong without a doubt. She carries an atmosphere similar to that Rarashik. If they fought head on, Hiiro would have no chance of victory.

That is why Hiiro was extremely nervous while he was writing that word. Only he himself knows how relieved he was after he had finished writing it.

(Now, I've got my insurance. Next is...) (Hiiro)

Hiiro wanted to ask about what was on his mind earlier. He shifts his gaze towards the two who are watching him make as little effort as possible.

“Oi, isn't there something you should be saying?” (Hiiro)

If she didn't he would act according to the plan that he just came up with. His plan is that if they still emit hostility towards him and refuse to talk he will use [Transfer], go to where Mikazuki is, then escape from the island.

It seems that outside there are many monsters around Rank S loitering around, but Hiiro decided that would be much safer than staying here.

Hiiro puts himself on guard while observing the two. And then...

"Nofono, it is exactly as you say" (Silva)

With a faint smile, Silva gets out of his battle stance and lightly bows.

"O-Oi Silva..." (Liliyn)

Watching his actions just now, even Liliyn's eyes became dots<sup>4</sup>.

"Ojou-sama<sup>5</sup>, everything that Hiiro-sama<sup>6</sup> has said is true" (Silva)

"Ha<sup>7</sup>?" (Liliyn)

"That individual is our guest. He is also the benefactor who saved my life. Return favor with favor, and return life with life. It would not do to forget that" (Silva)

"..." (Liliyn)

"We invited him into this mansion, then we did something to test him, and after that a servant of the mansion wounded him. Considering all of that, for us to behave in such a manner, it would do no good for Ojou-sama's future nor Ojou-sama's ambition" (Silva)

"..." (Liliyn)

"Ojou-sama, I believe you know what it is that you must do" (Silva)

Liliyn became silent for a while after listening to Silva's words. Hiiro stared at Liliyn without changing expression, but suddenly

had a look of shock on his face.

As for why...

“Uu...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s eyes were teary.

(Eh? ...Ha? She’s crying?) (Hiiro)

Even Hiiro had not expected this situation and was taken aback.

It hadn’t gotten to the point where she was shedding tears but she had the look of an upset child that was trying to hold it back, and...

“S-Shwut up! I know!” (Liliyn)

She throws the doll in her hand towards Silva with a \*dosu\*8 and sharply turns towards Hiiro.

“I’m sowwy! I was wrong! Forgib me!” (Liliyn)

She doesn’t bow her head, but looking at her pouting and her semi-desperate apology, she seemed to have lost all sense of maliciousness.

(W-What’s with her... It’s almost as if...) (Hiiro)

“Nofofofoyo! You are like a small child, crying in such a manner” (Silva)

Silva said what Hiiro wanted to say.

A fist sank into his gut \*dosu\* and Silva groaned and crumpled to the floor.

But looking at her, Hiiro thought she really was like a child. He had heard that she has lived a long life. By Silva’s manner of speaking, it seems to be true.

However she didn’t get what she wanted, moreover she was scolded by one of her servants. The girl ended up showing an emotional side that didn’t match her age.

Looking at her, feelings of shame starting to build within Hiiro for fearing and being defensive against such a girl.

Though she is much older than he is, it seems like she is still a child. She demands someone to tell her something because she wants to know, and she becomes emotional because someone scolds her. That kind of child.

(Oi oi, what about my resolution up until now...) (Hiiro)

He became less tense and his set word almost faded, so he hurriedly concentrates on it again. If he were to let it disappear without activating it, he would suffer a <<Rebound>> and for six hours he would be weakened and unable to use <<Word Magic>>. He definitely did not want that to happen.

However, he thought with this he'd be able to ask about what was on his mind earlier, so he begins to talk.

“Can I have a moment?” (Hiiro)

“W-What is it!” (Liliyn)

She looks at him with slightly inflamed eyes. He isn't scared of her at all anymore. If anything, right now the atmosphere around her would make most people want to pat her on the head and make her feel safe.

“Haa9, well, what. I've accepted your apology for now, so about the topic from before...” (Hiiro)

“Are you going to tell me!?” (Liliyn)

She didn't suddenly change expression, but she spoke with a smile on her face. Seeing that, Hiiro made a bitter smile and...

“...Before that, tell me one thing” (Hiiro)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

She knits her brow with an unpleasant expression, as if to say “you have more you want to say?”.

“Ojou-sama” (Silva)

Silva, who had suddenly resurrected, spoke out to calm Liliyn. She sighs and waves her hand.

“Okay okay, I understand. However, after I answer your question you will tell me about yourself, right?” (Liliyn)

She glares at Hihiro with a look that could kill.

It may have been because he had seen her crying just now, but Hihiro does not feel intimidated at all. He could only see it as a child putting on airs.

“That depends on how you answer my question” (Hihiro)

“...Fun10, very well. Unlike others, I am open-minded. I will let you ask your question first” (Liliyn)

Liliyn says so pompously, and Silva apologetically bows his head.

“Then, my question. Akachibi11, do you...” (Hihiro)

“Wait” (Liliyn)

“What is it?” (Hihiro)

“W-What did you say just now?” (Liliyn)

“Ha?” (Hihiro)

“W-What do y-you mean by A-Aka-Akachibi?” (Liliyn)

Silva, who is standing next to her, is dripping sweat like a waterfall. He is panicking because it seems like all Hell will break loose.

“Of course I’m referring to you. You have red hair and you’re a pipsqueak, therefore Akachibi” (Hihiro)

“Hohou12... It seems like you want me to pulverize you into pulp...” (Liliyn)

One can sense an odd aura rumbling behind her \*gogogogogogo\*13, but the only one that notices it and breaking into a cold sweat is Silva.

“What, you don’t like it?” (Hiiro)

“Of course I don’t! Just who do you think I am!?” (Liliyn)

“A crybaby brat” (Hiiro)

“Ugu14... Y-You...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s face turns red and her eyes are full of rage.

“You hate it that much? Then how about Akaloli15?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? Hm? What did you say? ‘Akaloli’? What is ‘Akaloli’, Silva?” (Liliyn)

“Huh? H-Ha! Um, that is... Err, Akaloli is...” (Silva)

In his heart he believes that it most likely refers to a red lolita, but he doesn’t put it into words. Not knowing what to do, he desperately shifts his train of thought 180 degrees and thinks deeply.

“Mumumu, yes! It’s that! ‘Akaloli’ is a compliment, Ojou-sama!” (Silva)

“Mu? I-Is that so?” (Liliyn)

“Y-Yes! According to rumors, ‘Akaloli’ is a name granted to sweet, beautiful ladies!” (Silva)

“Hou, such a word is becoming popular outside, is it” (Liliyn)

She nods in understanding. Hiiro stares at those two with a blank look on his face.

“T-Therefore, would it not be good to accept it?” (Silva)

“M-Muu... Is that so...” (Liliyn)



There is not such word as Akaloli. Why? Because Hiiro just made it up on the spot. It is also not a compliment. It was nothing more than an easy nickname for him to remember. Liliyn, ignorant of the ways of the world, had no way of knowing that.

“Umu16, then I shall allow you to call me Akaloli! Because I am tolerant! Ahahahaha!” (Liliyn)

“I-Isn’t that nice! Nofofofof!” (Silva)

Silva could not help but think that he was glad Liliyn was so simple.

“Oi, can I ask already?” (Hiiro)

“Mu? It’s fine, go ahead and speak” (Liliyn)

Hiiro feels relieved finally being able to return to the main topic.

“...Question. Are you the type that concerns yourself with and discriminates based on race?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? What nonsense are you saying” (Liliyn)

Hiiro remains quiet and looks into her eyes. Liliyn receives his gaze and makes a serious expression.

“Fun, race doesn’t matter. I just like the strong. If there is any discrimination, it would be based only on strength and weakness, kozou17” (Liliyn)

Suddenly a cunning expression full of experience could be seen on her small face. Hiiro understood that as the answer she came to, which she could state with confidence. He couldn’t believe this was the same girl that was teary due to getting scolded earlier.

“...I see” (Hiiro)

It wasn’t anything difficult. She was just a person that either had an interest in someone or didn’t, and whether that person was strong or not. She was a person that made decisions based only on that.

Silva looks at her with a gentle expression. It seems like an expression one would have looking at his own daughter. Hiiro thought that it would be nice if he always acted like a regular adult but also thought it was extremely unfortunate that Silva had a tendency to suddenly transform into a pervert.

(They're a bit different from Ossan18 and Muir, but it feels like it'd be fine to speak a little with these people. However, I'll have to have them promise fist) (Hiiro)

Thinking that, Hiiro places his hand on the bandages Silva wrapped.

“Oi, before I tell you about myself, promise me that you won't tell anyone” (Hiiro)

“Don't look down on me. Do I look like that kind of loose-lipped woman, you insolent peasant!” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofofo! If Hiiro-sama demands it, I will take it with me to my grave” (Silva)

“...I got it” (Hiiro)

Hiiro slowly cuts off the bandages. The other two look at him with a confused expression on their faces.

“W-What are you-” (Liliyn)

“Shut up and watch” (Hiiro)

\*Pishun!\*19

Hiiro disappeared in an instant and Liliyn and Silva's eyes were wide in surprise.

“Where are you looking?” (Hiiro)

The two gasp and look towards the direction his voice came from. For some reason Hiiro, who was standing in the corner of the room just now, was sitting on the sofa.

(This should be enough, but I may as well fix this while I'm at it. Their surprised faces are fun to look at too) (Hiiro)

Putting aside those two and looking at his shoulder which was still bleeding, Hiiro once again concentrates magic into his fingertips.

(If it's a wound of this level I won't need two characters... No, before that...) (Hiiro)

He writes some word into his arm. That word, however, seemed to be a trigger word and disappeared as if it were absorbed.

Afterwards, he writes [Heal] and activates it on his shoulder. The bite marks on his flesh slowly start to fade and returns to its normal state

Liliyn and Silva watched the scene in front of them frozen in surprise, as if time had stopped. Liliyn gasps and brings her hand to her chin with a deep look on her face and begins muttering.

"Healing magic...? No, healing magic is light attribute magic. There is no way Evila can use it. I can't feel the power of light either. And that movement technique just now... What does it mean?" (Liliyn)

As she was muttering, Hiiro's wound completely healed. Liliyn speaks to him with her hand still on her chin.

"Explain. What... was that just now?" (Liliyn)

"Even if you ask me 'what', it was my magic" (Hiiro)

"...I mean, why does an Evila have... no, wait. I see. You, that's a Unique magic, isn't it?" (Liliyn)

Silva, as if he had already realized, looks towards Hiiro and lightly nods.

"Aah<sup>20</sup>, that's right. It's called < <Word Magic> >. I can't explain it in detail, but it's omnipotence is its selling point" (Hiiro)

"Explain it to me" (Liliyn)

“I refuse. I don’t have any obligation to tell you any more. Even this much is a great service” (Hiiro)

“Mu, you...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn looks at him with a face obviously full of rage. Hiiro, however, ignores her and answers.

“Do you blab about your abilities to strangers? I only told you this much because I felt like it. I won’t tell you anything about my power beyond this. That’s normal, isn’t it?” (Hiiro)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

Possibly because she realized that Hiiro’s decision was correct her rage lessened, but apparently still wanting to hear an explanation she looks at him with impatience in her eyes. He can understand her curiosity, but he didn’t plan on saying anything further.

In fact, he had only planned to speak up until that point. He had thought that if Liliyn was the type that was concerned over race he would just teleport and leave.

Like the Gabranth that sought war, if she was the type that thought her race was superior and had thoughts of destroying the other races there would definitely be conflict if he were to stay with them.

The result, however, was that Liliyn had no interest in races. She only thought of strong and weak. It’s simple, but it is an easy-to-understand answer, one which may give a favorable impression.

This is what Hiiro had wanted to know after hearing about Liliyn from Silva. He wanted to know her way of thinking and wanted to ask her while he was here.

“In other words, your magic is a Unique magic. You can create fire, you can increase your physical capabilities, and you can even heal. In that case... I see, that appearance too?” (Liliyn)

“Who knows?” (Hiiro)

“There’s nothing wrong with answering that much” (Liliyn)

“I already told you, I’m not an [Imp]. That should be enough, right?” (Hiiro)

“M... Mu” (Liliyn)

Liliyn looks up at Hiiro while pouting. Unlike before, she looks like a child that just got her toy taken away from her, causing Hiiro to unconsciously feel less serious.

“Nofofofofo! I did not believe you to be an average person, but to think you were a user of Unique magic! Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

“Eei21 shut up, Silva! Aah, I want to know! I’ll use force to-” (Liliyn)

“That is no good, Ojou-sama. He is our guest. We have also caused him quite a bit of trouble” (Silva)

“Mu...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn can’t retort to Silva’s reasoning.

“Isn’t it fine! This place is occupied by odd and eccentric people. Isn’t that what you always say, Ojou-sama? Isn’t it useless to inquire about every stranger you meet?” (Silva)

“That’s true, but... Mu” (Liliyn)

However, it seems like she can’t help but be interested in someone as odd as Hiiro. She stares at him while biting her nails.

At that moment, Hiiro was smiling on the inside.

(Alright, seems like it went well) (Hiiro)

From his point of view, he could see something about Liliyn and Silva. It was their < <Status> >.

When he used [Heal] he immediately activated [Pry] which he had set beforehand. He couldn’t find an opening to use it during the

meal, however he used the opportunity earlier to activate both words. That way they wouldn't doubt him when he used [Pry].

On another note, when he activated the two character word the words that he had set previously disappeared, but this was the word that he had set prior to activating [Heal]. It was so that they wouldn't sense anything odd when he activated it.

Liliyn Li Reysis Redrose

Lv: 148

HP: 6733/6733

MP: 5876/5876

EXP: 2796139

NEXT: 98022

ATK: 977

DEF: 944

AGL: 1159

HIT: 1220

INT: 1476

< < Magic Attribute > > : None

< < Magic > >: Dream Illusion Magic (Dream Eater, Bewitching Confinement, Ethereal Construction)

< Titles > >: One Who Lives Among Illusions | Little Girl | Crybaby | Connoisseur of Wine | Seeker | Manipulator | Monster Slayer | Killer of the Unique | Demon Who Shreds | Transcendent | Permanence Devil | Redrose Witch | One Who Seeks the Strong | An Unusual Person

Silva Plutis

Lv: 80

HP: 1250/1250

MP: 6000/6000

EXP: 604441

NEXT: 23000

ATK: 430

DEF: 355

AGL: 490

HIT: 333

INT: 1000

< < Magic Attribute > > : Dark

< < Magic > >: Pool Ball (Dark - Attack) | Dark Gate (Dark - Movement) | Black Out (Dark - Attack) | Fear Cremation (Dark - Attack) | Shadow Create (Dark)

< Titles > >: Spirit of Darkness | Tribe That Sees | Heretic | Perverted Butler | Immortal Lolicon | Playboy | Feminist | Old Man of Sexual Harassment | The Enemy? Ally? of Women | Sage | Omnipotent | Pacifist | Faithful | White-Haired Demon | The Strongest Shield

## Notes

1. Kind of like sfx for expressing grumbling/dissatisfaction
2. In this context: hey?/huh?
3. Similar to “tsk”
4. Wasn’t sure of an English equivalent. Anime eyes due to surprise/something unexpected. [This](#) is the closest thing I found
5. “My Lady”; “Mistress”

6. Suffix that indicates respect, usually used towards one of higher position; you'll hear this a lot in the service industry
7. "What?"
8. Sound of dull impact
9. \*Sigh\*
10. "Hmph"; not pronounced at all like the English word
11. Aka (red) + chibi (midget) = akachibi (red midget)
12. Similar to "Ooh?" in English
13. sfx for rumbling
14. Uguu [<http://i.imgur.com/xVi0bAy.jpg>]
15. You know full well what he means
16. Like a haughty "yes"; think Naofumi's "fumu" from TnY
17. Child; brat
18. Referring to Arnold
19. sfx for teleportation apparently
20. "Yeah"
21. Just shouting



# Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 71: The Little Girl's Invitation

(There's plenty that I want to retort, but why are the little girls of this world so strong...?)

Rarashik, who he had scanned a while ago, had also crossed level 100. And the little girl in front of him had god-class strength. What's more...

(And her having no attribute means she uses a unique magic like me...)

She was the first unique magic user he had ever met, apart from himself. He had no idea just how powerful 《Phantasm Magic》 was, but according to Arnold, every unique magic was extremely powerful. Her magic probably held something that allowed her to overwhelm her opponents.

(And that Silva is... a 『Spirit of Darkness』 ?)

Seeing the words on his list of titles made Hiiro hold his breath. He was able to take on the parasitizing cactus's poison without batting an eye, so Hiiro knew he was no ordinary person. But according to his title, he was one of the 『Spirits』 .

I never thought he would be a Spirit. That's actually more surprising than the unique magic. His appearance is that of your average, everyday old man, but he wasn't an 『Evila』 , or a 『Humas』 . He was a 『Pheom』 .

(A user of unique magic, a 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 cross, and a 『Pheom』 . What the hell is up with this mansion...)

Silva did say that this was the dwelling of eccentric people, but it seems he wasn't exaggerating. What's more, Hiiro himself was an otherworlder with unique magic; a person fitting of the place. The mansion was full to the brim of surprises.

But looking at the two's 《Status》 was a big help. Though he was a little shocked, having information would make his life easier. If they were to ever have to fight, he would be able to come up with countermeasures more easily.

Of course, he would lose if he attacked head-on, but there were plenty of approaches he could take with the information he gained. As he was thinking along those lines, Liliyn speak.

“Well, there is some sense in what you’re saying.” (Liliyn)

“That’s correct. Hiiro-sama is, to put it briefly, someone who is very similar to us.” (Silva)

“Fumu.” (Liliyn)

Lilyn turned her eyes to Hiiro once more, and began observing him. And after watching him for a while, she nodded lightly, and broke out in a smile.

When was Hiiro questioned her actions mentally, Liliyn suddenly thrust her finger at me, and spoke words he hadn’t expected.

“Okay, brat. Become mine.” (Liliyn)

The sudden turn of events put even Hiiro in shock. Silva shrugged his shoulders, and sighed.

“What are you saying? Of course, I won’t. I refuse.” (Hiiro)

“I refuse your refusal!” (Liliyn)

“... What?” (Hiiro)

She said it proudly, while sticking out her chest.

(This brat, what is she trying to do? Did she hit her head somewhere?)

“I’m perfectly sane, you fool.” (Liliyn)

“...Hm? Ah...” (Hiiro)

It seems that he had unintentionally spoken the words from his heart. Because of the sudden invitation, his mind was in a bit of disorder.

“According to Silva, you are on a journey. Put an end to that, and come serve me.” (Liliyn)

“Hell no, brat.” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean by brat! Even though I look like this, I’ve lived several hundred years, boy!” (Liliyn)

As Hiiro had guessed, her age far exceeded her appearance. Even so, as with Rarashik, having a little girl look down on him really pissed him off.

“Then granny.” (Hiiro)

“Say another word, and you’ll be seeing a nightmare you’ll never wake up from.” (Liliyn)

She began letting out a serious amount of killing intent. It seems that it would be difficult for an ordinary person to even stand in the face of it. Hiiro felt sweat gradually gathering on his back.

(So Granny is taboo. Then as with the Chibi Usagi, I probably shouldn’t use the word Little Girl.)

She didn’t seem to know the meaning of ‘Loli’, so Akaloli seemed to work just fine.

“... Anyways, if you’re recruiting, go ask elsewhere. I don’t want to serve anyone.” (Hiiro)

“And that’s why you’re on a journey?” (Liliyn)

“Right. I plan on seeing the world. I won’t let anyone get in my way.” (Hiiro)

Neither side would back down. Their eyes met, and sparks flew. Finally, Liliyn smiled once more.

“Kukuku, you said that before me without showing a sign of fear. You’ve truly piqued my interest.” (Liliyn)

It appears that instead of getting hated, Hiiro had merely increased her interest in him.

“As I thought, you should become mine, Hiiro Okamura.” (Liliyn)

“And am I not rejecting your offer here?” (Hiiro)

Liliyn puckers her lips, and makes an unpleasant expression.

“Hmph, so where do you plan on heading from here?” (Liliyn)

“Is that related to you in any way?” (Hiiro)

“It appears that he was searching for a town.” (Silva)

Hiiro turned his glare to Silva. Hiiro clicked his tongue as the pervert mouthed unnecessary things. Liliyn thinks for a bit, and widens her smile once more.

“A town... did you not know? There are no towns here.” (Liliyn)

“I know. There’s one far, far away, right?” (Hiiro)

“No, by here, I mean... You’re an 『Evila』, yet you don’t know? Kukuku, you’re stranger of an existence than I first thought.” (Liliyn)

She laughs loudly, and shivers run down Hiiro’s back.

“What are you trying to say?” (Hiiro)

Asking that probably wasn’t the best idea.

“There’s only a single town that can be called as such in the entire demon world. There’s no way you wouldn’t know... if you were an 『Evila』. No, even if you were just someone who lived in this continent.” (Lilyn)

She takes on a triumphant expression, as she looks down on Hiiro. But Hiiro being as he was, did not display any expression on his

face. Inside his head, he was a bit startled.

(Only one town? Right, Silva called this not a town, but a settlement.)

Far, far away, there was not a town, but a settlement. Silva said as such. Even so, why is there but a single town? Hiiro's curiosity was alight.

"Hmm, it seems you really didn't know. I see... Kukuku." (Liliyn)

Liliyn nods her head over and over. She constantly gazes in Hiiro's direction.

"It seems you're curious, so let me teach you." (Liliyn)

Her superiority complex was quite clear in her words. But since Hiiro had a desire to obtain the information, he held himself back.

As he stayed silent, Liliyn arbitrarily continued the conversation.

"Listen here. The Demon World has many settlements, but all of them have low populations. The amount of 『Evila』 races is high, but the actual numbers within races is scarce. They don't have any large scale settlements that can be called something like a town. Do you know why? In general, the 『Evila』 stick within their own races, and they have a high level of pride. Though a classification has been set up for the 『Evila』 race, few actually care about it. A small number of a single race is unable to assert itself as a town." (Liliyn)

Inevitably, instead of being called towns, there were only small communities formed by the members of a single race.

"Even the most numerous 『Imp Race』 has numbers less than one hundred. Of course, with a hundred, they could build a village, but the 『Imps』 don't have such motivations. No, none of the other races have any such motivations either. They just live by gathering together. That's the 『Evila』 way of life." (Liliyn)

Hiiro didn't know the 『Evila』 had such a trait. Though there are plenty of races, interracial populations are low, so they can't build

anything like a city. If the races were to gather, and work together, it would be a different story, but most of them don't interact with each other.

"But there is a single exception. That is the one I told you about, the single town. No, the capital." (Liliyn)

"... 【Demon Capital, Xaos】 ." (Hiiro)

"Oh, so you already knew." (Lilyn)

What came to mind was 【Demon Capital, Xaos】 . It seems that was a place separate from the rest of the continent.

"Right, only the Demon Capital is different. Long ago, the first one to call themselves the Demon King created it. In there, various races of 『Evila』 make their homes." (Liliyn)

"The Demon King gathered them to protect the capital?" (Hiiro)

"I see you're quick on the uptake. But that's not all. It seems that the Demon King delighted in associating with strong individuals." (Liliyn)

"By the way, by associating, she means XXXXXXXX. Nofofofof." (Silva)

(TL: That is a censor bar.)

Hiiro and Liliyn's faces get dyed a light shade of red. They glare at the pervert with their eyes half closed. It's not that the context was hard to understand, but Silva didn't really have to put it in words. It was irritating.

"Ahem. Anyways, that's how it is. The Demon King traversed the Demon World, and invited all the strong individuals they could find." (Liliyn)

"Oy, won't most people reject an offer like that." (Hiiro)

"Yes, but most knew who they were dealing with." (Liliyn)

“...?” (Hiiro)

“The Demon King possessed an enormous amount of power, she was quite a beauty.” (Liliyn)

“Beauty? Was the Demon King not a man?” (Hiiro)

“Nope, she’s female.” (Liliyn)

“...” (Hiiro)

“Her appearance was flowing with elegance, and regardless of the gender of whoever she was dealing with, she was able to steal their hearts. And she was also strong, with an overwhelming amount of charisma. There were few, if any, men who could refuse a request from her.” (Liliyn)

## Chapter 72: The Visiting Red Rain

Hiiro: 「...haa, so basically, the Demon Lord's gathered all the powerful and famous men in the Demon world and gave them a Harem? 」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, well that's about right. 」

Hiiro: 「And so the offspring born during this time prospered and are right now living in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】? 」

Liliyn: 「You're a clever boy. That's precisely it. 」

When the Demon Lord position was filled by a woman, men and children of various races across the Demon World became united. As their descendants gradually increased, they slowly began to form what is known as a country. This would certainly explain the circumstances as to how the 『Evila』, who did not believe in coexistence with other races, formed a country.

In other words, that city was filled with many 『Evila』 who had inherited the blood of the Demon Lord.

Hiiro: 「I get it. So the current Demon Lord, actually, not just him. The entire populace have the previous Demon Lord's blood flowing through their veins, right? 」

Liliyn: 「Well, kinda. It's not unusual to encounter people of other races who have migrated there as the capital accepts anyone, regardless of race. There are no average people there. I mean, there are even some bizarre freaks lurking about. 」

Liliyn stared at Hiiro, as if indicating that he was a prime example of this, yet-

Hiiro: (As opposed to me, this brat is even more eccentric but...there's also that pervert over there...)

Silva, noticing Hiiro glancing at him, emitted a complacent smile. If put succinctly, Hiiro thought it was creepy.



Liliyn: 「Now then, let's address the main issue. You, who didn't know anything about the town, er, country that any 『Evila』 should know, are making your way towards it? You do know that the country was involved in a war just a month ago, right? 」

Indeed. About a month prior, the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 gathered its martial forces in preparation for the war against the 『Gabranth』. Although war was easily prevented by the Demon Lord's conduct, it is not difficult to expect that this problem would cause all hell to break loose in the future.

Liliyn: 「Not to mention, I've heard that they've started up something with the 『Humas』. 」

Hiiro: 「What was that? 」

This was the first time he heard of such a thing. The reason they destroyed the bridge located on the 『Gabranth』 border was so they could avoid war. As such, Hiiro could not comprehend the reason why they had decided to involve themselves with the 『Humas』 this time.

Hiiro: 「Are they planning on warring with the humans now? 」

Liliyn: 「Nn(1)? Aa(2), no, you're mistaken. The way I phrased it was misleading, huh. It seems that they're trying to form an alliance with the 『Humas』. 」

Hiiro: 「...is that true? 」

Liliyn slightly raised both arms and shrugged her shoulders as she spoke.

Liliyn: 「Who knows? It's merely a rumour. I only heard that this was apparently declared during the Demon Lord's speech. Well, seeing as how the current Demon Lord is as sweet as honey, it seems plausible. 」

Hiiro: 「Seems like they're quite a forgiving. 」

Liliyn: 「Not really. There were many who had their friends and family killed by the 『Humas』. In the middle of this despair came

the alliance. Also, the one who advocated it was the little girl known as the Demon Lord.」

Hiiro: 「Hey, wait a minute! Is the Demon Lord a female?」

Liliyn: 「Aa, though the previous one was male. The one right now is the little girl Eveam, that guy's daughter.」

Little girl(3). It couldn't be helped that Liliyn would call most women as such. However, this was the first time that Hiiro heard about the Demon Lord being a woman. As the Demon Lord was often portrayed as a male in games, Hiiro arbitrarily assumed that was their gender.

Liliyn: 「Currently, the capital might be in a considerable uproar. The 『Evila』 there consider themselves as the supreme power. Even during the war with the 『Gabranth』, there are many that believed they would have won were it not for the Demon Lord's interference. Also, there's the proposed alliance. This in itself is enough of a reason for all of their frustrations to explode. In the event that it does detonate, it's entirely possible that riots will break out in the near future. Are you really planning on going to such a dangerous country, boy?」

Hiiro knew she began the discussion with the intention of not letting him go. However, there was some truth in what Liliyn said. Should Hiiro head to the capital at such a time and find himself caught up in the riots, it was possible that it would become very troublesome. It was also the home turf of the Demon Lord. Furthermore, it was certain that there would be people of greater levels than Hiiro, possessing mountainous strength.

Attempting to collect information inconspicuously under such circumstances would be quite a challenge. Of course, Hiiro could accomplish it were he to make good use of his 《Word Magic》, however, he understood that it was the way of the world to preserve his use of magic only in particularly irregular situations.

Hiiro somehow vaguely realised that, ever since he was summoned, he seemed to be a presence that often got caught up in problems and turmoil. He could not deny the possibility that he would

become involved in something troublesome, should he go towards the capital.

Hiiro: (I wanted to see the country at least once though...)

No matter what one said, it was still the Capital of the Demon Country. He could somehow stipulate that this continent's size was on a different scale when compared to the human and beast countries. It is precisely because of this that Hiiro wanted to experience it for himself, even if only once.

As it was such a huge continent, Hiiro thought that it would definitely be full of delicious food and valuable books. It was without a doubt a place that he wanted to check out for himself.

Hiiro: (Yeah, especially the books. I've heard that they have 'that' over there...)

As Hiiro made a contemplative face in silence, he casually glanced outside the window. What appeared before him were mountains and a sky being filled with a white glow. It seemed that day had apparently arrived. It appeared that they had been talking for a long period of time. Yet, in that instance, Hiiro noticed something strange.

Although the bright light of day could be seen from far away, it had yet to enter the vicinity of the mansion. As he began contemplating what on earth this could mean-

\*Guraguraguragura!\*(4)

The mansion began to suddenly sway significantly. As Hiiro realized what was happening, he began to brace himself in response to the vibrations. Yet, as he saw Liliyn's nonchalant demeanor, Hiiro gave off a dubious expression as he stared at her in wonder.

Liliyn: 「I see, well, it's not really a disaster, it's kind of like an event that occurs often around here, it's the way of the world.」

Silva: 「Indeed, that is correct.」

It seemed that the two were familiar with the swaying. This could

be determined as there was no signs of panic visible from either of them.

After a while, the vibrations slowly decreased before fading away completely. Liliyn folded her arms as she began to converse with Silva.

Liliyn: 「I wonder how long it will be this time? 」

Silva: 「I am also curious. As the last time was 3 days, would this time not be even longer? 」

Liliyn: 「Reasoning? 」

Silva: 「Although the argument supporting this is that the shaking lasted longer than the previous time, it seems that... 」

Silva drew close to the window, gazing at the sky while spewing out words.

Silva: 「It seems that the size of the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud(5)》 is larger than the previous time. 」

Hiiro: 「Forbidden Emperor Cloud? 」

As Hiiro heard an unfamiliar word, he involuntarily let them leak from his mouth.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku(6), I see. If you don't know, then I'll tell you. 」

She was a fellow whose way of speaking seemed to always elicit irritation. Yet, as Liliyn joyfully deflected Hiiro's gaze, she began to speak her answer.

Liliyn: 「The thing referred to as the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 is a red cloud positioned high above this very mansion. 」

Hiiro: 「Red cloud? 」

Liliyn: 「Instead of words, it'd probably be better for you to see it with your own eyes. 」

As she said thus, Hiiro approached the window in a similar fashion to Silva as he looked up towards the sky. In doing so, he literally saw red clouds blanketing the skies. Following this, Red Rain(7), which was considered rare in this world, began to fall.

As Hiiro's eyes were mesmerized by the Red Rain that he had seen for the first time, he simply stood there, rooted in that singular spot. However, as he had heard the previous exchange between Silva and Liliyn, he realised that this rain was likely the cause of the vibrations. Although the rain was undoubtedly bizarre, the matter of whether it was the cause of the mansion's shaking was questionable.

And yet, as if preemptively addressing Hiiro's misgivings, Silva answered.

Silva: 「This Red Rain barely encompasses the area surrounding this island. That is to say, this rain only falls upon lake.」

Hiiro: 「Why doesn't it rain on the island?」

Silva: 「The 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 seems to be a cloud that consists of evaporated red rain. The evaporated water rises through the air and swirls into a cloud and, after a substantial amount of time passes, falls back down to earth in the form of rain. Well, if I told you to think that it 'comes and goes', would it be easier to understand?」

Hiiro: 「I see. While I don't understand why the rain falls in such a manner, it's true that, from what I can see, it doesn't seem to be raining on the island.」

No matter from what angle he looked, Hiiro could not see the sight of the windows and the garden or earth outside being drenched due to the rain. It seemed that it did not rain on the island, as Silva had indicated.

Liliyn: 「But you know, the color is not the only thing about the Red Rain that is different than normal. There is one other unique trait that it possesses.」

Hiiro: 「Trait? 」

Liliyn: 「 It makes magic ineffective. Basically, it has the power of a magic seal. 」

The one who had answered was Liliyn. As Hiiro shifted his gaze towards her, Liliyn began to move her mouth.

Liliyn: 「 It seems that when this rain begins pouring, magic cannot be used within the vicinity. Although the reason for this is still unknown, during my time on this island, there have been no exceptions to this, including us. I dare you to try. 」

Being told thus, Hiiro attempted to concentrate magic into his fingertips as per usual.

Hiiro: (...Nn?)

His fingertips became slightly warm as they glowed with a pale light as normal, yet, no matter how much Hiiro concentrated, nothing happened. He tried to write a word in the air, yet, nothing was projected.

In addition, it had suddenly occurred to him that he could no longer ascertain Mikazuki's location. As Hiiro had previously installed words onto Mikazuki, he could grasp her general location by sensing his magic. However, at the moment, he could not feel a thing.

Hiiro: (It...it's been canceled? Moreover, it was by force?)

Hiiro's thoughts were on the mark. From what Silva had said, this rain was called 《Magic Cancellor》. It seemed to possess the effect of forcibly shutting down magic. As such, those who were near the rain were deprived of the use of magic.

In this situation, it was not possible for Hiiro to write and install words on his body for protection. As he couldn't believe that such a strange rain existed, Hiiro instinctively clicked his tongue.

Hiiro: (No,.....isn't that wrong?)

It was there that Hiiro suddenly had an epiphany. The reason he felt the installed words disappeared was due to the risk associated with writing two words with 《Word Magic》 which he had done earlier. If he wrote two words, all one word spells installed would disappear. He had forgotten about it.

Hiiro: (However, even if I didn't use the 《Two-Word Chain(8)》 skill, does this mean that they would still disappear even in this rain.....ah, wait a sec!)

While making sure his concern did not appear on his face, he peered at his own body, exhaling in relief as he took note of his skin tone. This alleviation was due to the 「Change」 | 『化』 word's effect had not disappeared. Therefore, he felt secure as his appearance remained one belonging to the 『Imp Race』. If he were to return to being human now, he would not be able to make up an excuse.

Hiiro: (But even so, what the hell does this mean...?)

It was at this point that Hiiro began to contemplate the differences between his installed words and Liliyn's barrier magic with the spell 「Change」 | 『化』. While the fact that both groups are magic remain unchanged, the former continued to maintain its effects by using magic as fuel while the latter has already produced its results, meaning that the spell has already been cast.

Hiiro: (So magic effects that are fixed seem to be unaffected. It seems that the scratches from the maid have been cured as well.)

If indeed all magic that had been cast was canceled indiscriminately, then his shoulder, wounded by Shamoe's assault last night, should have scratches re-appearing as the 「Heal」 | 『治』 word's effect would disappear..

In other words, rather than sealing magic itself, it suppresses the emission of magic. In other words, magic itself.

Hiiro: (Apparently, instead of sealing magic, it seems to seal the use of magic power.)

However, this consequentially benefited Hiiro. It was obviously for the better that Hiiro had not returned to his human appearance. Even so, he was amazed at the existence of such an environment.

Hiiro: (The demon world....it's really a place where you can't get bored, huh.)

Although the demon world's environment was just that, to Hiiro, it was completely different to what he had experienced before. He couldn't possibly imagine that an environment would render him unable to use magic. As this became a matter of life and death for Hiiro, he sincerely thought from the bottom of his heart that it was good for him to find out about the red rain.

If he fought a monster without knowing this and this rain began to fall in the vicinity, he would be left confused as to why his magic was suddenly rendered ineffective, that confusion possibly allowing a monster to deprive Hiiro of his life. It is precisely because of this that Hiiro genuinely welcomed this experience.

Hiiro: 「I understand that I can't use magic when this rain is nearby. So what happens if I touch it? 」

When near such rain, magic becomes unusable. If he should touch it, it was possible that something of corresponding side-effects could assault his body. Concerned, Hiiro posed such a question, yet, Silva's answer was surprising.

Silva: 「What Hiiro-sama(9) is concerned about will not occur. 」

Hiiro: 「So if I touch it, I won't get a curse or anything similar? 」

Although Hiiro thought he had a little bit of a 'game brain', in this world, it's better to be err on the side of caution.

Silva: 「There is no such thing. If you were only to touch, then no problem should arise. 」

The way he phrased his answer caught Hiiro's attention. While Hiiro was sceptical as to whether there was something else to be wary of, he stared at Silva.



Silva: 「It is true that Red Rain certainly possesses characteristics similar to water. However, unlike normal water, Red Rain possesses considerable weight.」

Hiiro: 「Weight? You mean, it's heavy?」

Silva: 「You are correct. In addition, it pelts down from high above in the sky. If one were to be rained upon, the shock received would be quite significant. Therefore, I believe that trying to pass through that rain would prove....quite traumatizing, yes?」

Hiiro: 「.....」

He felt that the trauma one would experience would not be to the extent where it could be expressed with the word 'painful'. However, it was undeniable that, from what Hiiro could see, the rain did not seem to torrent down with a \*zaza\*(10). And yet, the sound of the rain was as large as the Guerrilla Rainstorm(11). Evidently, every single droplet seemed to carry an immense impact.

Hiiro: 「Come to think of it, you didn't answer my question earlier. What was that shaking a little while ago?」

Silva: 「Aa, that was the aftermath of the barrier that the lady prepared being dissolved.」

Hiiro: 「Barrier? Now that you mention it, you guys did say something about that earlier.」

Silva: 「Indeed. During the night, the surroundings are full of Rank S monsters as a large amount of them make inhabit this area. Although if we were to be attacked, Ojou-sama(12)would undoubtedly have no problems however, as she dislikes having her sleep disturbed, she set up the barrier in order to repel those monsters from entering the premises.」

It was true that disturbing someone's sleep could not be forgiven. Hiiro could completely understand this sentiment.

Silva: 「The barrier is also made up of magic. Thus, as the Red Rain forcibly canceled the barrier, the mansion shook in recoil. There is no need for concern. However...」

Silva abruptly narrowed his eyes as he shifted his line-of-sight towards the outside of the window.

「Gugyagyagyagya~~~~!!!(13)」

A deafening howl could be heard. As tension Involuntarily ran throughout his entire body, Hiiro peered out the window in a similar fashion to Silva. Liliyn, the only one who had her arms folded and eyes closed, exhaustingly spat out a sigh as she slowly opened her eyes.

Liliyn: 「As I thought, he came...Baron Bone Lizard(14).」

## Notes:

1. Nn: Expression denoting interest or confusion.
2. Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like ‘Uh-huh’ or ‘Yeah’.
3. TL Note: Little girl = 小娘. Kind of demeaning. GT pushed out alternate translations such as ‘lass’ or ‘puss’. I think you can see why I opted for little girl.
4. \*guragura\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*wobble\*.
5. TL Note: Not sure how to literally translate. The kanji reads as Forbidden Emperor Cloud | 禁帝雲. The furigana suggests to read it as Kin Tei Un.
6. Kukuku: Liliyn’s snicker.
7. TL Note: Furigana literally indicates to read this as ‘Red Rain’. Thus, you’ll be seeing it a lot in the chapter with no variants.
8. TL Note: The skill name was not explicitly stated. However, I felt it needed to be included in order to preserve grammatical quality.
9. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
10. \*zaza\*: Japanese onomatopoeia signifying heavy rain. Like \*pitter patter\* except multiply effect by a large amount.
11. Guerilla Rainstorms: [<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/>

Guerrilla\_rainstorm]

12. Ojou-sama: A term used to refer to a female of high status.  
Alt Trans: 'My Lady' | 'Mistress'.
13. Gugya: I don't know. Some sort of cry/howl?
14. TL Note: Like Yoraikun, I'm really beginning to question the author's naming sense...

## Chapter 73: The Monster of SS Rank

As soon as the group heard the cry, they exited the mansion in order to confirm what it was. As soon as they passed the door entrance, they could see something rising from the red lake.

“T-this thing...”

Baron Bone Lizard. That was the monster’s name. Hihiro had never heard that monster’s name before, however, unknown monsters like this were to be expected. That aside, the atmosphere around this monster was similar to something that he had encountered before.

(No, this presence.)

The monster definitely had an atmosphere different from other monsters Hihiro had encountered, yet, for some reason, it felt familiar to him. It was clear that the “Baron Bone Lizard” wasn’t a monster that he had encountered before.

During his time in Japan, there was a TV show that talked about reptiles similar to Komodo Dragons. The contours and physique of this monster were the same, however, its size was beyond comprehension.

It was at least 10 meters long. Furthermore, it had no muscle nor meat, making it unclear as to how it was capable of movement. Its whole frame was constructed out of bones. It looked as if a dinosaur fossil at a museum had just come back to life.

The bones were pure bright red. It emitted a crimson glow that one could use to clearly identify it in the middle of the night.

“For fuck’s sake, even though this mutant usually stays holed up in the bottom of the lake-” (Liliyn)

Liliyn spoke with a displeased expression.

“For it to come out at this time. What an annoying bunch of bones.” (Liliyn)

When Hiiro heard those words

(Usually at the bottom? Doesn't that mean it rose up to the surface because the Red Rain appeared?)

From his analysis, Hiiro knew that the current situation was quite treacherous. This was mainly due to his magic being rendered unusable. If it was normal monster, he would have very little issue beating it with [Thorn-piercer]. However, the monster before him was anything but. As he contemplated, he inhaled sharply as he suddenly remembered.

(This feeling, it's the same feeling I felt before against that guy.)

Recalling those memories, Hiiro involuntarily shuddered as he unconsciously stepped backwards. This was caused by trauma he had received earlier, yet, he didn't take his eyes off of it as he cleared his throat.

(Fu, no doubt, this atmosphere is that of an SS ranked monster.)

When Hiiro separated from Arnold and Muir, he encountered a monster by accident. It was monster called [Duke Eagle]. After coming to this world (Edea), it was the first time that he had fought with his life on the line.

The Duke Eagle was a SS Ranked monster. It wasn't a monster that Hiiro, who was around level 50, could face by himself. Although he was fortunate as he managed to repel the monster, it was a life and death experience.

Now, a monster possessing a similar foreboding atmosphere to that previous encounter was right before his eyes. That was the Baron Bone Lizard

(This is bad...this is really bad...)

He had leveled up since then, however, without his magic, he could do little. At his current level, he would be able to face an S ranked monster normally. However, without his magic, he wouldn't stand a chance against this monster.

Just as Hihiro clenched his teeth and tried to come up with a plan to escape, the Baron Bone Lizard opened its mouth wide. Unsure of what it was going to do, Hihiro looked at it in a daze

Kyiiiiiiiii!

It made a faint buzzing sound that reverberated throughout the surrounding area. Then, a red orb appeared in front of its open mouth, gradually increasing in size.

“To start off with a such a bold move, what did it think this place was?” (Liliyn)

A displeased, unsurprised expression appeared on her face. Her level was over 100. However, as she was incapable of utilising any magic in this situation, she could only resort to physical attacks. Unsure of where her composure came from, Hihiro scowled.

“Silva, give me that.” (Liliyn)

“Here is it” (Silva)

Obeying her orders, Silva, who was beside her, took out something from his chest. It was something that Hihiro was quite familiar with.

(That’s...the [Golden Rose]?)

Indeed, it was as Hihiro had indicated. The object was what had been on top of the Cactus Man’s head when they were passing through [Venom Mountain], the [Golden Rose]. This was something that Liliyn had ordered Silva to retrieve.

(But why take the rose out now...?)

In the instant that Hihiro attempted to understand what Liliyn was going to do, she surprised him by munching on the [Gold Rose].

(She...ate it!?)

Hihiro didn’t expect her to eat and just stared blankly at her. She continued chewing and then.

Gokuri (Gulp)

It didn't look like she enjoyed it, yet, it was clear that it had entered her stomach. She then proceeded to look at the Baron Bone Lizard with a keen eye.

"I'm still sleepy. I'll have you disappear quickly you pile of bones" (Liliyn)

In spite of this, the one that had made the first move was the Bone Baron Lizard. The red orb that was over one meter in diameter suddenly shrunk to about a sphere with a diameter of 30 centimeters.

(It condensed its power?)

It probably planned to shoot it like a bullet. Yet, it was clear that what the monster had produced wasn't just a mere bullet. It was definitely something much more powerful.

(From what I can remember, I think the [Duke Eagle] used something similar.)

Due to Hihiro's experience, he was able to predict that the Baron Bone Lizard was about to do something dangerous. He felt sweat flowing down his spine.

"Hey brat, move out of the way" (Liliyn)

"Hey, you" (Hihiro)

"Just be good and move aside. I know you're strong but stand back and watch my fight." (Liliyn)

Saying thus, Liliyn jumped in front of Hihiro and faced the Baron Bone Lizard.

"Hey!" (Hihiro)

"Hihiro-sama, please come over here." (Silva)

All of a sudden, Silva moved beside Hihiro, proposing thus as he

bowed his head.

Hihiro accepted his proposal and stepped aside. He looked at Liliyn with doubt as she took on a SS ranked monster by herself.

(You can't use magic right now!)

Even though she had Unique Magic, no matter how powerful it may be, she couldn't use it right now. Both Silva and Liliyn herself should know this as well. And yet, she proceeded with her reckless action.

Hihiro himself was a irregular existence, however, it seemed that there were people even more abnormal.

Despite Hihiro's concerns, Liliyn looked forward as she smiled fearlessly.

"Fuwa~, Hurry up and come at me small fry" (Liliyn)

A \*clack\* sound was heard, perhaps induced by Liliyn's yawn.

[GuGyaGyaGyaGyaGya] (Some sort of roaring sound)

The condensed red orb flew at Liliyn.

Shuiiiiiiiiiiii! (Sound of something moving really fast in the air)

The orb came at Liliyn with tremendous speed. Without losing her smile, she casually held her right hand towards the orb.

A noise that sounded like something splitting could be heard upon collision as something flew out in response.

Gusa! (Stab)

At that moment, something golden had appeared in the center of the orb... ..

.....a golden spike appeared in the center of the orb that the Baron Bone Lizard released.



## Chapter 74: The Origin of the Red Rain

The metal spike's size was enormous, its magnitude so large that a normal person would be rendered unable to deal with it.

The spike pierced the orb, pinning it to the ground. Unable to move, the orb slowly collapsed.

(What, what is that? Where did it come from?) (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked towards the direction where the spike flew from. In other words, he looked towards the sky. However, all he could see was the blanketing red cloud. There was nobody there.

Due to this, one could only wonder who had caused the orb to stop moving. As Hiiro thought, he could only come to the conclusion that it could not be anyone else but Liliyn. As she continued to emit her fearless smile, she flexed her finger towards the ground. In doing so-

\*Gusagusagusagusagusagusa-!\*

Once again, nails began to appear in the sky. Moreover, this time there were multiple of them. Those golden spikes began to pierce and embed themselves into Baron Bone Lizard's body, one after the other.

Witnessing such a scene, Hiiro was stunned as he simply stared. He had absolutely no clue what had just taken place. Before he was

aware of it, the orb from earlier had disappeared. The monster pertaining a Rank of SS was immobilized as its entire body was punctured by countless spikes that had lashed out at it.

The sensation of imminent threat that Hihiro had felt earlier had completely disappeared in an instant, as if it were simply a passing breeze.

“Gu.....Gii.....Gaa.....” (Baron Bone Lizard)

Baron Bone Lizard desperately attempted to move its body, yet, above it were incoming spikes flying towards it. In addition, the spikes were even larger than the previous ones. As there were a multitude of spikes, varying in sizes and lengths, it could be determined that more and more bones inside of its body would be broken. Its tail was pulverized from its roots. Even the limbs that supported its body were brutally and cruelly shattered.

What had stolen Hihiro’s vision in the next moment was the sight of pitch black wings growing on Liliyn’s black, her figure afloat in midair. Her blood-like crimson long hair swayed. The rear figure of the girl who possessed obsidian wings that seemed to encompass everything resembled a demon that often appeared in anime or games.

“Now then.....this should finish it.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn brought her hand to the sky before swinging it down like a whip in the direction of the Baron Bone Lizard.

\*Pakipakipakipaki-!\* (TL: Sound of piercing?)

A single, massive spike appeared, its magnitude easily capable of obliterating the Baron Bone Lizard's body. It fell on top of the monster's head, shattering it to smithereens as it generated a tremendous shock wave.

The shock wave was so powerful, the debris came flying towards them. Similar to the orb from earlier, after a while it collapsed as if it were sand before being blown away by the wind.

The monster was completely stunned.

"Now, I guess it's about here, huh." (Liliyn)

As if she had just finished her shift at work, Liliyn indifferently spat

out those words.

\*Pachin!\* (TL: Finger Snap.)

She lightly snapped her fingers. Then-

\*Piki\* ..... \*Pikiki\* ..... \*Pariiiiiin!\*

As Hiiro thought that the surrounding space had cracks appearing through it, a tone that resembled glass breaking resounded.

“What!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked around him restlessly. The whole scene returned to what it was before the body of the Baron Bone Lizard had appeared. The [Forbidden Emperor Cloud] was still present and the Red Rain continued to pelt down upon the empty field before him.

The shattered remains of the Baron Bone Lizard lay at the center of the field. All the golden spikes that Liliyn used in her assault had disappeared and the ground was completely intact.

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Unable to logically analyze the situation, Hiiro stared at the situation with a confused expression. Ignoring Hiiro, Lilyn retracted her wings and landed on the ground as if nothing happened.

“Clean that up. I’m going to sleep” (Liliyn)

“Understood. Have a good night, master.” (Silva)

As expected, Silva nodded his head as he acknowledged her order. While Hiiro was looking at Liliyn’s back, she turned around and said.

“What do you think? I’m strong, right brat? Fufu~n” (Liliyn)

She said with an air of superiority. Looking at the dumbfounded Hiiro, she smiled with satisfaction as she entered the house.

As ordered by his master, Silva approached the shattered bones of the bone lizard.

“Hey, are you sure it’s alright to approach it?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, it has already been annihilated” (Silva)

“A-Annihilated? So it’s dead? You’re saying It died?” (Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro seeking confirmation twice, Silva nodded as he spoke.

“I am sure you are surprised, but that is the extent of my master’s power.” (Silva)

“...Power? You mean that was magic just now?” (Hiiro)

“You are completely right” (Silva)

“Hold it, Isn’t that weird? From what I’ve experienced so far, you shouldn’t be able to use magic in the Red Rain right?” (Hiiro)

That was something that Silva had told Hiiro. Hiiro even confirmed it himself by using magic. It was clear that it had been disabled at that time.

“Yes, it is clear that magic cannot be used at the current time. However, there is an exception.” (Silva)

“Exception?” (Hiiro)

“Indeed. It is this.” (Silva)

Saying thus, Silva picked up something and presented it to Hiiro. Upon closer inspection, what he held was a petal of the <<Golden Rose>>.

“What’s that?” (Hiiro)

“This flower has a special effect. As I said before, this flower contains a considerable amount of life force in contrast to its appearance.” (Silva)

Hiiro heard it before when he was collecting it.

“That life force is very compatible with living beings. It will bring numerous benefits to those that consume it.” (Silva)

“Benefits?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, it is called < Complete Origin >”

“What’s that?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro heard an unfamiliar word.



“In short, the person who consumes this flower will be immune to abnormal statuses.” (Silva)

Abnormal statuses? ...I see, so that's why she could utilise magic? No, actually, the effect of the Red Rain is an abnormal status?” (Hiiro)

“You are absolutely right. The magic seal caused by the red rain is an abnormal status” (Silva)

“I see. For it to have such a convenient ability...” (Hiiro)

Of course, if Hiiro used [Word magic] and wrote the words [Restore] or [Normal], he would be able to achieve the same effect. However, because magic was sealed off during the [Red Rain], he was unable to use those effects.

“I see, is that why she sent an old man like you to a poisonous mountain to retrieve it?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro was somehow able to understand the situation. In order to

face this monster, preparation was necessary. That was why Liliyn sent Silva. However, Silva shook his head and said.

“Nofofo, I’m sorry but your are wrong” (Silva)

“What? I’m wrong?” (Hiiro)

“Yes. Whether my master had this or not, a monster of this degree is not difficult for her” (Silva)

“...Then why did she use something like this, this time?” (Hiiro)

“Even if she looks like that, she possesses a strong desire to reveal her power...to put it succinctly, she enjoys boasting her superior force.” (Silva)

“Is she a kid or something?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro let out a breath as he said it. Silva responded with a happy smile.

“Nofof, does this not display the extent of how obsessed she is with you?” (Silva)

“.....?” (Hiroy)

Hiroy knitted his eyebrows as he craned his head.

“There was no need for her to reveal her trump card to a worthless enemy. As she was interested in Hiroy-sama, she used her magic in an attempt to surprise you. Nofofofofof. (Silva)

It seems that she used the < <Golden Rose> > only because she wanted to show off.

“But is it possible to defeat it without magic?” (Hiroy)

Yes. That was the strange part. He could understand who was the stronger one level-wise. Yet, he did not think one could emerge victorious against an SS Ranked monster without the use of magic.

“Fumu, fumu. Certainly, if the opponent was a normal one, it

would be impossible. That monster is Baron Bone Lizard. A unique monster befitting of an SS Rank.” (Silva)

It was precisely as Hiiro had thought.

“However, no matter how strong an individual may be, they will always possess a weakness. Although Baron Bone Lizard is no different from such persons, it is also not an exception to this. Said weak point is a cylindric bone which acts like its core. Unlike the other bones, this one singular bone has a considerably lower defense value.” (Silva)

“Is that so? Meaning that if it’s destroyed, it will be defeated? (Hiiro)

“Indeed. However, no normal adventurer would be capable of easily destroying it. Only those that have over 600 Attack Points are capable of destroying said bone. (Silva)

Although it may seem like obtaining 600 Attack Points would be difficult, if one was able to, they would be able to obliterate said monster in one-hit.

“Basically, it’s weak in close-combat?” (Hiiro)

“Indeed. It’s specialty is shooting it’s Bone Ball, the red orb that appeared earlier. Other than that....(Silva)

Even though Hiiro had heard a lot, it mostly consisted of ranged-attacks. Rather, Hiiro was more surprised learning that the ball was made from bone as he had not expected it.

“Even so, considerable swiftness is required in order to get close. One also needs great perception to find the cylinder, and the power to attack it. Ojou-sama possesses all of such qualities. Thus, from the very beginning, there was no need for her to use magic to defeat it. It has always been as such. (Silva)

“I see. By the way, I wanna ask you something.” (Hiiro)

“If it is the matter of Ojou-sama’s magic, you realize that, should I not obtain her express permission, my mouth shall remain closed, yes?” (Silva)

“I don’t give two shits about that.” (Hiiro)

“Fo!?” (Silva)

As Silva thought Hiiro would be curious about Liliyn’s magic, he was shocked upon hearing Hiiro’s response.

“What I wanted to ask about is the < <Golden Rose> >.” (Hiiro)

“Ha, haa. Are you perchance referring to the Red Rain?” (Silva)

“Yeah, how long’s it gonna stay there? Earlier, you said that it would last for three days. During this time, we can’t use magic right?” (Hiiro)

“That is correct. The previous time, it had continued to rain for a period of three days. However, as I had stated earlier, scale of the red clouds this time is particularly large. The Baron Bone Lizard that appeared this time is also larger than the previous. Ah, I forgot to mention that the Baron Bone Lizard’s power is proportional to the size of the red cloud. Since the energy of the clouds is usually confined within the lake, the Baron Bone Lizard absorbs the power from the Red Rain. It is because of this that the larger the cloud is, the more powerful the Baron Bone Lizard becomes. Furthermore, this is only time that it has initiated an attack. In addition, even if we slay it, after some time, it will respawn from the lake.” (Silva)

It seemed to be a monster that appeared often. Furthermore, as it is a timid creature, it waits for an opportunity when magic cannot be used before beginning its hunt. It appeared that it usually fed on weak monsters that lived in the lake.

“I see. I understand the details about that monster. So? How do I get to the outside from here?” (Hiiro)

“The...outside?” (Silva)

“Yeah, I no longer have any business here, right? I’m gonna go continue my journey.” (Hiiro)

Silva frowned upon hearing Hiiro’s words..

“I apologise. However, the Red Rain is still pouring outside. It is dangerous. As I said before, the rain is very heavy. Because Baron Bone Lizards are originally born from it, it will not cause damage to them. However, on normal bodies, it will feel like countless stones pelting upon them from the sky. It would cause tremendous damage.” (Silva)

“Guh...” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked up the sky while groaning. It was exactly as Silva had indicated. In this kind of rain, even if one had an umbrella, it would not be able to withstand it. Also, the boat that was required to cross the lake was going to sink.

“Is that so? In other words, I can’t get out if this rain continues, huh?” (Hiiro)

“It would appear so.” (Silva)

Hiiro sighed deeply.

(Damn. I just wanted to grab some meat, yet, it turned into this disaster. Why do I always get caught up in trouble?) (Hiiro)

However, it was a fact that Hiiro was rendered unable to use his magic at the present time. Even if he asked Silva for the < <Golden Rose> >, there would not be any in stock.

(It can’t be helped. Even though it’s troublesome to be near that brat, I don’t have much choice but to ascertain the situation first, huh...) (Hiiro)

Following this, he returned to his room to sleep.



## Chapter 75 : The Apologizing Maid

When Hiiro woke up, it was already slightly past noon. When he went to the dining room, he saw Silva preparing lunch with great timing as usual. It seems that Silva knew that Hiiro woke up, and when Hiiro asked, he only responded, as usual, that it was because he is a butler.

It was useless to respond to him, so I let it be. When I was eating in silence, I sighed as I heard the sound of rain-drops splashing around the house.

Then, I suddenly remembered. I wonder if Mikazuki is alright.. Mikazuki should be experiencing this weird phenomena for the first time.. It's bad if she panics and falls to the lake.

Because I used <Two Word Chain>, the word I placed on Mikazuki disappeared, and I can't pinpoint her location. I think I will go check it out after finishing the meal.

Even though I can vaguely feel the location, I tried to ask Silva where the animal feeding ground is, it seems to be at the back of the mansion. After that, I quickly went out of the mansion and went to search for Mikazuki.

sfx : Zazazazazaza (Rain)

Even though it was raining in the vicinity, it was strange how it didn't rain here. This is really a different world, logic can't be used here. While thinking that, I continue to walk.

Just like Silva said, there's something like a shed behind the mansion. There, I saw something like a chicken with plump wings. Nearby, I saw Mikazuki sitting calmly while with her eyes close.

As for why she seems so relaxed, it was because there's a person grooming it.

"Kui !" (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki realize Hiiro's presence, Mikazuki called over Hiiro many times as if he is trying to get noticed by him. But, unlike Mikazuki, the other person is wearing a stiff face and looking at him.

That person was the one that he fought last night. (TL Note : Not that kind of "fight" :D )

"I-I-I am S-Sorry !" (Shamoe)

That person who's confused and keep apologizing is no other than this mansion's maid, Shamoe, who certainly caused some trouble with him last night, Shamoe.

"Kui ?" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki confused why Shamoe is apologizing to it's master, and looking at back and forth between each of them.

"E-E-Ehm.." (Shamoe)

Shamoe was panicking and don't know what to say. Watching such a scene, Hiiro only shrug his shoulder in amazement.

"I won't just let it slide you know ? Since, I almost died last night." (Hiiro)

That night, if I didn't resisted, I would certainly died. Even if I survived, I would recieve a significant injury. I won't just let it slide like that.

Hearing that, she felt really bad. She's shaking while holding both hand in front of her chest. She thought that Hiiro might be thinking of revenge.

Of course, Hiiro don't have such an intention. Even though last night, he drew his katana because of the danger, he didn't intend to kill people that are not hostile.

"Can you remember?" (Hiiro)

"Y-Y-Yes !" (Shamoe)

“That’s troublesome huh..” (Hiiro)

If she didn’t remember anything, she wouldn’t feel guilty. But, looks like she was conscious during the fight.

Since she can’t do anything but watch, she’s probably suffering since she has a weak heart.

“I-I am truly sorry ! Shamoe have done such unforgivable action !”  
(Shamoe)

She keeps apologizing over and over.

It’s true that she caused it, but Hiiro can only sympathize with her. Watching a girl apologizing over and over again, made Hiiro feel bad.

“What are you doing with this droolingbird ?” (Hiiro)

“Eh ? A droolingbird ?” (Shamoe)

“Kui Kui Kui Kui Kui !” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki was licking her master’s face as if she have not seen him for days.

“Eit, I always told you to stop that, didn’t i ?” (Hiiro) (TL Note : Ice cream !)

“Kuiiiiiii !” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki shook it’s head as if refusing. Then, Hiiro said,

“This is why.” (Hiiro)

After forcefully pushing Mikazuki away, he show his face full of droll to Shamoe.

“I-I see...” (Shamoe)

Understanding that, she gave him something like a handkerchief from her pocket to Hiiro. Hiiro obediently took it and wiped his face.

“Then, What were you doing with this guy ?” (Hiiro)

“O-Oh, That’s right, I was brushing it.” (Shamoe)

“Is that so ? Looks like, this guy have given you some trouble.”  
(Hiiro)

Mikazuki bent it’s neck as if apologizing.

“N-No, it’s nothing ! I can only do this much ! A-And, there was yesterday’s accident. I’m sorry because I wasn’t able to apologize right away !” (Shamoe)

Looks like she intended to apologize last night. But since she can’t find him, she tried to atone it by helping Mikazuki. She tried to apologize indirectly. If she have prepared her heart, of course she would apologize right away, but seeing Hiiro come in suddenly, her head was spinning.

Seeing this girl trembling before him, Hiiro fold his arm and say,

“What are you so afraid of ?” (Hiiro)

“E-Ehm, T-That is..” (Shamoe)

Hiiro don’t care about race differences. That’s why he didn’t know the problem of a half.

“That’s because, half is a detested existence..” (Shamoe)

“Hoh...” (Hiiro)

What she’s saying is, not only in here, a Half is a taboo. That’s why they got despised by all race. (TL Note : I can see a flag in the distance.. Damn you Hiiro ! ) That’s why..

“Unable to use both Magic and <Binding> huh...” (Hiiro)

That’s right, the characteristic of a Half, is that they inherited the physical characteristic from both race, but they didn’t inherit the unique skill from them. Which is Magic and <Binding> in this case. Since the blood cancel each other, they can’t used.

It's the same with a cross-breed of <Humas> and <Evila>. Unable to use magic, the halves are considered as a Taboo and a symbol of disaster.

Of course, cross-breeding is against the law. If the child is found, it will either get banished or eliminated.

Shamoe's mother which is an <Evila> was prepared for this when she gave birth to her. Her Father which is a <Gabranth> decided to search for a way to cross the continent and move away from his family. He told his wife and daughter that he will find it and definitely return.

But, when he's gone, the mother and young Shamoe lived in the shed the father built. The <Evila> nearby, notice this, and when they found out that Shamoe is a Half, they got banished.

They had nowhere to go and the father still hasn't returned. Because they have made a promise to wait here, they didn't want to leave this place.

Even though that the <Evila> disagreed with this, no one touched them. But, sneers and disdain are a everyday thing. No one even bother to look at them and treat them as if it is natural to hate them.

(TL Note : SHAMOE!!!!!! !! TT\_TT )

Even though young Shamoe is fine, the mother's heart is gradually broke. When Shamoe turned to 5 years old, the mother can't bear it any longer and collapsed. Then, she died silently after.... (TL Note : Ugh..... )

Shamoe is now alone, and don't know what to do. Seeing that her mother has passed away, the <Evila> nearby use this chance to get rid of her. They burnt down the shed that her father built.

After she had nowhere to return, she didn't know where to go. She have no choice but to wander the continent, but she can't use Magic. This continent is not a kind place for a young girl.

She was unable to gather enough food. She don't know how to find

a river to drink from. She was slowly dying. Reaching her limit, when she was about to accept her fate, something is looked down at her.

“That was Ojou-sama.” (Shamoe)

She didn't wear frightened face anymore, a small gentle smile can be seen.

“That time, she lend her hand to me, and it's Super Cool !! Ah~ Kya Kya~” (Shamoe) (TL Note : Shit. YURI ALERT !!)

“Hah ?” (Hiiro)

Shamoe had a sparkling eyes and approached Hiiro.

“She said to me who was lying on the ground, “If you want to live, come with me !” , Then... then, she employed me on this mansion ! Ojou-sama didn't even hate halves ! I'm very grateful to Ojou-sama ! ” (Shamoe)

As if she forgot about Hiiro, she didn't realize she was approaching Hiiro. When she noticed, she quickly fall back and hang her head.

“E-Eh, I-I'm Sorry ! I-I-I have shown such indecent thing ! Argh, Shamoe is such an Idiot ! Idiot ! ” (Shamoe)

While Hiiro is thinking that he has seen scene like this before, Shamoe knocked her head over and over on the animal shed's wall. Hiiro shrugged.

“Come on, I don't mind it. So, that's why you are working here huh ? Aside from that, is it okay to tell me that story ? I'm just a guest you know ?” (Hiiro)

Whether it's Liliyn or her parents, they should be a precious memory to her. Hiiro doubt Shamoe because she told such a story to a mere traveler. She smiled a little and shook her head.

“I-I heard from Silva that Hiiro is not a person that care about races.” (Shamoe)

(That Hentai-jiji, saying unnecessary thing.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro clench his fist in his heart.

“Th-That’s why, even though it’s an ugly story, I-I wanted you to listen.” (Shamoe)

“Is that so ? If you’re fine with it, then it’s alright. I have no intention to reveal it to anyone anyway. Let me praise you for having a good eye.” (Hiiro) (TL Note : Good eye as in good enough to know Hiiro’s a good guy.)

“Th-Thank you so much !” (Shamoe)

Even though Hiiro was boasting, Shamoe still thanked him.

(Mu, if it’s Ossan, he would have fight back, but somehow she’s too obedient that it’s a bit annoying.) (Hiiro)

Somehow, I miss how Arnold responds..

“Well, whatever, Oh, that’s right, i will call you Dojimeido (Clumsy Maid), hear me Dojimeido ?” (Hiiro)

Shamoe was dumbfounded.

“Dojimeido, of the full-moon night.” (Hiiro)

Hearing that, she sighed.

“Even though you can’t control your own power, don’t attack me next time okay ?” (Hiiro)

“E-Eh ? I-I’m sorry !” (Shamoe)

“You better search for a way to control it. Go ask the red loli. She should know some way since she lived for such a long time.” (Hiiro)

“A-Actually, I already asked and have been practicing it.” (Shamoe)

“It didn’t go well, huh..” (Hiiro)

“Y-Yes..” (Shamoe)

Shamoe dropped her shoulder and glanced at Mikazuki.

“Well, I guess it’s fine as long as you’re trying.” (Hiiro)

“Eh ?” (Shamoe)

“At least, I like people who try their best even if they failed.”  
(Hiiro)

“Eh ?” (Shamoe)

Hearing Hiiro’s word, Shamoe blushed.

“Fueeeeee !?” (Shamoe) (TL Note : Rishia !!)

Hearing the sudden scream, Hiiro frowned.

“E-Eh, I-It’s just.. W-What do you mean by “Like” ? Fueeeeee !”  
(Shamoe)

Shamoe put both of her hand on her cheeks. Hiiro is confused why she’s so surprised. Hiiro frowned and stare at her.

(Wh-What should i do ~~~~ ??? He-He likes Shamoe ? That means, That means.. !) (Shamoe)

Shamoe’s eyes are rolling and something like a steam is floating from her head while her face is red like a tomato.

(What a weird girl, everyone on this mansion is a weirdo.) (Hiiro)  
(TL Note : Donkan Protagonists are Donkan.)

Unable to understand Shamoe’s wild delusion, Hiiro looked up at <Forbidden Emperor Cloud> and wondering when the rain will stop.



## Chapter 76: Contract with a Demon?

Three days had passed in the manor. During that time, although Hihiro befriended Silva and Shamoe, he didn't even catch a glimpse of Liliyn. According to Silva, Liliyn usually stayed in her room, relying on Silva to bring her meals.

Hihiro: (Haa, I don't really care about the Aka-Loli(1), but it looks like the rain's not showing any signs of stopping.....)

During the past three days, there was no sign of the rain letting up. As it had rained continuously for such a long time, Hihiro thought that the river might overflow. However, Silva assured him that there was nothing to be concerned about.

The reason for this was that the monsters living in the lake were absorbing the Red Rain. Although it was raining continuously right now, there was a point in the past where there was no rain at all.

Because of that, the monsters shrivelled up and died. Since the rain provided them with energy, they literally regarded it as a blessing.

However, to people, this was one of the most annoying events that could occur. As one could not step outside, even without Liliyn present, all one could do was stay muffled in their rooms as they ate and slept.

Hihiro: (This is a waste of time. I originally wanted to practice my 《Word Magic》, but I can't use magic right now...it's like I'm in a prison.)

Hihiro was obviously dissatisfied at first. Yet, in actuality, the mansion was filled with books and literature that Silva had collected, appeasing Hihiro's boredom. Hihiro deemed the books in Silva's collection as intriguing, especially the books detailing topics related to the Demon World. Thus, he enjoyed himself as he read through them.

At first, he was handed a book recommended by Silva. However, as it was clearly one of those books that the Perverted Butler often

had, Hiiro immediately smacked the pervert over the head with it.

As Hiiro was in the guest room, absorbed in his reading, he heard the sound of a door slowly opening. If the visitor was Silva or Shamoe, then they would definitely knock before hand. Thus, he understood that his visitor was the only other existence that resided in the mansion.

Shifting his gaze towards the opened door, he predictably saw a face that he had not seen in a while.

Liliyn: 「Lend me some of your time.(2)」

With her blazing red hair, Liliyn swayed as she spoke in a commanding tone.

Hiiro: 「I refuse.」

He instantly gave his rejection. However, perhaps expecting such an answer from Hiiro, Liliyn did not grow too upset as she continued.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku(3), I see you haven't changed much. Being able to face me with that kind of attitude, I mean.」

Hiiro: 「I'm reading. Don't bother me, Hikikomori(4).」

Liliyn: 「Fun(5), forget about that and come. I wanna show you something interesting.」

Hiiro: 「...?」

Hearing the words 'something interesting,' Hiiro's curiosity was piqued.

Hiiro: 「What's so interesting?」

Liliyn: 「Like I said, if you follow you'll find out.」

Hiiro: 「.....」

The two's eyes met. As Liliyn averted her eyes soon after, all the

while emitting a fearless grin, Hiiro shut the book with a \*pata\*(6).

Hiiro: 「Where are we going?」

Liliyn: 「Over here.」

Hiiro followed after Liliyn who had left the room. However, he noticed something suddenly drop to his feet as he exited the guest room. As he glanced at Liliyn's back, he picked up the object at his feet.

Hiiro: (This is...)

Hiiro saw something resembling golden petals.

Hiiro: (The 《Golden Rose》 ...huh?)

In the fight earlier with the Baron Bone Lizard, Liliyn had consumed the 《Golden Rose》. This piece may have fallen out of her clothing when she had passed this spot. As Hiiro thought thus, for whatever reason, he concealed it in his pocket as he followed after Liliyn who was walking ahead.

They had entered a dimly lit room, a room that Liliyn would refer to as her own.

Hiiro: (This room has really bad taste, huh.)

As he saw several creepy masks and ornaments lined up along the walls, Hiiro shrugged his shoulders. In the center of the room was a large magic circle drawn on the floor, a lone bed sitting on top of it. On top of said bed, Liliyn quietly sat down and stared at Hiiro.

Liliyn: 「I heard that your hobby is reading.」

Hiiro interpreted this as her most likely hearing this from Silva.

Liliyn: 「Right now, I've been arranging time to decipher a certain book.」

Hiiro: 「A certain book you say?」

Liliyn: 「That's right. Well, I give you permission to look.」

As Liliyn said thus, she took a singular book out from under her pillow. The book, wrapped in a pitch black hardcover, appeared to not have anything resembling a title written on it.

Liliyn: 「This was a book that I obtained through several connections but, here. Have a read.」

As she said thus, Liliyn threw the book towards Hiiro. Catching it with both hands, Hiiro first began to check the front and back covers. As he had thought, there was no trace of a title written anywhere. As such, he had no clue as to what the contents of the book were.

For the time being, Hiiro decided to check the contents of the book, his eyes involuntarily widening as he opened the book. Seeing Hiiro's expression, Liliyn's gaze sharpened as she stared at him. Of course, Hiiro was oblivious to this.

Hiiro: 「This is...why is such a thing in this world...?」

Hiiro unconsciously muttered in surprise. Of course, this was to be expected. This was because the contents of the book contained words that should not exist in this world.

Hiiro: 「...Japanese.」

Indeed, it was precisely as Hiiro had said. The characters written in the book was undoubtedly the native language of Hiiro's birth place, Japan.

Liliyn: 「As I thought.」

Upon hearing Liliyn's words, Hiiro looked towards her. He immediately regretted his actions.

Liliyn: 「Boy, I had thought that you didn't seem like someone born in the Demon World. No...you're not even a native of **【Edea】**...right?」

As she gave of an eerie smile, a dubious light shone within the

depths of her eyes.

Hiiro: (Damn...what the hell did I just say...?)

As he wasn't paying attention, he did not remember what he had said that was so significantly bad. However, from the current atmosphere, he could grasp that he had spoken something that caused even more problems for him.

Liliyn: 「 You can read that, right? 」

Hiiro threw back the book as he made his usual poker face.

Hiiro: 「 What are you talking about? I was just so instinctively appalled by how messy those words were. 」

Certainly, the black book was filled with scribbles. Reading it, one could tell that the characters were quirky. It could easily be called 'messy writing'. However, seeing through Hiiro's excuse, Liliyn's smirk as her amusement was overflowing.

Liliyn: 「 Don't bother, boy. 」

Saying thus, she took out a flower from her pouch. It was a charming flower that closely resembled a tulip, yet, its size was so small that it would fit neatly within her hand.

Liliyn: 「 This is called a 《Voice Flower》 . It's effect is... 」

Liliyn began to pour magic into the flower. Following this-

Voice Flower: 「 This is...why is such a thing in this world...? ...Japanese. 」

Hiiro clenched his fist and gritted his teeth. He never thought that he would have his voice recorded. What he had heard from the flower was undoubtedly his own voice. It was most likely the words that he had just spoke. If it wasn't, then it would be impossible for the word 『Japanese』 to appear.

Hiiro: (This brat, she was aiming for this since the beginning...)

Hihiro glared intently at Liliyn, however, she simply dismissed it as if it were a passing breeze as she continued.

Liliyn: 「Well, there's no need to make such a face. I don't really care who you are. I have no intention of spreading this either. The only thing that I am interested in is purely you yourself.」

Hihiro: 「...」

Liliyn: 「Because you seem ignorant about the ways of this world, I somehow knew that you were not of this world, that you were of a completely different world, you know? Also, that 'Jya-pa-nees'(7) word. That's either this book's title, or the general term used for the words written in it...am I wrong?」

Hihiro thought that she was an intelligent fellow as he clicked his tongue in his innermost thoughts. If Arnold was here, he would easily be able to deceive her. Yet, it seemed that he was up against the wrong opponent.

Liliyn: 「Those words couldn't be deciphered by anyone that I've met before. In other words, those characters do not belong to this world. There was also a hero summoning in the past. The hero was a savior belonging to another world. Furthermore, I heard that recently, a Hero Summoning took place in the 『Humas』 Continent. You...are you a hero?」

Liliyn asked as her eyes sparkled with a \*kirakira\*(8), shining with the light of intrigue.

Hihiro: 「I'm pretty sure I have no obligation to answer, you know?」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, certainly you have no obligation to. I just want to know. Then how about this. Name anything you desire. As compensation for fulfilling your wish, tell me about yourself.」

She reached her hand out towards Hihiro. An unpleasant sensation ran throughout his whole body, a sensation that seemed as if he were making a deal with the devil. Even if he thought it was his imagination, it was not entirely false. The girl in front of his eyes

was certainly a little girl, no. What held the appearance of a little girl was actually a cunning individual that had lived tens of Hiiro's life span.

However, as the situation was so one-sided, Hiiro felt uneasy. He had an idea to pierce the current silence, however, he was drawn by the words promising to fulfill his desire. He began to think of how to take maximum advantage of her proposal.

From what he had gathered from Silva and Shamoe, Hiiro understood that she was certainly not the type of person who would willingly spread information about others. Because of this, he particularly thought that her ideas were very exaggerated.

Hiiro: 「...I got it. Then first, listen to my request.」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, very well.」

Hearing Hiiro's words, her face brightened as she returned a slight nod.

Liliyn: 「State anything you desire. Even if you were to say you desired my body, I wouldn't mind, you know?」

Seeing Liliyn jokingly declare thus, Hiiro glared at her with half-opened eyes.

Hiiro: 「As if I would be interested in such a flat(9) body.」

She was cut down and disposed of in a single strike.

Liliyn: 「F...flat...you say...」 (10)

As if she had received a considerable amount of shock, her body trembled with a \*furufuru\*(11).

Liliyn: 「T-this...even though he's just a lowly boy...I'll pulverise your brain into mush...」

Although Liliyn's words were drenched with murderous intent, Hiiro was unconcerned as he opened his mouth.

Hiiro: 「I want the admission permit to the 【Fortuna Grand Library】.」

Liliyn: 「I won't be satiated just by simply killing him...I'll keep him alive as I show him hell...wait, what'd you say?」 (12)

Hiiro: 「Like I said, I want the admission permit to the 【Fortuna Grand Library】. Not just that, but the highest level clearance.」

Liliyn: 「...when you say the highest level, are you saying that you want to view the literature in 《Basement 5》 which requires certificates issued by the royal family?」

Hiiro: 「That's right. Prohibited books and archaic manuscripts, there seems to be lots of interesting things there, doesn't it?」

Liliyn: 「...hey, boy. I don't know whether you're aware of this, but those that are allowed to view the literature in 《Basement 5》 mostly comprise of only royalty. Even if they gave permits to the public, the chances of obtaining one would be extremely slim.」

Hiiro: 「Aa(13), it's precisely because of this that I'm saying I want to obtain such a permit.」

Liliyn: 「...you. Have you ever been told before that you're very bossy?」

Hiiro: 「I'll return those words straight back to you.」

Although they maintained a deadlock with their eyes for a while, the first to break it was Liliyn.

Liliyn: 「...haa. Why are you going that far? What's your goal?」

Hiiro: 「The hell're you saying? Books are things that are meant to be read. It's not something made to be stored away in a dark place. I'm travelling all around the world trying to read all the books I can.」

Liliyn: 「Hou(14), so it's just simple curiosity, huh?」

Hiiro: 「Got a problem?」



Liliyn: 「No...」

She grinned happily as she continued to speak.

Liliyn: 「However, it'd be good if that curiosity didn't destroy you someday.」

Hiiro: 「I won't die. Therefore, it's fine.」

Liliyn: 「Wha...pu-! Kuhahahahahahaha(15)! As I thought, you're definitely interesting! How about it, do you really have no intention of becoming mine!?」

Hiiro: 「You're so repetitive. I have no intention of becoming yours.」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, well, that'll probably change in due time. People change. I'll bring you to your knees someday with my charm.」

Hiiro: 「That day will definitely not come.」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku, we'll see about that.」

Saying thus, Liliyn opened the drawer of a shelf that had vials placed on top of it. Taking out something from the drawer, she threw it over to Hiiro with a \*hyoi\*(16). Luckily, Hiiro caught it as he confirmed what it was.

It was a singular piece of card that had her name written on it. Upon closer inspection, the words 【Fortuna】 were written, with a golden mark pressed onto it.

Liliyn: 「That's the admission permit. Furthermore, it's the one you requested, the one with the highest level clearance.」

Hiiro: 「This is...huh.」

Although he told his request half-heartedly, knowing that it was a desire that was unlikely to be fulfilled, as he unceremoniously obtained the permit, he was obviously surprised. Because of this, he began to wonder even more as to the identity of the person before his eyes.

As she had indicated earlier, those that possess the permit for 《Basement 5》 mainly consisted of royalty. And yet, she had one such permit in her possession. Knowing that this fact alone should be enough to startle anyone, Liliyn boasted as she puffed her chest out in pride, wearing a merry smile.

Hiiro: (Even though she said to state any desire, I had no expectations as I told her. Talk about a stroke of good luck.)

In regards to favours, Hiiro had another one in stock. If that one was unable to be granted then Hiiro would have determined that negotiations had broke down, causing him to immediately depart from this place. However, as he had been disappointed in a good way, the fact that Hiiro was puzzled was undeniably true.

This proved the extent of how difficult it was for a normal person to be able to obtain the 【Fortuna Grand Library's】 highest level permit.

The 【Fortuna Grand Library】 was a library that's located in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】. It's collection of literature was unparalleled in this world. It was also known as the 《Fountain of Knowledge》. It's said that no matter what problem you have, the answer would be slumbering within its walls.

『Humas』, 『Gabranth』, 『Evila』, 『Pheom』. The library has achieved the gathering and collection of literature from all the continents. However, the library works on a permit system. In order to gain entry, one must obtain permission from both the library director, and the country.

The library has two upper levels and four basements. As one goes lower, the books housed become more important, thus, it becomes even harder to gain access to them.

Basically, 『Evila』 usually apply for a permit for 《Basement 1》, a descending floor that often holds books that are commonly sold elsewhere. Floors even lower than 《Basement 2》 and 《Basement 3》 require not just permission from the head librarian, but the country as well. In other words, there are floors that require permission from the Royal Family to access.

One of which was the floor known as 《Basement 5》, a floor where books that were never revealed to the general populace are stored. Hiiro definitely wanted to read such books.

However, upon hearing this story, Hiiro began worrying about how he would obtain access to such a place. Although he could use 《Word Magic》 to attempt to sneak in like a shinobi, if possible, he wanted to peacefully gain access to such a location. Thus, he took up Liliyn's offer without giving it much thought.

It was a happy miscalculation that she happened to have a permit. Furthermore, it was a permit of the highest level. He had slightly viewed her as the goddess of luck, however, he decided not to voice this out.

Hiiro: (This brat....no, she's a hag, huh. Really, who in the world is she...)

Quite unlike himself, Hiiro slightly felt curious about Liliyn herself. Oblivious to such thoughts of his, Liliyn began to speak.

Liliyn: 「According to the contract, I've given you a means of entering 【Fortuna】. That's why, next, listen to my demands.」

Hiiro stared at Liliyn as he placed his hand on his chin. Silence shortly followed.

Hiiro: (I better make use of what I can...huh.)

Thinking as such, Hiiro quietly opened his mouth.

Hiiro: 「...if it's just hearing you out then I'll listen.」

Upon hearing Hiiro's words, Liliyn once again showed a broad smile.

## Note:

1. ^ Aka-Loli: Hiiro's nickname for Liliyn. Aka = Red. Loli = Lolita.

2. ^ TL Note: Literally translates to 'Let me borrow your face'. I'm assuming it means she wants to borrow him for a bit.
3. ^ Kukuku: Liliyn's smirk.
4. ^ Hikikomori: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hikikomori>
5. ^ Fun: 'Hmph'.
6. ^ \*Pata\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*close\*.
7. ^ TL Note: Japanese was written with Katakana, not the Kanji. This indicates that she doesn't know that meaning of the word, just the pronunciation.
8. ^ \*kirakira\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*sparkle\*.
9. ^ TL Note: The Jap used here is のっぺら.
10. ^ TL Note: Oh boy. Here we go...
11. ^ \*furufuru\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*tremble\*.
12. ^ TL Note: Is this yandere?
13. ^ Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like 'Uh-huh' or 'Yeah'.
14. ^ Hou: An expression of acknowledgement/understanding. Think 'I see', or 'I get it'. Can be sarcastic.
15. ^ Kuhaha: Liliyn's laugh.
16. ^ \*hyoi\*: Hard to explain in this context. Here:<http://thejadednetwork.com/sfx/browse/hyoi/>

## Chapter 77: New Traveling Companions

“As I’ve already said before, the only people in this room are you and me. There’s no way for other people to overhear us. Therefore, you’re free to tell me.” (Liliyn)

“You’ve taken some pretty meticulous preparations, huh?” (Hiiro)

The whole purpose of beckoning Hiiro into her room was for this. Primarily because she was so interested in him. Specifically, she was interested in the rare magic known as [Word Magic].

“First off, seeing that you can read that book, are you really not a Hero?” (Liliyn)

“Aah, I’m not a hero” (Hiiro)

“.....let me rephrase that, do you know what a Hero is?” (Liliyn)

As she threw a curveball of a question at Hiiro, he wondered as to why she had such a profound interest in them.

“Can I ask you something first?” (Hiiro)

“Nh? What?” (Liliyn)

“Why are you so interested in Heroes?” (Hiiro)

“Fu~n, a person summoned from another world is much more interesting compared to those living in a boring society.” (Liliyn)

“...Boring? A war almost started a little while ago, you know?” (Hiiro)

The threat of an outbreak of war was still present.

“I’m not interested in war. The history of humanity is the history of war. I’ve lived for a very long time. Do you really think I’ve maintained no contact with war?” (Liliyn)

Analyzing what she just said, Hiiro could assume that she had lived

for such a long period of time that she has probably lived through and witnessed numerous wars. There was also a chance that she had participated in them as well. Hiiro presumed that this was most likely the reason why war did not appeal to her.

(Well, if she were one of those war-hungry people then it would be a pain.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro was relieved that the girl before him held no interest in it. If she was, he might have gotten caught up in the war.

“You say you’re not a Hero, but you aren’t a resident of Edea, right?” (Liliyn)

“...Haah, it doesn’t seem to be any harm in telling you...but make sure not to tell anyone else, okay?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wanted to confirm this for the second time.

“You know, I’ve already said it several times before. Do I look like a person who would foolishly spread information?” (Liliyn)

Hiiro stared at her for a bit. She made a displeased expression with her mouth and eyebrows. Looking at such a face, his expectations dropped. He felt like he was talking to a child.

It was true that she had the same preferences as him. As long as her curiosity was satiated, she was satisfied. In addition, she did not seem like someone who would recklessly share what she knew.

Concerning the risks, Hiiro could feel that if he answered her barrage of questions, his secrets would not spread to the rest world. She, like Hiiro, was also a user of Unique Magic. It was probable that she would be considerably capable of sympathizing with him. Although overly optimistic, Hiiro felt that after advancing this far, it wouldn’t be a bad idea to just tell her everything.

“I understand. However, I will only tell you once.” (Hiiro)

“What? Why?” (Liliyn)

“If you don’t like it, I’ll talk more after I confirm that this is real.”

(Hihiro)

Hihiro showed her the permit to the [Fortuna Grand Library] as he said so.

“Really! Do you think what I gave you is fake?” (Liliyn)

“No, I’m not sure. I don’t know what the real thing looks like. I don’t want to be a fish lured in by fake bait.” (Hihiro)

Right after he said it, he took out from his pocket a golden petal; a golden petal that he picked up on his way into the room. When Liliyn saw it, her eyes opened wide.

“I’ve had enough of it...of your deceit.” (Hihiro)

She gritted her teeth and scowled at the smirking Hihiro. Her expression changed to a grin soon after.

“Kukuku, you’re an interesting brat. I’ll tell you what, I’ll pretend that I didn’t hear anything.” (Liliyn)

“Hm? Are you okay with that?” (Hihiro)

Hihiro scowled involuntarily at the surprising response.

“Yes, it would much more interesting to observe and find out everything about you.” (Liliyn)

“...isn’t that bad character?” (Hihiro)

“Kukuku, what’re you talking about? Did you think I was a good person?” (Liliyn)

“I couldn’t care less whether you’re a good person or a bad one.” (Hihiro)

“Kuhaha, well said. You are becoming more and more interesting. Alright then. Let’s declare it here.” (Liliyn)

“.....?” (Hihiro)

Liliyn intently pointed her finger at Hihiro.

“I’ll definitely make you mine. Just you wait.” (Liliyn)

She said with an insatiable curiosity, her pupil’s shining like a child who had just found a new toy. Seeing such an expression, Hiiro made the blunder of finding it interesting as well.

Hiiro smiled and replied.

“If you think you can, then prove it to me.” (Hiiro)

He stated it as if a game was about start. He began to feel a sense of comfort. It was different than the comfort he felt with Arnold and Muir. In all honesty, Hiiro needed to be alert when interacting with Liliyn, yet, he involuntarily found it interesting.

(Also, if I acquaint myself with someone like her, she could become a source of strength or power in the future.)

Although it was the same during his interactions with Rarashik, as he was mostly dancing around atop of Liliyn’s palm, Hiiro’s anxiety couldn’t help but build up. It was mainly because she was a strong individual that he couldn’t afford to lower his guard around her, Hiiro was betting on using her as a source of growth for him to get even stronger.

“Well then, I’ll return this to you” (Hiiro)

Hiiro tossed the permit back at Liliyn who caught it expertly as he proceeded to leave the room.

Liliyn took the permit and played with it for a bit before smiling. Following this, she returned the permit to its original location. However, something strange occurred as she did so.

Earlier, when Hiiro had looked at the permit, it was clear that the permit had the highest clearance level, the “Basement 5” gold mark printed on it. However, the permit for some reasoned, returned to a silver color.

She looked at the petals that Hiiro had dropped on the ground as she exhaled.



(Kukuku, it going to get busy now) (Liliyn)

A pair of crimson red eyes glowed suspiciously in the dim room.

The day after she talked with Hiiro, she gathered everyone in the room first thing in the morning as she made her declaration.

“Lets go on a journey” (Liliyn)

Hiiro was unsurprised with the announcement since he expected it after last night. However, the same could not be said for the other two. Silva stared at them with a stunned expression as Shamoe cried out.

“Fu~e~e~e~e~e?” (Shamoe)

She was completely startled.

“What are you so surprised about?” (Liliyn)

“I-I-I-I’m very surprised. W-W-why are we suddenly going on a journey?” (Shamoe)

It was a natural question for Shamoe. But Liliyn had a neutral expression as she moved her mouth.

“Un, the reason is, I’ll be joining that person on his journey.” (Liliyn)

“H-Hihiro-sama’s....” (Shamoe)

“Un!” (Liliyn)

Suddenly Silva opened his eyes wide and-

“Mumumu!” (Silva)

-bellowed thus.

“Master, there is no way! You already have me, yet, you have fallen for Hihiro-sama? Please say it is not so! If you are ever lonely, you will always have a man with an overflowing passionate soul and throbbing heart to embrace you.” (Silva)

“As if-!” (Liliyn)

“Bu-gyo-wa?” (Silva)

Irritated by Silva’s complete misunderstanding, she dropped kicked him on the head, making him crumple onto the ground.

“S-Silva-sama” (Shamoe)

Shamoe grew flustered as she tried to deal with the current spectacle. Liliyn folded her arms, exhaling as she spoke.

“Listen up, I made a deal with that person. The contents of that deal, however, are a secret.” (Liliyn)

The contents weren’t that important, however, she was told not to talk about it so she planned on doing just that.

“Because of the deal, I have no choice but to follow that person to his destination.”

“W-where is that place” (Shamoe)

Shamoe asked anxiously.

“Demon Continent, Xaos.” (Liliyn)

Upon hearing that name, Silva stood up vigorously as he looked at Liliyn with glistening eyes.

“N-no, you mustn’t go there!” (Silva)

“W-what is it all of a sudden?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn was also caught by surprise when the invincible butler suddenly resurrected.

“Don’t go. Don’t go. Please don’t go! Please don’t go to that place... [Xaos]” (Silva)

The other three looked at the heated old man.

“That place is a city! You are aware, yes? It is a place with lots of

people! In such a place, what do you think would happen to a lazy, sheltered, cute and beautiful princess?" (Silva)

Although there seemed to be some hidden intention there, they all remained silent for the time being and listened.

"If you were to wander into such a big place, there is a chance that you would get lost. Using that opportunity, a low life would approach you and then take you to some isolated ally and...and bufufofo!" (Silva)

To everyone's surprise, a red substance began to flow out of Silva's nose for some reason.

"Ku..no...nofofo...this isn't good." (Silva)

"What isn't good is this pervert!" (Liliyn)

"A-cho-bu-rin!?" (Silva)

The answer was quite clear. It would be better to leave this perverted old man behind.

With a wonderful uppercut by Liliyn, the perverted old man's head buried itself into the ceiling.

(This place is definitely chaotic) (Hiiro)

The butler in particular.....

(There was no way someone who's at Level 148 would be taken out so easily by a guy.) (Hiiro)

She would definitely turn the tables on that person.

Liliyn dusted off her hands (Pan-Pan) and continued.

"The Red rain has weakened. It is likely that it will cease tonight. We should be able to depart so make your preparations. Also, that person (Silva) is abnormal. Shamoe, please crush his bones and grind it into bird feed." (Liliyn)

“Eh, Ah, Yes! ... Ah, no, I mean...” (Shamoe)

The maid was unsure as to what she should do. The butler had his head buried in the ceiling. The little girl who only moved straight towards her goals.

(Going on a journey with these people.....it's depressing.)

When he went to Liliyn's room, no matter whether the permit was real or fake, this would still be the result. Even if it was fake, he would have to no choice but to take the permit to the [Demon Continent, Chaos] to complete the deal.

Also, even if it was real, he would not be able to use the permit without her presence. He could do something with [Word Magic], like copy the permit. However, it would be suspicious for a normal person to have such a permit in the first place.

He could disguise himself as Liliyn and use the permit. However, if the permit was fake, he wouldn't be able to do anything. He thought of lots of other things on his mind, but he would only use force if all else failed.

As she was so interested in him, Hiiro determined that she could either restrain him or accompany him on his journey. The possibility of either was quite high. Hiiro had made preparations as he heard Silva say that Liliyn excelled in brute force.

From the deal last night, he understood why she wanted to go on a journey with him. Also, if she went with him, it was clear that the other two would follow as well. That was because, for some reason, both Shamoe and Silva relied on her.

Three more people would become troublesome. Hiiro liked journeying alone. However, since coming to this world, he thought that travelling with others were not bad at all.

Arnold, Muir, and now Mikazuki. Although it was certainly good to travel alone, it was definitely more interesting to travel with another person.

There are a lot of things that Hiiro didn't know about the Demon

continent. Liliyn and the other two would probably know a lot about the continent. Learning about them during the journey would become major asset later on.

(If something happens, I can always use the word [Transfer] to escape right away.) (Hihiro)

[Word Magic] had a wide range of applications.

## Chapter 78 The Attendant's Concerns

That night, While Hiiro was sleeping, there was a knock on the door. And when he answered it turned out to be Silva.

“Can we speak for a moment?”(Silva)

“Sure, just make it quick.”(Hiiro)

“Yes!” (Silva)

Hiiro sat on the sofa, while Silva served some tea.

“Well, what do you want?”(Hiiro)

“I’m extremely sorry.” (Sliva) \*(I Deeply apologize.) {sounds more butler like.}

Silva suddenly bowed his head. Hiiro didn’t understand and tilted his head to the side.

“What do you mean?”(Hiiro)

“It’s about Ojou-sama.” (Silva)

.....{who is doing this Hiiro, Silva or Both??}

“I thought you got forced.” (Silva)

“Ah, that uh..”(Hiiro)

It’s look like she threatened Hiiro to join her on his journey.

“Ojou-sama is a person like that, once she found something interesting, she will take it no matter what.”(Silva)

“That’s true. I understand that.”(Hiiro)

“But, if it’s really troublesome, you should go now when Ojou-sama is sleeping.”(Silva)

“Oi...”(Hiiro)

Hearing Hiiro interrupting him, Silva had a blank face.

“Wh-What’s the matter?”(Silva)

“Even though I have no intention to go with that baba ...no, Akaloli. It's not that I got forced against my will you know? Well, though it's true that she insisted a bit.”(Hiiro)

“Is-Is that so?”(Silva)

“Yeah, we already agreed. That's why jii-san doesn't have to worry, or, shouldn't you have some confidence?” (Hiiro)

“Nofofofo, I am confident, but, it's just that Ojou-sama can't see other people's circumstances and normally force something on them against their will.”(Silva)

“True.”(Hiiro)

“It's also due to the fact that Ojou-sama lives in such a remote place.”(Silva)

“Eh.. Is that so?”(Hiiro)

Basically, this mansion is used so that she didn't bring trouble to others..

“I don't think that's admirable though.”(Hiiro)



“Nofofofof, even though Ojou-sama looks like that, she is also kind you know?”(Silva)

Seeing Silva smiling like this, rather than a servant, he seems more like a father.

“Since she has lived for such a long time, she has had to go through sweet and bitter times, and has a lot of experience because of it.”(Silva)

It is true that being a level 148 surely means she cannot be half-assed in experiences. Just like he said, she should have lots of experience.

From the standpoint of life experiences, Hihiro can't even compare.

“Aside from that, there is another reason why this mansion is built here, a BIG REASON.”(Silva)

“Oh...?”(Hihiro)

“Like I have mentioned before, this place is full of weird and eccentric people. This building is also built for those who have lost their homes.”(Silva)

“Like her huh..”(Hihiro)

“That’s right.”(Silva)

It’s true that Silva mentioned something about this being a place with weird and eccentric people. But, I didn’t think it was built for that purpose.

“Actually, I’m a <Spirit>”(Silva) {Rather sudden lol}

“...”(Hiiro)

“I’m sorry that I kept silent about this before, but now that we are going to be traveling together, this is a courtesy.”(Silva)

“Is that so..”(Hiiro)

Though Hiiro already had known this beforehand, since he used “Pry” (司見) on him, he nod out of respect for his feelings.

“And, as you already know, Shamoe is <Magical Beast> . It’s hard to live in this land.”(Silva)

“I see. So that is why she built this building.”(Hiiro)

Hiiro said that while looking around the room. Silva nodded.

“Even so, there have been no guests for a long time. Though, monsters still come.”(Silva)

Silva said that with a lonely face

“Well, though I think the problem is the location.”(Hiiro)

Well, it is the truth that this place is surrounded by lake. A better place surely exists.

“Nofofofo, that’s right. But, Ojou-sama took a liking to this place.”(Silva)

“Why?”(Hiiro)

“Because the abnormal is more cool to her.”(Silva)

“Is she an idiot or something?”(Hiiro)

I really wonder if she lost her mind or something else entirely.

“Nofofofo, an ordinary person like me can’t understand Ojou-sama’s interests.”(Silva)

“No no no, it’s simply because she is simply too weird.”(Hiiro)

Seeing Hiiro say that while simply sighing, Silva smiled and said,

“Nofofofo, she likes your straight-forward approach you know?”  
(Silva)

“I don’t care.” (Hiiro)

“Nofofofofo, Since she always sticks with her decision, she got stuck here. Though, as expected, no one came.”(Silva)

“True.”(Hiiro)

“Ojou-sama is helplessly bored. She always told me to go travel on impossible quests for fun.”(Silva)

“Ahh, so that mountain huh..”(Hiiro)

Now that I think of it, It was obvious that Silva was moving by Liliyn’s order.

“It’s not only that though. But, Ojou-sama eventually got bored with that too.”(Silva)

“...”(Hiiro)

“That time, when Hiiro-sama came.”(Silva)

“What a coincidence.” (Hiiro)

“Nope, more than a coincidence, from the start, I already intend to invite you.”(Silva)

Hearing that, Hiiro narrowed his eyebrow.

“oh really now?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, I immediately could tell that Hiiro-sama is not normal.”(Silva)

“I see... <Spirit>’s skill huh. Are you from observing race?”(Hiiro)

“Nofofofo, as expected, you truly knew. I presume, you have met another <Pheom>?” (Silva)

“That is the question.”(Hiiro)

“Nofofofo, that’s a shame. But, even in the realm of <Spirit>, I’m not normal.”(Silva)

“Hm?”(Hiiro)

“Normally, <Pheom> do not have the power to observe.”(Silva)

“I guess that’s true. If it was true, you would have known immediately that I’m not from <Imp Race>, and see through my identity.” (Hiiro)

The <Spirit> I met before saw through my beast appearance. If Silva were to possess that power, it would be the same. But, since he didn’t, I suppose he didn’t have it.

“Due to many circumstances, the eccentric me ended up here.”  
(Silva)

“A Pervert right?”(Hiiro)

“Nofofofo, that’s harsh you know. Nofofofo.” (Silva)

“Well, after I got here, I’m wondering if there’s something.” (Hiiro)

“Is that so? But, that is Hiiro-sama himself is the one that makes the bored Ojou-sama that has been holed up here become cheerful again.”(Silva)

“Oi, I didn’t do anything though?”(Hiiro)

“No no, Even Shamoe had the same thought. She who was a despised existence by <Evila>, can talk with you. She would have approved of it too.”(Silva)

“You sure praise me a lot.”(Hiiro)

Hearing Silva say that so seriously, it made it somewhat awkward, While Hiiro averted his eyes, trying not to make anymore misunderstandings, Hiiro drank the tea.

“It’s nothing. It seems I have taken a lot of time. I’m sorry.”(Silva)

“That’s true, but, is that person alright there?”(Hiiro)

A voice saying “Fueee” could be heard. Silva opened his eyes wide for a second and smiled. (TL Note : Rishia !! XD )[Editor note: Like Totally man]

“Oh...um, I’m busted?”(Shamoe)

“Obviously.”(Hiiro)

“That’s because..”(Shamoe)

GAZAGAZAGAZAFURUFURUFURU{sound of the door shaking}

The room’s door is unnaturally shaking.

“There’s no way to ignore it.”(Hiiro)

“Nofofof, Shamoe, you can come in you know?”(Silva)

Hearing that, Shamoe opened the door and peek inside. (SFX : Giii)

She just passed by chance and overheard Silva’s voice. She tried to eavesdrop, but it seems she got busted a while ago.

When she heard the conversation, she touched the door and it began to shake. She tried to hold it, and it seems it gave her away. Though the last part is why she got busted.

“A-Ah, Th-That was.. Eh-Eh, Sorry for eavesdropping!”(Shamoe)



She bowed her head vigorously. It's not like that Hiiro mind eavesdropping, and he didn't blame anyone.

"Don't mind it. That aside, are you alright?" (Hiiro)

"Fuuee?"(Shamoe)

"We're going to <Evila> Capital. There will be alot of them."(Hiiro)

She already experienced her home being destroyed by <Evila> Though it's unlikely she will meet the same people, there are alots of them. They might be from the same race that banished her.

Hiiro thought that having that kind of experience would be trauma when she met other <Evila>

But, while he was thinking that, She's wearing a smile.

"Th-Thank you very much! But, Shamoe's home is beside Silva and Ojou-sama. If they want to go, I must go too!" (Shamoe)

"Nofofofo, it means she's also prepared."(Silva)

"It seems so."(Hiiro)

It seems it's decided, that we will all go together.

"Hiiro-sama, this might be sudden, but, as comrade, please take care of me!"(Shamoe)

"Wait. What do you mean by comrade?!"(Hiiro)

"Mumumu, of course as our beloved Ojou-sama's fanclub!"(Silva)

"....."(Hiiro)

"As comrade!"(Shamoe)

....(Hiiro)

"As a com-"(Sliva)

"Stop it!"(Hiiro)

"Boronbi !?"(Silva) [EdN: Do not fully get what it means, but sounds funny]

Silva is given a short flight courtesy of a kick from Hiiro.

“Geez, it seems I really need to leave that jiji”(Hiiro)

“Fueeeee~”(Shamoe)

Shamoe was flustered as usual, and Silva also revived quickly as usual and now is saying. [EdN: Masochist spirit butler well well.]

“Nofofofo, looks like it’s gonna be fun now! Nofofofofo!”(Silva)

“Haa... I thought I died.”(Silva){not sure}

“A-Ah, Hiiro-sama!”(Shamoe)

“Hm?”(Hiiro)

“Sh-Shamoe also!”(Shamoe)

“Ahh...”(Hiiro)

“I-I will bring new batch of tea, okay?” (Shamoe)

Looking at her greeting desperately, he already thought to leave her from the start. Suddenly,

“Fueeee?!”(Shamoe)

~Gashan!

“Bunii!”(Shamoe)

She stumbled forward and magnificently dropped the pot on the bed.

“Awawawawawawa, I-I’m sorry ! Sh-Shamoe is idiot, idiot, idiot, idiot!”(Shamoe)

While she’s hitting her own head, her breast shake and Silva was looking at them dangerously.

{Editor note: Pervert is as pervert does.]

(I should think of a plan to get out of here in tonight...)

While he was think of this chaotic situation being an everyday occurrence, Hihiro felt like a heavy burden was placed on him.

## Chapter 79: And now, towards the Journey

Liliyn: 「Now, let's get a move on you lot!」

The following day, Liliyn frolicked as if she were an extremely energetic good girl. She pointed towards the other side of the lake as her back faced the mansion.

As she had indicated, the rain seemed to have stopped during the middle of the night. At the present time, the figure of the 《Forbidden Emperor Cloud》 that loomed over them in the sky was nowhere to be seen. If one were to compare this day to the previous, the current skies were cloudless, as if the storm had been a lie.

Not only had the weather turned fine after such a long time, but they were also going to be embarking on a journey. In light of this, Liliyn's mood became ecstatic. Although this was not the first time she had gone on a journey, she did not have a reason to travel until now. In other words, there was nothing that had piqued her interest significantly enough to motivate her to go out on an excursion.

However, at the present time, there was the presence of who Liliyn had declared as an 'Unusual Visitor', Hihiro. Hihiro, in and of himself, was the exact definition of unknown. At first, she was determined to learn about Hihiro by any means, even if she had to resort to brute force. However, in light of their exchange the other day, she began to think that drawing out the answers all at once and then have him leave would be such a shame.

As she had never formed such thoughts before, she was bewildered, yet, she also felt comfortable for some reason. It is precisely because of this that, in order for her to continue enjoying this sensation longer, she wanted to discern the answers for herself by observing Hihiro with her own eyes and ears on this journey.

Hihiro: 「It's fine if you want to go, but what're you gonna do about the mansion? Well, no matter what you want to do, I guess you can

only just leave it be, huh. 」

However, Liliyn's following sentence caused Hiiro to express shock, his eyes widening as far as they could go.

Liliyn: 「What are you saying? Isn't it obvious that we're bringing it along with us. 」

Hiiro: 「.....ha? 」

While Hiiro wondered what the hell this girl was saying, he began to doubt his own ears as he assumed that what he had heard was mistaken. Thus, he began to ask for confirmation.

Hiiro: 「O-Oi(1), what did you just say? You're going to...bring the mansion with you? 」

Liliyn: 「Aa(2), it's my possession. I have no intention of letting anyone do anything to it. 」

It seems that his ears were not playing tricks on him. Nevertheless, this time, he began to question her sanity. A mansion was not food, nor was it a commodity. Even if one said that they wanted to bring it along, this task would immediately be deemed impossible.

Hiiro: 「Look, if you express such an extreme level of selfishness, I can only see you as a simpleton. 」

Liliyn: 「Fun(3), if you don't know anything then shut your mouth, boy. Do it, Silva. 」

Silva: 「As you command. 」

As he said thus, Silva stood in front of the mansion before kneeling and placing both hands onto the ground.

Hiiro: 「What're you trying to do? 」

Liliyn: 「Well, just watch. You'll get to see something quite interesting. 」

Liliyn conducted herself in a suggestive manner as she smirked.

Following her proposal, Hiiro began to watch over Silva's actions.

Silva: 「 Now I shall begin. Dark Gate! 」

As he cast the spell, a black something began to spread out through the ground underneath both of his hands. Upon a singular glance, it was easy to identify the black something as a shadow.

\*Zuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuu.....!\*(4)

As the shadow began to grow bigger and bigger, it began to encompass the bottom of the mansion. In the following instance, the mansion began to shake with a \*gura\*(5).

Hiiro: (Oi, oi. Seriously...?)

As the mansion seemed to tilt slightly, it began to quickly sink. Yes, the mansion began to become swallowed by the shadows. In the blink of an eye, the mansion became buried in the vastly spread shadow, giving birth to a vacant lot.

Liliyn: 「 Umu(6). As usual, he's such a useful fellow. 」

As Liliyn folded her arms, she nodded contentedly.

Hiiro: (I see. According to my memory, Silva was a 『Spirit of Darkness』 , wasn't he. I guess that means that what just occurred was the result of his magic. Even so, saying that they're going to bring it along. I guess they can store whatever they want with them, huh.)

It was most likely that they could take it out as well.

Hiiro: (It's certainly convenient. But I was showed some really good magic, huh.)

When using 《Word Magic》 , imagination is essential. As he was shown Silva's magic with his own eyes, it had now become easier for Hiiro to produce the same effect with a corresponding word.

Hiiro: (A 'storage' word, huh.....I'll have to try it out later.)

In the meantime, Silva, who had just finished his duty, began to converse with Shamoe who had just returned.

Silva: 「Unfortunately, Shamoe, the garden would be quite...(7)」

Certainly, the flowers and crops that were being grown in the garden required care. If left alone, it would be reasonable to expect that, someday, they would wither and become useless. Although Silva's ability was indeed useful, it appeared to lack any refrigeration or heat insulation functions.

Shamoe: 「T-that's alright(8). I have already said my farewells to those children.」

She seemed to have already gave her partings to the flowers that she cherished and tenderly cared for.

Silva: 「Is that so? In which case, I am relieved.」

Shamoe: 「Yes!」

Liliyn: 「Oi, you two! If you're done then hurry it up! Silva, begin preparations for crossing the lake!」

Silva: 「As you command.」

As Silva responded thus, he approached the lake, his shadow once again spreading over the lake. However, instead of storing an item away, something emerged from the shadows. It was a singular vessel, a boat. The boat that had carried Hihiro previously had become ragged and worn out, thanks to the Red Rain, rendering it useless.

Liliyn: 「Now, let's set off!」

Liliyn, who seemed to be in a good mood, boarded the boat as she was being escorted by Silva. Even though Mikazuki was there, as the boat was quite large, they had just managed to fit everyone onto the boat.

As Silva confirmed that everyone had got on the boat, he began moving the oar in order to make the move forward. Upon



inspection, the oar seemed quite heavy and difficult to handle. However, seeing Silva's unchanging, nonchalant complexion, Hiroy came to the conclusion that Silva was indeed a level 80 『Spirit』 .

Inherently, the 『Pheom』 were a race that preferred harmony and tended to avoid conflict. As they were the race that possessed the most affinity with magic, their physical force, that is to say their brute strength tended to be quite poor, even when compared to other races.

However, as he had a level of 80, he should have obtained decent stats corresponding to such level. In addition, to be able to propel the boat forward with an oar in such heavy red water, all the while maintaining a collected composure indicated that such a difficult task was simple to him.

As they had directly crossed the lake without incident, the four people and one animal placed their feet on solid ground.

Liliyn: 「Well then, boy. The destination is the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , however, have you decided on what route you're going to take? 」

Liliyn asked thus.

Hiroy: 「No, I don't really have a particular route in mind. I just wanted to go explore around the Demon World. Also, it's not like that's the final destination. I was just thinking of stopping by should I encounter it by chance. 」

Liliyn: 「What, you have no plan huh? Boring. 」

Hiroy: 「To begin with, this is just a carefree journey. Things like a plan don't exist. 」

In response to her manner of speaking, Hiroy grew slightly irritated. As Hiroy seemed to have slightly taken offense to her comment, he wanted to respond with an excuse. However, upon seeing her contrasting joy at his panic, he decided to keep his mouth shut.

Liliyn: 「Fumu(9)....in other words, you're in no hurry...as there are a few places that I want to go, should we just go there? 」

Hihiro wasn't particularly going to object. As the Demon World was one which was unknown to him, he would make full use of their knowledge of said world. For Hihiro who wanted to look around the entire Demon World at least once, he was certainly appreciative of the guide supplied to him.

However, once he grew curious and asked as to where she wanted to go, Liliyn simply grinned and laughed as she answered.

Liliyn: 「The 『Imp Race's』 Village.」

Hihiro: 「.....」

‘This brat. How long is she gonna fuck(10) around with me.’ Hihiro began to grow frustrated as he thought thus. Although Hihiro was currently in his 『Imp』 form, he was originally human. Not to mention, the one who had revealed Hihiro was not an 『Imp』 the other day was none other than Liliyn.

If Hihiro were to visit a place where the real ones lived, the probability that various problems would arise were exceptionally high. After all, Hihiro was so ignorant of them that he was unaware of the 『Imp Race's』 weakness. If they were to investigate him, it would become quite troublesome.

Whether she had known this or not. No, as she had clearly known this and voiced such a proposal, Hihiro glared at her. However, upon seeing Hihiro's scowl, Liliyn happily accepted it as she emitted a large grin.

Liliyn: 「Kukuku(11), I'm joking, I'm joking. It was a small joke of an adorable young maiden.」

Hihiro: 「Where is this young maiden, huh?」

Although Hihiro suppressed his habit of calling her a Baba(12), Liliyn understood what it was the Hihiro tried to convey.

Liliyn: 「Ah? What'd you say, boy?」

\*Piki\*(13) A blue vein appeared on her forehead.

Silva: 「 Well, well you two! How about I make a proposal? 」

Hiiro | Liliyn: 「 「 Nn?(14) 」 」

The two began to stare at Silva.

Silva: 「 First, shall we proceed while aiming to visit settlements near this area. Following this, we shall continue on the the next closest village. Should we continue on as such, we will naturally arrive at 【Xaos】. 」

As Hiiro and Liliyn were glaring at each other, they both let out a \*fu\*(15) as they shrugged.

Hiiro: 「 That's fine. Let's get moving. 」

Liliyn: 「 Kora(16)! Don't go ordering me around, boy! Your master is me, you know. 」

Hiiro: 「 Stop screwing around, Aka-Loli(17). Who's my master? 」

Liliyn: 「 Isn't it obviously me? 」

Hiiro: 「 What kind of arrogant things are you saying with such a puny body? 」

Liliyn: 「 Eei(18)! Don't call me puny! 」

Shamoe: 「 Feeeeee~(19)! 」

Silva: 「 Nofofofofo(20)! 」

Mikazuki: 「 Kui kui kui(21)! 」

Looking at the two who were arguing in an uproar were Shamoe, who constantly fretted 'Awa Awa', and Silva, who continued to laugh joyously. In addition, Mikazuki, thinking that she was able to continue their journey, was overcome with enthusiasm.

Hiiro, after gaining some new companions, once again began his journey with the aim of ending up in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】. However, Hiiro was not yet aware. In the oncoming tragedy that

would soon strike that city, Hiiro would become the greatest determining factor in its conclusion. Hiiro was not yet aware.

## Notes:

1. Oi: 'Hey'
2. Aa: An expression of affirmation. Usually used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Kind of like 'Uh-huh' or 'Yeah'.
3. Fun: 'Hmph'
4. \*Zuzu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia for \*sinking\*.
5. \*Gura\*: Japanese onomatopoeia for \*sway\*.
6. Umu: An expression of affirmation. More subtle, like a nod.
7. TL Note: An incomplete sentence, thus, an incomplete translation...
8. TL Note: She uses 'ie' | いえ which literally means no. Intended meaning is 'No need to worry'.
9. Fumu: An expression that displays acknowledgement/agreement/understanding.
10. TL Note: This is not paraphrasing. This is actually what he uses. The word used is Hame | ハメ which means 'to fuck', 'to screw'...
11. Kukuku: Liliyn's snicker.
12. Baba: An informal/disrespectful way of addressing an elderly female. Think 'old woman' or 'old hag'.
13. \*Piki\*: Japanese onomatopoeia for \*twitch\*. If you've watched anime, you probably know what this sounds like.
14. Nn: Expression denoting interest or confusion.
15. \*Fu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*sigh\*. This is more of a light exhalation as opposed to a deep sigh.
16. Kora: 'Hey'.
17. Aka-Loli: Hiiro's nickname for Liliyn. Aka is derived from red. Loli is derived from Lolita (I'm fairly certain. Not 100% sure).
18. Eei: An expression of frustration.
19. Fe~: Shamoe's expression of being flustered.
20. Nofofo: Silva's laugh.
21. Kui: Raidpic Language.

## Chapter 80: The Heroes One Month Later

In the 【Capital City: Victorias】 , the festival celebrating the birth of King Rudolf van Strauss Arclain and his daughter, Lilith, had begun. Coincidentally, the two had been born on the same day of the same month.

Although it was festival, it wasn't a large event that took place across the entire nation. Even though it was referred to as the festival of birth, the reality was akin to a birthday party that took place within the confines of the castle. However, for those taking part in the celebrations were very important people.

Of course, the royalty was a given. The guest list extended to famous writers and musicians, painters and chefs, and even famous adventurers. The line-up was so overwhelming, one could only describe it as amazing. Everyone in attendance was someone whose name was well known throughout the country.

Taishi: 「Congrats, Lilith!」

The one who had called out to Lilith who was visibly exhausted from greeting celebrities was one of the heroes summoned from another world. One of the ones that held the fate of the world on their shoulders, Taishi Aoyama.

Lilith: 「Ah, Taishi-sama(1)!」

Lilith joyfully rushed over towards Taishi while making a blossoming smile, as if her fatigue had been blown away. Although she normally didn't wear makeup, as this was a fairly important occasion, not to mention that she was the subject of the celebration, she had firmly applied it.

Lilith's makeup was very natural and looked very good on her. Taishi thought she was always cute but she was even more so today, and he had his breath taken away.

Taishi: (Uu(2)... Cute!)

Seeing Lilith's beaming smile as she ran towards him like a puppy, Taishi had a strong desire to embrace her. However, he couldn't do that. He could tell that if he did, the girl next to him would hound him.

\*dosu\*(3)

Taishi: 「Gufu!(4)」

He suddenly feels an impact in his side. When he looks, he can see the girl's elbow buried in his side.

Taishi: 「W-What was that for, Chika...」

That's right. That girl, like him, was also a hero that was summoned, Chika Suzumiya. She had brown, healthy-looking skin and a nice, slender body. Also, the dress that she was currently wearing had a slit in it that resembled a China dress. It suited her very well.

However, that girl was currently wearing a sour look while wedging her elbow into Taishi.

Chika: 「No reason~. It's just that you were looking at Lilith with a perverted look on your face so I thought I'd just caution you.」

Taishi: 「What do you mean 'caution'? This is just violence. In the first place, I wasn't looking at her with perverted...」

Chika: 「You weren't looking at her? Nnnn?(5)」

Taishi: 「T-That's...」

Looking at Lilith's pink dress, which slightly exposed her breasts, Taishi's face turned red, answering while averting his gaze. Noticing where he was looking, Chika stabbed his eyes with her fingers.

Taishi: 「Gyaa!?(6)」

Lilith: 「T-Taishi-sama!?!」

Chika: 「F-Fun!(7) He got what he deserves!」

Lilith nervously tried to support Taishi who was causing a commotion while holding his eyes.

There were two people who were looking at those three from a different place. Those two girls were also heroes that were summoned. The one wearing a yellow dress, which did nothing to hide her voluptuous breasts, was Shuri Minamoto. The other, wearing a deep blue dress while holding a plate full of food, was Shinobu Akamori

Shinobu: 「Nyahaha(8), Taishi-chi(9) has it rough~」

She speaks while bringing food to her mouth as if she were a completely unrelated third party.

Shuri: 「Uun(10), but Taishi-kun is also at fault.」

Shinobu: 「You think so~? Well, I bet trying to capture Taishi-chi would be really troublesome」

Shuri: 「T-That's true」

Shinobu: 「Nn... Are you fine not going over there too, Shuri-chi?」

Shuri: 「Eh? M-Me? N-No, I'm...」

Shuri looked towards the other three as she spoke. It seemed like Taishi was still surrounded by the two while being told something.

Shuri: 「I-I don't have the courage to join in...」

Shinobu: 「Nyahaha, I'll bet. You'd need some serious power to jump in there」

Shinobu understood that it'd be impossible for the quiet Shuri to join in on that chaotic spectacle. Shuri, of course, also had feelings towards Taishi. However she couldn't act as forward as Chika or Lilith. Rather than that, if she were asked if she wanted Taishi so much that she would fight with her friends, she wasn't sure how she would answer.

As if understand what that girl was thinking, Shinobu smiled broadly and gave a light laugh.

Shinobu: 「Maaaaan, it really is fun, people in love」

Shuri: 「Eh? Did you say something?」

Shinobu: 「Nope! It's nothing!」

Then, seemingly having finished their conversation, the three walked towards Shuri and Shinobu. Taishi had a dull and tired expression.

Shinobu: 「Good work, Taishi-chi!」

Taishi: 「If you were watching, then help me out a bit...」

Shinobu: 「No way! It was so interesting, why do I have to put a stop to it!?」

Taishi: 「Look here, you...」

As she saw Taishi's shoulders drooping limply, Shinobu laughed. As she did, someone suddenly knocked into Taishi.

Taishi: 「Owa(11)!?」

Taishi, who was about to tumble forward, desperately endured himself. However, as the one who knocked into him seemed to have dropped something, they had fallen onto their knees as they stared at the ground.

???: 「E-excuse me-su(12)! This was completely caused by my carelessness-su!」

Even while they said this, they continued to conduct their search.

Taishi: 「Eh? Ah, no, I'm alright, but...did something happen?」

Taishi said thus while looking down at the person who was desperately searching for something. Said individual seemed to be a male as he wore a tuxedo.



Shinobu: 「Is something the matter?(13)」

Shinobu also raised the question.

???: 「Eh, eeh. It seems that I've apparently dropped my glasses-su. I can't see a thing-su.」

As they thought this was bad, those around the area began to join in the search.

Chika: 「Ah, isn't it this?」

As Chika had found them, she handed it over to the person. Said individual then began to politely bow several times.

???: 「I must offer you my most sincere and gracious appreciation-su. Even though I was the one who had bumped into you, I am most thankful-su.」

Taishi: 「No, no. We must help each other in times of need.」

As Taishi said thus, he began to observe the individual. Blue hair that had been worn behind them had extended to their waist. As their bangs were considerably long, it completely covered their eyes, to the point where they could not be seen. Although they had worn very large, round glasses, this would lead some to wonder whether or not they could actually see. Their age was not significantly different from the group of Heroes.

???: 「Iya~(14), you've really helped me out-su. Are you alright-su?」

The young man bashfully scratched his head. As he had once again lowered his head, the youth inquired into Taishi's well being. He had asked whether any injuries were sustained due to his collision.

Taishi: 「No, no, I'm fine.」

???: 「Is that so-su. That's a relief-su.」

Lilith: 「Ano...(15)」

What had been inserted between the two's exchange was Lilith's voice.

Taishi: 「Nn? What's wrong, Lilith?」

Lilith: 「N-no, ano...are you, perhaps, Nazaar-san(16)?」

Upon hearing Lilith's words, Chika pricked up her eyebrows.

Taishi: 「...someone you know?」

As she heard Taishi ask, Lilith faintly pulled her chin.

Lilith: 「Ah, no. I only know about this person because I've heard of them, so...」

Shinobu: 「A celebrity?」

As Shinobu asked thus, Lilith once again slightly nodded.

Lilith: 「Yes. Isn't that the case, Nazaar-san?」

Following this, the young man that had remained silent until now suddenly smiled.

Nazaar: 「Iya~, as I don't often attend places like this, I didn't think anyone would recognize this face-su.」

He scratched his head as he said thus.

Nazaar: 「Yeah-su. I'm Nazaar-su. Nazaar Skride. Nice to meet ya-su.」

As he said this, Nazaar extended his hand out, offering a handshake. Lilith answered by grasping his hand with both of hers.

Lilith: 「It's such an honor to be able to meet you.」

Taishi: 「H-hey, Lilith. Would you mind introducing us?」

Lilith: 「Ah, p-please excuse me! Eto(17), this person is Nazaar Skride-san. He is considered one of the most famous artists.」

Nazaar: 「No, no. You say famous, but...I don't think it's to that extent! 」

As Taishi saw him proudly insist as such, he thought that he was a person was somehow able to display a sense of intimacy.

Lilith: 「Were you perhaps invited by my father for my sake? 」

Nazaar: 「Yeah-su. Well, I've received an invite before, but I wasn't able to come cause I was busy-su. 」

Lilith: 「Is that so. 」

Nazaar: 「Ah, I forgot-su! Congratulations-su! 」

As he said thus, he lowered his head. Upon seeing this, Lilith emitted a joyful smile as she grabbed the hem of her skirt and curtsied.

Lilith: 「Thank you for taking the time to congratulate me. Please fully enjoy yourself tonight. 」

As her demeanor changed to a princess, she politely produced a string of words.

Nazaar: 「Although I'd really like to, I've got some work left that I have to get finished-su. 」

Lilith: 「Will you be leaving so already? 」

Nazaar: 「Unfortunately-su. 」

Lilith: 「I see...no, I am truly grateful that you were able to visit. I believe the path back home has grown dark. Please take care. 」

Nazaar: 「Haha, I'm grateful-su. Then- 」

Saying thus, Nazaar departed with a swift pace.

Taishi: 「Is he really a celebrity, that guy? 」

Lilith: 「Yes, Taishi-sama. All of his works are wonderfully exquisite. Look, that is one of his paintings. 」

Saying thus, Lilith pointed towards a decoration of the party venue. It was a painting that contained a large picture.

It depicted a goddess being surrounded by fluttering angels. Animals and humans were etched into the background. Everyone seemed to be joyously dancing.

Lilith: 「It's a painting referred to as 《Eden》 (18). As my father took a liking to it at a glance, he apparently obtained it from an acquaintance who didn't want it anymore. 」

Taishi: 「Hee~(19), this painting certainly as a feeling of warmth, huh. As everyone looks so happy, viewing it kinda makes you feel the same. 」

Lilith: 「Indeed. In addition, he is a multi-talented individual. He also writes picture books. 」

Taishi: 「Really? 」

Lilith: 「When I was a child, I often read the picture book 《The Star's Gift》 (20). To this day, I still keep it safely stored. 」

Shinobu: 「What's it about? 」

Perhaps as her interest had been piqued, Shinobu inquired.

Lilith: 「It's an absolutely wonderful story. 」

Following this, they had heard the story from Lilith.

In the night sky contained many stars. The stars were always looking over various worlds. Among them, a singular star was overlooking a particular world. In that world, an abundance of people were living there.

However, the world was absent of green, being mostly covered with wild deserts. As food did not grow well in such an environment, everyone had always carried out their lives in hunger. As the star felt pity for this planet, one day, they landed onto the world in the appearance of a person.

Following this, for the sake of the people suffering from starvation, it planted something known as the 《Star Seed》 (21). Then, although the reason for this was unknown, the ground around the planted seed began to grow a variety of crops and vegetation.

In the blink of an eye, the desert transformed into a blanket of lush greenery. That world's inhabitants that saw this were incredibly grateful to the star. As they would now be able to eat until their stomachs were full, everyone emitted an enveloping smile.

However, the thing known as the 《Star Seed》 was also the star's life. In exchange for such abundant life, the star decided to give up its life.

The people's gratitude brought them to create an statue of the star. Following this, the world pledged to ensure that their world prospered, thus, everyone made a wonderful world where everyone joined their hands together.

Shinobu: 「That star was such a good child~. No, I'm not really sure whether they're a kid though.」

Although she had tsukkomi(ed)(22) herself, she seemed to be genuinely impressed by the story itself. She felt a feeling of warmth spreading throughout her chest.

Lilith: 「Yes. I also love this story so much, that even to this day I sometimes go back and re-read it.」

Taishi: 「That book was from that Nazaar, huh.」

Taishi spoke in admiration.

Chika: 「Well, if we're talking about Taishi, then even a handstand is impossible for him.」

Taishi: 「Ever since earlier, what's gotten into you, Chika?」

Chika: 「B-but you're...that...even though I tried so hard with this dress...」

Taishi: 「Hah? What'd you say?」

Chika: 「 Nothing at all! This insensitive Taishi! 」

Taishi: 「 Ita-!(23) 」

As his foot was stomped on, Taishi raised a groan of pain.

Taishi: 「 W-what the hell, Chika!? 」

Chika: 「 I don't care anymore!? 」

Taishi: 「 I have no idea what that's supposed to mean! 」

Watching the two, Shinobu sighed with half-opened(24) eyes.

Shinobu: (That's no good, Chika-chi. Complimenting someone's dress is a high grade technique. There's no way that Taishi-chi who lacks resourcefulness could ever pull it off.)

Chika only wanted Taishi's impressions of her figure in a dress. However, not only was he completely oblivious to her appearance, he was completely enamored with Lilith. Seeing this, Chika grew irritated, to the point of breaking into an outburst of anger.

Perhaps empathizing with Chika, Lilith remained silent as expected, producing a wry smile. Shuri also sighed again as she felt sympathy for Chika.(25)

Staring at the heartwarming mood created by the heroes was a person in the shade of a row of pillars. This individual was none other than Nazaar, the one who was conversing with them all previously.

Nazaar: (So those are the heroes-su... I was finally able to see them with my own eyes-su)

Nazaar's glasses glinted as he stared at them, but then he noticed someone's eyes on himself. After realizing who was looking at him, instead of running away he looked right back.

Nazaar: (It's alright-su. I won't do anything as long as nothing happens-su)

After making eye contact, it seems like the individual understood his meaning and looked away.

Nazaar: 「Haha, even when he's past his prime, he's still plenty scary-su. That Judom-san」

Yes, the one who he made eye contact with was the guild master of this country, Judom Lankars. He was also invited to this celebration.

## Notes:

1. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
2. Uu: A groan of some sort.
3. \*dosu\*:
  - TL XJ: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thud\*.
  - TL Caps: sound of dull impact; getting hit.
6. Gufu: Groan of pain.
7. Nnnn: 'Hmm'.
8. Gyaa: Groan of pain (how many groans are you gonna cycle through?).
9. Fun: 'Hmph'.
10. Nyahaha: Shinobu's laugh. 'Nya' makes the laugh seem more feline.
11. -chi: A suffix used to denote familiarity with the subject. It also usually infers that the speaker has a playful, childish personality.
  - TL Caps: -chi: suffix similar to -chan, but... not exactly. I get the impression this denotes the speaker as being more playful/childish.
  - TL XJ: Suffix used to denote familiarity with the subject. Also denotes the speaker being more playful/childish. A variant of chan/kun as it can be used for either gender.

- TL Caps: Can't say I've ever heard someone use it in real life lol.
  - TL XJ: Yeah. Only really heard it in anime and, even then, it was quite scarce. Most recent example would be a character from SNAFU (Either Komachi or Yui. Can't remember which.). Seems to be a quirk often given to people with Kansai-ben?
16. Uun: An expression displaying negation, denial. Different from and opposite of 'un'.
  17. Owa: Groan of pain (Groan Variety Count: 4).
  18. -su: A suffix used to indicate a quirky style of speech. Used similarly to '-yo', '-zo', or '-nano'.
    - Side Note: We are using this suffix to indicate this quirky style of speech. We are not necessarily using it as the Japanese would.
    - Side Note: No. We are not translating it as 'dood'.
  21. TL Note: Shift to polite speech indicates that she stops talking in Kansai-ben.
  22. Iya: In this context, means 'Ma~n'.
  23. Ano: 'Um' or 'Excuse me'. Difference with Eto is that 'Ano' is used to try and grab someones attention.
  24. -san: A suffix used to show respect or distance to the one addressed. Less formal than '-sama' and can be used to address anyone of any position.
  25. Eto: 'Um'. Difference with Ano is that 'Eto' is used when collecting one's thoughts.
  26. TL Note: Eden of Grisaia | Grisaia no Rakuen.
  27. He: Not male pronoun 'he'. The 'e' is pronounced the same as in egg. A Japanese expression denoting admiration or sarcasm.
  28. TL Note: Written in Hiragana (AKA no Kanji). Indicates it's meant to be read by children who do not know how to read Kanji. Although, doesn't really make sense as Ranalyth is a different language but...meh. It's Japanese context is as such.
  29. TL Note: Refer to Note 20 [<http://xcrossj.blogspot.com/2015/04/konjiki-no-moji-tsukai-chapter-80.html#ref-20>].



30. Tsukkomi: [http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Glossary\\_of\\_owarai\\_terms](http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Glossary_of_owarai_terms).
31. Ita: An expression denoting pain. Literally derives from the Japanese word for pain, Itami | 痛み. Think 'ouch' or 'ow'. (Groan Variety Count: 5).
32. TL Note: Something like this: [http://blog-imgs-47.fc2.com/h/a/k/hako2000/JT\\_04b678bf.jpg](http://blog-imgs-47.fc2.com/h/a/k/hako2000/JT_04b678bf.jpg) or <http://image14.bannch.com/bs/M302b/bbs/332163/img/0212483383.gif> bottom left
33. TL Note: It's not that I have an aversion to insensitive/oblivious protagonists/characters, I just feel that its execution is usually sloppy, to the point that it becomes very unnatural. Especially in this case.

## Chapter 81: Everyone's expectations

Judom Lankars was invited to the festival of birth, so he came. He came not only because he was a friend of the king's, but because he also wanted to see the ones known as heroes with his own eyes.

Previously, a commander of the country's military, a young man known as Vale Kimble, came to him and requested that he train the heroes, yet he bluntly refused.

Judom thought that he would give up afterwards, but Vale came time and time again. Because he was so persistent, Judom declared that he would decide whether he'd train them or not after he saw them with his own eyes.

That's why he came while using this celebration as an excuse. However, he came across a person he didn't expect to see there. That person was Nazaar Skride.

He called himself an artist. The king was in love with his artwork as he already possessed several of Nazaar's works. It was true that his artwork was amazing, capable of touching anyone's heart.

That man, however, wasn't just an artist. Judom knew that very well. And now, he noticed that Nazaar was spying on the heroes behind a pillar. Wondering if he was planning on causing something, Judom focused his gaze towards him.

It seemed like Nazaar had also noticed as he looked in Judom's direction. His eyes were saying: "I won't do anything to the heroes".

Judom knew about his personality. He wasn't the kind of person who'd do anything stupid. Understanding that, Judom stopped focusing on him.

Next, he began to look at the heroes.

(So those are the current heroes... How do I say it... They're just kids) (Judom)

Judom smiled bitterly while watching them laugh like they were having fun.

(Rudolf, do you plan on leaving our fate in the hands of these kids...?) (Judom)

With a sad expression, Judom looked towards the king who was still engaged in a conversation with important people.

(What are you doing, after sacrificing your own daughter... You're the king, Rudolf. Rather than throwing a festival of birth like this, isn't there something more important that you ought to be doing?) (Judom)

Looking away from Rudolph with a grave look on his face, Judom turned back and began to leave.

(I guess, in the end, I'll have to take action...) (Judom)

Thinking that, Judom departed from the venue with a sharp look in his eyes.

That evening, after the festival of birth had ended, King Rudolf was conversing with Minister Dennis Norman in the Oval Office. The contents of the discussion concerned the meeting requests received from the [Evila]'s Lord, Eveam.

As he unlocked the table's drawer and pulled it open, he took a signed letter from within. It was a letter that contained the details concerning the conference.

As Dennis saw this, he wore a difficult expression.

"As I thought, it seems to be genuine." (Dennis)

"Umu..." (Rudolf)

In actuality, the letter that was held in his hand was not the only one that was sent. The other was a letter detailing the merits of entering into an alliance with them in great detail, one of which included inside information concerning the [Gabranth]. From the letter alone, it was clearly understood how desperately they were

trying to establish an alliance.

Further included in the letter was the current thoughts that the [Evila] currently held.

“Before, I was called by that man to have a talk. He seems to have hesitated to call it authentic.” (Dennis)

“Judom, huh...” (Rudolf)

Indeed. Throughout the conversation, Judom had sprinkled the topic of how the letter from the [Evila] had arrived soon after they had immediately terminated the war between themselves and the [Gabranth].

Of course, as Judom had been constantly advising that there was a need for discussion, he was overjoyed by the news of an alliance conference as he supported it. Yet, Dennis was opposed to it.

Certainly, if they established an alliance, at the very least, the feud between the [Evila] and the [Humas] would end, possibly creating an era of peace. However, this obviously could not be considered anything else other than wishful thinking.

From what they could gather so far in their dealings with the [Evila], if they naively agreed to their demands, they would undoubtedly face harsh consequences. As their last alliance was betrayed, the [Evila] that came in the past performed the outrageous acts on humans, all for the sake of 《Evila Conversion》.

The most outrageous was the 《Evila Conversion》. After hunting countless humans, they were trapped in an experimental facility that the [Evila] owned. As the experiments ultimately failed, all that was left were countless corpses.

Although this was a fairly old story, the [Evila] that had actually conducted such experiments were still alive to this day. This was because they had long life-spans. If they were once again plotting to resume such experiments, this time, they may only be trying to lower the Human's guard so as to hunt them from their blind spot.

As long as such concerns were unable to be dispelled, Dennis would continue to preach the risks of such an alliance as he advised Rudolf. Yet, Judom argued clearly that the past is the past.

What was really outrageous about this argument was that, in addition to Evila's conduct, the Humas have performed numerous atrocities that caused grief and incited hatred from the other races. These included placing a bomb inside an Evila to destroy a village, suppressing and enslaving the Gabranth, and numerous other acts that the heavens would spit on.

However, the past was the past. If someone were to keep holding their grudges forever, they would lose sight of what is before them, causing them to miss the important things. Each side had erred, yet, that was in the past.

The most important thing is the future and what lies ahead. In order to prevent the wars and atrocities that occurred in the past, the bygone days when every race joined hands and coexisted in peace, is something that Judom strived for passionately.

From Rudolf's perspective both sides had valid points. They should cautiously approach the Evila, and only associate with them as necessary. Like Dennis said, they should continue planning while remaining vigilant. If there is a chance that they'll be able to work together and coexist, the possibility should be pursued. Both of them are correct.

However, if either of them were mistaken, there is a chance that it would be the end for the Humas Continent. It is this reason why they were unable to come up with a decision.

In reality, they've already made their decision. In order to defeat the Demon Lord, Rudolf sacrificed his daughters. If they retreated and were killed in the process, their sacrifices would be in vain.

When he said thus to Judom, he moved towards the king and raised him by his collar as he spoke forcefully.

"You shouldn't waste this chance! Everyone will be able to live peacefully! Your children will be crying with joy in the other world!

Isn't that what you want?" (Judom)

A world in which no one is afraid and everyone can smile. If such a world wasn't created, the life of his daughters would be wasted.

With a distorted expression caused by being held up by the neck, Rudolf quietly told Judom "Let me think for a bit." Judom furrowed his brows in an unpleasant expression, and, as there was no immediate response, he let go and walked away.

Then, he said

"Understand? I'll also be coming with you to the conference. To allow you to focus on the peace negotiations, I'll protect you from the shadows. So...as I've asked...please go to the conference." (Judom)

After he said it, he left the place.

The two left in the Oval Office wore a wry smile as they remembered the previous exchange. Dennis, in particular, was appalled at the indignation displayed, even if Judom was Rudolf's best friend.

"My goodness. This is the reason why I don't like dealing with such a violent person." (Dennis)

"Dennis." (Rudolf)

When Dennis received a sharp glare from Rudolf, he thought he had gone overboard and prepared to make an excuse.

"But, your majesty." (Dennis)

"Ahh, everything starts here. Nothing will be wasted. I will..... by no means waste the lives of my daughters." (Rudolf)

"S-so, you have made a decision?" (Dennis)

Dennis said with an uncertain tone.

"Aah. Shortly, we'll head to the conference. " (Rudolf)

“What? Y-you can’t do that!? What about those guys?” (Dennis)

Dennis, in his state of confusion, immediately tried to express his disagreement.

“I know.” (Rudolf)

“Eh?...What?” (Dennis)

“I’m going to the conference. Like I said before, the life of my daughter, and those that put their lives on the line, will not be wasted.” (Rudolf)

“This, your majesty.” (Dennis)

“Judom will be coming as well. Also.....the heroes.” (Rudolf)

“The heroes.....you say?” (Dennis)

“Aah, they are the key. As I said before, there is a chance that the Evila might make an unexpected move. In the meantime.....we need to arrange ALL the preparations.” (Rudolf)

There was no hesitation in those eyes. It might have been the composure of a country’s king, yet, sensing his ambition, Dennis swallowed and spoke. (E Note: Taishi’s name in kanji means Ambition. Word play of some sort.)

“The plan.....has been decided, huh.” (Dennis)

## Chapter 82: To the First Destination

“And? Where is the closest village from here?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro asks Silva, who is walking in front of him, while he rides on top of Mikazuki.

Their final destination at the moment is [Xaos] but it was still extremely far away. They aren't in any particular hurry so they planned to travel at a leisurely pace.

His objective was to reach [Xaos] and visit the [Fortuna Grand Library] so that he could read the books and materials available only to royalty and people of equal social standing.

Aside from his objective, Hiiro also wanted to look around the Demon World<sup>1</sup>. That is why he thought to visit several villages and other sightseeing places en route to [Xaos]. For that purpose he leaves the duty of guiding him to Liliyn and company, who are much more familiar with the Demon World than he is.

Of course, Hiiro only required Liliyn for achieving his objective. It wasn't like he approved of her traveling together with him. When he caught sight of her admission permit for the [Fortuna Grand Library], he thought that he could use his connection to her to his advantage in order to increase his chances of being able to read the aforementioned books.

As a result of that thinking, though Liliyn is certainly a troublesome woman, Hiiro decided that he would travel together with her. However, it wasn't like he was planning on a peaceful journey. He determined that if they were to ever become troublesome or useless he would immediately separate from them.

At the moment Hiiro is traveling together with them to acquire information regarding the Demon World, which is why he

was asking where the closest village was. The one who answers was not Silva, but Liliyn.



“The closest from here would be the [Asura Race] in the [Raohrb Desert]. Isn’t that right, Silva?” (Liliyn)

“You are correct. In my opinion, however, I believe it would be best to avoid that place...” (Silva)

Hiiro frowns at Silva who anxiously said so.

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“The [Raohrb Desert] is an extremely dangerous place” (Silva)

“Hou2” (Hiiro)

“A boundless desert stretches across the horizon, but rather than the extreme heat, there is a slight problem regarding the [Asura Race]” (Silva)

“Hm? The [Asura Race] is a species of [Evila], aren’t they? Is there really a problem?” (Hiiro)

“I’m afraid there is. Their race controls the desert. I have heard that they do not take well to outsiders trespassing in their territory” (Silva)

Hiiro has heard that the different species of Evila don’t interact much with one another. Of course there are exceptions, but to the [Asura Race] it seems to be an obvious rule. It’s possible that they hate others that enter their territory.

“But they won’t suddenly attack us, will they?” (Hiiro)

“...” (Silva)

“Oi3, what’s with the silence?” (Hiiro)

Silva moves closer to Hiiro and whispers into his ear.

“Ojou-sama4 is also an [Evila]. Well, Ojou-sama is a bit of a special case, but it would not be wrong to basically think of her as the typical [Evila]...” (Silva)

Hearing that, Hiiro inadvertently looks towards Liliyn and remembers when he first met her and the few days that followed after.

“Mu5? What is it?” (Liliyn)

(That’s the typical...? Does that mean that I should be wary of the [Evila] as a whole...?) (Hiiro)

Suddenly being tested by poison, extremely powerful but gets assaulted by her underlings, suddenly forcefully being asked to be her servant. Hiiro understood Liliyn as being an extremely abnormal existence.

Speaking of which, Hiiro also heard that the maid, Shamoe, had also been driven away by the [Evila]. In other words, he determined that he would have to change how he thinks of the [Evila] from now on.

Hiiro believed they wouldn’t suddenly attack without warning, but he would need to be prepared for anything since it wouldn’t be strange for the unexpected to happen.

“Speaking of which, what kind of people are the [Asura Race]?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro thought that having even a little information would be helpful in finding a way to protect himself.

“Hmm, about that...” (Silva)

Silva looks apologetic.

“What? You don’t know anything?” (Hiiro)

“Please forgive me. The [Asura Race] do not leave the desert often, and I hear that their population is relatively low. Therefore there is very little information regarding them. I have only heard that they once forcibly expelled people who had accidentally entered the desert” (Silva)

“I see. So only rumors...” (Hiiro)

If that's the case, Hiroy can't completely trust what Silva says. However, there's no smoke without fire. Even if the rumors aren't true, something similar probably happened. Either it is exactly as the rumors state, or... they may be an even more problematic race.

"What shall we do? Shall we continue towards the desert?" (Silva)

"I wonder..." (Hiroy)

"Mu? What is it? Getting scared?" (Liliy)

Hiroy became irritated hearing Liliy's words.

"Of course I'm not scared. Fine, let's go and meet those [Asura Race] or whatever they're called" (Hiroy)

"Kukuku6, I wouldn't have it any other way" (Liliy)

Liliy welcomed danger. Because that way she'd be less bored.

"By the way kozou7, don't you think that you're the only one who's relaxing?" (Liliy)

"What do you mean?" (Hiroy)

It seemed like Hiroy truly didn't understand the meaning behind Liliy's question.

"Don't play dumb. Why are you the only one riding that bird?" (Liliy)

Liliy snappily points at Mikazuki.

"Of course I am. Because she's mine" (Hiroy)

"Kuikuikui!" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki flaps her wings \*basabasabasa\* like she's embarrassed and raises her voice in a happy tone.

"Eei8! Why am I, your master, the one who's walking while you, my servant, are relaxing on top of that bird!?" (Liliy)

“Shut up. Who the hell’s your servant” (Hiiro)

“Let me ride that too!” (Liliyn)

“I refuse” (Hiiro)

“Let me ride it!” (Liliyn)

“No way” (Hiiro)

“I said, let me ride it!” (Liliyn)

“Walk, Hikikomori<sup>9</sup>” (Hiiro)

“Who’s a Hikikomori!?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn shouts out without concealing her anger.

“F-Fun<sup>10</sup>. If it’s come to this I’ll ride it using force!” (Liliyn)

Saying that, Liliyn jumps towards Mikazuki’s back.

\*sasa\*!<sup>11</sup>

Mikazuki, however, immediately moves out of the way. Liliyn, who missed her mark, lands gracefully on her feet and glares at Mikazuki. Mikazuki freezes due to her glare, but...

“Oi<sup>12</sup>, leave it at that. Rather, Akaloli, you’re a rather despicable person to force yourself on someone who doesn’t want it<sup>13</sup>” (Hiiro)

“Ugu<sup>14</sup>...” (Liliyn)

“Don’t you think so too, Jii-san<sup>15</sup>?” (Hiiro)

“Ojou-sama, I cannot condone your actions” (Silva)

“Whaaat!?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn let out a surprised voice hearing Silva’s words. Shamoe, who was nearby, began to act nervously.

With a disappointed look on her face, Liliyn looks towards Hiiro

and points her finger.

“I-I’ll definitely make you mine!” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofof! That is definitely our Ojou-sama!” (Silva)

“I-I-I don’t r-really get what’s going on, but you’re amazing Ojou-sama!” (Shamoe)

Her two servants praise her.

“Instead of fooling around, let’s hurry up and get a move on” (Hiiro)

“Eei! How about you read the mood a little!” (Liliyn)

Hiiro was unsociable as usual.

## Notes

1. Reminder that residents of the Evila Continent refer to their continent as the “Demon World”
2. Casual affirmation: Oh? / Is that so?
3. In this context: “Hey”
4. “My Lady”; “Mistress”
5. In this context: “Hm?”
6. Her laugh
7. Child; brat
8. Just shouting
9. <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hikikomori>
10. “Hmph”; not pronounced at all like the English word
11. sfx for shuffling away
12. “Hey”
13. Reverse-rape Liliyn (\*´Д`)/ㄥㄥ
14. Pretty much like “urgh”; expressing displeasure
15. Older male figure

## Chapter 83 : Battle in Raohrb Desert

[TL : the blade that the bishounen is holding is 曲刀]

After I walked for a while, I saw an entrance to the desert.

(This is <Raohrb Desert> ( 【ラオーブ砂漠】 ) huh ?) (Hiiro)

The moment he entered the desert, he could feel warm dry air blowing against his cheek.

Up until now, there was no wind or daylight this strong. It's almost like he had entered a

completely different world.

According to Silva, the demon land is almost covered in this. It's normal for an

environment to change drastically. It's said that the <Evila> race is strong because they

withstand these harsh environment.

Hiiro can't see anything ahead, only the horizon. After they walk for a bit, they stop

because of Liliyn.

“Oi, What's wrong ?” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku, oi, Shamoe.” (Liliyn)

“Y-Yes !” (Shamoe)

Liliyn called Shamoe while ignoring Hiiro.

“Listen Shamoe, Don't leave my side. Got it ?” (Liliyn)

“Eh ? Y-Yes !” (Shamoe)

It's unknown why Liliyn said that, but Shamoe trusted her 100%, so she sticks close to

her. Silva too, without saying anything, stands close to her.

But, not Hiiro. Hiiro didn't understand anything she talked about. So, he asked.

"Oi, What're you doing ?" (Hiiro)

"Kukuku, You will understand soon enough." (Liliyn)

She said that and walked again, Silva and Shamoe also walking together with her.

"Kui ?" (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki said that as if asking if Hiiro won't go with them as well. Hiiro sighed.

"There's no choice but to go." (Hiiro)

Hiiro said that while dragging Mikazuki.

There's a mountain of sand ahead, their destination is ahead of that. When they pass it,

Hiiro stopped and was bewildered by the view.

There's one person there.. He never saw anyone like that before. "Who ?"

Violet hair. Their hairstyle is like a samurai's. Its hair should be around 20 cm. Blue

uniform. A bandage to cover the nose and mouth. And two sword behind their back.

(editor note: are you sure it's a bandage and not a mask like the ones doctors use?)

(TL Note : Ninja Turtle ?)

That guy is folding his arms and glaring this way. It's obviously full of killing intent.

Hiiro's party is on guard and slowly starts approaching him. When they got close, that

person silently talks.

"I'll ask you one question. Do you want to leave or become a corpse ? Choose." (???)

What a dangerous question. They can't ignore the pressure of that question. Depending

on our answer, he won't do anything right ?

"Who are you ? You're in the way. Move." (Hiiro)

Hiiro responded just like that. That person glares even more.

"Looks like you don't know the rules here. Then, I'll tell you." (???)

His eyes shine suspiciously.

"Kukuku, Careful Boy." (Liliyn)

Liliyn is smiling happily, Hiiro wonders what's the matter.

Sfx: ZABAZABA

Suddenly something sprung up from the sand.

(What !?) (Hiiro)

Hiiro hold his hand in front of his eyes to prevent the sand getting in to his eyes. And

then, he looks again..

It's a person. He can at least see three people here. They all hold weapons and start

coming with killing intent.



One to Liliyn, One to Hiiro, and One to Silva. All of them are wearing blue clothes and a

turban-like hood, tied violet hair until their waist, a bandage to cover their mouth and

on their back, twin blades like that guy earlier.

(TL Note : Ninja !)

(<Evila> are all like this ?) (Hiiro)

To come without having a conversation, <Evila> are such a war-hungry race ? As if

Liliyn is not enough.

Hiiro immediately draw his “Thorn Piercer” to fight.

Sfx : Kakiinii ! (weapon clashing)

Their blades clashed and sparks are created.

“Ku !” (Hiiro)

They’re stronger than Hiiro thought. Hiiro is pushed back and clenches his teeth. It

seems the enemy also thought that Hiiro’s power is stronger than they expected. After

staring at each other, they dashed towards each other again.

But, the enemy didn’t fall from the air, he instead uses steps to maintain altitude and fly

over Hiiro.

(Don’t tell me, Mikazuki !?) (Hiiro)

The enemy probably decided to kill Mikazuki first.

“Oi ! Drolling Bird ! Go away !” (Hiiro)

Saying that, Mikazuki avoided the enemy that was trying to attack her from the back.

She never thought that the enemy would fall down like that. The enemy, stunned at

Hihiro's action, has no other choice but to attack him again.

Kiiiiin !

Once again, their blades clashed. This time, the enemy might have grasped Hihiro's

power since he didn't get blown away. Now, he's confident that he's stronger than Hihiro.

He has ascertained his victory. Suddenly...

Pishun !

Suddenly, Hihiro is gone from his sight. He's confused at the situation.

On Hihiro's arm the word <Speed> can be seen. He activated his word. Hihiro is also

confident to fight only with his Katana. He knew that his footing and power is worse

than the enemy's. That's why, he used <Word Magic>.

"Eat this !" (Hihiro)

He appeared behind his opponent, and slashed vertically.

Bushun !

Blood dripped on the sand, but..

(Che ! Too shallow huh..) (Hihiro)

The enemy managed to react in the last moment and avoided fatal injuries.

The enemy who had avoided Hiiro's attack lost his bandage that covered him. So, his

true face is revealed. Rather than a man, it's more like a boy. It's without a doubt a

pretty boy. On the boy mouth, a straight scar, and blood is dripping.

(EN: I'm gonna assume you meant mouth and not voice)

Wiping the blood, the boy said..

"You...are strong, I will get a bit serious." (???)

The boy takes the blade on his back.

Then..

"Wait !" (???)

The one who said that, is that samurai dude. Hiiro and the boy took a glance at him. He

seems grumpy, but they don't know why.

"Mu ? Is it over already ?" (Liliyn)

"It seems so." (Silva)

Hiiro looked at Liliyn and Silva. It seems they already defeated their opponents. Liliyn is

trampling her opponent's head, and Silva is locking his opponent's arm joint.

"It seems, you're not average people" (???)

"If you think so, let us through already." (Liliyn)

"Fu, sorry, but that won't happen. Because.." (???)

He drew his twin blades, they were black. It's what people usually

call Black Sword. He

then put on his guard.

“Because I will kill you all !” (???)

Hearing that guy, Liliyn’s laughter echoes..

“Kukuku, You will kill me ? What a funny joke.” (Liliyn)

“It’s not a joke, even if you’re just a brat, I won’t allow anyone in this desert !” (???)

“Hou..” (Liliyn)

A dark smile can be seen. Liliyn emits blood thirst to destroy the enemy’s blood thirst.

The enemy stomps his feet and flew.

“Che !” (???)

She smacked her lips because she can’t see him. The enemy came down to strike, but

there’s nobody there.

“Here !” (Liliyn)

A shiver runs down on his back. Just when did she get beside him ?

Dogo !

The enemy took a considerable impact from Liliyn’s kick and shows a distorted face. He

managed to adjust his body when he got blown off. When he landed, Liliyn’s sharp nail

is already in front of him.

The samurai guy is startled. He never thought Liliyn possess this much power. Even if

he's going all out, she beat him as if ridiculing him. In that instant, he can see the little

girl's wicked smile.

He thought, he's dead now.

Dosu !

Something interrupted and Liliyn put distance between them. The Samurai Guy is

drenched in sweat, in front of him is a blade (scimitar of some sort, from the

bishounen).

“What's he doing ? That boy.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn took a glance from the defeated enemy, it was that boy who was fighting with

Hihiro earlier.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 84: The Ashura Tribe

“I can’t... let you kill him.”

The boy speaks, as if unaffected by Liliyn’s bloodlust. Hiiro’s attention was captured by the young man’s strange actions.

From the samurai-ish man’s atmosphere, and actions, it was likely that he was a man of some power. But Liliyn was head and shoulders above him. With the way things were going, Liliyn’s claws would definitely find their way into his heart. The man himself was unable to keep up with any of her movements, and he probably had resolved himself for whatever fate awaited him. Even Hiiro could barely follow Liliyn, and that was only because he was a distance away.

But he could barely trace them. If he were to go against speed like that, it would be difficult.

(But that boy easily followed them)

Right, the boy was easily following the two’s fight with his eyes. He had perfectly timed himself when he used both of his arms to throw his curved blade, and put a hold on the fight. To be able to do that, the boy must have been quite powerful himself.

While Hiiro wasn’t looking, the Samurai man was by the boy’s side. And surprisingly, he lowered himself to his knees.

“I-I apologize, chief!” (Man)

Hiiro was startled at hearing the word, ‘chief’.. Liliyn was the same, and her eyebrows twitched for a moment. But she quickly nodded as if to accept the fact.

“Hmhmhmhm. I realized that quite a powerful person had been hidden in the sand, but I never expected the brat to be the head here.” (Liliyn)

“So she noticed...” (Man)

The samurai man remorsefully spits out his words. In reality, their group had noticed the moment Hiiro's group had set foot in the desert. They had hidden several of their companions under the sand in order to initiate a surprise attack. But it seems that Liliyn had already noticed as such.

It was at that time, that hiiro started to understand the words she said. At that time, she had suddenly signaled Shamoe to stay by her side. And she also cautioned Hiiro himself. She had already noticed that they were surrounded by enemies.

“If you don't want me to fight that man, does that mean you'll take me on? Hmm?” (Liliyn)

A fearless smile floats on Liliyn's face, but the boy shakes his head.

“Did you come... to... lay waste to our desert?” (Boy)

“We had no such intentions.” (Liliyn)

“Then... why are you here?” (Boy)

“We're just travelling. We're escorting that brat.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn signals to Hiiro, and the boy shifts his gaze to him.

“Are you... from the 『Ashura Tribe』?” (Hiiro)

When asked, the boy gives a firm nod.

“I see. It seems that you really do live in this desert. By the way, do you have any plans on letting us pass peacefully?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro grips his sword, as he lets out his words. The boy reaches for the pair of blades on his back, and slowly draws them. But the second both blades had come out of their sheathes, Hiiro knit his brow. The reason being, that instead of the edges you would find on a normal sword, the ends of the blades were cur rectangular, like building blocks. They clearly lacked the ability to cut.

The dropped the items, which were difficult to even call sword, to the ground, and they immediately sunk into the sand. They probably weighed quit a lot.

And he took the two black swords held by ths samurai man. Hiiro noticed it now, that the black swords the man held were of the same Japanese Katana Design as 『Piercer』. The boy pointed the blade of the two weapons at Hiiro, and prepared himself.

“You shall... not pass.” (Boy) (TL: I couldn’t help myself)

“... I see.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro put even more power into the hand grasping his sword. The boy was probably restricting his own movements by carrying around those large slabs of metal on his back.

He removed those restraints, and took the swords, no, katanas, of the samurai man. And the fighting stance he took was well refined. Hiiro determined that the true owner of these two swords was probably the boy.

(It’s as if he wasn’t the slightest bit serious until now... interesting.)

In order to confront his enemy with his full might, he prepared to use his 《Word Magic》.

(The thing I’ll need to be careful of is his speed. I don’t know how heavy those swords are, but seeing as he could keep up with Aka-Loli’s movements, I should assume he can move at that speed as well...)

Without taking his eyes off of the boy, he put his right arm behind his back, and wrote 『Speed(速)』. He set it to activate remotely with his invocation management.

Perhaps the other side noticed him using magic, but the boys actions grew more vigilant.

“Wait a second, brat.” (Liliyn)

That one was directed at Hiiro.



“What? I’ll be the one to take him on. Don’t step in.” (Hiiro)

If Liliyn tried to KS him, he wouldn’t get any EXP. For Hiiro, who wanted to raise his level all at once, fighting a strong enemy was all that he could wish for.

(TL: KS = Kill Steal)

“Just wait. There’s something I want to ask.” (Liliyn)

Saying that, she turned her head to the boy.

“Oy, you. Why are you relentlessly purging trespassers? It’s not like this desert belongs to you or anything.” (Liliyn)

Her words were on the mark. Though they had heard rumors of the 『Ashura Tribe』 rejecting intruders, that was just because they wanted to protect their territory.

The boy spoke of laying waste to the desert. But when they tried to precede any further, the boy persistently barred them. As Liliyn was curious as to what he was hiding in the desert, she pressed him with question.

“As if you, who are blessed with ignorance, would understand our feelings!” (Man)

The Samurai Man suddenly shouts out in an angry voice. But as if she didn’t feel any rage at all, Liliyn returned her words.

“Hmm, are you a fool? That’s why I’m asking. Just answer already.” (Liliyn)

“What!? You bastard!” (Man)

The boy raised his hand to order the man to silence. Understanding the meaning of the gesture, the samurai man closed his mouth. And the boy turned to Liliyn once more.

“... Got it... will speak.” (Boy)

A dark expression clouds the boy’s face and he slowly opens his

mouth.

“In this desert... no, in the heart of this desert... a certain monster lives. Intruders... anger him... no good. We... in trouble. So... here, I eliminate you.” (Boy)

His peculiar speech pattern made it hard to understand, but after a bit more conversation, the meaning got across.

“To summarize, you 『Ashura Tribe』 are making sure that monster doesn't get angry. So you're trying to prevent those that don't know anything from wandering around here?” (Hiiro)

“Yes.” (Boy)

“And that monster is very tough, so you can't do anything with your own power?” (Hiiro)

“Don't want... anyone to die.” (Boy)

If they fought without heeding the casualties, then perhaps they would have a chance of victory. But the 『Ashura Tribe』 are few in numbers. Among them, many are too old or young for battle. They especially didn't want to expose their children, who shouldered their hopes for the future, to battle. That's why they were living inconspicuously as to not do anything to provoke the monster.

“But can't you just leave the desert then?” (Hiro)

The one who answered Hiiro was the Samurai Man.

“We can't do that.” (Man)

With a somber expression, the man clenched his teeth.

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“The desert is our home. We're a race that lives and withers with the sand. Also... here lies the grave of the 『Ashura Tribe』 . We can't abandon it.” (Man)

Near here was the 『Ashura Tribe』 settlement. From the days of old, they had lived here. And this goes without saying, but plenty of them met their ends here as well. For them, a grave stone was erected. That place was called 『Grave Tower』, and it was made by carving out a large formation of rock.

To the 『Ashura Tribe』, relations within the clan came before all else, and they respected their dead more than anyone. When one died, they believed that, while the body became an empty husk, the soul would return to the clan. They were unable to abandon their grave along with the desert.

“Then can’t you just take that grave marker with you?” (Hiiro)

“Don’t speak the impossible. Do you think we could violate our precious treasure like that!?” (Man)

Well, once you’ve buried a man, you can’t really dig him up to move him.

“And preventing you from passing is also for your sake! You’re no match for that monster! If you don’t want to die, then leave quickly!” (Man)

“I refuse.” (Hiiro)

“... What?” (Man)

Hiiro’s prompt decision was shocking, but moreso was the fact that it was a refusal.

“Why must I, for some monster I’ve never even met, abandon the road I came down?” (Hiiro)

“W-weren’t you listening to what I was saying!? I don’t care whatsoever if you’re killed by that monster. But what do you plan on doing if that monster comes at us in its rage!?” (Man)

“Hmph. Then we just have to kill it, right?” (Hiiro)

“Wha... Y-you can only say that because you’ve never seen it! It’s too late to run once you’ve gotten it angry!” (Man)

"I'll say it as many times as I must. We will cross here. If you plan on getting in our way, we'll cross blades too." (Hiiro)

"Dammit!" (Man)

The Samurai Man gave Hiiro, who wouldn't listen to a word he was saying, a scornful glare. But the boy by his side simply silently looked in Hiiro's direction. And he put his hand on the man's shoulder, that was trembling with anger.

"C-chief...?" (Man)

"... Stand back." (Boy)

"U-understood." (Man)

Following the boy's words, the man stepped back.

"Oy, Aka-Loli. As I said, I'll be the one taking him down." (Hiiro)

"... Fine by me. But I don't know if he plans on fighting." (Liliyn)

"What?" (Hiiro)

The boy returned the swords in his hand to their sheathes.

"What are you doing? Are you saying we can pass?" (Hiiro)

The boy silently stares at Hiiro again. And he quietly opens his mouth.

"Are you going... no matter what?" (Boy)

"Yeah, taking a detour would be a pain." (Hiiro)

"... Got it. Then... I follow." (Boy)

"What?" (Hiiro)

"C-chief! Are you sure?" (Man)

The man raises an alarmed voice at the boy's proposal. But the boy gives a light nod, showing his intent.

“... Understood. Then I’ll return, and inform our comrades of these events.” (Man)

“Yes... be careful.” (Boy)

“Yes. Then.” (Men)

After the samurai man left the area, the boy turned to Hihiro again.

“Introduction... late. I... Camus. I’m the 『Ashura Race』 ... Chief.” (Camus)

(TL: If you didn’t know, Camus is pronounced Kamyu. It’s a French name. For more information, just google ‘How do you pronounce Camus?’)

By his disinterested expression, and his youth, one wouldn’t think him to be the head of a race. Even if, as an 『Evila』, his age conflicted with his appearance, looking at a boy that looked to be of a similar age to himself, Hihiro couldn’t help but doubt his chiefhood.

“Now, I’ll take you... to home. There... please determine.” (Camus)

“Determine What?” (Hihiro)

“... Monster’s... terror.” (Camus)

For the first time, a speck of fire glowed in the back of the young man’s eyes. He was definitely showing his anger. Though Camus appeared to be devoid of emotions, he harbored quite a resentment for the monster.

Hihiro crossed his arms, and thought of whether or not to follow the boy. Seeing the 『Ashura Tribe』’s settlement was definitely one of the goals of this journey. It would be beneficial if they had someone to lead them there. Of course, there was no need to drop their guard.

“Isn’t it fine?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn said as such, so Hihiro directed his gaze to the others. Silva

nods with a slight smile on his face. Shamoe is fidgeting by Liliyn's side, and it seems that her mind was unable to keep up with the sudden development.

Putting the maid aside, it seems the other two will follow without complaint. With Liliyn's strength, no matter how strong the opponent, she should be able to take them out if they show any signs of deceiving the group.

"Got it. Then I'll have you be our guide." (Hiiro)

The boy nods, turns his back to Hiiro's group, and starts walking. His men also get into rank and file behind him, and quietly follow.

(A monster of the desert... I bet it has quite a bit of strength.)

The strong Camus is taking such an attitude, so the monster should be something ferocious and uncontrollable, even for him.

As they walked, Hiiro approached Silva to see if he had any relevant information on the monster, but he didn't know anything. Liliyn's answer was the same.

"But doesn't it sound interesting? Things like this aren't bad for entertainment." (Liliyn)

"You're one to talk, after you holed yourself into that mansion for so long." (Hiiro)

"Mu... listen here, brat! I only stayed there to accomplish my own ambitions! Don't forget that!" (Liliyn)

Liliyn insisted this while pointing her finger at Hiiro, but Hiiro closed his eyes halfway, and let out a light sigh.

"More importantly. How does that guy look from your perspective?" (Hiiro)

"Hmm? So you want to know? Hm?" (Liliyn)

An irritating smile manifested, so Hiiro got slightly pissed off.

“Just answer the question.” (Hiiro)

“Hmhm. Let’s see, he was the Chief, right? I think he at least has the power to back the title.” (Liliyn)

“So he has something of that level?” (Hiiro)

“Don’t play dumb. Since you also use a katana, you should understand that better than I.” (Liliyn)

Right. After seeing Camus’s strength firsthand, Hiiro had a slight grasp of it. Neither side was serious, but still, it was apparent that he had a considerable amount of power.

“In regards to physical ability alone, you wouldn’t stand a chance. And his magic is still a mystery. It may be good that you didn’t 1v1 him there.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn makes an ecstatic grin as she speaks.

“Quite joking around. If we fought, I would have won.” (Hiiro)

“Kukuku. Where does that confidence come from... Well, when that battle actually comes to pass, make sure to entertain me. Kukuku.” (Liliyn)

Her phrasing made it seem as if she had seen through Hiiro’s true strength. It’s true that she said she was accompanying him to find out his secrets, and to reveal his identity. The feeling of having her stare at him while he fought wasn’t a nice one. It felt as if he was being strip naked, and examined.

(Come at me if you will. I’ll look for a time when this one isn’t around.)

With that decision, Hiiro stared at Camus’s back as he walked ahead.

## Chapter 85: Liliyn and Sivan

[TL : Changed Camus to Kamui since Kamui ]

The desert sun glared down onto the group, causing them to sweat profusely. After walking for a while, the group saw something that they could rejoice about.

“Is that...an Oasis?” (Hiiro)

He thought it was an illusion, however, as Liliyn’s group looked in that direction as well, Hiiro felt relieved. At the same time, their stomachs growled. Since they had walked for a long time, their constitution had been weakened as well. As it was almost lunch time, their stomachs let out a thunderous warning.

“That place...residence” (Kamui)

Kamui pointed at the Oasis. It seemed like they’ll be able to take a break soon

There was an area covered in greenery about the size of Tokyo Dome (about 1,240 m<sup>2</sup>). They were also able to see a pond there as well. Beside the pond, there was a single governing building that looked like a mongolian yurt.

(It’s my first time seeing a yurt...it’s bigger than I expected.) (Hiiro)

A yurt was a round tent supported by two pillars at the center. The frame radiated out from the center of the yurt to form the roof. A thick sheet made out of wool was then draped over the framework to form the roof and the walls.

The yurt was about 4-6 meters in diameter. There were also several pieces of furniture nearby just like a dwelling place.

“Ah, Kamui, it’s Kamui” (Child A)

“It’s true” (Child B)



“Kamui, Kamui” (Other Children)

Several children left the yurt, and ran towards Kamui. Kamui lowered his body and hugged each of them one after another.

(He is adored by the children, huh.) (Hiiro)

Looking at the scene before him, Hiiro felt nostalgic. When he was at the orphanage, as Hiiro was the oldest person among them, he was entrusted in taking care of the younger children. Even though he was doing it unwillingly, he smiled wryly as he remembered the innocent smile of the younger children.

“Ah, hey, hey, Kamui Kamui! Who are those people?” (Child C)

When one of the children asked an adult woman near Kamui turned to look at him with caution.

“Hey, lower your head and ask.” (Adult women)

“EhEh~. but Mama, Kamui Kamui said he is fine with this!” (Child C)

“That is right!” (Child B)

“Kamui Kamui is Kamui Kamui!” (Child A)

All the children talked back to the adults. The adults responded with a hopeless shrug. The person with topknot hair that had returned beforehand emerged.

“.....Chief.” (Person with topknot hair)

If you look closely, there was another person near him. He was an old man, who had so much wrinkles that you could feel the number of years he had lived. Furthermore, both his eyes were closed. There were burn marks on the top of his eyes, which may be the reason why he could no longer open them. Furthermore, he had a prosthetic right leg.

“Gramps...will you listen?” (Kamui)

“Un, yes I’ll hear it” (Gramps)

After the old man responded, he slowly approach Hiiro and his group. It was clear that his eyes were not open, yet, he was staring at Hiiro.

Then, he just glanced over Liliyn’s group and simply confirmed their presence. Hiiro noticed that the old man furrowed his brows when he looked at Liliyn. He then faced Hiiro one more time. Hiiro stared back at him without knitting his eyebrows.

“.....I see, what an interesting group of people.” (Old man)

He even smiled further, increasing the number of wrinkles on his face.

“Right, Kamui, I heard most of it from Jinwu, but after seeing it, are you still going to proceed?” (Old man)

“At that time...I will stop it...life... life on the line” (Kamui)

The old man laughed happily and said.

“Hohohoho, that is impossible.” (Old man)

“Eh...why?” (Kamui)

He was surprised by the response, and put on a puzzled expression.

“Kamui, you are strong. You are strong enough not to lose to those older than you, but...” (Old man)

He turned to look at Liliyn with a his eyes closed smiling.

“That is something else.” (Old man)

“.....That?” (Kamui)

Kamui moved his gaze toward Liliyn in the same way as the old man. Liliyn crossed her arms and opened her mouth.

“That was a bit rough, right...Sivan?” (Liliyn)

Not only Hihiro, but also Silva and Shamoe was surprised by her response. For Liliyn to know someone that even Silva didn't know, it must be a very old friend. From that response, Hihiro also knew why Sivan had looked anxiously at Liliyn.

"You know her.....gramps?" (Kamui)

"Yes, I didn't expect to meet her again in this place." (Sivan)

"Same here. For you to still be alive, you must be really stubborn, huh." (Liliyn)

"Hoh hoh hoh, to be greeted in such a manner." (Sivan)

"Hey, you are acquaintances right?" (Hihiro)

They responded to Hihiro by nodding and saying "Ah"

"Once upon a time, for a little bit. You sure have put on a lot of years." (Liliyn)

"Do you have any idea how many years have passed since then? Well, you have no idea because you look just like before." (Sivan)

"Impressive, how do you know?" (Liliyn)

"I knew from your voice and atmosphere. When I lost my sight, I became sensitive to those things." (Sivan)

".....What happened to your eyes and legs?" (Liliyn)

Liliyn put on a serious expression while looking at him

".....If it is possible, I don't want you to know." (Sivan)

"Was it from the monster in the... desert?" (Liliyn)

"That's right." (Sivan)

"A person like...you?" (Liliyn)

"Hoh hoh, it is harder to win when you get older. Unlike you." (Sivan)

“Fu~n, it’s only in your case, you received those wounds from protecting someone, right?” (Liliyn)

“Gramps.....” (Kamui)

Sivan tried to stop him from interjecting, yet, Kamui interrupted him and continued.

“Gramps.....protected me.....that was all. I was...too weak...that was all” (Kamui)

At that moment, his expressionless face changed as he raised his eyebrows in a painful expression. From that, they were able to identify the cause of those wounds. When he was fighting the demon, Kamui was targeted so Sivan jumped in to protect him. They were not sure what the demon did after, however, because of that, Sivan had lost his eyes and right leg.

“Kamui, my boy. As a chief, you had an obligation to protect the family. I was once the chief as well. Right now, you are the chief of this clan. As a chief, you shouldn’t put on such a sad face.” (Sivan)

Even though Sivan cannot see him, he seem to be able to feel Kamui’s pain.

“Stay vigilant and resolute, and become a reliable man” (Sivan)

“Un...I understand...sorry.” (Kamui)

“Then, don’t apologize so easily either” (Sivan)

Sivan shrugged in amazement.

“Sivan, what is the identity of the demon of the desert? Why didn’t you take part? If it’s strong then...wait, no, even if it was an SSS Rank, you would still be able to defeat it if you tried. Don’t tell me that it’s using some sort of trick. Tell me the real reason.” (Liliyn)

Her words surprised those around them. Of course, Hiiro was surprised as well. The story wasn’t the real reason and, like everyone else, he simply looked at Liliyn.

Most members of the Ashura Clan stared at Liliyn vigilantly. Yet, Liliyn completely ignored their stares.

“....As usual, you can’t hide it, can you? You are just as annoying as before, Loli-baba.” (Sivan)

“Fu~n, why don’t you suffocate to death in ladies underwear like you dreamed about, you old bastard.” (Liliyn)

They stared at each other as they felt explosive sparks being exchanged between them. Everyone around them swallowed uncomfortably. Hiiro and Silva stood silently and observed the scene before them.

(That said, for the Aka-loli to say whatever she wants around that weak old man.) (Hiiro)

Some people would think suffocating in a women’s underwear is something to enjoy, but to Hiiro it was something sad; very, very, sad.

They were stuck in that position for sometime, then they separated and laughed faintly.

“Hoh Hoh Hoh” (Sivan)

“Kukuku” (Liliyn)

When the dark mood suddenly dispersed, everyone around them grew surprised.

“Come with me, guests. I have something to show you all” (Sivan)

Sivan walked in a certain direction, scraping his leg along the sand. As expected, Hiiro and the group followed behind him soon after.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 86

### – Devotion of the Ashura

Sivan guided Hiiro and his companions to a single yurt [1](|Ashura Tribe| Residence). The residence seemed to be three times bigger than the rest they have seen. When they entered inside, they frowned as the smell of antiseptic and blood entered their presence.

Ten men and women were lying in beds built out of grass and leaves. However, they were not simply lying down. No matter who you looked at, a part of their body was wound by blood stained bandages. Upon closer inspection, the ground seemed to have been drenched by blood in several places.

As the others saw this spectacle, Shamoe trembled while covering her mouth with both hands. Liliyn also frowned unpleasantly.

Sivan: [ This is one of the reasons why we cannot move. ~ja] [2]

If it was only one or two injured, then it would be possible to somehow carry them. However, as the seriously injured were well over a dozen, one could comprehend that carrying them out would be no easy feat. Furthermore, from what Hiiro had heard, there were also those whose condition was so critical that moving them would prove dangerous.

Sivan: [ Of course, another reason is because the |Grave Tower| is near here. That's where the deceased family members are buried ~ja ]

Hiiro: [ You don't have a cure for this? ]

Hiiro voiced the doubts in his mind.

Sivan: [ ~ Yes we have. However, the medicinal herbs don't seem to be effective on the wounds given by the demon in this desert... also, all of the villagers in here need the cure. Even if they searched for the cure in this desert, it's risky to send out combat capable people right now ~ja~]

Now that Hiiro thought about it, it was uncertain that such a cure would grow in center of the desert. The |Ashura Tribe| cannot go out into desert to search for the cure as a brutal monster was lying await outside the village perimeter. If they were to send out an ordinary person, it would take too much time. Thus, they needed a strong person to move.

Yet, those that fit the criteria within the |Ashura Tribe| are very few. Of course, strong people like Camus exist. However, they are in charge of preventing other intruders from passing through the desert, so they cannot risk decreasing their gatekeepers in this desert.

Sivan: [ Even so, in this Oasis, medicinal herbs grow and are used to treat the injured. Yet, this is still a terrible situation for us~ ]

Hiiro: [ It really is terrible.]

Hiiro crosses his arms and shuts his eyes. He was sure Liliyn and Silva were looking at him, thinking that Hiiro could cure them as they had witnessed Hiiro's recovery magic that he had showed them previously. However, Hiiro ignored them as he had no obligation to cure them.

Among the two, Silva in particular was looking at Hiiro, contemplating whether he should ask Hiiro to help the injured. He also understood that Hiiro was concealing his magic. However, many people here were on the verge of death.

In reality, Hiiro wanted to bend his principles slightly and cure these people. As Liliyn stared at Hiiro, she noticed him giving off an atmosphere that indicated he would not speak any further. She shrugged her shoulders as she made a wry smile.

Liliyn: [ Oi Sivan. ]

Sivan: [ ~ja What is it Liliyn? ]

Liliyn: [ There are other reasons right? Even if the opponent is a Rank SSS monster, the |Ashura Tribe| would be able to manage if you poured all your efforts into it. So why didn't you? ]

Sivan: [ ..... ]

Liliyn: [ There's also another thing that's strange. Even though you do not possess the power to return to active duty, I do not believe that you would be beaten by such monsters. Even if you were carrying the burden of this Tribe. Though I do not know what happened to your right leg, I did not expect you to be defeated, not to mention you lost both of your eyes... What are you hiding? ]

As Liliyn spoke those words, her eyes sparkled momentarily. Camus and the topknot man was at a loss for words upon hearing Liliyn's inquisition. Seeing their appearance, Liliyn understood that her speculation was right on the money.

Following this, Sivan took a deep breath and finally opened his mouth.

Sivan: [ As one would expect of the |Red Rose Witch|. I'm really astonished by your perceptiveness.]

Liliyn: [ ~fufun, Naturally ]

Liliyn proudly puffed her chest, her face slackening slightly.

Sivan: [ ..... The monster in the desert. It is.. The Previous Chief of this Tribe ]

Liliyn: [ Previous Chief of this Tribe? What do you mean, Sivan? ]

Liliyn knitted her eyebrows suspiciously.

Sivan: [ ~unja~ that child. It happened when Camus was little.]

Sivan soberly moved his mouth.

30 years ago, an incident occurred in the desert. It started from just one monster. That monster was a species that made the desert its natural habitat. Following this, that monster mutated and changed its form.

The name of that monster is |Desert Tortoise|. That monster's defining trait is the big shell on its back. One day, the |Desert



Tortoise| who should have skin tinted green, was now filled with a hue of a toxic deep purple.

What's more, the |Desert Tortoise| was not an aggressive monster. Yet, it began to attack other monsters. Moreover, the demon wouldn't just attack. It would devour any of its defeated prey.

Following this, the attributes of the monster it had devoured would surprisingly begin to alter the body of the |Desert Tortoise|. The monster it had devoured was named |Mad Scorpion|. The attribute that had grown onto the |Desert Tortoise| was a poisonous tail.

Furthermore, another monster, the |Mad Golem| possessed rugged skin as its trait. In the same way, that monster was also devoured. The |Desert Tortoise's| body began to mysteriously change.

The |Ashura Tribe| assumed that, should this continue, not only would the monsters in the desert be devoured, but it would soon bear its fangs towards them. As such, they decided to take this chance to slay it, while it was still underdeveloped.

The Chief of the |Ashura Tribe| at that time was Rigund. He was Camus' real father. His ability was also well known throughout the Tribe. Especially in combat, he possessed the strength that others yearned for. That kind of person was Camus' pride.

Rigund, along with his companions, headed forth to slay the |Desert Tortoise|. If it was him, the people believed that he would certainly kill it and return back safely.

However, after coming back, Rigund was in tatters. He was covered with wounds all over his body. Others were stunned by his appearance. Even Sivan could only blankly stare at him in surprise.

The people knew that the |Desert Tortoise| was strong. Yet, they did not expect Rigund's following words.

Rigund: [That existence is not a naturally born |Desert Tortoise|. There is a puppeteer on its back]

Everyone was taken aback by Rigund's word. Yet, one person moved. Sivan asked Rigund again with a stern expression. However-

\*dogogogogon!\* [3]

They heard the roar of the |Desert Tortoise| assault them.

Moreover, the mysterious person clad in a black robe was seen standing on its shell. As everyone witnessed this, they understood that what Rigund said was true.

Camus saw his father was completely exhausted. However, seeing his comrades, anger swelled within him as Camus faced the demon. Even though his father was the strongest in the Tribe, there was no guarantee that Camus would be able to win.

Rigund turned pale as he saw Camus' actions. He desperately moved his aching body. However, he was unable to shield Camus from the attack of the |Desert Tortoise|. Sharp fingernails approached Camus mercilessly.

Camus, for the first time, felt the murderous intent behind an attack that could kill him. Camus froze in fear. Everyone thought Camus was going to die. However, at that time, Sivan appeared, barely protecting him in time.

It was because of this that Sivan's right leg had suffered injury. Furthermore, the attack of the |Desert Tortoise| had not yet ended. This time, the monster used its poisonous tail to attack. Sivan used what little strength he had to carry Camus away from that location.

Even though they dodged the tail attack by jumping backwards, in that moment, vines grew out and clung onto their feet. Sivan's movement became restricted. He determined that this was caused by magic. Following this, he traced the flow of magic and understood that the robed person was the one who had cast it. Moreover, as tremendous magic was imbued into the vines, they would not budge at all.

Sivan struggled desperately. Following this, the poisonous tail shot something at Sivan. The discharged venom splashed onto both of Sivan's eyes. He felt pain in his eyes, as if they were set on fire.

The |Desert Tortoise| used its tail again, aiming for the killing

blow. In that instant, however, the tail was cut. The vines restraining Sivan were also severed. The robed person saw this and expressed their admiration.

Having saved Sivan was Rigund, his breathing disordered from pain and exhaustion. A black sword was gripped in both hands. However, in the following instance, Rigund sheathed his dual katanas and threw them to Camus. He then grabbed a curved sword beside him as he poised himself.

He spoke to his comrades, telling them to take Sivan and run away. They proceeded to recover Sivan. Camus simply watched his father's back, silently.

Rigund: [ Go already! ]

Camus: [ Father! ]

Camus did not want to go. His father was covered with wounds. There was no chance of him winning this. Camus also understood that his father was buying time for the others to escape.

Rigund: [ Do not hesitate! ]

Camus: [ ..... !? ]

Rigund: [ You are my son! That's why you should not hesitate on what you are doing! ]

Camus: [ F... Father.... ]

Camus trembled from his father's words. He stood up and picked up the dual katanas before leaving with heavy steps.

???: [ hou~ Are you running away? ]

A dark, low voice entered Camus' ears. It belonged to the robed individual standing on the shell of the |Desert Tortoise|

???: [ Abandoning your father, you choose to ungracefully escape and survive.... ? Amusing.]

Camus: [ .... You .... ]

Camus looked back and clenched his fist. Though the person was covered in a hood, Camus was able to confirm that there was a cross wound on his cheek.

Rigund: [ Camus! ]

Camus regained his senses upon hearing his father.

Rigund: [ .... Listen well Camus... The Tribe... and those dual katanas... I will entrust it to you ]

Camus: [ Fa.... ther ]

Following this, he broke his difficult expression and smiled wryly.

Rigund: [ Do not forget! You are my son! Therefore, you must do it without fail! ]

Camus: [ ..... ]

Rigund: [ Without fail, .... you must become a good man ]

Tears began to overflow in Rigund's eyes.

Rigund: [ Go.... everyone...I entrust them to you]

Camus did not turn back any longer. He parted ways, desperately running with the dual katanas in his hands.

The oasis they lived in was abandoned and was considerably far to the new oasis they had found. Thus, they began to live there. Everyone waited for Rigund to return home. However, they were shocked by the new information they received from the comrades who were patrolling the area.

An existence that resembled Rigund was found. Everyone was pleased to hear that he was alive, yet, they were soon betrayed by the following words.

[ A poisonous tail has grown from Rigund ]

When they investigated this, they determined that Rigund had been devoured by the |Desert Tortoise|. Moreover, it's appearance had greatly changed. Though it still had deep purple skin, it seemed to have morphed into the appearance of Rigund with a poisonous tail and sharp nails.

Everyone who heard that fact could not hide their shock. When the companions discovered him, he seemed to have a slight bit of consciousness remaining inside of him. They had told Rigund that they had found a safe place for the Tribe.

Following this, Rigund had apparently squeezed out his last ounce of strength in order to successfully limit the |Desert Tortoise's| range of action. Due to his magic, he was able to place a barrier where the |Desert Tortoise| could not escape from that place.

Camus and the others were unaware of how long it would last, as there were a lot of monsters to be absorbed in that place. However, they did not find what they were looking for. The robed individual. Though, according to the report, he spoke the words [ My Business here is done] before disappearing. For now, it seemed that they could experience relief.

However, even if they didn't search for monsters within the barrier, the monsters themselves would try to break out. It is possible that their instincts of survival had been stimulated by the |Desert Tortoise|, causing them to grow violent. Yet, Rigund said that they should just leave it alone.

Sivan examined Rigund's story. They tried to not aim for the |Desert Tortoise's| life. However, it was just not possible to ignore it for such a long period of time. They decided to think of a way to cure him.

Yet, Travelers began to show up after a while. As a result, they entered the barrier of the |Desert Tortoise|, and they incurred its wrath. The |Ashura Tribe| on watch at that time saw the |Desert Tortoise| had killed the travelers.

After that incident, they prevented people from entering the desert. Supposing they made the |Desert Tortoise| angry, the barrier would

become ineffective. As a result, there was the possibility of it baring its fangs on them sooner.

It is for this reason that the |Ashura Tribe| created the role of a gate keeper. They believed that Rigund will return to his former self once again. As such, they have continued to search for a method that would return him to normal.

## Notes:

1 This is how a yurt looks like [<http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Yurt>]

2 This is how I added the accent of Sivan's manner of speaking, just get used to it

3 Sound effects for a loud roar

## Chapter 87: Unyielding Thoughts

Sivan: 「Recently the barrier has had little effect. The Desert Tortoise turns violent with even the slightest stimuli. Once angered, its violence will not subside until some time has passed. Yet, if we left it alone, there is a possibility of it coming over here. Thus, those of us that can fight attempted to redirect it to another place, but...」

Hiiro: 「There were times where it failed, leading to this result...I guess that about sums it up.」

Upon hearing Sivan's words, Hiiro spoke as he was somehow convinced. As if the monsters were unaware of their existence, they faced the other direction. Even though the 『Ashura Tribe』 seemed to be drawing the monster's attention, the monsters that were asleep noticed they were under attack.

Sivan: 「Indeed. Even though I said that there were various reasons, the most important one is that we don't want to leave Rigund. Everyone thinks as such.」

Hiiro: 「But if you think about the future of your brats, don't you think this choice is wrong?」

As the man with the topknot(1) grew irritated at Hiiro's words, he glared at him while clenching his teeth. Appearing in front of such a man, Camus opened his mouth instead.

Camus: 「Yes.....it is as you say...I believe. But...dad is family.」

Hiiro: 「...then I'll ask this. Your father was eaten by that Desert Tortoise, right? Although one of the Desert Tortoise's characteristics is that it can take the form of your father. Even so, it just looks really similar to him. Can you really say that your father is alive?」

Camus: 「That's...」

Camus drooped his head with downcast eyes.

Hiiro: 「Furthermore, didn't your father say it as well? That he'd entrust the tribe to you. Yet, the one who exposed that tribe to such risks was non other than you, Chief of the 『Ashura Tribe』」

Topknot Man: 「What the hell would you know, bastard!?!」

The man with the topknot unsheathed his Shamshir(2) as he approached Hiiro with tremendous velocity.

Hiiro: 「Shut up.」

As Hiiro said thus, he pointed his finger tip towards the man as something flew out of it. What had shot out was, of course, a word.

The topknot man's movements instantly froze. Not knowing what had occurred, he was startled. Even if he poured all of his strength into his body, it remained immobile. It wasn't paralysis. It was just that his body refused to move, as if it was completely frozen.

「Stop」 | 『止』

By using 《Word Magic》, Hiiro had robbed him of his movement. While the others had a blank expression, unsure of what Hiiro had done, Liliyn stared at him while hummed 「Hohou(3)」 with interest.

Although he would not normally use 《Word Magic》 in such circumstances, Hiiro was currently in a slightly foul mood. This became quite apparent after he had listened to their story. Thus, he took such action with little concern for the potential consequences.

The reason for this may have been because he did not care about the 『Ashura Tribe's』 current circumstances. Even Hiiro himself was frustrated as he was unsure himself.

Hiiro: 「Oi, Nitouryuu(4).」

Hiiro called out to Camus.

Hiiro: 「Why don't you quit it with this barren life-style? Unless you, no. Unless you guys can't comprehend that the 『Ashura Tribe』 is gonna go extinct?」



Topknot Man: 「Y-you're still saying that, Bastard!？」

As it seemed that only his voice was free, the topknot man screamed. Yet, Hiiro simply pointed to a certain location with his finger. Everyone shifted their gaze in that direction. What was in that direction were...collapsed children.

Hiiro: 「Do you still not understand that you, who was entrusted with the future of the tribe, is leading it to ruin? Or can you not comprehend at all that the children are all going to die?」

As it suddenly occurred to Camus, he looked at the sleeping children, their faces distorted in pain. Within their vicinity, a person that seemed to be a mother was desperately attending to them. As she was tenderly wiping off their sweat, she tried to give them a small amount of food. However, as the children could not eat well, they rejected to drink the soup-like food.

Yet, the mother continued to give them words of encouragement, telling them to not give up. As even the mother was fatigued and was deprived of sleep, the atmosphere was clearly heartbreaking. Yet, she continued to desperately smile in front of the children.

Hiiro: 「If he saw the you right now, what would your father think?」

Camus: 「...」

Hiiro: 「If it was me, I would say this. It was definitely a mistake to entrust the tribe to you.」

Camus: 「Ku-(5)...」

Camus' expressionless face had distorted due to vexation. As the topknot man heard the children cry painfully, he could only remain silent. Liliyn called out to Hiiro in admiration.

Liliyn: 「I'm surprised, Kozou(6). I would never have thought that you'd be worried about brats that are complete strangers.」

Hiiro: 「Fun(7), that's not it at all. I'm just annoyed. Annoyed at the degree of these guys' poverty.」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku(8), don't say that, Kozou. Now then, that's what my companion says. What do you think, Sivan? 」

Liliyn raised a question to her old friend, Sivan. In doing so, he groaned as if it was difficult to say. He began to open his heavy mouth.

Sivan: 「...no, it is exactly as that young one has said. Yes, we may certainly be poor. However, this is something that everyone desires. This decision was not Camus' alone. 」

Hiiro: 「In that case, the entire 『Ashura Tribe』 are a bunch of fools. 」

Topknot Man: 「I-I will no longer forgive you~~! 」

As the one minute time limit of the 「Stop 」 | 『止』 word's effect had passed, the topknot man began to move, once again pouncing onto Hiiro with his Shamshir in hand. However-

Topknot Man: 「...what are you trying to do, chief!? 」

As Camus inserted himself between Hiiro and the Topknot Man, his attack was interrupted. Hiiro was also suspicious of Camus' actions as he stared at him.

Camus: 「The Tribe...do not insult them. 」

Although it sounded like he spoke indifferently, Camus clearly wore a grim expression. Even though Hiiro's words were irrefutably sound and logical, even Camus had things that he would not yield to. He displayed his intention that he would not allow his comrades to be mocked.

Hiiro: 「You can do whatever you want, but those that purposely take actions that will lead themselves to ruin, there is nothing more foolish than them. Even if you guys claim to have your reasons for doing such things, I can only see it as absolutely ridiculous. 」

Camus: 「I will not...allow you to say more. 」

His hands turned towards his back, pulling out a pair of katanas.

Hiiro: 「 So you want to have a go? How about redirecting that enthusiasm to subduing monsters? 」

Camus: 「 ...shut up. 」

Hiiro: 「 I guess I'll just say it then? You guys simply don't want to fight that monster. 」

Camus: 「 Shut up. 」

Hiiro: 「 Because it's appearance is similar to your father...the original chief. That's why you're just hesitating. 」

Camus: 「 Shut up... 」

Hiiro: 「 Thinking that he will eventually be restored, that the chief will come back. While relying on such unfounded wishful thinking, you've been avoiding fights while pointlessly getting yourselves hurt. 」

Camus: 「 I'm telling you to...shut up. 」

Hiiro: 「 You guys are laying waste to the intentions of those that have put their lives on the line. 」

Camus: 「 Shut the fuck up! 」

Disappearing instantly from that spot, Camus suddenly appeared in front of Hiiro's eyes before he noticed. Holding a katanas in each hand, Camus held them in a cross as he tried to slash Hiiro.

\*Kiiiiiiiiin!\*(9)

Hiiro once again tried to parry the attack, unsheathing his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』 as he met Camus' blades.

Hiiro: (Ku-.....what power! Although I was able to defend against it cause I saw it before hand, this guy's way too fast!?)

Even though Hiiro was able to read his angered opponent's simplistic attack, he had barely managed to defend against it. The only reason for this was that was just how swift Camus' movements

were.

Sivan: 「Wait, Camus.」

Upon hearing those words, Camus created distance between him and Hiiro. Following this, he looked towards the owner of the voice, Sivan.

Sivan: 「Camus, are those the actions of a chief?」

Camus: 「.....I will not...let you be insulted.」

Seeing Camus vexingly gritting his teeth as he answered, Sivan could only spit out a deep sigh.

Sivan: 「.....it can not be helped. They are guests.」

Camus: 「What?」

Sivan: 「You will not revise your thoughts, yes?」

Hiiro: 「Of course.」

Sivan: 「Fumu(10). Camus is the same, no?」

Camus: 「Un(11).」

Sivan once again spat out a sigh as he shrugged his shoulders.

Sivan: 「In which case, it'd be better if you went at it until you're satisfied. However, let's step outside.」

Hiiro: 「That's fine with me.」

Camus: 「...I will win.」

Hiiro and Camus glared at each other. Yet, Jin-u made an appalled expression as they cried out.

Jin-u: 「Sivan-sama(12), is this acceptable!?」

Sivan: 「It cannot be helped. Not to mention, in times of dispute, it is better for them to clash with each other.」

Jin-u: 「B-but...」

Sivan: 「There are some things that can only be learned by colliding with fists. Is that not so, Liliyn?」

Liliyn: 「Fun, more importantly, if you're gonna do it then do it already.」

Liliyn could not help but smirk as she was looking forward to it. Undoubtedly, she was happy that she could observe Hiiro's battle. Looking at her, Sivan could only shake his head in grief.

Sivan: 「Jin-u, you'll be the judge.」

Jin-u: 「Y-yes!」

As the topknot man, Jin-u, gave his reply, brought the two with him as they walked to the desert.

Sivan spoke to Liliyn who was nearby.

Sivan: 「That young one is just like you. Holding on to his own ideas and carrying them out, not to mention his brazen attitude. He wouldn't happen to be your child, is he?」

Liliyn: 「Hohou, that's quite a funny joke. It seems as if you want the remaining years of your short life to be scattered right here, yes?」

As she unpleasantly scowled, Liliyn's thirst for blood strengthened. Sivan began to fret.

Sivan: 「It's a joke!」

Liliyn: 「Fun, exactly how am I similar to that Kozou?」

Sivan: 「I-is that so...」

As sweat unpleasantly flowed down his forehead, Sivan spat out a sigh.

Liliyn: 「Now that you mention it, even that 『Ashura』 Kozou

resembled you when you were young. That honesty and straightforwardness. Even the way that you both cherish your comrades is idiotic.」

Sivan: 「Hoh hoh hoh(13), well, he is still immature.」

Liliyn: 「Certainly, I've heard that those of the 『Ashura Tribe』 require 40 years before they become an adult. I see. So he's basically still a brat.」

When those of the 『Ashura Tribe』 reach the age of 40, their appearances becomes the figure of humans in their twenties. Even though Camus has been alive for more than 3 decades, his appearance and mentality was still immature.

Sivan: 「Seeing as you have the figure of a brat, I don't think you're qualified to say that, though?」

Liliyn: 「Shut up! As if you can say that when you can't see, you fucking straight-laced old man!(14)」

Sivan: 「Like I've said countless times, even if I don't see it, I can still feel it. You loli-baba bastard.(15)」

As the two glared at each other with sparks flying through the air, Silva was simply amazed. Shamoe could only watch them as she was constantly flustered.

## Note:

1. Topknot: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Topknot>
2. Shamshir: <http://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Shamshir>
3. Hohou: An expression denoting intrigue.
4. Nitouryuu: Literally Two Sword Style (If you've watched/read SAO, you know what this is).
5. Ku-: A grunt expressing frustration
6. Kozou: 'Boy'. Often demeaning and sort of an archaic speech

(I think).

7. Fun: 'Hmph'.
8. Kukuku: Liliyn's snicker.
9. \*Kiiin\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*plink\*. Think of the sound swords will make when they clash.
10. Fumu: An expression of affirmation/agreement.
11. Un: An expression of affirmation/agreement.
12. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed. Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).
13. Hoh hoh hoh: Sivan's laugh.
14. TL Note: Jap is Kuso Majime Jijii Me | くそ真面目ジジイめ. Kuso (Fucking/damn) | Majime (Serious/straight-laced) | Jijii (Old man) | Me (bastard).
15. TL Note: Jap is Loli babaa me | ロリババアめ. Loli (Lolita) | Babaa (Hag) | Me (bastard).

## Chapter 88 : Camus's True Power

Hihiro and Camus stood atop the desert after leaving the Oasis with Jin-u's guidance. Wondering what's going on, those of the <Ashura Tribe> came to observe. Among said observers were kids.

The children are, of course, cheering for Camus. As for Hihiro-

"Good luck, my Comrade !" (Silva)

"D-Do your best ! Hihiro-sama !" (Shamoe)

Silva and Shamoe cheered for him, yet, he twitched at Silva's support.

(Who the hell is your comrade....?) (Hihiro)

Of course, Hihiro understood that he meant the comrade of Liliyn's fanclub. If he hit Silva, he will only rejoice. Thus Hihiro decided to ignore him.

(Well then. More importantly, how should I fight... For now,...)  
(Hihiro)

As he thought thus, Hihiro used the word [Pry] . Of course, the others noticed that Hihiro used his magic. Jin-u raised his guard.

"What are you doing, bastard ?" (Jin-u)

Although Jin-u had asked him thus, Hihiro just pretended not to know anything.

"I'm just doing some stretching. Magic is allowed in this fight, right ?" (Hihiro)

"O-Oh...." (Camus)

Camus is very suspicious of Hihiro, but Hihiro ignored him.

-----



< Camus >

< Level 85 >

HP 2380/2400

MP 3270/3270

EXP 674441

NEXT 27911

ATX 588 (668)

DEF 490 (515)

AGL 800 (823)

HIT 450 (470)

INT 388 ( )

< Magic Attribute > : Earth

< Magic > : Sand needle (Earth, Attack)

Sand Wave (Earth, Attack)

Sand Armor (Earth, Support)

Sand Guard (Earth, Support)

Desert Storm (Earth, Attack)

Red Idol (Earth)

< Title > : < Ashura Tribe > | < One who lives with the Desert > |  
< Monster Slayer > | < Sage > | < Easy-Going > | < Dual Katana  
User > | < Red Sand > | < Chief of the < Ashura Tribe > > | < One  
who inherits their Father's Will > | < Lightning Speed >

(《称号》 アスラ族・砂漠と共に生きる者・魔物殺し・達人・の  
んびり屋・双刀使い・赤砂・アスラ族の長・父の意思を継ぐ子・電

光石火)

-----

(E: Changed the format to look more appealing? Changed the titles for consistency)

Hihiro was surprised for a bit that Camus was at level 85. However, Camus did not possess long range attacks in the superhuman class like Liliyn. There was something that's interesting in his parameters though.

(As expected, Speed is essential..) (Hihiro)

Furthermore, Camus was not even serious ,yet, He was able to see Liliyn's movement. That alone is already troublesome. Compared to Hihiro's level of 76, there was a clear difference in speed. There was over 200 points difference. Honestly, he was not someone that Hihiro could beat.

Though his attacks are not so strong, his agility is high. As he obtained the <Lightning Speed> title, that alone already explained quite a lot. Although Hihiro has already amassed quite a number of spells, Camus' magic has advantage over the earth. Hihiro wore a wry smile.

(Fighting with an Earth Mage in the desert's gonna be a pain, huh..) (Hihiro)

Everything here can be his weapon. Hihiro made sure not to forget that distance didn't matter here. Camus would probably have a way to control the sand.

Hihiro thought that this was gonna be a tough fight. For now, he prepared himself by erasing the <Magic Words> he installed on Mikazuki.

Hihiro could only set a maximum of 5 words. It was important to install them before the fight began. Liliyn stared in his direction with a face full of intrigue. It couldn't be helped if she's interested.

For now, the priority is to win this fight. Hihiro installed <Word

Magic > on his arms. Then, something suddenly occurred to him.

(Maybe, I can use this desert..) (Hiiro)

“We’ll start soon.” (Jin-u)

Jin-u appeared in front of the two as they both nodded. Camus seems prepared. He unsheathes his twin blades as he took a defensive stance.

Watching those two, Liliyn and Sivan exchange opinions.

“Which one do you think’s gonna win ?” (Sivan)

“Who knows? Their power is quite similar.” (Liliyn)

“Then, Camus who has the geographical advantage will be superior.” (Sivan)

“I wonder about that.”(Liliyn)

“Mu ?” (Sivan)

“Certainly, he looks no more than an arrogant <Imp>.” (Liliyn)

“Isn’t that obvious ?” (Sivan)

Probably, this sentiment was shared by everyone as well.

“But, he’s... interesting.” (Liliyn)

“Hoh, that’s rare. Wait, no. There’s no way you would bring normal people. Are you saying that there’s something special with that youngster ?” (Sivan)

Liliyn simply grinned.

“See it for yourself.” (Liliyn)

“Mu..” (Sivan)

“Even if everyone believes that boy is at a disadvantage, when the fight starts, you will be surprised.” (Liliyn)

Seeing her laugh, Sivan sharpened his sense in order to feel the “surprise” she talked about.

Hihiro unsheathed his sword as the two glared at each other.

“I... Will ..Correct you...My Family..Are not.. Idiots..” (Camus)

“I don’t care about that.” (Hihiro)

“Eh ?”(Camus)

“Right now, we’re determining which one is stronger...right ? If you want to deny it, then prove me wrong, twin blade style.” (Hihiro)

“You.. Will regret it...” (Camus)

“Sure you will.” (Hihiro)

“Guh..You will.” (Camus)

“I will not.” (Hihiro)

“You will definitely..” (Camus)

“There’s no reason to.” (Hihiro)

“There is....” (Camus)

“Ahem !” (Jin-u)

(E: Twin Blade Style, AKA Nitouryuu, is Hihiro’s nickname for Camus.)

Jin-u cleared his throat to stop them from bickering.

“Listen. The fight will be decided when one side gets knocked out (KO) or surrenders. Any objections ?” (Jin-u)

“None.” (Hihiro and Camus)

The two answered in harmony. Jin-u nodded as he took a deep breath. Everyone gulped. The fight with their honor at stake will

begin. The winner proves their statement right. The loser will have to bitterly accept. Staking that, they will fight. And then, to start the fight...

“Begin !” (Jin-u)

## Chapter 89: Hiiro vs Camus

The first one to move was Hiiro. As he was able to predict his opponent's attacks to some extent, Hiiro acted in order to obtain the first move.

As Hiiro's right hand was already holding onto his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』, he had instantly reduced the time required to attack. However, Camus had clearly captured Hiiro's movements in his field of view. Although he had acted slower than Hiiro, as he held his katana in a similar fashion, Camus gripped it with great force as he had also instantly drawn his weapon.

\*Kiiiiiiiin!\*(1)

As the two blades clashed, sparks began to fly. However, the colliding swords were only one on each side. Camus still had a single sword left in his other hand. While maintaining the blade deadlock, Camus moved in an attempt to pierce Hiiro with his other sword.

As Hiiro had predicted this attack, he immediately jumped back as he took distance from his opponent. Following this, Hiiro promptly applied force onto his foot in attempt to strike again. However, his right foot became buried into the sand with a \*zubo\*.

Hiiro: 「Tch-!」

A battle atop of unfamiliar sand, as opposed to one on firm ground, was far more difficult than Hiiro had anticipated. Should his application of force be improper, his foot would be consumed by the sand.

Camus: 「The sand is...alive.」

As Camus faintly spoke, this time it was he who had instantaneously moved from that spot. However, unlike Hiiro, there was no wasted movement. His speed was so great, it would make one forget that they were not fighting on top of sand.

As Camus was approaching Hiiro's chest, he instantly held up his sword in order to defend against the attack. However, Camus swung both swords with brute force. Although Hiiro had successfully deflected the attack, whether it was caused by his lack of a good foot hold or his inability to take the full brunt of the attack, Hiiro was sent flying, rolling across the ground.

Hiiro immediately got up and faced forwards, yet, Camus was no longer there. All he could see was a shadow swiftly approaching him.

Hiiro: (What in the hell...above!?)

Sure enough, Camus had jumped up into the sky, falling towards Hiiro while trying to pierce him with his katana. He applied great force into his foot in an attempt to move away from his current location, yet, he once again felt his feet become buried in the sand.

Hiiro: (Damn! It's difficult to move!)

At this rate, I'll be skewered, or so Hiiro thought. As he had no choice, Hiiro activated one of the previously installed words, 「Protect」 | 『防』. Immediately, a pale magic wall was born, covering Hiiro.

\*Bashin-!\*(2)

As Camus' sword was deflected by the wall, his body was blown away, as if it was repelled. While shocked, Camus rotated his body round and round while in midair before making a superb landing.

Sivan: 「J-just now...!?」

Liliyn: 「Kukuku(3).」

As Sivan was startled by Hiiro's method of defense, Liliyn emitted a beaming smile. The two's responses contrasted greatly(4).

Sivan: 「Was that magic just now? No, there were no signs of any magical attribute...in which case...」

Sivan recalled that Jin-u received something that seemed to be

magic. As he remembered, he realised that even at that time, there was no presence of any sort of magical attribute.

Sivan: 「 In other words, it has no attribute...right? 」

Liliyn: 「 Kuku, as expected, you noticed it Sivan. 」

Sivan: 「 I knew that you wouldn't go on a journey with just any ordinary fellow. Even so, to think you'd be travelling with a Unique Magic user is quite a shock. 」

Liliyn: 「 The fun part has still yet to come. 」

Although he raised his eyebrows in reaction to Liliyn's suggestive words, as she was unlikely to answer anymore questions due to the current atmosphere, Sivan simply decided to look ahead.

Camus glared at the pale barrier covering Hihiro with a dubious look. As he was confused at his own attack being so outrightly deflected, Camus took some distance.

Hihiro: (Fuu(5), that was dangerous. This fight is more difficult than I had anticipated. To think I'd be made to use the word 「 Protect 」 | 『 防 』 so soon.)

Although he was able to prevent incoming attacks for one minute, as he was also unable to participate in close combat, it was a risk. The defensive wall repels any opponents that get close to it. Well, if his purpose was to perform a body blow, then it would be sufficient.

Hihiro: (There doesn't seem to be too much damage...)

However, there are many things one can do within the time limit of one minute. Hihiro concentrated magic in his fingertip in an attempt to write words. Noticing these actions, Camus' eyebrows twitched as he grew wary.

Camus: 「 What you are trying to do.....I won't let you. 」

As he returned his twin katanas into their sheaths, Camus held his hand towards the ground.



Camus: 「 Sand Needle. 」

In doing so, the sand near his feet began to form multiple needles, all aimed at Hiiro. If one were to take such an attack directly, it would be no different than trying to hug a huge cactus.

Hiiro: (As I thought, he's an earth, no, a sand user...)

However, Hiiro did not move. The reason for this being-

\*Bashin Bashin Bashiiiiin!\* (6)

As the effect of the 「Protect」 | 『防』 word was still fresh and strong, Hiiro used it to protect his body from the onslaught of sand needles. As the approaching needles returned to their original smoothness, they simply dispersed.

Camus: 「 Nn...hard. 」

As Camus viewed the scene, he voiced his impressions as if he were muttering.

Camus: 「 Then how about...this. 」

Camus made an underarm throw, moving his right arm with large movements. It looked as if he were trying to scoop something up. As he did so, the sand in front of him bulged upwards, hanging high in the air as if it were a tsunami attempting to assault Hiiro.

Camus: 「 .....Sand Wave. 」

Hiiro: (Indeed, this is beyond him just having the geographical advantage.)

As the waves of sand came pouring down before his eyes, Hiiro turned towards the tsunami and started running towards it.

Camus watched on behind the wave as he was convinced that it would inflict a large amount of damage. However, at this time, a hole in the shape of a circle burst out of the central portion of the sand wave. Hiiro jumped out of said hole.

Camis: 「Wha-!？」

As Camus had not expected Hiiro to avoid the wave of sand, much less penetrate it, he was stunned.

Hiiro: 「5, 4, 3, 2...one minute.」

As he said thus, the defensive wall that enveloped Hiiro began to disappear. As he had counted to a minute after the activation time, even though it disappeared, Hiiro was unperturbed. Rather, Hiiro used the time limit to repel his opponents attack while approaching him, causing Camus to grow agitated.

While he poised his 『Thorn Sword - Piercer』, Hiiro rushed forward, unleashing a thrust. As the defensive wall had disappeared, Hiiro was now capable of attacking.

Hiiro: 「Gotcha!」

Hiiro launched an attack that seemed as if it would penetrate Camus' lowered guard. However, at that time-

\*Shun-!\*(7)

Hiiro's katana was completely unable to penetrate its designated target. What it had pierced through was simply air.

Hiiro: (It failed-!? Where'd he go?)

In that instance, sand began to dance in midair with a \*parapara\*(8). As it appeared in Hiiro's line of sight, he looked up, thinking that his opponent had jumped up in the air. However, his eyes saw no-one.

Hiiro: 「...eh?」

As he felt a chill run down his spine, Hiiro detected a presence behind him.

Camus: 「Above...you thought I jumped?」

This time, it was Hiiro who was caught completely off guard.

Hiiro: (Shit!)

Immediately activating the previously installed word, 「Speed」 | 『速』 and escaped from his current location. As he jumped without concern for his posture, Hiiro tumbled to the ground, rolling around with a \*gorogoro\*(9).

However, as he had avoided Camus' sword strike from behind, Hiiro deemed it to be a satisfactory result.

Camus: 「.....suddenly...got faster?」

As Hiiro's speed became equivalent to his own, Camus was startled. Not understanding how his speed had suddenly increased, Camus was wary as to not approach Hiiro carelessly.

As Hiiro was Hiiro, thinking that he might have been slashed caused unpleasant perspiration to form on his back.

Hiiro: (Fuu, that was pretty dangerous just now, huh. However, that bastard...)

Hiiro wondered why Camus wasn't above him when he had thought he had taken to skies. Hiiro reasoned that Camus had probably bent down quickly, thrown sand towards the sky, and jumped towards the side all at the same time.

As Hiiro saw the sand soaring into the sky, he presumed that it was the sand produced from Camus' soles when he jumped. However, it was a ploy derived by Camus in order to make Hiiro lower his guard.

Hiiro: 「Seems that you've got a pretty sharp brain, Nitouryuu(10).」

Camus: 「If I can use sand.....I am strong.」

While tensing his chest, Camus boasted. However, it was as he had indicated. As Hiiro had faced many predicaments because of it, he could only tense his body.

Hiiro: (Guess it's about time for me to start, huh.....)

Thinking thus, Hihiro returned his katana to its scabbard, gathering magic into his fingertip as he began to write words. Following this, he fired them straight into his feet.

Hihiro: (That's number 2 .....next is.....)

Once again, Hihiro began to write words. This time, however, Hihiro pointed his finger towards Camus.

Camus: 「...?」

Camus, warned by Hihiro's actions, became defensive. Following which, Hihiro leaped, moving to an area just above Camus. And then-

Hihiro: 「Take this!」

Hihiro unleashed the word on to Camus.

Camus: (This is.....what he used on Jin-u?)

Camus remembered his comrade Jin-u having his movements stopped by Hihiro's strange attack. Therefore, as he thought that he must absolutely not allow himself to get hit by it, Camus jumped backwards from his spot. The words stuck onto the spot where Camus was at previously.

Seeing this, Hihiro clicked his tongue audibly enough for Camus to hear as he descended onto the ground.

Hihiro: 「You're not bad. It doesn't seem like you'll be hit by that.」

Camus: 「Nn(11).....a little while ago, Jin-u.....had trouble.」

Hihiro: 「Fun(12). Guess that means you're not an idiot.」

Following this, Camus sheathed his katana as he narrowed his eyes.

Camus: 「Next...interesting thing...I'll show you.」

Hihiro: 「Nn?」

Camus placed his right hand on the ground.

Camus: 「 .....Sand Armor - Type - Gauntlet. 」

Following this, the sand moved, enveloping Camus' right hand. Camus was now wearing a gauntlet made of extremely hardened sand. As it was only his right hand that had become armed, it was swollen several times, to the point that it looked uncomfortable. It was as if the hand belonged to a golem or giant.

Camus: 「 .....Sand Needle 」

Hiiro: 「 Tch-!! 」

Spikes of sand started flying towards Hiiro. Hiiro immediately jumped to the side. However, Camus suddenly headed to towards him in that direction. It seems that Hiiro had moved accordingly to Camus' speculations.

Hiiro: 「 Shi-...!? 」

Camus: 「 ...this is the end! 」

\*Dogon-!\*(13)

Hiiro: 「 Gah-!? 」

Hiiro was sent splendidly flying by the fist armed with sand. He received an impact that seemed to instantly blow his consciousness away. Bright red blood spewed out of his mouth. As if he were a stone skipping on water, Hiiro bounced up and down before hitting a big sand pile.

\*Dogaan-!\*

Hiiro: 「 Gaha-! 」

As he fell to the ground, a large amount of sand came raining down from above. Seeing that, Camus made a slight guts pose. The children started bouncing around in delight as they shared the same sentiment.

Liliyn faced the direction in which Hiiro was launched, wearing a sulky expression as she simply stared. Seeing such an expression,

Sivan began to unleash words with a smile.

Sivan: 「Hoh hoh hoh(14). It looks like the match's been decided.」

Presumably due to the fact that his friend had won, Sivan spoke his feelings with joy.

Shamoe: 「Feeeee~!(15) Hiiro-samaa(16)!」

As Shamoe's entire body trembled, she worried about Hiiro's well-being. Yet, Silva and Liliyn simply stared in the direction that Hiiro had flown off in.

Silva: 「Ojou-sama(17).」

Liliyn: 「Aah, that bastard's trying to do something.」

Sivan: 「Nn? Did you say something?」

Sivan asked thus.

Liliyn: 「Aah, the fun part's coming up so look carefully.」

Sivan: 「.....ha? The match is already-」

Liliyn: 「You've aged, Sivan. His fighting spirit has yet to waver. Rather...」

\*Dogon-!\*

As the mound of sand vigorously burst apart, Hiiro appeared with ragged breathing, his face distorted in pain.

Liliyn: 「There, see? Although it was unlikely for him to give up against an attack of that degree, it's good to see that he's still plenty motivated.」

Sivan: 「Impossible...he received Camus' blow head on...」

Liliyn: 「He instantly jumped back and escaped the full brunt of the attack. Even so, it looks like he received quite a considerable amount of damage. Kukuku.」

After heaving a large sigh, Liliyn stared at Hiiro, who had re-established his breathing.

Liliyn: (Now, show it to me. Show me what you were trying to do just then.)

## Notes:

1. \*Kiiin\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*plink\*. Think of the sound that swords make when they clash.
2. \*Bashin\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*deflect\*. It's the sound of the force field repelling attacks.
3. Kukuku: Liliyn's snicker.
4. TL Note: Japanese here is 対称的な二人. Literally means symmetrical people. However, it's a phrase used to indicate that two people are asymmetrical. (I think? If anyone knows better, please tell me. I just learnt it from here: [http://detail.chiebukuro.yahoo.co.jp/qa/question\\_detail/q13115269338](http://detail.chiebukuro.yahoo.co.jp/qa/question_detail/q13115269338))
5. Fuu: 'Phew'
6. Refer to Note 2 [<http://xcrossj.blogspot.com/2015/04/konjiki-no-moji-tsukai-chapter-89.html#ref-2>].
7. \*Shun\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*shoom\*. Think of the sound wind makes as it rushes past you (ie. someone running past you).
8. \*Parapara\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*pitter-patter\*. Similar to rain, I guess?
9. \*Gorogoro\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*tumble\*.
10. Nitouryuu: Hiiro's nickname for Camus. Literally means 'Dual Blade User'.
11. Nn: A Japanese expression denoting affirmation/confusion.
12. Fun: 'Hmph.'
13. \*Dogan\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thump\* (I think). Basically, the sound of a large impact.
14. Hoh hoh hoh: Sivan's laugh.
15. Fee~: Shamoe's expression of confusion. (For those that love to point this out, it is different to Rishia's Fue. Rishia: ふゎ | Shamoe: ふゎ.)
16. -sama: A suffix used to show respect to the one addressed.

Very formal and used to address someone of higher position (eg. A maid addressing her Master).

17. Ojou-sama: A term used to refer to a female of high status.  
Alt Trans: 'My Lady' | 'Mistress'.



## Chapter 90 : The Conclusion !

Camus thought that he had finished Hiiro. However, it seems that his attacks were too shallow. In which case, he will just attack again. However, this time, he would make sure he would get a direct hit. That's what Camus thought while staring at Hiiro.

Yet, seeing Hiiro's eyes, Camus changed his mind. There was a thirst for blood dwelling within Hiiro's eyes. Camus assumed that Hiiro wouldn't fall for the same attack twice. Hiiro's eyes conveyed that if Camus were to approach him, Hiiro would make him regret it. It was true that, as long as Camus had not confirmed the identity of Hiiro's magic, it would be dangerous to focus on close-quarters combat.

“Approaching....Dangerous ? Then, with my sand...I will finish it !”  
(Camus)

The sand on Camus' right hand scattered as it fell onto the ground. After seeing that Camus had no intention of approaching him, Hiiro faintly smiled.

(It was effective..however, I have also made my preparations as well. This time, I will let you taste my true power.) (Hiiro)

He wrote <Speed> twice, activating them consecutively in order to create a synergetic effect.

Hiiro flew straight towards Camus. However, Camus pressed his hand onto the ground.

“How bold....Here I go.” (Camus)

Camus discharged his magic power. He intended to use the same magic, yet, it seemed like the situation didn't turn out as he had expected.

“...eh ?” (Camus)

sfx ; Shi~n !

The sand wouldn't listen to him. There was no response at all. Then, he suddenly felt something odd with the sand underneath his feet.

(The sand... is hard?) (Camus)

He touched the sand with the tip of his toes in order to confirm it. As expected, he could feel that the sand had become harder than he had expected. It was similar to the dirt found on normal ground. As Camus was bewildered by the sudden change in the sand, Hiiro had already approached him.

Sfx : Dosu !

“Kaha-!?” (Camus)

Using the momentum from the rush, Hiiro punched Camus in the stomach. Camus let out a big breath due to the sudden attack he received.

“Confirm your footing clearly, Nitoryuu?” (Hiiro)

“Gu....?” (Camus)

While holding his belly, Camus attempted to leave that place immediately. However, Hiiro pursued him as he tried to land the final blow.

(Ku...compared to before...it's faster !?) (Camus)

Camus was reduced into a state of panic. This frenzy was caused not only by Hiiro's abnormal speed boost, but because Camus was no longer able to use his sand for his magic.

Sfx : Baki-!

This time, it was Camus who got blown away by Hiiro's punch to his face. He tried to rotate his body in order to safely descend. However, the moment Camus landed, in front of him was Hiiro's fist.

Sfx : Dogo- !

Upon receiving another blow to his stomach, Camus once again released a large breath.

(Why.. is he..so fast ?) (Camus)

Seeing Hiiro's sudden change, Camus grinded his teeth as he thought Hiiro was going easy on him until now. He thought, at this rate, he was going to get beaten up as much as Hiiro desired. For now, he needed to place a large distance between them first.

After he escaped, Camus took out his katanas as the pain in his stomach distorted his face. However, in the very next moment, the blade was pulled by something.

“-!?” (Camus)

The source of the pull was coming from the ground below. However, there was nothing there but the sand on the ground. Camus thought the reason the katana fell into the ground was because he hadn't gripped it strongly enough. Camus hurriedly tried to pull it out of the sand, however, it seemed that its weight increased considerably.

“You sure it's alright to look away ?” (Hiiro)

When Camus quickly turned his head, Hiiro's kick imminently approached. Then-

Sfx : Doga-!

“Gaha-!?” (Camus)

Being kicked in the face, Camus was launched off into the distance. He tumbled across the sand, just like Hiiro had before. Blood flowed from his mouth. He was unable to stand straight. Hiiro faintly smiled as he spoke say..

“I told you, right ? Watch your footing.” (Hiiro)

“...eh ?” (Camus)

In the next instance-

Sfx : bushubushubushu-!

“T-That’s.. this is...My...?” (Camus)

Numerous sand needles appeared from under Camus’ feet. Camus realized that it was just like the magic he had used before. While he was trying to figure out how Hiiro was capable of using it, Camus received several wounds on his body.

One sand needle directed itself at Camus’ neck. It didn’t stop at his neck, rather it was stopped from reaching his neck. Where it to continue its path, Camus would have undoubtedly died.

Camus stood shocked as he had no idea what was even going on anymore. He had already sustained countless wounds on his body. He did not have his katanas. Furthermore, due to the last attack, he no longer had any strength left.

“It’s...my defeat..” (Camus)

Not only Camus, but everyone who observed the fight were shocked by the results, their mouths gaping wide. It was as if time had stopped. Following this, Hiiro spoke softly...

“It’s.....my win.” (Hiiro)

In that moment, the match had truly reached a conclusion.

(Fuuh. Seems like it went well...) (Hiiro)

This time, the fight proceeded as Hiiro had planned.

First, Hiiro would confirm what Camus would use the sand. In doing so, his primary objective would be to analyze precisely what Camus would react. That’s why Hiiro confronted Camus’ katanas with his own. He wanted to understand Camus’ movements and thoughts.

Following this, as Hiiro couldn’t simply allow himself to receive Camus’ magic head on, he planned on using the word <Protect> in order to grasp the magic’s casting intervals and special characteristics. However, since the footing was worse than he

expected, Hiiro was unexpectedly forced to use the <Protect> word earlier.

As Hiiro had somehow succeeded in agitating Camus enough to make him use his magic. Using the word <Protect> to defend, Hiiro was able to identify a flaw in Camus' magic while successfully lowering his guard. It was at this time when Camus used his magic tsunami. (XJ: No. This is not the skill name. Raw : それが津波のような土の魔法の時である。)

At that time, Hiiro wrote a word and shot it below Camus' feet. As it was an installation word, it disappeared, absorbed by the ground. Hiiro then cut through the tsunami and rushed towards Camus. However, to Hiiro's genuine surprise, Camus avoided his attack.

Even though Hiiro attacked from an opening in Camus' defences, Camus managed to avoid it. Hiiro then wrote another word and, once again, shot it under Camus' foot. This was the second installed word.

Afterwards, Hiiro wrote another word and jumped right above Camus. The word was aimed and shot at Camus. However, he managed to avoid it as the words disappeared into the ground once again. This was the third and final word installed. In actuality, Hiiro clicked his tongue in order to prevent Camus from realizing what he was doing. Hiiro thought that if he appeared to be frustrated due to the fact that he missed, Camus would lower his guard.

At that moment, Hiiro thought that everything was in order. He didn't expect Camus to counter attack. Receiving an attack from the Sand Armor, Hiiro was almost rendered unconscious. He swore to pay him back in full.

The next phase of the plan depended on timing. Yet, by some luck, Camus decided to use a long-range attack after looking into Hiiros eyes. It seemed that Hiiro's act of pouring the feelings of 'do not come closer' into his eyes was effective. In addition, Hiiro could only grin as he saw the place where Camus was standing. The reason for this was because that was the spot where Hiiro had placed the trap.

He immediately activated one of the installation words, <Solid>. The sand suddenly hardened. It seemed that Camus wanted to use his best move, yet, the sand would not respond to him.

The reason for this was because the sand around Camus was no longer the sand he was familiar with. It was essential to be able to form an imagine when magic. It seemed that Camus' magic allowed him to control the sand freely. However, as he could not imagine how to control sand as solid as concrete, Camus' magic misfired.

Magic is the process to completely understand and operate a phenomenon. However, Camus was unable to understand the state of the sand at that time. As a result, he was unable to move the sand. Of course, it was still sand. If Camus understood its true nature, he might have been able to move it. (XJ: Mahouka Koukou no Reitousei?)

However, as Camus still had some MP remaining, he was confused as to why his magic misfired. Since he couldn't calm down and analyze the situation, he was rendered unable to manipulate the sand.

Given this chance, Hiiro intended to pay Camus back for the attack he received a while ago. He used two <Speed> words to create a synergetic effect and rush in to punch Camus in his abdomen.

Of course, Camus definitely attempted to escape. However, Hiiro attacked Camus in order to corner him into the place that Hiiro had prepared earlier before he launched another attack. When he escaped to that place, Camus should feel something unnatural happening to his katanas. Because of that, the katanas fell to the ground.

That was to be expected, Hiiro had used the word <Magnetic>. Camus felt that his katanas were being sucked into the ground. If it was the normal Camus, he wouldn't have dropped it. However, as he had taken damage, his strength was depleted. Being unable to maintain a strong grip on the katanas, Camus helplessly lost against the magnetic force. As expected, he managed to deprive Camus of his katanas.

Then, in order to deliver the final blow, Hihiro attack him once more. Of course, Camus was launched to the place Hihiro wanted.

This time, the word <Needle> was invoked. The reason Hihiro wanted to use this was because Camus was a practitioner of sand magic. Hihiro wanted to harass Camus by casting a spell identical to his own. Hihiro judged that it would reduce Camus' fighting spirit. As a result, it had somehow turned out well. Hihiro had won. All according to plan.

## Chapter 91: Camus's Resolve

“Well...”

Jin-u, the observer, stared at the situation with his eyes wide open in surprise. He turned his head slowly toward Hiiro.

“Oi, it’s over” (Hiiro)

“N-no way...chief...” (Jin-u)

“Are you listening?” (Hiiro)

“Chief...” (Jin-u)

He doesn’t seem to be listening at all.

“...Huh, guess I’ve no choice.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro shrugged as he sheathed his sword. He then slowly moved towards Camus. The sand needles that surrounded Camus faded back into the ground. Camus, who seemed to be supported by the needles, collapsed on to his knees.

“Oi.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Camus)

Camus lifted his face and made eye contact with Hiiro. His face was expressionless as usual, yet, his eyes were clouded with tears. It was certain that he was still mortified by his loss.

“Disappointed?” (Hiiro)

“...Mortified.” (Camus)

“Well, that’s because I’m strong” (Hiiro)

“I’m...also strong” (Camus)

“Even so, you lost to me.” (Hiiro)



“I...I wasn’t serious yet.” (Camus)

“Even so. The one who lost this battle was you.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Camus)

Hiiro picked up the pair of swords nearby and tossed it back to Camus.

“You said it before, right? You’ll protect your tribe.” (Hiiro)

“.....un...” (Camus)

“That includes all of the children that adore you as well, right?” (Hiiro)

“Of course.” (Camus)

“But if you keep going like this, they’ll die in the near future.” (Hiiro)

“N-no way! I’ll protect them!” (Camus)

“Even though you lost to me?” (Hiiro)

“That...that’s because...that...” (Camus)

Unable to come up with a reasonable excuse, Camus lowered his head.

“You’re not protecting them.” (Hiiro)

“...eh?” (Camus)

“Even if you say you’re protecting them, all you are doing is putting them in danger.” (Hiiro)

“...then what should I...do?” (Camus)

“Don’t be naive. Think for yourself.” (Hiiro)

“ ... ”

As Camus responded while wearing a depressed expression, Hiiro could not stand seeing him in such a state. He began to involuntarily speak what was on his mind.

“If it were me...I would eliminate any and all obstacles standing in my way.” (Hiiro)

“Eliminate...obstacles? All of them?” (Camus)

Camus looked at Hiiro with a startled expression.

“Aa, all of them. I’m a greedy person. I’ll take what I want and I won’t give it to anyone. Therefore, I won’t let anyone take anything away from me. By doing this, I will protect everything” (Hiiro)

Hiiro and Camus looked at each other. The silence between them lasted for a moment. Then, unlike before, Camus’ eyes lit up with life.

“.....Name, can you tell it to me?” (Camus)

“.....Hiiro. Hiiro Okamura” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro...Hiiro...it’s Hiiro. Un...I’ll remember it.” (Camus)

Camus looked at Hiiro with a sincere expression.

“I’m...Camus” (Camus)

“I know. But you’ll be called twin-blade.” (Hiiro)

“Muh...Call me Camus” (Camus)

“I refuse. If you want to be called that, then make me recognize you” (Hiiro)

“Recognize...?” (Camus)

At that moment, two children from the crowd ran towards the two.

“Camus Camus~!” (Child A)

“Are you okay?” (Child B)

“Kora~. Your next opponent is me !” (Child C)

The children, wanting to protect Camus, stood between the two as they glared at Hiiro with animosity.

“Chief, are you okay?” (Child C)

“Un. You guys...should stop.” (Camus)

Camus scolded the children

“Eh, but, but-!” (Child A)

“That is right. He bullied Camus Camus!” (Child B)

“Uun. It’s fine...Hiiro is...a guest” (Camus)

The children looked at Camus with a blank expression

“Nh? Is that so?” (Child A)

“If Camus Camus says so, then...” (Child B)

“I-I guess so...” (Child C)

The children seem to reluctantly accept Camus’s response. However, one of the children still glared at Hiiro as they spoke.

“G-got it!? Camus Camus said it’s okay, bu~t don’t get cocky.” (Child B)

“Shut up, brat!” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro returned the glare, the children cried “Hyi!” (TL: fearful/childish “Oh Crap!”) before hiding behind Camus.

“It seems like we’ve finally arrived at a conclusion.” (Sivan)

As Sivan spoke, Liliyn also reacted.

“But, as expected of the 《Red Rose》. To find someone like that. I wasn’t expecting Camus to lose.” (Sivan)

“Hmph. I told you before, right? That you’ll be able to see something interesting.” (Liliyn)

“Hoh Hoh Hoh, that seems to be the case, huh.” (Sivan)

Sivan turned to face Hiiro as he spoke.

“That aside, ever since I met him, I’ve felt something strange coming from him. Who exactly is he?” (Sivan)

“I have no obligation to tell you.” (Liliyn)

“I also...want to know.” (Camus)

Camus, whose eyes sparkled(KiraKira) with child-like curiosity, had unknowingly appeared beside her, surprising the two.

“About Hiiro...can...you tell me?” (Camus)

“...I refuse. I’ll think about when you are also recognized by me.” (Liliyn)

Camus lowered his eyebrows regretfully. However, he made a declaration.

“Nn...I’ll make sure to hear it someday.” (Camus)

It seems that Camus had decided on something. However, Hiiro simply looked at Camus with an amazed expression as he let out a sigh. Liliyn then slipped closer to Hiiro and spoke in a small voice, similar to a whisper.

“As expected, you really are interesting.” (Liliyn)

“...I don’t know what you’re talking about.” (Hiiro)

This time, although Hiiro was annoyed by the fact that he had to improvise throughout the fight, he had inadvertently allowed Liliyn to see him use his magic several times as a result. Knowing her, she was most likely able to grasp the characteristics of Hiiro’s 《Word Magic》.

(Well, she doesn't seem like someone that would reveal someone else's secrets. Although it's irritating having her watch me all the time, I guess I can let it go) (Hiiro)

With that decided, everyone returned to the Oasis.

"Hi,H-H-H-Hiiro-sama! I am so glad you are safe!" (Shamoe)

"Nofofofofo! As expected from Hiiro-sama! I believed in you, Nofofofofo!" (Silva)

As he thought they were too noisy, Hiiro looked at Shamoe and Silva who were making a ruckus. Hiiro wanted to relax and rest near the bank of the lake when he returned to the Oasis, yet, the impression of the last battle was so vivid in the mind of the two that they began to ramble about it.

"Shamoe...Shamoe...when you were sent flying, Shamoe's heart almost stopped!" (Shamoe)

"Nofofofofo! When that happened, I too almost forgot to breath!" (Silva)

"It would have been great if you died like that, though."(Liliyn)

"So harsh! Those words are too severe, Mistress! Nofofofofo!" (Silva)

Hiiro thought that it was excessively noisy as he covered his ears. Thinking that he'd have to deal with these three throughout his journey, Hiiro began to feel a queasy sensation in the pit of his stomach as he exasperatingly sighed.

"Hiiro...for a little bit...can I talk to you?" (Camus)

Camus approach Hiiro alone.

"What is it?" (Hiiro)

"I've...decided" (Camus)

"...decided what?" (Hiiro)

“I will...also protect” (Camus)

“Protect what?” (Hiiro)

“Everything. I’m also...greedy.” (Camus)

Listening to the response, Hiiro involuntarily grinned.

“Have you told this to anyone else?” (Hiiro)

“I told Jii-chan. Jii-chan said...charge forward with...what I want to do.” (Camus)

“I see.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked at Camus’s face. He was clearly older than Hiiro, yet, in Hiiro’s eyes, he was still immature. No one would believe that a juvenile like Camus would be the chief of a tribe.

However, in reality, Camus currently holds the fate of his tribe within his hands. Such a Camus has now made a decision. In addition, the cause of that decision was undoubtedly himself. This was something that both Hiiro and Camus understood clearly.

“...Then, are you going to do it?” (Hiiro)

“Un....I...we will...defeat the monster of the desert” (Camus)

Indeed, it was something that they had agreed on. Protect everyone. There is a monster in the desert that can attack at any time. When it attacks, they would fight to escape and then find somewhere safe to reside in for a period of time. This was one way to protect his tribe. However there was always the chance that someone may get injured or killed during the monster’s assault. It was also clear that hiding in the shadows of monster would do nothing but hurt their pride and limit their possibilities.

In order to truly protect them, there was no choice but to eliminate the threat. If they couldn’t leave the desert yet still wanted to live in peace, then they had to get rid of a potential catastrophe.

That was the decision that Camus made in order to protect the

children's future. However, there was clearly some danger involved. Their opponent was a monster who absorbed the powers of the previous chief. Everyone was wary of the power that the previous chief possessed. If the Ashura group had participated in the battle, even with some risk, they might have been able to defeat it.

However, Camus, before today, was unwilling to take that risk as he would have to face a monster that resembled his father. But today, he had arrived at a decision. In order to protect the future of the tribe, he had to defeat that monster. Even though, the monster looked like him, it was not his father. Camus realized that the monster is a monster. He realized that through Hiiro. In order to protect the tribe, he needed to move forward. As he was told thus, he made this decision.

That aside, there was clearly a huge risk. Camus knew that if everyone fought the monster, then they would be able to defeat it somehow. However, there was a high chance that someone would get hurt or killed in the battle. Because of this, he faced Hiiro and spoke.

“Hiiro...lend me your strength.” (Camus)

## Chapter 92: United front

Camus looked at Hiiro. Honestly speaking, Hiiro had a hunch it might turn out like this after Camus had found the determination to take action. However, Hiiro closed his eyes and spoke.

“I have no obligation to help you.”(Hiiro)

“...Please”(Camus)

“Nope, no way. I do not work for free. Rather, why not ask that Baba-... I mean small person over there?”(Hiiro) [TL: Babaa – Hag, granny ]

“I can hear you, you bastard... How about I put you in an eternal sleep? Nn?”(Liliyn)

A monstrous killing intent assailed Hiiro. Hiiro hesitated, contemplating whether it was a mistake to correct himself by calling her small fellow.

“Although I don’t want to admit it, that person is strong. She can even clean up that monster without any problems.”(Hiiro)

“Oi, don’t drag me into this. Did you really think that I would bother with such a troublesome matter? No! I have no interest in monsters or anything of the sort! Therefore, I won’t even lift a finger! Kuhaha!” (Liliyn)

“Yo! As expected of Ojou-sama! Even saints would faint in front of such arrogance!” (Silva)

“Ojou-sama~! How splendid!” (Shamoe)

“Kuhahaha! Praise me more! Hahahahaha!” (Liliyn)

Watching her laugh loudly as she was praised by her attendants, Hiiro felt like he was getting a headache. He made a mental note to not become like her.



“Uun... I want Hiiro” (Camus)

“Nn? Me?” (Hiiro)

“Un.” (Camus)

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“Why.....Why?” (Camus)

“No, I’m the one asking here...” (Hiiro)

Camus tilted his head and blankly stared at Hiiro, Hiiro already understood what Camus was so perplexed about..

“Anyway, I will-” (Hiiro)

“Then, what should I do?” (Camus)

“Huh?” (Hiiro)

“What should I do..... to have you come with us?” (Camus)

“.....” (Hiiro)

Hiiro once again realized just how stubborn Camus was. As he did, he had a great idea

(Speaking of which, I just leveled up a lot. I want to try that out... but...)

Actually, when Hiiro won the battle against Camus, he gained a few levels .. Since Camus was of a higher level than Hiiro, he was able to get a lot of EXP from defeating him.

“Let’s see. How about you become my underling?” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Underling?” (Camus)

“Nah, I’m just joking.” (Hiiro)

“I will.” (Camus)

“Just a joke.....Huh?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro could only stare at Camus completely speechless. His eyes looked serious, if anything, it feels like they are sparkling in happiness, but it may just be Hiiro’s imagination..

“O-Oi...” (Hiiro)

“I will become... underling. So, your strength... lend it to me.”  
(Camus)

Hiiro completely meant it as a joke. Hiiro knew that having a tribe chief becoming an underling wouldn’t happen. So, Hiiro threw it out there to get some time to think of what to ask in exchange for his assistance.

However, when you looked in Camus’ eyes, one could clearly see that he was being serious.

“Hey now, you do understand, right? You, the chief, to become some random traveller’s underling, there is no way your tribe could agree with that, you know?” (Hiiro)

“Un... that’s right.” (Camus)

“Hey, don’t just say...’that is right’ ...” (Hiiro)

Whenever Hiiro had to deal with Camus, his pace would completely get thrown off.

“But... I decided to... be greedy.” (Camus)

“Huh?” (Hiiro)

“If it was only us...it’d be dangerous. But,... if Hiiro comes... the risk of us getting wounded... decreases.” (Camus)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“I will protect... everyone. In order to do that... I will use any means available. What Hiiro spoke of...greed... is just like that.”  
(Camus)

Normally, as a leader, their pride wouldn't even allow one to lower his head like this. It was hard to believe, that someone would be able to accept something like this so easily.

However, Camus was willing to take any means necessary in order to protect his tribe. Even if he has to throw away his position or pride and allow himself to be used by Hiiro, he was willing to accept it all to protect everything.

(Haha...this kind of foolish greed also existed, huh.)

It certainly was Hiiro who gave him that advice. However, Camus came out with an extremely direct interpretation of it. Hiiro couldn't help but laugh at how pure Camus was.

Seeing Hiiro grin slightly, Camus tilted his head sideways..

“Haha, man, you're quite an interesting guy, aren't you.” (Hiiro)

“...Really?” (Camus)

“Aa, let's go with that. However, will it be fine for you to decide to become my underling all by yourself? No, you talked about it with the blind old man, right?” (Hiiro)

“Un... but everyone will agree with it. After all... it's for peace.” (Camus)

Hiiro looked into Camus' eyes. They were totally sincere and not even a wisp of hesitation could be seen in them. He was simply driven by the desire to protect his tribe. Camus was completely different from the hesitant person before.

“Haha, you're quite an honest guy. ... Alright. With this, you will be my underling from now on.” (Hiiro)

“Really?” (Camus)

“Yes, it was quite unexpected, but I will take this as payment. I will also need to live up to your expectations. ”

Camus made a victory pose to Hiiro's positive answer. To Hiiro it

was fine either way. However if he rethinks about it again, he can obtain delicious food and obtain various information from them so it turned out to be an excellent trade. Another thing that put him into an accepting mood, was because he leveled up.

“Seems like you have finished talking.” (Sivan)

Looking for a gap to step in, Sivan walked over to the two. On his side, there were others of the Ashura tribe, including children.

“I talked with everyone. Though, there are some who still don’t agree.” (Sivan)

“That’s right! Why should Camus Camus become that guy’s underling!”

“Chief! We can handle the monster of the desert by ourselves!” (Jin-u)

One of the children and Jin-u complained, but Camus raises his hand to silence them.

“No... I already decided. When it comes to protecting everyone... I will do anything.” (Camus)

The Ashura watching Camus could feel his decisiveness and were unable to say any more. However, the children still said what they honestly thought.

“But, are you fine with that Camus Camus! Becoming that guys underling...” (Child A)

“That is right! Camus Camus is the tribe chief!” (Child B)

“Nn... It’s alright.” (Camus)

While saying that, Camus placed his hands on the children’s head.

“Hihiro is..... interesting”

The children were rendered speechless by Camus’ comment. Sivan was the only one smiling as he turned to Liliyn.

“Liliyn, your companion is lending his power but you aren’t going to?”(Sivan)

“Fun, why would I need to bother with such a troublesome task? In the case of monsters and the like, my minion Hiiro will be more than enough.” (Liliyn)

“Oi, who are you calling YOUR minion!?” (Hiiro)

“Nh? Hiiro is... her underling? Then, Am I also... her subordinate? Hmm? Eh?” (Camus)

Confused about how the relations worked out, numerous question marks floated above Camus’ head.

“But, are you fine with that?” (Sivan)

“With what, old man?” (Lilyin)

“The monster of the desert is really strong. I did see that youth’s ability, but I am still uneasy. After all, it has absorbed Camus’ father Rigund.” (Sivan)

“Fun, like I care about that.” (Liliyn)

“Oh, then what are you going to do if the youth happens to die? Isn’t he the object of your interest? If he dies, you’ll be bored again.” (Sivan)

Sivan says that to Liliyn, while rubbing his chin.

“Mu...Muu.” (Liliyn)

Lilyin deeply pondered what Sivan said. At long last she found something that interests her. Hiiro, what’s more she decided to follow him on his journey. Moreover, the journey had just begun. When Liliyn thought of losing her rare toy here, uneasiness flowed into her heart.

“I-it can’t be helped. Silva!” (Liliyn)

“Yes.” (Silva) [Butler]

“You’ll be helping them.” (Liliyn)

“Certainly.” (Silva) [Butler]

“Oo~h, as expected of the Red rose witch being so generous!”  
(Sivan)

“Hmpf, it’s a given! My heart is deeper than the sea!  
Kuhahahahaha!” (Liliyn)

Hearing Liliyn’s words Sivan did a small fist bump. Liliyn, who hadn’t notice that she had been manipulated by Sivan, was laughing in high spirits from the praise. Honestly speaking, Sivan wanted to have Liliyn lend her own strength, but judged that this was better than nothing.

(Besides, that butler... his existence feels strange like the youths. Well, he can’t be a common person as Liliyn has taken him to her side.) (Sivan)

Sivan thought he could increase the fighting force, and greatly increasing the odds of winning against the Desert monster. He felt relieved, that by stirring up Liliyn, he pulled Silva in as well.

“By the way, where’s the monster?” (Hiiro)

Jin-u expected the question and answered

“It lies in area called ‘Boulder desert’ east of here.”

Like its name implies, ‘Boulder desert’ is an area, where many huge rocks reside. Near it there’s an oasis where the Ashura tribe originally dwelled. And, one of the large rocks there is named ‘Grave Tower’ where the deceased sleep.

The [Grave Tower] was located a notable distance from the monster. But because there was a chance 1 in 10000 that the [Grave Tower] may be destroyed in battle with the monster. No one in the [Ashura Tribe] had the motivation to engage the monster.

“I see, because there are large rocks all over the places, we would be able to set up an ambush ” (Hiiro)

Sivan nods at Hiiro's analysis.

"It is certainly so. However, the monsters of the desert have troublesome abilities, and the Desert monster has absorbed many of them." (Jin-u)

"It's as Sivan says... but on top of that... the most difficult one... is dad's power." (Camus)

"Power? Do you mean magic?" (Hiiro)

"Yes. Same as... mine." (Camus)

Hiiro thought that it would be really dangerous. Not only does the monster have the abilities of many other desert monsters, but can use sand magic, which is advantageous in the current terrain. Because Hiiro fought against Camus, he fully understood its potential.

"...We should decide who will go." (Hiiro)

"Hohou, for what reason?" (Liliyn)

Liliyn admiringly asks for the reason behind Hiiro's decision.

"Hindrances only makes this harder." (Hiiro)

The Ashura was angry at Hiiro's statement. However, Liliyn gives a nod while grinning.

"Kukuku, won't you just obediently say that you can't protect everyone alone?" (Liliyn)

"Shut up. It isn't just that. Certainly numbers increases the strength, but that also depends on the enemy." (Hiiro)

"N... What do you mean?" (Camus)

Camus asked while he tilted his head.

"The monster can use the same magic as you, right? Using it in desert will be effective against both single and multiple targets with

all the sand. Also wasn't your father very skilled at using sand?" (Hiiro)

"Yes. Dad is... even more skilled at wielding it than I." (Camus)

"Then it's clear that even if we attack in a huge group there's a high risk for casualties before we can even deal any damage. And, it's not just the casualties that will be the problem but also having the shock of seeing someone close to you die. Even you, can you say that you will stay calm when you see the monster that has the appearance of your father wounding or killing your tribesmen?" (Hiiro)

"I don't know... if I can." (Camus)

Camus looked down and clenched his fist hard. Even if it isn't his father, seeing someone with the same appearance cut down your tribesmen one after another might, cause Camus to lose himself.

"That's the most troublesome aspect. Also, are there any others who may have the resolution to kill the monster with appearance of the former chief?" (Hiiro)

Hiiro's question caused a commotion in the Ashura. There were some who also turned pale. All of them have been indebted to Camus' father, and some have had their lives saved by him. Whether they could suppress their feelings and take the monster's life, is what worried Hiiro.

That is exactly why Hiiro judged that, they should decided who to take with them. If someone who hasn't made up his mind participates, they'll only turn into a liability.

"And there's one more thing. Among your people who are currently wounded, are there anyone with a strong will?" (Hiiro)

"Eh?... Yes." (Camus)

"But you still lost. In other words, the monster is stronger, and that is exactly why there shouldn't be any hesitation in killing it. Nitouryuu, didn't you say that you don't want your tribe to get harmed? Then, you should head out only with a small number of



people, in general your best. It's up to you to select the ones who are strong and are willing to confront the monster and return safely" (Hiiro)

"..... I understand. Everyone... are you still fine with this?" (Camus)

Camus turned to his tribe and asked. Listening to the talk, they were unable to hide their troubled expressions. They look at each other, and questioned themselves whether they can really kill Rigund.

Among them, there was one who immediately came out and knelt in front of Camus.

"Chief, I, Jin-u, have already prepared myself for this." (Jin-u)

"Jin-u..." (Camus)

"The previous chief... Rigund was a person whom I admired, and the one I desired to become like. But now, he must be suffering after having his mind corrupted from being turned into a monster. And, that can be said for the current chief as well. Since that happened, you were suffering all this time. I have entrusted my life to the chief from the beginning. Please use me however you see fit. Together let us free Rigund!" (Jin-u)

"...Jin-u... Thank you." (Camus)

He closed his eye momentarily, but it was only for a moment. Then, he stared directly at Jin-u

"But,... don't tell me to... use your life." (Camus)

"Chief..." (Jin-u)

"I... think you should take care of your own life. So... don't die, Jin-u" (Camus)

"... I understand." (Jin-u)

Watching the exchange between the two, the others also started to

show a will to participate. However, Camus refused them by shaking his neck.

“I have something... for everyone to do.” (Camus)

“Yes. The monster of the desert possesses an ability to call other Monsters. Your role will be to prevent them from getting near Camus’ group. Leave handling the monster-... Rigund to Camus and Jin-u.” (Sivan)

Each one of them reluctantly nodded to Sivan’s statement. However with this it seems to have been decided who will face the monster of the desert.

Afterwards, they spent some time figuring out the most effective way to fight and it ended off with Hiiro summarizing it all up.

“I’ll sum it up. For the ones who can fight, we’ll leave only a minimum number to defend here and the rest will go to the surrounding area of ‘Boulder desert’. There, we will engage the the monster. The ones who will be fighting the monster are me, The Old-Man, Nitouryuu and Topknot.” (Hiiro)

“T-top knot...?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u didn’t seem happy with the nickname. However, Hiiro continued with the explanation.

“The monster of the desert has the ability to call other monsters out, and if it ends up being used and other monsters come, the Ashura on the outside will take care of them. You got that?” (Hiiro)

Everyone nodded in agreement.

“Boy, you don’t need to worry. If they turn out to be useless, I will take care of the small fries” (Liliyn)

The Ashura become very motivated when Liliyn said so. They wanted to show her not to underestimate them

“What, you’ll be also coming along?” (Hiiro)

“Of course. I couldn’t be missing out on this interesting show, right? Kukuku.” (Liliyn)

“Fuhn, what a wicked loli.” (Hiiro)

“Sheesh. As usual this ba-baa is only driven by her own desires.” (Sivan)

“Did you kids say something?” (Liliyn)

For Liliyn to calls even this old man Sivan a kid. Just how long has she lived...

“U-um, um, um, what should Shamoe do...?” (Shamoe)

“Shamoe, you will stay safe behind me, and calm down” (Liliyn)

“Y-yes! I will do my best to to stay calm!” (Shamoe)

Even though Shamoe answered with great determination, she didn’t know the meaning of the words she used. She’ll only be a burden so she’s meant to just quietly stand by.

“Okay, if you are ready, let’s go.” (Hiiro)

## Chapter 93: A New Word Magic Ability....and Title.

A variety of large and small rocks were lying around. Despite calling them small, they were still about the size of a person, the larger ones being close to ten meters tall. Counting through them one by one would be an endless job, yet, the desert monster was lying somewhere among them.

Hiiro: (《Boulder desert》, huh... It's exactly like that.)

While endless number of rocks kept appearing in the distance, Hiiro was thinking of the battle strategy.

Hiiro: (First, we need to find the monster itself... however, before that-)

Hiiro noticed that he had leveled up after he won the fight against Camus. Because of this, he was currently wondering about whether his 《Word Magic》 had gained a new ability.

-----

Hiiro Okamura

Level 81

HP 1720/1725

MP 3000/3000

EXP 600976

NEXT 21707

ATX 504 (566)

DEF 405 (420)

AGL 637 (639)

HIT 356 (364)

INT 555 (559)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic ( | One Word Chain (Unlocked) | Air Writing (Unlocked) | Parallel Writing (Unlocked) | Two Word Chain (Unlocked) | Simultaneous Invocation (Unlocked) | Invocation Management (Unlocked) | Three Word Chain (Unlocked) |)

《Titles》 Innocent Bystander | World Traveller | Word Master | Awakened One | Ripper | The One Who Imagines | Killer of the Unique | Gourmet Bastard | One Who Follows His Own Path | Friend of the Fairies | Mikazuki's Owner | Monster Slayer | Wanderer | Lightning Speed | Sage | Little Girl Killer(1) | One Who is Skilled in Magic |(2)

-----

And so, as per expectations, Hihiro had gained new abilities. Hihiro chuckled to himself as he had determined that fighting Camus was the right choice.

However, there was a title that caught his attention. Putting aside the last one for the moment, the title 《Little Girl Killer》 was a bit concerning. For some reason, Hihiro felt irritated(3) about those words. It was Hihiro's nature to confirm something that bothered him. And yet, at the same time, Hihiro felt that he would regret confirming the meaning behind those words.

Even so, he, almost unconsciously, clicked the words 《Little Girl Killer》 with his finger.

《Little Girl Killer》 (4)

You seem to be an existence that are blessed by, and attracts, little girls(5). In the eyes of little girls, your charm has suddenly increased(6). This is surely because you are also a Loli--(7)

With a snap, Hihiro canceled the explanation interface.

Hihiro was troubled. What is this? He thought that god was teasing him or something(8). If that really turned out to be the case, he swore in his mind to inflict punishment upon them with the word 「Curse」 | 「呪」.

However, as he had previously thought, Hihiro was now regretting confirming the title(9).

Hihiro sighed heavily. After he escaped from reality for a short period of time, he finally proceeded to address the main topic. Hihiro forcefully persuaded himself that this next part would be very enjoyable for him. Following this, the newly added 《Three-Word Chain》 of 《Word Magic》 was clicked.

《Three-Word Chain》 MP Consumption: 600

It was now possible to write and connect three words. Similar to the two word skill, the effective range, influence, and versatility of the spell improves, although the effect duration still depends on the words written. When this ability has been unlocked, the restrictions placed on two word spells are lifted. Up until now, if you were to use a two word spell, the words installed using the 《Invocation Management》 skill would lose all of its effect. However, this restriction was now released. Instead, this limitation now applies to three word spells. Additionally, the abilities of 《Simultaneous Invocation》 & 《Invocation Management》 now apply to two word spells. However, the installation limit of setting 5 words doesn't change for 《Invocation Management》. Furthermore, in regards to the 《Simultaneous Invocation》, please exercise caution for there are certain words that cannot be used.

Basically, the restrictions of the 《Two-Word Chain》 skill are now applied onto the 《Three-Word Chain》 skill. However, if the process of writing the words was interrupted, the 《Rebound》 would decrease all of his status fields by 30%. Furthermore, Hihiro would be rendered unable to use magic, as well as being inflicted with a random Abnormal Status Effect. The Abnormal Statuses that may be inflicted include: Severe Pain, Paralysis, Sleep, Blindness, and Confusion. This Abnormal Condition would last for duration of 1 hour, while the reduction in stats and inability to utilise Magic would last for a period of 6 hours.

This 《Rebound》 was quite typical, or so Hihiro had thought. He would be subjected to risk even if he attempted to use it. It wasn't as if his status would simply be reduced, nor would he be rendered unable to use magic. The problem was the 'Abnormal Condition'. In particular, the confusion and severe pain caused would leave him at a disastrously high risk for a 1 hour period.

Hihiro: (No, the possibility of it being paralysis or sleep exists, but...blindness....haa, no matter what it is, it'd probably mean certain death if I got it in the middle of a fight.)

Although he could probably endure pain, it was undeniably certain that his movements would be hindered. Even after the the affliction had dissipated, Hihiro would most likely be left fatigued and vulnerable. Either way, the necessity for Hihiro to experiment and experience this at least once remained. Rather than having a unknown abnormality, it would be more easier to prepare if he knew what the disorder was. That way, he would somewhat be able to calm his uncertainties.

Hihiro: (Even so, I'm grateful for the fact that I can now install two word spells.)

With this, Hihiro was now able to implement a large array of tactics, allowing him to display even further cheat-like behaviour. Furthermore, his installed words had expanded to encompass 《Multiple Words》. In other words, apart from the one word spell, the continuous writing skill had now become available to Hihiro.

Up until now, whenever Hihiro attempted to use a two word spell, he could not use any other words. No, although he could activate and use other words, the effects of the two word spell would be cancelled. However, this limitation had now been lifted.

Now, if, for example, he were to use the word 「Flight」 | 『飛翔』 to fly, he would still be able to activate words such as 「Explosion」 | 『爆』 or 「Speed」 『速』. However, as there seemed to be words that would not have this ability, there was a necessity for Hihiro to perform many experiments.

However, the limitations of this seemed to be naturally obvious to

Hiiro. If he were to approach an enemy using the word 「Transparent」 | 『透明』 before casting the spell 「Sleep」 | 『寝』, then he would be so invincible, it would simply be ridiculous. Of course, if his target was one of the magically sensitive 『Evila』, then they might be able to somehow deal with Hiiro's tactic. Nevertheless, Hiiro deemed it to be too unfair.

Hiiro: (Kuku(10), this is really a Unique Cheat, huh.)

Even with such a restriction applied, Hiiro couldn't help but involuntarily grin at the tremendous versatility of his own magic. Although there were many methods of execution that would deliver a harsh 《Rebound》 should they be improperly handled, as long as one cautiously used it, the effects that it supplies are quite significant.

Yet, there was an important point that needed careful attention. This point addressed MP Consumption. The new title that Hiiro had just obtained, the one called 《One who is Skilled in Magic》, seemed to apply adjustments to his MP. Even though it appeared to further increase his MP, even after he had levelled up, Hiiro could still not afford to use his 《Word Magic》 frequently.

The reason for this was because, from the very beginning, 《Word Magic's》 MP consumption was significantly high. Even though he possessed several MP recovery items, it Hiiro would still be required to create time to be able use them during combat...

Hiiro: (Wait, I guess I could use the word 「Protect」 | 『防』 while taking the recovery items...)

Such issue was easily resolved. Yet, even so, the fact that Hiiro had a large MP Consumption Rate would not change. If he wasn't constantly paying attention, there was always the possibility of Hiiro having a depleted MP gauge when he let his guard down. As it seemed that there might not be enough MP to utilise during important times, it may prove fatal in this world.

Furthermore, although this time he was now able to cast three word spells, the MP consumed was 600. No matter how one thought about it, it could not be considered normal. If Hiiro were to use



《Air Writing》 in conjunction with this skill, the MP cost would be  $600 + 100 = 700$  MP. This meant that he could only use this combination of skills 4 times if his MP was completely full.

Hiiro: (I guess this is what they call the price of power(11), huh.)

As Hiiro had a limited supply of MP recovery agents, he determined that he must make effective use of them. Even so, it would not change the fact that his ability was a cheat.

Hiiro: (Now then....this time, I guess I'll be experimenting against the Desert Monster, huh....)

As Hiiro's party arrived at the 《Boulder Desert》 area, they stopped as they arranged themselves, seemingly without spirit.

Camus: 「 Everyone... move as planned. 」

The 『Ashura Tribe』 nodded at Camus' order and moved out from that spot. They swiftly headed to their positions. The only ones that remained were Hiiro, Liliyn, Silva, Shamoe, Camus and Sivan. Only these six.

They surveyed the desert, yet, the desert monster could not be seen. It may be hiding among the large boulders. Meanwhile, Liliyn called out to Hiiro.

Liliyn: 「 Oi(12), kozou(13). Are you planning on slaying the monster? 」

Hiiro: 「 No, I'm merely assisting them. 」

Liliyn: 「 Then, that fellow will deal the finishing blow...huh? 」

As she spoke those words, she turned her glance towards Camus.

Hiiro: 「 That's right. This is the 『Ashura Tribe's』 problem. Then this problem, should be resolved by the 『Ashura Tribe's』 Chief himself. 」

Liliyn: 「 Hou(14). But can that guy really kill it? Even though his father is dead, from what we've heard, it appears to have taken on

his father's appearance. 」

Hiiro: 「 It seems so. 」

Liliyn: 「 But this fellow values the tribe above all else. Wouldn't it be quite a difficult opponent for him? 」

Hiiro: 「 ... Who knows. However, this would be the so-called turning point 」

Liliyn: 「 The turning point? 」

She knitted her eyebrows as she looked up at Hiiro.

Hiiro: 「 Aa(15). If he turned away here, that means he would continue to live while being unable to kill his father 」

Liliyn: 「 However, in that scenario, the tribe would spend everyday frightened by the monster. If they allowed the monster to run wild again, it was possible that they would be annihilated 」

Hiiro: 「 Aa. If they choose to fight now, it will no longer be possible for them to turn back. Though I asked those fellows, it seems the barrier is made of that guy's father's life. Seems to be already reaching its limit. If we provoke the monster this time, even if they ran away, it would be sure to follow in pursuit. 」

If that were to happen, their oasis would be found, placing the tribe in danger. The children would also be helplessly killed.

Hiiro: 「 Even if you advance by one step from here, the only road left to you is to defeat the monster. If they moved back from here, they would only gain a brief period of peace. However, even if they did advance, the only options left before them would be whether they defeat the monster or not. 」

Liliyn: 「 So it's either Heaven or Hell...huh? 」

Hiiro: 「 So it seems..... apparently that guy's already made his choice. 」

Upon seeing Camus' eyes, there was no hesitation present. Hiiro

slowly approached him.

Hiiro: 「 It seems like you've got your resolve, huh? 」

Camus: 「 Nn(16)... I have. I....will defeat it. 」

Jin-u: 「 Chief, even though I'm inferior, I shall also assist you! 」

Camus nodded slightly in response to Jin-u's words as he stared ahead.

Camus: 「 ....Let's go! 」

## Notes:

### 1. TL Notes:

- LQ: Little Girl Killer? Loli Killer? I'm ur worst nightmare! I'm Loliquent!
- XJ: Lol. Loli, watch out. I think he's coming to get you.

### 4. E Notes:

- Dal: Tempted to make a stat growth chart for each character.
- XJ: Why not? Do it if you want to.

### 7. TL Notes:

- LQ: WHY?! You should be proud of it!!! Kuso...what a waste...if u don't accept such once in a lifetime blessing.
- XJ: Calm down. Just calm down.

### 10. TL Notes:

- LQ: I don't know why, but I like this title haha
- XJ: Put it in your about page [<https://loliquent.wordpress.com/about-faq-disclaimer-2/>]. It'd be pretty hilarious if people thought a loli was conquering lolis.

13. TL Notes:

- LQ: How envious! Ufufufu!
- XJ: Down, LoliQ. Down.

16. TL LQ: Nandato?! I want this!

17. TL LQ: It should be 'Lolicon' but Hiiro cut it off. I was tempted to write Loliquent, haha. (Paraphrased by XJ)

18. TL LQ: They are not teasing you but blessing you! Argh...

19. TL LQ: Ah...I suddenly lost motivation all of a sudden haha

20. TL Notes

- XJ: ...he's turning into Liliyn...
- LQ: Agreed haha

23. TL Note: Clunky trans, I know. The RAW is Bannousa no tsuke | 万能さのツケ. My interpretation is [Bannousa](#) (almighty) no (indicates possession) tsuke (price). Any suggestions/corrections welcome.

24. Oi: 'Hey'

25. Kozou: Informal/Rude way of addressing a younger male. Often thought of as an Archaic expression. Alt Trans: Boy | Brat | Lad

26. Hou: A Japanese expression denoting interest. Think 'Hmm~'.

27. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think 'yeah' or 'uh-huh'.

28. Nn: A Japanese expression denoting affirmation (in this context).

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 94: Confrontation, the Demon of the Desert

Liliyn and Shamoe were to watch from afar, so they were left on standby in the previous location. Hiiro's group was to follow Jin-u's leadership. Behind Jin-u was Camus, then Hiiro, and finally Silva, who covered their tracks as they trekked across the Desert.

(There are a lot of obstacles here. This garden of rocks may put us at an advantage, but if the other side is intelligent, then that advantage disappears.)

If it was even able to absorb Regund's knowledge, and thought patterns, then the battle would be the same as fighting a human. For that reason, the other side may be able to use tactics as well. Hiiro's party could hide in the shadows of the rocks to close the distance and launch sneak attacks, but if the enemy possessed human-level thought, they would be able to enact countermeasures.

The group gathered around a single large rock, and observed their surroundings.

"Last time, he was lurking in the sand dune ahead." (Jin-u)

Jin-u says as such, while facing Camus. Sure enough, there was a large hill of sand in front of them. Nearby, a monster called a Mad Scorpion was wandering around, leisurely lifting its multiple appendages to proceed forward. Then at that moment...

~Swish!

From the sand, something resembling a tail emerged. It wrapped around the Mad Scorpion's body, and began giving off a poisonous violet aura.

"KIIIIIIII!?"

The Mad Scorpion cries as it desperately flails its body around, but its legs only touch air. It tries to escape from the tail's clutches in

midair, but in the next moment, the owner of the tail showed himself.

“It’s the Demon of the Desert!” (Jin-u)

As Jin-u’s words, reach Camus’s his face stiffens.

“... Father.”

Hihiro carefully observes the Fiend. It definitely looked more like an 『Evila』, than a monster.

It had a freely extending prehensile tail, and a body covered in tough scales. The traits of the 『Ashura Race』 was still visible, a flat forehead, and above was a head of white hair that didn’t give off a sense of life. In contrast, his pure red eyes surely conveyed a strong desire to live.

Drool drips from the monster’s mouth as he retracts his tail, and lifts his feet, which were furnished with sharp claws.

(...Hm? What’s that orb?)

From what Hihiro could see, there was an orb the size of a fist embedded in the pit of the monster’s stomach. And the orb appeared to be going through a steady cycle of expansion, and contraction, almost as if it were a beating heart.

“Oy, what’s that pulsating ball on its abdomen?” (Hihiro)

“We presume that that is the monster’s core.” (Jin-u)

Hihiro confirmed his suspicions with Jin-u’s words.

“So all I have to do is break it?” (Hihiro)

“Most likely...” (Jin-u)

“Most likely?” (Hihiro)

“In the past, my comrades tried aiming their attacks at the orb. But they weren’t able to leave a single scratch on it.” (Jin-u)

"I see. I thought it was blatantly displaying its weak point, but it's not that simple. That orb's defense must be quite high." (Hiiro)

"The cause is probably... that." (Jin-u)

"Hmm?" (Hiiro)

Jin-u has a difficult expression, as he points to the monster.

"Look." (Jin-u)

Sand circles the monster's feet, and it rises to cover its body. After a while, its whole body is coated in sand, and the sand's color begins to change back to its violet coloration.

"What is that?" (Hiiro)

"You saw, didn't you? It's a long duration Sand Armor." (Jin-u)

Hiiro narrows his eyes, and stares at the monster once more.

"So he can collect sand like that dual-wielder over there?" (Hiiro)

"Right." (Jin-u)

Though the monster's appearance hadn't changed in the slightest, there was definitely sand circulating over his body. It was the same magic Camus had used on his right arm in the fight before.

"But, double-sword boy had sand clearly visible on his arm." (Hiiro)

His fist had become giant like a golem's, so it was quite obvious. But the monster looked no different than before he cloaked himself.

"That's... Father's Sand Armor." (Camus)

The one who answered was Camus. He had a slight bitter expression floating on his face.

"Sand Armor... if trained... appearance doesn't change." (Camus)

"Gathering sand, and compressing it to the very limit. That's

Regun-sama's Sand Armor. An unimaginable amount of sand is currently being gathered around him." (Jin-u)

"I see. So that's what's raising his defense." (Hiiro)

Hiiro understood why Jin-u called that skill the reason. The core appeared to be out in the open, but around it was a firm coating of sand.

The monster applied more power to its tail, and the Mad Scorpion was cleanly cut in half. It fell to the ground, although even now, it continues to try and escape. But the monster approaches it, and shoves it into its mouth whole. It appears that he's currently scavenging for food.

His tail twitches back and forth as he appears to be happily enjoying his meal. Within a minute, the Mad Scorpion, which was around the size of two grown men, had vanished completely.

(So he's surrounding himself with sand... Then we'll have to do something about the sand first. With that up, I'm not sure that even 『Sleep(眠)』 will get through to him.)

《Word Magic》 generally activates on contact. When Hiiro fought the Red Boar a while back, he was able to use 『Sleep(眠)』 to silence it, but that was because the character had cleanly impacted the boar's body.

If it had hit clothing, or something else, the effect would not have transferred. The effects only manifest on the thing it hits. So in order to put the Monster to sleep, they would have to deal with the sand and hit him with magic directly.

(『Burst(爆)』 and 『Flame(炎)』 have a large area of effect, so it doesn't matter what they hit in order to activate, because the effect of the word will still affect them, but...)

Regardless of if they wanted to attack the core, or put it to sleep, they would have to deal with the armor. And Camus and the others were thinking the same.

They were quietly observing the monster from behind the rocks,



when Hiiro noticed something strange. The monster's tail was buried in the sand. No more accurately, it had burrowed into it.

(What is... w-wait, is it!?)

Hiiro predicted what was going to happen next. But he was a too late.

~Kabow.

Something erupted out of the sand from beneath the group's feet. It tries to wrap around Camus's legs. Because it had emerged behind him, Camus wasn't able to react in time.

~Swish!

Just as Camus's body was about to be grabbed, the one who saved him... was Jin-u. Because of that, Camus was able to evade the attack, but the one who fell prey to the tail was Jin-u.

"Ku!"

The tail coiled itself around his leg.

"Jin-u!"(Camus)

Camus falls on his back, and cries out. The tail began reeling Jin-u in. It appears that the Demon of the Desert had long-since noticed their presence.

"Damn! We're charging, Dual-Wielder! Old Man!" (Hiiro)

"Y-yeah!" (Camus)

"Understood!" (Silva)

In order to keep up with Jin-u, the trio left the rocks, and ran towards the monster. Jin-u himself was lying on the ground, covered in the sand he had been dragged through.

"Don't waver! Our first goal is to retrieve that Topknot guy!"  
(Hiiro)

“Yes, I’ll have you give him back!” (Camus)

The monster turned its back to the party. He steps on Jin-u as the man writhes in pain.

“Gurururu...”

With a sound like that of a lion growling, the monster turns only his head to face the group. Its face was definitely that of a monster. A face that would inflict fear into the heart of any man. But still, there were traces of the individual known as Rigund left in it.

“F-father...” (Camus)

Camus swallows his spit, as he unintentionally lets out these words.

“Don’t misunderstand, dual wielder.” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Camus)

“That right there’s just a monster.” (hiiro)

“... Right.” (Camus)

“If you don’t do anything, the Topknot’s going to die, you know.” (Hiiro)

“!!? ... I won’t let him!” (Camus)

He drew the pair of swords from his back, and pointed their ends at the monster. The monster responds by displaying clear animosity towards him. It was at that moment that Jin-u regained conscience, and turned to Camus. Thinking that an opening had been made, he took his own curved blade off of his back, and swung at the beast, but...

“Wha!?” (Jin-u)

As if the monster had noticed his intent, it swung its right arm down on him like a hammer.

“Jin-u!? Get away from him!” (Camus)

Camus rushed forward with unbelievable speed, and tried to cut the tail in order to free Jin-U. But in front of him, a large wall of sand emerged.

“T-this is... Sand Guard!” (Camus)

He stopped his feet, but Hiiro, who was by his side, scolded him.

“Don’t stop! Head straight for it!” (Hiiro)

Around Hiiro was a light blue barrier of magic. Camus looked towards him, and understood what he was going to do. He fell in line behind him, and kept running forward.

Hiiro wore a wall of protective magic as he collided with the wall. And just like the time with the wave of sand Camus used, the wall... didn’t part.

Camus couldn’t hide his confusion at witnessing it. He was shocked at how his sand could be defeated, yet this monster’s could not. Of course, Hiiro was also shocked at the current situation. But while he was a bit surprised, he still kept his composure.

(As I thought. 『Protect(防)』 only works when guarding against an attack, but this wall of sand wasn’t made to do harm. It’s good that I foresaw this.)

The word 『Protect(防)』 could avert blows, but it can’t be crashed against other walls for offense. It only responds to moves made with the intent to attack. As Hiiro had a hunch, he wasn’t too flustered. He just wanted to try it for argument’s sake. So at this point, he had already prepared another word on his finger. He pointed his hand, and fired it.

“Now! Rush through!” (Hiiro)

“Eh? B... but!?” (Camus)

“Trust me. Aren’t you my subordinate!?” (Hiiro)

“... Yeah!” (Camus)

Camus rushed into the wall at full force. Before impact, he swung his sword as if to cut it down, but it went through without resistance as if he were cutting through tofu.

What Hiiro used was 『Soft(柔)』. It was a word he had experience using. With it, he was able to turn hard objects soft.

“Haaaaaaaah!”

Camus breached the wall, and cut at the monster’s tail before his eyes.

“Kuh! It’s hard... but...!” (Camus)

Perhaps the monster had had absolute confidence in its wall. It’s body had gone stiff for a moment after the wall was breached.

Camus used both of his arms, and put in all his power. And finally...

His blade pierced cleanly through the sand wrapped around the tail. Camus kicked the monster away, took the weakened Jin-u over his shoulder, and made some distance.

## Chapter 95: Resolve

The monster, who was slightly knocked back, scowled at Camus

Desert Monster [ Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa! ]

As things didn't go its way, a current of anger flowed through the monster as it became enraged. As if expressing irritation, it showed off the severed tail that swung hummily from side to side.

Camus [ Are you okay? ]

Jin-u [ C-Chief.....I'm sorry. ]

Jin-u's face was distorted by pain as he apologized while bitterly thinking he had caused someone trouble.

Hihiro [ Oi, what's that? ]

Taken aback by Hihiro's words, they glanced in the monster's direction. The sight that met them had shocked them both.

Desert Monster [ Gurururururu! ]

Somehow, the severed part of the tail had grown back.

Hihiro [ Oi Oi, it can even regenerate itself? I guess the usual methods won't work, huh. ]

Silva [ How shall we proceed, Hihiro-sama? ]

Hihiro [Let's see, I've got something in mind, but.....]

Honestly, if all he had to do was kill it, Hihiro could somehow manage it alone. However, in this case, he had restricted himself to being a helper since the [Ashura Tribe's] Chief Camus was the person expected to defeat the monster.

Silva [ As I thought, we will be exclusively supporting Camus until the end? ]

Hiiro [ Hou, you seem to understand, huh Jii-san. ]

Silva [ Nofofofofo! Well then, let us try our best to do that! ]

At that moment, the shadow at Silva's feet twisted and coiled upward into his hand, taking the shape of, what appeared to be, a table knife.

Silva [ Lets go! Chaotic Butler toss! ]

Silva flew up into the sky as dozens of knives rained down upon the monster. However, the wall of sand materialized next to the monster once again, blocking them.

During this, Hiiro approached Camus and whispered to him.

Hiiro [ Listen up – similar to before, I'll make the sand surrounding its body become soft. Although the sand covering the tail seems to have quite a lot of strength, it's got nothing to do with defeating him. As such, your attacks should pass through. Focus all your efforts into piercing the core. ]

Camus [ .....Got it. ]

As he took his hands away from Jin-u, he glared at the monster with a piercing gaze.

Hiiro [ When I give the signal, move forward. ]

Camus [ Yes. ]

Although Silva was still attacking, when the wall of sand suddenly collapsed, the monster was nowhere to be seen.

Silva [Mu?]

Upon also noticing the situation, Silva furrowed his brow

Dobaa-!

Silva [ What is going on!? ]

The monster somehow flung itself upwards underneath Silva while

he was still in the air. It appears that the monster had burrowed itself under the sand. The stinger on its tail pierced Silva's body.

Silva [ Muu! ]

As expected, Hiiro also opened his eyes wide upon witnessing such a sight. Certainly, the monster's stinger was similar to a mad scorpion's. Upon lodging its stinger into the body, it would release a paralyzing neurotoxin that deprives the victims movement. Following this, it would seem that the scorpion would then eat its prey, little by little. A similar stinger was currently lodged in Silva's body.

Of course, Camus began to move in an attempt to try and save Silva. However, Hiiro stopped him by holding his arm in front of Camus.

Camus [ Hiiro.....? ]

Hiiro [ Be still. ]

Camus [ But.....Jii-chan is..... ]

Hiiro [ Listen.....be quiet and watch. ]

Camus tilted his head, giving off the feeling that he did not understand what Hiiro's was talking about. Why shouldn't he try to save a wounded ally? Although he doubted Hiiro's actions, Camus looked up and watched Silva and the monster.

Desert Monster [ Gururururu! ]

Silva [ Gufu....uh... uu... ]

Silva looked like he was going through intense pain. Looking at it, you would think the monster already had him. However, he somehow grabbed the tail.

Desert Monster [ .....? ]

Silva [ Ku.....Nofofo, did you perhaps think that I was taken out?  
]

Silva, who was just suffering a second ago, loosely puffed his mouth.

Silva [ Shall I hold onto this dangerous thing? ]

As he said thus, Silva lifted his right hand, as if he were lifting a wineglass. Following this, a black sphere appeared in his palm. It seemed to be about 20cm in diameter. Next, he gripped the tail with his left hand. Finally, the globe disappeared as it was absorbed into the tail.

Silva [ Pool Ball..... ]

At that moment, an extremely thin rectangular object appeared from where the sphere had been absorbed. It was clearly caused by the black globe absorbed a moment ago.

The black rectangle quickly sliced apart the monster's armor. It was like paper being cut with a razor. Once again, the monster's tail was severed from its body.

Desert Monster [ Gura-!? ]

Silva [ On account of this sultry embrace, kindly separate from me. ]

Buuuun-!

The black rectangular object morphed back into a sphere and shot out like a cannonball.

Doga-!

The monster's body bent forward as the sphere superbly struck the monster's stomach. The attacked monster had a dumbfounded expression, as it crashed into the ground without any means of protection.

Silva, who was stabbed by the monsters stinger, nonchalantly left the location .

Hihiro [ Oi, isn't there something stuck in your stomach? ]



Silva [ Oya? How inconsiderate of me. ]

Silva gently plucked the tail out of his body and tossed it on the ground.

Hiiro [ Heh, you were fine after all ]

Silva [ I'm afraid I am not fine. It made a hole in one of my good suits... ]

Hiiro [ .....You're basically unharmed.....Seriously what in the world is your body made of? ]

Silva [ Nofofofofof! It's because I am a butler! Nofofofofof! ]

After he spoke these words, Silva was dismayed due to the fact that he will be scolded by Ojousama about his tattered uniform. Meanwhile, Camus and Jin-u were blinking in surprise as they watched the embodiment of strangeness known as Silva.

Camus [ Eto.....you are.....fine? ]

Camus couldn't bear remaining silent and asked thus. However, Silva, who seemed to have his usual appearance, expressed a smile.

Silva [ Nofofofofof! My apologies for having worried you! As you see, I'm quite well! ]

When Hiiro saw how he bowed politely, he did not notice anything abnormal in his physical condition. Although he wasn't surprised at this inexplicable situation because he'd seen it before, it was different for the other two. Still, Camus could now understand the reason Hiiro stopped him from helping Silva.

Camus ( He was trusted.....by Hiiro.....That's somehow nice.....that sort of thing )

As Camus had definitely felt their mutual trust, he was slightly envious of it.

Hiiro disregarded the gaze of the pair who seemed to want an explanation since he did not have time to explain in detail. Their

top priority was to eliminate the enraged existence in front of them.

Hiiro [ Jii-san, can you destroy that monster's wall of sand again? ]

Silva [ Nofo? Most certainly! ]

Silva headed toward the monster again after he said that.

Hiiro [ Listen, I'll say it again. We will have a chance after this. Promptly....Kill it. ]

Camus [ u.... un ]

He swallowed loudly before nodding.

Immediately after Hiiro confirmed his response, he channeled magic into his fingertip.

|Tracking| |索敵|

Hiiro ( With this, I can find it no matter where it hides. )

In response to Silva's knife attack, the monster erected another wall of sand, all according to plan. Following this, it then disappeared by once again diving into the ground. However, this time, Hiiro's senses were able to capture the monster's position. It was as if his eyes were capable of locating his target's position via use of Thermography. Hiiro knew that it was moving through the sand with incredible velocity.

Hiiro [ ..Alright. ]

Hiiro quickly wrote a word and waited for the moment when the monster tried to go out of the sand. Following this, Hiiro clenched his fist in anticipation. And,

zoba-!

At the same moment the monster came out of the sand, Hiiro vanished. He then reappeared next to the monster. He had used the character |Transfer| |転移|, a two word spell he had set up before this fight. He was thankful for his lvl 80 abilities as he was now

able to instantly activate |Two-Word Chain| spells without having to write them on the spot.

The monster's eyes were wide with surprise when Hiiro suddenly appeared before it. Following this, Hiiro pointed his fingertips at the monster. Hiiro proceeded to shoot the other word he had written. Normally, he would be hard pressed to hitting such a quick foe, however, it was currently caught off-guard. The situation was similar to how a moving car is unable to make a sudden stop.

Hiiro ( In other words, it can't avoid this! )

Hiiro activated the effect of the word he set up before teleporting close to the monster. He used |Soft||柔| – the same one he had used before. With this, the defensive power of the sand armor was nullified.

Hiiro [ Next is this! ]

The back of Hiiro's fist shone as he activated another word he had set up using ||Word Magic||.

|Colossal Strength| |剛力|

He felt power gather in his right hand.

bakiii-!

Hiiro's fist shot towards the face of the monster, upon impact it made an unpleasant sound, as of flesh and bone being smashed. Blood trailed behind the monster as it was sent flying away.

dosun-!

It plummeted to the ground and created a plume of sand. With the defense of the sand armor nullified, in addition to the increased attack power from the word |Colossal Strength|, the monster received a lot of damage, even though the soft sand broke its fall.

The monster rose unsteadily.

Hiiro [ Here's another one! ]

Hihiro used |Air Writing| to write |Hard| |固| and shot it at the sand under the monster. Like the time with Camus, it has now been rendered unable to manipulate the sand.

Hihiro [ Now! Do it! ]

Hihiro shouted at Camus who was nearby waiting for orders. Hearing the voice, Camus narrowed his eyes and gripped the twin katanas in his hands.

Camus [ .... Daddy ]

From where he was standing, Camus charged full-speed at the monster. The pulsing core in the monster's stomach was reflected in his eyes. As far as Hihiro was concerned, the sand's defensive force was practically non existence. Furthermore, the monster could no longer erect a defensive wall as the sand had been rendered unusable due to the word |Hard| |固|. If Camus reacted too late, he might suffer some damage. However, if he attacked now, he would definitely defeat the monster.

Camus [ .....kill....I will kill it ]

In that moment, the question of [Who was he to kill?] surfaced in his mind. Following this, his father's smiling face flashed before him. A nostalgic scent tickled Camus' nose.

Camus [ .....Daddy.....? ]

Everyone thought it was over. Thanks to Hihiro's plan, they were perfectly prepared. Although Jin-u suffered a little damage, no one was killed. Above all, they were all liberated from the monsters terror.

Watching from afar, the people of the |Ashura Tribe| were confident in their victory.....until just now.

Involuntarily, everyone stiffened at the unforeseen spectacle reflected in their eyes.

Hihiro [ That idiot! ]

Hihiro was the only one that, in response to that spectacle, had... actually, Hihiro couldn't help but reveal his frustrations towards the author of such a spectacle.

Because next to the monster's core, the crossed katanas had stopped. Looking closely, the monster was still standing. Although it wasn't that the monster somehow stopped the attack. Actually, Camus intentionally stopped his ongoing assault.

Camus [ ku.... ]

His dual katanas trembled slightly. No, it wasn't just the katanas, it was Camus' entire body that was trembling. Still leaning forward, his face was slightly raised. Even though his eyes were set on the monster, Camus' face was distorted by sorrow.

Camus [ ...I can't.....do it. ]

Also puzzled by the unexpected action, the monster remained still.

Camus [ Because..... Daddy.....his smell was there... ]

Hihiro [ What are you doing! Quickly! Give it the finishing blow!]

Hihiro descended from the sky and shouted at Camus.

Camus [ I.....I.... ]

As he said thus, a single teardrop was shed from Camus' eye.

Camus [ I.....can't do it.....Daddy... ]

Upon seeing the tear, the monster was taken aback. In that moment, Hihiro clearly felt the monster's blood thirst diminish. However, this was truly only for an instant. The monster's lust for blood and rage surged, surpassing their previous levels.

Following this, the imperceptibly regenerated tail's stinger moved in an attempt to stab Camus.

Jin-u: [ CHIEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEEFFFFF!!!!!! ]

Jin-u embraced Camus as he jumped to the side. However, they did not completely dodge it. The stinger had gouged a chunk of flesh from Jin-u's back.

Jin-u [ Guu-! ]

Camus [ Jin-u!?! ]

The two simply fell to the ground in such a state. Camus used his body to cushion Jin-u's fall.

Hiiro [ Jii-san! Buy me some time! ]

Silva [ As you command! ]

It would seem that Silva grasped the current situation. He created another one of those knives and threw it. However, the monster avoided it by jumping away from its current location.

Hihiro ( Chi, and just like that, it's already recovered! )

The monster appeared to have recovered from Hiirō's attacks as its movement had been restored.

Desert Monster 「Gururururu!」

As the monster provokingly looked at Hiiro and the others, it opened its mouth wide and-

kiiiiin-!

It released a considerably high pitched tone. As they were struck with an unpleasant, almost ear-ringing sensation, Hiroyuki involuntarily frowned.

Hiiro [ I-I see, this is! ]

At the same time Hiirō realized the meaning of the monster's behavior, in response to the monster's cry, similar cries sounded nearby. Following this, the sand from both sides of the Desert Monster ascended into the air with a bashing sound. From within the sand, new monsters emerged.

Hihiro [ As I thought, this is the monster's ability to call reinforcements! ]

Silva [ It seems to be so. Apparently, they are coming here in groups from afar?]

It was as Silva had indicated. Even though it was quite a distance away, they were able to discover several monster-like shadows scattered here and there.

Upon confirming thus, there were people that could be seen attacking the monsters in the distance.....they were the [Ashura Tribe]. This situation was one that they group had more or less expected. As such, it was unlikely that the surrounding monster's reinforcements that headed in this direction would not be capable of approaching Hihiro's location.

Hihiro (Maa, Aka-Loli did say that she'd move if push comes to shove. I guess it should be fine to ignore the other monsters. The real problem is.....these three here.)

Naturally, one of which was the Desert Monster. With regards to the other two, one was a giant monster known as the [Gray Golem]. The remaining monster was called [Mud Man], a monster that possessed a mud-like body.

They had only heard about the information regarding these monsters from the 『Ashura Tribe』. They were Rank S monsters. In all honesty, they had wanted to resolve this before the Desert Monster had called for reinforcements. However, now that it has come to this, it was imperative for them to think of an alternative method to resolve the situation.

Hihiro [ Jii-san, mind me leaving the rest to you for a bit? ]

Silva [ ...What are you planning to do, may I ask? ]

Hihiro [ I'm gonna give that idiot a wake up call. ]

As he shot those words out while wearing a disgruntled expression, a blue vein surfaced onto Hihiro's forehead.

Silva [ Nofofofof! Oh dear, oh dear In which case, I shall also strive to try my hardest. ]

As Silva sharpened his gaze, he stood in front of the three monsters. Upon seeing this, Hihiro changed the direction of his body quickly before moving his feet. In front of the direction he was heading in was.....the place where Camus was currently in.

Upon seeing Jin-u raising a voice of agony due to receiving the attack from the stinger, Camus was flustered. As Jin-u's face grew pale, the wounds he received on his back began to painfully ooze crimson blood.

Camus [ Jin-u.....I.....I..... ]

It was clearly Camus' own fault that Jin-u had received such an injury. As he was torn between the self that was unable to do anything for Jin-u and the self that had his will to fight warped, Camus had fallen into a state of panic.

At this time, Hihiro had approached. As Camus thought that Hihiro would be able to do something, he raised his head.

Baki-!

However, before he had been aware of it, Camus' face was distorted due to a stinging in his cheek, sand heated by daylight entering his mouth. Camus had now understood that he had fallen to the ground. Furthermore, he realized that Hihiro had hit him.

As he slowly got up, Camus simply stared at Hihiro, his eyes opened wide. It was an expression that indicated that he was unable to comprehend why Hihiro had hit him. In the face of such a Camus-

Hihiro [ You're really unsightly, aren't you? ]

Camus [ .....eh? ]

As Hihiro pierced Camus with a chilling glare, he folded his arms and looked down upon him.

Hihiro [ How'd this situation happen? ]



Camus [ ..... ]

Hihiro [ You made your resolve, right? Even so, what's with that shocking display? There are limits to how unsightly one can be. ]

Camus [ H-Hihiro..... ]

In the face of those ruthlessly ejected words, Camus was rendered unable to answer.

Hihiro [ The reason for that Top Knot Bastard's suffering is because of you. The fact that the Desert Monster was able to call for reinforcements, turning this into a pain in the ass is also your fault. Most importantly, the reason why I'm so damned frustrated is also your fault! ]

Hihiro's words, loaded with anger, continued.

Hihiro [ That stinger probably has a neurotoxin, right? A poison that steals away one's ability to move. But if the place it lands is near the heart, it will stop even the heart's beat. The one receiving the attack will die. ]

Camus [ T-that can't be! We have to do something! B-because of me, Jin-u is...! ]

Baki-!

Hihiro hits Camus's face once more.

Hihiro: [ Aa, that's right. All of this is your fault. Incidentally, those from your |Ashura Tribe| who are fighting other monsters may make a mistake and end up receiving a fatal wound. That would be your fault as well. ]

Camus [ Uu... I... I... ]

Camus grinded his teeth as he slowly shed tears once more.

Hihiro [ What is it that you want to do? ]

Camus [ ... Uu... uu... ]

Hihiro [ When you said you wanted to protect everything, was it a lie? ]

Camus [ It was... no lie... ]

Hihiro [ ... You said it, right. That you could smell your father's scent from that monster. ]

With tears still running down his face, Camus turned his eyes to Hihiro.

Hihiro [ Then perhaps a fragment of your father's consciousness continues to dwell in that monster. ]

Camus [ ... -!?! ]

Camus took a deep breath as he looked at the monster. He saw the figure of the monster matching blows with Silva, an incredibly angry expression plastered on its face. It definitely didn't seem like the sort of expression his father would make. Still, it was undeniable that the scent of his father, Rigund, emanated from the monster.

Following this, a different scene entered Hihiro's eyes. For a brief moment, upon seeing Camus's tears, the monster's hostility abated. Perhaps it was the sliver of Rigund that continued to dwell within the monster. His response to seeing his son's expression of sorrow.

Hihiro [ Watch closely. ]

Hihiro glared at the monster.

Hihiro [ If that monster's your father, then will you do nothing but cry in his presence? Is that all you can do? ]

Camus [ .....Daddy ]

Hihiro [ Don't mistake what you're showing for kindness. ]

Camus [ ..... ]

Hihiro [ Familial piety. You're thinking of your family. Even when

he looks like that, you can't kill your father? ]

Camus silently hung his head. Hiiro took that as a sign of affirmation

Hiiro [ If that's your father, then isn't that all the more reason for you to end this with your own hands? ]

Camus [ My own... hands? ]

Hiiro [ Not hurting your family. That isn't kindness; it's just you acting spoiled. Looking at him now, you know what you have to do. You know what you need to do for your father, don't you? And all you can do is cry? ]

Camus [ I... am... ]

Hiiro [ True kindness only has meaning when you can use it as strength. At the very least, that's what I believe. ]

Camus [ Hiiro... ]

In truth, it was a line he had read in a book once before. However, it was also true that it had left quite an impression on him.

As the two's eyes met, Hiiro slowly opened his mouth.

Hiiro [ Go save him. With no hands other than your own. ]

Camus [ ..... ]

Hiiro [ The one who can truly free him from his suffering is no one but his son. Are you sure that you're just going to watch him without doing anything? ]

Life returned to the pupils of Camus's eyes.

Hiiro [ Or will you let a simple traveler, an uninvolved bystander like me kill him? Your father? It's not like I really care though?. ]

Camus [ ... No. ]

Hiiro [? ]

Camus [ I won't let... you do that. ]

Hihiro [ ... Then what will you do ?]

Camus placed his hand on the fallen Jin-u's shoulder.

Camus [ Jin-u... I'm sorry. But... It'll be alright. ]

As he spoke, Jin-u faintly opened his seemingly heavy eyelids that had been closed until now. A slight smile floated on his face.

Jin-u [ Y...yes... I'll leave... Rigund-sama in your... hands. ]

Camus [ Un. ]

Camus gave a strong nod, and stood up straight. He turned to Hihiro.

Camus [ Take care... of Jin-u. ]

Hihiro [ ...Just go put an end to this already. ]

Camus [ Yeah! ]

Camus started off in the monster's direction. Hihiro moved his eyes towards Jin-u.

Hihiro [ Oi topknot. This is a loan. You'll pay it back later. ]

Jin-u[ ... Ha? ]

Although Jin-u was unable to understand the words that flowed out of Hihiro's mouth, his body was suddenly enveloped in a warm light.

Jin-u ( W-what is this light... it... feels nice... )

It was as if he was resting under a warm sun, experiencing the sensation of a cool breeze massaging his body. It was a sensation that resembled being immersed in a bath, its warmth adjusted to the perfect temperature. As he was overcome by the urge to continue experiencing this phenomenon forever, his eyelids naturally began to gradually descend over his vision.

|Complete Recover| |完治|

By the word Hihiro used, all of the wounds Jin-u sustained began to close themselves. Moreover, Hihiro's magic gently wrapped around Jin-u's body, and a whimsical expression appeared on his face as the power lulled him to sleep.

Hihiro felt some fatigue well up in his body. That one cost quite a bit of MP. He took out an MP Recovery item from his pocket and tossed it into his mouth. He had made it a regular practice to carry them with him just in case.

Hihiro ( Good, now all that's left is that idiot over there. )

## KnW Chapter 96: The Conclusion, and a Tearful Parting

“Jii-chan.....fall back. Leave the rest...to me” (Kamui)

After seeing the expression of Kamui, who came running in front of him, Silva let out a “Hohou” in admiration.

“It appears that there will no longer be any problems with leaving it to you” (Silva)

“Hm...I made you worry” (Kamui)

“Nofofofofo! I will go finish off the remaining two, so I may leave the main one to you correct?” (Silva)

At Silva’s suggestion, Kamui’s head nodded in response.

“No. I’ll take care of...all of them. That’s why.....move back a little” (Kamui)

“Nofo?” (Silva)

Silva tilt his head questioningly, as he followed Kamui’s orders and moved back a small distance until he could see Kamui’s back.

Kamui stared fixedly at the desert monster.

“Sorry.....I.....didn’t understand” (Kamui)

“Gururururu!” (Desert Monster)

It’s sharp eyes narrowed even further, as it targeted Kamui alone and began to growl.

“.....to have been turned into such a form.....the one suffering the most.....was Tou-chan after all. That’s why....I” (Kamui)

As he said that, he took a single katana from his back and proceeded to place the blade against his arm. And then...

Tsuu.....

Like that, he moved the blade and wounded his arm. Naturally, bright red blood began to flow from his newly opened gaping wound.

Drip drip drip.....

Unsurprisingly, the blood began to fall to his feet onto the sand due to gravity. He returned the katana to its scabbard. Uncomprehendingly, Hihiro and Silva watched over his actions, as the area of blood-stained sand at his feet slowly began to grow.

“My blood will...infect it” (Kamui)

Gogogogogogogogogogo!

The ground began to shake like a small earthquake. Then the red-stained sand alone flew up with a swish, and stopped as it floated in midair. It was just about the same size as an automobile.

“I currently.....can only control this amount but.....” (Kamui)

The bright red sand began to swirl around above Kamui’s raised right hand. And then it began to rise further into the air, and the mass of sand split up into fine bits.

The sand had split up into countless clumps about the size of marbles, and still continued to float high up in the air.

“.....Red Idol. ....I’m coming” (Kamui)

Kamui’s glance became sharp as his eyes narrowed.

“Model – Rain” (Kamui)

Pyun pyun pyun pyun pyun pyun pyun pyun!

The clumps, which had become small balls, headed straight towards the 3 monsters at an amazing speed. It looked as if it was a red rain.

“Giiiiiiiiiii!?” (Desert Monster)

While raising a cloud of sand, the clumps of sand mercilessly pierced through the bodies of the monsters like bullets.

“Hou” (Hiiro)

Hiiro watched that scene and raised his voice in admiration.

(It's true that blood is magic itself. By pouring that blood onto the sand, he successfully was able to move the sand as he wished, huh.....well done Dual blades)

There were risks with spilling blood, but in exchange it appears you would gain the ability to freely control the sand.

Once the cloud of sand settled, the hole-ridden bodies of 2 completely annihilated monsters appeared. And though the remaining desert monster appeared to have guarded with its tail, that tail had become tattered. However, its body remained completely unharmed.

“Gururururururururu!” (Desert Monster)

“.....it's hard after all” (Kamui)

After Kamui murmured that, he raised his right arm into the air. As his did so, the red sand that should have scattered into the desert began to gather to him once more.

“But.....with this only one person remains, no, one monster!” (Kamui)

“Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Desert Monster)

As though its anger voltage had maxed out, the monster began to rush towards Kamui. While sand was kicked up, its propulsive force caused that sand to roll up.

“Model – wall” (Kamui)

A red wall instantly appeared in front of Kamui.



Boom!

The monster continued to charge at him, but

“That level...won’t break it” (Kamui)

In accordance to Kamui’s words, though the monster’s rush had an incredible amount of destructive force contained in it, the red wall didn’t move a single inch.

“Model – fist” (Kamui)

The sand turned into the shape of a large fist, and punched towards the monster.

“Gururaa!?” (Desert Monster)

It received quite the shock, as the monster’s face warped while being blown away. The monster, which then collided with a sand dune, unsteadily stood up while grinding its teeth and overflowing with killing intent.

“.....even this is no good” (Kamui)

Hihiro also watched that situation.

(Even though that should have had quite a bit of attack power, even that wasn’t capable of destroying the sand surrounding it..... the sand must be packed quite densely)

Though the red sand should be substantially hard, even that was incapable of destroying the monster’s armour.

(Now then, what will you do, Dual blades)

He watched over Kamui with distant eyes. That Kamui was once again changing the shape of the red sand. The monster, seeing that, also began to manipulate the sand. A large sand wave attacked Kamui.

“.....it’s useless” (Kamui)

Pyun pyun pyun pyun!

The red sand drew a circle as it began to move.

“Model – storm” (Kamui)

The sand which had taken the shape of a tornado continued towards the approaching wave of sand.

Gigigigigigigigigigigiii!

The two sand masses clashed together like two swords locking together. And then,

Bushaaaaaaa!

The one that lost was the wave. It returned once more to sand as it dispersed. Seeing that, Kamui frowned almost sorrowfully.

“.....it’s different” (Kamui)

“Guru?” (Desert Monster)

“No. Tou-chan was.....must more amazing.....much better..... much stronger” (Kamui)

He sharply glared while glancing towards the monster.

“You are.....Tou-chan but...you’re not Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

The red sand once again changed shape above Kamui’s right hand.

“Model – hammer” (Kamui)

A large hammer appeared, but this time two of them were created. They then flew with incredible speed towards the monster, with one of them coming up from below the monster.

“Guruaa!?” (Desert Monster)

The monster that was then thrown up into the air was met with the second hammer. This time, the hammer aimed towards the ground as it swung down.

Bang!

Of course, the struck monster crashed downwards. However, what greeted it was the same hammer as before. This time, it again, like before, swung upwards.

Bong!

It again flew up into the air, but ahead of it was again the same hammer which swung downwards once more. This repeated numerous times.

“Gugii! Gakii! Rugaa!” (Desert Monster)

As though they were playing ping-pong, the monster which had become the ball moved violently between the two hammers. But because of that,

Crack...crick.....crackle.....

Cracks appeared on the monster's body, and sand gradually began to fall off of it. And then a green liquid began to fall from the monster. It was the monster's blood. Its arm was bent, and its tail was crushed. The fact that its blood began to flow out meant that the sand it had been wearing had been completely removed.

It was hit by the hammer in the air one last time, and then slammed into the ground. Its face was warped in pain, and its body shook as it desperately attempted to stand up.

Kamui drew the two katana from his back, and took a deep breath.

“.....I'll end it.....Tou-chan” (Kamui)

After that, the monster perhaps felt fear from Kamui's killing intent, as it attempted to dive into the ground. However,

Pishii.....

Both of the monster's hands tried to dig into the sand, but after seeing the ground they froze. This was because the desert ground, which should have been burning hot, currently had, for some

reason, changed into ice and was releasing cold air.

“Like I’d let you dive underground” (Hiiro)

Kamui was also surprised as he gazed at Hiiro, who had squatted down and written something on the ground.

[Freeze] / 『氷結化』

The effects of the three word chain he had used for the first time. It had instantly turned the surrounding face of the desert into an ice field. The effective range was tremendous, and as far as he could see, had frozen even the area where the 『Ashura tribe』 was fighting.

And though everyone was bewildered at the sudden change in the situation, in truth the most bewildered one was Hiiro himself.

(.....to think that it would have this much power. How astonishing)

As expected, it did not affect the entirety of the desert, but even so, compared to when he had used one word, which affected only a four tatami space, it was a frightening degree of power. Though he kept a poker face on, that he was excited internally was Hiiro’s secret alone.

“Now! End it Dual blades!” (Hiiro)

At Hiiro’s words, he focussed once more, and poured strength throughout his entire body. Then he faced the monster and charged at full speed towards it.

“Guru!?” (Desert Monster)

It stood up as though it were flustered, but due to the sudden change in environment, and having received Kamui’s killing intent straight on, it fell into a state of confusion and its body stiffened.

“Haaaaaaaaa!” (Kamui)

Bwwooooooshhhhhhhh!

“Guraaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!?” (Desert Monster)

The two katana pierced through the monster’s core ball. Kamui grit his teeth as his face stiffened. Seeing blood fall from the monster’s mouth, whose face imitated that of his father’s, and the sensation as he cut through its life caused his expression to unintentionally darken.

After he slowly pulled out his pair of katana, the monster’s back folded and it collapsed facing upwards.

“Haahaahaahaahaa.....” (Kamui)

Although he should have saved everyone from the fear of the monster with this, Kamui’s face showed no delight, and his body trembled as he looked downwards and showed a downcast expression.

“Gufu!” (Desert Monster)

The monster vomited a large amount of blood from its mouth. And then its core ceased to move. At the same time, the sharp red eyes which had continued to be filled with hostility gradually changed into eyes hosting a purple light.

“.....Ka.....mui.....” (Rigund)

Even with this, Kamui said nothing as his eyes widened. And then, with a feeling as though he couldn’t believe it, Kamui stared at the fallen monster. The monster’s eyes alone turned towards Kamui.

“.....Kamui” (Rigund)

This time he wasn’t mistaken. That voice, and those eyes were, undeniably something that Kamui knew.

“Tou.....chan.....?” (Kamui)

With a clatter, the two katana that he had been holding fell to the ground. And then, he rushed over to the monster and came to his knees.

“Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

“.....Kamui.....I’m sorry” (Rigund)

“No.....no.....no!” (Kamui)

Again and again, he shook his head in denial. From his eyes, numerous tears fell.

“But.....you did well Kamui” (Rigund)

“Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

Hiroyuki and Silva approached the two of them. And then the two of them glanced at each other in surprise, and continued to quietly watch over them.

“I’m sorry.....because of me, you’ve had to go through such painful times.....” (Rigund)

“No.....no! Because I’m the chief.....I have to protect my comrades.....just like Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

“Hahaha.....I see. ....you’ve gotten bigger Kamui” (Rigund)

“To...Tou-chan.....” (Kamui)

“So you’ve become.....the chief.....haha, as expected of my son.....” (Rigund)

As a faint smile floated on his face, he slowly extended his trembling left hand and placed it on Kamui’s head.

“You’ve.....become strong” (Rigund)

“Hic.....sob.....” (Kamui)

He sniffed as his tears fell onto the sand.

“I was mostly.....unconscious, but I felt it. Your strength.” (Rigund)

“.....really?” (Kamui)

“Yeah, you’ve become strong but.....even so you’ve got a ways to go.....before you can reach my level” (Rigund)

“.....sorry. It would’ve been better.....if I could’ve released Tou-chan much sooner” (Kamui)

“.....Haha, I’m such a fortunate person” (Rigund)

“Tou-chan?” (Kamui)

“Unlike your mother who died so early on.....I was able to see your growth like this through these eyes” (Rigund)

Kamui’s mother passed away due to illness sooner after giving birth to him. After that, Rigund decided in his heart to raise him into a fine man. However, the incident with the desert monster occurred, and in the end he was only able to raise him with his own hands for a few years. To him, that was something he deeply regretted.

However, like this he was able to see Kamui’s splendid figure,

“This’ll be.....a great tale to tell her later” (Rigund)

By “her”, he of course meant Kamui’s deceased mother. Rigund put some strength into his arm and gently stroked Kamui’s head.

“Listen up Kamui.....” (Rigund)

“.....wha, what?” (Kamui)

“The main culprit that did this to me, that man.....beware of 《Scarface》 ” (Rigund)

“ 《Scarface》 .....” (Kamui)

Kamui recalled the person who had been standing atop of the Desert Tortoise that had attacked them. That person did indeed have a wound in the shape of a cross on his face.

“He.....said that he was testing something out. ....exactly what he was testing, I don’t know, but it’s definitely nothing good. But.....he said.....that he no longer has any business with this

desert” (Rigund)

However even so, he was saying that there was still a change he would come again, and continued to tell Kamui to be careful.

“It’s alright……I will……protect everyone” (Kamui)

Seeing Kamui’s expression full of determination, Rigund appeared happy as his face loosened.

“Haha, but you still have a ways. Your sand control is still –gufo!” (Rigund)

“Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

Rigund vomited blood once more in pain. His breathing became rough, and his legs began to crumble away like sand.

“Tou-chan! Your legs!?” (Kamui)

“Haahaaahaaahaaa……listen……Kamui” (Rigund)

“Tou-chan!” (Kamui)

“Listen……gohogoho! Haahaahaahaa……become much stronger……surpass……me” (Rigund)

“Tou-chan……ok……okay! I will I will! Aill……becwome……stwonger so……” (Kamui)

A large amount of tears and snot began to flow, and it was difficult to figure out what exactly he was saying, but Rigund was smiling.

“Won’t woose……to anywon……I won’t woose so! Thaths why……thaths whyyy!” (Kamui)

Already the area around Rigund’s neck had become like sand, which danced about.

“I’ll be watching over you……my beloved son” (Rigund)

And then, Rigunds entire body returned to the sand.



“Thathss whyyy! You don’t need to wowwyyyyy!” (Kamui)

At that moment, the battle with the desert monster had truly ended. It had a sorrowful conclusion, but even so, that which Kamui gained was great.

As Kamui watched the sand which danced into the sky, his mouth strongly tightened into an indifferent-like look, but it was evident by his expression that it had become the face of a man. While carrying what his father entrusted to him, it was the face of one who had gone through much and matured.

## Chapter 97: Rebound of Word Magic

Right after Rigund disappeared, Jin-u, who was healed with the word 『Complete Recovery』 | 『完治』, opened his eyes. Camus filled him in on the details. Jin-u ground his teeth as he regretted being unconscious the entire time this was happening.

“That’s how it turned out... but for Rigund-sama to smile in his last moments...” (Jin-u)

“.....Un” (Camus) [‘Un’ – Yes]

Jin-u closed his eyes and looked up, seeming to experience a flood of emotions, after which he exhaled softly.

“Thank goodness. Chief... sorry for causing you trouble.” (Jin-u)

“No. The one who should apologize... is me. Sorry... if I had been ready from the start...” (Camus)

“Chief...” (Jin-u)

“But, there is something that bothers me.” (Camus)

“What is it?” (Jin-u)

“What happened... to your wounds?” (Camus)

“A, aa... About that...” (Jin-u)

At that moment, Jin-u glanced at Hihiro. However, Hihiro simply stood there with his arms crossed and his eyes closed. Jin-u worried whether or not he was allowed to talk about it, however he remembered that he wasn’t specifically told not to.

(Before I lost consciousness Hihiro mentioned a debt, but...) (Jin-u)

After vaguely recalling what happened and looking at Hihiro’s attitude, Jin-u figured he could talk about it.

“Actually...” (Jin-u)

Upon being told that Hiiro was the one who cured Jin-u's wounds, Camus reflexively drew nearer to Hiiro.

"Hiiro!" (Camus)

"W-what?" (Hiiro)

"I have... a request!" (Camus)

".....Haa" (Hiiro) [Sigh]

Hiiro had a rough idea of what Camus was going to say.

"Please cure my people!" (Camus)

Hiiro expected it might turn out like this, however, he had already prepared himself for it when he healed Jin-u. Moreover, even if the 『Ashura Tribe』 was able to understand his ability, because of their nature, he did not think they would cause any problems. Besides that, there was also the fact that Camus had become Hiiro's subordinate and because his subordinate's tribe were under his jurisdiction as well, he was obligated to help them as well.

However, despite it being a request from his subordinate, Hiiro wouldn't work for free.

"Haa, I don't mind healing them, but only on one condition, okay?" (Hiiro)

"Just name it!" (Camus)

Hiiro wanted to tell him to think for a bit before accepting. However, for a man who boasts that he will do anything for the sake of his tribe, it was the obvious answer.

"...Understood. In that case, you must feed me delicious things until I am content. That's my condition." (Hiiro)

"Un un!" (Camus)

Camus' usual blank face turned into a slight smile as he returned a nod in return.

“Ohon! By the way, Hihiro-sama?” (Silva) [‘Ohon’ – cough to get someone’s attention.]

At that moment, Silva called out to Hihiro with a cough.

“What?” (Hihiro)

“For an old man like myself, are these circumstances not slightly harsh?”

Silva was looking at the surroundings while he said that. Speaking of which, Hihiro had completely forgotten about it. Currently the desert all around them was covered in ice. This is the result of using the word 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 with the recently unlocked Three Word Chain skill of his 《Word Magic》.

“Now that you mention it, how did this happen?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u tilted his head while shivering from the cold transmitted from the ground.

“This... Hihiro did it.” (Camus)

“...Eh? Chief, is that true? He... did this?” (Jin-u)

Jin-u was watching Hihiro and blinking in surprise but Hihiro ignored him and started to write a word. The word written was 『Origin』 | 『元』. The word that Hihiro always used to remove the 《Word Magic》 effects of 『Harden』 | 『硬』 and 『Extend』 | 『伸』.

However, the the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 activated like normal but-

Pachin! [Crack]

The character cracked and disappeared.

“...Nn?” (Hihiro)

Since the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 wasn’t effective, Hihiro had his hand on his chin while thinking. But then he felt pain run through his body like an electric current.

Abruptly, Hiiro groaned and fell to his knees, surprising everyone watching. However, this truthfully was not the first time Hiiro had felt this pain.

(A-as I though, it's a 《Rebound》, huh...) (Hiiro)

This was the 《Rebound》 penalty that 《Word Magic》 incurred if it wasn't properly completed. In order to confirm the effects of the 《Rebound》, Hiiro had purposefully triggered it in the past. If he tried to cast a spell and the characters or imagined effect were not adequate, the spell would fail like this one, inflicting pain and reducing his MP drastically.

Therefore, Hiiro was not particularly surprised by this. However, he was more concerned about why the spell wasn't effective. After that, Hiiro reassured the other three that he was okay before he began thinking again.

(It doesn't work? No... perhaps it's...) (Hiiro)

Thinking that, Hiiro wrote a word on the ground this time. After he activated it, the frozen ground instantly turned back to desert.

(Hmm, I see.) (Hiiro)

The word he wrote was 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』. Hiiro surveyed the surroundings. Everything seemed to have returned to normal.

(It seems that Three-Word spell effects can only be removed by using another Three-word spell. Well, they do have a lot of power, but...) (Hiiro)

Since even removing the effect cost a lot of MP, Hiiro noted that he better think twice before using Three-Word spells. After all, he had already used 600 MP casting 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 and, in order to reverse the effects, he had to use another 600 MP for 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』. Doing this unexpectedly took a total 1200 MP. An ordinary adventurer would be completely exhausted after doing that.

When the area suddenly turned back into desert, everyone was

dumbfounded – even Silva. Liliyn’s group, who were preventing monsters from passing nearby, also turned up.

However, Liliyn was running at them with great speed.

Dadadadadadadadada! [Footsteps]

Liliyn came up straight to Hiiro and grabbed him by the collar.

“Oi, Kozou! What was that just now!? That was your doing, right!?”  
(Liliyn)

Apparently, she wanted to know about 『Frost Conversion』 | 『氷結化』 and 『Desert Conversion』 | 『砂漠化』.

“Fun, I don’t really mind answering, but weren’t you going to analyze it by yourself?” (Hiiro) [‘Fun’ as sound effect.]

Hiiro showed a malicious expression and said that.

“Mu...Muu.... That’s... However...” (Liliyn)

Liliyn mumbled slightly as she remembered that she certainly had declared so herself. Hiiro made Liliyn release her hand from his collar.

“More importantly, what about the monsters?” (Hiiro)

“Ah? Kukuku, those small fries aren’t even enough to kill time.”  
(Liliyn)

“... I thought you said you were not even going to lift a finger?”  
(Hiiro)

“Mu... Shut up! I couldn’t stand watching the others deal with them so slowly so I gave them a hand! That’s all it was!” (Liliyn)

Seeing her face dyed red while she was desperately making excuses, Hiiro could only see her as a child.

“Nofofofof! I’m happy to return to your side, Ojousama!” (Silva)

“Nn? Aa, what... You were still alive, huh.” (Liliyn)

The light sound of a tongue clicking could be heard from Liliyn, but Hiiro thought that it was just his imagination.

“Nofofofof. That cold attitude is embodiment of Ojousama’s loneliness! It’s wonderful! This unworthy existence, Silva Plutis, will gladly lend my chest to bury the loneliness of my innocent tsundere ojousama. Ojousamaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Silva)

The butler jumped toward Liliyn like a frog. At that, a tremendous killing intent burst from Liliyn.

Pishun!

Liliyn vanished for a moment but then reappeared above Silva, who had been coming at her from above. She grabbed both of his feet and-

Dosun!

“Hauuuuu!?” (Silva)

Liliyn took a big swing with both of her feet and struck Silva’s groin. The men of the 『Ashura Tribe』 who saw that instinctively clenched their thighs together. Silva was completely knocked out, showing the whites of his eyes and drooling from his mouth.

“WHO-ARE-YOU-CALLING TSUNDERE OJOUSAMA!” (Liliyn)

While holding Silva’s legs and crouching on his groin, Liliyn performed a piledriver and planted Silva headfirst in a sand dune. His twitching lower body was the only thing seen above the sand.

(How pitiable... that perverted butler.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro imagined pressing his hands together and silently prayed.

“Feeeeeeee! Silva-samaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Shamoe)

Shamoe was the only one worried about Silva’s safety, but Liliyn came back over while dusting the sand off her clothes and said to her “Leave him, he’s already dead.” Being told that, Shamoe once more cried “Feeeeee!” in surprise.

“S-she’s quite something...” (Jin-u)

“U-un...” (Camus)

“I’m just gonna say this, but don’t lump me together with them.”  
(Hihiro)

Jin-u and Camus were stunned and muttering, however, Hihiro explained to them that he was completely different from those three. Hihiro wouldn’t be able to stand it if they thought he was like them.



## Chapter 98: Food! Ashura Nabe!

Upon returning to the Oasis, Sivan and the other's smiles were the first to greet them. Sivan heard the story from Camui, he was wearing a sad expression along the way, but Camui and the others were able to show a smile on their faces due to their safe return.

Afterwards, Hiiro was accompanied by Camui, Sivan and Jin-u to tend to the injured persons gathered at the Yurt.

“Listen up, what I will be doing must be kept secret” (Hiiro)

He gathered magical power in his fingertip

“I will only heal their injuries”

The 3 people nodded affirmatively.

Thus, Hiiro began healing each person. Applying “Complete Recovery” word magic to do so.

Prioritizing the children who are clinging to life. Their Mothers who are nursing them, hugging them tightly began to cry.

And then, not only the mothers but also everyone who was healed were bowing their heads repeatedly in gratitude to Hiiro.

“Rather than doing that, you should honor your promise, Nitouryuu” (Hiiro)

“Yes...I understand” (Camui)

“Hmm? What promise” (Sivan)

“Granpa” (Camui)

“What is it” (Sivan)

“Today we...Feast” (Camui)

“hmm?” (Sivan)

After that it became very busy.

The Ashura tribe's dream of peace was achieved, and to celebrate Camui hurriedly began preparing for a feast.

Near the riverbank, several people were preparing a large pot, it is there that all the ingredients will be placed and cooked.

According to Camui the Ashura Tribe use it to cook whenever there is a celebration or a feast.

Everyone from the tribe gathers around the pot to eat and celebrate.

It was also a time when their dead comrade's soul would be resurrected and be with them at the same time it was an opportunity for the people to get drunk.

The women take charge of ordering the men when cooking. The women yell at the men when they put in the ingredients too early or when their vegetable cutting was sloppy. It was like the men were useless when it comes to preparing food. But in actuality, the job of the men of the Ashura Tribe was normally to hunt or fight or to face danger while the women's job was to provide support. So, for this feast it was really the women that have the upper hand. The men have no choice but to do what the women say.

The stirring of the pot brought forth a nice smell that was carried by the wind that appealed to everyone. It was a strong curry like smell. The smell made their stomachs growl and their mouths drool which made them unable to work. Even Mikazuki was drooling which resembled a waterfall spilling out of her mouth.

"Hey, drooling bird"

"Gui~"

"What do you mean 'gui'? Do something about your drooling, there is a puddle of drool already on your feet."

There is a puddle of drool accumulating on Mikazuki's feet, but because Hiroyuki told her about it she made a slurping sound to

contain the drool, only to have it drip all over again.

Seeing this, Hihiro let out a sigh of exasperation.

“.....Hihiro”

The voice was from Camui who was coming closer.

“What is it” (Hihiro)

“About grandpa....thank you”

“Don’t worry about it”

Yes, After healing the seriously injured, Hihiro also healed Sivan’s injuries as it was a request of Camui. Even though Hihiro thought it was a pain to heal people over and over, he thought better of it.

But Sivan himself refused Hihiro’s healing, which surprise both Camui and Jin-u. They didn’t understand the reasoning behind it. But Sivan said

“This is a punishment that is etched in my body so that I would never forget.”

He was angered by his own inexperience. In truth, he could have stopped Rigund himself. If he had done so, Camui would not have experienced a painful memory. But his right leg was amputated and his eyes went blind. In the end I entrust everything to Camui. He wasn’t able to do anything. When its his time to go to the other world, he would think that those were not joyous years. Even though his body could be healed, he cannot move the way he can when he was younger. That is why he cannot forget his current useless self. He thought to himself that he will carry the burden of his punishment until he passes away.

But Camui ignored Sivan’s words. He grew up to be who he is now because of Sivan’s leadership. He was young when he lost his mother and his father. It was Sivan who guided him to adulthood. He disregards all of Sivan’s past mistakes like what he was taught a chief would do. Camui wouldn’t forget. Sivan doesn’t need those injuries anymore. That is why he wants him to be healed as soon as

possible.

Upon hearing those words, Sivan pondered for a moment. If he is to be healed, Camui must fulfill one condition. That his leg would be excluded from being healed.

Pointing to his artificial leg he said his request. Of course Camui protested against this. But this was the condition Sivan has set.

“This stubborn old man” Hihiro said, with Hihiro’s magic he can cure his blindness.

Even if his leg were to be brought back, he doesn’t have the power to fight like he used to before. But with his eyesight back he could at least see his family. That’s why he only wants his eyesight to be healed.

“But...you are stubborn...grandpa”

Camui was able to voice out a complaint.

“That is my wish” (Sivan)

“uuuu” (Camui)

“Just you see”

Children were laughing near the pot where Sivan was at. Of course many were surprised to see his eye sight back, but even so, his family was very grateful that he was able to see again.

“Grandpa looks happy”

Sivan had a smile on his face while he was playing with the children.

“With this...Its fine isn’t it?”

“Who knows, But that smiling face isn’t bad to look at right?”

“Yes...Hihiro thank you”

Hihiro closed his eyes and crossed his arms. That honest gratitude

made his back itch. It wasn't like him, but its not that bad of an experience, he thought.

Hihiro then heard that the pot was done. He opened his eyes, the thing he was waiting for is finally ready. He then hurriedly walked towards the pot. He saw a hot red liquid being poured unto a large leaf being used as a makeshift bowl. It was a stew like food that had many ingredients in it. It even smelled like beef stew.

He placed (tossed) a handful of soup into his mouth.

Even though it looks that way, it wasn't spicy, it had a sweet and spicy taste into it which makes you want to eat more. If partnered with rice, he doubts that he could have stopped eating. As he was thinking this, one of the children came over and offered him a plate with bread on it.

"Oniichan, here, take this"

The child gave it to him with a smile, and everyone around was watching them. The other guys were eating the bread along with the soup, like a fondue.

Hihiro also imitated them on how they eat.

"Oh?"

The moment he ate it, he instantly remembered. It was "Naan" (TL: unleavened bread) It was unmistakably curry with naan bread. Hihiro then proceeded to eat it vigorously.

"Hehehe, is it delicious?"

"Yeah.."

It was another child's face that showed up. This was one of the children that Hihiro healed. He came along side what it seems to be his mother.

"A, Mom! Oniichan said it was delicious!"

"Oh? That's great!"

The child replied with a smile.

“I really am truly grateful” (Mother)

In the Yurt he was thanked more than enough, they still couldn’t stop thanking him, Hihiro thought.

However he doesn’t feel that it was a bad thing.

“Don’t worry about it, by the way this Naan...no , this bread, what is it?”

“Oh, that is a fruit” (TL: nut;fruit;berry)

As she was saying this, she points to a tree. A palm tree from what it looks like. It was bearing fruits the size of volleyballs.

“That fruit needs to be heated at the right temperature for it to be soft like this, it is our staple food here.”

“I see”

“But in the soup there are (リモ－ネ rough translation: rimo-ne/lemon???), <green-crab’s meat> . <Torori shellfish> ,”

I see, Hihiro thought, so that must explain why I was able to taste a lemon like flavor in the soup. That was why it had that sour taste. That explains why there is a green crab meat in here. It was fun chewing the crab meat, wherein the taste spreads in your mouth. The in it was very very soft. It had that red coloring in it though when cooked, the red color dissolves into the stew and becomes white meat, it was the reason why the stew had that red color.

To top it all off the torori shellfish gives off the sweet and spicy flavor to the stew when cooked and mixed together with the other ingredients.

I didn’t see any other ingredients aside from vegetables but over all this soup was very well made. I didn’t even notice that I already had 5 servings of it.

As the mother and child’s explanation was over, they bowed and

went off somewhere. It was then when Lilyn was walking towards me with a grin on her face.

## Chapter 99 – Intoxicated Companions

Liliyn: [You're too soft towards children, aren't you? ]

Hiiro: [ Who knows. ]

Since it seemed like the discussion would drag on were he to react, Hiiro gave a half-hearted reply.

Liliyn: [ Nevertheless, Hiiro. ]

Hiiro: [.....]

Liliyn: [ Your ||Word Magic|| seems to be quite an amusing type of magic. ]

Apparently, this seems to be the main topic of the conversation.

Liliyn: [I was allowed this time to observe it for a long time on the way]

According to her, the Desert Monster had continued to call for reinforcements halfway through the battle. As Hiiro had left Camus to take over the fighting, Liliyn lost interest as she began to kill the swarms of monsters in an attempt to kill time.

But then, she was shocked when the ground changed to ice.

Liliyn: [ To think that you possessed that much amount of power, Honestly, it makes me more and more interested in you, you know that? kukuku ]

Hiiro: [Hmph! Still, wouldn't you agree your magic is something similar?]

As he was annoyed by the fact that she constantly kept pestering him with such notions, Hiiro began to retaliate with his own counterattack.

Liliyn: [ Nn? What do you mean by that?]



Hiiro: [ Don't play dumb, You must have noticed by now right? My magic is versatile. It is even capable of examining the information of the target. ]

Liliyn: [ ..... ]

She remained smiling silently.

Hiiro: [ Your magic ....what I saw from before when you dealt with Baron Bone Lizard, those huge spikes were not your magic ]

Liliyn: [ .....hou ]

Hiiro confirmed it by the glint in her eyes.

Hiiro: [ Do I have to say it clearly? Your magic is a unique magic .... the name is called |Fantasia Magic| ]

Then, he saw her tremble for the first time. Though her eyebrows twitched, as to be expected, her perpetual smile did not change.

Liliyn: [ ..... kukuku, somehow or other, it appears that you are more outrageous than I had imagined. ]

Hiiro: [ Right back at you.]

As a matter of fact, Liliyn already had a rough idea of how Hiiro's magic functioned. She anticipated that her magic's true nature might be discovered by Hiiro. Despite this, her heart stopped from Hiiro guessing it effortlessly.

Liliyn: ( He's interesting.... He's really Interesting!, Besides, I don't know whether or not this brat has noticed it, but apparently, he has a predisposition for getting drawn into problems easily. Kukuku, if I stay near this brat, I might be able to have an experience that's far more interesting than the boredom I've had to deal with.)

She chuckles at Hiiro's extremely rare disposition. She was convinced that more interesting things would happen after this.

After that, as they continued to glare at each other, Silva suddenly appeared and changed the atmosphere.

Silva: [ Nofofofofof! You seem to be having fun Hiiro~sama! nofofofofof! ]

Silva was unusually excited. Although Hiiro watched Silva with an annoyed expression, upon seeing the wooden cup in his hand, Hiiro began to speak.

Hiiro: [Oi, don't tell me that's alcohol?]

Silva: [ Nofofofofof! Ye~s that is righ~t! It has qui~te a good flavour! ]

Gulping sounds were heard as he drunk the alcohol.

Silva: [ \*puhaa~, this is irresistable~! ]

Shamoe: [ feeeeeeeee! Don't drink too much, Silva-sama~! ]

While Silva was dancing in ecstasy from the alcohol, Shamoe was frantically trying to stop him, yelling in a desperate voice. However, as this had hardly any effect at all, she was on the verge of tears.

Shamoe: [ U..u.uuu.. As I thought, Shamoe really can't do anything. I really am a Hopeless Maid .... \*sniff ]

Liliyn also had a strange tension about her. Then he took a close look at her, and she also had a cup in her hands. Apparently, she seems to have been drinking as well.

Liliyn: [ Yea, this is really quite delicious ]

Liliyn, who had the wooden cup before anyone was even aware, drank in a similar manner.

Liliyn: [ Hey, how about you? ]

Hiiro: [ Don't need it. I'm not interested in alcohol ]

Liliyn: [ humph, the gaki-bastard isn't? To think you cannot drink this amount of alcohol, what a boring guy. ]

Hiiro: [What was that?]

There was a vein popping out of his head.

Liliyn: [ You won't drink my alcohol.. aa~ iyada-iyada . There is someone here who does not understand how delicious this alcohol is,... well for a brat like you, I guess milk is preferable ]

As she began to leave after saying those words, Hiiro firmly grabbed Liliyn's arm.

Liliyn: [ mu? ]

Hiiro: [ Are you underestimating me? It doesn't mean that I cannot drink alcohol, I'm just not interested in it. ]

Hiiro forcefully took the wooden cup from her hands and drank it with great intensity.

Liliyn: [ O..Oi, that is... ] [1]

Liliyn seemed to be agitated by this situation, though Hiiro did not pay any attention to her.

Hiiro: [ puhaa~ how about that!?!]

Hiiro looked a little displeased. Although he had been boasting awhile ago, he did not actually understand anything about alcohol. He just poured it straight down his throat without tasting it.

However, in contrast to Hiiro, Liliyn was blushing as she glanced back and forth between the cup and Hiiro's mouth. [2]

Hiiro: [ uh? What's wrong Aka-Loli ? ]

Liliyn: [ It... it's nothing! ]

After she had said that, Liliyn took the cup from Hiiro and left.

Hiiro: [ ..... what's with her...? ]

Hiiro tilted his head, not really understanding what had just occurred.

A little ways away, Liliyn was motionlessly staring at the cup she

was holding with both hands.

Liliyn: [ N...No, though I do not have to worry about this insignificant little thing. But why does he not respond to this? Is he accustomed to it? No, no, to begin with, he doesn't care about this, still..... ][3]

Her face was dyed a gentle shade of red while she traced where his lips had been with the tip of her finger.

Silva: [ Onyaa~, O~jou~sama~! What seems to be the problem? ]

The butler who couldn't read the atmosphere showed up. He was grinding his teeth and his shoulders were shaking. He, the drunken butler who couldn't read the atmosphere, thrust out his mouth similar to giving a kiss.

Silva: [O~jou~sama, this butler will, without fail, embrace you and kiss your lovely mouth~]

Steam came out of Liliyn's head when she heard the word "kiss". Then, his lips that reeked of alcohol gradually approached hers. Seeing that, a vein appeared on her head.

Liliyn: [ hohou.... Do you want to kiss that much? ]

Silva: [ \*muchuu~ ]

Liliyn: [ Then, to your heart's content! ]

Liliyn embraced Silva with her small body. [4]

Silva: [ O, oooo~! Thi... This is quite assertive! ]

However, for some odd reason, his body was somehow floating in the air.

Silva: [ nofo? ]

And while in that position, the ground approached with a terrible speed. No, it was his very own body that was approaching the ground.

Silva: [no, no fuooooooooooooooooo bugh!?!? ]

As it happened, Silva's face pierced the ground, silence enveloping the surroundings. Liliyn looked down on the body of Silva with her arms folded.

Liliyn: [ Just die in the ground already ]

The |Ashura Tribe| were dumbfounded when they saw the situation. The children who saw Silva's body stuck in the ground found it amusing and began to poke his body.

Hiiro: (What are those guys doing....)

Hiiro seems to have been amazed at the situation and let out a sigh.

Hiiro: (And, this fellow...)

When Hiiro glanced to the side, what he witnessed was Shamoe, breathing deeply while sleeping with an adorable expression on her face.

Hiiro: (haa, they're all the same as always)

As if troubled, Hiiro placed his fingertips onto his temples and shut his eyes. Still, he noticed a warmth spreading throughout his body, most likely caused by the alcohol. As the day ended a pleasantly cool breeze began to flow, resulting in a nice feeling. Thus, he thought that such a day was not so bad as he admiringly gazed at the night sky.

The next day, Hiiro and his companions decided to continue traveling because they can finally cross the desert. However, those who expressed their misgivings about the situation were Camus and the children.

Camus: [Hiiro... Let's be together.][5]

Hiiro: [ Impossible, There are things I have to do. ]

Camus: [ ... I heard about it yesterday. You're traveling the world.  
]

Hiiro: [ That's right.]

Kid 1: [ Who cares about it! You get to live with us! ]

Kid 2 : [ Right, Right! ]

Kid 3: [ Don't go Hero! ].

Before he had noticed, Hiiro's name seemed to have spread. Ever since yesterday the children have been happily shouting 'hero'.

Camus: [I also want to go.... But I..]

Hiiro: [ You're right, you'll protect your tribe right? ]

Camus: [... Un.... However.... I'm Hiiro's subordinate. ]

He looked down solemnly as he said that. Everyone understood how greatly he wanted to be with Hiiro.

Hiiro: [ Nitouryuu ]

Camus: [ What? ]

Hiiro: [ If we meet again and you have become stronger, then I will call you by your name.]

Taken backed, he suddenly looks up at Hiiro

Camus: [ Really!? ]

Hiiro: [ Ah, yes, so do the things that you need to do. ]

Camus: [ .... Un! I.....We were saved by all of you. Therefore... This favor... I will return it someday... Surely... Without fail! ]

Hiiro: [Well then I shall wait without any expectations. ]

Hiiro's cheeks slackened slightly as he spoke.

Following this, Sivan opened his mouth to speak to Liliyn.

Sivan: [Liliyn, although I'm not worried about you, it appears the

ambitions you spoke of before have yet to be realized]

Liliyn [Humph, I'll realize them eventually ]

Sivan: [ hohoho , when that time comes, by all means, I will lend you my power. ~nou]

Liliyn: [ .... That's natural. Since the old days, you've owed me for many things. ]

Sivan: [That's true.....be in good health. ]

Liliyn: [Don't go and become cowardly, alright?]

Sivan: [ Like you can talk, Loli-baba. ]

Liliyn: [ Shut up, you Damn Serious-jiji. ]

As they said thus, they both directed a smile at the other. This might be their way of saying their farewells. Following this, Hihiro mounted Mikazuki.

Camus: [ Hihiro.... ]

Hihiro: [ What? ]

Camus: [ When you get into trouble ..... I will come running to your aid. ]

Hihiro: [ ..... Later ]

Camus: [..... Un! ]

Camus' expressionless face changed to a smile. The children by his side were also smiling as they expressed their gratitude. Naturally, the others did as well. Together, they all sent off their tribe's benefactors.

Hihiro: [Let's go.]

Mikazuki: [Kui!]

Liliyn: [ Farewell, Sivan ]

Silva: [ nofofofo! Those were wonderful people! ]

Shamoe: [F-f-f-farewell to all of you!]

Thus, the four departed from the |Ashura Tribe's| village. Following this, Camus and the others waved until their backs disappeared beyond the horizon.

Camus' Perspective

Sivan: [ They left already?]

Camus: [ n..... ]

Camus' expression had a small trace of loneliness, it was the face of a man hiding a certain determination. Following this, he turned around to face everyone.

Camus: [ Everyone! Let's go report everything.... to the |Grave Tower|! ]

Thereupon, everyone raised their voices in strong agreement. They wanted to tell their wonderful experiences to the companions who were resting at the |Grave Tower|, yet, the true reason for the visit was because they wanted to let them see the growth of the Chief of their tribe. In addition, they needed to make a new grave for Rigund, Camus' father.

Peace returned to the desert, although there were still monsters that naturally wandered the sands. So as not to lose to the monsters, Camus decided to work harder for the sake of prolonging the |Ashura Tribe's| prosperity.

Camus Monologue

I'm also greedy like Hiirou. I've determined again that I will defend everything as long as these hands reach them. And I look forward to becoming even more powerful so that Hiirou will call me by name when we meet again.

I will proudly meet my friend someday [6]



# Arc 3: The War Between Races

## Chapter 100 – After Half a Year

Upon leaving the desert, an immense forest lay in front of them.

“By the way, Aka-Loli” (Hiiro)

”What?” (Liliyn)

“I’m letting you be the guide, but I’m wondering, how long will it take to get to the 【Demon Capital】?” (Hiiro)

“Aa? Well, that place is our final destination. However, the demon continent is larger than you think. So be prepared because it will take quite a while to get there.” (Liliyn)

Apparently they had to stop at various locations before arriving at the 【Demon Capital】. The demon continent is much larger than the other continents and contains many settlements. It is clear that, it will take them a very long time if they want to explore all of it.

Contrary to his words, Hiiro wasn’t in a rush to complete his journey, nor did he have any objections to Liliyn’s idea of wandering around the demon continent.

“I don’t care how many months it will take. It’s more whether or not it would be interesting.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, Do you think it’s even possible to experience it all in a few months?” (Liliyn)

“..... Anyway, I said I’d leave it to you and I have no intentions of changing my mind.” (Hiiro)

“I see, so you are ready to go, then we are leaving.” (Liliyn)

“Hey, don’t say things like that one after the other.” (Hiiro)

”Leave me alone! Wasn’t this all your idea!?” (Liliyn)

While talking and riding on Mikazuki, Hihiro seemed to have a bit of an attitude. As a result, Liliyn ended up getting angry and yelling at him.

” Nofofofof! I am deeply moved. To be able to see ojou-sama so delighted. Nofofofof!” (Silva)

” Where did that come from! Are you asking for another piledriver, you Damned Pervert! ” (Liliyn)

” Nofofofof! That was harsh! ” (Silva)

” W-we should all be nice to each other! ” (Shamoe)

Hihiro lets out a small sigh.

” ... Let's go, Drool Bird. ” (Hihiro)

” Kui... ” (Mikazuki)

Hihiro ignored the shouts of the two people there with Liliyn and forged ahead. This convinced him that no matter what adventure lay ahead, it would not be peaceful.

( How long until we reach the 【Demon Capital】 ) (Hihiro)

While considering that, he looked up at the clear sky. Unexpectedly, he wondered whether or not the skies over the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 continents had been as tranquil as this. Looking forward to the day he returns to those places, he continued his journey.

### Evila's Perspective

About half a year had passed since Hihiro's party left the 【Ashura Tribe's】 village.

And now, both the 『Humas』 and 『Evila』 had arrived at a major crossroads. Meanwhile in the 【Demon Capital Xaos】 , the ruler was having a meeting with the leaders of the 『Evila』 .

” Then, let us start the 『Evila』 conference. Naturally, we are here

to let everyone discuss their position on the conference with the 『Humas』 which will happen two weeks from today. ” (Kiria)

The one who indifferently declared that was the aide standing alone next to Demon Lord Eveam, Kiria. Although her face was unreadable, somehow there was a feeling of tension around her.

” At last! It has come to this. ” (Eveam)

Eveam said thus with her eyes closed, emphasizing the heavy emotions in her voice. She slowly raised her eyelids, with her golden eyes fixed on the 『Cruel』 Brigade.

” If this conference goes smoothly...we will be one step closer to peace. ” (Eveam)

“n~ That might be so, but My Queen ~m ” (Shublarz )

It was Shublarz 《Rank 5》 who replied in a seductive tone while crossing her arms under her unrealistically full yet firm inhuman orbs.

” What’s wrong? ” (Eveam)

“Are you really sure it’s safe? ~m ” (Shublarz )

Everyone seemed to agree with Shublarz’s words and looked to Eveam, waiting for her response.

” Of course it’s risky. The conference will take place in the 『Humas』 continent, and the number of guards I can bring is limited. So, on the appointed day, only Aquinas, Kiria and Marione will accompany me to the conference with the 『Humas』 . ” (Eveam)

” Well since the holders of 《Rank 1》 and 《Rank 2》 are going, along with the self-styled strongest aide Kiria-chan, then it might be safe after all. ” (Greyald)

《Rank 6》 , the dark-skinned Greyald, said those words.

” By the wa~y, I wonder if Teckil has something to say about this?

” (Shublarz)

Like usual, Teckil seemed to be absent this time.

” Well, his detailed report has been received. He heard that the king is planning something dangerous. ” (Eveam)

” Wai...wait a minute. Is that really oka~y? ” (Shublarz)

Shublarz’s eyes opened in shock as she asked this.

” If it’s about that, it’s alright. Don’t you agree, Kiria? ” (Eveam)

” Yes, perhaps this is in regards to the previous matter, the reason why we are completely untrusted. Therefore, as soon as we attempt to do something, they will have a strategy to apprehend us immediately. However, if we don’t do anything, they are unlikely to execute their plan. ” (Kiria)

” And you rea~lly believe that? ” (Shublarz)

Although it was a natural response for Shublarz, it was Marione who scoffed and denied those words.

” fun~, I don’t know what the lowly 『Humas』 are hiding, but as the guard, I will put an end to them if by any chance I obtain information of what they are planning to do.” (Marione)

” Ooh Very nicely said, I just hope you will not cause any trouble for Her Majesty when you’re in the 『Humas』 continent. ” (Greyald)

” Oi Greyald, do not say such careless things. ” (Ornoth)

It was 《Rank 4》, Ornoth, who chided him for his words.

” Yeah, yeah, but it would be nice if things weren’t too boring, right? ” (Greyald)

After saying this, he fell prostrate onto the table, maybe because things had become tiresome to handle. Laying there, it seemed he was done talking about this.

” I know Greyald is very worried. However, I believe in the 『Humas』 ” (Eveam)

No one showed any reaction to these words. Still, just for a little Eveam had a slightly sad expression.

” And above all, I believe in all of you. No matter what happens, it'll be alright if everyone is with me. ” (Eveam)

Although everyone kept quiet this time too, her fearless atmosphere was transferred to everyone else. Their expressions seemed to convey that goes without saying.

” It is clear that nothing will happen if we don't take the first step. I'm doubtful that this conference will lead immediately to peace but it will allow us to learn more about each other. Thus, as a representative of the 『Evila』 I will not show an ashamed appearance. It is an opportunity to show them who we really are. ” (Eveam)

Everyone faintly returned a nod to Eveam's unwavering conviction.

” Well then, I will explain how the appointed day will go. ” (Eveam)

### Humas Perspective

On the side of 【Victorias】 , a similar meeting took place. The meeting was naturally to discuss the conference.

The members gathered there were all well known and influential. King Rudolph, Minister Dennis and Judom Lancaster, commanding officer of the 《Humas Armed Forces》 and 《Guild Master》 , were attending. Additionally, the four heroes summoned by the country were attending.

As Minister Dennis was managing the meeting, he was the first to speak.

” I expect that each of you understands the reason we have gathered here today. Two weeks from now, we will finally have the conference with the 『Evila』 . However, we don't think that it will

go smoothly. Like the last time we did this, they may betray us. No – I think the possibility of that is high. ” (Dennis)

” One second, Minister Dennis – ” (Judom)

It was Judom who stopped Dennis’s speech. Dennis unpleasantly turned his gaze on the one who stopped his speech.

( So he’s the 《Guild Master》 , Judom Lancaster...) (Taishi)

Aoyama Taishi, one of the heroes, quietly watched Judom.

(Although he’s sitting there, I didn’t realize his aura was this oppressive. Moreover, what’s with him, is this person really retired.....) (Taishi)

Taishi heard about him from the stories of Vale Kimble, the commanding officer of the second armed forces. Seeing Judom in person made Taishi understand he needed to take more notice of him.

Judom was a retired adventurer. Although he heard that he was an amazing man in the old times, he also heard that he became the 《Guild Master》 and then retired from the front lines. Therefore, he hadn’t expected him to be the same person anymore, but right now, even though Judom was suppressing them, Taishi could feel open ambition and hidden fighting spirit leaking out from him.

His huge arms were like logs, it was not hard to imagine being crushed by those strong arms. Three more people had similar thoughts and swallowed nervously while watching Judom.

” It’s true that before, we were betrayed when we acquiesced to the demands of the 『Evila』 for a conference. However this time, the intention of the successor of the Demon Lord was concluded to be based on the need for world peace” (Judom)

“Although that seems to be your answer, isn’t that just wishful thinking on your part?” (Dennis)

“That’s right. Hopes, ideals, dreams, and many more. Aren’t people beings that support each other to grow? If you do not believe that

there is hope, we won't advance at all." (Judom)

" ....." (Dennis)

Seeming annoyed, the minister glared at Judom while clenching his teeth.

" Try to believe in your partner. Everything starts from there, wouldn't you agree? " (Judom)

" What will you do supposing the partner betrayed you? " (Dennis)

" But isn't that the reason why I'm here? Haven't I said to the king many times that I'll protect him no matter what happens? " (Judom)

King Rudolph had quietly shut his eyes, but now he slowly opened them.

" For that reason, you were called here. " (Rudolph)

Having said that, he once more shut his eyes. Although Judom and Rudolph are old friends, Judom frowned anxiously at the attitude of his friend Rudolph.

(What are you planning Rudolph...) (Judom)

Although he had been observing Rudolph intently, Judom's next question was addressed to Dennis.

" There must be something else you want to say, right? " (Judom)

" ... There is only one thing I will say. As instructed, I will manage this meeting to make sure it succeeds without fail. " (Dennis)

Even though he isn't a part of the royal family, he was able to plainly express his opinion. Having seen this, Taishi was flabbergasted.

(What in the world is with that person's presence....) (Taishi)

He had obviously been overwhelmed by Judom's existence.

However, the same could be said of the other commanders present. Those who knew the legends caught their breath in silence. Needless to say, Vale was also fidgeting anxiously.

After those events, the meeting advanced relatively smoothly. Before the meeting was adjourned, they discussed the timetable for the appointed day, the deployment of the soldiers, how to deal with abnormal situations and other similar topics.

After it ended, Vale faced the heroes, his cheek still cramped due to his anxiety about the back and forth arguing of Judom and the minister.

” Anyway, although it was my first time seeing Judom up close, he was quite an outrageous person. ” (Taishi)

” Ahaha, did Taishi-sama also think so? It’s probably because he is the king’s best friend, that’s probably the reason he was able to have that kind of attitude... ” (Vale)

Certainly, Vale knew that he was that kind of rash character, that is why he was fearful of what would happen at the meeting.

” Setting that aside, it’s finally happening~ ” (Shinobu)

Those words were put out by the hero with cat-like eyes and a Kansai dialect, Akamori Shinobu.

” Yes, in any case in this meeting , something will definitely change. ” (Vale)

” Since about a month ago the atmosphere in the castle has been tense, but right now something doesn’t feel right. ” (Chika)

It was another of the heroes, Suzumiya Chika, who pouted while saying those words. As she said, there might be a war with the 『Evila』 if we do something imprudent at the conference. In that case it would be stranger if the atmosphere in the castle had not changed. Rather, Vale slowly realized that Chika noticed the problem in a calm manner.

” Chika-sama, in two weeks, I believe your power will be greatly



needed by the King. To get where you are, you have overcome many battles and quests, and I'm certain you have become stronger as a result. Supposing we are betrayed, then please protect our King with your strength. " (Vale)

In response to Vale's earnest plea for her assistance, Chika stared blankly back at him, but then smiled after a while and answered his words with a nod.

And then, a person whispered to Taishi in a manner unnoticed by Vale.

"Ne, nee, if Vale's saying that, was he not informed? " (Chika)

" It doesn't look like it. Although the king didn't say who he did or didn't tell, since he wasn't informed, I don't think we should say anything. " (Taishi)

" Is that so? Then, this one is off-the-record, alright Shuri? " (Chika)

" I...I understand. " (Shuri)

Suddenly perplexed by her words, Minamoto Shuri, who is one of the heroes, replied while watching Shinobu. Although right now Vale was talking with Shinobu, Shuri was relieved because Shinobu is not someone who indiscreetly discloses information.

" However, I will never approve of the 『Evila』 . " (Taishi)

" Yeah, we'll definitely win, right Taishi, Shuri? " (Chika)

" Ou! " (Taishi)

" H...Hai! " (Shuri)

The three people all looked at the determined expressions of the others.

## Chapter 101: Prelude to the Meeting

Around that time, King Rudolf and the Cabinet Minister Dennis met in a room. Both were feeling the tension in the air and wore stern facial expressions. However, Dennis was the first to speak

. “I hope that this would go well but...” (Dennis)

“Yes...and to achieve that we have been training the heroes for half a year”(Rudolf)

“As a trump card...?”

Rudolf then shook his head a little.

“No, The Evila knows about the existence of the Heroes, we must be cautious, which is why the Heroes should hidden as much as possible” (Rudolf)

“You’re right, its possible that the Evila cannot do anything about it. But, what do you think that man is planning” (Dennis)

“Judom?” (Rudolf)

“Indeed” (Dennis)

Rudolf let out a weak laugh

“That guy thinks that I am soft, but he is the one who is soft, in a week’s time you’ll see.” (Rudolf)

“But he was once the strongest adventurer. I heard that he can break a man’s head with just his bare hands. What a feat” (Dennis)

Dennis doesn’t often think about Judom but his reputation and abilities were no errors in judgment. But as what is expected of the Cabinet Minister, he only supports the king.

“Though I have faith in him, the Evila will undoubtedly make a move. That time will come and I will be right.” (Rudolf)

“Within these two weeks, we must make our move” (Dennis)

“Aahh , we were talking about our Hero trump card earlier, but our real trump card is...” (Rudolf)

While they were talking

\*Sound of footsteps\*

Footsteps can be heard from behind, a certain person was standing behind the two people in the room, but they weren't surprised at all, because he is an acquaintance he was given permission to be in the room. The person then looked at Rudolf

“This guy is the real one.” (Rudolf)

He was just standing there, grinning sinisterly.

After a few days had passed, a young person who was self-reflecting came into view; he tilts his head looking at the sight before him.

(So, those are the heroes...where are you going at this hour?)

He had unkempt blue hair and long bangs that covered his round glasses. This young man was at the Victorias' birthday festival, the painter that Aoyama Taishi met, Nazaar Skride.

He came early in the morning to the vicinity of the castle. He had his sketchbook in hand, seemingly for the purpose of drawing. But it was only a disguise to cover his real intentions: monitoring and surveillance.

Very soon, the meeting between the Humas and the Evila would take place. However, there seems to be someone plotting to interfere with the meeting which has to be someone with a degree of influence over the meeting. Because of that information, he had to go on surveillance. But since it was early in the morning, there were not many people leaving the castle. He was then surprised to find the heroes leaving the castle, he thought that he did the right move getting there early.

(What does King Rudolf intend to do? There are still 10 days till the meeting, yet, what is he planning to do?)

After the heroes went out, Nazaar immediately hid himself from their view. The heroes then proceed to go into town.

(I wonder what's going on here)

As Nazaar thought those things, he began drawing on the paper. It was a drawing of a small bird. Then, the small bird unexpectedly came to life and rose out of the paper and began flying through the air. It eventually landed on Nazaar's shoulder.

"Immediately report this to Kiri-chan, please."

"Chi chi chi" (Small Bird)

Chirping loudly, as if saying that the small bird had already understood, it then proceeded to fly away again towards the sky.

(I'm interested with the way things are moving, for now I'll prioritize the heroes)

That was what Nazaar thought, he faced the direction Taishi and the others were headed to and began following them determined to find out what they were planning to do.

"Your Majesty, Its terrible!" (Kiria)

Seeing her own aide, Kiria, suddenly barged into her room with a terrible expression, the devil king Eveam, instinctively knitted her eyebrows and asked.

"Why are you in such a rush Kiria?" (Eveam)

While catching her breath Kiria faced Eveam and lowered her head.

"Please forgive my sudden entrance upon your room, but your Majesty needs to hear this immediately" (Kiria)

"What happened?" (Eveam)

Eveam listened intently.

“Yes, the truth is...” (Kiria)

As Kiria was concerned of the people that might be around, she began whispering to Eveam. As soon as Eveam heard the information, she had a grim look on her face.

“What did you say!? But no... I see, so the Humas began making their move.” (Eveam)

Eveam bit her lip as her fists were shaking.

“But your Majesty, they might also have a reason for being cautious” (Kiria)

“...You might be right, there was a case of last time too. We should be more cautious as well, the heroes begun to move after all, their target would probably be...” (Eveam)

“Yes”

Kiria's throat produced a gulping sound.

“To destroy the border” (Eveam)

“You're saying... they'll destroy the bridge” (Kiria)

“Yes... Now that our border with the Gabranth is gone, it is the only thing that maintains peace.” (Eveam)

“If the meeting has evoked tension among the Humas, then there would be an intention to bring down the bridge” (Eveam)

“The Humas' trump card. Considering that Evila's greatest adversary are the four heroes, once they are deployed, it wouldn't be wrong to think that way. ” (Kiria)

In truth, Eveam expected that the Humas would make their move. In the event that the meeting with the Evila don't go well, then immediately destroying the bridge wouldn't allow the possibility of an alliance. The direction of the discussions would turn and be

about war and the annihilation of the Evila. Eveam foresaw that that must be what the Humas are planning.

“However, for the meeting to proceed, Eveam-sama must choose a few but elite persons to accompany you. The Cruel’s First and Second should go. I will also be at your side, if the other side starts an all-out war, I am strong enough not to be killed easily.” (Kiria)

Yes, there is a given limit as to how many people can go, however if Evila’s strongest be there as an escort, even if a fight breaks out there is no way they could lose.

“No matter how many powerful people Victorias be prepared with, without the Heroes, there wouldn’t be a problem.” (Kiria)

Kiria’s words were accurate. Even the Victorias’ renowned military would be a disappointing match for the Evila’s top.

“...but for the Heroes to confidently go to the bridge, they must have a plan in hand don’t they?” (Kiria)

“I wonder, no, If I remember correctly, the place of the meeting is...” (Eveam)

“Aah, Its at the <Ordine Grand Temple> (TL:Could be Sanctuary/Shrine). In a sacred place separated from Victorias the <Ordine Holy Ground> (TL: Could also be Holy Land) the place where god rests, It will be held at a place called the <Room of Sanctuary>” (TL: Can also be Sacred precinct) (Kiria)

“If I’m correct, it was once before, the place where Humas went to seek aid in times of misfortunes and calamities, It was said to be the place where the hero turned savior perished. Worshipping that hero eventually gave rise to the <Holy Ground>.” (Eveam)

“Indeed, there the Hero’s power is still lingering, I’ve heard that the power to seal demons <Holy Ground> is being hidden there. Moreover, the <Room of Sanctuary> has the power to prevent the use of magic; it seems that the power to seal demons is strong there.” (Kiria)

“If that is the place chosen, then in the worst case scenario we

would not be able to use our magic.” (Eveam)

“Yes, probably, also if we brought weapons it will only instigate trouble so we cannot do that. In short we will be going there completely unarmed.” (Kiria)

“So you’re thinking that we’d all be murdered...is that right?” (Eveam)

Kiria was a bit uneasy.

“You...can say that, if the Humas sensed hostility within us, we’d all die in an instant” (Kiria)

For a while only silence followed, It was then that Kiria spoke.

“Maybe it’s best to discontinue the meeting.” (Kiria)

No matter how you think about it, the Evila is at a disadvantageous situation, while in terms of physical strength the Evila is superior to the Humas however when magic cannot be used, those that have the numbers advantage will have the upper hand. The small numbered Evila would be up against the stronghold-like enemy force. If a large number of people simultaneously attacked, then protecting Eveam would be a serious concern.

But as Eveam was thinking, Kiria said those words, she began shaking her head in denial.

“No, even in the beginning I didn’t think it would go smoothly, at any rate I will break the curse like chains that has plagued us since ancient times. Though I understand that it will be difficult to accomplish” (Eveam)

“your Majesty...” (Kiria)

“Even so I’ve decided. In order for peace to triumph, the establishment of an alliance is necessary.”(Eveam)

“.....”

“I do not expect the Humas to fight recklessly on purpose. I think

that nobody has the desire to kill anyone. But the Humas won't believe that so easily, I am afraid of both. Which is why it was natural to place my hand on various things. ”

The Humas also think that it will be to beneficial if the establishment of the alliance end peacefully. However, they still can't completely trust the Evila. Until the establishment, no, even after the establishment of the alliance, it will still probably take a long time for them to trust again.

There is great distrust being held. That is why it was natural to accept the outlook that the meeting would fail. And when it fails, even a little, the Evila would not be taken for granted.

“That is why, for them to trust us even a little, it will be good not to make moves that would create strife, we will only convey the alliance's purpose, if that happens I'm sure they'll understand. We must, we must do that in order for the alliance to go well!” (Eveam)

Kiria managed to make a faint smile seeing Eveam speak her decision straight forwardly and in a calm manner.

“As expected of our majesty. Then I too pledge to offer my heart, body, soul and dedicate it for peace.”

Kiria said those words as she was kneeling on one knee.

“Aa, I'm counting on you, Kiria. I am placing my trust in you the most, it is because you are at my side, I able to move forward. Let's attain peace together.”

“With pleasure”



## Chapter 102 – The Demon Lord, to the Human World

Nazaar's Perspective:

The 『Humas-Evila Conference』 was one week away and Nazaar had been following the four heroes for three days. He was currently dismayed by the scene that lay before him.

They had arrived at the bridge connecting 『Humas』 and 『Evila』. In other words, the continental border, and presently on the bridge stood a demon deployed by the 『Evila』 tasked with safeguarding the bridge from the 『Humas』.

The deployed 『Evila』, Iraora, was a former member of 『Cruel』. Therefore, the 『Humas』 should have known of his extraordinary strength and that of the other people stationed there. It was because of this that the bridge hadn't been destroyed yet.

However, Nazaar was most surprised when the heroes began to cross the bridge without hesitation, with the Conference drawing near, Nazaar was dumbfounded by their reckless actions which might call out such violence.

Curious, Nazaar let a bird drawn from his sketchbook fly near the heroes to examine the situation. He used the bird as his eyes and ears for short-range surveillance and information gathering. Naturally, the heroes were unaware of this fact.

As the heroes continued across the bridge, they gradually approached Iraora, who stood at the center of the bridge. And Nazaar was shocked by the words that the heroes proceeded to say in his presence.

“Are you Iraora?” (Taishi)

“Yes, that's me.” (Iraora)

“I see, so you are one of their accomplices then?” (Taishi)

What did he just say? Nazaar ruminated those words several times in his head.

( Ac....Accomplice? E....eh?.....Wait a minute~su..... speaking of accomplice... what do does he mean~su? ) (Nazaar)

Nazaar became more perplexed as he was unable to understand the meaning of the shocking words that came from Iraora.

“Those guys are already inside. Hey, guide them.” (Iraora)

After Iraora issued the command to one of his subordinates, that person urged the heroes to follow him.

Iraora let the heroes pass through as he has given them consent to cross over the bridge and across the 『Evila』 border. In other words, Iraora let them set foot on the 『Evila』 continent.

( Those guys....? Who are those guy~su? ) Nazaar

Before he realized it, Nazaar was sweating profusely. He felt thirsty as he groaned in anxiousness. The situation had pushed him his wits' end.

“What is the meaning of thi~su? Why did Iraora let the heroes pass? Moreover, who are those guy~su.....?” (Nazaar)

Though confused, he nevertheless drew a picture in his sketchbook.

“A..-Anyway the situation has escalated abnormally ~su! If I do not pass on this information as soon as possible, I have a bad feeling something dangerous will happen in 『Evila』 ~su!” (Nazaar)

Suddenly, his neck was seized from behind.

” -!? “(Nazaar)

Nazaar had not sensed anything. Certainly, he might not have been able to think calmly due to the situation at hand, but even so he was confident that he was not so weak as to be defeated by just anyone.

Teckil's abilities were specialized for covert operations which required that he erase his presence, using this ability, he should have been able to sense his enemy before being assaulted. However, Teckil had not been able to detect the attack's approach and was now caught by an unknown assailant. He was now experiencing his worst nightmare.

" .....Who...are....yo~su? " (Nazaar)

Somehow he managed to squeeze out a few words. As he turned around to look at his assailant, he heard a muffled voice.

" Your role ends here. Now sleep.....Teckil " (???)

Gasping for air, he was shocked by these words.

" hah....ha-hah.... you ~su-eem to know about me..... I'm honored~su..." (Teckil?)

While pretending to be tough by forcing a smile, he quietly moved his hands. Then,

\*gusa!

All of a sudden, a sword rushed out from his textbook, impaling the head of the person behind him. He used this chance to slip out of its hold, then he scrutinized his opponent.

"Fuu, Unpreparedness is one's greatest enemy. Don't think badly of me~su. I cannot afford to die in such a place like thi~su." (Teckil?)

Since the robed opponent had covered its face with a hood, he decided to remove it first. Although the opponent was completely silent, blood continued to flow from its head. He approached the unmoving existence, intending to remove its hood. However,

gashi!

His arms were grabbed

"Na-!?" (Teckil?)

He forcefully pushed away the arms of what seemed to be of a dead person, managing to slip out of its restraint and retreated back. Then, he examined his opponent at a distance. It pulled the sword that was stuck in its head while swaying like a ghost. Although blood spouts with a slosh on his head, it throws the sword on the ground nonchalantly.

(It responded~su.... Moreover, Is there a creature that can remain so composed after having its head pierced~su... ? ) (Teckil?)

He felt his spine shiver from the eeriness of the opponent.

“As one would expect of 《Rank 3》 Teckil of 『Cruel』 . I was surprised when you killed me that time” (???)

” ..... It appears that you are mistaking me for someone el~su ” (Teckil?)

He readied his stance as his opponent knows completely about his identity. He plans to remove the fluttering hood to see it's identity. But a mumbling laughter was heard as he considered whether his intention was conveyed to the opponent.

” Apparently, you seemed to be concerned of my identity. In respect for the honor of killing me that time, I will show it to you ” (???)

As it said so, the hood was slowly raised. Nazaar who is now named Teckil watched with a stern expression, he stiffened as his face saw an unbelievable one.

” i.....i.... impossible... why..... why are you here in this pla~su...!?” (Teckil)

While Teckil is still stiffened from that revelation, his opponent instantly vanished.

” ....Eh?” (Teckil)

Teckil noticed the opponent already behind him.

ton....

Teckil felt the impact on his neck, his consciousness wavering violently at the same time. As his vision gradually whitened Teckil was reminded of the faces of Demon Lord Eveam and his companions.

( At this rate.....everyone will.....) (Teckil)

However, his resistance was futile. Shrouded in darkness, he fainted and collapsed.

Evila Perspective

The day of the conference was five days away. At the provincial border between 『Humas』 and 『Evila』, Eveam lead the 《Demon Lord Forces》 as she crossed the bridge. On the way, she saw a familiar face at the center of the bridge.

” Iraora, Isn’t there any change? ” (Eveam )

Iraora who is in charge of guarding the 【Mütich Bridge】 was greeted by Eveam. He had a large build and was probably more than 3 meters tall. He bowed in loyalty to Eveam.

” Ha! As a matter of fact, several days ago the heroes appeared at the 【Mütich Bridge】 ” (Iraora)

” Aa, we were informed of that. And then? Did anything occur? ” (Eveam)

Thereupon, Iraora shook his head clearly.

” Nay, They were only watching over the bridge as a precaution ” (Iraora)

” So the heroes are on the other side? ” (Eveam)

Eveam spoke those words as she watched the long bridge ahead. The 【Mütich Bridge】 has an identical length with the bridges on the other borders. The bridge is ten kilometers long, starting from the center where they are located, there is a distance of five kilometers at the end of the bridge.

” I fear that it’s likely that...” (Iraora)

” Is that so..... as i thought, it will really happen, they are planning to destroy the bridge..... Kiria ” (Eveam)

” Hai ” (Kiria)

Kiria, Eveam’s aide, approached Eveam, her snowy white hair swinging.

” The demand of the other party said to only bring the 『Cruel』 to the 『Humas』 . However, Ornoth, Shublarz and Greyald will be left here.” (Eveam)

Nearly everyone reacted to Eveam’s words, and Iraora who currently had his mouth opened asked back. He was visibly upset by her words.

” Does Her Majesty not believe in me? ” (Iraora)

Hearing her words, Iraora was under the impression that Eveam did not trust him with defending the bridge alone. In other words, the mere idea of him being defeated by the puny 『Humas』 offended him.

” No, that is not the case ” (Eveam)

” Then, I wonder why? ” (Iraora)

” Know your position Iraora! ” (Marione)

It was 《Rank 2》 Marione who threw such words with anger.

” Right now you are merely the commanding officer of 《Bridge Security Forces》 . You should refrain from advising your superiors like when you were from 『Cruel』 -! ” (Marione)

Iraora and Marione momentarily glared at each other, sparks flying between them.

” Enough both of you! ” (Eveam)

Her words succeeded in quelling the situation, causing them to avert their eyes from each other. However, based from their expressions, they were not satisfied. Especially Iraora, who was evidently irritated.

” Haa, Listen well both of you. We are of the same kind. Although he may have been demoted, Iraora is clearly contributing for the sake of 『Evila』 . I cannot disregard his opinion as he is an 『Evila』 ” (Eveam)

Marione harshly grunted and relented.

” About Iraora’s question awhile ago ” (Eveam)

” Ha! ” (Iraora)

” I fully understand the extent of your power. But I cannot let this bridge be destroyed ” (Eveam)

” .... ” (Iraora)

” Against the usual 『Humas』 , you and your soldiers would have be more than enough. However, this time, there are the heroes whose power is still unknown to us. Although, we investigated on them, especially the past 6 months, the 『Humas』 have been concealing how the heroes fight ” (Eveam)

The spy named Teckil was made to invade the 『Humas』 for gathering information, there was no one who knows the hero’s strength other than him who have the information. However, Teckil who excelled in covert operations had a hard time on gathering information as the 『Humas』 have greatly covered up their private lives.

The other party doesn’t want the current abilities of the heroes to be known. Therefore, as far as the heroes are concerned, it is too risky to leave it all to Iraora as the ability of the heroes are still unknown to them.

” The heroes are an unknown factor. Moreover, all four heroes can use light magic based from the investigation. Although I trust you, I cannot help but become anxious. Please do understand ” (Eveam)

” ..... As you will” (Iraora)

Reluctant as he may be, Iraora expressed his acknowledgement by bowing in Eveam’s presence.

” Regarding that matter, Ornoth, Shublarz and Greypald, I request all of you to please defend the bridge” (Eveam)

” ” ” Ha-! ” ” ” (Three People from 『Cruel』 )

Eveam nodded in consent as the three people answered her words. Thus, Eveam and her escorts advanced to the bridge. Thereupon, only one person halted and approached Ornoth, he was 《Rank 1》 Aquinas.

” What’s wrong Aquinas? ” (Ornoth)

Naturally, Ornoth who found his behavior suspicious inquired about it.

” Ornoth, you must return to the country ” (Aquinas)

” Ha-? What in the world are you saying? ” (Ornoth)

Aquinas examined his surroundings as he lowered his voice, Ornoth did the same.

” Anyway, I have a bad feeling about this ” (Aquinas)

” A bad feeling? ” (Ornoth)

” Yes, This conference... perhaps will become a rough one. Moreover, an inordinate one. ” (Aquinas)

” ..... Your basis? ” (Ornoth)

” I have already said it, a bad feeling ” (Aquinas)

Ornoth quietly watches the eyes of his friend Aquinas. And, he smiled as he shrugged his shoulders.

“Tentatively, I’m assured that this is the Demon Lord-sama’s orders? ” (Ornoth)



” I apologize. However, you’re the only one rely on this request  
“(Aquinas)

” ..... Understood ” (Ornoth)

” I entrust it to you ” (Aquinas)

” However, you must guard Her Majesty without fail. ” (Ornoth)

“It goes without saying” (Aquinas)

Aquinas rushed to Eveam’s side after saying those words. And Ornoth stared at that back with a stern expression.

( Certainly this conference seems to be too quiet as it conversely gives off a sense of eeriness ) (Ornoth)

The anxiety of Ornoth is directed to the 『Gabranth』 . As they will be troubled if this conference is established. There is no way they would stay silent and observe. Although it was Ornoth who thought that, it will not be strange even if they managed to come here and drop the bridge,

( Certainly this would become rough. Aquinas, I entrust Eveam to you ) (Ornoth)

While Ornoth thought so, he quietly watched again his friend as they faced their destination.

## Chapter 103: Humas-Evila Alliance Conference

When Eveam and company crossed the bridge and looked at the 『Humas』 troops stationed there, her body stiffened. Everyone was looking at each other warily.

(The heroes are...) (Eveam)

Eveam started looking for the heroes who were supposed to be around. Her gaze fell upon a group of four.

A tall boy with brown hair and a handsome face that is likely popular with the ladies. An energetic girl, sporting hair with the same shade of brown. A girl with long black hair that reached down to her waist. A girl with cat-like eyes and slightly wavy black hair that hung over her shoulders.

(So those are the heroes...) (Eveam)

Eveam wore a poker face as she moved only her gaze towards the direction of the 4 heroes. As the other side had noticed her stare, they returned a probing gaze.

She judged that they were the Heroes because she sensed great magical power emanating from them. In the first place she, as the Demon Lord, belonged to a race that excels in sensing magic. Thus, since birth, she had possessed great magical power and precise control over magical elements.

Using this ability, she was able to discern the quality and quantity of the Human's magic simply by observing them.

Eveam stopped walking as a 『Humas』 soldier stood before her.

“I presume you must be Demon Lord Eveam?” (Captain)

The soldier before her was most likely a captain. Unlike the grey armor that the others wore, only his had a different shape and color. One other person, like the individual before her, was also

wearing red armor. It was likely that the individual was also a captain.

“I am obliged to attend this meeting, My name is Eveam Gran Early Evening, the governing ruler of 【Demon Capital: Xaos】” (Eveam)

After she spoke thus with a dignified countenance, the people nearby couldn't help expressing their admiration. This girl was their enemy, the 『Evila』's ruler. Her beauty and her ambitions as a ruler, however, had unintentionally captivated the people around her.

According to Aquinas, Eveam was still lacking dignity as a ruler. Even so, the humans were forced to understand that she was an existence that clearly lived in a different world from them.

It was not just Eveam. The presence of the two at her side, Aquinas and Marione, had caused the humans to swallow their breath. As expected of those who held such rank, the captains who wore red armor did not show any change in facial expression. However, beads of sweat could be seen dripping down their forehead.

“You will be guided to the 【Sacred Oldine】 from here. In accordance with the agreement, from here onwards, only 6 『Cruel』 guards will be allowed.” (Captain)

“I understand. From here I will be accompanied by Aquinas, Marione, and Kiria. Only these 3 people. Kiria is not a 『Cruel』 but she is my aide. I wouldn't mind making a separate letter for her approval ” (Eveam)

“I understand. you have brought fewer people than we expected. Please follow me” (Captain)

They proceeded to follow the person in red armor. Eveam walked past the heroes, but Aquinas did not follow suit. He stopped for a moment, looked towards them, and frowned.

“What's wrong?” (Kiria)

The one who asked was Kiria.

“...Nothing, I’m just a little worried.” (Aquinas)

“So those people are the heroes” (Kiria)

Kiria said this while also staring at the four heroes.

“It seems that way, but...” (Aquinas)

“What is it?” (Kiria)

“Nothing... Let’s go” (Aquinas)

“Ah, Yes” (Kiria)

Aquinas glanced at the heroes once more before following behind the others.

(Strange... It is certainly strong... Their magical power is strong, however the amount of magical power between the four of them is too equal.) (Aquinas)

What Aquinas felt was an enormous magical power. He felt its strength exceeded even that of 『Higher Evila』, but the amount of magical power that the four people had was too equal.

(Are all people from another world like that? Or...) (Aquinas)

The four people’s appearances certainly looked different, but something was amiss in terms of their respective magical power. He felt a sense of unease, not only because there were four people with the same amount of magical power but because they were also heroes. However, it was not impossible for four people to have an equal amount of magical power.

(...Ornoth, I’ll leave the country to you. In exchange, the princess...) (Aquinas)

A flame quietly flickered in Aquinas’ eyes. He still felt uneasy in his heart but he had to proceed to the conference. That was Eveam’s will. There was no way of knowing if anything would happen at the conference, but he was determined to protect Eveam at all cost.

Naturally, at this time he had no way of knowing what his decision would bring.

【Sacred Oldine】; the place where the hero was summoned into this world, 【Edea】, in order to save the 『Humas』 who lived there, and the rumored place where the hero lived out the rest of his life.

When the hero died, he transformed his own body into light and poured it down onto the land. The land was originally corrupted; there were poisonous marshes as well as many ferocious monsters crawling about. It is told that the hero, wanting to rid the land of corruption, used the last of his strength in order to purify it.

Thereafter, many plants grew and flowers blossomed unto the land, turning it into a lively and vibrant place overflowing with nature. At the same time, monsters had become unable to approach the land and magic had become unusable in that area.

The people believed this to be a result of the hero's desire for peace, declared the land to be 【Sacred Ground】, and constructed a building to praise the hero. That building is called the 《Oldine Grand Temple》. It is located in the center of that land, where the hero's power is said to be the strongest.

The first generation head priest and founder was a companion of the Hero. His name was Ronise Gilviti. The 【Sacred Oldine】 was made as a symbol of peace. Even now it constantly attracts many worshippers and tourists. Even the upper echelons of society use the place to conduct important discussions and negotiations.

Right now, the 【Sacred Oldine】 would be the place wherein a big turn of events would occur.

This is the place of The Conference.

The Conference between the 『Humas』 and the 『Evila』 to establish an alliance treaty between them.

Inside the Ordine Grand Temple, there is a place called the 《Sacred Room》. It was here that the two representatives of each

race would meet.

Overseeing the conference as a neutral party and standing between the two groups was Portnis Gilviti, the current head priestess. As the name would imply, she is a descendant of the First Head Priest Ronise Gilviti

The priestess wore a white robe embroidered with gold thread. In her hand was a staff with a large emerald green ball fitted on the top.

She was a fair-skinned woman envied by women with brownish complexion. She was around the age of 30, possessing a dignified expression appropriate of her age, and a face full of slender contours along with a well-shaped nose. It was as if every part of her body was designed for elegance.

“Well then, as of this moment we shall begin the 『Humas-Evila Alliance Conference』” (Eveam)

Her voice was heard clearly by everyone.

In the 《Sacred Room》 was a large round table. The representatives of the two races seated themselves opposite of each other, while Portnis sat down in a position where both parties were in her field of view.

King Rudolph of the Humas and Demon Lord Eveam of the Evila were the only ones who sat down. The other people present were also offered a seat but they remained standing. It is likely they remained standing so that it would be easier to react if something were to happen. Both parties were thinking the same thing.

Rudolph was accompanied by his Cabinet Minister Dennis, Guild Master Judom, as well as 5 other guards, including the Captain that guided Eveam and her companions to the room.

Eveam's party was comprised of her aide Kiria, 『Cruel』's 《Rank 1》 Aquinas, and 《Rank 2》 Marione.

Judom focused his gaze upon Aquinas. Aquinas, likewise, looked back at Judom, and the two of them stared each other down.

(It's been a while, Aquinas) (Judom)

Judom didn't put his thoughts into words, but conveyed it through his gaze. Aquinas, as if he understood what Judom wanted to say...

(You seem to be in good shape, Judom Lankars) (Aquinas)

They conversed using only their eyes, almost as if they were former comrades in arms. They've fought against each other in life or death battles so they knew each other well.

(I didn't think we'd meet again face-to-face like this, but he's definitely changed) (Judom)

Judom didn't show it, but he was observing Aquinas. He felt that Aquinas was extraordinary, even among the Evila. Judom wasn't the only one thinking such thoughts.

(Although I had thought so before, you're such an accomplished warrior that I wouldn't have thought of you as a simple 『Humas』)

Aquinas also had similar sentiments towards Judom. Both also understood that the other had grown much more powerful than the last time they met.

(...This guy has an impressive presence as always. If I was an ordinary guy I would wither in his presence, but...) (Judom)

Judom looked towards the soldiers nearby out of the corner of his eye. As he expected, there were those within the group who were being overwhelmed by Aquinas and Marione's presence.

(Can't be helped... I guess. If there's anyone that could oppose them, it'd be...) (Judom)

As he compared the five soldiers, three of them stood out to him.

(Only these three) (Judom)

There were only three soldiers who were standing tall without wavering, despite facing the strongest of the 『Evila』.

(Their levels seem to be on the higher side, but... They won't be much help if we have to fight against them) (Judom)

They were likely the best of the best in the 【Victorias】 army, but they still didn't match up to Aquinas and the 《Cruel》 guard. This was true for Judom as well, but on the off chance Aquinas and the others were to go on a rampage he wouldn't be able to handle them alone.

The use of magic and bringing weapons into the 《Sacred Room》 is prohibited so they could only rely on their physical abilities in a fight. Taking that into consideration, Judom still felt that he would only be able to hold off Aquinas alone.

That is why they chose 5 commanding officers. However, the question remained whether or not they were capable of dealing with Marione, the aide, and the Demon Lord herself.

In fact, Judom suggested a plan to include some of his most trusted and skilled adventurers in the conference, but his plan was rejected by both Cabinet Minister Dennis and King Rudolph. King Rudolph stated that he only wanted people he trusted by his side and wouldn't give Judom's plan further consideration.

For now it was important that Judom carry out his mission. That is to be vigilant of their surroundings and to watch the conference closely and attentively.

“This conference is held in mutual agreement by both parties. The purpose of this conference is to form an alliance in order to establish peace. Is this correct?” (Portnis)

Portnis looked at each of the parties involved. Eveam returned a powerful nod towards Portnis in response. Then Portnis looked over to Rudolph's side.

His eyes were closed, but as the silence continued he slowly opened them. As if reflecting on his thoughts, he slowly spoke



“...There is something I would like to ask, Head Priestess”  
(Rudolph)

## Chapter 104: King Rudolf's Motive

“.....what might that be?” (Portnis)

Everyone's glances gathered upon Rudolf.

“This 《Sacred Room》 is easy to enter, but to exit, it requires the permission of the head priest, correct?” (Rudolf)

“.....that's how it would appear to be.” (Portnis)

But Portnis wondered why she suddenly asked such a question as she slightly inclined her head.

“And the number of people that can enter, including the Head Priest-dono, is 13 people correct?” (Rudolf)

“.....haa” (Portnis)

“Furthermore, no information at all can enter in from the outside.....it certainly is a room worthy of being called a separating space” (Rudolf)

Judom knitted his eyebrows at Rudolf's words.

(Rudolf.....just what are you.....?) (Judom)

That was something that everyone here, no, since the Cabinet Minister next to him was faintly smiling, it was likely that he knew something. Even so, nearly everybody was dumbfounded by Rudolf's strange remarks.

“.....no, I just wanted to confirm it in advance. Sorry for taking up your time” (Rudolf)

“N-no” (Portnis)

He was not entirely aware as to what purpose Rudolf would have to confirm such a thing. However, Judom noticed Aquinas' eyes had narrowed. Similar to Judom, he had some doubts about Rudolf's strange conduct.

(.....Rudolf, you.....)(Judom)

Judom didn't want to believe it but.....as he thought that, he figured he would wait-and-see a little longer while watching over him.

“Now then, let us once again introduce ourselves properly”  
(Rudolf)

“I am the sole king unifying the 『Humas』 , Rudolf van Strauss Arclain, the king of 【Victorias】 ” (Rudolf)

After Rudolf introduced himself, Eveam followed suit and opened her mouth.

“I am the lord controlling the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , Eveam Gran Early Evening. On this occasion, for having responded to the request of the 『Evila』 , I am truly grateful king of Victorias”  
(Eveam)

She moved her head and gave a slight nod.

“No, there are also many merits for us if we were to make an alliance” (Rudolf)

Even though their Maou was using polite speech, seeing Rudolf fail to do the same irked Marione, giving him a dubious feeling as he knit his eyebrows in displeasure. However, Aquinas had noticed his displeasure and gave a tiny shake of his head, telling Marione not to draw attention to it.

Eveam herself did not appear to mind at all as she opened her mouth once more.

“I am happy to hear you say that” (Eveam)

“However” (Rudolf)

“.....?” (Eveam)

“There are also those who do not desire this alliance” (Rudolf)

“I am fully aware of that” (Eveam)

“That alone shows how heavy the wounds we have inflicted upon each other are.....and how deep they are” (Rudolf)

“Yes, but I feel that healing those wounds requires not vengeance, but a time of peace” (Eveam)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“We were once at conflict. It is precisely because of this that we so calmly accepted things that could only be described as inhuman. As sadness and hatred simply swelled, it only invited more conflict and strife. This can no longer be allowed. If someone does not break these chains of conflict, a time of peace will never come!” (Eveam)

Everyone listened carefully to her declaration.

(This girl.....so this is the current Maou) (Judom)

Judom heard her idealistic thoughts and felt that she was voicing them in earnest. In the first place, to come to the enemy territory, the human continent, with only these few people was close to suicidal behaviour. Yet, even so, she proceeded with the conference. It was precisely because she truly wanted to establish an alliance that she had come here like this to meet the representative of an enemy country.

Having been given overwhelmingly disadvantageous conditions, if they poorly presented some half-hearted nonsense, the Evila would instantly stir up animosity. In this situation that could potentially lead to further conflict, for her to shoot off such words without a single lie showed how Eveam herself truly believed in them.

(.....hm? Have I seen this girl somewhere.....?) (Judom)

Judom looked at Eveam as he began to have a sense of déjà vu. He had a feeling that he had met her before, yet it had just slipped through his mind. And then-

(I remember now! Oi oi oi oi, don't tell me that the Jou-chan from that time was the Maou?) (Judom)

As his eyes widened in realization, he looked at her once more to confirm it. And with that, he was sure that she matched the girl from his memories.

(.....I see, so the Jou-chan from that time has.....grown up splendidly) (Judom)

It didn't appear that the other side had realized it yet, but Judom had undoubtedly recognized her as someone he had met in the past. Having seen how big and fine she had become, he somehow became very happy. However, now was not the time to be losing himself in nostalgia. Right now he had to concentrate on the conference.

“Even if we were to form an alliance, there will definitely be some resistance towards it. What do you think about that?” (Rudolf)

At Rudolf's query, Eveam answered without any agitation.

“It's true that even if we form an alliance, those who can't accept it will definitely hold some misgivings. In addition, there is also the issue regarding the 『Gabranth』. However, if we continue to fight like this, 【Edea】 will be further wounded, and the places where people can live will disappear. As this has actually occurred in the past, I'm sure you too, can understand that” (Eveam)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“It is because they couldn't let that happen that our predecessors joined hands to bring about a time of prosperity, and shaped the current world as we know it. It can be said that the reason why we are standing here right now is undoubtedly thanks to the hardships of our predecessors building up the world of today. Do you believe that it is alright for us, their descendants, to destroy that?” (Eveam)

Everyone silently listened to her words, yet, Rudolf merely closed his eyes. The Cabinet Minister Dennis made an extremely complicated expression.

“Peace cannot be easily restored. However, us joining hands may become the foundation for it. I'm sure that there will be many problems, but one day, without fail, it will become a world where

anyone can live in and laugh!” (Eveam)

It was a beautiful ideal. A pure ideal. An ideal that anyone would think to be sweet. If realized, it would definitely be the epitome of peace.

(That’s wrong……you were a bit too hasty, Maou-chan) (Judom)

Judom looked at her with a slightly sober expression.

(It’s true that it is indeed a magnificent ideal. But, by just a little……you over-spoke) (Judom)

Indeed, it was true that the ideal she spoke of was magnificent. However, she had not properly answered Rudolf’s words. The resistance that would be birthed by the alliance. With regards to how to deal with those problems, she had simply enumerated her own ideals.

If one were to rephrase it, when asked about the internal strife that may occur, she had answered, “It’s alright, it’ll work out somehow” as she had displayed baseless self-confidence.

Judom had also wanted this conference to occur. Naturally, he approved of the alliance. However, for that to occur, he was not indifferent to the problems that would arise from it. That was exactly why he wanted……prior to making the alliance, he wanted to discuss about the near future.

First they had to come to know each other better. Trust was something that was gained gradually over time. But she was only looking at the pretty parts of the alliance. Honestly speaking, it was dangerous.

If you only listened to the ideal, anyone would want to jump at the contents. However, the other party was the representative of a whole country, someone who was shouldering the fate of an entire species. Seeing her simply being forward with her ideals, even Judom grew slightly anxious.

(Don’t be hasty, Maou-chan. You have time. You mustn’t be hasty with the alliance. First you have to come to know each other, then

prioritize solving each and every problem, one after the other. Today is simply a discussion for that) (Judom)

It was as if Judom was thinking of advice for his own daughter. Seeing her, he unconsciously wanted to help guide her. She was naïve, but mysteriously had something that attracted people. Though she was young, you could understand that she was the Maou.

“.....Maou Eveam-dono” (Rudolf)

Suddenly, Rudolf spoke with a murmur.

“Wh-what is it?” (Eveam)

“You.....have you ever lost anyone important to you?” (Rudolf)

“.....hah?” (Eveam)

After wondering what he was suddenly asking, she accidentally responded like that.

“From what I’ve seen, you are pure. The previous Maou seems to have been your brother, but your way of thinking is completely different” (Rudolf)

“.....” (Eveam)

“You have some wonderful thoughts. It truly is a pure white.....and beautiful ideal” (Rudolf)

At that moment, the sound of Dennis swallowing nervously could be heard. It appeared that something had made him nervous, but it was likely that the ambition poured into his words had affected him.

“I will ask you one last time. Have you ever lost anyone important to you?” (Rudolf)

“That.....I have. All of the 『Evila』 are my family. There have been many that have died” (Eveam)

“.....I see. Then could it be that, from now on, if any of your family were to be killed, then you would find something like revenge to be meaningless? Would you believe that everything could be resolved with words.....and be able to talk to their murderer while laughing?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf silently opened his eyes and sharply gazed at her. It felt as though his intention was to not let her get away with only a small amount of effort.

After being asked such a question, Eveam’s face darkened slightly at the contents, yet-

“.....I do not know if I would be able to laugh. No, it is likely that I wouldn’t be able to laugh. However, I won’t let any of my family get killed! I swear on my name as the Maou Eveam, that I will stop any kinds of actions that would give rise to the desire for revenge!” (Eveam)

For a while, the two of them glared at each other as the silence continued. The first one to open his mouth was Rudolf.

“It seems that you are still quite young” (Rudolf)

“I am fully aware of that! And I recognize that there are parts where I am still lacking! However-” (Eveam)

“This conference” (Rudolf)

“.....hah?” (Eveam)

Rudolf interrupted her and spoke.

“The 『Gabranth』 will definitely try and put a stop to this conference. Are you already aware of their movements?” (Rudolf)

“Amongst my subordinates, there is one that particularly excels at gathering intelligence. I have had that one observe movements of the 『Gabranth』 ” (Eveam)

“Oh, and?” (Rudolf)



“During these past few months, we have also been moving behind the scenes. We have also leaked out false information to confuse them” (Eveam)

“Ooh, now that you mention it, you did do something like that” (Rudolf)

In reality, using influential people from their respective sides, they had performed multiple clandestine meetings already. It was precisely these meetings which were performed to trick the 『Gabranth』. In the clandestine meetings, the conference location, date, time, and other fine details were discussed. Then, that information was stealthily carried to the 『Gabranth』 continent by Eveam's subordinate.

Of course, the 『Gabranth』 would not have just taken the information up front and should have done some of their own investigating. The information they gained on the conference's date and time was the same, but the location was different. A few days earlier, notice of the 『Gabranth』 advancing their army towards the false location of the conference based on that information had arrived. Amongst them, the figure of the Beast King had been detected, so it appeared to be certain that they had been successfully manipulated by the false information.

“Right about now, the 『Gabranth』 should be raiding the pre-prepared false conference location. However, though their appearances may be similar to ours, the ones over there are entirely different people.” (Eveam)

“Hou, though I did hear that someone specializing in fine doll making had created those fakes.....do they resemble all of you so much?” (Rudolf)

“Of course. Unless you actually touch them to confirm, you can't tell based on sight alone” (Eveam)

“Hohou, you certainly do have some excellent subordinates” (Rudolf)

At Rudolf's words, Eveam gazed with slight pride at Kiria. Although

Kiria too had attempted to modestly back off, seeing as her face had just slightly loosened, she may have been a little happy. Indeed, the one who had prepared the dolls was none other than Kiria.

(Like he said, I have gained a fine family) (Eveam)

As Eveam though so, a sense of gratitude welled up once more towards Kiria and co., who had continued to support her.

“If that’s the case, then are you saying that there are no problems at all?” (Rudolf)

“Yes” (Eveam)

“For either the 『Gabranth』, this conference, and.....even us 『Humas』?” (Rudolf)

“.....? Just what might you be saying?” (Eveam)

Eveam felt a sense of unease from his sudden shift in tone, with its seemingly hidden meanings. As she did so, he suddenly raise his hand. Then, as if to say it was a signal, one out of the five commanding officers swiftly ran from their place.

Thinking that they may possibly be aiming for Eveam, Aquinas and co. instinctively came closer to her to protect her. However, the officer wasn’t aiming for Eveam.

“Wh-what are you!?” (Portnis)

The one being targeted was the witness, Portnis. No, to be exact, it was the staff that Portnis held. As they had simply moved too quickly, Portnis’s staff was stolen abruptly, without her being able to do anything about it.

Seeing this scene, majority of the people there were taken aback as they simply stared. They couldn’t understand at all what exactly he was doing.

“Destroy it!” (Rudolf)

The one who said that to the officer was Rudolf. The officer gave a

small nod as he raised the staff and..

“Pl-please stop it!” (Portnis)

Pariiiiiiiiiiiiiin!

Portnis’s words of restraint were useless as the staff was thrown onto the ground. The round ball fitted on its tip shattered and its pieces scattered about.

“Well done” (Rudolf)

At Rudolf’s words, the officer simply said “Yes!”, and returned to his original position. Seeing that, as expected, Judom raised his voice.

“Oi Rudolf! Just what are you thinking!” (Judom)

“That’s right! Are you not aware of exactly what that staff is!” (Portnis)

As Portnis continued after Eveam, Rudolf gave a faint smile as he responded.

“I know what it is. That’s why I destroyed it” (Rudolf)

“Wha!” (Portnis)

“Rudolf.....could it be that you.....” (Judom)

After seeing Judom tremble, and the astonished Portnis, Eveam finally began to speak.

“Ju-just what does this mean? What are your intentions, King of Victorias!” (Eveam)

All of the 『Evila』 glared at Rudolf. However, even now, his smile did not falter.

“With this, for 24 hours, this place has become a completely isolated world from the outside” (Rudolf)

“A completely isolated.....world?” (Eveam)

Eveam repeated those words, but the one who answered was Judom.

“This 《Sacred Room》 is a place where an ancient hero sacrificed his body, and is the place where holy power is the most strongly concentrated” (Judom)

“Judom.....” (Aquinas)

As Aquinas murmured so, Eveam was taken aback as she looked at Judom.

(I-I see, I felt like I had seen him somewhere before, but he’s the one from that time.....!?)

Up until now, she had no idea exactly who he was, but upon remembering the past happenings, Eveam understood that it was no surprise that he was here.

“You are.....Judom Lankars?” (Eveam)

“Ou, that’s right. But well, you got bigger. When I think about how the Jou-chan from then has now become the Maou-chan, it makes me feel that the flow of time is fast. Don’t you think so too, Aquinas?” (Judom)

“Fu, truly” (Aquinas)

Aquinas agreed with him as he faintly smiled.

“Your Majesty, right now is not the time for that” (Marione)

After being chided by Marione, Eveam returned to her senses and decided to ask for the continuation of the explanation.

“Th-that’s right, sorry. Judom-dono, could you please continue with your explanation?” (Eveam)

“Ahh, about this place, since the hero’s power was simply too great, upon entering, in order to protect the people inside, this 《Sacred Room》 puts up a powerful barrier” (Judom)

“.....isn't that a good thing?” (Eveam)

“It's true that if I tell you just that, this place seems to be the safest possible location, as you can be protected by the hero's power. However, once you enter, you can't get out of here for 24 hours” (Judom)

“Wha!? Is that true?” (Eveam)

As he turned toward Eveam and saw her face warped with shock, a bitter smile floated upon his face.

“Yeah, isn't that right, Portnis?” (Judom)

“Yes, that's right Judom” (Portnis)

Seeing their intimate exchange of words, anyone would be able to sense that the two of them were likely acquaintances.

“For 24 hours, this room will function to create an absolute protective wall. Originally, this staff.....”

While saying this, she picked up and showed everyone the staff which had been smashed on the ground.

“The tip of this staff had a ball on it right?” (Portnis)

At Portnis's question, Eveam nodded in response.

“That ball was something created from the 《Hero's armour》. If I had to say, it was a 《Hero's relic》. Thanks to that ball, if you were to enter into this room with me, then you would be able to freely exit this room” (Portnis)

“Th-then.....” (Eveam)

“.....yes, once 24 hours have elapsed in this 《Sacred Room》 after entry, the barrier will weaken for just a short time. Then we will be able to exit from here but.....right now.....” (Portnis)

Swallowing the words that the ball was now broken, Portnis made a disappointed face as she hung her head in shame. Following this,

Judom open his mouth angrily.

“Rudolf, you bastard, you aimed for this from the beginning right? Now that I think of it, initially you had acted strangely when confirming things with Portnis. That was a hint of your plan to do this, wasn’t it?” (Judom)

Indeed, Rudolf had confirmed with Portnis the detailed workings of the 《Sacred Room》 which should have been irrelevant to the conference itself.

“Dennis, you knew as well, didn’t you. And that lot over there too” (Judom)

He glared at the Cabinet Minister Dennis and the five commanding officers. As he did so, the six of them began to chuckle.

“I won’t ask what exactly you’re scheming by shutting us up in this kind of place. Rudolf, you’ve really done it now, haven’t you?” (Judom)

At Judom’s words, Rudolf chuckled.

“He’s done it now? Judom-dono, just what do you think the King of Victorias is.....?” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty, please try to think about it a little” (Kiria)

“Mu, then do you know, Kiria?” (Eveam)

After being scolded by her close aide, Kiria, Eveam pouted slightly.

“Of course. It is likely that he, no, they.....are planning on betraying us” (Kiria)

“Wha!?” (Eveam)

With sudden realization, she turned towards Rudolf. He then

“Hahaha, like you should be the ones to speak of betrayal. Your people have practically patented the art, have you not?” (Rudolf)

“Kuh! King of Victorias! Why would you do such a thing! In the first place, just what do you plan on doing by locking us into here!” (Eveam)

“Do you still not get it, Maou?” (Rudolf)

“.....?” (Eveam)

Everyone paid close attention to the movement of Rudolf's mouth. As his lips slowly began to move, shocking words entered Eveam's ears.

“It's war” (Rudolf)

## Chapter 105: Beginning of Betrayal

The 【Mütich Bridge】; the bridge that connects the Humas and the Evila continents. Usually Evila are stationed there, and as such it is impossible for the Humas to cross or destroy it.

At present, while the conference is underway, the bridge is defended by 《Cruel Brigade》's 《Rank 5》 Shublarz, 《Rank 6》 Greyald, and an individual named Iraora. He was formerly a member of the 《Cruel Brigade》 and was already tasked with defending the bridge due to his abilities.

Greyald: 「Haa1, they're probably at the conference now... Hey, nee-san2, isn't this boring? 」

The dark-skinned young man, Greyald, was lazily lying on the bridge while looking up towards the sky. Shublarz, who was spoken to, walked towards him as her enormous breasts swayed.

Shublarz: 「Mou3, how about you get serious for once? 」

She looked down at him and said so as if she were scolding a disobedient child, but the person in question just grinned.

Greyald: 「Ooh, this view is quite nice. Nee-san, if you would stay there and shake your upper bo-buu! 」

Greyald was silenced by Shublarz as she stomped on his face

Shublarz: 「Seriously~, you're still a child. It's too early for you to show interest in adults 」

Greyald: 「I may not look it, but I'm already over 100 years old! 」

He shouts while rubbing his face with teary eyes, but Shublarz ignores him and looks towards the 『Humas』 in the distance. She then directs her focus on the 4 heroes.

Shublarz: (Hmm... So those are the heroes. Oh my, there's a handsome one mixed in!)



While smiling voluptuously, she seductively winks towards Aoyama Taishi. However, there was no reaction from him. He just stood there and stared towards her general direction.

Shublarz: (...What a boring man. He's like a doll)

While thinking that, Iraora approaches them.

Shublarz: 「 Oh, Iraora. Aren't you supposed to be at the middle of the bridge? 」

Greyald: 「 That's right. Leave this place to us and hurry on back to the middle of the bridge. Don't make me say such boring things every time 」

Iraora gives an unpleasant look towards Greyald because of his manner of speech.

Greyald: 「 Aah? What's with that look? 」

The two stared at each other for a while, but Iraora was the one to first look away. Greyald clicked his tongue and said,

Greyald: 「 Hmph, you're a 《Cruel Failure》 so just keep to yourself. Aah, such a pain 」

Greyald said that he wasn't comfortable anymore, got up, and turned his back to them as he walked away. Staring at him was the large Iraora. Shublarz felt exasperated and shrugged as she looked at those two. As soon as she was about to leave...

\*Pushu!\* 4

Greyald stopped his feet. No, he was forced to stop. He stopped because he felt an extreme pain running through his body. Then, blood unconsciously spilled from his mouth. He slowly looked downwards to exam his breast. And what he saw was...

A large spear protruding from it.

Greyald: 「 Gaha! 」

Ironically, despite spewing a large amount of blood, he couldn't fall because he was being supported by the spear

Iraora: 「Yo, bouya5, how's it feel getting dominated by a 《Cruel Failure》?」

Greyald: 「You... Bastard...」

The spear was pulled out of him, and Greyald was finally able to fall onto the ground.

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

Naturally Shublarz, who witnessed what had just happened, shouted in shock. That couldn't be helped. They never got along well, but she never imagined that Iraora would attempt to kill Greyald.

Greyald was completely defenseless, and as a result was at Death's door. At present, all he could do was lay on the ground while breathing lightly.

Iraora: 「Dahahahahahaha! 《Cruel Rank 6》 Greyald falls here! What a sorry sight! Dahahahaha!」

Shublarz: 「Iraora! Do you have any idea what you're doing!? This is amicide! The worst crime!」

Iraora grimaces and laughs at her.

Iraora: 「What are you saying? You're going to die here as well. That's the scenario, you get it?」

Shublarz: 「Scenario...? What are you...」

Iraora: 「Oraaa6! Move according to the scenario, you bitches!」

Iraora's shout serving as a trigger, 『Humas』 soldiers all move at once towards the 『Evila』. Iraora's subordinates were the only ones who weren't targeted. His subordinates also turn against the 『Evila』, against their own race.

Shublarz: 「 Just... What's going on...? 」

Seeing Iraora prowling as Greyald and her own subordinates were getting attacked, it was obvious that he was cooperating with them.

Iraora: 「 Dahaha! You're next, Shublarz 」

Shublarz: 「 Kuh7! You, are you planning on betraying us? 」

Iraora: 「 Betray? Who are you accusing of betrayal? 」

Shublarz: 「 Eh? 」

Iraora: 「 I've only pledged my allegiance to one person. That person is not Demon Lord Eveam 」

Shublarz: 「 What!? 」

Iraora: 「 And don't go thinking that I'll always be beneath you guys, you hear? 」

After saying so, his body releases an enormous wave of magic. Magical power vastly superior to their own can be felt along with his killing intent. Iraora's body slowly began to turn red like lava.

Shublarz: 「 Iraora... You... Since when did you have such power... 」

Iraora: 「 Hmph, 'that person' gave it to me! I haven't completely mastered it yet, but I'd guess I'm about 3, 4 times stronger than you guys right now? Dahahahaha! 」

Shublarz gulps as she witnesses Iraora's change.

「 Please run away, Shublarz-sama!8 」

Shublarz: 「 You guys! 」

Shublarz's subordinates stand in front of her. Despite their bodies shaking in fear, they desperately try to protect Shublarz.

Iraora: 「 Dahaha, you're making me cry. But... 」

Iraora swipes the spear he was holding horizontally. The sound of air being cut reached her ears, and then...

Shublarz: 「...Eh?」

In front of Shublarz's eyes were the sight of her subordinates, their bodies having been sliced in two, and unquestionably dead.

Shublarz: 「Ah... Ah... AAAAAHHHHHH!」

Shublarz, blinded with rage, jumped off the ground towards Iraora and attacked him with her sharp nails.

\*pusu!\*9

She closed the gap between them in an instant with her speed, and she... failed to pierce through Iraora with her nails.

Iraora: 「Mmm, that stung a little」

Her nails did in fact pierce his skin, but against his toned, muscular body, the only damage that was inflicted was similar to having been pierced with a thumbtack.

Iraora glares at the woman who was in his breast.

She felt goosebumps crawl down her spine and clearly realized she would die if she stayed there.

\*wooosh!\*

An arm as thick as a person came ripping through the air towards Shublarz. She couldn't move, however, as if she were frozen in fear.

Iraora: 「Die, 《Rank 5》!」

‘She was completely crushed’. Anyone who saw what was happening would think the same. However...

\*bakiiiiin!\*10

Shublarz was blown away. Strangely enough, she didn't feel any pain. Why? She felt something warm enveloping her body.

She falls to the ground with a thud. She then finally realizes that she was saved by someone.

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

The one who protected her from Iraora's attack was Greyald. It was fortunate that she was able to be saved, but he received Iraora's devastating attack with his body.

He had already been pierced through his chest with a spear, and above that he had taken such an attack. At this point, he was literally beyond help.

Sure enough, his body was completely covered in blood. The attack he had just received had pulverized his bones. His internal organs were most likely crushed. On top of that, he had already lost a lot of blood.

Greyald: 「Nee...san... Haa... Haa... Haa... Haa... Run... Away...」

Shublarz: 「Greyald!」

Possibly because Shublarz was blown so far away, Iraora slowly walked towards Greyald. Each step sounded like that of an executioner, walking towards a criminal to carry out his death sentence.

Greyald: 「Please... Hurry... Tell the... Demon Lord... About this...」

Shublarz: 「But you!」

Greyald: 「At this rate... We'll just die... A dog's death... Please...」

Shublarz: 「...Greyald...」

Tears flow down Shublarz's face and drop onto Greyald.

Greyald: 「Haha.. To think you'd... Cry for me... I'm... happy」

Shublarz: 「...Idiot」

Greyald: 「Haha... Got it... Nee-san...?」

Greyald slowly rises and...

Greyald: 「Gaha!」

He coughs up blood, but he continues to rise. At this point it wouldn't be surprised if he fell into shock and died from the pain, but in this case the pain was the only thing keeping him conscious.

Greyald: (...I'll protect Nee-san)

His resolves strengthens as he witnesses the executioner coming towards them.

Greyald: 「Go! Don't let... Our lives... Go to waste!」

Shublarz: 「Greyald... Kuh!」

Shublarz discards her thoughts of staying and leaves.

Iraora: 「Hm? Oh man, you're still standing in that condition?」

Greyald: 「Keh11, it sucks but... It's in my nature to... protect women」

Feeling had left his body to the point that he wasn't even sure if he was standing or not.

Iraora: 「...You look like you'd die even if I left you alone, but I've still got a grudge against you for taking my position」

Greyald: 「Haha... Still hung up over... something boring like... that? Are you some... brat?」

Iraora's killing intent grows even larger upon hearing those words

Greyald: (...Nee-san, it'd be great if you can escape safely)

Iraora's fist closes in on his face.

Greyald: (Bye bye... Nee-san)12

Greyald slowly closes his eyes.

\*DOKAAAAAAAAAAAAAN!\* 13

An enormous explosion envelopes the surrounding area.

Shublarz: 「...!?」

Shublarz, hearing the explosion, looks back once but quickly resumes running.

Shublarz: (Greyald...)

She understood that the explosion was without a doubt caused by Greyald. She also understood that the explosion meant that he had died.

Shublarz, however, could not stop. For Greyald's sake and for her subordinates that had died, she needed to deliver this information to Demon Lord Eveam.

She clenched her teeth so hard that blood began dripping from her mouth. She ran with all her might towards her destination while crying.

Magic Explosion. It is a phenomenon caused by the magic control 『Evila』 are proficient at. Normally if you finely control magic it is possible to give it visible form, and it is even possible to form it into a sphere or sharpen it like a blade.

It is also possible to take magic and densely compress it, then

release it in an instant to cause an explosion. Of course, if one fails to control it well there is a risk of self-destructing.

What Greyald had done was use his own body as an intermediary to compress all of his magic power. Then he instantaneously released it. In addition to his magic power, he had also compressed all of his remaining life force. The explosion caused by this would be tremendous.

Due to Greyald's explosion, a massive crater with a 50m radius formed at the edge of the 【Mütich Bridge】.

If Greyald hadn't been blown away by Iraora's attack, the bridge would have been completely destroyed. Due to the strong shockwaves several cracks had formed in various places on the bridge, and those that were fighting near the edge were sent flying into the sea.

And Iraora, who was standing in the epicenter of the explosion...

Iraora: 「Ow... That fucking bastard, causing a Magic Explosion」

...Was fine. He was not, however, completely unharmed. His right hand was missing from the wrist, he had wounds all over his body, and it seemed like he was having trouble just standing up. The fact that he was still alive after taking the explosion head on was proof of just how abnormal he was.

「Iraora-sama! You were alright!」

A man that seemed to be Iraora's subordinate approached him.

Iraora: 「Aah. What happened to the others?」

Soldier: 「Most fell into the sea. The only ones remaining are our squad!」

Iraora: 「Hohou14. Well, it's a bit different from what was planned, but I guess this mission was a success」

Soldier: 「What shall we do with Shublarz who ran away!」



Iraora: 「Leave her be. By the time she arrives everything will already be over. No, maybe I should say... It'll have begun? 」

Iraora says so as he smiles, his words hinting at hidden intentions.

Iraora: 「I need to let this body rest for a while. You guys clean up after this mess 」

Soldier: 「Yes sir! 」

The subordinate courteously bows and leaves.

Iraora: 「Tsk, I say something like that, but it feels like it'll take a bit of time for this body to heal 」

He then looks down with an annoyed face towards the center of the crater.

Iraora: 「Regret in the afterlife, you 《Cruel》 piece of shit 」

Iraora says so as he spits, then leaves.

Author Note:

Hm... Truth be told I wanted to write more about Greyald.

Like what happened during the past half year... Or maybe writing about him in an extra chapter.

In a few more chapters, the main character will...

Notes

1. Sigh
2. Sister; can be used when familiar with an older woman
3. “Geez”
4. sfx: Something getting pierced
5. Boy
6. Just a generic shout
7. Similar to “tsk”
8. Respectful way to refer to a superior; often used in the

service industry

9. sfx: Something getting pierced (less force)
10. sfx: Impact against something, usually metallic for this one
11. Pretty much the same as “heh”
12. Good bye Ten-san [<http://i.ytimg.com/vi/2QHLjwTHpiM/maxresdefault.jpg>]
13. sfx: Explosion
14. In this context, it’s more like “I see”

## Chapter 106: Beginning Of War

At the same time, an abnormal situation was occurring at 【Xaos】. Armored troops broke inside the country and began to cast spells everywhere. As buildings had been damaged from these attacks, people were desperately trying to escape in the midst of the chaos caused by the sudden assault.

It went without saying that the soldiers in charge of defending the country went to repel the attack, but the difference in numbers and strength was overwhelming. And above all-

“W-What in the hell are they doing here!?”(Soldier A)

“Where in the hell did all of them come from. There is just so many of them!”(Soldier B)

The soldiers were completely confused. The ones who were attacking their country were a force clearly commanded with great leadership. And, above all else, the ones attacking them were the 『Gabranth』.

Since the bridge between the Gabranth Continent (which the 『Evila』 refer to as the Beast Territory) and the Demon World was destroyed by the Demon Lord, there shouldn't have been a way for them to enter the Evila Continent. However, in the case of powerful individuals, they would certainly be able to find a way to cross the sea in order to make their way here.

However, with these numbers, it was as if their entire military force was participating in the assault, or so the 『Evila』 had judged, even though they believed such a feat was impossible. Everyone was confused, it was unbelievable that they made it all the way over here..

This 【Xaos】 is a country where many villages and towns have been concentrated. When compared to other kingdoms, the magnitude of the capital was clearly massive. The country that seemed to spread out from the Demon Lord's Castle as the centre, as if enclosing said castle, was roughly divided into five parts: the west

district, south district, east district, north district, and the central district. Each respective section was comprised of multiple towns that were founded by the various 『Evila』 races.

And currently, at the place in the west district where the 『Evila』 referred to as the 『Feathered One』 were gathering-

“Nyow (now), time to let loose.” (???)

A figure that looked like an anthropomorphic black panther flashed their sharp eyes at the enemy, as if marking them as one’s prey. Their smiling expression was filled with ferocity so eerie, it evoked fear in all those who saw it.

“Oi oi, Crouch. Leave some for me, alright?” (???)

There was the one who called out to the Black Panther Crouch; he was none other than the second prince of 【Passion】 Lenion King, whose face also bore a savage smile while he glared at the Evila.

“Roger, nya. Then, how about half of them, nya?” (Crouch)

“No, 7:3 in my favor.” (Lenion)

“Muu... Lenion-sama is so unfair, nya. I want to kill them too, nya.” (Crouch)

They appeared to be sulking, as if in a bad mood. Although this appearance could be considered rather cute if they were a normal female, as the subject was Crouch, the eeriness only increased.

“A~a~a, I get it, I get it. Then how bout we make it a game of who can kill the most?” (Lenion)

“Funya! I’m in, nya!” (Crouch)

As they said that, the two of them unleashed their bloodlust towards the soldiers who were simply staring at them, dumbfounded. The ones that received the bloodthirst head-on unconsciously trembled, feeling a premonition of death from the difference in their levels.

On the other side, in the east district, large numbers of monsters were rampaging. This was Crouch's handiwork. During the earlier confrontation with the 『Evila』, Crouch had made many monsters appear from their shadow. Currently, they were once again using strong monsters as pawns.

Since the monsters had died once, their skin, unlike normal monsters, had been subject to corrosion. It was as if they had been turned into zombie-like beings. Even so, their strength was not inferior compared to when they were alive. In addition, as they were made to feel no pain, they had been turned into extremely troublesome foes.

Furthermore, since there were monsters of Ranks S and SS mixed in, even the 『Evila』 who possessed exceptionally high magic power would have trouble dealing with them. On top of all that, their enemy was not just a singular monster, but a countless number of them, the numbers were so abundant that it would cause one to fall into despair.

In addition to this, possibly due to possessing thoughts of not wanting to cause extensive damage to the country with the use of magic, they were prevented from using their power to the fullest. Regardless, the monsters mercilessly destroyed the surroundings.

A single 『Evila』 child had failed to flee and was about to be attacked by a monster. Although the soldiers had all shouted “Nooo!”, as the gap between them was too large, the soldiers were powerless to save them. As everyone was about to give up-

Dogon!

Suddenly, something from the sky crashed on top of the monster. It fainted in agony as it suffered a huge blow to its back. Following this, the thing that had fallen grabbed the monster by the tail and vigorously threw it away.

“Listen, you fools! Don't hold back! Deal with them using your full power!” (???)

The one who said that was the 《Rank 4》 of the Demon Lord's Private Corps 《Cruel》, Ornoth. The soldiers' faces brightened to Ornoth's presence.

“If this goes on, the country will get destroyed! Remember your pride as 『Evila』 and greet them with your best! You got that!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth's deep voice pleasantly resounded through the surroundings. Everyone's morale was uplifted by hearing his voice quaking the atmosphere.

“Uoooooooooooooh!” (Soldiers)

Everyone was completely different from before as they started to attack the monsters without restraint. Upon seeing that, Ornoth gave an approving nod before he approached the child.

“It's dangerous here. Run away quickly.” (Ornoth)

“U-un.” (Child) [Un – yes, nod]

The child fled the area with small brisk footsteps as Ornoth leaped onto the roof of a nearby building to survey the area. There was smoke and fire rising up in several places, roars were heard reverberating as they paid no heed to the screams of the people. Ornoth could only grit his teeth at the scene in front of him.

“Ku.....Aquinas' fear was spot on, huh. But to think it would turn out like thi.....then the conference...” (Ornoth)

Aquinas had a bad feeling about things in the country and so he requested for his friend, Ornoth, to return to the country. Although he felt admiration towards Aquinas's clairvoyance, he still couldn't help but have doubts about how the 『Gabranth』 had brought their military all the way here.

“No, I should get the situation under control before solving that mystery.” (Ornoth)

With the main force of the Evila currently away from the country, Ornoth had already come to the conclusion that his actions would

be crucial here.

This is war. Therefore, there had to be a commander leading the war. If the commander was defeated, then, at the very least, the opposing troops' morale would fall. However, each district would be expected to have its own commander. He felt that he should put a stop to the ones that would be the most troublesome first.

While Ornoth was thinking this, he calmly observed the area with Sharp eyes.

“.....They are!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth was surprised by the scene that he had witnessed. However, as he had determined that it was the location where he should head to, he moved towards it.

The four heroes were still trying to gasp the current sight in front of them.

『Gabranth』 soldiers swung mercilessly at the backs of the fleeing 『Evila』. One of them was laughing while they continued to stab a woman who was screaming and crying. Skulls were crushed by the beastmen's superior physical strength. A person, who had both arms sliced off, attempted to run away to save their own life, but no sooner were they hunted down and beheaded.

No matter where one looked, everything was painted with blood; The surroundings smelled of nothing but smoke and blood; Rolling heads and piled corpses littered the ground. Seeing this scene straight from hell, one of the heroes, Aoyama Taishi, muttered in a tiny voice.

“Wha.....what isn't this.....i-isn't this going too far?” (Taishi)

Taishi's face was pale and stiff at the surreal scene before him. The other three had most likely shared the same thoughts as they stood still, stunned. In particular, Minamoto Shuri was covering her mouth in order to fight the nausea.

“What are you doing! Get them!” (???)

The one who tried to call them into action was a soldier, who had assisted them in mock battles for training countless times before. All four of them had the impression that he was a nice young man who was really nice to children as well as having a nice smile. Several days ago, he had also become a companion whom they had passed the border with together.

However, now his armor was splattered in blood; It was clear countless ones had lost their lives at his hands.

“Eh... but... they’ll die... right? T-the enemies aren’t just some monsters.” (Taishi)

Holding back the feeling of uneasiness, Taishi uneasily said that.

“Of course! This is war, you know! I will leave the north district to you, heroes! Do you understand? If you don’t kill, you’ll be killed.” (Young soldier)

After he said that, the four of them wordlessly watched him leave as he returned to his post.

Then, a 『Evila』 child, who was involved in the aftermath of magic, had been thrown towards them.

The child’s body was all beaten up, and tears and snot were streaming down their face. One of the child’s arms was bent in an abnormal way. The poor child, despite being around age of five, was still struggling desperately to get away.

“O-oi, you okay?” (Taishi)

Taishi instinctively called out while reaching his hand out towards the child. When-

Bishun!

A knife appeared out from the child’s chest. No, they were pierced through the back with a sword. Once the heroes saw that completely surreal spectacle-



“Hii!” (Heroes)

All four of them squealed.

“No... it... hurts... not yet...” (Child)

The child grasped onto the sword that stuck out of their chest with both hands. Yet, no matter how hard they pulled, the sword didn't even move an inch. Their hands became stained red with blood from grasping the blade.

“Shut up!” (???)

Bushyuu!

The sword was vigorously pulled out before once again being stabbed into the back of the child, causing them to fall to the ground. However, most likely due to the extraordinary vitality that the 『Evila』 possess, the child was still barely alive as they raised their trembling hand towards the four, as if pleading for something.

“I... don't... want... to... die...yet...” (Child)

Gusa!

The child was stabbed in the back once more. This time, it had been the end of them.

“U.... Ubu....!?”

The other three heroes, Taishi excluded, fell to their knees and vomited.

Taishi gazed upon the scene before him once more. He was unsure as to whether this was truly reality. As he fought an awful, stifling feeling, he recalled the conversation with the king before coming here.

## Chapter 107: The Heroes Who Came to Know of Reality

“We’re going to betray the 『Evila』 ? Is that true?” (Taishi)

“Yeah” (Rudolf)

The one who answered Taishi’s question was King Rudolf. Currently, the only ones in that location were the four heroes and the king. As the king had told them he had something confidential he would like to discuss, the heroes had come to the King’s Office. However, he had then told them that he would betray the 『Evila』 at the conference.

“So was the alliance a lie?” (Shinobu)

Shinobu Akamori furrowed her brow as she asked.

“That’s right. I sent a spy to the 『Evila』 continent. There’s no doubt about it” (Rudolf)

“N-no way.....even though I had thought things would be settled without fighting, just what are the 『Evila』 thinking!” (Chika)

The one who revealed her indignation was Chika Suzumiya.

“So will the conference be cancelled?” (Shuri)

“No, this is the first time I’ve felt such anger. In spite of them continuously speaking so much about peace, in the end it was just a means to eradicate us. If it’s like this, those who have died won’t be able to rest in peace.” (Rudolf)

Upon seeing him utter those words with a bitter face, everyone held sympathy for Rudolf.

“The conference won’t be cancelled. On the other hand, I was thinking of using the conference to show them up” (Rudolf)

“Wh-what do you plan on doing?” (Shinobu)

“If they’re planning on belittling alliances, then we’ll just show them the power of alliances” (Rudolf)

“.....don’t tell me!” (Shinobu)

Realizing his meaning, Shinobu gasped.

“We’ll make an alliance with the 『Gabranth』. Following that, during the conference, we’ll conduct a surprise attack on the 【Demon Country】 so that they never again plan to do such a stupid thing.” (Rudolf)

The four of them were honestly surprised to hear a statement proposing an alliance with the 『Gabranth』, who, while not to the same degree as the 『Evila』, also had some inter-species hostility. However, Taishi felt that their opponent was also someone who couldn’t be defeated without using such measures.

“For the few days leading up to the conference, I want to leave a mission to you all” (Rudolf)

“A mission.....you say?” (Taishi)

Taishi asked dubiously.

According to what Rudolf said, he wanted them, along with the second army division Vale and his subordinates, to head towards the 『Evila』’s continent a few days before the conference. There, they would merge with the 『Gabranth』 national army, and together they would suppress the 『Evila Capital: Xaos』.

However, a single problem had emerged within that plan. Taishi and co. had heard about an 『Evila』 guard being posted on the bridge. From what they had heard, said guard would not allow them to cross the bridge so easily.

When they raised this issue, Rudolf told them that it was not a problem. It appeared that the 『Evila』 on standby there, an individual who goes by the name of Iraora, was actually one of their allies. That Iraora also seemed to be opposed the Maou’s way of doing things, saying that, should the opportunity present itself, they would love to be able to punish the Maou.

Although Taishi was surprised at all the arrangements that had already been made, upon thinking about the current Maou, who was even thought of in such a way by one of the same kin, he concluded that the Maou did not have the caliber to properly rule after all. If they were a good Maou, he thought that everyone would naturally want to follow them.

After crossing the bridge, they were to conceal themselves until the day of the conference. Then, Rudolf wanted them, together with the 『Gabranth』, to invade 【Xaos】 on the conference day.

Rudolf explained that so long as the other side focused their forces on the conference, they would not try for any useless resistance against the four heroes and the 『Gabranth』 National Army, and would simply surrender.

Hearing that, Taishi and co. gave a sigh of relief. It was true that they too believed that there was no way a country without its strongest forces would be capable of fighting against the strongest forces from both the 『Humas』 and the 『Gabranth』.

After knowing that they wouldn't have to needlessly injure others, Taishi and co. held their chests in relief.

“This is not a war, but a suppression to avoid the needless spilling of any blood. Will you do this for us?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf appealed to them with an earnest expression. The four of them turned towards each other, strongly nodded, and-

“Leave it to us! We will seize peace!” (Taishi, Chika, Shuri, Shinobu)

-shouted out a reassuring line. Their expressions did not have a single shadow of doubt. Instead, only a refreshing amount of hope was reflected from their countenance.

This was not a war. If that was the case, then people would likely not die. Thinking that, all four of them had arrived at a much too simple answer. It was as though the four were dolls created without a single doubt in their minds, only aware of the word ‘peace’.

Upon seeing the four, King Rudolf gave a dark smile. Failing to realize that, the four of them believed in Rudolf's words and proceeded towards the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】.

As Taishi recalled their conversation with King Rudolf, he tried thinking once more about why they were in this kind of place.

(Th-that's right.....we came here to suppress.....because he said that this.....wasn't a war) (Taishi)

Although Taishi had repeated Rudolf's words in his heart, it was clear that the scene playing out in front of him was the very definition of war. The sound of swords clashing against each other. Magic flying all over the place, destroying everything in its path. And within that ensuing chaos, the lives that were easily lost.

(Wh-why are they fighting.....wasn't it going to end after we recommended that they surrender.....?) (Taishi)

In his mind, he felt that as long as they showed them this degree of war potential and urged them to surrender, they would definitely win due to a bloodless surrender. He believed that they wouldn't needlessly resist, bringing everything to a conclusion without anyone getting hurt.

But reality wasn't the same. Holding their breath on the outskirts of this country, they had waited for the signal. Then suddenly, someone who seemed like one of the top in the 『Gabranth』, gave the signal to attack.

Upon receiving the signal, an incredible amount of bloodlust began to overflow from their comrades. Rather than trying to press them to surrender, the atmosphere they exuded seemed as if they intended to kill everyone, down to the very last man. And such a sentiment had magnificently hit its mark.

Even the 『Human』 soldiers that the heroes were familiar with began to unsheathe their swords without any agitation as they shot magic towards the defenceless 『Evila』. Unlike their usually kind selves, Taishi felt overwhelmed by their grave faces.

Seeing that scene, they finally, for the first time, understood. The suppression that they had been thinking of was never something pretty. Instead, it had just simply replaced the word 'war'.

“H-hey Taishi.....we.....this.....” (Chika)

It was clear at a glance that Chika was completely confused. She desperately tried to stop the trembling of her lips, yet was unconsciously unable to do so. Her eyes were red and teary. As an 『Evila』 child had been killed in front of them earlier, the other girls were also making the same expression.

“Haa haa haa.....wh-what should we do?” (Taishi)

Taishi pitifully uttered these words in a whisper.

“Do-don't ask me.....how could I know.....there's no way I could know.....” (Chika)

Chika responded with words as though it were obvious, and, as though seeking an answer, looked towards the faces of the other two for affirmation. However, Shuri was crying with her head down while Shinobu had frozen up in a daze.

But within that battlefield, the four of them were seen by a terribly discomfoting existence. And that existence was wearing an appearance like those of their enemies.

“I won't forgive you! You 『Humas』 !” (Evila)

A single 『Evila』, with an incredibly angry expression, was holding a sword while heading their way. Although Taishi and co. weren't doing anything, it didn't matter to the 『Evila』 whether it had been the 『Humas』 or the 『Gabranth』 that had created this scene.

All that was there was the idea that because they were enemies, they must be killed. If they didn't do that, then they would be killed. As they couldn't forgive those who had messed up their country like this, their swords were filled with killing intent.

Taishi saw the 『Evila』 coming towards them, yet his body had

frozen up like stone and wouldn't move. A sword was at his waist. Unless he drew it and fought back, he would undoubtedly fall prey to that killing intent.

Although he understood that in his head, the one coming towards him was a person who could speak words. They were not monsters. Up until now, he had fought and killed a large number of monsters. He had also fought other people in spars. However, he had not killed another person.

“I-I know, if I kn-knock him out without killing him then” (Taishi)

What kind of outcome would result if someone incapable of controlling their trembling body continued to think such naïve thoughts?

“Taishi, run!” (Chika)

Though Chika's words reached him, Taishi didn't move. No, he couldn't move. It was the result of having a half-hearted resolve, no, it was a resolve that didn't even reach the level of being half-hearted.

As a result, he had become completely frozen.

(I-I can't move.....) (Taishi)

Even though he had drawn his sword and taken his stance in his head, not even his fingertips would move. Not only that, unconsciously, before he even realized it, his legs had given out and he had fallen on his behind.

“Ah, ahhhh.....” (Taishi)

The 『Evila』 mercilessly closed the space between them, and swung his sword. Forgetting to blink, Taishi simply continued to watch as though halfway through, the scene nearing him was happening to someone else.

However, upon seeing his opponent's eyes, Taishi suddenly gasped as he awoke to the strong realization that this was certainly reality. Following this, as he covered his body with his arms, he-

“N-nooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!” (Taishi)

-screamed as loud as he could.

However, his opponent’s killing blade continued to draw closer without any signs of stopping. And then,

“Achoooooooooou!” (???)

A voice that seemed to come from a kung-fu movie echoed, and then someone-

Bakiii!

-sent the 『Evila』, who had been approaching Taishi, flying. The momentum of the attack caused the 『Evila』 to destroy a building upon crashing into it.

Taishi, no, the four people including Taishi became completely dumbfounded. All four of them had expected Taishi to die right there. They thought that they, who had frozen in fear and bewilderment, would simply die without being able to use a single technique. But then someone had suddenly appeared, and as a result, they had all been saved.

“Ah.....ah.....?” (Taishi)

Having felt a strong premonition of death, Taishi’s face drained of blood as he looked at the person in front of him. The other three also gave an expression as though they had forgotten how to breathe.

They may have been saved. However, when they thought of what they had to say, the words just wouldn’t come out so easily.

As though completely ignoring their feelings, the person in question pointed their finger at the 『Evila』 that was blown away and-

“Koreee! Couldn’t you be a bit more quiet! You’ll wake Shishou up!” (???)



-their face swelled up in displeasure as they said that. That scene truly made one feel that it wasn't suited for a war at all. Taishi once again observed that person, even though he was lying on his side.

Their age appeared to be around 11 to 12 years old. From their pale purple, bobbed hair, a long ahoge bounced about. On their head, a small horn that appeared to appeal its existence was perched there. Wearing a light blue dougi, the child's face appeared appropriately young. One could take such a face to belong to either that of a girl or a boy.

Their round eyes and short nose gave a certain charm. They were a child that would simply make anyone older than them want to give them a hug. And when that child suddenly turned around, his eyes were taken away by what entered his eyes.

It was the character that was on the back of the dougi they were wearing. It was undoubtedly the character 『文』. While he wondered why Kanji existed in this world, he was obviously unable to come with an answer. All that he knew right now was that they had all been saved by this child.

And that child had begun to hold their head in their hands in anguish.

"Ahh~ geez! To think that it's become this noisyyy! Don't you know how mad Shishou gets when you wake him up! Just recently, just because he said I woke him up a bit badly, he used me as an experimental subject for his magic!" (Ahoge Child)

The heroes were stunned as they watched the child who had somehow suddenly begun to cry and shout.

"And just a few days ago.....ahh, how terribly terrifying....." (Ahoge Child)

This time their face grew pale as they began to tremble. And then, once again they pointed their finger at the same place and-

"If Shishou wakes up in a bad mood, then you have to take responsibilityyyyyyy!" (Ahoge Child)

Then, something fell from the sky. And then, without making a loud noise at all, the one who appeared was-

“Hm? As I thought, are all of you heroes?” (Ornoth)

-Ornoth, the one who was 《Ranked Fourth》 in 《Cruel》 .

“Hm? Who might you be?” (Ahoge Child)

The child with the ahoge glanced at Ornoth, who had suddenly appeared.

“Hou, you appeared to be an 『Evila』 , but do you not know of me?” (Ornoth)

“I don’t know you!” (Ahoge Child)

Ornoth surveyed the surroundings and, upon seeing the blown away 『Evila』 , looked at the child with a sharp glance.

“Did you do that?” (Ornoth)

“That’s right! He was yelling with a loud voice, so I stopped him!”  
(Ahoge Child)

“.....” (Ornoth)

Ornoth looked at the child, and made a dubious face while thinking of how a child like this could defeat an 『Evila』 soldier. In general, 『Evila』 possessed high physical capabilities. Yet, it was difficult to think that a simple child’s attack could do such a thing. However, on the side of the fallen 『Evila』 was the imprint of a small fist.

(In one hit.....? This child.....can do that.) (Ornoth)

Ornoth calmly analyzed the child’s battle capabilities, and decided that it would be dangerous to make light of them because they were a child.

“Allow me to ask one thing. You said that you stopped them because they were letting out a loud voice, but are you a comrade of the heroes over there?” (Ornoth)

“.....what? Who do you mean by heroes?” (Ahoge Child)

The child gave a blank look as they tilted their head. He judged that the child wasn't lying with such an appearance. In other words, the child had no connections with the heroes.

“.....if that's the case, then leave this place. I have some business with those heroes over there” (Ornoth)

After being glared at by Ornoth, the heroes' bodies gave a start and began to tremble. However, at his words, the child began to yell with their mouth tapered to a point.

“I can't let you do that!” (Ahoge Child)

At their response, his eyes widened with surprise. He couldn't understand why the child would refuse, even though they weren't comrades.

“.....why?” (Ornoth)

As he asked, the child rapidly began to talk.

“You plan on doing something here right? And plan on being noisy again right?” (Ahoge Child)

“.....what are you saying?” (Ornoth)

“You can't! You ab~solutely can't! If you do that.....” (Ahoge Child)

“.....?” (Ornoth)

“You can't you can't you can't you can't you can'ttttttt! You AB~SOLUTELY CAN'T do something like thattttt!” (Ahoge Child)

The child shook their head violently as they whole-heartedly refused. And then, when Ornoth thought that the child suddenly stopped, they deeply inhaled and-

“If you do something like that, then Shishou's going to wake uppppp!” (Ahoge Child)

An incredibly loud shout echoed throughout the surroundings. Then,

Pokan!

“Nuwaah!” (Ahoge Child)

A book suddenly came flying at the child’s head. The hit child then-

“Nuwahhhh! It-it hurtttttssss! It hurts a lotttt!” (Ahoge Child)

-rolled upon the ground while hold their head. Tashi and co. had their sight stolen by the child’s actions, yet, Ornoth alone was looking at a different place.

It was a single room on the second floor of a nearby building. He confirmed with his eyes that a single person had appeared from the window there.

Indeed, this was undoubtedly the person who had just thrown the book at the child. Upon judging that, Ornoth gazed at them with wary eyes.

And then, that person’s eyes furrowed with great displeasure as he spoke.

“You’re the loudest of them all!” (???)

Standing there was a man of the 『Imp Race』 clad in a red robe.

Translator Notes:

Ahoge = most of you should know, but its a strand of hair that sticks out of the top of a character’s head. Think Firo from TnY.

Dougi = the uniform worn by disciples of some martial arts (ex. Karate, Aikido, Taekwondo...)

Side Note: Ahoge Child (name revealed in Chp. 108) adds “desu-zo” at the end of their sentences, but I’ve left that out of the translations here since there is no real English equivalent of it.

## Chapter 108: Enter! Okamura Hiiro!

On that day, due to reading a book until the break of dawn, Hiiro had been deprived of sleep. Thus, Okamura Hiiro had decided to pass the entire day simply sleeping, telling his colleagues his intentions before heading to his room. Concerning this room in the inn, ever since Hiiro had arrived in the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , he had been in its care for quite a while.

Although it could be said that Hiiro had been taken care of quite considerably, it had only been barely a week since Hiiro had arrived in this country. Up until then, however, Hiiro had seen plenty of the sights of the Demon World, going around to many places as he fully enjoyed the experience.

Various 『Evila』 settlements. Mountains and seas. Monster dens that have been specified as danger zones. Hiiro had visited a variety of places in the past 6 months. Of course, Hiiro had not yet explored every inch of the continent. As his travelling companions had told Hiiro that they were heading to the the 【Demon Capital】 in order to take care of some errand, Hiiro had simply ended up in the capital.

If he were to look back on it now, it seemed that Hiiro had single-mindedly been moving about without rest. As his travelling companions had suddenly awakened to monster hunting, they would often offer to go help people, going out whenever they pleased. As such, Hiiro, who had been completely at their mercy, had been sent into an everyday life of performing exhaustive labour.

However, the one thing that Hiiro did not feel was boredom. Delicious food and rare books. Thanks to such hard labour, Hiiro was able to come across many things. Furthermore, during the times where Hiiro had accompanied his companions during monster hunting, his own level had increased quite significantly. His level was now so high that, should one compare it to his level when he was summoned, they would doubt their own eyes in the face of such a growth rate.

Thus, even though Hiiro held thoughts of annoyance due to being forced to follow such companions, as he would stand to gain many things, he was unable to completely deny their requests, causing Hiiro to continue to associate himself with them.

And thus, this time, Hiiro had arrived at the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 in this manner. As they were already here, for the purpose of Hiiro's goal of viewing the material in the 《Grand Fortuna Library's》 《Basement 5》, the floor that required permission from Royalty to enter, Hiiro had asked for entry permission from one of his travelling companions.

As he had arrived here according to his companion's instructions, it was necessary for them to provide him with the means to enter 《Basement 5》 as originally planned. However, throughout this one week period, he had not received any news from his colleague. As such, it was possible that they were considerably struggling to provide such means.

Although this problem had actually been resolved mid-way, Hiiro had yet to transmit this information to his currently absent companion. 'Well, it should be fine if we talk about it once she comes back'. Thinking such thoughts, Hiiro did not pay the issue any mind.

Even today, Hiiro contemplated whether or not there would be any news from them as he rested in his bed. Yet, as he did so, he heard something noisy coming from outside. Actually, even from within the inn, the sound of people hurriedly running away with a \*batabata\*(1) could also be heard. It was as if they were trying to flee from something.

No, this level of volume could not be merely described as noisy. It was a roar. The sounds of buildings collapsing and cutlery being chafed against each other. Sounds of explosions and other noises. Hiiro's irritation gradually began to accumulate.

Hiiro: (The hell's going on today.....is there a festival going on or something?)

As he was still lying in his bed, Hiiro's pleasant sleepiness had been

brutally purged as his displeasure began to increase.

Hiiro: (That bastard.....what the hell are they doing?)

As he was continually frustrated, he recalled that, before he had gone to bed, he had left the strict order of 「Don't you dare wake me up」 to one of his companions. Even though he included the implied message of 'You know what will happen if you cause a commotion, right?', Hiiro was still doubtful as to whether they had understood such implications. However, Hiiro also recalled them tensely saluting with a pale face.

Even though that individual was an idiot, as they would abide by Hiiro's orders, Hiiro had come to more or less trust them. However, it had apparently turned into an uproar that this individual could not control, or so it would seem.

The reason for this assessment was because of a faint but familiar voice that had entered Hiiro's ears.

???: 「Hey you! Can't you be a little bit quieter!? Shishou will wake up, you know!?」

It was that bastard's voice. As they had apparently stepped out in order to try and calm the uproar, Hiiro decided to leave it to them as he closed his eyelids once again, indulging in indolence.

???: 「A~mou(2)! If you make this much noise then-! Do you know how bad it is to disturb Shishou's sleep!? Before this, even though I had apologized for slightly waking him up, he made me into his magic training partner desu zoo(3)!」

As if Hiiro was saying that bastard's voice was slightly too tense, his eyebrows moved with a \*pikuri\*(4) as Hiiro rolled over.

???: 「If Shishou wakes up grumpy, I want you to take responsibility desu zooodoo~!」

Hiiro's eyebrows once again moved with a \*pikuri\*. They were screaming so loudly that their voice could be clearly heard even from here. Honestly, Hiiro found it noisy(5).

Although the tone of the voice had soon diminished, one could still hear the sounds of talking. As Hiiro thought 'do it somewhere else,' he once again rolled his body over.

???: 「No no no no no desu zoouoooo-! That is absolu~tely bad desu zoouoooo-!」

\*Piki\*(6).....

This time, a vein appeared on his forehead. Hiiro slowly opened his eyes, silently getting up as he draped his red robe onto his back. Following this, he grabbed a nearby book with one hand, its large magnitude suitable for throwing. His footsteps, teething with rage, headed towards the window with a \*Don Don Don Don\*(7).

???: 「IF YOU DO SUCH A THING, YOU'LL END UP WAKING SHISHOU, WILL YOU NOT~~~~~!?」

As Hiiro faced the enemy that had fully roused him from his sleep, Hiiro vigorously pelted his book at them. As it had splendidly hit its mark, the enemy suffered from the inflicted damage as they rolled on the ground in agony. In response to such an idiotic enemy, Hiiro displayed his 100% disgruntled face(8) as he spoke thus.

Hiiro: 「YOU'RE THE ONE THAT'S THE LOUDEST!!!」

Upon looking, one could see that the outside had been transformed into an illustration of hell. Although Hiiro had involuntarily made a blank expression, he began to ponder as to why the 【Evila Continent】, that had been peaceful up until this morning, had been reduced to such a state.

As he surveyed his surroundings, various scenes had been reflected in Hiiro's eyes. A large number of 『Gabranth』, as well as 『Humas』 that were thought to be soldiers could be seen. The party that they were attacking, the 『Evila』.

As he scratched his head, Hiiro began to slightly nod several times.

Hiiro: (I see...)

Following this, as Hiiro slowly redirected his gaze back down, he



could see the idiot, who was struggling with the pain caused by the book Hiiro had thrown earlier, and a Gabranth that was standing to face said idiot. From what Hiiro's eyes could tell, the individual's face completely resembled that of a wolf. Thus, Hiiro could determine that his analysis was not mistaken.

Hiiro: (.....Nn(9)?)

Following this, what had entered Hiiro's field of view were a group of four people that were sat on the ground. They seemed to be 『Humas』, yet, for some reason, their faces were devoid of blood, shaded with the the color of fear.

Hiiro: (Huh? I've think I've seen these guys somewhere.....or not.)

Although Hiiro thought that he had seen those faces somewhere before, no matter how much he searched his memory, he wasn't able to draw out an immediate answer. As trying to recall it would be too much of a pain, Hiiro simply determined that he didn't know them.

Hiiro: (More importantly than that, this is.....)

Since Hiiro thought that using the stairs every single time he wanted to descend from the second floor was a pain in the ass, he carried his katana that was leaning on the wall nearby and simply leaped out of the window as is.

As Hiiro landed on the ground with a \*suta\*(10), he approached the child who was nearby, still crouched down while holding their head. Hiiro poked their head with a \*pokan\*(11).

???: 「Nowa-!(12) S-Shishou!?」

As the child had finally become aware to Hiiro's presence, they hastily stood up.

Hiiro: 「Oi(13), Baka-Deshi(14). Today-」

Baka-Deshi: 「A-aaa t-t-t-the thing is, Shishou! No, I(15) also tried to stop them desu zo! I requested them to 'please don't make a

racket'! P-Please, at least recognize only this effort at the very least-」

The child was once again poked with a \*Pokan\*.

Baka-Deshi: 「Nowa-! I-it hurts desu zo, Shishou!」

The child looked up at Hiiro while only turning up their watery eyes. However, Hiiro simply spoke with a sullen expression.

Hiiro: 「Listen to me when I talk to you.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Ah, y-yes desu zo!」

They stood upright as this single phrase escaped their lips, concluding their speech. They began to patiently wait for Hiiro's words.

Hiiro: 「What's the date today?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Hai(16)! Today is the 10th day of Guviris(17) desu zo!」

Guviris meant that this world was currently in April. In other words, today was April 10. As Hiiro had heard thus, he softly murmured 「Shit.....I forgot about it, didn't I?」 as he slightly frowned.

Baka-Deshi: 「S-Shishou?」

As they had their doubts about Hiiro's current appearance, the child quietly asked thus.

Hiiro: 「Nn? Aa, you remember I talked to you about the fact that a war might break out, right?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Ah, yes. It's the matter concerning how Shishou had been called out to by a strange woman earlier, yes?」

Hiiro: 「Aa(18).」

Baka-Deshi: 「That's.....ah, i-it couldn't be.....」

Hiiro: 「That's exactly right.」

The child's face began to rapidly twitch.

Hiiro: 「It seems like war's gonna break out today.」

Baka-Deshi: 「What did you sa~~~~~y-!?」

Hiiro: 「You're annoying(19)!」

Baka-Deshi: 「Nowa-!」

Hiiro once again smacked the child's head with a \*pokan\*, silencing them. However, the child seemed to return the words as if to counter it.

Baka-Deshi: 「B-but Shishou desu zo!? Forgetting such a significant day is normally unthinkable desu zo!」

Hiiro: 「Shut up. Even though I told you, you also forgot, didn't you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Uu(20).....t-thats.....」

As it was exactly as Hiiro had indicated, they could not refute it. However, at that time, Ornoth, who had been silently observing the duo, opened his mouth.

Ornoth: 「Would you mind if I asked you something?」

Hiiro and the child directed their line of sight towards Ornoth with a \*chirari\*.

Hiiro: 「What?」

Ornoth: 「Who are you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「B-before asking someone else for their name, isn't it common sense to give your own first desu zo-!?」

As he looked at the child that was pointing their finger at him with a \*bi\*(21), Ornoth was rendered dumbfounded. His breath leaked out with a \*fu\*(22).

Ornoth: 「That is so, I've been quite rude. In which case, I shall give you my name. I am the Cruel's 《Rank 4》. My name is Ornoth.」

Hiiro: (Hou, this guy's a part of the 《Cruel Brigade》, huh...)

Hiiro stared at Ornoth as if he were carefully observing him. As he had heard of the existence known as the 《Cruel》 before, he had some knowledge of them.

Hiiro: (So this guy's one of the fellows that act as that woman's escort, huh.....I see. There's definitely a certain atmosphere surrounding him.)

Ornoth's appearance clearly conveyed that he was no ordinary individual. That was something that Hiiro was able to extract due to his sensitivity having been cultivated by the combat experience he had accumulated up until now.

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu~(23) Shishou, this thing called 'Kruel'(24), what do you think it is?」

As they tilted their head to the side with a \*kokun\*(25), the child posed a question.

Hiiro: 「Are you an idiot? Ah, wait. You're Baka-Deshi, aren't you?」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu~! Treating me like an idiot all the time is terrible desu zo~!」

Hiiro: 「Shut up. That guy said it as well, didn't they? They're the convoy that guards the Demon Lord, or so they say.」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mu? You mean the woman that Shishou was talking about?」

Hiiro: 「So it seems.」

Expressing the sentiment of 'I see', the child nodded several times with an expression of comprehension. Following this, the child directed the front of their body to face Ornoth.

Baka-Deshi: 「Since they gave us their name, common sense dictates that we should also name ourselves! Isn't that right, Shishou!? 」

Hiiro: 「I've never heard of such common sense. 」

Baka-Deshi: 「Naha-!?(26) B-but Shishou~ 」

Hiiro: 「Eei!(27) Stop clinging to me, you're annoying! 」

Hiiro forcefully peeled off the child that had suddenly clung onto him with teary eyes.

Hiiro: 「F-fine then. If you're gonna name yourself then do it already, Baka-Deshi! 」

Baka-Deshi: 「Mumu, I see then! \*Gohon\*(28)! FUHAHAHAHAHA! (29) YOU HAD BETTER LEND ME YOUR EARS DESU ZO! MY NAME IS GOHO-!?(30) 」

Hiiro: 「What Demon Lord are YOU trying to be!?(31) 」

The child had their head beaten once again as they were scolded.

Hiiro: 「You were influenced by books again, weren't you? Although I'm always saying this, it's fine to read a lot of books. However, stop imitating every little thing about the characters. I'm getting tired of it. 」

Baka-Deshi: 「Y-yes desu zo..... 」

The child slumped over with a \*shun\*(32). Upon looking at the two, even Ornoth could only scratch his cheek.

Nikki: 「Let me revise! I am the number one disciple of Shishou, whom I have imposed upon greatly! My name is Nikki desu zo! If you want to refer to me affectionately, then Ni-cchan is fine desu zo! 」

Ornoth: 「I-I see. I shall remember this. 」

The one who was slightly relieved upon finally having heard their

self-introduction was Ornoth.

Ornoth: 「 And, the one over there? 」

Hiiro: 「 Why should I tell you? In the first place, just because you've named yourself doesn't mean- 」

Nikki: 「 Hiiro Okamura-Shishou desu zo! 」

.....

The scene involuntarily hardened. Hiiro's precious point had simply crumbled. And the individual that had caused it was proudly puffing their chest out as if they were gloating. It was the Baka-Deshi right next to Hiiro.

\*Boko-!\*(33)\*

Nikki: 「 Nyau-!(34) 」

This time, Hiiro had dropped his fist with a considerable amount of strength.

Nikki: 「 O-Ow-! It hurts desu zo, Shishou! 」

Hiiro: 「 This fucking Baka-Deshi. Don't go giving out people's names without their permission! 」

Nikki: 「 Uu~ My apologies desu zo~ 」

Ornoth: 「 W-well, in anycase, isn't it fine since we've both established a mutual acquaintanceship? 」

For some reason, Ornoth began to string words together, as if he were trying to arbitrate the situation. It was most likely due to feeling pity for Nikki who had been repetitively hit with a \*poka poka\*(35).

Hiiro had displayed an even more displeased expression as he folded his arms. However, as he did so-

??? 「 Okamura...? 」

A murmur that appeared to be seeking confirmation could be heard.

## Notes:

1. \*Batabata\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*clatter\*.
2. TL Note: Japanese equivalent of 「Argh, geez.」.
3. Desu zo: A speech quirk.
4. \*Pikuri\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*twitch\*.
5. TL Note: RAW is urusai | うるさい. This is usually translated as 'loud' but can also mean annoying/bothersome/noisy.
6. \*Piki\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*vein pop\*.
7. \*Don\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thud\*.
8. TL Note: This is actually in the RAW. 不愉快面百パーセント. 不愉快 = Unpleasant/Moody/Disgruntled. 面 = Face. 百パーセント = 100%.
9. Nn: Japanese expression denoting interest/confusion.
10. \*Suta-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*land\*. Think of the sound your feet make after you fall to the ground.
11. \*Pokan\*: A variant of the Japanese onomatopoeia \*Poka\* meaning \*impact\*.
12. Nowa: A grunt of pain.
13. Oi: 'Hey'.
14. Baka-Deshi: Baka-Deshi | バカ弟子 means Idiot (Baka) Disciple (Deshi).
15. TL Note: Nikki uses Boku | 僕, a variant of I that is often used by effeminate/passive males or tomboy-ish/aggressive females.
16. TL Note: Hai | はい = Yes. I've left this expression in Japanese because, in this context, the expression is used similarly to how a soldier would respond to their commanding officer. Yes, I'm aware that there are other variants that describe such a response better (eg. Renjya- | レンジャー). However, I believe that this should be expressed with the Jap as it fits the context better than just 「Yes!」.
17. TL Note: We are following Unlimited Novel Failures' translation.
18. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think 'yeah' or 'uh-

huh’.

19. TL Note: RAW is yakamashii | やかましい. Can be interpreted as loud/annoying/noisy.
20. Uu: A groan of some sort.
21. \*Bi-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*surprise\*? I’m not convinced, but here: <http://thejadednetwork.com/sfx/browse/bi/>
22. \*Fu-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*exhale\*.
23. Mu: A Japanese expression denoting irritation/frustration.
24. TL Note: The RAW is written in Hiragana. The use of Hiragana instead of Kanji/Katakana often signifies lack of understanding. In this case, I have portrayed this by misspelling ‘Cruel’ as ‘Krua’.
25. \*Kokun\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*tilt\*.
26. Naha-: A groan of some sort.
27. Eei: A Japanese expression denoting irritation.
28. \*Gohon\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*ahem\*.
29. TL Note: Diabolical Laughter.
30. Goho-: The sound of someone coughing/choking.
31. TL Note: RAW is お前はどこの魔王だ！. Literally translates to “What place’s Demon Lord are you?”. As this left much to be desired, I was a little bit more liberal with the trans.
32. \*Shun\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*droop\*.
33. \*Boko-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*bash\*.
34. Nyau: A groan of pain.
35. \*Poka Poka\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*pow pow\*.



## Chapter 109: Hiiro's True Ability

Hiiro: 「Huh?」

As Hiiro heard that voice come from behind him, he turned to face the source. Upon doing so, he was met with the four people who he had captured in his sights earlier.

Taishi: 「Hiiro Okamura...? Okamura Hiiro...?(1) No way, that couldn't be.....that guy's human.....but this voice.....」

The one who had murmured was Aoyama Taishi. As the name he had heard had the exact same first and last name with a name he was familiar with, Taishi thought that the individual in front of him was said person. However, the figure before them was one belonging to an 『Evila』.

The person that he was familiar with was a human being, an individual that was summoned to this world alongside them.

Although there was no way he could be an 『Evila』, as his name and voice made Taishi recall such an individual, such a notion could not be so easily dispelled.

Following this, as Hiiro had also stared at the quartet for a while, it had suddenly occurred to him.

Hiiro: (Four people.....human.....Ah, so that's how it is!)

Finally, as if he had pulled it out from the remnants of his memory, Hiiro had discovered the answer.

Hiiro: 「You guys are the Riajuu(2) Foursome, right?」

Taishi: 「R-Riajuu? T-then you're really Okamura.....you're Okamura, right!?」

The term 'Riajuu' did not exist in this world. That's why Taishi was able to determine that the Hiiro that had spoke those words was the same Hiiro that they were familiar with.

Hiiro: (Come to think of it, they were also here, huh~? These guys.)

The person in question narrowed his eyes, as if he were recalling memories of that distant day.

Chika: 「 Eh.....Okamura? That guy is? 」

Suzumiya Chika also held thoughts of disbelief as she looked upon Hiiro with suspicion.

Shuri: 「 B-but, that appearance is..... 」

Minamoto Shuri had also shared the same sentiment.

Shinobu: 「 B-but, that voice certainly belongs to Okamura-cci, and he's even wearing glasses. On top of that, I think there ain't many people who have the name Hiiro Okamura.(3) 」

Including Akamori Shinobu, the one who said thus, the four were clustered together, their eyes open wide.

Towards this group of four, Hiiro simply stared at them coldly. In this situation, Hiiro took notice of the figures of their unblemished armor. Their expressions dyed with despair. Their bodies, still trembling.

Hiiro: 「 .....I get it. Although it's fine to have come all the way here as the country's puppet, upon waking up to reality, you guys have started to crawl along the ground, huh? 」

Hiiro said thus, mixing ridicule into his words.

???: 「 W-what was that!? 」

Although it seemed as if they had the intention to scream, there was no strength embedded in their voice. The tone they had employed resembled one used by a spineless, bullied child when they were trying to speak to a gang of delinquents.

Hiiro: 「 .....well, I don't really give two shits about you guys. 」

???: 「Wha-.....!?」

As Hiiro turned his back towards them, seemingly due to loss of interest, the four were rendered unable to move, almost as if they had been petrified.

Hiiro: 「You're.....a beastman, right? Even for the 『Evila』, I'm slightly surprised to see that one of their Top Class is a beastman.」

Ornoth: 「Certainly, I am a beastman. However, I am also an 『Evila』.」

Hiiro: 「.....I see. That must mean that you're the same as the Doji-Maid(4).」

Ornoth: 「Doji-Meido(Angry Earth of Hades)(5)? That seems to be quite the bizarre place. Yet, you say it is the same kind of existence as me?」

Ornoth had completely misunderstood. However, Hiiro furrowed his brow as he was bewildered by Ornoth's incomprehensible response.

Hiiro: 「Well, more importantly, is that woman in the middle of the conference right now?」

Ornoth: 「That woman.....you say?」

Hiiro: 「The Maou(6), the Demon Lord.」

Ornoth: 「.....you, what is the meaning of speaking so lightly of her majesty?」

Although it was quite a quiet objection, Hiiro was clearly subjected to a glare, blurred with suspicion.

Hiiro: 「Even if you ask me what this is all about. All I did was just make a contract with them.」

Ornoth: 「C-contract?」

Hiiro: 「Even so.....I wasn't told that even the 『Gabranth』 would

attack as well. That woman, always spouting such suitable things-」

As he lightly clicked his tongue, Hihiro pressed his fingers against his temples.

Ornoth: 「P-Please wait a moment. Since a while ago, what sort of things have you been spouting-」

At that moment, several assailants headed towards them from the sky above.

Soldiers: 「Oraaaaaa-!」

From what one could see, they were apparently Gabranth Soldiers.

Soldiers: 「『Evila』, prepare yourseeeeeeeeeeeeeeeves!」

As Hihiro looked up towards the sky, he conducted himself in a pissed off manner and-

Hihiro: 「Do it, Baka-Deshi(7).」

Nikki: 「Hai(8) desu zo(9)!」

As Nikki cheerfully replied, they dropped their waist and poised themselves before vigorously kicking the ground, launching themselves into the sky.

Nikki: 「Achoooooo(10)!」

Soldier: 「You're in the way, you braaaat-!」

Facing Nikki, who was approaching from below, a male Gabranth swung their sword downward. However, Nikki was not perturbed as they concentrated magical power into their right fist. As they did so, their fist began to shine with blue light.

Soldier: 「W-what the-!?」

Nikki: 「Killing Blow-! Exploding Fist-!」 | 「Ichigeki Kesatsu! Bakuken-!」(11)

Nikki's protruding fist collided with the sword that the man had

swung downwards. Normally, one would think that the fist would be split in half. However, the result...

\*Bakiin!\*(12)

The sword was the object that broke. No, it had been broken.

Soldier: 「Wha-!?」

Following this, Nikki's fist continued to move unfaltering as it landed an accurate blow towards the man's belly.

\*Dokaaaaan!\*(13)

Although miniscule in scale, an explosion had surely occurred. As they were caught up in the shockwave, the other Gabranth had their posture broken by the resulting impact.

As Nikki landed with a \*suta-\*(14), their eyes sparkled with a \*kirakira\*(15) as they looked towards Hiiro, exuberating the sentiment of 「I did it!」.

Hiiro: 「There are still others left, aren't there?」

Although they had really wanted to be praised, Nikki's shoulders drooped due to the absence of such words of approval. However, it was as Hiiro had indicated. Except for the individual who had directly received the brunt of the explosion, the others were still vigorously lively.

Incidentally, about the man who had received the explosion-

Soldier: 「Ka.....ka ha.....ga.....」

Although he had been scorched to a charred black, it seems that he had not died. It went without saying that he was no longer able to continue fighting in the war.

Ornoth: (That was a tremendous blow. Although it is most likely that they had infused their fist with magic before making it explode, to think that such a small child is capable of applying such magic to their bodies.....not to mention, they have yet to utilise

their full strength.)

Ornoth calmly began to analyse Nikki. As Ornoth had once again thought that Nikki was no ordinary child, a sentiment that he had predicted earlier.

As it seemed that the other beastmen had thought that they might be subjected to an unexpected ambush, they were overly wary towards Hiiro's location. Before Hiiro's eyes, the beastmen were impatiently observing the situation.

Hiiro: (The surroundings are so noisy that it's making it hard to talk.....I guess it can't be helped.)

Hiiro's footsteps made a \*katsukatsu\*(16) sound as he passed through Nikki's side.

Nikki: 「S-Shishou(17)?」

Not only Nikki, but Ornoth also had his suspicions raised by Hiiro's actions.

Hiiro: 「Fall back, Baka-Deshi. This is how you take care of the trash.」

As he said thus, Hiiro began to gather magic into his fingertip. Furthermore, magic was gathered into not just one but both hands' index fingers. Following this, Hiiro began to slowly move both hands.

「Gravitate」 | 『引力』 and 「Beastmen」 | 『獣人』.

Words written by pale magic were displayed in the sky. In response to seeing Hiiro's actions, the beastmen alertness strengthened as they tried to move away from that spot. However-

Hiiro: 「Even if you try to run, it's pointless. 《Word Magic》 activate.」

In the instant Hiiro's words ended-

Soldiers: 「U-Uwaaaaaaaaa-!」

As they shouted in this manner, beastmen began to reveal themselves before Hiiro's eyes, one after another. No, they had been pulled out of hiding. As if they had been sucked by a vacuum cleaner, they had been drawn towards Hiiro.

Following this, Hiiro gently lowered his waist before unsheathing his katana and-

\*Bushu bushu bushu bushu-!\*(18)

At speeds quicker than the eye could process, Hiiro began to cut down the beastmen flying towards him.

Soldiers: 「 「 「 「 Ga-.....! 」 」 」 」 」

Although the ones that had been flying through the air were four people, these four rolled across the ground, the whites of their eyes being shown.

Nikki: 「 Uooooo-! A-As expected of Shishou desu zo! This Nikki is truly impressed~! 」

Although Nikki had expressed their delight openly, Ornoth and the heroes who had witnessed such a spectacle held thoughts that rendered their empty mouths unable to close. The heroes in particular had thought it was exceptionally amazing as this was the first time they witnessed such a sight that had filled them with awe.

Taishi: 「 Th.....that's Okamura? 」

Chika: 「 N-no way..... 」

Shuri: 「 A-amazing..... 」

Shinobu: 「 I ain't ever seen such a thing..... 」

The four respectively uttered such words unconsciously.

Ornoth: (Fumu(19).....that 『Imp』 boy. Those movements of his should be able to match mine.....just who in the world is he?)

Although Ornoth had also made an evaluation of Hiiro, as he

caught a glimpse of strength that one would not believe a mere warrior could possibly possess, he was alarmingly startled.

As Hiiro returned his katana to its sheath with a \*kachin\*(20), he once again looked towards Ornoth.

Hiiro: 「 Oi wolf. Continuing from where I left off earlier, the Maou left for the conference, right? 」

Ornoth: 「 A-aa, about that. Why are you asking about her majesty? 」

Hiiro: 「 I said it a little while ago, right? I said that I have a contract with them. 」

Ornoth: 「 Like I said, what sort of contract is this? 」

Hiiro began to display his displeasure as he was increasingly feeling that the situation was growing even more bothersome..

Hiiro: 「 Haa, why do I have to tell you? More importantly, hurry up and tell me whether she's at the conference or not. 」

Ornoth: 「 Mu(21).....I am not one who would obediently inform such a suspicious individual. 」

As the two glared at each other, Nikki, for some reason, interceded between them.

Nikki: 「 Koree-! Shishou is saying that he wants to hear it so hurry up and- 」

\*Pokan!\*(22)

Nikki: 「 Hauwa! 」

Hiiro: 「 Whenever you talk, things get complicated so shut up! 」

Nikki: 「 Uu~ but Shishou~ 」

Although Nikki was looking up reproachfully while rubbing their pounded head, Hiiro simply ignored them and continued.



Hiiro: 「 You have no intention on telling me, right? 」

Ornoth: 「 Not until you explain to me exactly who you are. 」

Hiiro: 「 .....fuu(23), I guess I've got no choice. It's a pain in the ass, but I guess I'll go and ask her directly. 」

Ornoth: 「 .....ha? 」

As Ornoth made an expression that seemed to convey the sentiment of 'what in the world is this guy saying?', Hiiro once again harboured magic into his fingertips.

## Notes:

1. TL Note: Hiiro Okamura name is written in Katakana (reminiscent of western culture). Okamura Hiiro is written in Kanji (in Japanese fashion).
2. TL Note: Riajuu | リア充. Made up of Real | リアル and Fulfilment | 充実. Basically means someone who is fulfilled with their (offline) life.
3. TL Note: I'm trying to incorporate some sort of accent? I dunno. It's not very strong.
4. Doji-Maid: Doji (Clumsy) Maid. Hiiro's nickname for Shamoe.
5. TL Note: Ornoth misinterprets Hiiro's nickname for Shamoe. Do | 怒 is Wrath. Ji | 地 is Earth. Meido | 冥土 is Hades/Netherworld.
6. Maou: Demon Lord.
7. Baka Deshi: バカ弟子. Idiot (Baka) Disciple (Deshi). Hiiro's Nickname for Nikki.
8. TL Note: Hai = Yes. In this case, used similar to a 'Roger' or a 'Sir! Yes Sir!' Left in Jap.
9. Desu zo: Nikki's quirk.
10. TL Note: This is a lengthened 'o' sound, not an 'u' sound. Think Hope, not Hoop.
11. TL Note: \*sigh\*...real original there...
12. \*Bakin\*: The sound of a sword snapping.
13. \*Dokan\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*Boom\*. Sound

of an explosion.

14. \*Suta-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*land\*. Think of the sound one makes when landing onto the ground.
15. \*Kirakira\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*sparkle\*.
16. \*Katsukatsu\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*Clack\*. Sound of footsteps.
17. Shishou: 師匠. Means Mentor.
18. \*Bushu\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*slash\*.
19. Fumu: An expression denoting affirmation/confirmation. Think of 'I see'.
20. \*Kachin\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*clink\*. Sound of a sword being sheathed.
21. Mu: An expression of irritation.
22. \*Pokan\* : Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*pow\*. Sound of light impact.
23. Fuu: Exhale. Think of a sigh.

## Chapter 110: The Imprisoned Ones

Eveam: 「 Did you say... War? 」

Eveam was repeating what had come from Victorias King Rudolf's mouth. She hoped that she had heard wrong.

Rudolf: 「 That's right. War 」

It seems like he had no intention of making this conference a success.

Eveam: 「 W-Why? If we were to join hands we could avoid conflict, so for what reason would you willingly start a war?! 」

A stern expression came to Rudolf's face as Eveam fixed her eyes on him.

Rudolf: 「 In order to destroy you... to destroy the 『Evila』 , I have sacrificed many things. Soldiers, the people, and even my daughters 」

Judom's eyebrow twitched at the mention of Rudolf's daughters.

Rudolf: 「 This is what my friend Judom said. He said that we should desire peace for the sake of my sacrificed daughters. That they would be happy if that happened 」

From his eyes, a single tear fell.

Rudolf: 「 But that is wrong. My first daughter Miti was still very young, but I think that she was a clever child. My second daughter Aselia had a very strong heart. And now, although not yet dead, my daughter Fara who has become a living corpse was a kind-natured child. Before they died, those girls said to me, 『Please defeat the Evila no matter what』 」

Rudolf slowly met Eveam's gaze.

Rudolf: 「 My daughters, and those who have been killed, do not wish for peace! They wish to see the seed of misfortune plaguing 【Edea】 disappear, by eradicating you 『Evila』 ! 」

That was already an obvious declaration of war. And at that exact moment, the thread of peace that connected the 『Humas』 and 『Evila』 snapped.

Bang!

The round table was abruptly destroyed. Aquinas jumped to Eveam's side to protect her, while the human soldiers moved to guard Rudolf. Everyone simultaneously looked at the man who had caused this.

Judom: 「 Don't fuck with me Rudolf! 」

That was the 【Victorias】 Guild Master Judom Lankars. His fist stuck out over the table. That strong arm was quivering in fury.

Rudolf: 「 Judom, regardless of what you say here, this has already been decided 」

Judom: 「 Shut up Rudolf! Why... What foolishness is this? 」

Dennis: 「 Bastard! A mere Guild Master can't speak to the king like that! 」

Judom: 「 Butt out of this you lackey bastard! 」

Terrific pressure began to rain down on Cabinet Minister Dennis and the soldiers around him.

Dennis: 「 Hii! 」

[TL : Hii! = "Eeek!"]

Dennis pitifully fell to the ground. The soldiers' reactions weren't as extreme as Dennis's, but they were also overwhelmed by that person's presence and began to sweat profusely.

Eveam:(A-Amazing! Is this pressure really that of a retired soldier?)

Eveam gulped, sensing from his enormous pressure that he was no ordinary individual.

Aquinas:(As expected of Judom Lankars. This pressure... He's in the same domain as us...)

Aquinas had once fought with Judom in the past, and he couldn't help but give a faint smile after witnessing his extraordinary growth.

Marione:(Muu... So this man is the former SSS-Ranker called 《Impact King》 )

[TL : Muu = "Hmm"]

Marione also gave him a high evaluation. Kiria also stared at him with a thoughtful expression.

Judom: 「 Oi Rudolf, do you really understand the meaning of what you're doing you bastard? 」

Rudolf: 「 ...Do I look like I do not understand? 」

Judom: 「 Yeah, you do. At least, when you were younger you wouldn't have done such stupid things! 」

Rudolf: 「 And now I have matured 」

Judom: 「 Don't make me laugh! You've degenerated! 」

Dennis: 「 Y-You bastard! Again and again you speak like that towards the king! 」

Judom: 「 A retainer who can't even support the king doesn't have the right to talk! 」

Dennis: 「Hii! 」

Again he glared at Dennis to intimidate him.

Judom: 「And you lot! A retainer isn't just about making the king's life easy. A true retainer is supposed to guide the king onto the right path! 」

Eveam, who was deeply moved by his words, could only stare at him and remain silent.

Judom: 「If the king starts to stray from the proper path, a true advisor would advise him, even if he had to risk his own life! A king is not absolute! Even a country is not absolute! 」

Aquinas whispered into Eveam's ear.

Aquinas: 「Observe him carefully. He possesses the qualities of a king 」

Eveam nodded again and continued to stare intently at Judom.

Judom: 「Something that is absolute doesn't exist! Because of that, a king cannot make the very best decisions without the support of the people around him! To become closer to being absolute, to abate the mistakes he makes, that is the attitude that will bring us closer to becoming a good country! 」

Everyone was silently watching Judom, but Rudolf closed his eyes and stopped moving.

Judom: 「A king is also human. He still makes mistakes. But what you absolutely cannot do is make a mistake when people's lives hang on the king's decision! Why don't you understand that, Rudolf! Your decision will cost the lives of your fellow countrymen! 」

Rudolf, having determined that Judom's speech had ended, slowly opened his eyes and stared at him.

Rudolf: 「I am a king, a husband, and a father. My daughters' lives... Do you think I truly wished to part with them, Judom? 」

Once again he begins to cry.

Rudolf: 「I see. If it was you, you would be able to kill your emotions and betray your family for the sake of the country 」

Judom: 「No, you're wrong Rudolf! 」

Rudolf: 「Nevertheless, I am a father. The 『Evila』 which took my daughters' lives want to live together with us. That peace... I cannot allow it. Everyone who's family has been killed by them would say the same! 」

Judom: 「Those feelings are natural! But if someone doesn't bear it, the whole world will become even more cruel! 」

Rudolf: 「You're too late Judom. The choice has already been made. This is... revenge 」

Taken aback by Rudolf's words, Judom ground his teeth and scowled.

Judom: 「You... don't have the qualities to be a king 」

Rudolf: 「It seems, but even you will understand once this is over. That it was a good thing that the 『Evila』 perished. In the end, this will be for everybody's sake 」

Judom walked back towards Rudolf. Of course, the soldiers stood in his way. However...

Judom: 「Step aside, you brats! 」

The wind pressure released from waving his hand blew away the

soldiers who were on guard. The Demon Lord was also bracing her legs so that she would not be blown away.

Rudolf had also sent flying as far as the wall, but his expression had not changed at all.

Rudolf: 「Fuu, as expected of the 《Impact King》. My elite soldiers couldn't even act as a shield」

Judom: 「...Grit your teeth」

Bang!

Rudolf: 「Gafu!」

Judom struck Rudolf's face with a hook and blew him away, crashing into the wall. Blood flowed from his mouth but still he did not feel any fear. He spoke while he was still collapsed on the ground.

Rudolf: 「...No matter what you do, it has already started. No one can stop it now」

Saying that while wiping the blood from his mouth, Dennis and the soldiers rushed over to protect the king.

Judom: 「...Oi Portnis」

Portnis: 「What is it, Judom?」

Judom spoke to the High Priestess Portnis.

Judom: 「It's impossible to escape from this room for twenty-four hours, right? Is there no other method?」

Originally, the staff in Portnis's hand had the jewel 《Hero's Relic》 embedded in its tip which allowed one to exit freely, but as it had been destroyed, the only way to leave would be when the



barrier weakened after twenty-four hours.

Portnis: 「That's right... If we had another 《Hero's Relic》 we could, but...」

Judom: 「...We don't have one right now, huh」

Judom looked over to the Demon Lord's side, but judging by their reaction they didn't have one. It was unlikely that Rudolf's side was carrying one either. If it were to be used then anyone would be able to leave the barrier, so there would be no merit for them to bring one in with them.

There was some deeper meaning in keeping the Demon Lord and her forces imprisoned here for twenty-four hours. They had wagered that the Demon Lord would not kill them. If they did then the Demon Lord's ideals would collapse. Therefore this place was both safe and dangerous to them.

Judom: 「Is there another method?」

Portnis: 「Let's see... Information from outside is completely cut off from here, so we have no way to know what's happening outside. Similar to us, people outside have no way of knowing about any abnormalities inside」

Judom: 「Shit...」

Portnis: 「However」

Judom: 「What? Is there something else?」

Portnis: 「Yes. If, in the event that someone outside notices the abnormality and opens the barrier with the 《Hero's Relic》 ...」

Judom: 「...Rather unlikely. If no one knows the situation in here, no one would come to help」

Judom grit his teeth as he spoke his thoughts.

Rudolf: 「Did I not tell you? Anything you do is futile. This 《Sacred Room》 has been thoroughly investigated and was determined to be the perfect location to hold the conference in order to carry out this plan. There's not a single imperfection」

Judom: 「Kuh... Answer me Rudolf, you bastard. Where are the Heroes right now?」

Rudolf: 「...Do you not already have a rough idea?」

A smile came to Rudolph's face as he asked.

Eveam: 「At the border?」

That answer came from Eveam. She had confirmed the appearance of the Heroes with her own eyes. But Rudolf laughed scornfully.

Rudolf: 「Fufufu... You're way off the mark Demon Lord」

Eveam: 「What?」

Rudolf: 「Allow me to tell you. My strongest war potential right now... is at 【Demon Capital: Xaos】」

Eveam: 「Wha-!?!」

With just that one comment the faces of everyone on the Demon Lord side turned to shock.

Rudolf: 「Fufufu, allow me to tell you another shocking truth. Not only the Heroes, but many 『Gabranth』 are headed to the 【Demon Country】. The National Army of the 【Beast Kingdom, Passion】」

Eveam: 「What did you say!?!」

Marione: 「Fool! That's impossible! The bridge was destroyed!」

That shout was from Marione. As he says, the only connection

between the 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 was destroyed by Eveam. It's unthinkable that the army would be able to cross over to the Evila Continent.

Rudolf: 「 Fufufu, it's an alliance 」

Judom: 「 ...Rudolf, you... 」

Rudolf: 「 We 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 have formed an alliance 」

Those words left everyone on Eveam's side with a shock, like they had been struck by a hammer.

Eveam: 「 T-That's... 」

Eveam's voice was trembling as she let out a murmur.

Rudolf: 「 That's right. Right now the Evila Continent is in the middle of a war 」

## Chapter 111: Those Who are Alive

“Haaaaaaah!” (Eveam)

Eveam tried to break through the barrier surrounding them numerous times by attacking it with her bare hands. However, the barrier didn’t move a single inch.

“How reckless. There’s no way that a barrier imbued with a hero’s life would break from your bare hands” (Rudolf)

Ignoring Rudolf’s words, Eveam continued to thrust her fists forward.

“Haa haa haa haa haa.....how is it, Aquinas?” (Eveam)

“It appears that it contains an 《Evil-Sealing Barrier》, which is capable of absorbing physical attacks. In this place where it is forbidden to bring weapons to begin with, theoretically speaking, escaping from it is nearly impossible” (Aquinas)

Aquinas explained with a grave face as he touched the barrier.

“Move, Aquinas” (Judom)

Judom had his eyes closed as he focused the senses of his entire body into his right fist.

(Che, I can’t focus my magic power. At this rate, the power will drop significantly) (Judom)

Even so, he put all his power into his fist as he punched.

Pashunn!

It was as though nothing had happened at all, as the entire impact of the punch was absorbed.

“Kuh!” (Judom)

“So it’s even impossible for Judom-dono.....” (Eveam)

Eveam gazed at the barrier with a bitter expression.

“At this rate, the 『Evila』 will.....” (Eveam)

She was concerned about the 【Evila Capital: Chaos】. After hearing that it was currently embroiled in war, Eveam simply couldn't just stand around here doing nothing.

“Unforgivable! Your Majesty, for now, please give us the order to deal with these humans!” (Marione)

Marione turned his gaze filled with killing intent towards Rudolf and co. However, Eveam shook her head.

“We can't” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty!” (Marione)

“Right now in this place, majority of violent actions have been weakened. Marione, your specialty should be magic, and not physical attacks. Even so, do you really think that you'd be capable of fighting against 5 soldiers together while remaining unharmed?” (Eveam)

“.....” (Marione)

“Once we escape from here, we have to return to the country as soon as possible. If you were injured and became unable to move at that time, then what would you do?” (Eveam)

“H-however.....” (Marione)

“Right now, getting out of here is our top priority. Don't waste any energy” (Eveam)

“.....as you wish” (Marione)

Although he appeared to accept it reluctantly, as Eveam's words were correct, he decided to obediently listen to her. Seeing that, Judom thought-

(Hou, she is still quite inexperienced, but she understands what's

important. I'm sure this girl will become a great ruler) (Judom)

The more naïve her thoughts were, the more problematic her actions would become. Even so, she continued forward without losing anything important. As such, Judom believed that she would certainly grow up to be surrounded by thoughts of admiration in the future.

(So my attack didn't work at all.....then I suppose I can only bet on that fellow's work for the rest) (Judom)

As he thought that, Judom strongly gripped his fist.

“.....u.....” (???)

The one who woke up upon feeling a cool sensation on his face was the one who was thought to have been killed by the robed person while following the heroes as they took some suspicious actions. He was Nazaar Skride, or rather, he was the 《Rank 3》 in the 《Cruel Brigade》, Teckil.

“Gu.....haha.....seems like this isn't the Netherworld” (Teckil)

Feeling that his hands and feet were bound, Teckil distinctly felt the sensation of being alive. He had thought that he would definitely be killed. However, upon realizing that he somehow was still alive, Teckil became slightly relieved.

After rolling face up, he looked around in order to figure out exactly where he was. From what he had seen, he judged that this was a cavernous-like place.

Based on the ceiling alone, he arbitrarily decided that this was some cave. However, he felt that he probably wasn't mistaken.

(But, why haven't I been killed yet.....) (Teckil)

Right now, he didn't feel the presence of anyone around him. Raising his torso, he twisted his body about to once more confirm his surroundings.

As he did so, Teckil saw a light from a fair distance ahead of him. Nearby, there was an opening which seemed to be an exit. As he couldn't simply stay around here obediently, Teckil decided to aim for that exit for the time being. Lying down once more, this time he pushed upwards with enough force to reach a standing position. Then, he gazed at the restraints on his arms and legs.

“Mu~, these restraints.....are they a type of magic tool? It won't move an inch” (Teckil)

Teckil tried to use all his strength to pull apart the restraints, but they didn't give even the slightest response. A tool containing magic, a magic tool. They had various abilities, but these handcuff-like magic tools appeared to contain the ability to limit one's physical abilities alone.

“Hm~, it looks like they took away my favourite pen” (Teckil)

Teckil was a user of a Unique Magic which allowed him to give form to things he drew with that pen using magic. However, without anything to write with, he couldn't display his abilities.

“As I thought, what I saw at that time wasn't a mistake.....to think that person is.....” (Teckil)

Teckil nodded as he thought to himself. If that was the case, then it wasn't strange even if they knew of his abilities. As such, so long as they took away his pen, they judged that he would become unable to use magic.

However, Teckil chuckled as he grinned and-

“But I've really failed this time” (Teckil)

Gari.....

Just as he thought he bit through and tore something-

Pit pat pit pat.....

A fluid began dripping onto the ground. If you looked carefully, you could see that it was blood flowing out from Teckil's mouth. It

appeared that he had bitten through his lip.

“Even without my pen, there’s still things I can draw with” (Teckil)

After sticking out his tongue and licking, he began using his blood to draw something on a large rock.

(Uu~this gritty feeling feels gross, but I’ll endure it for now)  
(Teckil)

It was the drawing of a bird. Once he finished drawing it, the bird rose out, and like a real bird, began to dance in the sky. Then, the bird landed on Teckil’s shoulder.

“Listen up, ‘kay? I want you to do whatever you can to tell a certain person about the information I have right now” (Teckil)

“Chi chi chi?” (Bird)

“Originally, I’d tell her Majesty this in person, but right now her Majesty’s surroundings are the most dangerous. And right now, a certain person should be together with her Majesty. They’ll definitely be able to make use of the information” (Teckil)

“Chi chi chi” (Bird)

The bird rapidly nodded its head.

“I’ll also look for a chance to escape” (Teckil)

As he said that, a chill ran down his back. The air became several times heavier.

“Th-this is bad! Seems like they’ve returned. Come on, fly out from up there!” (Teckil)

As he said that, the bird raised its chin and began rising into the air. There lay a small hole through which a thread of light shone through. It wasn’t big enough for a person to go through, but should have been enough for a small bird to pass through without any problems.



With Teckil's urging, the bird cried out "Chi chi chi" as it flew towards the hole.

"I'm counting on you. Right now, the only one I can rely on is that person after all....." (Teckil)

Meanwhile, Teckil stared at the light coming from the place that may be the exit that he saw earlier. As he did so, he heard the pitter patter of footsteps resounding throughout the cave.

Teckil then returned to the place where he had been lying earlier, and lay down once more. Until he was aware of the other party's intentions, it would be better for him to check out the situation for now.

He might be able to gain a lot of information. Naturally, the chances of him being killed were high, but he felt lucky that he was able to send the information he currently had.

In addition, in order to make the opponent drop their guard so that he could counterattack as well, it'd be more convenient to continue acting unconscious.

(In any case, I just need to do whatever I can right now) (Teckil)

## Chapter 112: Escape

“Argh...still not working?” (Eveam)

Eveam clenched her teeth in frustration as she touched and pushed against the barrier. Although a considerable amount of time had passed since then, the barrier didn’t budge at all.

“Damnit! As I suggested before, we should just dispose of all the 『Humas』 trash here!” (Marione)

“No way!” (Eveam)

Eveam simply rejected Marione’s words without any consideration.

“But these guys betrayed us!” (Marione)

“I told you before, right? We’ll think about it after we get out of here.” (Eveam)

“Yes...but...” (Marione)

“Right now we need to do something about the barrier and head to 【Xaos】

as soon as possible to stop the war. I forbid you from wasting your energy and strength here.” (Eveam)

“But...” (Marione)

Marione reluctantly withdrew.

“Judom-dono here is conserving his strength and stamina by meditating. I suggest that you do the same. I’ll do something about the barrier!” (Eveam)

Although she was unable to find a solution, she persistently continued to keep trying.

While Eveam was doing that, the priest of 《Oldine Grand Temple》

, Portnis, turned her head slowly and faced the King of 【Victorias】 , Rudolph.

“King of 【Victorias】 , although you were our counsel and friend, how can you calmly perform something so dirty in the 【Sacred Oldine】 ? Do you have nothing to say about it?” (Portnis)

That is right, she was the one who was betrayed by Rudolf. The meeting was held to bring about world peace at all costs. Therefore, she was pleased that such a conference could be held in the Holy Land which was a symbol of peace.

However, the other side took action and used it to start a war.

“What you have done is nothing other than blasphemy in the name of peace! Shame on you!” (Portnis)

Although she was completely outraged, Rudolf simply replied nonchalantly.

“Priest, you understand, yes? When everything is over, there will be true peace.” (Rudolf)

“To destroy everyone but the 『Humas』 !?” (Portnis)

“That is the best way to obtain world peace.” (Rudolf)

“.....It is just like Judom said, you are definitely not qualified to be king” (Portnis)

Rudolf snorted at the priest's words and turned towards Eveam.

“Demon Lord” (Rudolf)

“..... What !?” (Eveam)

Eveam no longer used polite language. This was because she had determined that the individual she was addressing was not worthy of such respect.

“Like I said before. I've lost people that were close and important to me.” (Rudolf)

“.....” (Eveam)

“After twenty-four hours, your country will be in ruins. There will be dead bodies every. Those that are important to you will die in swarms.” (Rudolf)

“Damnit!” (Eveam)

“You said there is no point in revenge. But if you go out of here, can you still say the same words? Your family is being destroyed by the 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』, with that can you still preach like a saint that nothing will come out of hatred?” (Rudolph)

Eveam glared at him with animosity, however, Rudolf returned the glare.

“.....Even so, I will not give up on peace!” (Eveam)

“.....Well then, why don't you keep at it then with your unwavering determination. Just look at the current reality. Think it through, and I'll hear from you again. Think about it carefully. We have time. We have all the time in the world.” (Rudolf)

Rudolf sat down after finishing his speech. Eveam knew that words were pointless to Rudolf so she turned to Aquinas and spoke.

“How long will our defenses last?” (Eveam)

“That is right, I knew something like this would happen. For the time being I've sent Ornoth back to the country. Right now, he would be struggling to defend the country...that is, if Rudolf is telling the truth.” (Aquinas)

Indeed. Although reasons for such actions were unknown, there was the slim possibility that Rudolf was simply speaking falsehoods.

“Yes, that's right! As expected from Aquinas!” (Eveam)

“However, there are the four heroes, the 《Gabranth Forces》, and two people at the top of the 『Gabranth』 in terms of power. I imagine that it would be tough for Ornoth to manage it alone.” (Aquinas)

“He isn’t alone” (Eveam)

“What? What do you mean?” (Aquinas)

“Many of our brethren reside within the country. All of them are exceptional fighters.” (Eveam)

“.....is that so?” (Aquinas)

“There is also one more person.....” (Eveam)

“Who?” (Aquinas)

“A very, very strong person I made a contract with.....” (Eveam)

Before Eveam was able to finish her sentence, the barrier that surrounded the room shook violently.

“W-What is going on!?( Eveam)

Eveam looked around defensively.

“This is an...earthquake?” (Kiria)

Advisor Kiria frowned as she spoke. As Rudolf did not expect this to happen, it was a surprise to all of them. At that moment, Judom, the person who was meditating until now, spoke in a rising voice.

“At last...it has arrived” (Judom)

---

In the 【Sacred Oldine】 , there was the 《Oldine Grand Temple》 . At the center of it was the 《Sacred Room》 , the location where the hero’s remaining power was concentrated.

At the center, there was ward with the a radius of 20m where weapons cannot be brought in. There is no way for someone to enter it with a weapon. Furthermore, magic, primarily mana cannot be used while a person is inside.

This 《Sanctuary》 was created using the hero’s remaining power. It was the most powerful barrier created for the room. A maximum

of thirteen people can enter the room. Once a person goes inside, they cannot easily leave the room.

The way to exit the sanctuary was by using the 《Hero's Relic》. It was something that belonged to the Hero. A person with the relic would be able to weaken the barrier and would be free to enter and exit the sanctuary.

The only other way to exit the sanctuary was to wait for 24 hours to elapse. After 24 hours, the barrier would weaken slightly, causing a gap to appear in the barrier. Going through the gap would allow one to exit the sanctuary.

The barrier was very strong. There was no way that it would weaken before 24 hours. However, to everyone's surprise, the 《Sanctuary》 that everyone was in faltered as it shook.

If a person was able to sense the magic in the area, they would feel that the barrier was gradually being weakened.

“W-what the heck...?” (Eveam)

Eveam had the best magic perception among the people inside the barrier. Thus, she was able to grasp that something odd was happening.

“Relax, Maou-chan” (Judom)

“J-Judom-dono?” (Eveam)

There was no surprise on Judom's face. On the contrary, he was staring at the entrance of the room with a big smile on his face.

“Judom, did you?” (Portnis)

Head priest Portnis looked at Judom's smiling face in confusion.

“Well, I thought something like this would happen so I brought some insurance.” (Judom)

Unable to remain silent, the King of Victoria shouted.

“What is happening Judom? What in the world are you doing?”  
(Rudolf)

“Rudolf, this means that things will not go your way” (Judom)

“What did you say?” (Rudolf)

“Did you think I didn’t prepare anything before this meeting?”  
(Judom)

As he said so, the door opened with a creaking sound.

“Judom-sama” (???)

From beyond the door, a person dressed like an adventurer appeared. When they appeared, Judom smiled broadly.

“Now, Demon Lord-chan, go!” (Judom)

“Eh, ah.....got it! You guys!” (Eveam)

When the others heard her voice, they nodded and left the room one after the other, leaving behind a dumbfounded Rudolf and his group.

“Kiria! What are you doing! Hurry up!” (Eveam)

“.....Yes” (Kiria)

Eveam was unsure why Kiria stayed put, and told her to hurry. Kiria glanced momentarily at the surprised Rudolf and followed behind Eveam.

“Alright, Portnis, you go on ahead” (Judom)

“Understood, Judom” (Potinus)

She picked up her staff, looked at Rudolf with a disgusted face, and left the room.

“You’ve really done it, haven’t you Judom.” (Rudolf)

Before Rudolf could continue Judom interrupted him and said

“Hmph, I wanted to believe you. But did you think I had no idea what you were planning? I’m pretty confident in my ability to gather information. The moment you selected this place for a meeting, I immediately looked for a 《Hero’s Relic》 ” (Judom)

“.....But how did this information get to the outside?” (Dennis)

“.....If you want to know we’ll talk about it outside. Unless, you want to remain here to preserve your sorry ass?. Well, it is pretty safe here.” (Judom)

Saying so Judom headed toward the door.

“....K-king! W-w-w-what are you going to do about this?” (Dennis)

Not only Dennis, but the soldiers were also agitated.

“.....When this happened, it just means that the scenario has changed.” (Rudolf)

“D-does that mean...” (Dennis)

“Ah, they don’t seem like they are going to make a move, lets just head outside.” (Rudolf)

“B-but...” (Dennis)

Dennis was the most anxious. It was clear that they’ll be safe if they remained inside. But if they went outside, they were almost guaranteed to be attacked by the 『Evila』 .

“If you feel uncomfortable just remain here.” (Rudolf)

Rudolf also glanced at the five soldiers.

“The soldiers would rebel if they were to keep quiet about this.” (Rudolf)

The only people that knew of the plan to confine the Demon Lord here were Dennis, and the five soldiers. It was done to prevent the information from spreading, but if it was kept well there would be no way for Judom’s adventurers to come here in the first place.



(NB: I hope this is right)

Rudolf greatly regretted it. But now that it has happened, there was no longer any meaning in remaining here. Thus, there is no choice but to wait and see.

“I’m going. Now that this happened...I have no choice but to see it to the end.” (Rudolf)

Dennis saw Rudolf drag himself out of the door with determination.

“W-wait. Please wait, don’t leave me behind” (Dennis)

Eventually, no one was left in the room.

## Chapter 113: Judom's Countermeasures and a New Betrayal

“....Now, Will you explain what happened Judom?” (Rudolf)

Judom waited for Rudolf outside, naturally Eveam and her escorts directed their hostility towards him. Especially Marione who had an atmosphere that was about to snap at any moment.

Even though there were a lot of soldiers in the surrounding area, they would become insignificant if Marione went berserk. Even Dennis was secretly hiding behind him in fear.

However, Rudolf was calmly inquiring Judom by putting on a poker face.

“How? Did the information on 《Sacred Room》 spread outside.....?” (Rudolf)

“You have a point, that room is a space completely isolated from the outside. It was supposed to be inaccessible because the information inside should not be able to leak out, Despite this, how?” (Dennis)

It was a valid question. The guards outside shouldn't be able to hear anything outside the room unless the person inside the room steps out. Thus, it should be impossible for the ones outside to know anything unless the person inside stepped out.

Likewise, information in the room should not leak to the outside either. However, the reality is, Judom's subordinate knew about the accident and appeared right on time. It was so mysterious that they cannot help but inquire the details.

Eveam and her escorts were holding a doubt similar to Rudolf as they paid attention to Judom.

“Hey” (Judom)

Judom called out one of his subordinate by his side. Then, a person

came, he whispered to Judom as he showed him a piece of paper. Judom looked at the paper as he listened to their explanation. Although Judom showed a dubious expression midway while reading the letter, he smiled soon after.

“...I see, as I thought, that guy made a move huh? Well this is good, we were really saved by it, Thank you” (Judom)

The subordinate smiled as he left the place.

“... Now then, you wanted an explanation, right? This pape– no, the person who delivered this letter deserves the credit” (Judom)

“Did you say a letter?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf who was intrigued, stared at the paper with a distant expression. So, the answers are surely written in that letter, Rudolf thought.

“The letter is written this way: The conference is a bluff, all of this was a conspiracy for 『Evila's』 destruction. Please help the Demon Lord....or so it stated. Those words were written at the beginning of the letter.” (Judom)

After Judom's explanation, Rudolf had a grim expression unlike a moment ago. Then, Judom continued.

“A certain person, delivered this information to my subordinates. Well, I said if there is something urgent, that person can deliver information to that location, I guess it was useful. My subordinates was surprised you know? After all is said and done, that place was our hiding place, when they pondered the reason a bird entered the place, a letter could be seen on the bird addressed to my subordinates” (Judom)

Nevertheless, if the written content was normal, his subordinates would have laughed it off. However, when they saw the name of the sender, they believed that information and immediately moved as they were told because Judom had misgivings towards the conference.

“Portnis, Take this” (Judom)

As Judom says so, he handed a dagger to her.

“...This is !? the, 《Hero’s Relic》 -!?” (Portnis)

“Yes, my subordinate looked for it. We obtained it ahead of time when this was chosen as the place for the conference. In a sense.... it was a precaution. But, I did not carry it because I did not think it would be necessary.” (Judom)

Even if Judom carried it, Portnis and the priests will prevent him from carrying it inside. Since that was bound to happen, he entrusted it in the hands of his subordinate.

“You should take this with you” (Judom)

“I-Is it alright for me to have this?” (Portnis)

“Yes, I have confidence in you. And also, take the other priests and leave here” (Judom)

“....I understand” (Portnis)

Is this the favor of our long acquaintanceship? Judom thought, Portnis then carried the dagger with care as she took the other priests and left the area, she seemed to have understood what Judom was trying to convey.

“.....on earth” (Rudolf)

“N?” (Judom)

“Who on earth is that person? The person who conveyed such information?” (Rudolf)

When Rudolf bitterly asked Judom, an unbelievable name jumped out

“..... Nazaar Skride” (Judom)

“...Wha-What did you say?” (Rudolf)

I have heard that name, Rudolf thought. Rather, he had talked with

that person several times. Nazaar was a well-known painter, he had bought several paintings from him. There were a lot of places where he displayed the paintings in the castle. This was because Rudolf was his fan.

However, Rudolf was not the only one who was surprised after hearing the identity of that person.

“Na-, Nazaar... ? Ju-, Judom-dono! Th-,that man named Nazaar...”  
(Eveam)

Eveam racks her words as she asked for confirmation.

“Yes, it is exactly what you are thinking right now Maou-chan. That person, is Cruel’s 《Rank 3》, Teckil Shizaa” (Judom)

“I- I see.... it was him.... ” (Eveam)

Then, a weary sigh was heard somewhere nearby. Eveam looked at her surroundings

“Is there something wrong?” (Kiria)

Kiria scrawled in concern as she looked at Eveam.

“N-,No, It’s nothing” (Eveam)

Maybe it was just my imagination, Eveam thought as she watched Judom again.

“Then, do you know where he is now?” (Eveam)

“....Ah, about that one-” (Judom)

“If it’s about him, he should be alright. Your Majesty” (Marione)

Marione is currently grinding his teeth as he is glared at the 『Humas』 in the surroundings. His anger seems to have considerably piled up.

“Certainly, he has a point. Princess...I mean, Your Majesty, we should promptly obtain information on 【Demon Capital: Xaos】”

(Aquinas)

When Aquinas beside her spoke those words

“That is not it! You should have realized it by now! We should punish them for betraying us!” (Marione)

Marione concentrated magic in both his hands. Tension ran through the soldiers in the surroundings. “Hii-!”, Dennis omitted as he was unable to back off due to fear

“Cease your actions Marione!” (Eveam)

“Why are you stopping me Your Majesty! The people here are pathetic garbages, which I can get rid of in a few minutes”

“I said to cease your actions!” (Eveam)

Eveam severely glared at him.

“.....I presume, you have a reasonable explanation for this one, right?” (Marione)

“I have a lot of questions about everything right now. As the Victoria’s King said, the heroes and the 『Gabranth』 may have crossed the bridge and attacked the demon continent, however, there is Iraora who is guarding the 【Mütich Bridge】 , and there even Shublarz and Greyald present as well? Iraora would have informed us if they started to cross the bridge before we crossed over the bridge. Isn’t that right, Kiria?” (Eveam)

“That is right. I would be always informed if any information is passed down, if there is an abnormality, Her Majesty will immediately be informed” (Kiria)

Even if the enemy had a large army, in the 『Evila』 army, there are 2 people from 《Cruel》 and Iraora who was a former 《Cruel》 , Eveam did not think that they would be easily overwhelmed.

Even if it’s possible to overwhelm them, there are soldiers at 【Demon Capital】 , in case they got exhausted by the time they

arrive there, Eveam thought that they could defend the country.

En route here, even though the heroes were present, there was no sign of a fight on the bridge. Supposing they rebelled against them, she believed that Shublarz and the others will do something one way or another.

“...Then, for example, if a war happened there, they have already suppressed it?” (Eveam)

“Yes, We 『Evila』 are beings who beared wounds suffered from countless war, we are not so soft to be easily suppressed” (Kiria)

“...You have a point there. Then, it means their betrayal will just crumble from there” (Marione)

At that moment, Marione expressed a smile with a sense of superiority. He then looked at Rudolf who has not spoken for quite a long time, his eyes closed.

“Humph, it seemed your plan has failed. This is because you have underestimated us” (Marione)

Although Marione spoke those words to Rudolf, he responded with-

“...Hahaha” (Rudolf)

For some reason, he suddenly began to laugh.

“Apparently all my speculations seems to be off” (Rudolf)

After he laughed for a while, Rudolf opened his eyes and looked at Marione

“Ah, my apologies for laughing. \*ehem, although this differs certainly from the scenario I have planned out... I have anticipated this could happen” (Rudolf)

“Humph, what a bluff” (Marione)

“Hahaha, Demon Lord” (Rudolf)

He called Eveam while disregarding Marione's word.

“...What?” (Eveam)

“You said that you believe in the 『Evila's』 right?” (Rudolf)

“Yes, I believe in my family” (Eveam)

“I see, then supposing one of your family members hate you, what will you do?” (Rudolf)

“...What's with that suddenly” (Eveam)

“Even the 『Evila's』 have some feelings. They also have some will. If that's the case, they also have personal thoughts. Or, are saying that all of the 『Evila's』 swears an oath of allegiance to you? Isn't that just your arrogance?” (Rudolf)

Eveam frowned from the sudden words he said to her.

“I carefully thought about it. Nonetheless, even if the 『Gabranth』 is on your side who are the highest war potential, do you think they can cross the bridge by force with your foolish actions? There is a possibility that the bridge might be destroyed, you know?” (Eveam)

Certainly, that is possible, Rudolf thought. The 【Mütich Bridge】 is not that strong. It will easily break if such forces fight within the bridge. Therefore, he did not select that route

“I will tell you something good Demon Lord. Although it may sound unbelievable, the war potential here, everyone should have flawlessly crossed over to the demon continent” (Rudolf)

“Th-,That is not possible!” (Eveam)

“It's not possible? Why is it?” (Rudolf)

“Certainly, there is a small possibility where they can cross over by fighting them. However, they won't come out unscratched! Also, en route here, I saw the heroes. In other words, they have not crossed at that time” (Eveam)



“.....” (Rudolph)

“Even if they crossed over afterwards, there are companions who I can trust there. They are three people there who are among the ones with the highest war potential there” (Eveam)

She admits that even Iraora was an influential person worthy of being mentioned in that group.

“Therefore, they cannot come out unscratched if they encountered a fight there” (Eveam)

“..... I will tell you another interesting information” (Rudolf)

“Wh-...at?” (Eveam)

“The heroes have crossed over the demon continent..... before you crossed over the bridge” (Rudolf)

“Na-!?” (Eveam)

Eveam stiffened as she was not able to grasp the meaning of Rudolf's words.

“A-,All the more it is not possible! Iraora is always safeguarding the bridge there, I should have been informed if there was a battle!” (Eveam)

She raised her voice with all her might, Rudolf who saw that subtly loosened his cheeks.

“ I told you before right? The heroes have crossed over safely” (Rudolf)

“ And I told you that-” (Eveam)

Then, Aquinas puts a hand to her shoulder to interrupt her words.

“.....Aquinas?” (Eveam)

Aquinas turns his eyes on Rudolf.

“I see, if I take what you say is for real then, Iraora is...” (Aquinas)

“...That is right, he is one of the 『Evila』 on my side” (Rudolf)

Words that caused Eveam to stiffen were said again

Eveam closed and opened her mouth but nothing came out. It was probably because she was shocked by what Rudolf said.

“Because he decided to join our side, we decided to proceed with this plan” (Rudolf)

“Iraora is a traitor...?” (Marione)

It was Marione who muttered those words, although he doesn't completely believe his words either, if supposing those words are true, then his reasons for the assault is plausible.

“Hahaha, The existence called 『Evila』, it seems to be chained to betrayal. You don't believe it? As your brethren betrays fellow brethren” (Rudolf)

“... Lies ” (Eveam)

“N?” (Rudolf)

“Your words are not well grounded! You are only playing your words to provoke us” (Eveam)

“...Haa, You are trembling at this late hour? You know, you don't need to forcibly believe in me. However...” (Rudolf)

Rudolf then, glanced at a certain place.

“When I'm actually seeing it with my own eyes, as might expected, I cannot help but believe in my notion?” (Rudolf)

“...What are you sayin-... g.....Eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam noticed a sense of weakness in her body, she grasped that the feeling is coming down from her chest, and she lowered her eyes there.

This is strange. This is strange. This is strange. Eveam found it

strange as she found someones hand pierced through her chest area.

And why is it, that I recognize this hand, Eveam thought. Although she did not want to consider it, she had to confirm the owner of those hands.

From the pain, her face warped as she was mortified of confirming it. Still, she slowly turned her face, to see the face of the person who was behind her.

When she saw that face, a shock went through her whole body. How in the world...why....there

“Why... are you there .....Kiria?” (Eveam)

## Chapter 114 – Out of Place Hiirou

\*bushuuuu!

“Gaha !?” (Eveam)

Kiria pulled her arm out of Eveam’s body. Kiria simply watched Eveam collapse, her expressionless face hiding whatever thoughts lied within her head.

Following this, a large shadow appeared behind Kiria.

\*buooooooooon!

Kiria instantly bended her body. She avoided the attack from the large shadow. She then moved straight to Rudolf’s side with surprising swiftness. It seems that they intend to cut her down with a knifehand strike, or so Kiria thought. As proof her observation, the soldier who were near were blown off by the wind pressure.

“chi” (Kiria)

The assailant’s true identity was Aquinas. Even though such a feat was expected of him, Aquinas did not expect Kiria, who was Eveam’s aide, to perform such reckless actions. Eveam’s protection was not planned properly. Rather, it was the wrong choice to leave the protection to Kiria.

Judom was also rendered immobile by the sudden attack.

“H-Her Majestyyyy!” (Marione)

Marione’s face stiffened after he had made it to Eveam’s location. He glared at Kiria.

” Kiriaaaaa! What do you think you’re trying to do! ” (Marione)

” Gu.... ” (Eveam)

” H-Her Majesty! Are you alright!? ” (Marione)

Eveam desperately stood up while being supported by Marione. She then stared at Kiria in disbelief.

“How are you, Demon Lord? ” (Rudolf)

Even though Eveam wanted to hear Kiria’s words, what she heard were the words of Rudolf.

” The pain in your chest...doesn’t the pain in your heart wound you more right now? I will teach you what that is.....that pain.... is the pain of betrayal. ” (Rudolf)

Lies. Lies. Whatever this is, it has to be a mistake.

Eveam repeated this in her heart countless times. In reality, she understood what this pain was due to what had happened. And, that reality is, Kiria was currently standing beside Rudolf.

” W....hy..... Why..... Kiria... ? ” (Eveam)

Eveam looked up desperately to the person who was her close aide, even though she was losing a large amount of blood over time.

” Wa... was your weakness... used against you..... ?” (Eveam)

Eveam thought of that and anger swells up in her. She stared at Rudolf as the source of her anger.

However, Kiria never answered back like before. Rather, she was different from the current Kiria. She coldly glances at Eveam like an insect crawling on the ground.

” Princess, look at reality, She.... Kiria is a traitor ” (Aquinas)

Eveam broke from those words when Aquinas said it with an indifferent tone.

” Lies! This is unimaginable! She... Kiria has been with me for a long time since my childhood. She has always stayed by my side..... We’re friends! Isn’t that right, Kiria!” (Eveam)

Bitterness was mixed in Eveam’s words. And then, Kiria who had

been silent until now, opened her mouth.

” Are you talking about me? I think you are mistaken. I was created for the sake of this day ” (Kiria)

Kiria said those words with an indifferent tone. Eveam frowned to those incomprehensible words.

” For the sake of this world? You were created? What are you saying Kiria? ” (Eveam)

” I am No. 03, Val Kiria specializing in combat. This android was created for the sake of this day. ... Ah, I made a mistake. Tentatively, I’m a 『Evila』 but I’m a 『Artificial Evila』 ” (ValKiria-03)

Kiria said those words indifferently, which made it sound like a joke to Eveam. However, Kiria was serious about her words.

” Val Kiria ..... Impossible... No, that shouldn’t be ” (Aquinas)

Eveam watches Aquinas face who suddenly muttered his doubts.

” D...Do you know about it.... Aquinas? ” (Eveam)

Aquinas looked at the pale face Eveam who said those words.

” Setting it aside for now, Marione, Princess..... Her Majesty, I entrust her to you ” (Aquinas)

” What will you do? ” (Marione)

” I will settle this fight ” (Aquinas)

Then, Aquinas glared at Kiria and Rudolf.

” I will fight here so that they would not reach Her Majesty. Marione, cure the injury on Her Majesty and return to 【Xaos】 as soon as possible ” (Aquinas)

” Don’t joke around ..... But if I leave Her Majesty’s current condition, it might get worse over time.... Eei! You! Mark my words

『Humas』 ! I will destroy you all without fail! ” (Marione)

” gu..... Mari.....one ” (Eveam)

After Marione’s declaration, Eveam was carried in his arms and they began their retreat.

” I won’t let you ” (???)

In front of them stood a figure who blocked Marione’s retreat.

” Y.... You are !? ” (Marione)

” fufufu, You ran away splendidly that time... Demon Queen ” (???)

In that place, a lion-like person, with a splendid mane was standing there. He was the king with a great ambition, the 《Beast King》 ,Leowald King

” muu, I did not expect to meet you here ” (Marione)

Marione felt very concerned. Eveam was in a critical condition, and confronting with the King of 【Gabranth – Pasion】 who rivaled their strength was the worst possible situation.

” Father ” (Leglos)

” Step back, Leglos, that Demon Queen will be killed by this Beast King ” (Leowald)

Leowald said those words to the first prince, Leglos who was beside him. He took off his mantle and passed it to Leglos. And then, his muscles swelled up, and an aura of bloodthirst erupted from his body.

Marione sensed from Leowald’s atmosphere that he could not be defeated by ordinary methods. What’s worse, he was carrying Eveam in his arms. He judged that there was no way he could win.

” Marione! ” (???)

However, an unexpected person showed up again. And that person

is..

” Shublarz !? ” (Marione)

Yes, that person was Shublarz who was assigned to defend the Evila border. She seemed to have hurried here. Rather, it was understood that she came here with all her strength without taking a break. It was clear because her clothes was in disorder, her breathing was rugged and she was drenched in sweat

However, Marione did not understand right away why Shublarz was in the 【Sacred Oldine】 . He was quite a distance from her. He thought that there was a possibility that Shublarz was also a traitor. Then, Eveam faintly opened her eyes and watched her.

However, Shublarz did not carelessly approach them, she moved her mouth instead

” .... Iraora betrayed us ” (Shublarz)

” ..... Where is Greyald? ” (Marione)

” .... Probably..... ” (Shublarz)

The appearance of Shublarz was seen, and it was proof that Greyald suffered at Iraora’s hand.

” E... Even... Greyald... ” (Eveam)

The news was mortifying to hear. Marione understood that because Eveam’s trembling body was transmitted to him while he was carrying her.

However, Marione could not completely trust Shublarz words yet. If he believes her words, an attack similar from Kiria might happen again.

” Her Majesty! ” (Shublarz)

Shublarz saw Eveam’s critical condition and tried to approached them



” Don’t come closer! ” (Marione)

” B... But Marione! Her Majesty has a terrible injury! ” (Shublarz)

” Don’t worry, Just don’t move there! ” (Marione)

Shublarz stopped after Marione strongly said those words. And she surveyed the current surroundings around them

” ....I see. The situation in here is also serious. What’s more ”  
(Shublarz)

She turns her gaze to Kiria who was beside Rudolf

” I did not expect for Kiria to..... Then that means if what Iraora said is true, she is related to that person.... ? ” (Shublarz)

” mu? What do you mean? ” (Marione)

” Iraora’s body suddenly changed ” (Shublarz)

” Did you say suddenly change? ” (Marione)

” Yes, his body reddens and his magic and physical strength have improved enormously. A person seems to have given him that power. Moreover, he swore loyalty to that person and not to Her Majesty ” (Shublarz)

Eveam silently listened to Shublarz story

“haa haa haa ..... ” (Eveam)

Due to Eveam’s current state, her breathing had become more severe compared to previously. Then..

” Maou-chan, drink this ” (Judom)

” Hey you! What are you doing! ” (Marione)

Judom had went to their presence. He tried to let Eveam drink a small bottle

” Ju.... Judom-dono.... ” (Eveam)

” This 《Blood Medicine》 will supplement your loss of blood. For the time being, you are losing a dangerous amount of blood, if we leave it as it is, you might die. So, please believe me Maou-chan. I’m not your enemy ” (Judom)

Judom started at her. However, Eveam was unable to trust someone since she was betrayed by her most trusted aide. Then..

\*kiiin!

A buzzing sound was heard in the place. Considerable magic was felt in the surrounding area, and then, a part of the place became distorted. From that distorted area...

” n? Where is this? ... ah, there you are, Oi Maou. There is a discrepancy in our contract.... hm? , what’s with that face? ” (???)

A person wearing a red robe appeared.

## Chapter 115 – Meeting with the Demon Queen

” You will hear from them directly? What are you talking about? ”  
(Ornoth)

Ornoth who is 《Rank 4》 of 『Cruel』 had no idea what Okamura Hiiro told him

Hiiro wanted to talk with the Demon Lord, but she is not here in 【Xaos】. Right now, the Demon Lord is at 【Holy Oldine】 for the alliance conference. Talking to her directly seems impossible in the current situation. Primarily because there is quite a considerable distance between 【Xaos】 and 【Holy Oldine】. Ornoth shrugged his shoulder in amazement.

There was something that Hiiro needed to ask the Demon Lord about. He wanted to clarify the details of the contract.

Then, Hiiro ignored Ornoth’s monologue and focused magic in both his index fingers.

“Transfer 『転移』 ” & “Demon Lord 『魔王』 ”

(I should go there quickly and hear the circumstances and return back here again) (Hiiro)

However, Hiiro suddenly realized something

(.....ah, I could have just called them from here instead of teleporting to them) (Hiiro)

However, he had already written the characters. Canceling it would trigger a 《Rebound》 so he sighed and said

” Oi Stupid Disciple, I will go out for a moment, when those guys get back, tell them the current situation ” (Hiiro)

” Certainly ~zo! ” (Nikki)

Hihiro activated his 《Word Magic》 after Nikki saluted him.

\*pishun~!

Other people except Nikki, were dumbfounded when Hihiro's disappeared.

” See you soon Master ~zo! ” (Nikki)

Scene from the Past

When Okamura Hihiro arrived in 【Xaos】 his companions were out for a moment because they had some private business to attend to. Hihiro had no choice but to take on the task of looking for an inn with Nikki.

However, Hihiro was lost as he walked in the streets of 【Xaos】. This is because the size of the country. Although 【Victorias】 was a big country, 【Xaos】 seems to be much bigger.

【Victorias】 was a country that consisted of many towns. 【Xaos】 as well seems to be identical with two or more town condensed in one place. Hihiro thought it is insufficient to tour 【Xaos】 in just one day.

Inside the town, Hihiro and Nikki were having a hard time looking for the lodging place they were supposed to stay in. They continued looking for a while but they felt hungry in the middle of the search. Thus, Hihiro thought that it can't be helped and looked for a place to eat. Fortunately, they quickly found a place to eat

\*karan koron

That was the sound of the door of the coffee shop when a person goes inside. The interior of the shop looked dim and unpopulated. Hihiro found this convenient and proceed to the food counter.

” Ah, Master! I will search for our lodging ~zo! ” (Nikki)

” ah? Aren't you hungry? ” (Hihiro)

” Yes ~zo! The smoked meat in Master's bag a while ago was really

delicious! ” (Nikki)

\*pokan!

” nowa! W.. What are you doing! ” (Nikki)

” It’s not What are you doing! Do not eat my things without my permission! ” (Hiiro)

” u~ I’m really sorry ~zo ” (Nikki)

Seeing Nikki depressed while hanging one’s head, Hiiro sighed.

” Then, go find our lodging quickly, I might forgive if you do that ” (Hiiro)

” Y... Yes ~zo! ” (Nikki)

Nikki who became enthusiastic once again, ran at full speed. Hiiro entered the store and looked for a place to sit. Although there was a young girl sitting alone in the counter seat, the seat besides her seems to be empty. So Hiiro went to that place.

” What will your order be? ” (Shopkeeper)

The shopkeeper appeared

” I’m hungry, serve me with your most delicious dish.” (Hiiro)

The young girl noticed Hiiro and gave him a glance due to Hiiro’s bluntness. Hiiro did not mind that glance. Rather she doesn’t seem to exist to Hiiro.

After a while, Fried rice with large serving of meat was served to Hiiro. Hiiro judged this dish was delicious just from it’s smell and ate the dish quickly.

” Give me another cup ” (Hiiro)

That cycle repeated three times.

” fufufu ” (???)

Hiiro heard laughter from the young girl who was beside him. Hiiro glanced back at her.

” Ah. I’m sorry, you were eating so well , that I just.. ” (Young Girl)

Though Hiiro was puzzled at the young girl’s behaviour, Hiiro returned her glance and ignored her. The shopkeeper who saw that seems to be panicking.

” O... Oi! You!, This person is.. ” (Shopkeeper)

” It’s okay ” (Young Girl)

” B.. But ” (Shopkeeper)

” I said it’s okay, he is a guest here, and I’m a regular customer. Social status have nothing to do with this ” (Young Girl)

” .... haa... If you say so ” (Shopkeeper)

When Hiiro heard the conversation of the two people, he could understand that the young girl besides him seems to have a high social standing. Assuming, she is an ojousama, Hiiro felt a little admiration for the young girl who came here alone into this dim and unpopulated coffee shop.

Moreover, the young girl was a regular customer. Until now, Hiiro finally noticed the young girl’s appearance. She seems to have a beautiful blonde hair. Her face seems to be proper. She smelled like a fragrant flower. Hiiro judged that lots of men would be attracted to this beautiful lady.

Hiiro was also surprised because this sort of beautiful woman came here alone into this dim shop and what’s more she is a regular costumer. But Hiiro returned to his meal instantly for he isn’t related to them.

\*karan koron

The shop keeper moved his attention to the new guest. Though it seems to be a guest, three bad looking guys entered the store.

” Oo! Thi.... This is! There is a woman here! ~” (Man A)

One of the three notice the lady’s appearance and raised his voice.

” O!.. That’s nice~ ” (Man B)

” Moreover, she’s a super beautiful lady! ~” (Man C)

They puffed their noses in an aroused way and approached the girl.

” U... Uhm Customers! ” (Shopkeeper)

” Shut up Shop keeper! Be silent for now ” (Man A)

” Un Un... If you don’t, we might kill you ” (Man B)

” Gyahahaha” (Man C)

The storekeeper went silent because of their words. And returned their glance to the young girl. One hand was quietly put in the young girl’s shoulder and the shopkeeper turned pale in that moment.

” naa naa Nee~chan, Do you want to have a good time with us? ”  
(Man A)

” Un.. Un.. If that’s the case, we’ll treat you gently ~” (Man B)

” hou, you have quite an energetic spirit ” (Young Girl)

The lady quietly answers the two people who talked to her.

” Gyahahaha. Our spirits are full of vigor, well how about it? Do you want to play? ” (Man C)

” I’m sorry, after this I have a private business to attend to ”  
(Young Girl)

” Then just skip out on it~ ” (Man A)

” Un... Un... This is a much better thing to do. We’ll show you lots of things that will make you feel good~” (Man B)

” Gyahahaha! , we’ll make you feel so good, you won’t even be able to stand the next day! Gyahahaha! ” (Man C)

Vulgar laughter resonates throughout the store. The shopkeeper became paler due to the current situation.

” I will have to refuse whatever you have to say. Besides, you guys don’t seem to be a resident to this country? ” (Young Girl)

” Ah? Well, that’s right. We just came here yesterday ” (Man A)

” As expected, because it’s my first time encountering such vulgar people in this country” (Young Girl)

The three people raised their eyebrow all of a sudden due to the young girl’s way of talking.

” .... ha? Oi Nee~chan, you shouldn’t be reckless with us you know? ~ ” (Pervert A)

” Un.. Un.. The good feeling might become painful ~~ ” (Pervert B)

” Gyahahaha! So just become obedient and play with us? ” (Pervert C)

Suddenly, the hand on the young girl’s shoulder was beaten downwards.

” What are you guys doing? ” (Young Girl)

The young girl suddenly stands up and glared at the three of them. It seems that she is angry but it cannot be confirmed because her face seems to be hidden behind her long hair.

” You people are of the 『Evila』 ! As an 『Evila』 , you should be proud of being one! ” (Young Girl)

The three people were taken aback by the young girl’s outburst.

” ” ” Gyahahahahahaha! ” ” ” (Pervert A, B, C)



They made fun of the young girl while laughing to their hearts content.

” This life.. I should be proud of?, Bullshit! There is no value in it! ”  
(Pervert A)

” Un.. Un... what an interesting remark ehehe~~ ” (Pervert B)

” Gyahahahahahaha! I think I’m getting a stomach ache! ” (Pervert C)

When the young girl saw their action, she strongly grasped her fist, the shopkeeper seems to have become more paler due the current situation. However, .....

” Shut Up, Bullshit Trio ” (Hiiro)

Hiiro who was docile until now, couldn’t endure and complained. And because of these vulgar people that Hiiro lost his appetite.

” Aa? Hey hey, Are you talking about us? ~” (Bullshit A)

It was clear that the only ones in this store is Hiiro and them. It was sarcastic and disrespectful, and if Hiiro didn’t fight back he wouldn’t be Hiiro.

” There is no one else here. So I’m talking about you guys? Or is it possibly you want me to rename you guys as Garbage Trio ? ”  
(Hiiro)

” W.. What did you said !? ” (Garbage A)

” Get out now. Because of you I lost my appetite, I don’t want to have a garbage existing beside me. ” (Hiiro)

From Hiiro’s sarcasm, he earned the glares of the three angry people.

” Hey Red Robe, do you want to die? huh? ” (Garbage A)

” What are you doing? That person doesn’t have anything to do with this! ” (Young Girl)

The other two started to walk toward Hiiro; the young girl tried to obstruct them but was pushed aside. It was clear that they were not going to head out. This caused Hiiro to let out sigh.

” ku! ” (Young Girl)

” Nee~chan, afterwards let’s have some fun, but before that .... ~ ”  
(Garbage A)

However, Hiiro averts his glance from the man, the storekeeper is seen.

” Oi shopkeeper, in this situation right now, if I was able to drive out the Garbage Trio in this cafe, can I have this meal for free ”  
(Hiiro)

” Ehh..... Ah... I don’t mind but... ” (Shopkeeper)

” Good, agreement settled ” (Hiiro)

Hiiro then chuckled after that.

” Let’s go out. I will be your opponent Garbage Trio ” (Hiiro)

” Bring it on Red Robe! Don’t complain if we kill you! ” (Garbage A)

Fortunately, the street doesn’t seem to be populated and all of them went into an alley and Hiiro faced the Garbage Trio.

“I hope you won’t go crying now because the three of us will fight you at the same time.” (Garbage A)

The three people grinned, but Hiiro ignored them and said

” Let’s skip the talk, Come at me Garbage Trio! ” (Hiiro)

” W.. We will kill you! ” (Garbage Trio)

Three people attacked together.

” B.. Be careful! ” (Young Girl)

The young girl shouted, because she saw the three people had knives. However, Hiiro sighed. Then Hiiro drew magic with both his index finger and quickly wrote the character.

” Can you manage skydiving without a parachute? ” (Hiiro)

Suddenly, Hiiro disappeared along with the three people.

The young girl who witnessed it forgot to blink her eyes in amazement. Then she perceived a considerable magic appear above her, and looked up.

Four people were now suspended the sky.

” Eh? Ah? Oh? Na... naaaaaaaaaa !? ” (Garbage A)

” What the heck is thiiiiiiiiiiiiis !? ” (Garbage B)

” Howaaaaaaaa! high! Too high! I will die from this height ”  
(Garbage C)

Hiiro did not blame them for being surprised. Previously there were on the alley but right now they are suspended in the sky. Moreover, they were considerably high up.

” Yo, how is it? This will be your first time sky diving, right? ”  
(Hiiro)

With a evil grin, Hiiro shot those words at the three people who were floating in the air.

” Y... You! D.. What did you do! Th.. This...! ” (Garbage A)

Hiiro did not understand what they are trying to tell him. But one thing for sure, they are frightened little shits right now.

” Well, even if you guys have a rotten personality you are a still an 『Evila』 , even from falling, you will only sustain a serious injury..... that is if you are lucky? ” (Hiiro)

” I-If we are lucky-?! Uwaaaaaaaaa! ” (Garbage A)

” Bye ” (Hiiro)

\*pishun

Hiiro disappeared again.

” ” ” Nooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo! ” ” ” (Garbage Trio)

Hiiro returned to his former position and faced the shopkeeper.

” I told them not to come here again. And as agreed, this meal is free of charge right? ” (Hiiro)

” eh.. ah.. Yeah ” (Shopkeeper)

Hiiro then heard something crash outside and knew that those three were able to kiss the ground splendidly.

By the way, the character Hiiro used a little while ago,

“Transfer 『転移』 ” & “Four People 『四人』 ”

He returned with the same character “Transfer 『転移』 ” that he conjured with his magic.

Hiiro was satisfied from his full belly and started to leave the place from there.

\*gashi!

Hiiro’s arm was grabbed by the young girl

” What do you want? ” (Hiiro)

Hiiro expected the young girl to return her expression of gratitude but was taken aback by her following words.

” I... I’m the Demon Lord of this country! Th.. That’s why, Please let me treat you to any drink you like!! ” (Young Girl)

Hiiro thought that there is something wrong with the head of this young girl after all.

## Chapter 116 – Hihiro and Eveam

Hihiro understood that he was being treated to a drink, maybe because she bears a part of his involvement. This is probably the reason for her actions, because Hihiro was the one who provoked the fight and thus an apology was not requested

However, the words “I’m the Demon Lord” she spoke before. Hihiro unintentionally thought that he misheard her words. Therefore, he tried those words in his head. “I’m the Beach King”, Hihiro thought. Although he did not understand its meaning, He imagined it was an existence close to a manager of the beach. But “.... Nah” Hihiro denied, to begin with he only judged his impression based on her appearance. Even if he changed the words with ones that sound the same, he cannot find any words that has a similar characteristics of her words

In other words, the words Demon Lord. She claimed to be the Demon Lord in Hihiro’s presence. If he was not mistaken, this is the home territory of the Demon Lord, although he heard that the Demon Lord was a woman, Who would have imagined that the Demon Lord would lurk alone in a coffee shop?

Supposing she is for example, the Demon Lord, although she can potentially go out to a place alone with this degree of peace, there was the incident with the strangers awhile ago, so she probably did not obtain official permission to go out.

Or she is simply yearning to be a Demon Lord, Hihiro instinctively analyzed the matter concerning about that. He thought about its advantages, but he found nothing. He doubted it because she may or may not be the Demon Lord of the Demon Country. In any case, Hihiro will find out soon.

When Hihiro considered the shopkeeper’s reaction when he talked to the young girl in a rough attitude, there is a good chance that she could be someone eminent. Furthermore, when the Bullshit Trio approached her the shopkeeper became even more worried. From that alone, it is clear that the young girl was either a influential or a

powerful person.

When Hiiro calmly considered about it, he judged that she might be the real thing. And now, Hiiro saw the young girl watching him with an eager expression as he scratched his cheek.

(Well, I am waiting for that Baka-Deshi, so it's probably alright)  
(Hiiro)

As he thought so, he decided to obediently receive her offer. Hiiro returned in the store, and he was treated to a drink as she promised. The treat was just an ice-cream soda but it was still delicious.

While Hiiro enthusiastically drunk the drink, she finally opened her mouth.

“As I said earlier, I'm the Demon Lord. The one who governs this country” (Young Girl)

Hiiro becomes silent as he watched her intently. Then, she somehow become flustered as she spoke.

“Ah, P-Please ask the shopkeeper whether or not what I'm telling is true~!” (Young Girl)

“No, to begin with I have already found out from that shopkeepers forceful speech” (Hiiro) “Ah..... I-, I see. muu...” (Young Girl)

“Apart from whether you are the Demon Lord or not, Do you need something? This treat you gave me is not the reason why you stopped me right?” (Hiiro)

She catches her breath from Hiiro's words. “Uu~, you even understood just from that” (Young Girl) “It was easy to tell that much” (Hiiro)

The atmosphere around her indicated that she wanted to talk. Without such an intent she would not have stopped him from leaving the store by grabbing his arm.

“U~~ Am i really that easy to understand?” (Young Girl)

For some reason, her upturned eyes become cloudy.

“Who knows, Maybe I’m just very sharp” (Hiiro)

Hiiro gave a half-hearted response.

“And so? What do you want to talk about?” (Hiiro)

“Ah, tha-, that is” (Young Girl)

She stammered as she was hesitant to say her words.

“I will go if you have nothing else to say?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro tried to get out of the place as it became a bit troublesome for him. However, his arms was gripped once again.

“A-, about your magic awhile ago” (Young Girl)

“Sorry, I have no obligation to answer that” (Hiiro)

“I.....see, Is that so. That’s right....” (Young Girl)

It was clear to Hiiro that she became depressed right away

(Is she really the Demon Lord? I can only see an ordinary young girl) (Hiiro)

Hiiro compared her to others girls he at least know of, he didn’t find any difference. Rather, he did not see her as the person who has the caliber of a Demon Lord.

( Although I heard this from Aka-Loli, it seems that the present Demon Lord was forced to take the crown, when the previous Demon Lord died. ) (Hiiro)

The position of a ruler cannot be vacant. He heard that the person who had a trace of the royal family’s blood had been temporarily selected to succeed that position.

Then, the girl in question raises her face.

“C-, come to think of it, I haven’t properly introduced myself! I’m

Eveam! Eveam Gran Early Evening” (Eveam)

“What a long name. I’ll just call you Maou” (Hiiro)

“If possible I wanted you to call me by my name” (Eveam)

“How about Maou(仮-Temporary) ? I think it is interesting if it was Maou (笑 – LOL)” (Hiiro)

“What are you implying with Maou (笑 – LOL)! Uuu~, Maou is fine.....” (Maou-笑-LOL)

She gave up on complaining as she dejectedly dropped her shoulders.

“..Your name” (Eveam)

“N?” (Hiiro)

“May you allow me to hear your name?” (Eveam)

Now what to do, Hiiro thought. He doesn’t mind introducing himself. If other ruler found out that he is with the Demon Lord, it could become troublesome. But, unlike when he was summoned, he now had enough strength to deal with any encounters. Therefore, he judged that there is no need to be worried about it.

“Hiiro. Hiiro Okamura” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro.... what a good name” (Eveam)

When she smiled at that time, it was a such a brilliant smile that it would captivate anyone looking at it. The smile had the ability to pacify and charm those that looked at it. However, Hiiro did not lose his blunt expression.

“Hiiro, you are similar to the people awhile ago, you are not a resident of this country, Am I right? “ (Eveam)

“That’s right. I have only arrived today” (Hiiro)

“For what reason have you come here?” (Eveam)



“I want to ask you the same question” (Hiiro)

Although he had no obligation to tell her, he thought that he can honestly answer as his companions said that they will drop in for a short visit to someone. And when he said those words, she responded with “I see” and nodded in consent.

“Well, my purpose is a little bit unusual” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean?” (Eveam)

“The 《Grand Fortunia Library》 is here in this country right?” (Hiiro)

“Yes” (Eveam)

“I came here because I want to receive permission to enter 《Basement-5》 ” (Hiiro)

Truthfully speaking, Hiiro was waiting for his companion Liliyn to obtain the permit.

“Speaking of 《Basement-5》 , you need a royal family’s permission to get there. Why do you want to go to such a place?” (Eveam)

“Hah? Isn’t it obvious? I want to read the books? Is there any other reasons rather than to read?” “.....Eh? You will not sell it?” (Eveam)

She looked at him with a surprised expression, as if she wanted to say “Is that so?”

“Hah? What makes you think that? What happens if I sell it? Will I get some gold out of it?” (Hiiro)

“G-, Generally yes” (Eveam)

“Listen well, I only want to read a rare book. It is just an intellectual curiosity. I have no interest in things like money” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

For a while, Eveam was dumbfounded. She was surprised at Hiiro's unexpected words.

"Ah, I apologize for that. I have received many requests to enter 《Basement-5》, but up to now, most of their intentions was to steal what is inside, so I unintentionally asked because most people who wanted it intends to make a profit out of it" (Eveam)

"By mistake, I was like them? Do not associate me with those guys. It is unpleasant." (Hiiro)

Hiiro pouted in displeasure as he sipped his drink again. Seeing that sort of Hiiro, Eveam gently smiled.

"... I see, I mean, I'm really sorry about that. I did not consider that there was a person who wanted nothing but to just read them" (Eveam)

"Isn't there a thirst for knowledge for the people around here?" (Hiiro)

"Well, there is a similar person like Hiiro in here too. However, the people who casually and carefully read books, sadly speaking..... there are only a few of them in reality" (Eveam)

Currently there is a war going on, but sooner or later the country might become a battlefield, so most people are strengthening their bodies, and stocking on emergency provisions. Plainly speaking, in the same way, Hiiro didn't care about the people mentioned as he only wanted to read some books.

"But don't you agree that the books are good?" (Eveam)

"Heh, so you love books?" (Hiiro)

Her mutter is heard, as she was asked whether books are her favorite.

"Well, when I read a book, it allows me to be someone else other than a Demon Lord. So while I'm reading, I can freely spread my wings" (Eveam)

“ You are saying like you are not free right now” (Hiiro)

She frowned when she heard his words.

“If you tell me that being here isn’t an example of your freedom then what on earth is freedom to you?” (Hiiro)

“T-That is..... I don’t usually spend all my time in here! I often lead everyone and guide them as the Demon Lord!” (Eveam)

“However, you are a regular customer here right?” (Hiiro)

“U.....uu.....” (Eveam)

At that moment, the shopkeeper who witnessed the conversation between two people where Eveam was cornered, found it amusing and remarked with a “pufu” while smiling.

“Mou! what is so funny you idiot!” (Eveam)

“F-, Forgive me Demon Lord-sama! H-,However it’s been a long time since I’ve seen this kind of Demon Lord-sama!” (Shopkeeper)

When the shopkeeper gladly said so, Eveam’s cheek blushed. And then she glared at Hiiro.

“... Somehow I feel mad talking to Hiiro” (Eveam)

“Don’t blame it on me” (Hiiro)

“Mu~” (Eveam)

“While it may be true that you’re the Maou, it’s not that bad to assume that you are free, Don’t you agree?” (Hiiro)

“....Eh?....” (Eveam)

“Although I don’t know what it means to be the Demon Lord, but you’re moving about within the limits of a Demon Lord. Could it be because you are tired of being a demon lord?” (Hiiro) “.....” (Eveam)

“ In other words, if you want to live that sort of life, you just have

to throw away your image of trying to become the Demon Lord” (Hiiro)

“I-I cannot do such a thing! The people will lose someone to follow!” (Eveam)

Eveam smacked her fist on the counter when Hiiro suggested such an option.

“If that’s the case, don’t you agree you need the capacity to do that? If it’s true that you are the real thing, even if you are ruler who does as she pleases, people will follow if you are a charismatic person” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

“For the sake of the people and for the sake of the country; that is a splendid ideal. However if you cannot move for your own sake, someday you will fall. If it’s me, I feel sorry for such a ruler. Even if no one follows me, I’ll be fine with it” (Hiiro)

Eveam slightly turns her face down.

“The people will follow a ruler who does as she pleases....?” (Eveam)

“You might say it like that, I think you would attain it if you have the ability to become a ruler. Well, at the very least, you do not seem to be a ruler in my eyes” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

“In my point of view, all I see is an ordinary young girl” (Hiiro)

Startled from Hiiro’s words, Eveam’s heart leaped. It was as if a sharp arrow pierced her heart. No, it’s different. She sensed her heart being gripped by something bare-hand that sent a rush throughout her entire body.

( An ordinary.....young girl ) (Eveam)

Although Eveam didn’t notice, her face was dyed in red up to her

ears. And because of that, the shopkeeper was grinning at her when she saw such a face.

“I-, I’m the Demon King! C-Ccccalling me an ordinary girl, I-IIt’s embarrassing!” (Eveam)

## Chapter 117 – Request of the Demon Lord

Eveam did not notice the change in her tone. However, she somehow felt relieved as a pleasant feeling of security dwelled in her heart.

Although Hiiro was unaware of her situation, as he had simply stated what was troubling him, Eveam was the one that had become troubled instead.

“B-,By the way Hiiro!” (Eveam)

“Aa? Why is your face red?” (Hiiro)

“D-,Do not worry about it! T-there’s just something wrong with the air-conditioning in here!” (Eveam)

“Is that so?” (Hiiro)

If Hiiro had to say, he felt that the place was cold. Furthermore, he found her change of tone unusual as he tilted his head to the side.

“H-Hiiro, you are an adventurer, am I right?” (Eveam)

She returned to her former tone. Although Hiiro thought that the previous tone suited her more, he ignored it as he didn’t think much of it.

“I guess” (Hiiro)

“How long are you going to be here?” (Eveam)

“Who knows, depends on the objective” (Hiiro)

“Ah, the matter about the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 you spoke awhile ago?” (Eveam)

“Yes..., or perhaps I should say that if you really are the Demon Lord you can grant permission, right?” (Hiiro)

At that moment, she finally noticed his intentions. Hiiro, who was

only half-convinced, asked because he did not understand whether she was the Demon Lord or not.

“Yes, If it’s me, I can grant permission. However, no matter how much you want to read at 《Basement-5》, there are prohibited books, ancient documents and other treasured books that cannot be brought out of the premises. I cannot grant permission to a person I cannot trust right away” (Eveam)

She’s right about that. Hihiro considered her point of view justifiable. He thought that he had no choice but to place his expectations on Liliyn and her group.

“However, if Hihiro hears my offer, I shall grant you permission” (Eveam)

His eyebrows twitched as he fixed his eyes on her.

“An offer, you say?” (Hihiro)

“Yes, in other words, a request. Of course, I will create the contract. That is only if Hihiro does not mind, though” (Eveam)

Hihiro pondered the intent of her words. She doesn’t seem to be lying. If she really is the Demon Lord, he thought it would be a good deal.

Surely, There is no better offer for my objective if I receive permission directly from the person at the top of the country, Hihiro thought. Although he felt bad for Liliyn, there was no guarantee that she would obtain the permit. Thus, when there is a more reliable method, he would wisely choose that one

(However, this Demon Lord....rather, I still don’t know whether or not she actually is the Demon Lord. Still, her request does not seem to be a normal one) (Hihiro)

Although Hihiro handled a lot of requests up to now, it was his first time to receive one directly from a ruler. Therefore, he could not discern it. Although he thought that she may possibly make an unreasonable demand, he judged that it would be worth it to simply listen to her story.

“...The contents of your request?” (Hiiro)

Instantly, Eveam’s expression hardened. From simply observing that, Hiiro knew that what she was going to ask was not going to be just some whimsical request.

“You do know about the conference that’s being held in one week, yes? Well, about that conference-” (Eveam)

“Wait a second” (Hiiro)

“...What is it?” (Eveam)

“Conference? If I’m not mistaken, although I’ve heard that sort of rumors before I came here, you said one week-? If you are the Demon Lord, should you really be in a place like this?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

Suddenly, she looked away. Ah, this person really ran away from the castle, or so Hiiro had thought.

(Perhaps, she was not able to bear the pressure, and seemed to have come here to take a breather, huh..... ) (Hiiro)

As he pondered this, he looked over at the shopkeeper. She slightly nodded in response, seemingly trying to convey that the idea he was thinking was right on target.

“Haa, well, enough about you.” (Hiiro)

It doesn’t mean I’ve decided that you are the Demon Lord, or so Hiiro thought.

“That conference will be held in one week. If I remember correctly, it was named the 『Humas-Evila Alliance Conference』 ” (Hiiro)

“Yes, however....” (Eveam)

For some reason, her expression darkened.

“....Some sort of problem will occur. Rather, you’re thinking that



there is a possibility that something will happen?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Eveam)

“That silence means that I’m right. However, to begin with, it isn’t unusual for some danger to occur during the conference you know?” (Hiiro)

“That is....that is right, however” (Eveam)

“Where is it? The place of the conference?” (Hiiro)

“It’s not possible to say. Unless, after you sign the contract that is” (Eveam)

If she were to easily mention the place at this moment, Hiiro would probably look down on her. Also, if she carelessly teach such confidential information like the location of the conference, she would be disqualified as the Demon Lord.

“I got it. Then hurry up and say it. What are you seeking from me?” (Hiiro)

“..... I want you to become someone that will help this country” (Eveam)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“I do not want to believe it will happen, but there might be some subtle movements in the 『Humas』 continent. At the time when the country becomes undermanned, I want you to lend your power to become the country’s defense” (Eveam)

Apparently, she could not defend her country by herself as she was heading to the conference. The 『Humas』 may try and attack here when that chance comes. In other words, she was currently suffering from slight anxiety brought upon by the possibility of betrayal.

If something like that were to happen, Eveam wanted to ask Hiiro for help to ensure that neither side would get hurt.

“I’ve been able to grasp Hiiro’s power just from observing it earlier. That terrifying magical power, or rather, your magic.....is most likely a Unique Magic, correct?” (Eveam)

Hiiro was shocked in his mind as he maintained his poker face. He had not anticipated to be instantly seen through.

“I have confidence in my magic perception. I did not sense any attributes in the magic used at that time..... therefore, it must have a unique attribute” (Eveam)

“....I wonder about that” (Hiiro)

“I do not have any intention of making it public. What I’m in need of is genuine defensive power. If it’s Hiiro...if you are the owner of that power who does as he pleases, I can expect it as one of the defense of this country” (Eveam)

It appears that even if I deceive her, she already seems to have a strong belief in me. Or so Hiiro thought as he sighed.

“It is a convenient ability. Although, I certainly use a unique magic; you want me to demonstrate my power in case of emergency?” (Hiiro)

“That is correct. This is strictly just a precaution to the last. Of course, it would be good if nothing happened” (Eveam)

“.....if that’s the case, the request fee?” (Hiiro)

Thereupon, she slowly relaxed her cheeks.

“I will issue you the entry permit for the 《Fortuna Grand Library’s》 《Basement-5》” (Eveam)

“....a verbal promise, huh?” (Hiiro)

“Nay, I have said it before, right? We will sign a contract” (Eveam)

Soon after, she took out one sheet of paper from her breast pocket. There was nothing yet written in there. She bit her finger with her teeth and used that blood to write the words.

Hihiro firmly confirmed the words written within the contract. The contents entailed the details of the request fee. In addition, compliance policies had also been written there, as if to deter the contractee from breaking and abandoning the contract midway.

“This is the 《Contract Roll》. The person who signed this, will have their soul cut down supposing they break their word based from what is written in the contract” (Eveam)

“... In other words, our lives will be taken away” (Hihiro)

“That is indeed correct” (Eveam)

What a frightening contract, Hihiro sighed as he realized it's risks. Certainly, it might be alright to inform the other party of the location of such a valuable meeting place should they have signed this contract, or so Hihiro pondered.

“My request... Will you accept it?” (Eveam)

She thought Hihiro might refuse. Although Hihiro was definitely strong, he was an adventurer who did not want to participate in wars. Moreover, she had a vague impression that he did not like the contract. Nonetheless, she was very interested in Hihiro's potential.

Eveam understood that Hihiro possessed an abundant amount of magic power. His level was probably also high, in accordance with his magic. For some reason, she was able to understand that his level might also be higher than her, the Demon Lord. But to have an exceptional person appear in this kind of situation, she believed it might be some sort of revelation of something to her.

For this reason, Eveam wanted Hihiro's help at all costs. She was attracted not only to his strength, but she also noticed something which her heart seems to be attracted somewhere to Hihiro. In spite of that, most is solely because of his power, or so she thought.

She imagined, If it's Hihiro, then he would be suitable as an effective defense for the country. Although she dangled the bait in front of Hihiro, she vaguely sensed that Hihiro seemed to be ill-humored based on their negotiation. However, it was not something that she should

be worried about right now.

However, even though she was concerned that Hiiro might refuse the request, she reflexively stiffened when Hiiro responded.

“So? Where should I sign?” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro questioned her like that, Eveam hardened as she suspiciously observed Hiiro.

“Hey, tell me where to sign, quickly” (Hiiro)

“Eh, a-, ah.... h-, however, is it really ok? T-there is a chance that it might become a war, you know? (Eveam)

“I don’t really care. Even if it becomes a war, I’m not a person who would die from that” (Hiiro)

How much self-confidence do you have there? Eveam wanted to ask. However, Leaving that aside, Eveam couldn’t help but be feel glad as Hiiro will sign the contract.

“H-Here. Sign here” (Eveam)

Her tone just changed again, or so he thought. Then, the moment Hiiro signed the contract with blood in the same way as her.

Pikaaaaaaaaa!

The 《Contract Roll》 began to cast a pale light. Then, the paper became particles as it was split in half and absorbed into the chest of the two people

“Fu~. With this, our contract is complete” (Eveam)

“Your tone changed, you know?” (Hiiro)

“W-,With this, our contract has been established! And don’t retort on my tone!” (Eveam)

She is not scary at all, Hiiro thought as the Demon Lord shouted with a red face. Thus, after the contract was established, Hiiro

received the details of the conference that takes place a week from now.

karan koron.

“Shishou! I was able to find the inn! Please praise me!” (Nikki)

Nikki cheerfully appeared. However, there was a shadow behind her.

“Oh dea~r ~m, so you were here Your Majesty ~n” (Shublarz)

Eveam looked at the bewitching woman who appeared in the attire of a dancer, her bountiful chest exposed. Eveam wore a disappointed expression as she murmured “I was found” .

“Really, Marione and Kiria are ang~ry you kn~ow?” (Shublarz)

“I, I apologize. I shall return at once” (Eveam)

“Please do so. ~M? Oh my, a secret meeting with a man? ~m, I really can’t leave you when you are cornered Your Majes~ty” (Shublarz)

Shublarz teased her as she looked at Hiiro.. Even though it wasn’t the case, Eveam face turned bright red.

“I-, i-i-i-it’s not a secret meeting! And, I-i-i-i-i don’t search for this kind of things when I’m cornered!” (Eveam)

“Fufufu,-fu ~n.....” (Shublarz)

Then she quietly watched Hiiro,

“L-, Look! Let us go quickly! There are a lot of things I have to do!” (Eveam)

“ A~h! Geez, Your Majesty, as you wish Your Majest~y” (Shublarz)

Eveam walked towards the door, suddenly she halted, then she faced Hiiro’s direction.

“So Hiiro, I will be counting on you! But don’t be too reckless

alright?” (Eveam)

After she said those words, she went out of the shop.

“Oh dear, Her Majesty’s tone was.....~m I se~e” (Shublarz)

As she said so, she once again looked in Hiiro direction.

“Fufufu, it seems Her Majesty was indebted to you, a~ri~ga~to”  
(Shublarz)

She winked at Hiiro and similarly went out of the shop.

“.... what on earth was that?” (Nikki)

Nikki inclined their head unable to follow the whole situation.

“Who knows, I only just received a request from a strange woman”  
(Hiiro)

“.....a request, is it?” (Nikki)

After that, Hiiro taught Nikki what was going to happen in a week’s time. He informed Nikki the details about the high possibility of this place becoming a war-zone. He then instructed Nikki that they may rampage if the occasion calls for it. Yet, for some reason, Nikki said “I’m itching to test my skills~zo”, in a motivated manner.

(However, to think that she really was the Demon Lord..... yet, no matter how I see her, she looks just like an ordinary girl) (Hiiro)

At that time, the following thought did not enter Hiiro’s mind. The fact that the events one week from now would hold importance to such an extent. Surely, Hiiro could not possibly have imagined so.

## Chapter 118: Hiiro, at Holy Oldine

After Hiiro recalled his exchange with the Maou Eveam, he used the word [Transfer]/ 『転移』 in order to directly ask her about her true intentions in regards to the contents of their contract.

Once his disciple Nikki saw him off, he felt the familiar experience of movement by teleportation and judged that he had arrived at his destination. After first surveying where he was, he decided to fire off his complaints towards her.

“Hm? Where is this? .....Oh, there she is. Oi Maou, there was a discrepancy in the contract’s.....wait, what’s with that face?”  
(Hiiro)

The first thing he thought of was that the heaviness of the atmosphere wasn’t half-hearted. There was bloodlust and feelings of hostility all over the area. Not only that, but currently, the presences of the people surrounding Hiiro forcefully caused him to realize that many of them were not ordinary people.

And the primary indicator was that Eveam, the person he had come to meet, was covered in blood and was being carried by a weird ossan.

Hiiro made a serious face and quietly observed the surroundings. A large temple-like building entered his line of sight.

(That must be the Great Temple Oldine that the Maou spoke of)  
(Hiiro)

Just in case, he had heard a certain degree of information about the conference, so he wasn’t surprised. It was only at the level of being impressed by the size of the building.

“Y-you bastard! Who are you! Rather, just where did you appear from!” (Marione)

Naturally, Marione, who was worried about the well-being of the Maou, was highly wary of the mysterious person, Hiiro, who had

suddenly appeared. However, Hihiro did not answer. He silently looked over at Eveam.

The other people too, had lost their words at the sudden visitor and froze in a bewildered manner. Even Aquinas and the traitor Kiria had frozen while trying to understand the current situation.

(Kiria's face.....then that boy isn't one of her subordinates?)  
(Aquinas)

Aquinas had, upon seeing Kiria's surprised expression, judged that to be so. Of course, not only him, but Judom also came to the same conclusion.

".....Hi.....iro?" (Eveam)

Eveam, having finally noticed Hihiro's presence, faintly murmured.

"Your Majesty? Do you know that youngster?" (Marione)

As Marione asked, though it may have been due to Eveam's hazy consciousness, she made a blank face and said,

"Ah, no.....this must be an illusion.....Hihiro.....I left the country to him....." (Eveam)

"The country? What are you talking about your Majesty?"  
(Marione)

Hihiro observed the situation, and started to calmly analyze it.

(It seems that the conference ended in a failure like I had thought. Both humans and beastmen are here too.....in other words, the Maou and co. got caught in their encirclement and became unable to make any movements? But even if it's the Maou, for someone to have given her such a serious injury is.....) (Hihiro)

He looked around restlessly as he once again surveyed the surroundings.

(The one who did it was.....that guy?) (Hihiro)



While thinking that, he gazed at the Beast King Leowald. Based on his atmosphere, he felt that Leowald had an aura different from normal people. If he had to say, it was an atmosphere similar to when he made Liliyn angry. In other words, it was abnormal.

(Those guys.....kind of seem like comrades) (Hiiro)

Of course, there were other abnormal-like people around. They were Aquinas and Judom. However, no matter what, he couldn't feel any hostility towards the Maou from them, so he didn't include them.

(.....hm? That guy.....I don't really get) (Hiiro)

He glanced towards Kiria, but couldn't tell whether or not she was strong or weak. If he had to express it, she only felt eerie. It was as if she was a person that was not a person. It was a sensation similar to when he met monsters, yet also a sensation similar to when he met seemingly strong Evila. At the same time, he felt as though she were a puppet without a will nor anything else.

(.....hm? That oyaji is.....ah, I see, if I recall correctly, it's the King, the King. His name was.....well, King is fine) (Hiiro)

Hiiro had completely forgotten his name. However, he faintly remembered the first King he saw when he was summoned to this world. Though it appeared that the King hadn't realized his identity.

(Well, right now I have the appearance of an 『Imp Race』, not to mention I probably didn't leave much of an impression) (Hiiro)

Just as he was thinking that,

“Ah, are you the one from that time?” (Shublarz)

Upon looking towards the voice that suddenly called out to him, he saw a woman that he had met recently.

(That woman, I'm pretty sure she was the one who came to pick up the Maou.....) (Hiiro)

Right, he was talking about Shublarz. When he was talking to Eveam at the café, she was the one who came to pick Eveam up from the café. He remembered that he had met her at that time.

“You know him, Shublarz?” (Marione)

“Eh, well yes. Simply put, he’s her Majesty’s.....’this’, I guess?” (Shublarz)

At Marione’s question, Shublarz stuck up her pinky finger.

“Wh-who is my lo-lo-lo-lover!?” (Eveam)

After seeing that, Eveam, who forgot about her serious wound, let out a loud voice and felt an intense pain rush through her chest. However, her consciousness, which had been faint up until now, cleared up properly.

“Haahaahaa.....Hi-Hihiro? Th-then this.....isn’t an illusion?” (Eveam)

“Oi Maou, I came to complain to you” (Hihiro)

As he sternly pointed his finger,

“There was a conflict in the contract’s contents, so what are you going to do about it?” (Hihiro)

“A.....conflict? Wh-what is.....?” (Eveam)

Once again, Eveam’s consciousness began to cloud.

“In the first place, why do I have to come all the way to the requester to.....hey, are you listening?” (Hihiro)

Hihiro spoke with a displeased face, but it seemed that Eveam didn’t have any time for that right now. Like this, he wouldn’t be able to smoothly advance the conversation.

“Your Majesty! Whatever, I don’t know who you are, but I’ll deal with that later! Right now we-” (Marione)

“Shut up, I came here to talk. That’s why-” (Hiiro)

While he said that, Hiiro began to gather magic at his fingertips. Then he wrote the words [Complete Recovery]/ 『完治』 and fired it towards Eveam.

“What are you doing!” (Marione)

As Hiiro had fired magic, Marione immediately attempted to repel the incoming words by extending his arm, but

.....swoosh.

Surprisingly, as Hiiro pointed his fingertip towards the ground, the words advanced while turning like a forkball to avoid his arm. Then the words suddenly stuck onto Eveam.

Pikaaaaaaa!

Dazzling particles of light began surrounding her body.

(.....ahhh, it’s warm. What a comfortable light) (Eveam)

Eveam remembered being embraced by her mother like this as a young child. At that time, she also had a comfortable feeling of complete security like now.

“Wh-what is with this tremendous magic power!?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz shouted as she looked at the light.

“Mu, muu!” (Marione)

Marione had promptly tried to get away from her body, but his gaze was fixated upon the light-covered Eveam. And then the light began to gradually weaken.

“Oi you bastard! What did you do to her Majesty!” (Marione)

“Shut up, Moustache Baron” (Hiiro)

“Mou-mou-moustache Baron you say.....!?” (Marione)

Marione truly did have a great moustache, but those were not words to be used against the one of the Evila's top class members. It was to the extent where Shublarz became dumbfounded.

“How long are you going to sleep for. Hurry and wake up, and explain the situation Maou” (Hiiro)

“Wh-what are you saying! Her Majesty is-” (Marione)

As he was saying that, Eveam suddenly moved her body. Her expression was blank as she stiffened and began to touch her chest timidly. And then she realized that the intense pain that had been running through her up until now had disappeared without a single trace.

“Yo-your Majesty?” (Marione)

As one might expect, after seeing Eveam, whose face colour had suddenly gotten better, Marione also inclined his head in confusion.

“.....wha-what did you do, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

Naturally, to solve the mystery that had happened to her body, she asked Hiiro, the one who had caused the mystery.

“Something like that doesn't matter. But that's a loan outside of the contract. Remember that.” (Hiiro)

“Hi-Hiiro.....I see, so you healed me.....I'm grateful” (Eveam)

Leaving her hand on her chest, Eveam gave a faint smile towards him. However, in the next moment, she gave a face of realization and raised her head.

“Bu-but Hiiro! Why are you here? Didn't I request you to defend the country!” (Eveam)

“Request, you say? What do you mean, your Majesty? No, more importantly, is your body alright?” (Marione)

“Ah, ha~n, so it's like~that~” (Shublarz)

While Marione continued to worry about Eveam's physical condition, Shublarz came to an understanding of the relationship between the two of them and nodded.

"Marione, I hired Hihiro. Don't worry. And also, he even healed my body for me" (Eveam)

"Is that true, Maou-chan? Wouldn't it be better to drink some 《Blood increasing drug》 just in case?" (Judom)

Judom held out a small ball as he said that.

"I'm thankful, Judom-dono. But, for some reason, my body has become extremely lively. It's likely thanks to Hihiro's magic" (Eveam)

Judom looked at her facial colour and agreed. Though her face had been completely pale due to blood loss just now, right now her complexion was much better.

"But you're an 『Evila』 right? Even so, you can use light magic? Just who are you?" (Judom)

However, at that moment, Aquinas began to fall back with alarm.

"I'm sure that we all have questions we'd like to have answered, but the situation is going to start moving soon. Look, the Beast King's starting to unstiffen." (Aquinas)

It was true that thanks to Hihiro's sudden entrance, Leowald had lost the timing to fight, but after seeing Eveam's state after his healing, he stiffly began to scowl. Bloodlust began to surge out from his whole body.

And then Leowald began to concentrate power into both his fists.

"Uwooooooooo....." (Leowald)

With him in the centre of it, the earth began to creak and fissures appeared.

"If we fight with him like this, it seems like this whole area's gonna

be cleared out” (Aquinas)

Aquinas muttered that as he felt Leowald’s power. Then, Leowald flew up high into the air.

“Marione, take her Majesty!” (Aquinas)

Aquinas said that, but-

“It’s alright Marione. I can move on my own. Everyone should get away from this area!” (Eveam)

Hearing Eveam’s words, everyone directly underneath Leowald attempted to move away from the area.

“Take this, you 『Evila』 !!!!” (Leowald)

Taking a stance with both fists above his waist, Leowald continued to drop with a tremendous amount of momentum.

“Uwooooooooo! 《Maximum Blaze Fang Attack》!” (Leowald)

As flames gushed out from his body, the flames began to focus into his two fists. And then, his appearance as he opened his fists and thrust them forward, gave off the shape of the fangs of a beast.

Boooooooooooooooooom!

The impact of his fall, in addition to the destructive power of his attack let out a tremendous shock wave. At the same time, with him as the epicentre, flames began to spread out like ripples. Even if you thought you managed to avoid becoming prey to the fangs, the belated second wave of flames would make the target incapable of running away.

Hihiro and co. also did not get hit directly by the fangs as they distanced themselves, but as they didn’t think there would be a second wave, a wall of flames began to draw near them.

As he watched the wave approach with incredible heat and speed, Hihiro let out a sigh as though it were tiresome.

(Oioi, why do I have to go through something like this?) (Hiiro)

Evidently it was because he came here, but he didn't think that he would get caught up in such a complicated situation. He hadn't realized it, but the effects of the title, 《Innocent Bystander》, were currently going strong.

However, if he continued to stand dumbfounded, he would get caught up in the flames, so he immediately needed to do something, but Hiiro wasn't hasty. This was because he had set the word [Safeguard]/ 『防御』 just in case, so that he could use it whenever. As long as he used it, he could ward off this level of attack.

But, he couldn't let the Maou next to him, Eveam, get killed. This is because she was his important ticket to the 《Fortuna Grand Library》. He couldn't possibly lose his requester.

That's why he was thinking of protecting her with his 《Word Magic》 at the very least, but at that moment, Aquinas appeared in front of him.

He glared at the incoming flames with sharp eyes. As he did so, the burning red flames somehow began to change colour into a light black colour. And then,

Fwishhhhh.....

Amazingly, the flames had turned into countless granules and dispersed. Not a single bit of heat could be felt.

(What is this.....? Sand? No.....ash?) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro thought, they were ashes. The flames instantly turned into ash, and dispersed over the ground.

“Hime, are you okay?” (Aquinas)

“Yeah, as expected of Aquinas!” (Eveam)

After Aquinas confirmed her safety, he once again turned to stare at Leowald. In the middle of a large crater, Leowald scowled at Aquinas provokingly.

The ones who were saved when the flames turned into ashes also appeared to include Rudolf's side, as the soldiers and Cabinet Minister Dennis let out large sighs at the relief of still being alive. However, Rudolf and Kiria alone had not moved a single inch from their former position. It was as though they had known that Aquinas would do something.

No, in Rudolf's case, he had Kiria near him and believed that she would do something if it came down to it. This was because he had, at the very least, entered into a contract with her.

“As I thought, something like this wouldn't be able to leave a single wound. As expected of the 《Demon-eyed Commander》” (Leowald)

Translator Notes:

Maou = Demon Lord

Pikaaaaa = an onomatopoeia for 'shine' in Japanese (think Pikachu)



## Chapter 119: The Top's True Strength

While Leowald clicked his tongue, he for some reason, made a gleeful expression. It was as though he found fighting to be enjoyable. It may be possible that the stronger his opponent was, the higher these feelings of his would rise.

(This is why battle junkies are annoying to deal with) (Hiiro)

Hiiro gazed at Leowald with reproachful eyes as he decided to name him Lion.

(But these guys.....I guess I should to check them out, huh) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, he used the word [Pry]/ 『覗』 to view the others' 《Status》. If they possessed this amount of strength, Hiiro figured that their levels must also be quite high.

Aquinas Li Reysis Phoenix

Lv 243

HP: 11645/11645

MP: 8233/9574

EXP: 24950212

NEXT: 463080

ATK 1627 (1784)

DEF 1569 (1625)

AGL 1891 (1971)

HIT 2023 (2045)

INT 2361 (2390)

《Magic Attribute》 Dark

《Magic》 Dead Arrow (Darkness – Attack) | Hell Flame (Darkness – Attack) | Dark Revelation (Darkness – Movement) | Death-Out (Darkness – Attack) | Full Armed (Darkness – Support) | Shadow Curtain (Darkness – Support/ – Defense) | Black Hole (Darkness – Attack) | Emperor Nova (Darkness – Attack)

《Titles》 Holder of the Demon Eye | Mourning One | Ultimate Demon-kin | Feathered One | Monster's Poison | Unique Genocider | Ripper | Superman | General of the Demon Eye | Cruel | Unsociable | Relentlessly Unparalleled | One who Seeks the Strong| Eternal Walker | Person of Darkness | Overly Determined Person | One who Transcends | The Strongest | Magus Emperor

Hiiro thought that this guy had an outrageous 《Status》 . Not only was his level high, the titles he possessed, out of all the statuses Hiiro had seen, seemed to be the most brutal.

(In particular 《The Strongest》 .....although the 《Magus Emperor》 title also bothers me, 《The Strongest》 .....it's so simple that it's actually scary)

As Hiiro thought thus, he looked at Aquinas. Simply based on his appearance, Hiiro was able to see that his titles were no lie.

(Not only that, but for his level to be even higher than I, who has been focussing on raising my level during this half-year period.....)

Hiiro Okamura

Lv 221

HP: 8387/8387

MP: 11370/15500

EXP: 16278322

NEXT: 337766

ATK 1344 (1444)

DEF 1105 (1120)

AGL 1617 (1667)

HIT 916 (966)

INT 1395 (1405)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Word Magic (Single Word (Unlocked) | Air Writing (Unlocked) | Parallel Writing (Unlocked) | Two Word Chain (Unlocked) | Simultaneous Invocation (Unlocked) | Invocation Management (Unlocked) | Three Word Chain (Unlocked) | Remote Operation (Unlocked) | Range Designation (Unlocked) | Automatic Writing (Unlocked) | Four Word Chain (Unlocked))

《Titles》 Innocent Bystander | World Traveller | Word Master | Awakened One | Ripper | The One who Imagines | Unique Genocider | Gourmet Bastard | One who Follows His Own Path | Friend of the Faeries | Mikazuki's Owner | The Natural Enemy of Monsters | Wanderer | Flash Samurai | Sage | The God that Brings Down Little Girls | One Who is Liked by Magic | Easily Dragged in | Swindler | Hero of Children | Insensitive Meister | Reading Maniac | Eating Tyrant | Prince of Misunderstanding | Excellent Diver | Teleporter | Supreme Demon | Nikki's Mentor | Overly Determined Person | One who Transcends

Compared to his own 《Status》, it was apparent that the differences in racial disposition appeared through combat capabilities, or so Hiiro had thought. Not only that, but Aquinas was most likely exceptionally strong even amongst the 『Evila』. Amongst everyone that Hiiro had met up until now, he was the holder of the greatest 《Status》.

(Well, even amongst humans there are bound to be those who have such natural talent. Even amongst the 『Evila』 with their excellent battle capabilities, he's likely one of the ones most blessed with talent)

If that were not the case, he wouldn't have been able to raise his

level up so high. Even if he did, it would be hard to believe that his 《Status》 would be this well-endowed if he didn't possess such aptitude. Although Hihiro was also blessed with talent in terms of magic power and agility, as Aquinas was basically blessed in almost all aspects, it would make one so amazed as to constantly question whether or not he was truly a genius.

(.....hm? But I've seen his name somewhere.....is it just my imagination?) (Hihiro)

He felt that he had seen his name somewhere before. However, as he couldn't remember where, he simply ignored it.

Aquinas was not the only amazing one. Eveam, Marione, Shublarz, not to mention their enemy Leowald as well. Although, they couldn't compare to Aquinas, the 《Status》 they held could not be achieved by any normal person. In particular, Judom, who Hihiro had thought was a mere human, was amazing.

(Maou 102, Moustache Baron 167, Dekka-Chichi woman 128, Lion 199, and also.....) (Hihiro)

Looking at Judom's 《Status》, he raised his voice in admiration.

Judom Lankars

Lv 210

HP: 9043/9478

MP: 6666/7100

EXP: 13719035

NEXT: 282577

ATK 1813 (1940)

DEF 1582 (1660)

AGL 1279 (1320)

HIT 1536 (1581)

INT 1027 (1041)

《Magic Attribute》 Fire | Wind | Lightning

《Magic》 Fireball (Fire – Attack) | Flame Rocket (Fire – Attack) | Aura Time (Fire) | Wind Cutter (Wind – Attack) | Cyclone (Wind – Attack) | Aura Time (Wind) | Thundershock (Lightning – Attack) | Prism Break (Lightning – Attack) | Aura Time (Lightning)

《Titles》 One who Trains | Strong Arms | King's Close Friend | One who Destroys | Feminist | Alcoholic | Considerate Comrade | One who is Popular | Reliable Person | Attractive Middle-Aged Man | Killer of the Unique | Monster Slayer | Wanderer | Aspiration of Adventurers | Huge Man | Senior of Life | King Dandy | Guild Master | Superman | Overly Determined Person | One Who Possesses the Caliber of a King | Impact King | One who Transcends

(It's like he has the physical capabilities of a beastman. This Muscle Man is also a blessed existence)

In truth, the one most blessed was Hiiro with his 《Word Magic》. However, disregarding his own abilities, he at the very least felt a hint of jealousy towards them. Even if he was given better parameters compared to normal humans due to being a World Traveller, compared to beastmen, there was bound to be a difference in abilities after all.

Even though his sole physical ability capable of competing with them was his speed alone, Hiiro convinced himself that he could feel proud of that one thing.

At that point, he remembered that there was one individual present who had piqued his curiosity. Hiiro immediately shifted his gaze towards that person.

Val Kiria #03

Lv 200

HP: 15000/15000

MP: 0/0

EXP: 0

NEXT: 0

ATK 2200 ()

DEF 2200 ()

AGL 2200 ()

HIT 2200 ()

INT 300 ()

《Magic Attribute》

《Magic》

《Titles》 One who was Created

He didn't know exactly what he should start retorting about. Her parameters, her magic, and her title. They were all so uniform that he couldn't comprehend any of it.

(What is she.....) (Hiiro)

Upon noticing Hiiro's gaze fall upon her, Kiria turned and exchanged stares with him. Hiiro was unable to detect anything resembling the will of a living being behind those eyes. However, if he were to believe that which he saw with his own eyes, amongst everyone here, her physical capabilities were the best. If they were to purely fight without magic, one could predict that nobody would be able to win against her.

As the two of their gazes met each other, their eyes remained unmoving as it seemed to have deteriorated into a match of who would first avert their eyes as they stayed still.

“What's wrong, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

The voice belonged to Eveam. However, as he unintentionally

ended up reacting to it, Hiiro ended up averting his eyes first. As he thought ‘damn it’, he once again looked at her face-

“.....Fu” (Kiria)

As she slightly raised her head, Kiria narrowed her eyes and looked down, displaying a face that seemed to be full of superiority as she released a small breath.

“Guh.....that Noppera\* woman.....” (Hiiro)

It seems that internally, Hiiro decided to nickname the expressionless Kiria as Noppera woman.

“Hi-Hiiro?” (Eveam)

“Yeah?” (Hiiro)

Of course, having not known what was going on, Eveam was not at fault. However, to Hiiro, it was because of her calling out to him that he had lost the match, thus, she ended up taking the full brunt of his anger.

“Uu.....di-did I do something?” (Eveam)

As he saw her ask thus anxiously, Hiiro let out a shallow sigh. Following this, he slightly shook his head, saying-

“No, it’s nothing. More importantly, what are you going to do about this situation? I want to quickly head back, but?” (Hiiro)

“I also want to head back. Ah, now that I think of it, Hiiro came here from 【Xaos】 right? How is 【Xaos】? Ah, no. In the first place, how did you get here?” (Eveam)

While thinking that the way she rapidly fired off questions in quick succession was annoying, it was true the conversation couldn’t proceed without explaining that. However, in this situation, he didn’t have the time to leisurely explain everything.

“In any case, we’ll talk once everything settles down. Oi Maou, we’re heading back already.” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Ah, no like I said, how will we head back? In this situation? Are you going to repel those people, Hiiro?” (Eveam)

As she asked, she pointed her finger at Leowald, who was drenched in bloodlust.

“Haah? Who would do such a troublesome thing? I was only requested with defending the country, you know. Anything other than that would be extra work. I don’t wanna.” (Hiiro)

“Th-then how will we go back from here?” (Eveam)

“Before that, it’s fine for only you to go back, right?” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Hah? N-no no, we have to go back with everyone!” (Eveam)

After hearing her response made with a face as though it were natural, Hiiro felt like he would get a headache. A person that made this kind of face would no longer listen to him no matter what he said. They were unpersuadable. If he were to only bring her back alone, she would likely soon after come back here on her own. That would just be pointless.

As Hiiro dropped his shoulders as though he had resigned himself, he heaved a large sigh and looked into her eyes.

“Wh-what?” (Eveam)

Eveam was startled at suddenly being stared at eye-to-eye.

“.....do you have any last words?” (Hiiro)

“Hah?” (Eveam)

“We’re going to be returning from here, so I’m asking you whether or not you have any last things to say to those guys” (Hiiro)

He pointed towards Rudolf as he said this.

“Eh.....no, like I said, what are you say-” (Eveam)

“Argh, geez, how annoying!” (Hiiro)



Hihiro irritatingly began to move his fingers. At that moment, Eveam felt an enormous amount of magic power. It was the same feeling she had when Hihiro used magic the first time she met him.

Hihiro activated the words he had written.

[Send home]/ 『送還』 and [Three people]/ 『三人』 .

Suddenly, without a single sound, Aquinas, Marione, and Shublarz disappeared in front of their eyes. Everyone opened their mouths in a shocked manner.

“See, I’ve already sent them back to the country” (Hihiro)

“Eh.....hah? N-no way.....” (Eveam)

\*Author’s Note: Please find the differences in the titles. Many of them have evolved. Please find the ones that have changed and look at how they changed.

Translator’s Note:

Deka-Chichi = big-boobed

Noppera = short for featureless; expressionless

## Chapter 120: The Protagonist the Relieves His Stress

Truthfully, Eveam could not completely believe what Hihiro had said. However, she was aware that he definitely had something to do with their disappearance. In addition, she, at the very least could not feel their magic power nearby, thus making the credibility of Hihiro's words rise exponentially.

“Hi-Hihiro.....did you really.....?” (Eveam)

As she still couldn't fully believe it, her eyes opened wide as she asked him this. However, Hihiro scowled at her, almost as if he was expressing that he had reached the limits of his patience.

“This is the last time I'll say it. If you don't have anything to say, I'm gonna send you back, no questions asked.” (Hihiro)

“Ah, wa-wait a minute! Kiria! Come with.....” (Eveam)

Eveam wanted to tell Kiria to return home with her, however, she shivered upon seeing her inhuman eyes. At the same time, the terror she felt upon realizing that the Kiria she knew no longer existed floated into her mind.

(Then just what in the world was the time we've spent together up until now.....Kiria)

Despite Eveam's thoughts, Kiria had already started to move. With tremendous velocity, she closed in on Eveam, and similar to before, attempted to pierce through her chest. However,

Bashiiiiiii!

The first one to be astonished was Kiria. Kiria flew back as though repelled by something.

“Sorry, but I can't let you kill this guy” (Hihiro)

Hihiro spoke thus as the word [Safeguard]/ 『防御』 shined on the

back of his hand. Although this was a previously installed word, to those who were unaware of that, they once again misunderstood that he had used Light magic upon seeing the sparkling wall of light.

“It defended against my attack? Just what in the world is that magic?” (Kiria)

Kiria indifferently spouted out her words.

“I don’t have any obligation to answer, do I? Do your utmost to worry about what exactly occurred.” (Hiiro)

It seemed that after averting his eyes in the exchange earlier, he held a small grudge over having felt her taking a point off of him. Eveam gazed at the protective wall with amazement, yet, after realizing that she would be safe there, returned her expression to normal as she sharply looked at Kiria.

“Kiria.....I still don’t fully understand it, but I will surpass myself as the Maou! And then one day, I’ll open your eyes!” (Eveam)

“.....haa, I’m already awake though?” (Kiria)

Eveam’s words were made out to be pushing goodwill onto Kiria. As Eveam ground her teeth in frustration, she turned and sharply glanced at Rudolf.

“King of Victorias” (Eveam)

As to be expected of a king, even though many unforeseen incidents had occurred, Rudolf maintained his dignity and looked back at her silently.

“Allow me to say one thing. I.....” (Eveam)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“I won’t give up! Because-” (Eveam)

Pishun!

In an instant, her figure disappeared. Behind that was a highly irritated Hiiro.

“You talk too long” (Hiiro)

After he had simply lowered the curtains on Eveam’s stage, Hiiro-

“Ah, now that I think of it, are you fine?” (Hiiro)

-called out to Judom. Although he was a human, after seeing him cover for Eveam, Hiiro determined that he was an ally.

This was the real reason why he had left Eveam here without sending her flying off. However, since she was talking for so long, he got irritated and ended up sending her off. That was why he had no choice but to ask the person in question whether or not he would go to the 【Demon Country】 with him. It was just because he happened to be going there already, so whatever was fine.

“No, according to the conversation, you’re returning to the Demon World right? I have business that I need do over here, so I’m fine” (Judom)

“I see, then I’ll leave you here.” (Hiiro)

“Ah, wait a sec. ....give this to Maou-chan for me.” (Judom)

As Judom said that, he gave a single sheet of paper over. It was a paper with Teckil’s words written on it. Hiiro silently received it and put it into his breast pocket.

“Naa oi, what’s your name?” (Judom)

“If you want to know, you should ask that stupid king over there.” (Hiiro)

“Ask Rudolf?” (Judom)

As Hiiro said that and looked at Rudolf, Rudolf simply frowned as if he were trying to express, “Just who is he?”

(Ah, I see, I look like one of the 『Imp race』 right now.) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, he was thinking of ignoring Judom and disappearing like that, but-

(Ah, now that I think of it, I had something to tell him) (Hiiro)

As he turned his body toward Rudolf,

“Hey King.” (Hiiro)

“.....?” (Rudolf)

“You used the heroes as sacrificial pieces right?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“Well, I don’t really care about that anyhow.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro seemed to hear the surrounds retort so it’s okay??

“At that time, when I was first summoned, I was still a novice, so until I got stronger I travelled while hiding myself.” (Hiiro)

“.....summoned, you say?” (Rudolf)

Rudolf’s eyebrows twitched and rose. Seeing that, Hiiro’s face loosened slightly.

“But now things are different. I’ve gained enough experience so that it’s okay even if I’m exposed and I stand out.” (Hiiro)

“Summoned.....that attitude.....could it be you are.....!?” (Rudolf)

Gradually, Rudolf’s face began to warp in shock.

“Now I can say it. I’m thankful to you for summoning me to this **【Edea】**” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Rudolf)

“I probably won’t ever see you again, so I figured I should at least give you my thanks” (Hiiro)

“You.....I see, you were the one summoned together with the Heroes.” (Rudolf)

“That’s right, the Innocent Bystander.” (Hiiro)

The king’s astonished face was so amusing that Hiiro chuckled. But then, Rudolf appeared to have thought of something as he shook his head in order to clear his thoughts.

“Hmph, don’t say stupid things. You are an 『Evila』, are you not! The ones summoned at that time were.....ah!?” (Rudolf)

At that moment, Hiiro’s face returned from an 『Imp』 back to normal. Of course, it returned to normal because he had used the word [Origin]/ 『元』.

“Did they have a face.....like this?” (Hiiro)

At that, everyone in the area was surprised. Teleportation and healing magic, as well as the wall of light. On top of that, transformation magic. Hiiro’s magic was simply so mysterious that the scene involuntarily became silent, as though time had stopped.

“Ahh~ That was a little refreshing. Because of my idiot disciple’s stupid antics, and that Maou’s long talk, I was irritated. But now, I’m a little refreshed.” (Hiiro)

It seems that he was enjoying everyone’s bewilderedness in order to relieve all of his stress. Yet, the Hiiro from half a year ago would undoubtedly not have done something like this.

(Hm~ Could this be due to the influence of Aka-Loli.....?)

That’s right, deriving enjoyment out of making fun of others was something that his travelling companion, Liliyn, had practically patented. However, after spending a long time with her, Hiiro felt that he had been slightly influenced by her.

(No, I should restrain myself a bit.....)

As he didn’t want to become like Liliyn, he reflected upon his actions. On the other hand, as he felt strangely gratified and his

mood lightened, he felt that it was good that he did it. Hiiro once more used the word [Change] / 『化』 to return to his 『Imp Race』 form.

“Now then, I guess I’ll be going now.” (Hiiro)

“Wait, you youngster!” (???)

“Ahh?” (Hiiro)

The one who had jumped high into the air before Hiiro had realized it, was Leowald. He was gathering power into both fists. It was the same appearance he took when using the technique he had released earlier.

“Where did you send the Maou!” (Leowald)

“.....find her yourself.” (Hiiro)

As Hiiro simply spoke thus, he quickly faced downwards.

“Wha! Then I’ll just ask that body of yourrrsssss! Take this! 《Maximum Blaze Fang Attack》!” (Leowald)

Similar to before, a bright red fang with a tremendous amount of destructive force came crashing down. It collided with the protective wall Hiiro created.

Booooooooooooooooooooooom!

Screeeeeeeeech!

The sound of impact had a clash of magic power against magic power, followed by the roar of their attacks colliding against each other violently.

“.....hou, as expected of the Beast King” (Hiiro)

Having confirmed the title ‘Beast King’ in his 《Status》 earlier, Hiiro understood that this was the king of the 【Beast Kingdom: Passion】. He had also heard through rumors that the strength of this king was overwhelming.

After feeling that the wall he created might lose to Leowald's power, Hiiro let out a voice of admiration towards Leowald's physical strength.

"But it's too bad." (Hiiro)

Bashiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiin!

"Guhaaaaaaaaa!?" (Leowald)

Just as he thought the wall let out a dazzling light, Leowald felt the area of the wall he directed his power at return something back towards him.

[Reflection]/ 『反射』

It was the effect of a word that Hiiro had newly written. That word was capable of, just once, repelling anything. It was a word with exceedingly cheat-like effects.

Like that, Leowald was sent flying and rolled about on the ground. To him, Hiiro said just one thing,

"This just shows that our levels are different. Train some more, Beast King. See ya" (Hiiro)

Pishun!

This time, Hiiro disappeared from the scene.

"N-no way.....for father's 《Binding》 to be so easily....."  
(Leglos)

Leowald's first prince, Leglos, was surprised at the mysterious boy who had so simply reflected the attack of his father, who was far stronger than himself. Naturally, he thought that his father would soon become consumed with rage and rampage about, and swallowed nervously as he gazed at Leowald.

However, his expectations were completely betrayed.

"Gahahhahahaahahahaaha!" (Leowald)



Leowald began laughing as if he was enjoying himself.

“Fa-father.....?” (Leglos)

Seeing Leowald’s appearance, he involuntarily went speechless and stiffened. Utterly ignorant of his son’s thoughts, Leowald slapped his knee multiple times.

“Iya~ He really got me there! What’s with that youngster! To take me for a fool like that, what a pleasant youngster! Gahahahahaha!” (Leowald)

Worried that he had hit his head or something, Leglos approached, but-

“Oi, did you see that Leglos? That Red-robed youngster.” (Leowald)

“Eh, ah, yes. Mo-more importantly, are you alright, father?” (Leglos)

“Of course! At this level, I was surprised, but didn’t receive any damage! Iya, but what an interesting youngster! I, by all means, would love to face him with my full power next time! Gahahahaha!” (Leowald)

As Leglos watched his father laugh heartily, he inclined his head in indignation as he remembered something.

“The Maou got away, but there was an interesting encounter! Right now, let’s be glad about that! And also, the Maou should have returned to the Demon world! Let’s head there immediately Leglos!” (Leowald)

“Ye-yes!” (Leglos)

“Gahaha! I hope that youngster is there as well! Interesting! Truly interesting!” (Leowald)

## Chapter 121: The Transformed King

The 『Gabranth』 laughed heartily as they withdrew their troops and left. Witnessing this, Kiria looked towards Rudolph and asked,

Kiria: 「Is it fine to let them leave? Isn't he the king of an allied country?」

Rudolf: 「Hmph. Just in name. Besides, even if I said anything to him now, he wouldn't care enough to listen」

After taking a quick glance towards the Gabranth, Rudolf looked towards Kiria.

Rudolf: 「On another note, there have been far too many irregularities」

Kiria: 「Indeed, I was surprised by Judom Lankars' actions. It would seem that greater precaution is necessary. There are a lot of things that I need to amend now, thanks to him」

‘Especially that red robed boy’, she thought.

Rudolf: 「...What about the scenario?」

Kiria: 「There is no need to worry. We failed to carry out our primary objective of assassinating the Demon Lord, but...」

Judom: 「Oi, Rudolf」

Judom interrupted their conversation.

Rudolf: 「...So you were still here, Judom」

Judom: 「Just who is this girl? At first it seemed like she was the Demon Lord's aide, but it's amazing how she managed to fool Aquinas for so long」

To have kept Aquinas, who Hihiro had accepted as an extraordinary being, fooled for so long meant that Kiria was someone who exceeded even him. At least in espionage.

Kiria: 「That is natural. The one who is usually by her side is not me」

Judom: 「...What?」

Kiria: 「Rather, until we came here it was always another one of myself who was with her」

Kiria said something so ridiculous in such a straight manner that Judom almost thought she was joking.

Judom: 「W-What are you saying?」

Kiria: 「Right now Number 05 is probably with Master」

Judom: 「Zero-five? Now that I think about it, you did refer to yourself as something like that. Which means what? Besides you there are others that are like you?」

Kiria: 「That is correct. Besides me, there are a total of...」

?????: 「You're saying too much, Number 03」

Everyone suddenly looked towards the voice that was heard. Standing there was someone that looked exactly like Kiria.

Judom: (The same face... Is she the one? It's like she has no presence...)

Judom increased his vigilance towards this other Kiria who had come near them without him noticing.

?????: 「You are a battle specialized model. Your strength is extraordinary but you lack in strategy. One way to say it would be that you are frank. Or you could say that you are honest to a fault」

She walked until she stood by Kiria's side.

Kiria 03: 「Number 02, why are you here? What about Number 05?」

Kiria 02: 「She is with Master. As for why I came here, I suspected

that because it was you that you might end up honestly leaking information to the enemy if you were asked. Just like I thought, you were about to give information to the enemy 』

Kiria 03 glanced towards Judom.

Judom: (Tsk... I thought I could get some more information out of her, but an unexpected visitor just had to come)

Judom was sulking as he looked towards Number 02. Telling them apart by just appearance was practically impossible, but Number 03 had a more air-headed expression, whereas Number 02 looked far more intelligent.

Judom: 「I see, so you're the 'other one'. No, from the way she said it earlier, there seem to be more of you? 』

Kiria 02: 「Despite looking like a mass of muscle it seems like you're capable of some intelligent thought. You are correct... is all I will say 』

She had a pretty sharp tongue, but Number 03, on the other hand, just silently stood there.

Kiria 02: 「Now let's hurry back to where Master is, Number 03 』

Kiria 03: 「I understand. Then... 』

Number 03 nodded and turned to face Rudolf. He met her gaze and tilted his head.

Rudolf: 「...Hm? What is it? 』

Kiria 03: 「As I had mentioned earlier, we failed to carry out our primary objective of assassinating the Demon Lord 』

Rudolf: 「Y-Yes 』

Kiria 03: 「However, that was only a small portion of our objective 』

Rudolf: 「...? 』

Rudolf, not understanding what she was trying to say, merely blinked.

Kiria 03: 「Also」

Number 03 took something out of her breast pocket. While holding onto it, she stuck her arm out and...

\*bushuuuuuu\*1

Rudolf: 「Gah!?」

Judom: 「Rudolf!?」

...pierced Rudolf's chest. She quickly withdrew her hand and said,

Kiria 03: 「This was our other objective」

Number 03 calmly shook the blood off her hands.

Kiria 02: 「Did you put it in?」

Number 02 asked.

Kiria 03: 「Without a doubt」

Number 03 responded in a robotic manner.

Judom: 「What the hell did you guys do!?」

Judom, the soldiers, and Cabinet Minister Dennis all ran towards Rudolf, who was laying on the ground clutching his chest. The Kirias back away a little.

Suddenly, Rudolf's body started to gradually expand. His skin also started to change into a dark reddish color.

Judom: 「R-Rudolf?」

Judom said with a blank face as he witnessed this change.

Rudolf: 「Guh... Gah... Gigigi...!?」

\*bushu!\*2

A large, red horn, about 50cm in length, suddenly sprouted from Rudolf's chest.

His build had also changed, about five, six times greater than before. He easily surpassed five meters in height. He used to look like an average middle-aged man who lazed around all day, but now his appearance was closer to that of a troll. His face became extremely ugly, so much so that one would think he possessed not even a shred of reason.

\*thump thump thump\*

The red horn was pounding like a heart.

Rudolf: 「Haa haa haa haa... Ahm... hungree...」

His voice was so low that it was impossible to believe he was Rudolf. It sounded like someone who had gotten his throat crushed and was trying to speak with all his might.

Dennis and the soldiers stepped back as they screamed, witnessing their king's change. Rudolf, as if trying to suppress the pain of the transformation, stood without moving, his face contorted. His muscles were contracting and expanding at an abnormal rate, reforming him into a hulking shape.

Judom: 「You fuckers! What did you do to Rudolf!?!」

Judom asked, full of rage. Even though Rudolf had done something stupid at the conference, he was still a close friend. He couldn't just stay silent as he got turned into some unknown monster. Number 02 answered coolly while looking at Rudolf.

Kiria 02: 「It seems like it was a success. Now he can proudly claim himself to be part of the 『Evila』」

Judom: 「...What do you mean?」

Kiria 02: 「...Let's see. It would be better if I announced this in a more public place, but you are the famous Judom Lankars. Very

well, allow me to teach you a little. In a way that even your little brain can understand」

Judom listened intently to her, while also thinking that she touched a nerve every time she spoke.

Kiria 02: 「This stone... Do you know what it is?」

She took out a small, red stone the size of a ping-pong ball as she asked.

Kiria 02: 「The name of this stone is ‘stone imbued with demonic power’... 《Demon Stone》. Ah, you just thought it was exactly as it says on the tin, didn’t you?」

Judom: 「...Shut up. Hurry up and explain」

He did think that, but it was somewhat embarrassing being inquired about it.

Kiria 02: 「Well, it is really an abbreviation. The proper name for this is called 《Demon Conquering Blood Enchantment Stone》, but it is far too long so I call it 《Demon Stone》 for short」

Judom: 「What about the Demon Stone?」

Kiria 02: 「Number 03 pierced his chest earlier. At that time, Number 03 placed this 《Demon Stone》 inside of him」

Judom understood that what she had pulled out of her breast pocket at that time was a 《Demon Stone》.

Kiria 02: 「This 《Demon Stone》 reacts to magical power. Those that have this placed inside of them... become like that」

Judom: 「...You bitch, aren’t your explanations too vague?」

Kiria 02: 「...Fuuu3, that is because it has become rather bothersome to explain」

Judom: 「Hurry up and explain!」

Kiria 02: 「It can't be helped. This 《Demon Stone》 is produced using the flesh and blood of a certain 『Evila』 」

Judom: 「What...? 」

Kiria 02: 「By a certain 『Evila』 , I am referring to the currently extinct 『Kupideus』 race 」

Judom furrowed his brow as he had never heard of the name before. Number 02, as though sensing what Judom was feeling, said...

Kiria 02: 「It cannot be helped if you haven't heard of them before. Long ago, a very long time ago, they were a minority group. However, they possessed a certain ability 」

Judom: 「Ability? 」

Kiria 02: 「Their ability was to literally turn what they ate into their flesh and blood 」

Judom: 「Haa? That the same for everybody. Isn't it obvious that what you eat becomes part of your flesh and blood? 」

Kiria 02: 「...Haa4 」

Judom, who only got a sigh in reply, felt like he was being treated like an idiot.

Kiria 02: 「Do you understand? I said 'literally' 」

Judom: 「L-Like I said 」

Kiria 02: 「For example, you 」

Judom: 「Ha? 」

Kiria 02: 「Yes, if the individual known as Judom Lankars were to be eaten then your body, techniques, magic... It will be reborn into a being that can use all of it 」

Judom: 「Wha!? 」



Kiria 02: 「 Furthermore, let us say that the 『Kupiedeus』 who ate you also ate Number 03 here 」

Kiria 03: 「 ...I don't want to be eaten by that thing 」

Number 03 backed away a little.

Kiria 02: 「 Number 03, this is just a hypothetical situation 」

Kiria 03: 「 ...I understand 」

Kiria 02: 「 Good 」

Judom thought ‘What’s with this conversation?’, and Number 02 continued.

Kiria 02: 「 If the 『Kupiedeus』 who ate and now looks exactly like you were to then eat Number 03, there is a chance that it would become a being that resembles Number 03. Of course, as a being that possesses both yours and Number 03’s abilities 」

Judom thought that if that were true then it was a monster beyond belief. It becomes stronger the more it eats. In other words, it’s potential is unlimited. However, he had a thought. Why did a race that possessed such an incredible ability go extinct?

Kiria 02: 「 Why did they... go extinct... is it? 」

Judom: 「 Urgh... 」

A shiver crawled down his spine. He was being read like a book.

Kiria 02: 「 The reason why they became extinct. The reason is simple. They were driven to extinction by something even stronger 」

Judom: 「 ...Well, if you think about it normally then yeah, but does something that can fight against an outrageous race like that exist? 」

Kiria 02: 「 ...The name is annoying so I don't want to say it 」

Judom: 「 Oi! 」

Kiria 02: 「 Anyway, they were driven to extinction by something like that 」

It seemed like she would refuse to say the name no matter what so Judom put that matter aside and continued listening to her.

Kiria 02: 「 However, before everything could be destroyed by that individual, they ended their own lives in a certain ruin 」

Judom: 「 You mean... Suicide? 」

Kiria 02: 「 Yes. They entered the eternal sleep known as death in a ruin deep underground, but our Master had discovered it 」

Judom: 「 ... 」

Kiria 02: 「 Afterwards, he obtained a few of the mummified 『Kupiedeus』 . To his surprise there were some that still contained blood, though only a small amount. He asked a certain individual to cultivate it, and the end result is the 《Demon Stone》 . Haa, explaining is so tiring 」

She gave off a feeling like she had just finished her job, but she failed to answer the most important question.

Judom: 「 Wait a minute, so how come they become like that when you implant the Demon Stone inside them! 」

Kiria 02: 「 ...How about you use your brain a little, 《Impact King》 ? Or shall I change your name to 《Buffoon King》 5? 」

Judom: 「 Don't make me punch you, bitch... 」

Kiria 02: 「 Seriously, it cannot be helped. Listen, this 《Demon Stone》 is like a living 『Kupiedeus』 . In other words the 《Demon Stone》 , which reacts to the magic inside the body it was placed in, will activate and start eating their cells and change shape. The end result is something like that, a fusion between the host body and the 『Kupiedeus』 . Oh, by the way, the transformation is accompanied by an extreme pain and your body becomes rigid for a

while」

Judom thought, 'So that's why Rudolf isn't moving at all.'

Judom: 「On another note, isn't there almost no resemblance to Rudolf?」

Indeed, his appearance was beyond monstrous.

Kiria 02: 「Aah, that is because his existence was so weak」

Judom: 「Existence?」

Kiria 02: 「Well, life force, magic power, his will to live, things like that」

Judom: 「...」

Kiria 02: 「If the existence of what it ate was weak, its appearance will remain as the one which had the stronger existence. In the case of the king, he was weak, frail, meager, and of poor constitution, so the original 『Kupiedeus』's existence was stronger and his appearance became closer to that of the 『Kupiedeus』 race. The fact that his existence was weaker than this small stone is laughable. Well, there are various other reasons, but that is the general idea. Haa, I finally finished」

Judom: 「Not yet!」

Judom looked irritatingly at Number 02.

Kiria 02: 「What is it, Muscles?」

Judom: 「Don't call me Muscles! The most important thing! How do you turn Rudolf back to normal!?」

Kiria 02: 「...You think he can be changed back?」

## Notes

1. sfx: blood spurting out
2. sfx: something piercing through

3. sfx: light sigh
4. sfx: sigh
5. This doesn't really translate into English. The joke is that the characters are different but the pronunciation is the same

{ } } a.rvts8, span.rvts8 { font-family: 'Times New Roman', 'Times', serif; : bold; color: #0000ff; text-decoration: underline; } }

# Konjiki no Wordmaster

## Chapter 122: Visitor

“Dammit, you damn bastards!” (Judom)

Judom screamed in Rudolph’s direction.

“Oy, Rudolph! Get yourself together!” (Judom)

The Rudolph’s body, that had been stiffened through the pain suddenly quivered.

“Haaaaaagaaaaaaah! Hu, ngry!”

His large body makes cricking sounds as he moves. He grabbed a soldiers near him in one hand, and...

...

What a fearful sight. He inserted the soldier head-first into his own mouth. The king’s stomach convulsed and shook a few times, but after a while it settled down. And seeing the scene, everyone’s face went pale.

“Not... not enuuuuuuuuuuuuffff! More! Mooooaaaar!”

He grabbed whoever he could lay his hands on, and made them offerings to his unending appetite.

“W-what are you doing, Rudolph!”

Judom’s scream never reached him. Seeing no other option, he tried to move to stop him, but 03 stood in his way.

“H-hii! M-m-m-m-m-m-my liege! I-i-i-i-it’s me! Dennis!”

Perhaps his legs had given out on him, but Dennis frantically tried to crawl backwards. But still, he entered Rudolph's field of vision.

"Den... ni... s?"

"T-t-t-that's right! I'm your loyal retainer! Dennis the Ministerrr!"

As if he had remembered something Rudolph smiled, but...

Bun!

Dennis desperately tried to shake himself out of the king's strong arms. He hears ominous creaking sounds coming from around his body.

"Ga... bo... gi... obu..."

It was as if his body was being clenched in a vice, and his body cried out. Judom remained wary of 03 before his eyes, as he continued to call out for Rudolph to regain his sanity.

Nom!

The minister Dennis was shoved into Rudolph's stomach. It was quite an undramatic end for him. In order to save the minister, a close-by army officer tried to pierce Rudolph with his sword, but it had absolutely no effect.

No, it only served to agitate the beast. Rudolph opened his large mouth, and suddenly, a laser-like attack shot out of it.

"W-what!?"

The sudden attack, coupled with its destructive power and incredible speed made it so that of the five people it was aimed at, four of them fell victim to it.

The one who got hit in the head had the impacted part of his body cleanly disappear, and the one who took it in the stomach got to experience his upper and lower halves separating from each other. Another one was completely annihilated, and the last one was only graze, but the injuries he received caused him the loss of function in

his left arm.

With the severity of the situation, the other soldiers forgot their orders, and started running.

“Get out of the way!” (Judom)

Judom should have been desperately trying to stop Rudolph, but even now, Kiria 03 blocked his way. They lock fists, but without either side inflicting significant damage on the other, they’re at a stand-still.

“It may be fine already. 03, grab the Ugly Doll, and let’s go return to master.” (02)

02’s manner of speech made Judom furrow his brow.

“Ugly Doll?” (Judom)

“It’s that 《Hideous Puppet》 over there. Great naming sense, right?” (02)

“What? It makes me want to barf!” (Judom)

“This is why I can’t stand people with no taste.” (02)

But their treatment of Rudolph amazed him. It’s probable that this time, the one who proposed the plans of betrayal for the conference was Kiria. While Rudolph was foolish, he wasn’t stupid enough to trust an 『Evila』 so easily.

Even so, he trusted them, and tried to play his hand against the Demon King. In the end, Rudolph was but a pawn, no, a disposable piece. It’s hard to think Rudolph would ever agree to a deal as risky as this.

What Judom was thinking came quite naturally to him. Even if an 『Evila』 came to the king, telling him they’d lend their help, and asking to take down the Demon King together, there’s no way Rudolph would believe it. There isn’t a single person who wouldn’t see such a proposal as a trap.

But Rudolph accepted the contract. He had determined that there was enough merit in it, and enough safety for him to agree to it. Then what was that safety? It wasn't anything Judom could find out just by thinking.

—

—

—

—

—

About half a year ago, the 『Gabranth』 declared war on the 『Evila』, and tried to march to battle, but the Demon King Evila severed the only bridge linking the two continents. The war was put on hold, no, it came to a close, and after that, in order to prevent anything similar from happening again, the Demon King continued to write letters to the 『Humas』 asking to form an alliance.

But dubious of their true intentions, Rudolph, the Humas King, only put off answering to the letters. And then, one day, a single person appeared before him.

Just as always, he was discussing matters pertaining to the 『Evila』 with his Minister, Dennis. A maid opened the door, and entered the room. It seems she had come to serve tea.

As Dennis was getting thirsty, he proposed that it was a good time to take a break. But without bringing the tea to Rudolph, the maid closed the door, and stood blankly in front of it.

“... What's wrong? Just bring it over already.” (Rudolph)

The unskilled maid gave an unpleasant frown. But she suddenly raised her hung head, and when the other two saw her face, they both turned pale.

“Hello, can we talk for a bit?”



The girl who spoke words mechanically had the 『Evila』 characteristic dark skin. And the feature that clearly defined her race was the pointed ends her ears came to. The two were able to determine she was an 『Evila』 right away, and they were about to shout for help.

“I think it would be best if you didn’t do that.”

For some reason, the girl’s voice pierced their hearts. With their mouths hanging open, the two stiffened.

“Wha!? W-who are you supposed to be!?”

With a frantic look in his eyes, Dennis moved his mouth. And the girl politely bowed her head.

“It’s a pleasure to meet you. I go by the name of Kiria..., sir.”

“Kiria... you say?” (Rudolph)

“Y-your majesty?” (Dennis)

“Y-yes... Kiria should be the name of the Demon Lord’s aide.” (Rudolph)

“The very same Kiria.”

They never thought someone that important would show up here alone.

“... A-and what is her aide doing here? Did you come to assassinate me or something?” (Rudolph)

He managed to preserve his dignified bearing, but his voice was quivering, and simply speaking took all of his might.

“No, as I just stated earlier, I have merely come to talk.”

“Talk... you say?” (Rudolph)

Rudolph casts doubtful eyes on her.

“Yes. It’s a talk I think both of us will serve to gain from.”

“... So what is this about?”

His eyebrows twitch. If it was just talking, he decided he would hear her out.

“Would you be interested in... destroying the 『Evila』?”

“What...?”

For a moment, he was unable to understand what had been said. He met eyes with Dennis, and tilted his head before returning his gaze to Kiria.

“What do you mean? Destroy the 『Evila』? Are you not an 『Evila』 yourself?”

“Ah, perhaps I should rephrase that. I mean only the 『Evila』 that go against the 『Humas』 ... of course.”

“... Please elaborate.”

“Y-your majesty!? You plan to trust the words of someone as suspicious-looking as this?”

“No but I’ve determined there is merit in listening to what she has to say. There’s a need to see whether they plan on moving against us, or not.”

“B-but still...”

Dennis uneasily looks at Kiria, as Rudolph shakes his head.

“I’ll make a decision after I hear you out. You better listen to my position as well.”

“As expected of the King of Victorias, you sure are open minded.”

“Enough with your flattery. Say what it is you want, exactly.”

“Understood.”

Kiria took a deep breath, before she began to explain the reason she came there.

## Chapter 123 – Way to Betrayal

“ I want to destroy the 『Evila』 . Especially the people close to the Demon Lord. In other words, .....Revenge.” (Kiria)

“...Why would you do that? In the first place, if you really hate the Demon Lord, why are you serving as her aide? Rather, you serve her as you plan to find a chance to kill her, yes? “ (Rudolf)

“It is not such a simple story.” (Kiria)

“What do you mean?” (Rudolf)

“The people around the Demon Lord are the ones I hate the most. Although it is easy to kill the Demon Lord, I want to kill them after humiliating them to the extent that they would despair on their helplessness” (Kiria)

Rudolf and Dennis shuddered, Kiria's eyes that were stained with freezing darkness bore into their very being

“I want to assassinate the Demon Lord on an even more compelling stage. In order to do that, your assistance is mandatory” (Kiria)

“I see, so that's the reason for the conference?” (Rudolf)

“Yes, that indeed is the reason” (Kiria)

Rudolf nodded with a stern expression, but even though he felt intimidated by her dark emotions, he could not afford to believe her so easily.

“Most likely, I will be one of the bodyguards accompanying her to the conference. However, if the Demon Lord is killed in their presence, they will lament their own worthlessness. And, after they experienced despair, I will torture them to death.” (Kiria)

The sound of Dennis gulping could be heard faintly. Power seeped through Rudolf's fist instinctively. This person is really serious, Rudolph thought as he was anxious on this audacious plan.

“Why.... do you want revenge?” (Rudolf)

“Oh? Weren’t you deprived of your important one as well? Or, though you were deprived, do you not have any desire for revenge?” (Kiria)

“..... No, certainly..... the sacrifice I paid to destroy the Demon Lord of 『Evila』 was big. Such an alliance is just received with a sneer” (Rudolf)

“It might be so. I was also deprived of my important one. Therefore, I cannot forgive them. So please, will you not help us defeat 【Demon Capital: Chaos】?” (Kiria)

The two stared at each other. Time flew by with neither of them averting their gaze. And, when Rudolf broke his gaze, he spoke.

“Just now, Did you say us? Is there somebody else who knows of this plan?” (Rudolf)

“The other one is a person named Iraora, the guardian at the border” (Kiria)

“What di-....!” (Rudolf)

Those words was considerably attractive. 【Mütich Bridge】 is the sole link for crossing the border, the absolute defense line, the person guarding must be of top class. It would be very convenient if such a person is on the treacherous side,

“If that is the case, it is reliable, with this I can make my move in various moves. However” (Rudolf)

“.....-?” (Kiria)

“This is only credible if your story is true to the end. You don’t actually think that I will easily believe such a story without proper evidence, did you?” (Rudolf)

“Of course. I understand that trusting takes time. Therefore, send your most trusted intelligence unit to 【Chaos】 to ascertain my words. I will order Iraora to let them cross the border without

hurting them” (Kiria)

“....Dennis” (Rudolf)

“Y-yes?” (Dennis)

“Let the third unit confirm the situation. Ah, wait, if the story is true, I think it is better to gather those whom we can trust this information with, I suppose? (Rudolf)

Rudolf placed a hand on his chin as he carried a worried face.

“....Yeah, Let us use the ad-man ” (Rudolf)

“ I see, he is a person in charge of the intelligence unit serving from the previous generation, if it's that person he may be able to ascertain the truth. I shall comply at once” (Dennis)

“I believe you said you were Kiria, for the time being I will carefully examine whether your story is true or not. And also....” (Rudolf)

Rudolf opened a drawer in the desk using a key, then a sheet of paper was taken out.

“This is....” (Kiria)

“I'm sure you know of it. This is a 《Contract Roll》 ” (Rudolf)

“Yes I do, signing in here will prevent us from betraying each other” (Kiria)

Then, Kiria as well took out a similar paper from her breast pocket.

“In fact, I thought that you would also feel relieved if we had one like this” (Kiria)

“I see. So, that was your intention from the beginning” (Rudolf)

“Yes, However, my side is at a disadvantage. If you were to betray us instead, the contract will be terminated and since there was no contract breach you will not bear any punishment. Therefore, I

would like you to make a definite promise that you would not betray our side as well”

“....You do have a point” (Rudolf)

It's only natural for her to say such things. It's sheer stupidity to have a one-sided contract. By having 2 contracts both sides will benefit as they can restrain the other party a little.

“However, I will sign this paper only after the report from the investigation of the adman. “ (Rudolf)

“A wise judgement. I understand. Then in three months I will come again” (Kiria)

After she spoke those words, she exited from the room.

“My king, are you sure about the alliance with them?” (Dennis)

“I do not yet understand. This plan of theirs is ambiguous as it stands. First, I will confirm the matter of the border and then investigate the 【Demon Capital】 ” (Rudolf)

Time flew fast and the day when the adman was to submit his report came. The information Rudolf received was truly pleasing to his ears. As a result, the story Kiria had told was proven not to be a lie.

Being able to cross the bridge easily, the intelligence unit lead by the adman was able to make a temporary base of operation near 【Xaos】 . Kiria had made all the necessary preparations in secret to secure a place for the group

Thus, they could easily gather information about 【Xaos】 in various ways. Hereby ascertaining the inside structure of 【Xaos】 that they did not know of before and procure information on the established plan of assault.

And three months later, as she had promised, she showed up again.

“Do you believe me now?” (Kiria)

“The story you told us was really a fact” (Rudolf)

“Then...” (Kiria)

Kiria took out the 《Contract Roll》 from her breast pocket.

“Please sign here” (Kiria)

However, Rudolf frowns as he hesitates a little. Even after hearing everything, he still was not able to trust her completely.

“Please be at ease. The negotiation that I have proposed here, please read them carefully” (Kiria)

Rudolph opened his eyes wide when he looked over the paper and then stared at her.

The contents of the contract can be summarised as

One will not betray one another. Any action that contradicts both party's reasons should not be taken. Kiria only demands the destruction of 『Evila』. The contract will last until 【Xaos】 is fully overwhelmed

There were no problems with the conditions stated because, in fact it was exactly the way Rudolf wanted. However, the following lines made him tilt his head.

When Kiria betrays, Death is immediately given

Usually, when one forsakes the 《Contract Roll》, though life is cut down as stated in its general contents, there was no rule that robbed the life of the traitor. However, the condition Kiria had written was imminent death.

“T-This is...” (Rudolf)

“You may receive that as a proper evidence of our contract. These remaining years of my life.... I shall offer them to you” (Kiria)

Her eyes were not trembling, Rudolf and Dennis who were witnessing it were overawed. Without a doubt, they understood that

her plan is something extraordinary.

“.....I understand. The letter you sent me did give me a detailed explanation of your plan. I was really surprised that even the 『Gabranth』 were also involved in this alliance. With this we can surely crush the 【Demon Capital】.” (Rudolph)

“I will do anything for the sake of my revenge. King, I guess you are also boiling with anger, right? They are the cause of your daughter’s deaths” (Kiria)

“.....” (Rudolph)

“ I do not need that country any longer. I believe you are good enough to govern 『Evila』 . But, please have mercy on my companions” (Kiria)

“You naturally have that privilege. As for this side, we also do not want to kill our benefactors” (Rudolf)

“Those words from you are really assuring” (Kiria)

“From now on we are comrades” (Rudolf)

As Rudolf said so, he put his signature on the 《Contract Roll》 . The paper began to cast a pale light, and then dispersed into dust which then flew into Rudolf and Kiria’s chest

“Contract Established” (Kiria)

“Yes” (Rudolph)

“With that over, let us now concentrate on the finer details of our plan. For certainty..... so that our scenario can accomplished” (Kiria)

“Yes” (Rudolph)

“ I will now proceed to the conference place, 【Holy Oldine】 to obtain more information. Well then, see you again” (Kiria)

Kiria quietly exited from the room.



“With this, the 『Evilas』 will be in our grasp..... is what it means right?” (Dennis)

Minister Dennis chuckles joyfully.

“That’s right, finally my wish will come true. My daughters can finally rest in peace” (Rudolf)

“However, My King, after suppressing 【Demon Capital】 , are Kiria and her companions to be really protected?” (Dennis)

“.....Fufufu, I wonder” (Rudolf)

Dennis who saw that face also laughs similarly. As expected, they intended to destroy even Kiria and her companions from the start. However, until the contractual coverage of suppressing 【Xaos】 remained, they could not be subjected to punishment.

(I do not know when she will try to backstab us..that Kiria)  
(Rudolf)

When Rudolph thought about the events that were to unfold in the near future, he exhaled deeply, after all his long standing wish was finally coming into place. He was trembling in excitement as he never once thought that he would see the day when the dearest wish of 『Humas』 was granted would come.

Although, the heroes were Rudolf’s trump card, for this scenario, only Kiria’s proposal gained his favour. I shall use the heroes as sacrificial chess pieces in order to complete this scenario. Well, in the beginning, they were mere pawns I summoned to save us.

(I will also need to arrange a scenario that incorporates the extermination of the 『Gabranth』 as well. Although... those guys are like large slab of rocks, they are also quite fragile. If the Beast King dies, their collapse will be nothing of a problem) (Rudolph)

This world then will become only for the 『Humas』 . Even if the 『Pheoms』 exist, their existence can’t change what happens in this world. With this there will no longer be any wars, a truly peaceful world can be built.

(Kiria..... I give my gratitude to you. I can grip peace with these priceless sacrifices you have given me) (Rudolf)

However, Rudolph did not notice, that Kiria had also anticipated those kind of thoughts. And he, rather, the 『Humas』 were still dancing in the palm of her hand.

## Chapter 124: Hiroy, once again to the Demon Country

Author Note: A nostalgic character has come back ww

Kiria: 「 Well, even so, to think that he was such an easy to handle lord, one can say that it was fortunate, even if anticlimactic. 」

As she saw the completely changed Rudolf, Kiria muttered to herself.

Kiria: (I guess he is not yet aware. This was certainly an act of betrayal. According to what had been written on the 《Contract Scroll》 , Kiria, who had committed treachery, should have died. That was mandatory. However.....)

She glanced at No.03 who was beside her.

Kiria: (If only one of us were to die, then it simply becomes a matter of once again rebuilding us anew.)

Indeed. Certainly, the contracted Kiria had died this time due to committing the act of betrayal. However, to No.02 and the rest, one more ‘self’ had simply died. It simply did not concern them.

Kiria: (Foolish Lord.....your belief that Kiria was the prevalent reason for your defeat. However, it is unfortunate. We are but mere pieces.)

After No. 02 looked upon Rudolf emotionlessly, it sent its gaze towards No. 03.

Kiria: 「 Now, let us go No. 03. 」

Judom: 「 Hold it! I don't know where you are planning on going, but do you really think I'll just let you simply leave! 」

Naturally, Judom had no intention of letting Kiria, the ringleader behind the entire affair, escape.

Kiria: 「Even if you say this to me, as I wish to be spared from anymore irregularities...No. 03.」

No. 03: 「Yes?」

Kiria: 「I shall take Ugly Doll and go ahead first. Please return after you have appropriately served as an opponent.」

No. 03: 「I understand.」

Kiria: 「Ugly Doll! Stop your feasting!」

Rudolf: 「Uu.....gu?」

When Rudolf discarded the soldier's corpse with a \*poi\*, treating it like trash, No.02 footsteps unhesitatingly resounded as it moved to Rudolf's side.

Judom: 「Rudolf!」

Judom attempted to move in front of Rudolf in order to obstruct his walking path. However, before he could, No.03 stood in Judom's way.

No.03: 「I will not let you go.」

Kiria: 「I leave it to you, No.03.」

No.03: 「Understood.」

Judom: 「Hold it! Rudolf! You're still aware of what's happening, right!? Open your eyes! What do you plan to do with the country!?!」

However, Rudolph did not react. As he place his hand directly onto No.02's shoulder, he simply walked away.

Judom: 「Damn it-!」

Judom began to survey the surroundings by only moving his eyes. A scene that appeared to be taken out of a picture of hell spread before him. He scowled as the smell of blood and burnt flesh

pierced his nose. Although there were soldiers that were still alive, there was nobody who was left uninjured.

Judom left the soldier's treatment to the priests, thinking that he should try and stop Rudolf. However, as No.03 obstructed him, he clicked his tongue inwardly.

As they stared at each other warily, their gazes undiverted, No.03 approached Judom's chest at a tremendous speed.

Judom: 「Chii-!」

Similar to Eveam and Rudolf, she tried to pierce Judom with a spear hand but-

Judom: 「Don't underestimate me-!」

\*Paaaaaaan-!\*(1)

Suddenly, Judom vigorously brought his hands together. At that moment, with Judom as the epicenter, a blast of wind raged violently.

No.03: 「Ku.....!?!」

No.03, who was heading straight for Judom, had their body blown away by the raging wind blast. Following this, she collided with the building.

Judom: 「That was the 《Hand Clap Focal Point》. Remember it!」

As expected of a man that had been recognized by Aquinas. Without having to receive No.03's attack which appeared to have been aimed for the instant that the opponent was unguarded, Judom returned it with his own counterattack. Such was expected from him, as he was the one who had been entrusted with the human's guild.

Judom: 「Sorry, but I'm gonna catch you and force you to spit out what you know.」

Judom turned towards the building that No.03 was launched

towards. However, Judom widened his eyes as he took in the scene before him.

Besides the destroyed remains of the rubble, there was nothing there. Apparently, she purposefully allowed herself to be blown away in order to use the opportunity created to run away.

Judom: 「 Chi-.....to think that I would make such a mistake. 」

As he did not think she would attempt to retreat this quickly, Judom wanted to beat himself upon realising his naivety.

Judom: 「 .....I guess it can't be helped. For now, I don't have much choice but to return back to 【Victorias】 , huh. After all, it wouldn't be good if I didn't collect the information about them. 」

As he murmured, his gaze flew in the opposite direction of the country.

Judom: (Although it's turned into the worst possible outcome, I guess I have to do what needs to be done, huh.)

Okamura Hiiro, who had just returned to the 【Evila Capital: Xaos】 , was, for some reason, being fiercely glared at by a certain individual.

Said individual allowed her blazing, crimson hair to flutter as she confronted Hiiro with narrowed eyes and folded arms.

Liliyn: 「 What's the meaning of this? 」

Hiiro: 「 What, it's just Aka-Loli(2). So you came back, huh. 」

Indeed, the one before Hiiro's very eyes was Aka-Loli, Liliyn Li Reysis Redrose. The reason for why she was glaring at Hiiro with an expression of wrath was unknown. At that moment-

\*Dadadadadadadadada!\*(3)

???: 「 Goshujiiiiiiiiin(4)! 」

\*Dogosu-!\*(5)

Hiiro: 「Gufu-!」

As something had suddenly assaulted his belly, Hiiro, who was caught off guard, flew backwards in such a state.

???: 「Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujin Goshujiiiiin!」

That someone who had jumped onto Hiiro began to muzzle it's head in Hiiro's chest. Following this, as Hiiro thought that they were going to stop, they stuck their tongue out with a \*pero-\*(6).

Hiiro: 「O-oi.....wait a minute.....」

\*Pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero pero!\*

It was not strange for the surroundings to be in an uproar. The man in the red robe that had suddenly appeared was currently pinned down and having his face licked by another person that had also suddenly appeared.

Hiiro: 「Eei-!(7) So annoying! Get away from me, Yodare-Tori! (8)」

As Hiiro grabbed the person by the neck, he stood up and threw them away with a \*poi-.\*.

???: 「Kui-!(9) Ittaaaaai-!(10) Goshujin is so mean!」

Hiiro: 「Shut up! I'm always telling you not to lick my face, aren't I!?」

As Hiiro used his sleeve to wipe his gooey face, drenched by drool, his cheeks twitched.

???: 「Uu~ but, but, it's been so long da mo~n(11).....」

The individual, no, from appearances, she was completely an elementary schoolgirl. As she had unruly, yellow hair that was cut short, the hair around her ears appeared to grow in a shape that resembled wings.

From her facial expression, one could clearly understand that the individual had a lively character as her large, friendly eyes, adorable nose and cute mouth were perched neatly onto her face. In addition, this child was also wearing clothes similar to Nikki, a 『文』 (12) character having been engraved on the back.

Furthermore, the child's charm point was a faint, crescent-shaped birthmark that floated on its forehead.

Nikki: 「Aa-! Mikazuki, that's bad desu zo(13)! The only one who is allowed to hug Shishou(14) is me after all! 」

Mikazuki: 「You're wrong da mon! The only one allow to hug Goshujin is Mikazuki da mon! 」

The two children began to quarrel.

Nikki: 「Muu(15).....Shishou is mine desu zo! 」

Mikazuki: 「Kuu(15).....Goshujin is Mikazuki's da mon! 」

As the two adamantly glared at each other, their mouths pointed in annoyance-

\*Poka-!\* \*Poka-!(16)

Nikki: 「Nowa-!?(17) 」

Mikazuki: 「Nyu-!?(17) 」

A fist fell above both of their heads.

Hiiro: 「Alright already. You guys just shut up. 」

As Hiiro glared at the two with a displeased expression,

Nikki | Mikazuki: 「 「 .....yes. 」 」

The two instantly became silent.

Liliyn: 「Oi Hiiro. Hurry up and answer my question. 」

Liliyn, as if losing her patience, threw out words infused with



anger.

Hiiro: 「 Question, you say? 」

Liliyn: 「 Yes, what's with this situation? Nikki seems to have known about it but why didn't I hear about this? 」

Hiiro: 「 Because I didn't tell you. 」

Liliyn: 「 Like I said, I'm asking you why you didn't tell me! 」

Hiiro: 「 .....haa. Look here, you came here, saying that 'you wanted to come to this country', right? And you also said that you weren't very fond of this country and that you were going to see someone who lived near the country, right? 」

Liliyn: 「 Aa(18). 」

Hiiro: 「 As I had also come here without any prior knowledge, I was dumped here after being told to 'stay at this inn and wait for a bit'. 」

Liliyn: 「 ..... 」

Hiiro: 「 The fact that war might break out was something that I heard just recently. Therefore, there was no way to tell you as you were absent at that time. 」

Liliyn: 「 Eei, don't screw with me! If you used your 《Word Magic》, you'd be able to tell me in a blink of an eye, you bastard! 」

As she protested, Liliyn frowned.

Hiiro: 「 Don't screw with me. Why do I have to take the trouble of reporting every single piece of info I get to you? 」

Liliyn: 「 That much is obvious! It's because you belong to me! 」

As she insisted thus while puffing out her small chest, Hiiro simply glared at her with reproachful eyes.

Hiiro: 「I only belong to me. I have no intention of being owned by anyone else.」

Liliyn: 「-tch. In the past half year, you're just as stubborn as always.」

Hiiro: 「I don't want to hear that from you.」

Liliyn: 「Fun(19), oh well. By the way, although I only observed some of it on my way here, the war between races appears to be in full-swing, huh.」

Upon hearing those words, Hiiro seemed to have recalled something as he looked at Nikki's face.

Hiiro: 「Oi, Baka-Deshi(20). The Maou(21) and co. came here, right?」

Nikki: 「Ah, hai desu zo!(22) As I thought that something had suddenly appeared, they began to shout something incomprehensible. What exactly was that?」

It was most likely that since she was sent back here while in the middle of her speech, Nikki would have heard her declaration.

Nikki: 「But as soon as she realised that there was no one in the direction of where she was pointing, her face became incredibly red as she said things like Shishou is a Baka(23) or that Shishou was unbelievable...」

Her embarrassment at that time was something that Hiiro could not possibly comprehend.

Hiiro: 「That doesn't matter. Where are they?」

Nikki: 「They said that they were going to perform sub-ju-gation(24) and left somewhere desu zo.」

Apparently, the Maou's party, after appearing here, headed out to repel the Gabranth insurgents for the sake of quelling the conflict.

Nikki: 「Ah, also, regarding those who are called the Heroes(25)-」

Hiiro: 「Nn? Heroes? .....aa, come to think of it, they were here, huh.」

Although he had completely forgotten about them, Hiiro began to search the surroundings for the figures of the heroes. However, he did not find them.

Hiiro: 「.....they're not here, huh.」

Nikki: 「You see, after Shishou flew to the other side, that Ookami-dono(26) began to talk with the heroes. After that, due to some strange people suddenly attacking, they were sent flying somewhere.」

Hiiro: 「They were sent flying?」

The Ookami was obviously referring to Ornoth. However, as Nikki had also not remembered his name, they referred to him by his only distinguishing feature, calling him Ookami.

Although Nikki's description was vague and difficult to understand, as long as they were not here, Hiiro did not particularly care.

Hiiro: 「They're really like the frog at the bottom of the well..... aren't they? It's probable that they were about to run away after they were assaulted by the Ookami's killing intent. It seems that they haven't yet become accustomed to being the King's discarded pawns. Honestly, just what have those guys been doing since they came here?」

Although he could somewhat guess, as he had determined that thinking about those that he was no longer interested in was unproductive, he began to search for the Demon Lord for now as it was necessary for Hiiro to meet her.

「Seek」 | 『探索』 (27)

As Hiiro activated those words, a pale arrow appeared before him, pointing towards the direction that Hiiro should advance in.

Liliyn: 「Oi, Hiiro. You can't possibly be thinking of participating in the war, right?」

Hiiro turned towards Liliyn's unchanged disgruntled expression.

Hiiro: 「That's what I'm thinking.」

Liliyn: 「Ha? You bastard. Don't tell me you've awoken to altruism and are gonna try and stop this war, huh?」

As she spoke with considerable sarcasm, Liliyn shrugged her shoulders.

Hiiro: 「If you want to know about the reason for my participation then ask that Baka Deshi. Also, that Jii-san(28) and Doji-Maid(29) are probably on there way here, right?」

Liliyn: 「Nn? .....aa.」

Hiiro: 「Then once they get here, give them an explanation.」

While he spoke, Liliyn stared carefully at Hiiro's face.

Liliyn: 「.....do you want me to lend a hand?」

While he thought that Liliyn's behaviour had changed in the last half year, Hiiro gave a wry smile as he waved his hand.

Hiiro: 「No, since I'll finish it up quickly, all you have to do is just wait.」

As he said thus, Hiiro kicked off the ground and left.

While they saw Hiiro leave, Mikazuki grew depressed, perhaps due to the fact that she was sad at the thought of being separated from Hiiro. However, as she noticed Nikki next to her, wearing a thoughtful expression, she began to ask.

Mikazuki: 「What's wrong, Nikki?」

Nikki: 「Nn~ I feel like there was something important that I absolutely had to tell Shishou, but.....」

Mikazuki: 「Is that so?」

Nikki: 「Uu~n」

Mikazuki: 「If you can't remember it then it can't be anything important, no?」

Nikki: 「Ah, you must be right!」

Mikazuki: 「That has to be it!」

Nikki: 「Un un!(30)」

Mikazuki: 「Ahaha!」

Upon looking at the duo who were laughing together, Liliyn exasperated.

Liliyn: (Don't tell me that the one who has to watch over these two.....is me.....?)(31)

The one who cried in their heart, for someone, anyone to quickly return soon, was Liliyn.

Author Note:

Ah, next time will have full-fledged warriors. This time was the preparation before it.

The beast men and demonkin and everyone will become warriors and it'll be a \*bla~~~st\*.....hopefully.

## Notes:

1. \*Paan\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*slap\* or \*clap\*.
2. Aka-Loli: Hiiro's nickname for Liliyn. Aka = Red. Loli = Lolita.
3. \*Dada\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*thud\*.
4. Goshujin: Master, Lord or Owner.
5. \*Dogosu\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*bonk\*.
6. \*Pero\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*lick\*.
7. Eei: Japanese expression denoting irritation.
8. Yodare-Tori: Hiiro's nickname for a certain drooling (yodare) bird (tori).

9. Kui: Raidpic speak. If you don't know what a Raidpic is... why are you reading this?
10. Itai: Japanese equivalent of 'Ouch' or 'Owie'.
11. Da mon: This particular character's speech quirk.
12. TL Note: This 文 character literally means 'sentence'. However, it is also apart of the 文字 kanji which means 'word' (character to be specific). This engraved symbol is essentially stating that the wearer is aligned with the 'one who uses words'.
13. Desu zo: Nikki's speech quirk.
14. Shishou: Mentor.
15. Muu/Kuu: Expressions of irritation/frustration.
16. \*Poka-\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*impact\*.
17. Nowa/Nyuu: Grunts of pain.
18. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think 'yeah' or 'uh-huh'.
19. Fun: Hmph.
20. Baka-Deshi: Stupid (Baka) Disciple (Deshi). Hiiro's nickname for Nikki.
21. Maou: Literally Demon Lord. Hiiro's nickname for Eveam.
22. TL Note: Hai = Yes. In this case, I have left it in Jap because it sounds similar to how a soldier would respond to their commander with a 'Sir, yes sir!' or 'Roger'.
23. Baka = Idiot, Stupid, Imbecile, Retard, and any other synonym that one can use to insult somebody's level of intellect. (It's closer to 'stupid'.)
24. TL Note: Written in Katakana as opposed to Kanji. Implies that the speaker does not know what the word is and is merely pronouncing the sounds/syllables. Thus, the hyphenation.
25. TL Note: Written in Katakana as opposed to Kanji. Reasons similar to Note 24.
- 26.
27. Ookami: Wolf
28. -dono: a relatively archaic suffix that functions similarly to -san. Implies distance/formality towards the subject. Often used by samurai but tend to also be used by those with honor and/or status.
29. TL Note: Made up of 探 = Explore and 索 = Rope. Implies

that something specific is being sought out and traced. Thus, I have used 'seek'.

30. Jii-san: Old man (formal) or Old geezer/fart (Informal/rude). Hihiro's nickname for a certain, perverted butler.
31. Doji-Maid: Clumsy Maid. Hihiro's nickname for a certain, flustered maid. (Fee~)
32. Un: An expression of affirmation.
33. TL Note: Liliyn, you have my sympathies...although I have a feeling LoliQ wouldn't mind looking after some lolis...

## Chapter 125: The Unparalleled Hiiro

\*Author's Note: This time, I think I'll show you just how unparalleled he is.

“Fortify the defensive wall! Groups 1 and 2, use water magic! After that, groups 3 and 4 should immediately use lightning magic to seal the enemy's movements!” (Eveam)

The Maou Eveam and Aquinas were issuing orders to the soldiers in order to hold back the advance of the Beastmen in front of them.

After the soldiers stationed at the front attacked the Beastmen with water magic, the soldiers on standby behind them used lightning magic. Due to the strengthened effects of the lightning magic, the mobility of their opponents was stolen.

Wary of the magical attacks, the Beastmen didn't advance any further. At that moment, as though black paint had been spilled on it, a black mass spread across the ground.

As that occurred, a number of creatures appeared from within the blackness. No, they couldn't be called creatures. Their bodies had decayed, and the smell of rotten flesh had spread quite a bit throughout the surroundings. However, the things that had appeared from the ground did not stop moving as they continued to advance forward on their own.

“Go forward-nya! My zombie soldiers!” (Black Panther Person)

At that moment, from amongst the Beastmen, an anthropomorphized black panther-like existence appeared. Upon that individual's entrance, the morale of the Beastmen could be seen to have risen greatly. They must have found the individual to be quite reliable.

“Hah! Don't be stupid! There's no way those simple monsters could break through our 《Thunder Net Formation》!” (Evila Soldier)

The one who said that was a single 『Evila』 soldier. The reason for



those words was understandable. In reality, after the Beastmen were soaked with water and when lightning was sent throughout the surroundings, they had become unable to move. Amongst them, there were also those who had stepped upon the water and ended up getting electrocuted.

However, upon hearing those words, the black panther person, whose name was Crouch, smiled as though he was looking down on the soldier, and said-

“Look carefully, nya. If that’s the case, then why haven’t the zombies stopped moving, nya?” (Crouch)

Like Crouch said, the monsters which should have been electrocuted by the ground, continued to advance forward as though nothing were happening.

“Wh-why!?” (Evila Soldier)

Naturally, the 『Evila』 soldiers all raised their voices in surprise. However, Eveam had already seen through that mystery and began to speak.

“I see, look my soldiers! All those monsters are species with resistance to lightning!” (Eveam)

The monsters that had appeared were comprised of the Red Mud Golem, which was a monster with a body composed of mud; the Stone Raptor, a monster whose body was clad in stone; and the Voltage Grizzly, a monster which emitted lightning from its body.

Not only that, but amongst them included numerous Rank S monsters and other Unique Monsters. All of them were, like Eveam had said, monsters with resistance to lightning.

“What will you do, nya, Maou-sama? Do you want to try firing a huge magic spell against my troops-nya? If you do nyat, then you’ll destroy the town too-nya?” (Crouch)

Numerous monsters were in the surroundings. If they were to defeat them one by one, it would take up a lot of time, and the chances of their own military troops diminishing were quite high.

However, if they were to use magic that could destroy them all at once, like Crouch had said, there would be a large amount of damage to the town.

“Nyahah, or will you have General Aquinas over there use his demon eye-nya?” (Crouch)

However, Eveam and Aquinas quietly stared back at Crouch.

“Nyahaha, I nyo that you can’t do nyat. The 《Demon Eye》 only works on inanimate objects.....nyight?” (Crouch)

“.....” (Eveam)

“But, those monsters have already died once.....could they possibly be inanimate objects-nya?” (Crouch)

Seeing Crouch laughing as though he had seen through everything, Eveam gritted her teeth.

(It’s true that right now we can’t use Aquinas’s 《Demon Eye》. It’s also true that it only works on inanimate objects. However, right now there is another reason why we can’t use it) (Eveam)

She glanced towards the nearby Aquinas. He had also noticed her glance, but continued to gaze forward. And then, he began to speak without looking at her.

“It can’t be helped. Hime.....no, your Majesty. We have no choice other than to rebuild the town later, you know?” (Aquinas)

Implicitly, he was saying that they should use a wide area offensive magic to attack the entire area here. However, it was clear as day that a good part of the town would be blown away.

Eveam truly, if possible, didn’t want to damage the town too much, but if they continued to hesitate like they were, the chances of their soldiers and citizens becoming injured would increase greatly..

(.....we can always rebuild the town. But the people.....we can’t let their lives be lost!) (Eveam)

Eveam gazed at Aquinas with a stern face. He may have also felt her resolve, as he put down her arm that he had been holding to keep watch over her, and proceeded to walk one step forward. But at that moment,

“So you were over here” (Hiiro)

Walking over using the roofs, was the one and only, Hiiro Okamura.

“Hiiro!?” (Eveam)

Eveam widened her eyes at Hiiro’s presence. The ones who had noticed Hiiro’s presence did not only include those from the side of the 『Evila』.

(.....hmm? Why do I feel like I’ve seen that appearance before-nya.....?) (Crouch)

Actually, Crouch and Hiiro had met once before when Hiiro was still travelling with Arnold and co. He had met Hiiro in a certain cave, and then proceeded to forcefully face him off one-on-one. However, even though Crouch felt that the atmosphere of the Red Robe resembled that person from a few months ago. Yet after seeing that Hiiro who clearly had the 『Imp Form』, he had to neutralize that thought.

As Hiiro had the form of a Beastmen when he had met Crouch, it couldn’t be helped that Crouch himself had such unfathomable feelings.

“Hiiro, why are you here!?” (Eveam)

“Oi, did you forget our contract? There were various discrepancies; but in any case, I have to do any work that is related to the contract” (Hiiro)

“I-I see!” (Eveam)

Eveam happily smiled, but Aquinas looked at Hiiro, who had suddenly appeared.

(.....after this battle has ended, I'll be asking a lot of questions)  
(Aquinas)

Of course, this was not to Hihiro, but to Eveam. While she had secretly and arbitrarily made a contract with such an exceptionally strong individual, there was something about Hihiro's existence itself that attracted his curiosity.

Though it had been the same for Hihiro's magic which had allowed him to instantly appear at the conference location, Aquinas had been unable to hide his surprise at Hihiro's ability to instantly heal the fatally wounded Eveam. More than anything else, a sensation similar to the time he had first seen Judom Lankars was rushing throughout his entire body due to Hihiro's atmosphere.

Even though Hihiro could only be thought to have lived for a little more than ten-odd years, Aquinas couldn't believe that he had already become an existence at the same level as himself. Additionally, someone as strong as himself, was surprised at feeling a bit relieved at the thought of such a strong person being on their side.

(Likely, the contract he spoke of was made using the 《Contract Roll》, but with an attitude that allows him to communicate with the Maou in a way that wouldn't normally be done.....how very interesting) (Aquinas)

Hihiro was simply brazen and arrogant, but unknowing of Aquinas's thoughts, Hihiro continued to gaze over the scene in front of him.

“What a, well, tiresome situation” (Hihiro)

In front of the numerous Beastmen were monsters releasing an intense, rotten smell as they turned their hostility towards Hihiro and co. Seeing that situation, Hihiro made a slightly pensive face, and asked Eveam a question.

“Blowing away this town would be the simplest method but.....”  
(Hihiro)

To Hihiro, that was the simplest method, but as long as he had been

hired, he felt that he should ask prior to fighting.

“Ah, yeah.....it seems like that’s the only way. Aquinas also agreed to that. That’s why, lend me a hand” (Eveam)

Seeing her face warped with bitterness, Hihiro lightly sighed.

“Have you forgotten the contents of our contract?” (Hihiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

“The contract states that I must protect the country. In other words, I have to defend the town and protect it, right? Even so, is it alright to destroy it? Not only that, but for me to do that myself is..” (Hihiro)

Hihiro said thus as though shocked, but Eveam then answered with downcast eyes.

“B-but, unless we do that, the damage will spread even further.....” (Eveam)

“Are you an idiot?” (Hihiro)

“A-a-an IDIOT!?” (Eveam)

Not only Eveam, but even Aquinas was a little taken aback by Hihiro’s way of speaking.

“Wh-what are you talking about, Hihiro! I’m not an idiot!” (Eveam)

She hadn’t noticed that her tone of voice had suddenly changed. But Hihiro ignored that and continued to speak.

“You may not understand what kind of power I have, but” (Hihiro)

“Th-that may be true but.....” (Eveam)

“Then, shouldn’t you first be asking whether or not I can do it?” (Hihiro)

“Eh.....no, but.....c-can you?” (Eveam)

“Of course. Who do you think I am?” (Hiiro)

“.....”

“There is nothing I can’t do!” (Hiiro)

Thrusting out his chest with pride, the words ‘Bam!’ seemed to appear behind him as Hiiro spoke so boastfully.

“A-Aquinas.....?” (Eveam)

As Eveam glanced towards him,

“.....can you do it?” (Aquinas)

He similarly asked Hiiro the same thing.

“I told you, didn’t I? That I would do any work corresponding to the contract” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said that as he looked towards the cluster of monsters. Then, a word set in Hiiro’s arm began to glow. That word was [Flight] / 『飛翔』.

Hiiro began to gently float upwards from his position, and ascended up into the sky. Naturally, seeing a wingless 『Imp Race』 such as Hiiro flying around, anyone would become dumbfounded, causing their jaws to drop in astonishment.

After reaching a certain altitude at which he could see the entire country with a single sweep of his eyes, Hiiro confirmed everything below him.

(The monsters are all.....alright, done checking) (Hiiro)

It appeared that, reflected in his eyes were not only the monsters here, but the monsters raging in other places as well. And once he finished confirming with his eyes where the monsters were, Hiiro began writing a word in midair.

(I’ll be reusing this again, but this would be the most effective) (Hiiro)

[Gravity] / 『引力』 and [Monsters] / 『魔物』

Hihiro then fired those words from his fingertips, and continued to float in midair as he returned to Eveam.

“Wh-what are you doing, Hihiro?” (Eveam)

Unaware, Eveam’s voice had returned to normal as she asked as everyone’s representative.

“It’s fine, so just be quiet and watch. ....invoke 《Word Magic》 ” (Hihiro)

His quietly murmured chant appeared to signal the beginning, as the word floating in the sky began to release an intense light. Although that light was surprising, an even more frightening scene soon began to unfold in front of everyone’s eyes.

Somehow, the monsters that had been heading their way were being sucked in by the light in the sky, one after the other. What was even more surprising was that except for those monsters, no one else was being affected at all.

As though the light was the South pole, and the monsters the North pole of a magnet, the monsters in the country steadily began to rise up into the air. And as the monsters assembled, they gradually began to turn into the shape of a giant sphere.

“Nya, what’s going on, nya!?” (Crouch)

Crouch naturally raised his voice at this abnormal situation that was unfolding before his very eyes.

(It’ll be any time now.....) (Hihiro)

After Hihiro judged that no more monsters would be going into the sky,

“Oi, block your ears” (Hihiro)

“Eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam didn't understand the significance of what Hiiro was saying, but

“Your Majesty, let's do as he says. All of you, cover your ears immediately!” (Aquinas)

As Aquinas said that, Eveam and the soldiers all covered their ears with both hands while tilting their heads.

Then Hiiro concentrated magic into his fingertip and wrote.

[Big Explosion] / 『大爆発』

(The explosive power will be in the air, but will be followed by a large blast wave and a really loud explosive sound) (Hiiro)

Judging what would occur, after sending the word towards the monsters, Hiiro covered his ears. The instant the word came into contact with the monsters, it activated.

Babooom!

A tremendous explosion and blinding light surged out from the sky.

Boom!

Suddenly, an intense wave blasted throughout the country. Trees fell conspicuously, but the buildings somehow managed to withstand the blast force, as they didn't crumble. Even so, those who hadn't been prepared for the blast were sent flying.

“Uuu!” (Eveam)

Eveam also staggered, but Aquinas placed his hand on her back and supported her.

“S-sorry about that, Aquinas” (Eveam)

“No problem.....” (Aquinas)

However, his eyes were aimed towards the skies. As Eveam similarly directed her eyes there, various things, having been turned



into ash-like substances, began to pour down.

It was understandable that those were likely what remained of the monsters. However, thinking that the explosive temperature had simply been that high, it involuntarily sent a chill down one's spine.

And Aquinas looked at Hihiro, who had done that.

(It seems that Hime has contracted with a frightening boy)  
(Aquinas)

Hihiro had so easily accomplished what Aquinas himself had been incapable of doing. And Hihiro, unaware of Aquinas's feelings, quietly muttered.

“Alright, extermination complete” (Hihiro)

## Chapter 126: Hiiro vs. Crouch

Crouch was at a loss for words as he froze. Actually, he was wondering if what had just occurred was a dream or not, as he dazedly watched the remnants of the monsters rain down.

However, the beastman soldiers were in a similar state. It was completely unexpected that the monsters which one of their respected 《Three Warriors》, Crouch, had summoned would be killed off so quickly.

And at the same time, everyone motionlessly stared at the person who had done that.

Hiiro, who had noticed their gazes, said-

“All that’s left are the beastmen, huh” (Hiiro)

He said it as though it would be as simple as pie. But of course. Amongst the monsters, there had been both Unique monsters, as well as S-rank monsters. Not only that, but their numbers had been enormous. Yet he had erased them in a single moment.

It couldn’t be helped that anyone would find what Hiiro had done to be ominous and thus instilled fear in everyone that was present. All of the beastmen soldiers then glanced towards Crouch.

“Cr-Crouch-sama!” (Soldier 1)

“Wh-what should we do!” (Soldier 2)

“Please give us some orders!” (Soldier 3)

They truly were voices raised in dependence upon him. As he took a large breath, he glared at Hiiro with a ferocious look.

“Just nyat have you done-nya? The pawns that I had taken great pains to acquire for the war have all basically disappeared-nya” (Crouch)

“That’s too bad. This is also part of my job....hm?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro looked at Crouch in front of him for the first time, and had a sense of déjà vu.

(.....oh? I’ve seen this guy somewhere before.....ah, I remember now. It’s that Nyanko-guy that appeared in the cave near 【Passion】 ! ) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, anger began rushing out from within him.

“Oi, Nyanko-guy. How dare you steal away my snake that one time” (Hiiro)

“That one time? Snake? Nyat are you talking about-nya?” (Crouch)

“Don’t play dumb! Didn’t you steal away the Clay Viper I had taken down in the 【Gree Caves】 !” (Hiiro)

More accurately, the one who took it down was Arnold, while Hiiro had simply been giving out orders.

“ 【Gree Caves】 ? Hm~.....nya!? Nyow that you mention it, something like that did happen-nya!” (Crouch)

Crouch clapped his hands together as he remembered.

“You stole it away before I could extract a proof of its subjugation. It’s your fault that I got shouted at by Ossan!” (Hiiro)

That’s right. Though he hadn’t particularly been trying to hide it, after finding out, Arnold had reprimanded him for not telling them earlier.

“Nyat’s true. I did take a Clay Viper, nya.....but it has nyothing to do with nyou” (Crouch)

“Haah?” (Hiiro)

“Because-nya. You’re nyot Tarou-nya” (Crouch)

“Tarou? What are you talking.....ah” (Hiiro)

Hihiro suddenly remembered. At that time, he had given the troublesome-looking guy a fake name. And if he recalled properly, Crouch had told him to become his subordinate, which is why Hihiro had to give Crouch his name at the time.

Naturally, he gave a fake name, and had told him his name was Tanaka Tarou.

“Just now they called you Hihiro-nya. That’s why, even if you seem like him, you’re different-nya” (Crouch)

Hihiro unintentionally tapped his temple with his finger and leaked out a sigh. Leaving aside his name, he had forgotten that he currently had the appearance of an 『Evila』. But returning to his beastman form seemed stupid, so he decided to just go with the flow of things.

“In any case, I’m gonna send you flying. I’ll be returning the favour from that time too, Nyanko-guy!” (Hihiro)

“Nya nya nya? I’m also angry at you-nya!” (Crouch)

“You don’t say? Be prepared” (Hihiro)

Hihiro flew into the sky as he approached Crouch.

“Oi Maou! You guys do something about the other beastmen! I’ve got business with this one!” (Hihiro)

Hearing Hihiro’s shout,

“G-got it! Aquinas!” (Eveam)

“Umu, all of you, seize them!” (Aquinas)

At Aquinas’s incitation, the soldier’s morale rose to the highest level. Thanks to Hihiro’s actions, the beastmen’s morale had fallen while the morale of the 『Evila』 had risen. As a result, the beastmen were at a clear disadvantage.

Not only that, but because of the sound of the explosion, the beastmen with good hearing had received damage and had

difficulty moving. With the 『Evila』's fierce attack, beastmen were defeated and captured in succession.

“Will this suffice, your Majesty?” (Aquinas)

“Yes, we can kill them whenever we want. So if capturing them is possible, then that takes priority” (Eveam)

While Aquinas thought that Eveam was naïve after all, his gaze flew over towards the battle between Hihiro and Crouch that was about to begin.

Hihiro lowered his hips and drew his katana. This was the katana that was once called the 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》. Its form resembled that of a Japanese katana, and its blade had a transparent, ice-like clear colour.

However, currently its name had changed to 《Severing Sword – Slasher》. Its blade was clear like 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》, but both sides of the blade had a red streak zig-zagging down the blade from the hilt to its tip.

When attacking an opponent clad in magic power, this 《Severing Sword – Slasher》 was capable of attacking the opponent's magic power itself. This would lead to the opponent becoming intoxicated by magic power, muddling their consciousness. Naturally, this would not have much of an effect on those with a high degree of control over their magic power. However, it was possible to knock those bad at controlling their magic power unconscious in a single moment.

There were already beastmen who had fainted instantly due to the power of this katana after being attacked by Hihiro.

This sword had been created by a certain person. However, at that time, they had remade it by merging it together with the blade from the 《Thorn Sword – Piercer》, so naturally it still contained its specialized ability in piercing. Not only that, but as this katana had been made with emphasis on its slicing ability, it truly could be called an all-purpose sword upon being reborn.

“Nyahaha, I’m shivering with excitement-nya” (Crouch)

Crouch felt Hiiro’s extraordinary atmosphere and involuntarily let a smile escape.

“No matter where I go, beastmen battle junkies are plentiful, huh” (Hiiro)

“Nyat are you saying-nya. Even nyou have trained in order to become stronger, nyright?” (Crouch)

“I won’t deny that.” (Hiiro)

“Nyen, in order to confirm your strength, nyon’t you have to find suitable opponents to compare nyour strength with-nya?” (Crouch)

“.....well, you have a point there” (Hiiro)

“Nyen, why don’t we enjoy this fight for a while-nya!” (Crouch)

Crouch was intending on using his tremendous speed to toy with Hiiro. Previously, this speed was capable of drawing out Hiiro’s spirit, but now, things were different.

And Crouch also realized that Hiiro was certainly capable of following his movements with his eyes.

“Then why don’t I raise it up a gear-nya!” (Crouch)

In an instant, Crouch’s speed rose another level. Hiiro had confirmed Crouch’s 《Status》 prior to fighting. While Hiiro’s level had clearly been higher, only Crouch’s AGL, or his speed, had surpassed that of Hiiro’s.

(He’s a beastman specializing in speed. I guess that’s to be expected of a black panther) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro’s eyeballs moved busily, they followed Crouch. And then, the surrounding people felt some wind pressure. In the midst of it was Crouch’s right arm and Hiiro’s katana clashing together.

The low-levelled ones were unable to see when the two clashed,

but Crouch had approached from Hiiro's rear, while Hiiro had simply dealt with him accordingly by defending. However, it had all occurred so fast that there were many who had missed it.

“.....your hands are strange as usual” (Hiiro)

“Nyahaha! You responded well-nya!” (Crouch)

Hiiro's doubts were quite natural. It was the same in the past too, but even though Hiiro was using a katana while Crouch used his bare hands, there wasn't a single sign of his hands getting cut. On the contrary, it felt like a wooden sword clashing against a clay wall.

As Hiiro kicked his leg upwards towards Crouch's arm, he continued to rotate his body and cut down Crouch horizontally. However, by that time, Crouch's figure had already disappeared.

“Che, he's a quick guy, isn't he” (Hiiro)

Before Hiiro had realized it, Crouch's presence had disappeared. He was likely peeking at Hiiro while remaining hidden in the shadows of the nearby buildings, but his appearance was truly like that of a carnivore hunting down its prey.

“Unfortunately, that strategy won't work against me” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro muttered so, Crouch did not react. However, Hiiro had not said that while anticipating any reaction. He honestly was just saying that it wouldn't work because it really wouldn't work. The reason being that.....

[Find Enemy] / 『索敵』

Instantly, the written word activated. As it did so, the location of Hiiro's enemy directly entered into his head. He then quickly wrote the word [Extend] / 『伸』 onto his sword's blade, and directed the blade towards his opponent as it extended.

“Nya!?” (Crouch)

As it pierced through the building, the blade attacked Crouch, who

had been hiding behind it. Crouch barely dodged it, but even so, his face was warped in surprise.

Hihiro wrote the word [Origin] / 『元』 on the sword's blade, and smirked as it returned to normal.

“Like I said, right? Your stealth abilities won't work against me”  
(Hihiro)

“Uu~ nya~” (Crouch)

Crouch gritted his teeth as though mortified, and stomped his feet against the ground numerous times.

“How did you know-nya?” (Crouch)

“Did you think I'd answer that?” (Hihiro)

“.....nyen, this time I'll be serious-nya” (Crouch)

“Hurry up and come at me seriously, Nyanko-guy” (Hihiro)

Crouch placed both hands on the ground. A black shadow which then appeared there sped towards Hihiro. Hihiro reflexively flew in order to avoid it, but-

“It's futile-nya!” (Crouch)

From the shadow, a black tentacle-like thing extended and twisted around Hihiro's body.

“Hihiro!” (Eveam)

Seeing that, the Maou Eveam raised her voice. In an instant, the captured Hihiro was ruthlessly dragged into the shadow just like that.

“Hiirooooooooo!” (Eveam)

As Eveam screamed bitterly, Crouch smiled as though his victory was decided.

“With this it's over-nya. My 《Binding》 is darkness, nya. This



《Shadow Prison》is a handy ability capable of storing away anything-nya. However, inside of it, there isn't any oxygen-nya" (Crouch)

"Th-that sort of!" (Eveam)

In that sort of situation, Hihiro wouldn't be able to breathe, and would die.

"However, nya, inside it are the monsters I haven't released yet-nya. There's only 5 of them, nyut they're all Rank-SS monsters, with one Rank-SSS-nya" (Crouch)

"No.....way!" (Eveam)

If that truly was the case, then Hihiro would have to single-handedly face off against 5 vicious monsters. To make things worse, he had to face them without being able to breathe.

"Aquinas, save Hihiro right now!" (Eveam)

"Wait" (Aquinas)

"Why! At this rate, Hihiro will-!" (Eveam)

As Aquinas appeared like he didn't understand the current predicament one bit, Eveam unintentionally yelled. However, his eyes were currently focused on the shrunken shadow at Crouch's feet.

"Aquinas....?" (Eveam)

"Your Majesty, if it's him, then he'll be fine. So long as he can use magic within there.....right" (Aquinas)

At those words, Eveam's gaze also fell to the shadow with realization.

"Nyahaha! I don't know nyat you're expecting, but once you've entered it, you can't exit without my approval, nya.....guh.....!?" (Crouch)

Everyone's eyes widened at the scene. It was only natural. Because from the shadow that stretched out at Crouch's feet, an arm had appeared. The katana that the arm was holding was currently piercing through Crouch's chest.

"Nya.....nyat.....ha-....." (Crouch)

Bushuu!

As the katana was vigorously pulled out, blood spurted from the wound. And as Crouch unsteadily staggered while looking behind him, there-

"Whup" (Hiiro)

-completely unharmed, Hiiro had reappeared.

## Chapter 127: Lightning and Darkness

Although Hiiro, who was imprisoned by Crouch's 《Shadow Prison》, was surprised at the tentacle that had suddenly appeared from the shadows, after being dragged into the shadows, he was relatively calm.

(I can't breathe.....huh. On the other hand.....) (Hiiro)

His eyes were gradually adjusting enough to see the figures of gigantic wriggling shadows in the surroundings.

(.....I won't be able to hold my breath long enough to face them.....huh?) (Hiiro)

Judging from their appearances, they seemed to be monsters of considerably high level. Not only that, but there were 5 of them. Amongst them, the one that appeared to be the most dangerous was an enormous creature hiding in the innermost area.

In reality, Hiiro figured that if he used his 《Word Magic》, and had the time to go one-on-one with them, he could defeat them. However, the current situation where he had to face five at once while being unable to breathe was honestly rather severe.

Hiiro glanced at his surroundings again. The area was big enough that he couldn't see the end of it. Hiiro nodded in understanding as he realized that this was how Crouch had been able to collect a large number of monsters. In addition, he came to understand why they could only use zombified bodies alone.

It was thanks to the fact that they did not breathe, as normal living creatures would be unable to stay in this space for very long.

(There doesn't seem to be an exit but.....) (Hiiro)

Hiiro kept his distance from the monsters that were gradually approaching him as his face relaxed.

(He was most likely planning to lock me in here and suffocate me

to death) (Hiiro)

A bluish-white light trail appeared within the darkness as he swiftly moved his finger.

[Escape] / 『脱出』

In reaction to that light, the monsters started to grow hostile as the atmosphere rippled with the monster's roars.

(Like I could fight in such a troublesome place) (Hiiro)

The moment the word activated, he saw a ring of light in the air just above him. Hiiro sensed that it meant he could exit by passing through the ring.

By the time the monsters were aware of him and finally began approaching, they were already too late. Hiiro tightly grasped his katana and thrust it through the ring of light.

“Hiiro!?” (Eveam)

Although Eveam had raised her voice, Hiiro felt that he had to do something about the enemy who was kneeling in front of him while clutching his chest, rather than answering her.

When Hiiro escaped, Crouch should have received a considerable amount of damage from the katana piercing through him. Even so, Crouch's fighting spirit did not dull one bit.

“Ku.....how.....nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch had absolute confidence in his 《Shadow Prison》, so it would only be natural for him to be bothered by the fact that Hiiro had escaped from it. More so, in such a short amount of time.

“I am not obligated to answer. Hurry up and fall over!” (Hiiro)

Hiiro brandished his katana and swung at Crouch. When suddenly, the shadow beneath his feet swelled up and protected the Black Panther from the katana.

“.....shadows again, huh” (Hiiro)

Hiiro felt the current sensation was similar to when he had exchanged blows with Crouch earlier. Then, Hiiro leapt backwards to make some distance and gazed at the swirling shadows, observing them.

“I see, I thought that you were taking on my katana with your bare hands, but you.....were covered in those shadows, weren’t you?” (Hiiro)

As he said this, the corners of the kneeling Crouch’s mouth rose up into a grin. Then, the shadows began to concentrate on Crouch’s wounds as if they were being sucked in.

“Gu.....gah!” (Crouch)

Doing that probably caused him some intense pain, as Crouch began to groan while gritting his teeth. Gradually, the shadows began to flicker around his body, as if he was covered in black flames. However, Hiiro rapidly closed the gap between them.

“Sorry, but I’m not so polite as to leave you alone during your transformation scene” (Hiiro)

Hiiro believed that things like that should be left in animes alone, as there was nothing easier than taking down a stationary opponent. As he closed the distance between them, Hiiro used his momentum and stabbed with his katana.

This time, Crouch was not able to dodge or defend against it, and Hiiro easily pierced through Crouch’s body. Although Hiiro thought that he had finished him now, by piercing through Crouch’s chest twice, Crouch was firmly grabbing onto the blade.

Then, he raised his face and smiled.

“How unfortunate-nya. I’m already done transforming-nya” (Crouch)

“Che!” (Hiiro)

Hihiro immediately fired off a kick, but astonishingly, that kick easily sunk into Crouch's body and his leg stopped in the centre of Crouch's body.

“Wha!?” (Hihiro)

Hihiro was not the only one, as everyone besides the Beastmen raised their voices in surprise. No, even amongst the 『Evila』, only Eveam and Aquinas alone acted as though it was as expected and that they were used to seeing it.

Eveam then opened her mouth with a grim expression.

“So he could use it after all..... 《Transformation》 was it?” (Eveam)

“Yeah, the Beastmen who originally couldn't use magic developed the 《Binding》. The peak point of that technique is when they become magic itself” (Aquinas)

“A body made of magic itself. That means becoming an identical existence to 『Spirits』. It is a technique made possible simply because the 『Gabranth』 are existences close to 『Spirits』.” (Eveam)

“However, controlling the skill 《Transformation》 is difficult. Normally, doing a 《Transformation》 on one part of the body alone is the limit. As to be expected from one of the 《Three Warriors》. He can do it for his entire body.” (Aquinas)

“Hihiro! Be careful! Normal physical attacks won't work on that one!” (Eveam)

When Eveam's words reached Hihiro, he immediately attempted to pull out his leg, but it was stuck firmly.

“I won't let you escape-nya” (Crouch)

As Crouch said that, the shadow from Crouch's body began spreading up Hihiro's leg.

“This is revenge for earlier-nya” (Crouch)

Crouch was planning to wrap Hiiro's body in the shadow and strangle him to death. But,

Bachibachibachibachibachi!

Electricity suddenly began to surge out from Hiiro's body.

“Gugah!?” (Crouch)

Unable to withstand the immense electrical power, Crouch withdrew. After putting some distance between Hiiro and himself, his expression stiffened from seeing the changes in Hiiro's appearance.

Bachibachi.....bachiii!

Electricity was discharging from Hiiro's body, discharging into the surroundings. Crouch knew that it was not simply magic.

(Magic.....? No, this feeling is.....no, no that's impossible-nya! Nyai is this.....!?) (Crouch)

Crouch denied the thought, thinking that it was impossible, but seeing Hiiro right in front of him, he was unable to wipe it away.

The reason being that Hiiro.....

“How is it? It's a similar body to your own” (Hiiro)

Everyone in the area gazed at his body, which appeared to be made of bluish-white plasma.

[Thunder Conversion] / 『雷化』

That was the true form of the word that Hiiro had written.

(According to the word itself, the body will become lightning, but only for a short amount of time. I should settle this quickly!) (Hiiro)

In reality, the word's effects would last for 3 minutes, and once it had been spent, a cool-down period would have to pass before he could use another word with similar effects. That was why he had

to end this quickly.

As Crouch could not understand exactly who the person in front of him was, he fell into confusion. Magic that gathered the monsters into the air and exterminated them, the ability to easily find someone when they had completely erased their presence and attack them by extending his katana, the method of escaping from the 《Shadow Prison》, and Hiiro's current appearance.

They were all covered with mysteries, and were all abilities worthy of being feared.

(That is definitely the same as my 《Dark Night Transformation》 -nya.....) (Crouch)

Even when he thought about it, there was nothing he could do. Everyone else didn't know this, but it was also rather difficult for Crouch to maintain his 《Dark Night Transformation》 for long periods of time. Additionally, it wasn't like he had completely recovered from the damage he received earlier either.

That was exactly why he too desired a quick decisive battle as well.

Crouch extended a tentacle-like shadow from his body and thrust it like a spear. Hiiro similarly discharged electricity, and created numerous arrow-shaped figures.

Dodododododododo!

Their attacks collided, and the impact spread out into the surroundings. To avoid being caught in the battle, the people nearby were screaming while moving away.

During the attack, Crouch jumped into the air, gambling on the outcome of the match. Hiiro dispersed the smoke caused by their attacks, and feeling the killing intent from the sky, he looked upwards.

There stood.....10 shadow clones of Crouch.

“This is the end-nya! I'll use my max speed for the finishing blow-nya! Take this-nya! 《The Black Assault of the 10 Follies》 !!!!”



(Crouch)

The ten shadows descended from the sky with a speed incomparable to before, making it impossible to differentiate one from another and to pick them off one-by-one.

Seeing that, Hiiro leaked out a small sigh.

“You’re quite the guy. If it wasn’t me, then that attack probably would’ve hit” (Hiiro)

As he said that, he once again created 10 lightning arrows in the air. Hiiro then aimed and fired those arrows at the incoming Crouch.

“There’s no way such a slow attack would reach mye-nya!” (Crouch)

Crouch swiftly moved as if he were kicking the air. As he looked at the arrows approaching in front of him, he nimbly side-stepped to avoid them, easily evading them. The moment he thought that-

Stab!

“.....eh?” (Crouch)

Before he had knew it, the lightning arrows had stabbed into his abdomen. Then, the words, [Lock-On]/ 『必中』, were floating at Hiiro’s fingertips.

Stab stab stab stab stab stab stab stab stab stab!

The other 9 bodies of Crouch were also pierced through without a single wasted arrow.

Bachibachibachibachibachiiiiii!

Suddenly, a violent electrical discharge came from the arrows, robbing the freedom of Crouch over his body.

“Nyabababbababababa!?” (Crouch)

Crouch noisily plummeted from the sky towards the ground. And just as he thought the other 9 bodies had come to a halt, they simply turned back into shadows and returned to the main body. It seemed that his body which had undergone the 《Transformation》 was returned to normal, as his electrocuted body was twitching madly.

Shwing.....

Hihiro had thrust his katana at Crouch's neck.

## Chapter 128: How To Deal With Zombies

"You're the ones who started this War. Shouldn't you have been prepared for this outcome?"(Hiiro)

Hiiro looked down on Crouch with cold eyes.

"Kuh... Nyahaha... Can't help it, nya.... I was the weaker one... Nya." (Crouch)

In this situation where you would normally tremble in fear, Crouch was smiling happily. Seeing that, Hiiro felt like sighing again.

"You aren't planning on saying something like 'I don't want to die', are you?"(Hiiro)

"Nyahaha, I won't say anything(anything) that boring, nya." (Crouch)

"Hou, you've sure got guts. As expected of a Battle Junkie." (Hiiro)

"But, remember this, nya." (Crouch)

"Hmm?" (Hiiro)

"I may have lost this time, but if I'm given another, I will certainly win, nya!" (Crouch)

It was shocking how much of a battle maniac Crouch was. As those seemed to be Crouch's last words, Hiiro slowly raised his sword over his head and swung it down immediately.

"Hiiro, wait!" (???)

It was Eveam's voice that brought Hiiro's sword to a halt. Hiiro responded to Eveam, who closed in on them at some point, with a stare.

"What are you doing?" (Hiiro)

"I won't allow you to kill him." (Eveam)

“.....and the reason being?” (Hiiro)

“I don’t want to kill!” (Eveam)

“..... It’s evident that he has been killing 『Evila』 . Even so, you aren’t going to avenge them? Do you really believe that the others would agree with this?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro’s piercing gaze struck Eveam; Eveam stared back without giving in to the pressure.

“He has certainly hurt my family before, and it may be the same now. However, I don’t believe killing him will get us anywhere.” (Eveam)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“Others might not be alright with this. But, I still won’t kill him. At least for now.” (Eveam)

“For now?” (Hiiro)

“Yes, he is even one of the 《Three warriors》 , individuals who have top class abilities among beastmen. If we can use him well-” (Eveam)

“ Negotiating with them... that’s what you’re after?” (Hiiro)

“Yes.” (Eveam)

“.....Well, I’m just the hired hand here. If you say so then so be it. Just remember, after this I have no responsibility even if he starts to rage around, okay?” (Hiiro)

“Thank you.” (Eveam)

Hiiro shrugged his shoulders in amazement and sheathed his sword. However, at that moment, Crouch’s mocking laughter resounded.

“Nyahaha, nyaive (naive). You are too nyaive, Demon Lord. My life’s worth is the same as that of a dead beastman from the

moment I was caught by the enemy. And it isn't just me, all soldiers of 【Passion】 are the same. That is how we are taught to attack, nya. Do you get what I'm implying, nya? I have no value as a hostage, nya.” (Crouch)

In contrast to what he said, not only Eveam but Aquinas also smirked.

“That might be so if it was only your life we were speaking of. However, what if we add the prince's life into the mix.... well?” (Eveam)

“... What, nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch's smile instantly stiffened.

“The second prince Lenion has also come to this land, right? I have confirmation. So, as a priority to capture him, we have sent three of our strongest to face him.” (Eveam)

“Y-you can't mean!?” (Crouch)

“Even if the second prince has an ample amount of combat experience, I wonder how long he would last facing off with three of the 《Cruel》?” (Eveam)

Crouch's expression was completely different from a while ago, turning completely pale.

“I won't let you do that, nya! In that case...!” (Crouch)

Crouch shouted that and his shadow immediately expanded.

“Come out, nya! My strongest servants!” (Crouch)

After that, from the shadow-

Zuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuzuu.....

Five creatures appeared from the shadow.

“Nyaha...ha... I wanted to summon them... when I had more to

spare... Nya...” (Crouch)

Suddenly, the black fur covering Crouch’s body turned pure white, and then he immediately fell to the ground. It seems there is risk involved in summoning monsters.

(The skill probably uses vitality as its power source. Still, he went and did something troublesome again. Moreover, one of those creatures... It’s like that after all.) (Hiiro)

Among the five monsters, one of them was a massive three headed creature that was releasing an extraordinary aura. Of course, similar to the other monsters, this monster had a rotten body as well, it can be understood that even a simple glare from it will immobilize most people in fear.

Just from looking at the monsters, that were so huge they could crush buildings with just by taking a single step, everyone grew stiff from astonishment.

“I never thought... he would summon this kind of monster...” (Eveam)

Eveam said that with an expression like she couldn’t believe what was happening.

”What do you mean? Is that monster famous?” (Hiiro)

Eveam nodded slightly in response to Hiiro’s question.

“Yes, its name is Cerberus. Even in demon world there is nothing like it.” (Eveam)

So it’s Cerberus after all, Hiiro thought in his mind. Even in Japan there are many who know about it.

In Greek mythology, it’s the watchdog of the entrance to the realm of the dead. It is pictured with three heads and snake as a tail, sometimes with addition of numerous snakeheads sprouting from its head and body.

《Guard dog of the netherworld, Cerberus》, Hiiro only knew what

he had read in books about it. However, its appearance was identical to the one he knew of.

As a monster belonging to the highest rank in 【Edea】 , SSS, it's a feared existence. A legendary class monster; even if you were level 100 or higher, you were still going to get absolutely trashed for challenging it alone.

“How can we deal with Cerberus...” (Eveam)

Eveam saw this as a huge issue just from that monster alone, but it wasn't just Cerberus, there were four others as well, and all of them were rank SS monsters.

This was a situation where she had to put protection of the country as the highest priority. Eveam sent a hateful glare to Crouch, who had summoned the monsters, but immediately redirected her gaze to her subordinates and said:

“Seize him and throw him in jail!” (Eveam)

The subordinate soldiers responded, restrained Crouch and carried him away. Then, she returned her gaze to the monsters.

“Ku! Aquinas, since it's come to this, gather up everyone and stop them together.” (Eveam)

“Is that fine? If we seriously fight against such huge monsters, the area will be devastated.” (Aquinas)

“Uh... But, even though I agree with what you said, if we leave them be, the damage will only increase!” (Eveam)

This was why Hiroyuki thought of finishing Crouch before something like this happened; however, there was nothing more for him to do about it anymore. he looked around the city like it was someone else's problem.

And Hiroyuki coincidentally remembered something. If he was not mistaken, something that Hiroyuki deeply desired was near here..

And that is the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 . Realizing this, Hiroyuki's

face became stiff.

(Wait a minute, if they start wreaking havoc around here, my precious treasury of knowledge will....) (Hiiro)

In Hiiro's mind, he saw the library being crushed. The books ripped apart and enveloped in flames..... He didn't want to imagine any further.

It was necessary for him to immediately take matters into his own hands.

"Wait a minute" (Hiiro)

Hiiro joins the conversation of the two.

"W-what is it, Hiiro?" (Eveam)

"This is no time to sit idle. If the **【Fortuna Grand Library】** gets destroyed by the monsters, I cannot overlook this." (Hiiro)

When Eveam saw Hiiro complaining, she pointed at Cerberus.

"Eh? Library? Ah, but, just look at that monster! As a zombie it may be slow, but it's still a creature with enough attack power to blow away a building with a single sweep of its paw! It'll take time to figure out how we can deal with it!" (Eveam)

"That won't be necessary." (Hiiro)

"...Huh?" (Eveam)

As Hiiro was openly brimming with confidence, Eveam instinctively dropped her jaw.

"I'll confirm it again, that thing is a zombie, right?" (Hiiro)

"Eh... Yes, it is but... what about it?" (Eveam)

As Eveam tilted her head without understanding why would he confirm that right now, Aquinas interrupted them.

"...Can you do it?" (Aquinas)



“Ah? As this is originally the demon lord’s fault, I was planning to leave this matter here, but the circumstances have changed.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro had to make a move for the books he had yet to read. To Hiiro’s words, Eveam asked:

“R-really?” (Eveam)

“Well, fighting them might have taken a lot longer if they weren’t zombies, but fortunately they are.” (Hiiro)

Then, Hiiro channeled a tremendous amount of magical energy to both of his index fingers. Eveam’s group, who felt it, instinctively backed off while fixing their eyes on Hiiro’s fingers.

What appeared was a light blue luminescent trail; it wavered like a small flame, swaying back and forth. As he moved his fingers, the light followed along the path.

Then, Hiiro felt a sudden incompatibility in his finger movement.

(Nh? As expected, writing this character is going to take a bit longer.) (Hiiro)

He could not move his finger any faster. What he was about to write would cause rapid changes, and it had a restriction that being it had to be applied directly on the body. The restriction was the same as when he had used 『Sleep』 | 『眠』 against the Red Boar.

But that wasn’t the only thing, the difference between Hiiro’s and the enemy’s level was also affecting it. If the monster was much weaker, he should have been able to write it more smoothly.

“Oi... You, red hair over there, keep that thing occupied so it won’t move from there.” (Hiiro)

“...Very well.” (Aquinas)

Hiiro self-importantly gave orders to Aquinas, but he didn’t get angry at Hiiro and intended to do what Hiiro said. Aquinas was already convinced that Hiiro was acting for their benefit. And, if it was Hiiro, Aquinas believed he would be able to do something

about this.

Aquinas took a step forward, and-

“Your Majesty, the town is going to be damaged a bit, but forgive me.” (Aquinas)

“Ah, okay, do it!” (Eveam)

Aquinas raised one hand towards the sky. With that the atmosphere trembled, even Hiiro’s eyes grew wide at the magic power surging towards the sky.

“Manifest in my origin, 《Third Sword – Binding Huge Sword: Disintegrator》” (Aquinas)

The moment he finished the chant, the clouds scattered, and a sword so huge, a person would be unable to wield it appeared. Moreover, there were five of them in total.

“Their numbers are perfect. Even for me, manifesting five of these swords is the limit.” (Aquinas)

The gigantic swords pierced the five demons with staggering force. Each making one of their monsters groan; however, since they were already dead, they did not feel pain. They only groaned from being unable to move.

“Hiiro, is this okay for what you had in mind?” (Aquinas)

Hiiro clicked his tongue upon seeing Aquinas face him, after nonchalantly leaving enormous magics in effect.

(Oi oi, even if I didn’t step in, couldn’t he have dealt with this problem alone?) (Hiiro)

While Hiiro thought that, he gazed at the monsters that were skewered into the ground by the gigantic swords. The ground was gradually being destroyed as the monsters were desperately trying to struggle free. There were also huge cracks from the gigantic swords stabbing into the ground.

(Well, there's some damage to the town...) (Hiiro)

That was the cause for Aquinas's hesitation. His magic is powerful; however, such powerful magic causes the surroundings to get afflicted too. It mainly causes destruction.

"If you are about to do something, do it already. They aren't going to wait for long." (Aquinas)

Cracks were beginning to form on the sword that was stuck into Cerberus. And from around the other monsters as well, although not to the extent of Cerberus, came the sounds of the swords reaching their limits.

"H-Hihiro, can you do it?" (Eveam)

As Hihiro was still silent, Eveam asked in worry. Hihiro lightly nodded back to her.

"Yes, that's enough. I just completed it." (Hihiro)

Then Hihiro showed both hands' fingertips towards them. Eveam and the others who saw this did not understand what he was trying to show them.

『Purification』 | 『浄化』 and 『Area』 | 『空間』.

Those were the words Hihiro wrote. And then he moved into the middle of the five monsters and activated the words.

Paaaaaaaaaaaaa!

The area got covered in dazzling light with Hihiro being in the center of it. The amount of luminescence caused even the 『Evila』 to grimace. There were some of them in the midst of it, feeling sick; however, as it wasn't lethal to them, Hihiro continued.

The light gradually extended into a hemisphere, stopping at a radius of 100 meters. The bodies of the monsters inside it began to change.

Their bodies started to fall apart like a worn out clay wall. Eveam

was completely still, watching the spectacle as if she had forgotten how to talk. Even Aquinas showed his surprise by knitting his eyebrows.

In no time the Rank SS monsters became bare bones and lay asunder on the ground. Only the Cerberus remained.

“It would have been nice to fight normally, but there is the request to protect the country. So I had to take the easy way out of this.” (Hiiro)

As he said that, the Cerberus finally lost two of its heads. The last remaining head groaned out of pain while it fell to its knees.

“Becoming zombies sure has backfired. Well, they were out of luck the moment beastmen caught them.” (Hiiro)

“Gigii...Gaga...” (Cerberus)”

“...See ya, 《Guard Dog of Netherworld》” (Hiiro)

And then, Crouch’s last resort once again fell to pieces thanks to Hiiro’s sudden appearance.

Looking around, almost all soldiers were uninjured, and the damage was minimal. The one who succeeded in that was a single hire.

It was definitely an overwhelming victory.

## Chapter 129: Cruel Vs Second Prince of Gabranth

The Evila army had finally subdued the Gabranth army. Their commander, Crouch had also been defeated single-handedly. In addition, the terror of the zombie outbreak had also passed.

Although the Evila were highly pleased with their triumphant battle in this warzone, Gabranth soldiers and Humas soldiers were still raging in other places of Evila. Eveam invigorated the other soldiers as she instructed them to those nearby.

At that moment, there were only three people left, Eveam, Hiiro, and Aquinas.

“Hey Maou, take this.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro took out a piece of paper and tossed it to Eveam.

“What is this?” (Eveam)

“I was asked by the muscle-man to hand this over to you.” (Hiiro)

“Muscle...man? ...Oh, it is from Judom-dono right? Is it the report that Teckil handed to Judom through the adventurers ?” (Eveam)

She quickly recieved and read the the letter. Her face paled with each character she read. When she was done, her body shook a bit and she wiped a bead of sweat from her forehead.

Aquinas was worried about the contents so he took a look at the letter carefully when it was passed to him.

“.....I see that is what happened” (Aquinas)

His voice was soft but heavy. It was clear that something unexpected was written in that letter.

---

A moment before Hiroyuki defeated Crouch, the second prince of the [Gabranth Kingdom: Passion], Lenon was in a bad predicament.

When the attack was planned out, the Gabranth were to attack the [Evilia Capital: Chaos] while the Humas diverted Evilia's attention.

For that purpose, the Gabranth King Leowald and his elder brother Leglos had gone to the conference to face the Demon Lord. One of the Three Warrior Saints requested to follow them but was rejected by Leowald since the Demon Lord's 『Cruel』 were also present in the conference.

Although it was important to defeat the Demon Lord, Leowald said that capturing Chaos had a much higher priority. As a matter of fact, he was told that the Demon Lord and her group would not be able to leave the 《Sacred Room》 for 24 hours, and would not be able to take part in the battle. Following orders, Leowald was to standby, and should anything out of the ordinary happen he would stop it with all his power.

However, Lenon, who had inherited his father, Leowald's nature wanted to subjugate the Demon Lord who appeared 24 hours later by his own hands. Due to the previous incident, he was angry for being dishonoured by the Demon Lord.

What's more, Aquinas who was regarded as the strongest was present in that place and so Lenon believed it to be a real chance to fight against Aquinas. Rather, this was his intent all along, as he had inherited his father's nature of wanting to fight with a strong person.

At that moment, something completely out of place happened. Before his eye were three Cruel veterans who were supposed to be at the meeting.

“Damn!” (Lenon)

He clicked his tongue as he looked around him. The Evila had defeated his troops and now standing right before him were three of the strongest members of Cruel.

(I need to prepare myself...or else) (Lenon)

But Lenon, instead of being irritated, his face showed a glint of smile. As one would expect from the person who inherited the blood from Leowald. Even though he was in such a dire predicament, with his pride he could never show his back to the enemy.

“I see, it seems like you are not planning to surrender” (Shublarz)

Cruel 《Rank 5》, Shublarz stared at Lenon with her hands on her hips. As ordered by Eveam, she was to capture the second prince. If she succeeded, the war would move in an advantageous direction, and negotiations would be easier.

However, Shublarz was impressed that Lenon’s fighting spirit didn’t waver in the face of such adversity.

“Hmph, I single handedly can take down this guy“ (Marione)

Cruel 《Rank 2》 Marione said in an unpleasant voice

“Right, but, the Demon Lord ordered us to capture him. You are not going to disobey her are you? If you were alone, you would have killed every one here without holding back. There would be no way for us to capture anyone.” (Shublarz)

“Damn” (Marione)

Shublarz open his mouth to try and say something. But at that moment, the person who spoke was Cruel Rank 4,Ornoth

She does have a point, he thought as he crossed his arm without arguing back. But at that moment, the person who spoke was Cruel 《Rank 4》, Ornoth.

“Prince Lenon, let us take you into custody” (Ornoth)

Lenon opened his mouth and said,

“Heh, if you can, then do it! This Lenon-sama will not go down that easily!” (Lenon)

Lenon took out his sword and raised it into the air, at that moment wind started to gather around the sword creating a small tornado. He gripped the sword with both hands and swung it at the three before him.

“Take this! 《Tornado Slash》 !” (Lenon)

The tornado left the blade and flew towards the three people.

“Hmph, this youngster (TL: or noob)” (Marione)

Marione stepped in front and concentrated magic into his right hand.

Bu~i~i~i~i~in ..... Dogaga~tsu! (sound of something hitting a solid object and then exploding)

Pale magic gathered in his fist as he punched the ground. A large hand made of solid earth erupted from the ground.

“Come!, I will turn it to dust with my demonic power!” (Marione)

Using the large hand, it easily crushed the incoming tornado.

“What!?” (Lenon)

Lenon knew that something like that wouldn’t be able to defeat them. But for them to easily defend against it made him grit his teeth in discontent.

“That was so weak, youngster, This is the difference between our levels”

Marione smiled condescendingly at Lenon, who glared back with a scowl.

“Let us crush him like this” (Marione)

“Hey, wait” (Shublarz)

Shublarz raised her voice and said as she looked at Marione that told him not to interfere.



“What?” (Marione)

“Don’t say ‘what?’ Your are not going against the Demon Lord’s orders,are you?” (Shublarz)

Marione stopped suddenly at that moment, and a bitter expression appeared on his face. Apparently, he lost himself in the battle.

“Fine, you do something about it then” (Marione)

“Yes, yes. This is all a muscle-head can do” (Shublarz)

She let out a sigh and shrugged. However at that moment they felt a large burst of magic power somewhere nearby. The three people all faced in that direction. Lenon also looked towards that direction.

“What is that!?” (Lenon)

Lenon couldn’t stop himself from looking because in the air was a large black floating mass. It got bigger over time and seemed to pull something up from the ground.

“Are those...monsters!?” (Lenon)

Lenon’s observations were correct, it was monsters, monsters that Crouch had collected, gathered in the sky and then,

Kaboooooooooooooooooooooooooom!

A giant explosion erupted from the cluster sending a violent blast of wind in their direction. Not only Lenon but also Marione and company braced themselves to prevent being blown off balance.

“Ku, what the heck was that !?” (Shublarz)

“Even I have no idea what that was!” (Marione)

“Mu-!” (Ornoth)

The three Cruel all expressed their thought respectively

After regaining balance, they looked up again. The dark mass that was in the air before disappeared without a trace.

(What is happening....What did Crouch do?) (Lenon)

Lenon knew something incomprehensible happened. He also felt an unpleasant presentiment swell up.

(I have no choice but to fight....) (Lenon)

Looking cautiously at the three people before him, he closed his eyes.

The three Cruel members didn't expect such a big explosion. The explosion was so huge, that the three had no idea who would be able to do something like that. The amount of magic in that explosion matched Aquinas, but the Aquinas they knew wouldn't use magic like that.

It was someone else that had caused the explosion. Because they didn't know about Hiirō, they had no idea who it was.

Also, there was a chance that Eveam was caught under that explosion. They wanted to rush toward her to check on their king/queen but they couldn't leave the current situation as it was. At that moment,

"Shubladz, will you leave this to me?" (Ornoth)

"Ornoth? Do you have a plan or something?" (Shubladz)

"No, compared to you guys who are proficient in taking many opponents at a time, I specialize in this kind of situation" (Ornoth)

"Hmph, you are one to talk, for a beast who cannot even use magic" (Marione)

Marione said it harshly but, without batting an eye, Ornoth said.

"Even if that was the case, I'm confident that I can capture that person. That aside, you are anxious about your majesty. Right?" (Ornoth)

"T-that is right..." (Marione)

Shubladz sighed in amazement as she saw the two figures mutually glaring at each other

“Anything is fine, but that person is making preparations right now” (Shublarz)

She looked at Lenon, and noticed that he was concentrating with his eyes closed

“Anyway, leave this to me. Actually, Marione stay with me. Shublarz-dono you go on ahead” (Ornoth)

“Are you sure two people is enough?” (Shublarz)

“Stop joking. Truthfully, even if I’m by myself I would be fine” (Marione)

“That is right, head towards your majesty Shublarz-dono” (Ornoth)

“Understood~” (Shublarz)

Shublarz left the two of them there and headed towards Eveam’s direction.

## Chapter 130: Bitter Taste of Victory

As Lenion channels his spell, he opens his eyes as a fierce windstorm surrounds him.

However, the two people present is firmly rooted to the ground, without being blown off by his windstorm. Lenion intends to use an attack stronger than awhile ago. So this time, he directs his sword towards the sky, and what appears are numerous tornadoes in the sky.

“It was not my intention to destroy this country, but now that it has come to this, I’ll blow everything away!” (Lenion)

If a tornado that can engulf a whole house were to descend upon the country, then the whole region turning into a wasteland wouldn’t be an impossible feat.

“Be blown away! 《Devastating Tornado》 ” (Lenion)

But he was not able to swing down the raised sword.

“...Gah!?” (Lenion)

Lenion began breathing heavily. His face grimaces when he felt an excruciating pain coming from his abdomen. Clenching his teeth, he stares at the person who prevented his attack.

It was Ornoth. With his blinding speed, he was able to close the distance, thus appeared before Lenion. Ornoth had grasped Lenion’s arm with his left hand to prevent the sword from being swung down and then punched Lenion’s gut with his right.

Although Ornoth used a normal attack, the impact was enough to shake the core of Lenion’s body. If Lenion did not manage to skillfully evade that attack, the attack would have caused irrevocable damage to his body

“Impossible...What power-?!...” (Lenion)

One of Lenion's eyes closes as his face becomes distorted due to pain.

"I won't let you harm this country" (Ornoth)

Ornoth says calmly as strength fades from Lenion's arm and the sword falls to the ground. At the same time the swarm of tornadoes in the sky begin to disappear one by one.

"Da...Damnitt!!!" (Lenion)

Although Lenion thrusts out his fist to attack Ornoth, his attack was easily grabbed

"Go to sleep, Gabranth prince" (Ornoth)

Ornoth was about to deal the final blow when he involuntarily jumped away as he sensed an intense bloodlust coming from the sky.

Cut, cut, cut, cut!

A bird feather with sharp edges pierced the ground where Ornoth formerly was.

He looks up to see the one responsible for the attack.

Flap, flap, flap, flap!

A human shaped figure was seen in the sky fluttering both of its arms like wings as they descend down from the sky

It flies to the unconscious Lenion and carries him.

"...Ba...rid...?" (Lenion)

Lenion realizes that Barid came to help

"Oh, are you perhaps one of the 《Three warriors》, 《Birdman》 Barid? If I remember correctly your other name is... 《Thunder Lord》 Barid isn't it?" (Ornoth)

Ornoth stares at Barid in front of him, whose appearance is completely that of a bird-man.

“...It isn't just me” (Barid)

“What?” (Ornoth)

When Barid says so, the area was instantly covered with ice.

“This is...!?” (Ornoth)

Not just Ornoth, but Marione as well knits his eyebrows and becomes cautious. At the same time, a big lump of ice begins to bulge near Lenion and Barid.

Crack,crack,crack,crack

Suddenly, the lump of ice cracks open and inside it is a child with a small stature. She shows herself wearing what seems to be a white bear costume. However its purposes are unknown.

Ornoth narrows his eyes as he observes the back-up that has arrived and says

“This is...I see, This ice, it's from you isn't it 《Ice Shade》? I believe your name was.... Putis”

However, their reaction showed neither affirmation nor negation.

“If the 《Dark Night》 Crouch was here it would complete this magnificent view” (Marione)

“I say the same words to you, We, as part of the 《Three Warriors》 are the ones that would bring you down. ”(Barid)

When Barid says those words, Ornoth and his companion widened their eyes a little. If what he says is true, Crouch would then have to be defeated and captured

“I see. If that is so then Her Majesty is doing well” (Ornoth)

In truth, rather than Eveam it was actually because of Hihiro's efforts that things did not turn bad. However, Ornoth obviously does not fully comprehend Hihiro's existence but at the very least, he understood that Eveam was saved from the explosion and he

decided that Aquinas would probably know what had happened.

“It seems you came to rescue your prince, I’m Afraid we’ll have to capture all of you” (Ornoth)

Seeing the enemy’s number increase by 2, Marione himself joined the fray as he let his body be filled with magic power

“.... I won’t let you do that” (Barid)

When Barid said those words, ice spreads out and hardens underneath Ornoth and Marione’s feet depriving their movements. In addition, the ice gradually extends to their upper body.

“Wha?!.....haa!” (Ornoth)

Ornoth crushes the ice that was restraining his body’s lower half. Marione follows Ornoth’s lead and does the same. They immediately prepare for battle, with their eyes set in front, focusin on Barid and the others. And as they are about to dash towards their enemy, they halted.

It is because in an instant Barid and the others are covered in ice.

“Wha, what the...!?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth cries out but, Barid calmly says

“We’ll finish our fight later” (Barid)

Crack!

Ornoth and Marione tries to break open the ice, however the inside was empty.

“Shit!” (Ornoth)

“Tsk. This is why it is better that we got rid of them rather than capturing them.” (Marione)

Marione clenches his teeth out of frustration. It seems that the Gabranth’s had escaped the place. But this was expected as it is

reckless to fight two people from 《Cruel》 while carrying a seriously injured prince

“...It can't be helped. Marione-dono, are you alright?” (Ornoth)

“Shut up” (Marione)

As soon as he shouts this Marione begins walking towards another direction. Ornoth manages to let out a small sigh and shrugs his shoulders, then tilts his head to the direction of the town.

(This place marks the victory for the Evila)

However there is another place in trouble. Seeing that the 《Three Warriors》 withdrew from the front lines the other Gabranth would most probably withdraw as well, but even so there are still the Humas soldiers left.

In addition, they failed their objective of securing the prince. The aftertaste of winning turned out to be bad.

(We can't let our guard down again. But I'm worried about those other guys as well)

He was talking about the four young people. He remembered that before the young guy wearing a red robe vanished he talked to the four heroes and left them trembling afterwards.



## Chapter 131: Ornoth vs the Four Heroes

Author's note: This time the story will be told from the Heroes' perspective. The story from when Hiiro went to the Conference. (TL: events simultaneous with Chapter 118)

“He....teleported? Child, do you know where did that person head off to?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth asked the disciple of the one who had just teleported. But Hiiro's disciple, Nikki, covered her mouth using both hands while she shut her eyes tight..

“Hmmm....You're called Nikki, am I right? Why are you doing that?” (Ornoth)

“Nnnnn,nnnnnnnnnnnnnnn!” (Nikki)

“.....Do you really not know?” (Ornoth)

Then, Nikki opened her eyes wide and brought her hands to her waist.

“Like I said! Shishou told me that I shouldn't say anything!” (Nikki)

“Hmm...I see” (Ornoth)

Ornoth kept silent as he thought he shouldn't ask anymore if that was the case. His pride wouldn't allow him to to forcefully extract information simply due to such a child's antics. While he was bothered by Hiiro, he also was bothered by the heroes.

Certainly, when they had been heading to the conference, they had confirmed the existences of the heroes on the [Mutich Bridge]. There, he had witnessed the four heroes and an encampment of [Humas] soldiers.

That being the case, Ornoth felt that he first had to unravel the mystery as to why they were here. And so Ornoth approached the

heroes.

Upon sensing the overwhelming aura of the approaching wolf-faced man, the hero Aoyama Taishi began to step backwards. However, Ornoth thought to himself that he couldn't let them escape and with blinding speed, he placed himself behind the heroes.

“Wha!??” (Taishi)

Sensing Ornoth behind them, Taishi and the rest looked behind as their legs gave out once more and their faces became pale and feverish.

“.....First off, allow me to ask.” (Ornoth)

“Wha-,wha-, what is it!” (Taishi)

Taishi cried out partially out of desperation. While it may have been out of reflex, he stood up and lowered his waist as he pulled out his sword and took a battle stance.

(His waist is completely falling out on him....is he really the hero from that time?)

At the very least, Marione and Greyald had hurled bloodlust at the heroes at that time. However, even under such a situation, they had remained composed. Based on that, Ornoth had judged them to probably be quite strong, yet compared to then, the current heroes seemed to be completely different people.

I just want to ask you about what happened. Well, as for what will happen to you all after I finish asking, I will not forgive you if you intend on harming our side.

He hit them with a glance that oozed a hint of bloodlust. Taishi's face turned pale and his body began to shake, yet his hands didn't let go of his sword.

“Yo-You're saying...?” (Taishi) (TL: Yeah I know its long but I don't think Ornoth was trying to tell a story)

“First off I want to ask, are you people really the heroes?”(Ornoth)

“O-o-o-o-o-of course we are! We are the Summoned Heroes of 【Victorias】 ! ” (Taishi)

“I really can’t believe that” (Ornoth)

“Wha-What did you say!?” (Taishi)

“When talking about the heroes, they are the Humas’ trump card, their saviors. If that is so then why are those heroes here, trembling at the very center of the enemy territory?” (Ornoth)

Ornoth’s words stabbed deeply into their hearts. Savior, the glimmer of hope. In the past, such a person summoned to Edea, had saved the [Humas] from calamity and was worshipped and respected, as a result, by many people.

Courageous, unyielding, with an arm of justice and a heart of compassion. These were the weapons that the brave ones used to fight. Even so, currently not a single one of those qualities could be applied to the current heroes.

Taishi and the others looked down in a dejected manner. Looking at them, Ornoth let out a weak sigh.

“Well, it doesn’t matter whether or not you guys are the heroes. You aren’t needed in this place” (Ornoth)

“...Eh?” (???)

“It’s because, you people came here to lay waste to this country, isn’t that right?”

“Th-that’s...” (???)

“In that case, then I, as a defender of this country, must eliminate you.” (Ornoth)

“A...” (???)

“Additionally, if you all are truly the heroes, all the more reason for me to kill you here for the sake of the [Evila].” (Ornoth)

Ornoth's bloodlust increased further. Seeing Ornoth slowly approach them, Taishi twitched and reflexively-

"uuuuuuuoooooooooo!"(Taishi)

-charged forward whilst swinging his sword.

"Ta-Taishi doooooon't!!" (?????)

It was as if her voice never reached him, as it seemed he had no intention of stopping his advance.

"...how foolish" (Ornoth)

Ornoth stood still while he gazed at the charging Taishi. And at the moment when it seemed that Taishi's sword had caught him,

Whoosh!

Ornoth easily dodged by tilting his body sideways.

"You! You! You! You! Yoouuu!!" (Taishi)

Taishi attacked with his sword again and again, but was incapable of grazing Ornoth by even a single millimeter. His movements were completely being read.

"That idiot! He's completely lost it!" (Chika)

It could have been due to Taishi's unexpected actions, but Chika, who had managed to regain some composure, similarly drew her sword and took a battle stance.

"Chika-chi!?" (Shinobu)

Akamori Shinobu saw that Chika was planning to fight and instantly raised her voice.

"Shinobu...Please take care of Shuri!" (Chika)

Chika sent a glance towards the still trembling Shuri Minamoto, who had not let out a single voice even now. Her words had the meaning of entrusting the protection of Shuri as well included into

them. She then kicked the ground in pursuit of Taishi.

“Wa-Wait Chika-chi!” (Shinobu)

Shinobu also wanted to provide assistance, but couldn't leave Shuri behind by herself. Shinobu held Shuri's shoulders but was at a loss for words when she felt her temperature. Shuri's face was pale and her skin was cold as if it was devoid of blood.

“It's going to be okay Shuri-chi” (Shinobu)

“Shi-Shinobu...san” (Shuri)

Her trembling lips finally moved, but it seemed that she was at her limit of staying conscious. Even so, Shinobu couldn't abandon her in such a dangerous situation.

Because she was her friend. But as she watched the backs of the two who were fighting, she once again heard the sounds of explosions and smelt the smell of blood as she thought,

(Did we make...a mistake) (Shinobu)

She repeated the question, answer to which didn't appear within her again and again.

As for Ornoth, even though his opponents had increased to two people, he remained unscathed. Their movements were undeniably fast. Their levels were also considerably high. It might even be alright to say as expected of heroes.

But they were completely lacking in experience. Or rather, even thought they should be on a battlefield, their blades only contained fear.

The desire to win against one's opponents and the resolve to kill one's opponents. They completely lacked such feelings that were absolutely necessary in a battlefield. You can't simply swing your blade about just because you are scared. Blades without such beliefs couldn't possibly reach one of the Evila's greatest war portentials, Ornoth.

(And rather than the boy, the girl seems to show more promise.)  
(Ornoth)

As he continued to dodge their attacks, Ornoth glanced at Chika. Compared to Taishi's sword, hers was more precise and contained a more powerful conviction. She likely wanted to save him. Her strong desire to protect was likely weakening her hesitation, but sadly, her lack of experience prevented her from being able to give Ornoth even a single wound.

“Shit! Shit! Shiiit! Why can't I hit anything!?” (Taishi)

It was because he continued to swing his word around thoughtlessly. However, Taishi did not understand that at all.

“Calm down Taishi!” (Chika)

“How can I calm down!? If we lose we'll die! I...I cannot die in a place like this” (Taishi)

“Ta-Taishi...” (Chika)

“Tha-that's why” (Taishi)

Taishi glared at Ornoth with an incredibly upset expression. As he did so, an absurd amount of magic power began to gather in his right hand. Naturally, Ornoth noticed this and was taken aback.

Then Taishi's right hand began to shine.

“Disappear! Shinesp....!?”

He turned his right hand towards Ornoth and attempted to use magic, but a leg kicked that right hand from below.

\*creak\*

The sound of a bone cracking resounded out, as his right hand was kicked up towards the sky. The moment he grasped that arm, however-

\*Thud!\*

A fist was thrust into the pit of his stomach.

“Gah!”

“Taishii! Youu!” (Chika)

Chika attempted to attack the close-by Ornoth, but he easily dodged and retreated.

“uu...guh...!?” (Taishi)

“Taishi hang on!” (Chika)

Chika rushed to Taishi who was holding his stomach while crouching. Looking at the two, Ornoth calmly spoke.

“There are generally two methods to activate magic. Either one must speak the name of the magic, or use magic which does not need to be named. It seems that his magic is of the former type and must be spoken or else it won’t activate. Originally, magic was mostly used for long-distance battles. If you carelessly attempt to use it in this kind of close-combat situation, that is what happens.” (Ornoth)

While he didn’t know whether the groaning Taishi could hear him or not, Ornoth continued to speak.

“Seeing as you tried to use light magic, while it seems you all are the heroes, you are completely lacking in experience. It is amazing that they had the audacity to send you all the way to this battlefield. Anyone with a certain degree of combat experience should be capable of knowing that it’s still too early to send you all to the battlefield just by looking at you, but.....why did the king not stop you? There’s no way that the soldiers wouldn’t have advised against it as it was too early for you all.” (Ornoth)

Upon hearing those words, Chika said “Eh?” and stared at Ornoth.

## Chapter 132: The Separated Heroes

“Your levels do appear to be quite high but....you know, the battlefield isn’t a playground. With that degree of resolve, do you really think that you’ll really be able to return safely? From what I’ve seen, you don’t appear to have even seen people die before?” (Ornoth)

“.....” (Chika)

Chika froze as though she was at a loss for words.

“Or could it be that the king who sent you all simply treated you as pawns to be thrown away?” (Ornoth)

“Th-there’s no way that could be true!” (Chika)

She vehemently raised her voice in denial.

“Then why are you here? It should be easy to figure out so long as you think about it a little right? Exactly what would happen if all of you were sent here. Honestly speaking, for all of you who are unaccustomed to being soldiers, what other reason is there for the king to send you here?” (Ornoth)

To Ornoth, that was an honest question. Yet, to Chika, it was one that gave her an extreme shock. Now that he mentioned it, just why did King Rudolf elect to send them, who had never killed a person before, along with the small battalion here?

If he truly wanted to assault the **【Demon Capital】**, then he should have prepared a greater force. It wasn’t like they had completely trusted the beastmen either. Even so, why did he send such a small number of people here?

I don’t get it! I don’t get it! No matter how much I think about it, I don’t get it! (Chika)

“Chi.....ka.....” (Taishi)



It was Taishi's voice who pulled her confused self back to reality. Thanks to the pain, he had become somewhat calmer. Yet, based on his expression, it could be derived that he would no longer perform any reckless attacks.

"Taishi! Are you alright?" (Chika)

"Ah, yeah. My stomach hurts but.....he probably was holding back." (Taishi)

"Eh?" (Chika)

Taishi held his stomach as he glanced towards Ornoth.

"He didn't use his full power at all. Probably.....his level is way higher than ours. Not only that, but I feel that he specializes in physical attacks." (Taishi)

"Hou, unlike before, that's a good analysis." (Ornoth)

Ornoth was impressed with Taishi for the first time. To be able to see through his opponent's physical capabilities after receiving just a single hit, Ornoth felt that it truly was as expected of one holding the title of 'hero'.

"Magic is not your only weapon. I, at least, can understand that." (Taishi)

Looking carefully, Ornoth's body was dangerously ripped. Taishi understood that he had simply thrust his fist at him, but it had felt as though he had been hit with steel. Having trained and forged his body, as soon as he had regained his composure, Taishi had become capable of analyzing that in his head.

"Now then, if you obediently surrender then your lives, at least, will be spared. But if you plan to continue resisting any longer, then as one of the 《Cruel》, I will see you all to hell." (Ornoth)

His terrible force of intent sent a shock rippling through him. Having become calm, Taishi once again realized what a monster-like existence the person in front of him was.

(Even so, if we were all to join forces we could beat him.....but)  
(Taishi)

Indeed, at the very least, currently the only ones who could fight were Chika and himself. If they fought seriously, then they should at least be able to wound him, but as expected, to defeat him, magic was essential. However, even if they tried to use magic, Ornoth would likely stop the two of them.

That was exactly why it was necessary for Shinobu and co. to cover them from a distance, but that too would be too much to wish for.

“Ta-Taishi.....” (Chika)

Chika looked at him anxiously. He didn’t know if she was thinking about the same thing as him, but, at the very least she seemed to feel that they had no chances of winning if they fought here.

Taishi closed his eyes and thought for a bit. And just as he opened his eyes determinedly and was about to speak,

“I found you, 《Cruelllllllllll》!” (Lenion)

The one who suddenly appeared was Lenion, the second prince from the 【Gabranth Capital: Passion】. Not only that, but he appeared to already be in battle stance as a large tornado was being produced from the tip of his sword.

“Defeating the 《Cruel》 here will bring me another step closer to becoming the strongest!” (Lenion)

Lenion brandished his sword and swung it down towards Ornoth. Taishi and co. were also nearby, but it seemed that he didn’t take the slightest notice of them.

As the tornado left his sword, the area was attacked by a gale.

“Kuh!” (Ornoth)

Ornoth immediately attempted to evade it, but the tornado didn’t stop. A wind containing vacuum blades began to attack Taishi and co.

“Uwaaaaahhh!?” (Taishi)

“Kyaaaaaa!?” (Chika)

Taishi and Chika, who took it straight on, were swallowed by the tornado and sent flying outside of the capital. And then, the ones who were a little distance away, Shinobu and Shuri, similarly received some damage.

The two of them were blown away by the wind and crashed into a building wall. Ornoth continued to dodge Lenion’s continuous stream of attacks as he ran somewhere else.

What remained was Nikki, who had hidden in a building unnoticed, and the two injured girls who had been blown away by the wind.

“C-Could it be that they have d-died?” (Nikki)

As Nikki quietly approached the two of them to check, Shinobu’s body twitched. Nikki also twitched in surprise, but became relieved after seeing that they were still alive. They wouldn’t be happy seeing the corpses of young girls like them.

“Uu.....o-oww.....” (Shinobu)

As she rubbed her waist, it seemed that she was still conscious as she raised her torso.

“Wh-what was that all about geez.....you okay, Shuri-cci?” (Shinobu)

She glanced at the Shuri, who was lying on her side, as she said that. In the next instant, Shinobu’s eyes opened wide. The reason being that quite a bit of blood could be seen coming from Shuri’s head. It appeared that she had hit her head when crashing into the wall. She was also unconscious.

It might be expected that the worst possible situation would occur.

“Shuri-cci!” (Shinobu)

“Ahh, you mustn’t do that!” (Nikki)

“Eh?” (Shinobu)

As Nikki suddenly called out to stop her, she reflexively twitched and froze.

“When they’ve hit their head, it’s better not to randomly move them about, is what Shishou told me!” (Nikki)

Raising their index finger, Nikki explained as their ahoge swayed from side to side.

“Shishou....you mean Okamura-cchi?” (Shinobu)

“Okamura-cchi? Is that some kind of spell?” (Nikki)

Nikki asked as they cutely tilted their head to the side.

“Ah, sorry. Umm, I mean Hihiro Okamura.” (Shinobu)

“Ohh, that’s right! So you knew Shishou!” (Nikki)

They smiled happily. Shinobu reflexively smiled back, but her expression darkened as she did so.

“That’s true, but I can’t just let her sleep here like this.....” (Shinobu)

“Then how about having her rest a bit in the inn over there?” (Nikki)

“.....excuse me?” (Shinobu)

Nikki pointed towards the inn that Hihiro came out of.

“We should put a towel on her head and neck to be safe, but I don’t think there should be any problems if we carry her slowly. From what I can see, there is some bleeding, but her breathing seems to be steady after all.” (Nikki)

Shinobu stared dumbly as Nikki spoke smoothly and took a towel out from her bosom.

“Hm? What’s wrong?” (Nikki)

“Eh? Ah, no, it’s just, I was wondering if you really were a child.”  
(Shinobu)

Certainly, for them to be that knowledgeable, it was difficult to see Nikki as a child.

“Mufufu~ even though I look like this, I’m an adult!” (Nikki)

Having felt that they were complimented, Nikki’s chest swelled.

“Heh, how old are you?” (Shinobu)

“I’m 10!” (Nikki)

“.....you’re a child.” (Shinobu)

“Mumuu! It’s mean to treat me like a child!” (Nikki)

“Ahh, sorry, my bad. Then like an adult.....umm, your name was Nikki right?” (Shinobu)

“It’s Nikki! For those close to me, I don’t mind if they call me Ni-cchan either!” (Nikki)

“Alright, then it’s Ni-cchi!” (Shinobu)

“.....umm, were you listening to what I was saying?” (Nikki)

Having been called ‘Ni-cchi’ even though they said to call them ‘Nikki’, Nikki became dejected.

“Maa maa, don’t mind the small details! For now, help me carry Shuri-cchi.” (Shinobu)

“This is also a way of saving people! Leave it to me!” (Nikki)

And so, the two of them carried Shuri to the inn.

\*Author’s Note: Next time, Hihiro will be lecturing them.

## Chapter 133: The Preaching Hiiro

Hiiro: 「 .....Oi, what's the meaning of this? 」

Currently, Hiiro had just returned to the inn where he was staying at. Eveam had told him that because the 『Gabranth』 had unanimously retreated back to their country, they would be capable of somehow dealing with the rest by themselves. As Eveam had asked Hiiro to wait because she would contact him upon the completion of the process, Hiiro had returned. Yet.....

For some reason, in his very own room, there were two strangers that Hiiro had neither conversed with nor looked directly at before. One of them was currently occupying the bed he slept in. The other was currently treating the wounds sustained by their body with healing magic.

Even though he could not see them well, Hiiro knew them. The two strangers were two of the four heroes. Although he couldn't remember their names, Hiiro was not mistaken. Why were these two here? Also, what happened to the other two? He began to make an inquiry towards the one that had created this situation.

Hiiro: 「 Give me an explanation, Baka-Deshi(1). 」

He grabbed Nikki by the neck in a manner similar to lifting up a cat.

Nikki: 「 Uu~(2) Please forgive me desu zoo~(3). I forgot to mention it desu zoo~ 」

The one who was floating in midair dejectedly was Nikki. As she saw that, Mikazuki merrily laughed. 「 Ba~ka Ba~ka, you got scolded~ 」 (4). Although Hiiro heard Mikazuki say this almost as if cursing Nikki, he simply ignored it for now.

From what Nikki said, at the time when Hiiro returned from the conference location, Nikki felt that they had something important that they had to communicate to Hiiro. Yet, due to an exchange with Mikazuki, Nikki appeared to have completely forgotten about

it.

As he received Nikki's explanation as to how this situation had come about, Hiiro involuntarily began to hold his temples.

Hiiro: 「I see. That would mean that as they were caught up by the tornado user's attack, the other two were sent flying, huh? 」

Shinobu: 「A-ano(5), Okamura-cchi? 」

Hiiro: 「Shut up for a bit. 」

Shinobu: 「Ah.....un(6). 」

As Hiiro flatly cut off Akamori Shinobu who was trying to enter the conversation between him and Nikki, Shinobu, who had seen and understood that Hiiro was in a foul mood, remained silent.

Hiiro: 「What happened to Aka-Loli?(7) 」

Nikki: 「Ah, about that. As she said she was going to go and pick up the Hentai(8) group, she went away somewhere desu zo! 」

Hiiro: 「.....haa, this is really a pain. 」

Although it seemed like she was going to pick up her companions that haven't come back yet, it was no different than just running away because she didn't want to deal with babysitting Nikki and Mikazuki.

As he scratched his head while expressing grief, Hiiro sent his gaze towards the one sleeping in his bed, Minamoto Shuri. Following this, he spat out a light sigh before directing his face towards Shinobu. She returned his gaze with uneasy eyes.

Hiiro: 「As it can't be helped now I'll lend you the bed. Just get out once it becomes night, alright? 」

As he coldly shot out those words, Hiiro turned on his heels and tried to leave the room, yet, Shinobu hastily raised her voice.

Shinobu: 「Ah, w-wait a sec! 」

Hiiro: 「 Ah? 」

Shinobu: 「 Eh.....ah, you know.....you really are Okamura-cchi(9).....right? 」

Hiiro: 「 What of it? 」

As Hiiro was currently taking the form of an 『Imp』, her confusion was not unreasonable. However, from what Shinobu could tell, his voice, physique, and even his attitude clearly belonged to Okamura Hiiro himself.

Shinobu: 「 I'm so sorry-! 」

Hiiro: 「 ..... 」

Hiiro expressionlessly stared at Shinobu who had suddenly lowered her head with great momentum in apology.

Shinobu: 「 I know that you have no obligation to listen to my request! But besides Okamura-cchi, I don't have anyone else I can rely on! 」

Hiiro: 「 ..... 」

Shinobu: 「 Since there's so many 『Evilas』 around here, we can't carelessly leave here.....that's why..... 」

Hiiro: 「 Please shelter us for a while.....is basically what you're getting at, right? 」

As Shinobu's shoulders trembled, she gently raised her face.

Shinobu: 「 .....can't you.....do it? 」

After staring at her eyes for a while, Hiiro let out a sigh.

Hiiro: 「 Look here, you guys are the enemy that came to attack this place, you know? In addition, although it's due to a request, I'm currently placed in a position where I have to protect this country. What kind of nerve do you have to be able to ask such a thing? 」



Hihiro was truly amazed. It seemed that she did not understand her current position at all.

Hihiro: 「 You guys are heroes, right? You are the saviors summoned by the 『Humas』 in order to destroy the 『Evila』 . Yet, you guys are asking ‘since we can’t fight anymore, can we please live here until our wounds heal?’. You really have quite some nerve. 」

As she could not say anything in the face of Hihiro’s bitter words, Shinobu bit her lower lip.

Hihiro: 「 In the first place, didn’t you guys think something was strange? For example, the reason why a group of carefree, game brains like you were sent to the battlefield 」

Shinobu: 「 .....eh? 」

Apparently, they were still unaware.

Hihiro: 「 .....haa, you guys are merely discarded pawns. 」

Shinobu: 「 S-such a thing can’t be true! 」

Hihiro: 「 Nope, I confirmed it directly with the King. 」

Shinobu: 「 Heh? You say directly but how..... 」

Although Hihiro was in this country, Shinobu did not know when he had confirmed it as she wore a blank look.

Hihiro: 「 That stupid king, he didn’t deny it you know? I mean, when I told him that you guys were discarded pawns. 」

Shinobu: 「 .....i-it can’t be..... 」

Hihiro: 「 Actually, how were you guys able to put your trust in such a king? A king that sacrifices his own daughters can’t possibly be a just king. 」

Shinobu: 「 .....!? 」

Impact ran through Hihiro’s words. It was as if Shinobu had been

beaten over the head with a hammer.

Hiiro: 「In addition, there's no magic that will send us back in this world.」

Shinobu: 「.....he? There isn't?」

Hiiro: 「That's right.」

Shinobu: 「T-there's no way! I mean, the King even said that the Demon Lord knows it!」

Hiiro: 「Did you really believe that? Stop and think about it. Why would the Demon Lord know of it? Suppose that they did know it, why would the 『Humas』 who know summoning magic not know it?」

Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

Hiiro: 「Besides, have you guys read any of the literature and books of this world?」

Shinobu: 「Books.....?」

Hiiro: 「Although it's written that the summoned heroes certainly saved the 『Humas』, no matter which book you read, none of them say that the heroes returned to their original world.」

As if she had received an incredible shock, Shinobu did not blink as she was rendered petrified. Following this, her face gradually grew pale.

Hiiro: 「You guys, ever since we came here over half a year ago, what exactly have you guys been doing?」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hiiro: 「At any rate, you probably completed missions as instructed by the King, faced off against great opponents, and enjoyed every single day in the castle, am I wrong?」

As Shinobu recalled the past, due to the fact that it was exactly as

Hihiro had indicated, Shinobu swallowed. Upon seeing such behaviour, Hihiro simply shook his head in disgust.

Hihiro: 「As I thought. As long as you walked on the rail laid out before you at the instructed pace, you thought that you would win the war? Aren't you guys severely underestimating this world?」

Shinobu: 「Ah.....」

Hihiro: 「Have you guys ever tried to leave on an adventure by yourself even if it was just once? Have you nearly been killed by a monster? Have you cut down a person with your very own hands? Have you killed?」

Shinobu: 「Uu.....」

Hihiro: 「There's absolutely no way that a dog tenderly raised in a comfortable environment would come out unscathed after being thrown out onto the battlefield of feral beasts and rabid dogs.」

As Shinobu had been unable to stand any longer, her knees buckled.

Hihiro: 「The king was most likely aware, you know. The fact that you were a useless bunch that was incapable of killing people. That's why he turned you into disposable pawns in this war. In the event that you guys were to die in this war, the King would use that as a reason to fuel the people's anger and spark further war. Something along those lines.」

Shinobu: 「Lies.....」

Hihiro: 「The heroes fought with all their might. However, the 『Evila』 used cowardly methods to deceive and kill them. Can we allow such a thing? To dispel the regrets of those deceased heroes, everyone shall take their revenge for them.....saying something like that, he would have handled your deaths as the detonator.」

Shinobu: 「.....that can't be.....if that's the case, all that we've been doing up until now.....」

As if she were expressing disbelief, Shinobu held both hands to her

cheeks and made an expression filled with despair.

Hiiro: 「 Well, although your misfortune was mainly caused due to the fact that no one around you had been aware of this, it's normally something that one would notice, you know. That country's dubiousness, I mean. That's why I left. 」

Shinobu: 「 N-No way! If that's so, at that time, wouldn't it have been fine if you had told us! 」

Hiiro: 「 Don't be so fucking naive. 」

Shinobu: 「 Uu..... 」

As she was assaulted by a gaze infused with killing intent, Shinobu was overwhelmed.

Hiiro: 「 It's something that anyone would understand if they thought about it a little. Anyway, you guys were in high spirits, right? This is a game-like world and we're heroes. There's nothing to be afraid of.....or something to that effect. 」

Shinobu: 「 Ah..... 」

Hiiro: 「 That's why you guys didn't notice anything strange as you enthusiastically thought that things would somehow work out. Without properly looking at any of the uncertainties, you followed the words of a stranger as you lived your daily lives. This is the consequence you received due to living in such a dangerous world without a single care. 」

Shinobu: 「 Uu..... 」

Hiiro: 「 This world is not as accommodating as games. Although you may be heroes, this world is not so easy as to let you become saviours without doing anything. The current situation is the result that your naivety has invited. 」

Shinobu: 「 T-that might be true, but..... 」

Rather than being unable to accept the situation, Hiiro saw that Shinobu did not want to accept it.

Hiiro: 「 .....when that foolish king spoke of return magic, I was certain that you two, unlike the other stupid duo, held slight doubt on your faces. However, it appears that I was simply mistaken. 」

As Hiiro continued to talk, he continued to recall the events that occurred when he was summoned.

Alt: Following this, during the time King Rudolf spoke of return magic- no, even up until the point where he spoke of others returning to their own world, he had arranged his sophistry infused words, his speech implying that those worlds did not exist. During this time, Hiiro remembered that, at the very least, Shinobu and Shuri's themselves wore expressions that seemed to hold doubt towards those words.

Shinobu: 「 T-that's..... 」

As Hiiro saw Shinobu hang her head, wearing a downcast expression that indicated it was hard for her to speak, he was utterly convinced.

Hiiro: 「 At any rate, you probably held these thoughts, right? 'Although I'm not sure if it's a lie or not, since there's magic that brought us to this world, there must be magic that can send us back home'. 」

Shinobu: 「 .....!?! 」

Hiiro: 「 In addition, after obtaining the title of heroes and being placed in this fantasy world, you guys were so ecstatic that you simply disregarded such critical doubt. 'It will somehow work out. We have four friends on our side. As long as we look out for each other, we'll someday return to our original world'.....or something like that. 」

In the face of Hiiro's words, Shinobu's mouth stiffened. The fact that sweat gradually began to flow from her forehead demonstrated that Hiiro's words had completely hit the nail on the head.

Hiiro: 「 Although there was no conclusive evidence whatsoever to support such thoughts, you guys merely suppressed such

considerable doubts. Should I just say it bluntly? It's not an exaggeration to say that this situation was brought about by the both of you, the one sleeping in the bed included. 」

Shinobu: 「 T-that's..... 」

Hiiro: 「 Even if the slightest doubt floated into your mind, if you discussed it with the other two, then you would have been able to hold doubt towards the king's actions. The two of you who didn't do so have brought about this result due to your naive situational decision making. Your foolishness is so deep that it's astonishing. 」

The reason why Shinobu said nothing in response to Hiiro's words was because she understood that what Hiiro was saying was right. Certainly, if she had voiced her doubts at that time, she might have been able to create an opportunity for the four of them to have a discussion.

At the very least, there was the possibility of being pulled out from the stupidity of not realising anything up until this very moment. However, she - no, as Shuri was also included, they, as Hiiro had indicated, were elated by the bright future before them, forgetting any of the small discrepancies that may have appeared.

Without knowing that those doubts would influence their own fate, they simply avoided it. The fact that this situation was their fault was completely irrefutable.

Silence followed soon after. As Nikki and Mikazuki who were nearby realised that the current atmosphere did not warrant any unnecessary banter, they remained silent.

Shuri: 「 .....we were horribly mistaken.....weren't we 」

In the midst of that atmosphere, the one who had raised their voice was the one who was thought to have been asleep, Shuri.

## Notes:

1. Baka-Deshi: Baka (Idiot) Deshi (Disciple). Hiiro's nickname

for Nikki.

2. Uu: An utterance that resembles a groan.
3. Desu zo: Nikki's speech quirk.
4. Baka: Idiot
5. Ano: Japanese equivalent of 'Um'.
6. Un: Not to be confused with 'Uun'. Un is an expression of affirmation.
7. Aka-Loli: Aka (Red) Loli (Lolita). Hiirō's nickname for Liliyn.
8. Hentai: Japanese term for pervert or perverted material. It's Liliyn's nickname for Silva, thus, it would be 'pervert'.
  - Leo: Yay Henta-- I mean...stuff
  - XJ: Right...not suspicious at all, Leo. Not suspicious at all...
11. -cchi: A suffix used to denote familiarity with the subject. It also infers that the speaker has a playful, childish personality. A quirk often given to characters with Kansai-ben. A variant of chan/kun and can be used with either gender.
12. TL Note: It's been so long since my notes section has been so short.

## Chapter 134: The Irritated Protagonist

Shinobu: 「 S-Shuri-cchi!?(1) 」

Shinobu involuntarily rushed towards the bed and stared at her face. As her complexion had somewhat improved compared to earlier, Shinobu felt relieved as she exhaled.

Shinobu: 「 I was worried, you know.....Shuri-cchi 」

Shuri: 「 I'm sorry.....Shinobu-san(2) 」

As she did so, Shuri attempted to lift her upper body as her face distorted in agony.

Shinobu: 「 Ah, I told you that you have to rest! 」

Shuri: 「 No, I'm.....fine. 」

Shinobu: 「 Shuri-cchi..... 」

Following this, as Shuri roused her upper body while ignoring Shinobu's words of restraint, she looked at Hihiro who was observing them with folded arms.

Shuri: 「 You really are.....Okamura-kun(3).....am I right? 」

Hihiro: 「 .....fuu, will you understand if I do this? 」

Then, using the spell 「 Origin 」 『元』 , he reverted into the human Okamura Hihiro. Of course, it went without saying that the two were startled. Yet, as they understood that this was definitely the Hihiro that they knew, the two of them were somewhat convinced.

Shinobu: 「 How do I say this, Okamura-cchi looks better this way. 」

Hihiro: 「 This is the Demon World. In order to avoid annoying disputes, isn't it obvious that taking the appearance of an 『Evila』 is better? 」



As she looked at Hiiro, who spoke thus in an unfriendly manner, Shuri slightly smiled.

Shuri: 「Fufu, you're definitely Okamura-kun. Do you perhaps remember, Okamura-kun?」

Hiiro: 「Ah?」

Shuri: 「Although you said that you had no memory of ever talking to us when we were in Japan, you actually talked to me during the entrance ceremony, even if only once.」

Of course, Hiiro didn't remember any of that. Rather, Hiiro had thought that she was spouting bull shit. Although Shuri held slightly melancholic, downcast eyes, she began to move her mouth in an attempt to explain herself.

Shuri: 「Okamura-kun, after the entrance ceremony, you went straight to the library, right?」

Come to think of it, I did go there. As Hiiro thought thus, he nodded in his mind.

Shuri: 「At that time, I had also gone there. As I also enjoy reading books, I was so excited about what kind of books they would have there that I accidentally tripped over my feet.」

Hiiro: 「So you're saying that we met then?」

It seemed that he did not remember.

Shuri: 「Yes. As I was about to enter the library, you contrarily came out. At that time, as I had just knocked your shoulder, the book that you were holding fell to the floor.」

Hiiro: 「.....ah」

Hiiro gradually remembered that something like that had certainly occurred.

Shuri: 「Have you remembered? Although it was a conversation that couldn't be called one, when I picked up the book, I spoke the

following. 『Do you like books?』 At that time, do you remember what kind of answer you gave me?」

Hiiro: 「.....no idea.」

Hiiro did not remember in precise detail. As she was capable of remembering such things, Hiiro expressed admiration towards Shuri.

Shuri: 「You told me this. 『It's my reason for living.』」

Suddenly, silence assaulted the room as everyone's eyes began to focus towards Hiiro. Perhaps due to slight embarrassment, Hiiro turned his eyes towards the sky.

Hiiro: 「Did I really say such a thing? Isn't that just some bull shit?」

Shuri: 「No. Although we had only conversed to that extent, it was so simple yet complex that it left a great impression on me.」

She answered as she wore a delicate smile. 「As expected of Shishou(4) desu zo! Yo, Reincarnation of Intellectual Lust(5)!」 As Nikki had spoke while getting carried away, Hiiro's fist decided to pay them a visit. Mikazuki, who had witnessed the spectacle, began to make fun of Nikki who had been scolded.

Hiiro: 「Haa, so? For what reason did you bring up such a story? You couldn't possibly be trying to elicit sympathy from me with that, right?」

Shuri: 「No, I simply just wanted to try and have a talk with Okamura-kun. I mean, ever since we came here, you immediately got separated from us.」

Shinobu: 「Is that so.....to think that Shuri-ccchi and Okamura-ccchi had such an encounter.」

Hiiro: 「Our encounter has nothing to do with this, right? At the moment, the problem is with you guys. To me, as long as you guys get out of here by night time, then that's fine with me.」

Shuri: 「 .....that's right. If we impose any more than this, we'll be causing trouble for Okamura-kun after all. 」

Shinobu: 「 W-wait! You alright with that, Shuri-cchi!? There's no way that your condition has gotten better, right? Not to mention, even after we walk out of here, it wouldn't be strange for us to get assaulted at any time, you know? 」

Shuri: 「 But we still have to look for Chika and Taishi as well. 」

Shinobu: 「 Y-Yeah, but..... 」

Certainly, they were worried about the whereabouts of the two that had been blown away. However, they were currently in, what some might call, the heart of enemy territory. Furthermore, as they were heroes, on top of being 『Humas』, it was unthinkable that they would be able to easily escape from the country under the current circumstances.

Shinobu: 「 Also, Shuri-cchi. If what Hiiro says is true, then wouldn't that mean we no longer have a place to stay in the human world? 」

Shuri: 「 T-that's..... 」

The two depressingly hung their heads. Indeed, the King had used the heroes as disposable pawns. If they were to perhaps return to him unharmed, they would simply be treated as puppets once again. The two were not so foolish as to still possess the desire to fight under the command of such a King.

Hiiro: 「 I don't really care, but one of the Demon Lord's envoys are coming here soon to call me. 」

???: 「 Eh-!? 」

The two's faces paled respectively. That was to be expected. After all, they had come this far with the intention of slaying the Demon Lord. Such a Demon Lord would undoubtedly show them no mercy. The idea of them thinking that they would be killed if found was only natural.

Nikki: 「Mumu?(6) Why would Shishou be called for?」

Nikki asked as they tilted their head to the side.

Mikazuki: 「Nikki is such a baka!(7) Isn't it obvious that it's because Goshujin(8) is so cool mon!(9)」

Mikazuki followed it with thus.

Nikki: 「Muu~(10) what do you mean by baka!? Also, I'm the one who knows the most about how cool Shishou is desu zo!(11)」

Mikazuki: 「You're wrong mon! The one who knows best is Mikazuki da mon!」

Nikki: 「It's me desu zo!」

Mikazuki: 「Mikazuki da mon!」

\*Poka-!\* \*Poka-!\*(12)

Nikki: 「Nowa-!?(13)」

Mikazuki: 「Myu-!?(13)」

Hiiro: 「You guys go outside for a bit. You're annoying.」

As they saw Hiiro's cheeks twitch due to anger, the two rubbed their heads as they dejectedly left the room.

As Shuri had seen the three's exchange, she-

Shuri: 「You get along well, don't you?」

Hiiro: 「Have your eyes gone rotten? Those guys are my subordinates.」

Shinobu: 「Subordinates, you say.....you've really made your way up in this world, huh.....Okamura-cchi」

Hiiro: 「That's just because, unlike you guys, I haven't been playing around.」

As they were told such, they could not object. Although they wanted to believe that they were not playing around either, it was also a fact that the difference between their level of experience compared to Hiiro's was so overwhelming that one might call it embarrassing.

Hiiro: 「By the way, hurry up and decide what you're gonna do. Just to give you a warning, I won't be lending you a hand.」

Shinobu: 「B-But why?」

Hiiro: 「Because we're unrelated parties.」

As she was told thus frankly, Shinobu hardened.

Shuri: 「We were just together at that time.....we are unrelated.」

Hiiro: 「That's right. You guys and I have no relationship whatsoever. We just share the commonality of being summoned together.」

Shinobu: 「Because we're strangers.....because we're unrelated, are you saying that you don't care what happens to us?」

Her tone had become slightly infused with anger.

Hiiro: 「Aa(14), that's right.」

Shinobu: 「No way!」

Hiiro: 「Even you guys didn't bother to wonder about how I was living in this world all by myself, right?」

Shinobu: 「T-that's.....」

Hiiro: 「The thoughts that I felt when I killed a monster that resembled a person. The fact that I had almost died while fighting a Unique Monster. Even the fact that I had used these hands to wound people, you guys didn't know anything about it, right?」

Shinobu: 「B-But isn't it only natural that we didn't know about it!?」

Hiiro: 「Aa, of course it's natural. After all, we're unrelated.」

Shinobu: 「But that's.....」

Hiiro: 「Then are you saying that you would rush to my side over such long distances just for my sake? While you guys were sleeping and eating in the castle without a care in the world, if you had know that I was surrounded by monsters in the Demon World, are you saying that you would have rushed to my side at full speed?」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hiiro: 「That doesn't seem to be the case, huh. If you guys possessed such benevolent thoughts, then when I said that I would live in this world by myself, you guys would have tried to stop me by using any means necessary.」

Shinobu: 「.....」

Hiiro: 「Ultimately, you guys haven't been thinking about anyone else but yourselves. Even when you were told to participate in the war, you guys didn't bother to investigate whether or not the 『Evila』 were really such an existence that had to be exterminated, right? That's because you guys didn't think about anything else but yourselves. Have you looked around this city or the Demon World? Have you ever been to the village of the 『Orchid Race』? Even though those guys over there have had their friends destroyed by the Humas, they have been enduring for all this time while believing that, as long as they have patience, the war will soon come to an end, you know? What about the 『Shukaara Race』? Did you know that they have a history of saving humans, and that they pray as they believe that, one day, humans can fall in love with 『Evila』? Furthermore...」

Shinobu: 「Please, enough already-!」

Hiiro: 「.....」

As Shinobu covered both of her ears, her attitude conveyed that she did not want to hear anymore.

Hiiro: 「Even so, you guys were thoughtlessly going to exterminate

the 『Evila』? It's comical, you guys' short-sightedness. Look at your surroundings. The world is not so simple, you know. A variety of people hold various thoughts as they live their various lives. I don't know what kind of justice you guys held as you fought your way here, but, in my opinion, you guys who don't see anything are the evil ones.」

Hihiro simply opened the window and went outside. The two that had been left behind hung their heads, as if their time had stopped.

Next time, as I had said before, Hihiro will make a serious decision.

If you were to think 'Heh~ so it's come this' then that would be fortunate ww

## Notes:

1. -cchi: A suffix used to denote familiarity with the subject. It also infers that the speaker has a playful, childish personality. A quirk often given to characters with Kansai-ben. A variant of chan/kun and can be used with either gender.
2. -san: A suffix used to denote distance/formality with the subject.
3. -kun: A suffix used to denote familiarity with the subject. Often added to boy's names but not always the case.
4. Shishou: Mentor.
5. TL Note: This literally translates to 'Thirst for Knowledge Incarnate'. I felt that it didn't flow well, thus, I used 'Reincarnation of Intellectual Lust'.
6. Mumu: An expression of annoyance/frustration.
7. Baka: Idiot.
8. Goshujin: Master, Lord, or Owner.
9. Mon/ Da mon: Mikazuki's speech quirk.
10. Muu: An expression of frustration/irritation.
11. Desu zo: Nikki's speech quirk.
12. \*Poka\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*bonk\*. Sound of light impact.

13. Nowa/Myu: Groans of pain.
14. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think 'yeah' or 'uh-huh'.



## Chapter 135: The Start of the Dream

As Hiiro left the room, someone spoke to him out of the blue, while wearing an amused smile.

“You were quite the bully out there, you know? To the baby chicks who have yet to know anything of this world” (???)

“.....So you have returned” (Hiiro)

The person who called out to him was none other than Liliyn, AKA Aka-Loli

“Why do you look so irritated? Usually, you would have left them without even hearing a single word from them.” (Liliyn)

“.....I guess so.” (Hiiro)

“..... By the way, how long are you going to keep that appearance?” (Liliyn)

“Huh?” (Hiiro)

“Well as far as I’m concerned, I don’t mind it either way. Kukuku” (Liliyn)

Then, Hiiro finally remembered that he was still in his human form, which he seemed to have forgotten about , since he had become a little emotional. In regards to Liliyn, she did not have any problems about his form, as she had seen it half a year ago. And he was glad she mentioned it, things would get troublesome if he were to go out like this.

Hiiro used the character 『Change』 | 『化』 to transform into an 『Evila』 again, and went straight outside the inn. Although he did not know when they returned, outside the inn was Mikazuki, the Hentai gentleman known as Silva and the clumsy maid Shamoe.

“Nofofofofofo! Well, well, it’s been a long time Hiiro-sama!” (Silva)

“I, I-i-i-i-i-i-i apologize for my long leave!” (Shamoe)

“Ah” (Hiiro)

He gave a half-hearted reply, the two people who saw him was puzzled. And Silva approached Liliyn, [Did something happen? ], and then heard about the circumstances.

“I’m amazed at the cowardliness of those people from your world” (Liliyn)

Liliyn approached Hiiro as she spoke.

Hiiro inhaled and exhaled. Even he was not able to understand why he felt resentment towards those two women. Maybe because a part of his hasty inference still lingered, or maybe he just felt sick when he considered the fact of being summoned alongside such people.

He merely wanted to release the stress he was holding in from that time. Hiiro chose to tread along a dangerous road, live that way, and he found pride in it. So much that he said to them “I can live by myself.”

They were protected by the country, respected and trusted by its people, only to be betrayed by the very same people. This situation was far too similar to a tragic heroine tale, stripped of all grounds to stand on, and so for them to request for help was naturally inevitable.

Hiiro was unable to comprehend their naivety. Those words “ we need help”. They honestly believed that someone would help them just cause they asked.

They didn’t even consider the fact that there are some who would not aid them even if asked for help. Even if they shouted for help, they simply would be ignored, or their plea’s would not even be registered. But still, they did not recognize those people whom they could possibly cry for help.

They had not even experienced failure, neither despair, but the easy life for them ended now. If they didn’t change, they won’t be able to pay their bills for living that easy life they had. Hiiro never

expected them to ask him for help.

“ I thought that those idiots were fools, to think they were this incompetent.” (Hiiro)

“Guess there is no helping it, those little seedlings haven’t experienced our journey. They do not understand the world we live in, not to mention the fact that we are at war right now.” (Liliyn)

Kukuku, Hiiro furrowed his eyes as he stared at the woman who was happily laughing, sighing as he thought that these guys have the same bad taste for their laughter.

“Well, just leave them be. The Demon Lord here is gentle. Even if they are found out, they won’t be killed immediately. ” (Liliyn)

Hiiro thought over Liliyn’s words. He did indeed truly felt that Eveam was an unusual Demon Lord for a war. Showing mercy to the enemy that instigated it, even Hiiro did not understand her way of thinking. Although she said that she would use them for negotiations in the future, but to Hiiro it sounded like an excuse for not dirtying her image.

Even so, Hiiro still respected anyone’s way of life. It was one of his noble virtues, that was only if the situation was at his favour. In fact, if he had simply delivered the finishing blow to Crouch that time, Crouch would not have had a chance to use his last-resort on Hiiro.

“The rulers of this world are all idiots.” (Hiiro)

The 『Humas』 ruler Rudolf was a completely fool of a King. The Demon Lord was an inexperienced bunhead. Although, he had confronted the Beast King, Hiiro understood that he was nothing more than a foolish Battle Junkie.

“Kukuku, in any country, all the rulers and it’s colleagues are fools. I would rather, establish a new country than settle in one of these. It might be good, right? You can even become a ruler yourself.” (Liliyn)

“Are you kidding me? I’m not interested in that kind of thing”

(Hiiro)

“Kukuku, I thought you would say that. But, frankly speaking, it’s not such a bad idea, you know?” (Liliyn)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“Right now, none of the countries are upright. And I believe, you know the reason why it happened, right?” (Liliyn)

“The rulers are stupid....rather, the existence of races.” (Hiiro)

“ That’s right, everything starts with different races getting involved in a big cat fight, the reason behind the argument being, different races refuse to recognize each other, and it gets to a point where they could not control the problem itself.” (Liliyn)

Although in olden times, everybody was struggling side by side.

“Even the current Demon Lord, she is only concerned with the well being of the 『Evila』 . Even though her mind is set on, everyone should get along. She is still focused on the well being of the Evila.” (Liliyn)

“I believe that is the most natural thing to do.” (Hiiro)

Everyone prioritises their own rather than someone from another race. This is the way of life in this world.

“But what if there was a country that treated all races equally?” (Liliyn)

“....What did you just say?” (Hiiro)

When Hiiro looked back at Liliyn, she had a content look on her face.

“....Didn’t I say it before? That I have an ambition.” (Liliyn)

“... Nope, I only heard it from Jii-san and Doji-maid a few times.” (Hiiro)

“ I see” (Liliyn)

Liliyn unexpectedly gazed at the clouds in the sky with a distant look in her eyes.

“This ambition.... The ambition I have for myself is....” (Liliyn)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“.....I want to establish 【A Place for all to Enjoy】.” (Liliyn)

“ To Enjoy?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah, everyone has their own preferences right?” (Liliyn)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

“I want to make a place that anyone can enjoy without getting bored.” (Liliyn)

Honestly, Hiiro was surprised. Liliyn was pretty much a selfish person, he did not expect the notion of her being considerate of others.

“You bastard, you just thought of something rude, didn’t you?” (Liliyn)

“....Who knows.” (Hiiro)

He thought, this fellow is as sharp as ever.

“Okay then? What is the reason for you to establish a place like that?” (Hiiro)

“Ha? It’s because the idea itself is very interesting” (Liliyn)

“.....Ha?” (Hiiro)

“Think about it. We are talking about the whole nation, right? 『Humas』 , 『Gabranth』 , 『Evila』 and 『Pheom』 gathering in one place to endeavor in pleasure and amusement! Such as magic tournaments, physical strength matches, wisdom competitions and fast eating contests. Don’t you think it’s interesting-?! “ (Liliyn)

Hihiro received the impact of her idea. Certainly, it will surely be something like a fantastic story in the present situation. However, if that ambition were to come true, Hihiro would surely want to see it happen.

“Then, I recommend a marathon and cooking showdown as well” (Hihiro)

“OH! As expected of Hihiro! That is an interesting idea! I should surely reward the finest cooking that I have yet to see!” (Liliyn)

Kuhaha, Hihiro eyed the woman who laughed quite happily, it was probably the first time Hihiro felt respect sprout out in him for Liliyn.

“.... I see, 【A Place for all to Enjoy】 ...huh?” (Hihiro)

“Well, I thought that, it is more interesting to let all the people live in a rather big land, without establishing something troublesome as a country, kuhahahaha! ” (Liliyn)

“.....I just realized something for the first time too” (Hihiro)

“Hm? What do you mean?” (Liliyn)

Why did Silva and Shamoe trust Liliyn? Both of them are a existence treated as a black sheep in this world. But, after Hihiro heard Liliyn’s ambition, he understood that they might have been attracted to her and felt a glimmer of hope for their future.

Moreover, she said the whole nation.... in other words, the 『Demon Beasts』 or the taboo race of halves, and even the heretic 『Spirits』 were all the people included in this category, and Liliyn looked at them without discrimination. This was probably the reason why Silva and Shamoe were attracted to her.

“.... It’s nothing” (Hihiro)

“Is that so? Well, leaving that aside, about my story awhile ago. Supposing that country is established, Won’t you become the King, Hihiro?” (Liliyn)

“I already told you, right? I have no interest in becoming a King” (Hiiro)

“Mu....Mu” (Liliyn)

She sulked a little and glared at Hiiro.

“If you found a nation, then shouldn’t you be leading it?” (Hiiro)

“Why would I become such a person? It’s quite tiresome” (Liliyn)

“Then do not force your ideals to me if it’s tiresome, idiot” (Hiiro)

“Na?! Who is the idiot huh?!” (Liliyn)

He loosened his cheek a little as he glanced at the indignant face of the woman.

“But, you know..... I kind of want to see what becomes of your dream” (Hiiro)

“Hee....Ah... Is that so?” (Liliyn)

Liliyn turned her flushed face in embarrassment as she suddenly saw Hiiro’s smile.

(Interesting. The way this guy thinks is really interesting. If such place really existed, then I want to see it) (Hiiro)

However, her ambition was not something that would come to being overnight, it takes years to be established. If they managed it badly then Hiiro might not possibly witness it while he was still alive.

(Oh crap. I’ve began to seriously consider about perpetual youth) (Hiiro)

Although the thought of becoming inhuman is still out of the question, if possible, he wanted to see the beings of this world work hard for Olympics and sports-like events similar to the people who lived in earth.

Her idea was really interesting. He ascertained himself to become one of the judges for the cooking showdown. He had a relieved expression as he found a hope he would look forward to in the future.

However, the road would be a long and steep one, he thought as he looked around the tattered town, damaged by the war brought to the country.

“A Dream... huh?” (Hiiro)

“N? What’s wrong?” (Liliyn)

“Hm, after coming to this world, this is the first I have considered about something like a dream” (Hiiro)

“A Dream? Do you also have a dream?” (Liliyn)

“That’s rude. Besides, I told you a while ago you know?” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Liliyn)

“My dream is to see your dream come true with my very own eyes” (Hiiro)

“.... A-Are you alright with that? That sort of dream” (Liliyn)

Hiiro never thought of the details of his dream. He only felt the trance of wanting to dream.

“I do not mind it, I only want to see it. The sort of 【Edea】 you had in mind” (Hiiro)

“I-I see..... I understand!” (Liliyn)

Liliyn who looked like an enthusiastic child expressed a full bloomed smile

“Nevertheless Aka-Loli, this path is absurdly difficult” (Hiiro)

For a moment, she stared at Hiiro’s word in puzzlement, then she immediately laughed fearlessly while she crossed her arms.



“Humph, That’s where I want to be! The word impossible is not in my dictionary! kuhahahahaha! “ (Liliyn)

“..... I see. So you are prepared for it?” (Hiiro)

“Of course!” (Liliyn)

“Then, I will lend a hand as well” (Hiiro)

Thereupon, Liliyn became flabbergasted. She did not expect that Hiiro would be so quick on deciding to help her.

For this reason, she had been worried on how she would coerce him in the future, as she usually hardens on the thought of persuading him, which made her dodge the thought unintentionally. But due to his words, she couldn’t help but think that Hiiro was quite a strange guy.

“That’s natural! Y-you are after all my possession! It’s natural that you would help me!” (Liliyn)

Although Liliyn thrust her fingers at him, she was undeniably glad from the bottom of her heart as a smile starts spilling over her face. She frantically tried to hide her embarrassment by shouting.

“Don’t joke around. This is received to the last as a request. The compensation is hmm..... How about freedom at that place?” (Hiiro)

“D-Did you say Freedom?..... What are you planning?” (Liliyn)

“I’m not sure. Should I let you know? Or maybe I shouldn’t?” (Hiiro)

“Mumuu..... Eei! Do not make light of me! Even I can give freedom to such a place!” (Liliyn)

“Heh, then promise established” (Hiiro)

Even if she were make an excuse later, he could show this memory using the character 『映』 | 『Project』 . And if she still refused to agree then he would use his 《Word Magic》 on her to forcibly

listen.

Actually, when he first came to this country, rather, when he started traveling with Liliyn, everything had been really good. He did not think that, he would find a dream to fulfill through it.

Of course, he dreamed of touring around 【Edea】 , but if he was pushed to say then, that was just Hiiro's extra innings that can be addressed as a hobby.

This dream of Hiiro was, indeed, boundlessly difficult in this world. However, he had made up his mind that he would realize his dream without fail.

(Therefore, while I support Aka-Loli, I must do something about this war first...) (Hiiro)

Yes, a certain resolution was essential for Hiiro's dream. And that would be to end the quarrel between the three countries or to lead them to a new direction. He understood that it would be difficult due to the danger it imposed. Still, he decided to do something about it despite all the difficulties.

(That is right, I should do what I have to do. For that reason, I can do nothing but work without rubbing it)(Hiiro)

Even Hiiro did not expect that he would make such a decision for himself as his heart was strangely cheerful. It would seem this was the favor he would receive after spending all his days lethargic.

(Even if things would get troublesome, this is worth the effort) (Hiiro)

He kept his determination to himself as he looked up into the sky.

Although he was in a good mood, apart from that, he turned his gaze to Nikki who was joyfully smiling while playing with Mikazuki.

“Oi Baka-deshi, you will do a one hour-seiza later” (Hiiro)

“W-Why is it?!” (Nikki)

“This is the punishment for not reminding me about those fools”  
(Hiiro)

“T-that is.. you see...u...uu...” (Nikki)

“Seiza later” (Hiiro)

“.....Yes” (Nikki)

Since Nikki really forgot about reminding Hiiro, Nikki could do nothing but nod without objection.

“Ahaha! Nikki made Master angry~!” (Mikazuki)

Next to Nikki, who saw her down hearted, Mikazuki joyfully pointed her fingers at her. But her smile freezed instantly on hearing Hiiro’s following words.

“You are the same, Drool Bird” (Hiiro)

“.....fue?” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki’s smile hardened.

“Previously, when I was talking, you were annoying. This the crime you have committed” (Hiiro)

“ N-No way! That’s mean Masteeeeeeeer!” (Mikazuki)

“Shut up. Do what I have told you to. You will have no meal for the time being if you refuse” (Hiiro)

“Yes! Mikazuki will gladly eat obey!” (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki hears her meals being pulled out, her attitude changed immediately. It was evident that she really hated her meals being pulled out.

“Kui..... this is also because of your fault Nikki” (Mikazuki)

“You’re wrong~zo. This is the consequence of your deeds” (Nikki)

“That is not true~mon! The reason I had become annoying was

because of Nikki~mon!” (Mikazuki)

“Mu.... Even I as well wouldn’t be in this situation if it weren’t for you Mikazuki” (Nikki)

“Ahh! That is not true~mon! Compared to Nikki, Master takes care of my body~mon!” (Mikazuki)

“Ah....mumumu” (Nikki)

“Hehe~n! BA~KA, Forgetful Nikki, boooo~” (Mikazuki)

“Uuu, this is so mortifying!” (Nikki)

Hiiro had a cramp on his cheek while hearing the communication of the two people.

“Maybe I should make it two hours instead?” (Hiiro)

Hearing his words, both of them felt a shiver run down their spine.

“ “ We won’t be annoying anymore!” ” (Mikazuki & Nikki)

The two of them cheerfully answered.

## Chapter 136: Invitation to the Castle

When Hiiro left the room, the shock of his words left Shinobu Akamori and Shuri Minamoto speechless for a while. All that they could do was continuously overlap their sighs continuously.

Following this, Shinobu sat on the floor with her hands on her knees while quietly muttering.

“.....just what should we do.....?” (Shinobu)

Whether those words were actually directed towards someone, or if she simply wanted to voice out those thoughts, even she herself did not know the real reason why she said that.

She wanted an answer as to what she should do. She wanted someone to answer that. Because that would be easier. In particular, since she had come to this world, she had obeyed the orders of another and lived without having to seek out any answers.

It was possible to say that their environment had been manipulated. Even so, like Hiiro said, it still would have been possible to hold their own opinions within that and move while thinking on their own. That was something that they had not done.

That was exactly why she had been incapable of refuting Hiiro's lecture that could have been thought to be too severe.

Those feelings were similarly held by Shuri as well, who, upon realizing it after being told, truly felt that she was quite shameful.

Although what Hiiro said didn't have an exact basis, it was correct.....yes, it was possible to judge it to be correct.

On one hand, it could be said that, because they were words he could say due to how strongly he had lived in this world, they had persuasive power.

And so, she felt that they couldn't continue being like this. While Hiiro's words had been relentless, she could somehow feel that he

had told them so in order to open their eyes.

That was exactly why she felt that, this time, they had to think carefully about what it was they should do now and reach the answer on their own.

“.....Shinobu-san” (Shuri)

“Hm? What is it Shu.....ri.....cchi?” (Shinobu)

Upon raising her face to look at Shuri, Shinobu was involuntarily rendered speechless upon gazing at Shuri’s serious expression.

“Shinobu-san, I’ve decided.” (Shuri)

“.....decided what?” (Shinobu)

Upon hearing Shuri’s decision, Shinobu stiffened with an astonished expression.

A person that seemed to be an 『Evila』 soldier approached Hihiro and co. outside of the inn. The reason he had come was to extend an invitation to come to the castle to Hihiro, who had made many great achievements in this war.

Hihiro had at least been told by the Maou, Eveam, that once the war settled down, she would send over someone to call him over. Although she had said ‘once it settled down’, they had only managed to expel the beastmen from the country so far. It seemed that the beastmen still remained hidden near the country, but, for now, the immediate threat had been removed.

From what he had heard from the soldier, currently, the eyes of the soldiers deployed in the surroundings of the country were sparkling with motivation. Thus, even if something happened, they would be able to move immediately. As the situation had calmed down in comparison to earlier, Eveam wanted to invite Hihiro and co. to the castle so that she could also introduce them properly to her subordinates. Therefore, she had decided to have Hihiro follow the soldier there.

“Ah, what are you guys gonna do?” (Hihiro)

Hiiro turned his eyes towards Liliyn and co.

“Umm....would they happen to be your companions?” (Soldier)

Amongst them were ones that couldn't be seen as 『Evila』, so the soldier gazed at them with doubtful eyes.

“For now, I suppose” (Hiiro)

Upon hearing that, the soldier gave a thoughtful look and said,

“If that's the case, then there shouldn't be any problems. If they are Hiiro-dono's companions, then I will guide them with all my being.” (Soldier)

“I see. You guys wanna come?” (Hiiro)

The first one to bite into that offer was Mikazuki.

“If you're invi~ted to the castle, does that mean there's gonna be a meal!?” (Mikazuki)

“Eh, ah, that....well, it is being prepared but-“ (Soldier)

“Waa~!” (Mikazuki)

At the soldier's words, Mikazuki's eyes shined radiantly. A shameful amount of drool also began to spill out as well.

“Th-then I want to go as well! I'm so hungry!” (Nikki)

It was Nikki who jumped on the bandwagon.

“Fumu, then what do you guys wanna do, Aka-Loli?” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, there's no way I wo.....” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofofofo! Of course we will accompany you! By all means, we would love to join you in going there! Nofofofofo!” (Silva)

“Feeeeeeee! C-Can someone like me go too!? H-H-How gracious! B-B-B-But, I've always wanted to go at least once!” (Shamoe)

As if they were obstructing Liliyn's words, the two attendants unanimously fired off words as they liked.

"Give up Aka-Loli, they completely intend on going" (Hiiro)

".....haaa, even though I don't want to go" (Liliyn)

As Liliyn scratched her head, she displayed absolutely no desire to go.

"Do you hate it that much? There might be some delicious food you know?" (Hiiro)

"Hm.....iya, mu.....there's a fellow I don't want to meet at the castle" (Liliyn)

"Hou" (Hiiro)

Looking at her, it certainly seemed like there was someone she didn't want to meet as she frowned reluctantly. For an existence like her, who wore arrogance like clothes, the existence of a person that she hated this much sprouted a bit of interest to Hiiro. However, coercing her would be troublesome.

"Then do you want to stay here alone?" (Hiiro)

After being told that by Hiiro and thinking for a bit, Liliyn looked at how merry Silva and co. were being as she heaved a large sigh.

"Iya well, I suppose I'll just try going for now. I don't know if I'll actually end up meeting them after all." (Liliyn)

It seemed that it had ended with everyone accepting the invitation.

"Then shall we go?" (Hiiro)

Just as Hiiro said that,

"Please take us as well" (Shuri)

Seeing the person who had said that, even Hiiro was momentarily at a loss of words.



The person in question was Shuri. Behind her, Shinobu could also be seen. The question of why they had decided to appear at that place, at that moment, emerged within him.

In front of them stood the 『Evila』 soldier. If he was someone who knew their faces, then another troublesome event might occur.

“.....are they your acquaintances?” (Soldiers)

Naturally, it was the soldier who had asked. It seemed that the soldier didn't know that the two girls were heroes. But he honestly worried about how exactly he should respond. This was because the two of them had the external appearance of 『Humas』.

If he said they weren't companions, then it would lead to a discussion about why exactly humans were here. Because of their appearance, it would become obvious that they were humans who had come to participate in the war. Upon judging that, the chances of a battle resulting were high.

If he said that they were his companions and they were investigated later, it'd be revealed that they were heroes. At that point, it'd be annoying to explain why he had said they were 'companions'.

(These guys.....they've really done a troublesome thing now)  
(Hiiro)

As he instinctively turned a displeased face towards the two girls, upon seeing Shuri's expression he went, “Oh?”

(She.....) (Hiiro)

On Shinobu's face, although it was a bit cloudy, it seemed to be coloured with determination as well.

(.....I see. So they're trying to move a bit forward) (Hiiro)

However, as their method involved dragging him into it, Hiiro became sullen. Realizing Hiiro's feelings, Shuri lowered her head.

“I'm sorry Okamura-kun!” (Shuri)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“But right now, we do need Okamura-kun’s power after all! Please take us with you!” (Shuri)

It seemed that they felt bad about dragging him into it. Shinobu similarly lowered her head.

Seeing the two of them lowering their heads, Hiiro thought,

(.....I don’t have any obligation to do what they want, but it’d be annoying to have to think of an excuse. And I’m also a bit interested in seeing what kind of answer that Maou will give.....) (Hiiro)

More importantly, he didn’t want to waste any more time here. He wanted to enjoy the delicious meal as soon as possible.

“.....fine. But I won’t take responsibility for whatever happens at the castle, alright?” (Hiiro)

As he said so, Shuri, who had been vigorously lowering her head, beamed.

“Thank you very much! Really!” (Shuri)

As she seemed to dislike the smile Shuri sent to Hiiro, Liliyn’s eyebrow twitched as she made an unhappy face.

“Oi! We’re going to the castle, right! Let’s get going already Hiiro!” (Liliyn)

Liliyn aggressively grabbed Hiiro’s hand and brought him to the soldier, as if she were tearing him away from Shuri.

“O-Oi, let me go! I can walk on my own!” (Hiiro)

“Aaa~that’s sly, Liliyn-dono!” (Nikki)

“Yeah, yeah! Mikazuki should be the one holding hands with master!” (Mikazuki)

As Nikki and Mikazuki said that, they attempted to take Hiiro’s

other hand but,

Pokan! Pokan!

The pitiful two each received a punch on the head from Hiiro. And as he swung off Liliyn's hand-

"I told you that I can walk on my own" (Hiiro)

His mouth made a displeased look and he headed towards the soldier.

"Ahh Shishou! Please wait!" (Nikki)

"Don't leave me behind!" (Mikazuki)

Even after being hit, the two of them didn't want to leave Hiiro's side. They each stayed on one side of him and walked together with him. Seeing that, even the soldier somehow had a peaceful feeling.

"Ahaha, then please follow me" (Soldier)

The soldier guided them as they walked to the castle.

Having had her hand forcefully torn away, Liliyn stared at the hand she had been grasping with a red face. Even though he was capable of reading that mood, but dared to ignore it, the butler then said-

"Nofofo, Ojou-sama, would you like to hold my hand? It can be my right or left hand, ah, or if you'd like, I can even piggy-back and hug you!" (Silva)

"Why don't you just go and hug the wall!" (Liliyn)

Dogasu!

"Ugaahh!?" (Silva)

Silva received a tremendous slap and was sent flying into the wall of a nearby building.

"Feeeeeeee!?! Are you alright, Silva-sama!" (Shamoe)

“Leave that pervert alone, Shamoe! Let’s hurry up and go!” (Liliyn)

“U-u-u-u-u-understood!” (Shamoe)

“Oi, you two as well, hurry up and come!” (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said that in a displeased manner to Shuri and co., the two of them, who had been gazing at the scene in a dumbfound manner, hastily began following after the group.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 137: Threat

Having dodged the attack of the second prince of 【Beast Kingdom Passion】 , and having been sent flying out of the country, the two Heroes, Aoyama Taishi and Suzumiya Chika, were lying unconscious in a forest near 【Demon Capital Xaos】 .

“... Uu.”

The first one to open his eyes was Taishi. Countless cuts had been engraved onto his body, but his bones were untouched, and he was able to move without a problem. Of course, pain still accompanied every movement.

He gazed at Chika, who had suffered the same injuries as him.

“O-oy, Chika! Chika! Wake up!”

She showed no signs of regaining consciousness, so his face turned pale as he imagined the worst possible situation. But after slapping her face a couple of times...

“Uu...”

She let out her voice, so he was able to determine there was no real danger to her life.

“Right, we were...”

He remembered why they had ended up in a place like this. Perhaps he had hit his head on the way down, but he had been unable to pull up his memory for a while. He gradually began to recall the circumstances surrounding himself.

And he hung his head.

“That’s right... I lost...”

He participated in the war and shrunk back at its fierceness. He

fought a man who seemed to be a 『Gabranth』, but he couldn't inflict a single injury, and after receiving an attack from who knows what, they were separated from Shuri and the others.

“... Just what the hell am I doing... dammit.”

Seeing Chika, who was sleeping through her injuries, he began to feel the regret of not having been able to protect her. And the other thing that made him clench his teeth was the existence of a certain someone.

Unlike himself, a certain Okamura Hiiro had experienced a clear growth in strength. Taishi had witnessed him fight, but to put it bluntly, Hiiro's movements were so fast that he was only able to see a blur.

He was just supposed to be a guy dragged into their hero summoning by accident, and Taishi was honestly happy that he was alive and well, but he had never even imagined that Hiiro would ever have grown stronger than his own party.

What's more, it seemed he paid no attention to them, and didn't want to deal with them at all. He looked down on the four whose legs had given out due to fear, as he laughed to himself at their pitiful display. At the very least, that's what Taishi saw.

As a Hero, Taishi didn't want to believe he had been looked down on by a simple bystander like him.

“I'm a Hero... and yet, why is he...”

He clenched his teeth tightly.

“So you were in a place like this.”

The voice he suddenly heard from behind made him tense up and instinctively turn around. And before him, was a person wearing a robe that covered their entire body.

(W-who is this...?)

Taishi's instincts screamed out, that this person was dangerous. As

if he was being entranced by a giant snake, it was as if his entire body was being paralyzed. He couldn't move.

".... Two...?"

That individual muttered lightly to themselves. Judging just by the voice, the person seemed to be male.

"Where are the others?"

It was as if he had been discarded in a place without oxygen, and it suddenly became difficult to breathe. He couldn't move his mouth as he wished, and he couldn't let out any sound. A cold sweat broke out all over his body.

"... Aren't you supposed to be a Hero? Why are you being affected by miasma of this level?"

He didn't know what the man was saying, but he was able to understand that amazement was mixed into his voice.

And looking at Taishi, who had yet to say a word since their meeting, the man said as such.

"Well, I don't really care about your status. Just shut up and follow me."

Saying that, he began to approach Chika, who had yet to regain consciousness.

"... er."

"... Hmm?"

As the man tried to understand what it was Taishi had said, he stopped moving.

"Don't.... touch her!"

Taishi's face was pale, but he had a frantic expression on his face as he desperately wrung out his voice.

“... It seems you care for this girl quite a bit, but you have no right to refuse. And of course, neither does she.”

The man casually tossed Chika over his shoulder. In that moment, something hot seemed to well up from Taishi's chest, and his immobile body, that felt as if it had been entangled in chains...

“Let go of Chika!”

Began moving for Chika's sake. His sword had fallen somewhere while he was flying through the air, so his hand was empty. Without any other choice, he thrust forward with his fists.

“... It's useless.”

From where the man was standing, something suddenly shot out and wrapped around his body.

“Wha!? T-this is... gu!?”

It was something like the roots of a tree. Several separate roots intertwined around Taishi's body to bind him.

(E-even though they're so thin, why do they have such power...!?)

By their appearance, they would have broken at any instant, but even with all his strength, they showed no signs of breaking.

“I guess I should say something. If you're going to annoy me any more than this, then the first thing that goes will be this girl's hands.”

“What!?”

“Is the right fine? Or perhaps the left?”

The man grasped Chika's slender arms, as he let out cold words.

“S-stop it!”

“If you want me to stop, then just shut the hell up and follow.”

Taishi could feel it from the man's attitude. To him, pulling off



Chika's arms and legs was nothing. If it would make Taishi follow, he would probably take any cruel action without hesitation. And sensing that, Taishi relaxed the power in his body.

"... Got it. I got it, so please don't hurt Chika."

"Then let's go already."

The roots slithered back into the ground. He wondered whether that was the man's magic, but as long as Chika was a hostage, he was unable to do anything. No, even if there was no one held prisoner, the gap in strength was just too big.

Taishi clenched his fists in anguish, but without anything for him to slam them against, they eventually grew exhausted and gradually began to relax.

"H-hey, can you tell me just one thing?"

"I believe I told you to shut up, did I not?"

"..."

The intimidating aura once more began weighing down on his body. But the man conceded but a single bit of information.

"... My master is waiting."

Master...? Taishi really just wanted to ask where they were going, and it seems they were headed to wherever the man's master was.

And for a brief moment, he was able to see the expression under the man's hood. But it was only for an instant.

(A cross-shaped scar on his face...?)

There was truly a large cross on the man's face.

"Get your feet moving."

"G-got it."

Taishi knew there was nothing he could do now but listen to the

man's words. He began to step forward.

(Shuri... Shinobu, please be safe.)

.list1 { list-style-type: decimal; }

## Chapter 138: The Heroes and the Demon Lord, Face-to-Face

The 【Evila Capital: Xaos’】 palace was a large castle that was commensurate with the scale of the country. Although it can be said that the palace is located within the heart of the country, high walls were erected, existing as if to protect the castle.

Below the palaces seemed to be a flowing river. However, if one were to fall in, they would be soon be able to understand it’s nature within a single glance. The river, that appeared to be connected to the sea, was flowing into the country.

Of course, in order to enter said castle, one would be required to pass through its gates. If you were to try and enter the castle from elsewhere, you would be regarded as an intruder, captured, and be met with the fate of being sent to prison.

Although there was a large bridge established for the purpose of crossing the valley, a hefty soldier was standing there acting as a gatekeeper. Even though Hiiro Okamura’s party had crossed over the bridge and were currently entering the castle, they had, as predicted, felt various feelings from the soldiers’ gazes.

That was to be expected. Although Hiiro, who was active in the war, was an exception, there were 『Evila』 that they had clearly not seen before, as well as beings of other races that had dived through the gates. Usually, they would attempt to apprehend such subjects.

In addition, the stares directed towards the human Shuri and Shinobu were particularly hostile, any possible hint of friendliness being undetectable. However, that could not be helped. After all, this time, the humans had betrayed the 『Evila』.

Following this, they had also conspired with the 『Gabranth』 in order to destroy the 『Evila』. As the humans had also assaulted

them with complete disregard, they committed such acts believing that they were just.

Although it was undetermined whether or not the soldiers had understood their place or they were issued a strict order by the Demon Lord...no, it was most likely that both had occurred. If they were to handle this situation poorly, it was highly likely that another conflict would arise. Thus, they could do naught but merely glare as they restrained themselves.

As Shuri and Shinobu had a sufficient understanding of the meaning behind those stares, they held downcast, anxious eyes as they contracted their bodies while walking behind Hiiro.

Due to the guidance of the soldiers, Hiiro and co. were brought to a place called the 《Ruler's Room》. There, red carpet was spread out onto the floor, and, further in the back, a chair that looked like a throne existed.

Starting from the throne, a straight road was lined with soldiers on both sides, as if enclosing it. In addition, within close vicinity of said throne, individuals that Hiiro had seen previously were congregated together.

Eveam: 「You did well to make your way here, Hiiro!」

The one who hospitably welcomed Hiiro was the Demon Lord, Eveam. Although under normal circumstances, she would be planting her waist onto the throne with a dignified demeanor, Eveam was currently standing in a similar manner to the others.

Eveam: 「I apologize. Originally, I was planning on heading out, yet, as you can imagine, Marione and the others had objected.」

Marione: 「Of course! Her majesty is the Demon Lord. To have to perform the labor of stepping outside just to show appreciation for a single, mere 『Evila』 is a mistake.」

As Marione spoke thus, Eveam's mouth distorted into a pout.

Eveam: 「That is inexcusable, Marione. Hiiro is not only my lifesaver, but he is also an individual that displayed a great amount

of effort for the sake of this country. To express courtesy towards him is only natural! 」

Marione: 「 Mu(1).....that may be, but. 」

As Marione had witnessed the scene where the seriously injured Eveam was instantly cured, he could no longer express any sort of objection.

Shublarz: 「 I heard it from her majesty, you know~, you're really strong, aren't you? 」

Seeing Shublarz speak seductively while moving her large breasts with a \*purun\*(2), Liliyn's cheek twitched.

In a small voice- 「 What the hell's with those breasts.....did she stuff something in them? No, it's most likely that those aren't real. If that's not the case, then I..... 」 - Lilliyn had muttered thus.

Hiiro: 「 Stuff like that is irrelevant. 」

This was Hiiro's 'slogan'. Obviously, everyone froze as their eyes spread wide open.

Hiiro: 「 You've prepared a meal already, yes? Then hurry up and let me eat. I'm hungry. 」

It was his indifferent, 'my pace' attitude. As expected, even Marione possessed a blank expression on his face. However, only Eveam and Aquinas had faintly loosened their cheeks.

This was the proof that they had been able to slightly grasp Hiiro's personality, even though they had been exposed to it for a short period of time.

Eveam: 「 Aa(3), that's right. Preparations will be finished in a little while longer. However, before then, would it be alright if you were to introduce me to your comrades, Hiiro? 」

Hiiro: 「 I don't really care, but two of them are not my comrades, you know? 」

Eveam: 「 .....Nn?(4) Eh? Not comrades? What does that..... 」

As Eveam returned such a question while tilting her neck to the side, Shuri and Shinobu stood before Hiiro and fell onto their knees.

Shuri: 「 It is an honor to meet you in this way, Demon Lord, your majesty. 」

Even though Shuri issued such words, she was clearly trembling. Her voice was also shrill and imbued with nervousness. One could grasp that she was tense to quite a large extent.

And as they saw the two girls slowly raise their face, tension ran rampant through not only Eveam, but each and every single one of the 《Cruel》 .

Marione: 「 W-Wha-!? Y-You bastards are heroes!? 」

At Marione's cry, the soldiers simultaneously surrounded Hiiro and the others.

Hiiro: (As I thought, it's come to this.....now then)

Hiiro was wondering what would now occur- no, he had already assumed the position of idly observing how the two girls would survive this.

Marione: 「 What's the meaning of this, Red Robe! Why are the heroes here! Depending on the circumstances..... 」

As Marione's thirst for blood smashed into Hiiro, Nikki stood in front of Hiiro as if to protect him while a distraught Mikazuki grasped onto Hiiro's clothes.

Nikki: 「 Depending on the circumstances, what will happen? If you are saying that you will injure Shishou, I will not forgive you desu zo!(5) 」

A furious Nikki face Marione with hostility.

Marione: 「 What's with this little brat..... 」

Shuri: 「 Please wait-! 」

At that point, Shuri raised a resolute shout.

Shuri: 「 Please.....please listen to my story, Demon Lord, your majesty. 」

Marione: 「 How can you so shamelessly..... 」

Eveam: 「 Marione, please quiet down for a bit. 」

Marione: 「 B-But, your majesty, these people are heroes! 」

Eveam: 「 It's fine, this is an order. 」

Eveam silenced Marione with a single glance. Following this, she spoke while looking down upon Shuri.

Eveam: 「 I believe in Hiiro. They were brought here by that Hiiro. I wonder if there is a reason. 」

Although Eveam looked towards Hiiro, he simply had his arms folded and his eyes closed. It was a gesture that expressed that Hiiro had no intention of answering. After glancing at Hiiro, Eveam once again returned her gaze towards Shuri.

Eveam: 「 You, you said that there was a story? 」

Shuri: 「 Yes. 」

Eveam: 「 Talk. 」

Shuri: 「 Thank you.....very.....much..... 」

However, Shinobu, who was also on her knees, had noticed that Shuri's physical condition was poor. In addition to the wounds that she had received previously not having been fully cured yet, Shuri was currently being assaulted by a wave of murderous intent from the surroundings while in such a tense-filled scenario, a scenario where their lives could be lost at anytime.

It would not be strange if one were to be both physically and

mentally exhausted. Furthermore, originally, Shuri did not possess such a personality that allowed her to easily expose herself to such a situation. It was understandable that the mental load place on her was considerably strenuous.

As Shinobu thought thus, she placed her hand on Shuri's shoulder.

Shuri: 「Shinobu.....-san?(6)」

Shinobu: 「I'll take care of the rest. Please rest for a bit.」

Shuri: 「B-But.....」

Shinobu: 「I've also made my resolve, you know?」

Shuri: 「.....」

Shinobu: 「So.....please?」

Shuri: 「.....I understand. Please take care of the rest.」

And following in Shuri's footsteps, Shinobu began to speak.

Notes:

1. Mu: An expression of annoyance/frustration/irritation.
2. \*Purun\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*boing\* (Or something along those lines...)
3. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think of 'yeah' or 'uh-huh'.
4. Nn: An expression of intrigue.
5. Desu zo: Nikki's speech quirk.
6. -san: A suffix used to denote distance/formality with the subject. Think 'Mr.' or 'Ms.'.



## Chapter 139: Hiiro's Coming-Out

Shinobu spoke about their group, the heroes who had been summoned to 【Edea】, as well as the reason for why they had come to the 【Demon Country: Xaos】 without concealing a single detail.

After discussing it with Shuri, they together had decided that she should do so. It had been Shuri's idea to talk with the Maou about themselves.

Naturally, Shinobu had been unable to deny the possibility of them being executed on the spot. However, if they remained where they were, not only would they continue to cause trouble for Hiiro, but the chances of them eventually being discovered was high.

Rather than begging for mercy after being found, she felt that coming to the Maou by themselves to appeal to her would be much safer. Even Ornoth had told them that if they were obedient, they wouldn't be killed, furthering supporting her decision.

"I see. You two are undeniably heroes, correct? However, that leaves one small question." (Eveam)

"Wh-what might that be?" (Shinobu)

Shinobu asked as she held her breath.

"You said that you had already entered the demon continent when we were crossing the bridge. If that is the case, then who were the heroes that we saw on the bridge?" (Eveam)

"Saw.....on the bridge?" (Shinobu)

As Shinobu gave a blank look, Eveam similarly muttered, "Hm?" and-

"Why are you making such a face? You four heroes were undoubtedly on the bridge you know?" (Eveam)

“.....that must be some kind of mistake.....because we were definitely.....we met an 『Evila』 called Iraora, who allowed us to cross the bridge.” (Shinobu)

Upon hearing the name Iraora, Eveam displayed a clouded expression. She had heard about the tragedy that occurred on **【Mütich Bridge】** . And, in order to confirm it, they had performed an investigation, yet it seemed to be true.

Former 《Cruel Brigade》 member Iraora. She had recognized his strength, and believed that she could leave the defense of the bridge to him. Hence, she had trusted him and left that duty to him. However, she didn't think that he would betray them, and as a result, lead to the loss of numerous comrades and Greyald.

“Then you, no, all four of you had already crossed thanks to Iraora quite a while ago?” (Eveam)

“I believe so. The king did say that the plan would work out ‘cause he was on our side.” (Shinobu)

“I see.....however, if you two don't know of them, then just who were the heroes that we saw.....” (Eveam)

Eveam muttered with a pensive look on her face, but was unable to come to an answer.

“Allow me to ask one thing.” (Aquinas)

During such a discussion, Aquinas posed a question. Simply by standing there, it was clear that he was a different existence from the others due to his intimidating aura. Shinobu's nervousness rose even further.

“Kiria.....do you know that name?” (Aquinas)

“Kiria? N-no, I don't.....but” (Shinobu)

“Then what about the name Valkiria?” (Aquinas)

“N-no.....” (Shinobu)

Aquinas stared fixatedly at Shinobu. It appeared that he was checking to see if she had lied or not. Then, he glanced towards Eveam.

“Your Majesty, it is likely that these two do not know anything. It’s the King of Victorias after all. He likely sent the heroes over here, and was planning to use them as a pretext for war later on.” (Aquinas)

It was the same view that Hiirō had told Shinobu and co.

As she realized that it was like that after all, Shinobu hung her head in shame as feelings of frustration overflowed from her chest.

“If the heroes died here, then he would use that as the reason for a new war.....huh. If it’s that king, then it seems plausible that he would be capable of such a thing.” (Eveam)

Eveam frowned sorrowfully.

“Then you really weren’t told anything after all. Even though you’re heroes.....” (Eveam)

“Also, about the heroes that we saw. If you think about how Kiria betrayed us, then those heroes were.....” (Aquinas)

“I see.....dolls, huh.” (Eveam)

“Yes, not only that, but they were made quite.....elaborately. If it was Kiria, who was a doll-maker to begin with, it’s possible. Up until now, we have been helped on numerous occasions thanks to her abilities after all.” (Aquinas)

“.....That’s right.....she did help us. Even so.....” (Eveam)

Eveam gave a bitter expression as she ground her teeth. Aquinas continued speaking in her place.

“Ornoth, is it true that the remaining two heroes were blown away?” (Aquinas)

“Yeah, it’s true. Due to Prince Lenion’s attack. I made some soldiers

looking for them for the time being, but it seems like they can't find them." (Ornoth)

".....fumu. It appears that there were no lies within what they've told us. However, there is one thing that doesn't make sense." (Aquinas)

Shinobu was startled once more. Naturally, there was nearly nothing left that they hadn't told them already. They had intended on answering any questions they gave honestly. Her heart began beating violently at the thought that there were still some inadequacies with their explanations.

"You don't need to get that nervous. Although, even if I say that, I guess it can't be helped. What I don't understand isn't about you, but Hiiro.....about his actions." (Aquinas)

".....eh?" (Shinobu)

Shinobu became dumbfounded, but the surrounding people simultaneously glanced towards Hiiro. The person in question, Hiiro, still had his eyes closed, but-

(So it came to this after all.....) (Hiiro)

As though he had expected it, Hiiro opened his eyes and raised his face to look at Aquinas.

"That's right. What I don't understand is why Hiiro, who should have been your enemy, brought you heroes all the way here. If you were simply strangers, he would either ignore you, or kill you two human girls. Either way, there's no way that Hiiro and the two of you are completely unrelated. That's what I sensed, but how is it?" (Aquinas)

Hiiro clicked his tongue internally. Probably, if it was Eveam, then she wouldn't have thought of that question. Whether for the better or the worse, since she had such a straight-forward personality, she may not have held any doubts with regards to the meaning of Hiiro's actions.

Even if she held some doubts, she wouldn't have had the

confidence to relay them well. However, the other party was unfortunately a top-ranking person amongst the Maou's army. Hihiro felt that he didn't seem to be a person who would be amused by word games. Honestly speaking, he had wanted things to go on without that question arising.

However, Aquinas had magnificently managed to point out that question. The first one to react towards the identified issue was Shinobu.

"A-ah, that is! We.....it's because we earnestly asked him for such an unreasonable request! That's why he really didn't do anything bad!" (Shinobu)

Though she spoke in a very flustered manner, she didn't want to cause any more problems for Hihiro, who had brought them here, and tried to give an excuse. However, when Hihiro had brought the two of them here, he was more than prepared for this kind of situation to result.

"Iya, I cannot imagine that this man would do something like this for complete strangers. There would either need to be some secret agreement, or.....perhaps elicited empathy caused by an old friendship.....huh." (Aquinas)

At Aquinas's inquiry, Shinobu's face became pale and was about to object when-

"Yeah, that's right. I've been acquainted with these guys before." (Hihiro)

Hihiro's expression didn't change as he uttered so indifferently. Some of the surrounding peoples' facial colour changed. At the thought that he was an acquaintance of the heroes', their level of wariness increased further.

The soldiers began to get noisy as their hostility gradually increased. Even Marione gave him a glare that suggested that it wouldn't be strange if he started to attack him now.

However, Aquinas did not show any signs of surprise, and, instead,

gave a face of comprehension as he spoke once more.

“.....as I thought. I heard about it from the soldier who guided you here. That you were behaving as though they were acquaintances. And that Ornoth also seemed to know about it as well.” (Aquinas)

When Hiiro had first met with the four heroes in this country, Ornoth had also been nearby. Based on the conversation they had at that time, even if they couldn't be thought of on friendly terms, he had at least judged them to have known each other from before.

“Hi-Hiiro? Is that true?” (Eveam)

As Eveam still couldn't believe it, she timidly asked thus.

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

“I-is that so.....iya, it's not like I intend on condemning you for just being acquaintances. But um.....” (Eveam)

“Why is an 『Evila』 like myself the acquaintance of heroes... right?” (Hiiro)

“Ye-yes, but.....” (Eveam)

“That's simple.” (Hiiro)

Other than Hiiro's companions, the eyes of all the people in the room popped out and widened as they froze. It was because Hiiro suddenly began using magic and-

“.....it's because I was also one of the summoned people.” (Hiiro)

-returned to his human form.

\*Author's Note: Next is the about how the heroes are dealt with, and the next real meal!

## Chapter 140: The Two Heroes' Treatment

For a short while, nobody said anything. Liliyn only sighed as though amazed, while Nikki's voice could be heard saying, "Ooh~! That form of Shishou's is the coolest after all!". Soon after, Mikazuki's voice rang out, saying, "Yeah yeah! Master's normal appearance is the best!"

Even Aquinas was completely surprised at Hiiro's words and actions, that he had forgotten to blink as he froze.

"Wh-wh-wh-wh....." (Eveam)

Eveam simply repeated the same short sound at regular intervals. As she did so, an incredible killing intent welled up from Marione, and just as he was about to aim his right hand at Hiiro-

Gatsu!

-Aquinas had grabbed his arm before Marione had realised it.

"Wha-!? Aquinas, you bastard!" (Marione)

While telling Aquinas to let his arm go, he forcefully attempted to break out of his restraining grasp.

"You bastard! Why did you stop me! He is a 『Humas』, you know! He conspired with the heroes and brought them here while intending to slaughter her Majesty!" (Marione)

The surrounding soldiers were startled by Marione's words, and began looking at Hiiro with gazes full of killing intent.

"Uu~ I'm scared....." (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki nervously gripped Hiiro's clothes. Nikki, in a very childish way, said, "Shishou's enemies are my enemies!" while taking up their stance.

Silva's previously optimistic expression crumbled as it turned into a

grim countenance. Liliyn was watching over the proceedings as usual, while Shamoe remained behind her, going “Feeee” in a flustered manner.

“Your Majesty! We should arrest them immediately!” (Marione)

“W-we can’t do that!” (Eveam)

“Wha-!? Why!?” (Marione)

“I-it’s true that if he’s a 『Humas』, then it explains the reason why he is the acquaintance of the heroes. I was surprised at the fact that he was summoned, but, if that is the truth, then he is someone from another world. He was likely forcefully summoned by the King of Victorias. If you think about it like that, then Hiiro should be a victim of the circumstances!” (Eveam)

“Mu-muu. B-but it’s possible that was merely a falsehood meant to trick your Majesty!” (Marione)

“It’s not.” (Aquinas)

Marione scowled as Aquinas cut into their conversation.

“Wh-what do you mean? Do you have some evidence for that?” (Marione)

“My eyes can see through the truth. You know that as well, don’t you? That it is impossible to lie to my questions. What Hiiro has said is undoubtedly the truth” (Aquinas)

Aquinas locked eyes with Hiiro.

“And Marione, if you had done something then, you may not have gotten out of it lightly, you know?” (Aquinas)

“What did you say.....?” (Marione)

If Marione had attacked at that time, Hiiro himself had prepared various methods of coping with him. As he put his hand in his pocket, he maintained magic at his fingertip. In doing so, Hiiro was prepared to write a word to react to any situation that might arise.



As Aquinas had, no, not only Aquinas, but Eveam as well, had realized that, they didn't want a dispute to occur here.

It was precisely because they were aware of Hiiro's true strength that they didn't want such a thing to occur.

"I-In any case, I'm judging what Hiiro said to be the truth! Marione, even if he's a human, I owe him a debt! If you try to hurt him, then I'll have to punish you. That's why please, trust me and give me some time." (Eveam)

".....understood. However, if he tries to do anything funny, I will put my whole soul into destroying him, okay?" (Marione)

After saying that, Marione began giving Hiiro a stare that was even warier than before. However, at that point-

"Are you done talking? Then how about continuing on with the conversation already? I only came here to eat. Hurry up and end this." (Hiiro)

"U-umu. My apologies Hiiro. Y-you'll have to wait a bit longer for the food. It should be in the midst of being prepared right now." (Eveam)

"Geez, there's gotta be a limit to how unprepared you are." (Hiiro)

At this exchange and Hiiro's completely unrestrained attitude, Marione ground his teeth, while the soldiers were staring at Hiiro in a shocked manner.

There were also those who were internally admiring him for having broken through the calmness of one of the 《Cruel Brigade》's members to this extent.

Suddenly, Aquinas leaked out a sigh and opened his mouth.

"However, healing and teleportation, explosions and lightning, and now transformation? Your existence itself truly is like a box of surprises." (Aquinas)

"Like you're one to talk. Don't you have the power to create swords

with your 《Demon Eyes》 , and are also a Unique Magic user?" (Hiiro)

In truth, he actually knew that Aquinas was a dark attribute magic user from when he peeked at his 《Status》 , but figured that there would be troublesome repercussions if he revealed that here. Hence, Hiiro purposely stated an incorrect explanation.

However, the surrounding soldiers swallowed nervously at Hiiro's words. All of them were aware. Of who exactly the strongest person within this country was. However, there was no way that any one of them would be capable of talking so casually with him using such an arrogant attitude.

Even so, Hiiro calmly spoke without a hint of fear. The soldiers fidgeted nervously as they watched the scene of Hiiro and Aquinas staring at each other, wondering whether or not it would suddenly break out into battle.

".....Fu, you're an interesting guy." (Aquinas)

"Don't look at people and then laugh, Red-hair." (Hiiro)

Due to Aquinas's sudden smile, everyone was shocked. After all, it was a very rare sight to see him laugh at anything.

Ignoring them, Aquinas continued.

"However, you said that you were summoned, but does that mean that you are a hero as well?" (Aquinas)

Everyone became taken aback and looked at Hiiro.

"Normally, I would reply by saying that I have no obligation to answer, but it would be annoying later on if I left you guys with that misunderstanding. I guess this calls for an honest explanation.....do it." (Hiiro)

"M-me!?" (Shinobu)

As Hiiro had suddenly looked at Shinobu's face while prompting her, she suddenly shouted, as she did not think she would be

nominated suddenly like that.

“Talking about it would be troublesome, and you guys came here to gain their trust right? So do that.” (Hiiro)

She watched Hiiro as he closed his eyes and crossed his arms once more, giving off the impression that he wouldn’t speak any more than that.

“.....thanks Okamura-cci.” (Shinobu)

She said with a small murmur. She was thankful for the fact that Hiiro had thought of them, and thus gave them the chance to talk. In addition, if they were able to prove their connection to Hiiro, it may become easier for them to gain the Evila’s trust.

Although she thought that, to Hiiro, it truly was just too troublesome to explain. As he figured that they did not have any information that would inconvenience him if known, he had simply judged that there was no longer any need for him himself to speak any further.

Following that, Shinobu told Eveam and co. about how Hiiro was a human from the same world as them, and how he had soon left on a journey by himself soon after being summoned. In addition, she spoke of how they had met again after a long while in this country, and then been lectured by Hiiro as well.

“I see, so Hiiro explained the reality of the situation, and because you two felt that it wouldn’t be good to continue going on as you were, you came all the way here. Is my understanding of it correct?” (Eveam)

“Yes.” (Shinobu)

She answered Eveam’s question without a single lie.

“.....I understand your situation. And so, having come all the way here, and having spoken of your circumstances, what do you want me to do?” (Eveam)

“.....We will follow her Majesty the Maou’s decision.” (Shinobu)

“.....are you seriously saying that? You two are still heroes, and the 『Evila』 your natural enemies. And yet, you seek the decision from me, the Maou who governs those 『Evila』 ?” (Eveam)

“Yes.” (Shinobu)

“Did you not think that it would be natural for me to have you killed?” (Eveam)

“.....no, of course we thought that. However, we decided that this was the best that we could do. Although we hadn't deeply thought about how scary and painful war is, it is true that we came all the way to this country as the allies of humanity.” (Shinobu)

“.....”

“We were split up from our comrades, lectured by Okamura-cchi, and finally realized that we were wrong. But, that's exactly why we can't just stay motionless forever. If we did that, then I feel that, in itself, would be wrong.” (Shinobu)

As she concentrated on Shinobu's words, Eveam silently closed her eyes. She herself no longer felt that the two girls in front of her were a danger to her.

However, in this incident, she was met with numerous large betrayals. It was to the point where she couldn't just believe in people so early on. It'd be a simple matter if she believed them, and then went soft with the heroes' treatment. However, if she did that, the surrounding people would undoubtedly oppose her decision.

She had heard from Ornoth that the two girls had not hurt any of the 『Evila』 , but even so, the position of a 'hero' was big. Even if they came while lowering their heads, Eveam felt that it would be wrong after all to not give them any punishment at all.

“.....I understand what you wanted to say. I have received your sincerity. However, you two have still not completely grasped your own positions.” (Eveam)

Hearing Eveam's words, Shinobu's body faintly trembled. Beside

her, although her mouth was closed, Shuri's facial colour became a little worse than before.

"Surely you didn't think that you'd be released without any punishment at all?" (Eveam)

".....yes." (Shinobu)

Although she answered feebly, that was all she could say.

"However, I won't needlessly take your lives." (Eveam)

Hearing those words, the oppressive mood relaxed a little. However, Marione appeared to be amazed, as he shook his head numerous times.

"I'm sure that you two also have things you'd like to do from now on, but I can't let you do that so easily." (Eveam)

".....yes." (Shinobu)

Truthfully, they wanted to immediately go to find Taishi and co., but figured that saying something like that here would be impossible after all, and so they remained silent.

"Starting today, I will have the two of you live under our surveillance for a short while. Don't worry, we won't throw you into a jail cell. However, your standing will be about the same as a prisoner of war. You may find it a bit small, but I'll give you two a single room to live in. Are there any objections?" (Eveam)

".....no." (Shinobu)

They couldn't possibly have any. And even if they did, there's no way they could say them. They were in a position where they had been partly resigned to living in a cell, but they couldn't possibly have thought that they would be given a room.

Hihiro had told them, but Shinobu felt that the Maou was quite soft. However, she was thankful for that soft heartedness that had saved them.

“Take the two of them to the guest room in Tower B” (Eveam)

As Eveam said that, the soldiers approached them in response. However, at that moment, Shuri suddenly collapsed.

“Shuri-cchi!?” (Shinobu)

Shinobu carried held her in her arms as she attempted to wake Shuri in a flustered manner.

“Wh-what’s wrong?” (Eveam)

Eveam’s eyes widened at the sudden situation.

“Her bodily condition is probably poor. Ever since I first met her, she was the most affected by the state of war around her after all.” (Ornoth)

The one who said that was Ornoth.

“I see, understood. Contact the medics and get them to take a look at her.” (Eveam)

“Th-thank you very much!” (Shinobu)

Shinobu was thankful for Eveam’s courteous support.

“It’s because I can’t allow for my prisoners of war to be killed. That’s why you should rest. As long as you are here, I won’t allow anyone to hurt you.” (Eveam)

As Shinobu thanked her once again, the soldiers brought over a stretcher and placed Shuri on it. Following that, the two of them headed over to Tower B together.

## Chapter 141: Real Food, Demon Capital Cuisine!

“Sorry for all these problems that have been cropping up Hiiro”  
(Eveam)

As Eveam said that,

“If that’s how you feel, then hurry up and let me eat. Haven’t I been telling you since earlier that I’m hungry?” (Hiiro)

“Th-this brat.....do you even know who the person in front of you is? Even though you’re just a human, do you not know how to speak respectfully?” (Marione)

Marione tossed those words at him as an angry vein appeared on his forehead.

“Who, you say? Isn’t it obvious that she’s the Maou? Even if you say I’m ‘just a human’, it has nothing to do with it. I was only working to complete her request. So as long as she has prepared a meal for me in exchange, then I have the right to demand for it. If you still want to continue talking, then I’m gonna leave because it’s troublesome, ‘kay?’” (Hiiro)

Marione’s face cramped at seeing Hiiro, who spoke to one of the 『Evila』’s second most powerful Cruel members without any change at all in how he normally treated others.

Shublarz was saying, “Oh my, what an interesting child~” while observing him. Ornoth and Aquinas, naturally, were watching the scene in silence.

“Marione, like I said before, Hiiro is my saviour. If you continue to insult him any longer, I will have to order you to leave, you know?”  
(Eveam)

“-Is what she said, Moustache Baron?” (Hiiro)

“Mu....hm? By Moustache Baron, are you referring to me?”

(Marione)

“Yeah, because you have such a splendid, handlebar moustache. Doesn’t it fit perfectly?” (Hiiro)

Marione truly did have a very curly moustache. However, the soldiers suddenly became noisy. Lines such as, ‘what did he just call Marione’ could be heard coming from them.

The person in question, Marione, trembled. Just as Eveam was thinking that she would have to make Marione leave before his inevitable explosion,

“Fufufu, you understand quite well, don’t you, brat.” (Marione)

“.....eh?” (Eveam)

Eveam, no, the soldiers as well, gasped with amazement.

“If you can understand how splendid this moustache is, then you have quite the discerning eye.” (Marione)

Marione happily smiled as he touched his moustache lightly.

“Yeah. Up until now, I’ve never seen a moustache like that before. I was quite surprised.” (Hiiro)

“Fufufu, I see, I see. That’s because I take one hour every morning to set it.” (Marione)

“I see. I was quite surprised at how concerned you are with your moustache.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wasn’t, by any means, trying to compliment Marione. He simply found such a suspicious-looking handlebar moustache that would usually only appear in anime and mangas to be unusual. Marione mistook that fascination to be praise.

“.....w-well, it seems like the two of you have reconciled, so that’s fine but.....” (Eveam)

Eveam’s face twitched as she said that and coughed, giving a glance



towards Marione, who was currently engrossed with his moustache.

“In any case, you really helped us this time around, Hiiro. We still can’t completely relax, but, for now, the crisis has been averted. This is also largely thanks to Hiiro’s efforts. As thanks for that, we’ve prepared a modest meal. I would love for you to partake in it.” (Eveam)

Hiiro thought to himself, “Finally!” as he persuaded his stomach to endure for a little longer.

“Then please follow me.” (Eveam)

They arrived at a large hall with a long table positioned in the middle of it. On top of the table were numerous radiant dishes which drew one’s attention and tempted Hiiro greatly.

Naturally, it was not only Hiiro that was tempted, but Nikki and Mikazuki as well. In particular, as Mikazuki’s mouth began to have a large amount of drool leaking from it, Hiiro had to warn her to be careful. Even so, he understood the reason for her actions as the prepared meal was just that extravagant.

“Sit wherever you’d like.” (Eveam)

Upon hearing Eveam’s words, Hiiro sat down on a seat in the middle of the long table. As he did so, Liliyn immediately sat in the seat directly on his right in a shrewd manner.

“Then I will be on his lefffffffffftttt!?” (Nikki)

Just as Nikki arrived at the seat on the left of Hiiro,

“The early bird gets the worm!” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki took the seat.

“No fair! That’s unfair Mikazukiiii!” (Nikki)

Having become fed up with Nikki as they shouted with teary eyes,

Hihiro attempted to calm the situation.

“Then why don’t you just sit across from me?” (Hihiro)

“O-Ohh! Sitting opposite of Shishou while watching his face! That is also pleasant in its own way!” (Nikki)

Nikki burst out with a smile as they restlessly moved to sit in the seat across from Hihiro.

“Good grief, isn’t it fine to just sit anywhere? Why do these guys purposely try to sit near me.....” (Hihiro)

“Hmph, to be unable to understand something like that, you really are a brat, Hihiro.” (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said that as though looking down on him, Hihiro glared at her with half-lidded eyes.

“Iya, even if you say something like that.....” (Hihiro)

Indeed, as Liliyn had, for some reason, come to sit close to him, Hihiro felt that she was also a weird one. At Hihiro’s words, Liliyn’s face reddened. Glancing at her as she turned away, Hihiro said-

“Well, I don’t really mind.” (Hihiro)

The cuisine was more important. It all appeared to consist of things difficult to choose from.

“So everyone’s seated. Then let’s eat.” (Eveam)

As if to say that they had been waiting for those words, Hihiro and co. began shoving food into their mouths.

“Allow me to introduce the head chef who prepared this food.” (Eveam)

Upon saying that, the figure of a woman who seemed to be the chef appeared near Eveam.

“Her name is Musun. She is this country’s top chef. I was thinking

of having her give an explanation for some of the dishes here for a bit.” (Eveam)

When Eveam pressed her to speak, Musun took a hat which appeared to be a cook’s cap and began talking.

“As she said earlier, I am Musun. Now then, without delay, everyone has a meat dish on the plates immediately in front of them.” (Musun)

Like she said, on top of each of their respective plates sat an object that could be recognized visually as a steak.

“That is the 《Silver duck’s meat》. Its body is very tender, and has little fat. It is an extremely rare and expensive bird meat.” (Musun)

Its skin was glittering to the point where one might think silver dust had been sprinkled on it. Upon putting it in one’s mouth, it gave a crunchy feeling, despite being meat. Yet, it wasn’t tough. It was easy to bite through.

They relished the earth-shatteringly new texture. While the skin seemed to be crunchy, as if it had been wrapped in a fresh vegetable, the soft meat inside of it overflowed with meat juices.

Hiroyuki and co.’s faces relaxed as they felt the new meaty texture in their mouths. Musun also smiled as she watched them.

“I’m pleased that it seems to have met your tastes. Next, please try out the soup next to it.” (Musun)

A sticky-looking soup which resembled corn potage sat next to the meat. However, its colour resembled the reddish-brown of consommé soup.

“That is 《Crow Potato Potage》. Do you know of the 《Crow Potato》? It is a potato with a splendid black skin. However, it is quite the valuable ingredient, as it has only been found within the Demon Continent.” (Musun)

In other words, it was a Demon Continent specialty.

“At first, the 《Crow Potato 》 is as hard as a rock and doesn’t seem edible at all. However, if you heat it up in hot water at 80°C for one hour, it becomes soft and the skin changes to reddish-brown in colour.” (Musun)

Based on that, it could be understood why the soup wasn’t black, but, instead, had become this kind of reddish-brown colour.

“After that, if you take it out for a bit and cool it in cold water for one hour, it then absorbs the water and changes into a sticky liquid. It is quite delicious like that, but, when the 《Crow Potato》 is cooked together with minced 《Red Okra》, it becomes even more delicious. Please, it might be a bit spicy, but I’m sure you’ll become quite hooked on it.” (Musun)

As she had indicated, even though the potage was sticky, the taste of potatoes spread across the tongue. Additionally, there was also a slight spiciness which stimulated the senses. Yet, in spite of this, it gave one the impression that it would not be odd to become addicted to it.

“I’d also recommend dipping the bread in the soup and eating it like so.” (Musun)

Upon eating the bread like fondue according to her instructions, everyone found it to be another delicious way of eating. Rather, their hands simply wouldn’t stop. Feeling that she had done a good job, Musun’s face swelled with pride.

Mikazuki and Nikki both gave an extremely satisfied feeling as they wholeheartedly munched away at the food. Liliyn remained quiet, but continued to eat without complaint, so it seemed that she was also quite pleased with the food.

Silva was also satisfied with the prepared wine as he nodded. Shamoe was taking memos of everything, as she spoke, “Th-th-th-th-th-this is quite informative!” while studying the recipes.

“Well then, I believe that there is something that may be on everyone’s minds.” (Musun)

At Musun's words, everyone's gazes did indeed focus upon a single point. There lay a miniature mountain, no, a volcano-like object standing in the middle of the table.

It had been placed upon a large pot and appeared to truly be like a volcano as a red substance occasionally erupted from the crater-like top of it.

And like magma, that substance flowed down to the bottom of the volcano.

"That is 《Volcano Pudding》. Ah, incidentally, it is a dessert."  
(Musun)

.....ha? This is dessert?

It'd be understandable if this steaming large dish was the main course, but they hadn't thought that it would have been the dessert.

"First, please appreciate the liquid that has collected in the pot."  
(Musun)

Everyone took their spoons and scooped some of the red fluid that had flowed into the pot from the crater as instructed. Upon bringing it to their mouths, they were taken aback as their hands froze.

An extremely sweet smell drifted about from their spoons. Pudding....indeed, it was a sweet smell like caramel.

".....m!?" (Hiiro?)

When he put it in his mouth, his body stiffened. Then, after a few moments, Hiiro's face naturally relaxed.

(S-sweet! But it's not too sweet. This soup alone is good enough to be called the full dessert!) (Hiiro)

Seeing everyone's relaxed faces, Musun nodded as if satisfied and gave a light cough.

"Now then, this time, please try the mountain part of it. While it might look rough, it should be soft enough to scoop up." (Musun)

The sound of saliva being swallowed sounded out as numerous spoons approached the volcano. Like she said, the spoons managed to cut through the mountain with basically no resistance at all.

The pudding jiggled as they carried it to their mouths in one go. As the soup clung to it, it truly did appear to be as soft as pudding.

“Fuwaa~ it’s yummy~” (Mikazuki)

“I-I can’t stop eating it!” (Nikki)

Mikazuki held her face with both hands as she showed a face of ecstasy, while Nikki was demolishing the mountain at a tremendous speed.

“Mu.....yeah, it’s not bad.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn’s face relaxed with satisfaction.

“Nofofofofof! This is exquisite! Quite exquisite~!” (Silva)

“I-I-I-I-It was worth tryingggg!” (Shamoe)

The pervert and maid both expressed their own opinions. Meanwhile,

“.....fuu.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro also liked sweet things. Not only that, but amongst them, pudding in particular was one of his favourites. Normal pudding, or custard pudding, was usually a cold dish.

However, having been made aware of the existence of this piping hot pudding, Hiiro felt that he could no longer eat normal pudding.

The pudding was simply that delicious. Out of all the desserts he had eaten since coming to this world, it was, without a doubt, the most delicious.

“How is it, Hiiro? Did I manage to pay back some of my feelings of gratitude?” (Eveam)

At Eveam's words, Hihiro nodded in response.

"Yeah, it's delicious. It's the first time I've felt grateful for having come to this country." (Hihiro)

"I-I see! That's great!" (Eveam)

As Eveam turned towards Musun with a happy face, Musun began to continue explaining the dishes a bit more. Following that, she gave a bow and left.

"Pufu~I'm so full~" (Mikazuki)

"Me too~" (Nikki)

Mikazuki and Nikki held down their bulging bellies as their faces melted with happiness. And after a short while-

Suusuu.....suusuu.....

Their breathing evened out as they fell asleep while still sitting. Having filled their bellies, they both were likely assaulted by a comfortable drowsiness. The eyes of the two girls quietly closed.

"These two....." (Hihiro)

Hihiro tapped his temple with his finger and let out a sigh as though he were troubled. Seeing such a Hihiro, Eveam gave a pleasant smile.

"Fufu, it seems that they're quite satisfied." (Eveam)

"These two enjoyed it way too much." (Hihiro)

"Isn't it fine? Since they're still young." (Eveam)

"Haa, good grief....." (Hihiro)

"Allow us to prepare a room for you. Tonight, all of you may rest there." (Eveam)

"Is it really okay?" (Hihiro)

"Yeah, there's also the other promise that I exchanged with you this

time, Hiiro. It won't be possible to enter it right now, but I can still issue you a permit. I'll have it prepared so I can give it to you tomorrow." (Eveam)

Hiiro went, "Alright!" as he fist-pumped internally.

At that moment, Liliyn made an unamused expression. She had heard from Nikki that Hiiro would be receiving a permit for the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 as compensation for having participated in the war this time around.

However, originally, that permit had been something she was going to prepare as payment for Hiiro's information. Well, for her, it had simply been an excuse for her to accompany Hiiro on his journey. But upon coming to this country, she figured she would try to obtain the permit herself for Hiiro's sake.

Although it could be said that she no longer had to do any extra work, she somehow had a dissatisfied feeling as she swallowed all her wine in one gulp.

As Liliyn did so, Aquinas briskly walked towards Eveam. After he whispered something into Eveam's ear, she gave a slightly sad look while replying, "I see".

Then, Eveam stood up from her seat.

"I'll have a maid guide you to your room. You truly helped us today, Hiiro. Allow me to express my thanks with this. Thank you." (Eveam)

".....is it really alright for a ruler to lower their head so easily like that?" (Hiiro)

After Hiiro asked that, she smiled while countering.

"I have no intention of becoming a ruler that doesn't express their gratitude at all." (Eveam)

"....." (Hiiro)

"If you need anything, ask one of the castle's people without



restraint. Then I'll see you tomorrow, Hiiro.” (Eveam)

“.....yeah.” (Hiiro)

Upon saying that, Eveam left the hall. And, just as Aquinas was about to exit the hall as well, Hiiro firmly felt him locking eyes with Liliyn.

(Does he have some business with Aka-Loli.....?) (Hiiro)

That's when he suddenly remembered. That Aquinas and Liliyn had a common feature.

Hiiro continued to stare at Aquinas as he left, and thought-

(.....well, it's not something that should bother me.) (Hiiro)

He was as dry as usual. If needed, Liliyn would probably talk about it with him, but Hiiro judged that there was no need for him to ask about it himself.

Following that, Hiiro and co. carried the stupid children as they headed to their room with the maid's guidance.

Translator Notes:

The title of this chapter, “Real Food, Demon Capital Cuisine!” doesn't actually translate well into English. The actual words used are, “実食、魔国料理！”

実食 = actually trying out food that one has heard of before

Naturally, saying that would make for one long-ass title, so I took a more literal translation based on the Kanji used. The latter half is more like “Demon Country Dishes”, but it doesn't sound as nice. Hence the current title. If anyone has any better suggestions, feel free to make them.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 142: Late Night Conversation

The night grew late, and at a time where everyone else would normally be asleep Aquinas stood alone on the terrace, looking up towards the starry sky while holding a glass of wine in one hand.

After taking a small sip, he lightly closed his eyes.

Aquinas: 「...To think that you would return to this country」

He said as he stood there, as if speaking to himself. Then a small shadow appeared from behind him. Her face, illuminated by the moonlight, could be clearly seen.

Aquinas's eyes widened slowly, as though he knew about this individual, and spoke.

Aquinas: 「...Liliyn?」

Yes, the one who had appeared was Liliyn.

Liliyn: 「Hmph, I didn't return because I wanted to」

Aquinas turned to face her. With the way she frowned as she spoke like she was in a bad mood, he could see her as nothing more than a child.

Aquinas: 「Hmph, but I'm surprised. To be together with an individual like that. What kind of strange turn of events brought this on?」

Liliyn: 「Why would that concern you?」

Aquinas: 「What a harsh thing to say to your own brother」

Liliyn: 「Don't kid me. I've never thought of you as my brother」

Aquinas: 「Hmph... You're the same as always. ...Hm?」

Aquinas, as though he had noticed something, focused his gaze behind Liliyn. Liliyn however, as if she already knew about that existence, lightly shrugged her shoulders.

Liliyn: 「It's fine to show yourself」

The one who appeared from the shadows, obeying his master's words, was Silva.

Aquinas: 「...It seems like you have a capable guard as well」

Aquinas looked towards Silva with admiration.

Liliyn: 「Hmph, he's just a worrywart」

Silva, unlike his usual self, kept quiet and stood near Liliyn with a serious expression. It seemed like he had noticed Liliyn leaving her room and followed after her as a guard.

Aquinas: 「...To think you'd come back on your own despite hating this country so much... I guess that goes to show the calibre of the one known as Hiiro」

Liliyn: 「Who knows? Think about it yourself」

Liliyn chuckled as she gave a vague answer. After looking at her, Aquinas smiled kindly.

Aquinas: 「...Hiiro's gained the attraction of a rather troublesome person」

Liliyn: 「W...W-W-W-W-W-What do you mean by attracted!? W... W-W-W-Why do I have to be a-attracted to a g-guy like that!? No way! Impossible! I demand you take back what you said immediately!」

She pointed and yelled at Aquinas, her face beet red with embarrassment, but Aquinas only looked surprised.

Aquinas: 「This is... I only said it half-jokingly to tease you a little, but it seems like I wasn't completely wrong」

Liliyn: 「D... D-D-Don't act like you just understood something! Listen, what you're thinking of right now is completely impossible without a single doubt! 」

Aquinas shrugged as he looked at the girl in front of him shout a barrage of excuses. However, he knew saying anything more than this was pointless so he changed the topic.

Aquinas: 「By the way, I haven't asked you yet 」

Liliyn: 「Haa... Haa... Haa... Ah? About what? 」

Aquinas: 「The reason you returned to this country 」

Liliyn: 「Hmph, relax. I don't plan on starting anything in this country. I just had something to do nearby 」

Aquinas: 「...You did? 」

Liliyn: 「Yeah, if anyone has a reason to be here, then that would be Hiiro 」

Liliyn told Aquinas about how Hiiro wanted to read everything that was found in the 《Basement 5》 of the 《Fortuna Grand Library》.

Aquinas: 「I see. So Her Highness was telling the truth 」

Aquinas had heard from Eveam that Hiiro wanted an entry permit for the library as compensation for his assistance in the war.

Aquinas thought that Hiiro may have been lying about risking his life just for the sake of reading books, but he was surprised that Hiiro had actually participated with books as compensation.

Aquinas: 「If it's about the entry permit then it should be issued shortly, so be at ease 」

Liliyn: 「Obviously. Because that was the promised reward 」

Aquinas smiled at the girl who answered in a manner similar to Hiiro.

Aquinas: 「That's right. In that case, will you be in this country for a while? 」

Liliyn: 「I probably will 」

At the very least, she couldn't leave until Hiiro got bored of reading the books in the library.

Aquinas: 「I see... 」

Liliyn glared at Aquinas, who looked like he was thinking of a serious matter.

Liliyn: 「Oi, I don't know what you're thinking about, but if you plan on binding Hiiro to this country then you better stop while you're ahead 」

Aquinas: 「...Oh? And why is that? 」

Liliyn: 「He's the kind of person that doesn't like being restricted, and I can't think of anything in this country that could be used to bait him 」

Aquinas: 「... 」

Liliyn: 「If you try to forcibly make him stay in the country, then the country will become his enemy 」

Aquinas: 「... 」

Liliyn: 「Furthermore... 」

Aquinas: 「...? 」

Liliyn: 「If you try to do anything like that... 」

Liliyn's red glare intensified.

Liliyn: 「I won't just stand by quietly. Understand? 」

Aquinas eyes slightly widened as Liliyn glared at him with obvious killing intent. He also noticed that Silva behind her was also full of hostility.

Aquinas: 「 He really is an interesting person, that Hiiro 」

Aquinas was surprised that Liliyn would be so attached to another, and a 『Humas』 at that. Furthermore, he had never seen her defend someone that wasn't her servant.

Aquinas didn't show it on his face but he was shocked at how much Liliyn had changed. His interest in Hiiro, who had caused her to change so much, grew even more.

Of course, with his participation in the war, there were many things that Aquinas wanted to know about Hiiro in addition to his character.

He had also noticed that Eveam held feelings towards Hiiro that was stronger than that of a mere friend. It was natural that she would develop an interest in Hiiro, who had already gained Aquinas's attention despite having met a limited number of times.

Aquinas also understood that from the partners Hiiro brought with him to the audience today. Nikki, despite being so young, stood in front of Hiiro to protect him when Marione glared at him with hostility.

Mikazuki just hid behind Hiiro, but that goes to show how she believed that she would be safe if she was near Hiiro. Plus, the two in front of him.

Aquinas: (Now that I think about it, it seemed like Marione had also accepted Hiiro all of a sudden)

Aquinas began to feel that the existence known as Hiiro attracted those around him merely with his presence.

And despite being a 『Humas』 , he had allies that were 『Gabranth』 , 『Evila』 , and even mixed races.

Aquinas: (This guard also looks like he's got a few stories to tell)

Aquinas hadn't noticed that Silva was a 『Pheom』 , but he could determine that he was not an average being.

Aquinas: (To gather this many people of different races together... He really is an interesting individual)

As he thought that, he matched gazes with Liliyn who was still glaring at him.

Aquinas: 「Liliyn, let me ask one thing」

Liliyn: 「...What is it?」

Aquinas: 「Have you still... not given up?」

Liliyn folds her arms arrogantly and shouts,

Liliyn: 「Of course I haven't!」

Aquinas: 「...I see」

After asking that, Aquinas had nothing else to talk about. His expression was one of understanding, but was also sorrowful.

Liliyn also had nothing else to say and so left.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 143

### – Permit Received!

At about the same time, the Demon Lord, Eveam was also gazing at the same starry sky with Aquinas watching.

What had taken place today would surely leave a mark in the history of this world.

The betrayal of 『Humas』 in the peace conference. Then, the conspiracy of the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 to invade 【Demon Capital Xaos】. Furthermore, the internal betrayal of some 『Evila』.

War. If spelled correctly, it's a very short word. But in reality, it contains pain and death.

There was nothing one would gain from it. However, one can obtain security if the threat from the other side is destroyed. And, it's possible to obtain peace.

Still, is this the right answer? Fighting against someone, wounding them, killing them, and hating each other for doing so..... will one truly obtain peace with such methods?

Why did people stop taking each other's hands? Long ago, the people in this world were laughing with each other. Of course, there were some personal fights as well.

However, the fights never developed to the point of depriving another person's life. At the very least, it definitely happened somewhere in the past.

Yet, why did the world become something like this?

Eveam had a clouded expression as she gazed at the beautiful stars.

“.....Although we live under such peaceful stars.... Why does a person stain their own hearts with hatred for each other?” (Eveam)



Because it was approaching winter, her breath came out as white mist.

She remembered the words of Victoria's King Rudolf, who was at the conference..

『In that case, supposing, from now on, a part of your family was assumed to be killed by someone, and revenge is meaningless for you. By resolving it through conferences ..... Can you still make the same face while settling the matter to those people? 』

Even so, if one asked her that question, she will still never give up on creating a peaceful world. However, the reality was, she was betrayed, and a lot of her brethren who lived in the country were hurt. Some died among them.

When she remembered those things, she felt a dark feeling breaking out from inside her. In addition, there was Greyald's death, and the report from Aquinas that Teckil is still nowhere to be found.

This was all caused by the war the other party raised. If only they did not resort to this kind of violence, everybody could have attained good results at the held conference, and might have been able to live happily with each other.

She heard that death was the worst form of pain. It's painful, difficult, sorrowful, and detestable. She wanted to convey these feelings to everyone by all means.

Eveam painfully gripped the handrail of the terrace.

“Don't succumb to it Eveam.....if I act on these feelings, I might really do something that cannot be undone...!” (Eveam)

She tried to calm herself by desperately speaking out her feelings. Yet, her hatred didn't weaken at all.

(.....Kiria) (Eveam)

During such times, if Kiria were beside her, comforting words would have always soothed Eveam's heart. But, that person was no longer with her.

Eveam's heart seemed to have broken from the betrayal by the person who she had trusted the most. Thus, when she recognized the reality that she was alone in the night and Kiria was not with her anymore, Eveam was not able to hold her feelings back.

A stream of tears flowed out without end from her eyes.

(Why.... Why did you do that.....Kiria) (Eveam)

Kiria had always supported her by her side. She was the one who helped her when she had strayed off her path. They had always been together ever since they were small children, spending all their time with one another.

A best friend, an elder sister, and a mother, she was a very warm existence for Eveam.

“Kiria... Kiria.....” (Eveam)

After that, her sobbing continued for a while

Next morning, Eveam called Hihiro and his companions to the 《Ruler's Room》.

Hihiro noticed something about Eveam when he saw her face. Her eyes were swollen compared to the previous day. She seemed to have covered it with a light make-up but it didn't seem to hide it.

It was obvious that she cried last night and the reason could be understood somehow. This time, she had experienced a lot of betrayal. He also heard that the person who she trusted the most had deserted her.

As a Demon Lord, she didn't seem to have matured yet. Although her age and appearance didn't look that way, her mentality seemed to have not changed from that of a teenage girl.

Incidentally, when they first talked with each other, those were actually the impression he had on her. Naïve and fragile.

She was by no means someone who possessed the caliber to govern her race. Despite this, she still stood up, chose such a difficult road

and was burdened with that painful choice. The pressure was way too heavy for her.

Besides, no one can calmly sleep through the night with a betrayal from a person they most trusted. Hihiro can understand her situation as a thin line of nerves appeared on him.

Other chief vassals didn't mention it to her as they seemed to have noticed her face too.

"My guests, I believe you have slept well" (Eveam)

Although he wanted to hear what's wrong with her, Hihiro became silent and looked at her. Then, she took out a something like a card from her bosom.

"Hihiro, as promised, here it is" (Eveam)

It looked like a telephone card; the outside frame was decorated by gold, with a shape of a black wing embedded on it.

Eveam handed the card to Hihiro when she approached him.

"I see, so this is the permit to enter the deepest level of 《Fortuna Grand Library's》 《Basement 5》" (Hihiro)

Hihiro surveyed the card after receiving it, it seemed this permit was for 《Basement 5》 as it was etched on it. With this, he can now enjoy every nook and cranny of the library.

A smile floated on his face unintentionally. He thought that he won't be getting bored for quite some time.

"Don't lose it. Please take care of it because reissuing the card takes a considerable amount of time." (Eveam)

Hihiro returned her advice with a nod.

"S-Shishou! I want to see it as well!" (Nikki)

"Ah, Mikazuki wants to see it too!" (Mikazuki)

Two children tried to hop and grip the card in Hiiro's hand.

“Although I particularly don't mind, but supposing you guys lose it.....You know what that means right?” (Hiiro)

Both of them stopped their movements as they felt a chill run down their backs from Hiiro's gaze. However, they still had the look which conveyed that they wanted to see card.

After his attention was drawn to them again, he reluctantly handed it to them. Immediately, he saw Nikki and Mikazuki cordially smiling with each other.

“However Hiiro, we are still in war right now. Hence, the library is closed. I hope you understand” (Eveam)

“.....It can't be helped” (Hiiro)

If he was not mistaken, there were still enemies lurking in the surroundings of 『Evila』. So it was not the time for them to carelessly open the library in such a state of emergency.

Still, considering Hiiro, he wanted to enter it as soon as possible. The dilemma where he cannot possibly enter it, got him very irritated.

“Hey, when will the library be open?” (Hiiro)

It was the question he would naturally ask first.

“Let's see. It'll be, at least, after the prospect of the war ends” (Eveam)

Certainly, he seemed to agree to her words. The country was in a situation where they did not know when an attack would commence and so, it has been in tension for a long time. Even as an outsider, rather, because he was an outsider, they cannot consent to his selfish action

“I see. But I want to read the books as soon as possible. I guess I need end this war quickly” (Hiiro)

Eveam was speechless on Hiiro's word. [Haa] Liliyn similarly leaked a sigh in amazement.

"H-Hiiro, although we want to end it as well, we are mutually looking for a method for that right now. I believe this situation will continue for a little while" (Eveam)

"I agree. For those guys, a lot of their war potential were cut down. So it is natural for them to give priority on waiting for reinforcements from their home country" (Hiiro)

Eveam nodded in affirmation to Hiiro's opinion.

"Legally speaking, if we had captured the second prince Lenion, we could have used him to negotiate an end to this war" (Eveam)

But that plan could no longer be used anymore since Lenion managed to escape.

(Hm, considering that Beast King, the real question is whether the war will be controlled by his own son's life) (Hiiro)

From the impression he had when he fought Beast King Leowald, Hiiro felt the Beast King not to be a person who gave priority to the life of someone and thereby let such an opportunity to slip by.

As predicted by Hiiro, this was a good opportunity for them. The current situation favoured the enemies as they could now cross the bridge, thus letting the beast men to bring over their war potential and finally crush the 『Evila』.

Naturally, they would besiege 『Evila』 even though it was not easy to bring it down. Notwithstanding, they would freely dispose all their war potential to the surroundings of this country.

"..... For the time being, let's try this. First of all, it is necessary to cut off the route" (Hiiro)

Eveam puckered up her brows from Hiiro's mutter.

"Route? What route?" (Eveam)

“Ha? You haven’t noticed yet? I’m pretty sure those guys’ lifeline is the bridge “ (Hiiro)

Naturally, everyone shifted their attention to him.

“Don’t you agree that the bridge is their only path of retreat?” (Hiiro)

“Y-Yes” (Eveam)

“If you cut off that course, their war potential will not increase any further either, those guys who are in the demon continent can then be confined. Like a rat in bag cornered bit by bit” (Hiiro)

“T-that’s true.....” (Eveam)

Eveam place her finger near her mouth as she had a convinced look.

“But Hiiro, I do agree that it would bring good results, but how can you bring the bridge down? The enemy is guaranteed to have stationed their main forces to defend the bridge. It’s not easy to destroy it” (Eveam)

“I heard that you destroyed a bridge before?” (Hiiro)

As he said, she along with Aquinas had dropped the bridge that connected the continents of 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』

Therefore, he mentioned those words, thinking she would easily pull off something similar, but the person in question had a troubled expression.

“.....It’s impossible” (Eveam)

## Chapter 144: The Heroes and Teckil's Meeting

Hiiro: 「Why?」

Eveam: 「At that time, destroying the bridge was our immediate priority. Thus, I was able to make preparations in advance. Moreover, as the enemy didn't think that I would try to destroy the bridge, they simply stood there, dumbfounded.」

Previously, in order to make the bridge collapse, Eveam used an enormous amount of magic power and a large quantity of blood in order to construct the ultimate magic. However, it appeared to be something that required a lot of preparation before use.

The magic at that time could only be used for the first time due to Eveam and Aquinas' magic being synchronized. It could be said that they had practiced quite a bit for that purpose.

For the most part, it appeared that they would be capable of synchronizing better than the previous time. Yet, even so, it would still take time and, above all, the current situation was not one where the enemy would silently watch over them as they performed the ritual required for the utilisation of such a magic.

As soon as Eveam appeared, she would be, without question, the first one to be targeted. What's more, she would be on the receiving end of a focused attack. Although not absolutely certain, one would be unable to cast a spell that requires such intensive concentration. They would definitely be interrupted.

Hiiro: 「Certainly, they aren't such idiots as to repeat their previous mistakes.」

Eveam: 「Aa(1). Besides, the magic used at that time requires me to construct formulas before hand.」

Hiiro: 「Nn?(2) What do you mean by that?」

Eveam: 「What I'm trying to say is, the day before you want to use the spell, there is a need to assemble the formula and carve it onto the body as a crest.」

In actuality, last time, on her very own belly, the magic formula, aka the so-called magic circle, had been drawn onto it. Moreover, once the magic circle has been drawn, one cannot use any other magic until the large magic has been casted. A large amount of magic is needed to even draw the circle.

The 'prior preparations' she was referring to was exactly that. Additionally, that magic circle required a total of three days to draw.

Eveam: 「Furthermore, if I were to use it, I would be rendered useless for a while. That's because I'd become bedridden. In the current situation, I cannot afford to fall.」

Hiiro: 「.....」

Eveam: 「Moreover, there is a significant distance between us and the bridge. Right now, I am unable to leave the castle for long periods of time. That is something that also holds true for the 《Cruel》 here, but」

Eveam spoke while directing her line of sight towards Aquinas and the others.

Hiiro: 「I see. If there are such circumstances, it seems that you can't afford to use such magic at a moment's notice. In addition, if we head to the bridge, it would undoubtedly turn into a fight and might create casualties, huh?」

Eveam: 「Exactly. It goes without saying that there are many advantages to be gained from destroying the bridge. Of course, I genuinely do not wish to destroy it, but now that it's come to this, we are left with no other choice.」

A sad, fleeting expression surfaced.

Eveam: 「However, due to the present situation, it has proven quite difficult to direct the necessary forces towards destroying the



bridge. The enemy must have strengthened their defences in order to prevent the bridge from being broken. If we were to collide with them, it would turn into a battle of considerable magnitude. 」

To the opposition, it was their lifeline. In order to not allow this chance to slip by them, they would most likely guard it desperately.

In all honesty, ambushing the incoming enemy was not a difficult task. This was because, if they took the rear posts, as long as the ability difference between them and their enemy was not too overwhelming, they would be able to continue to maintain their defence.

However, this time, it was the reverse. If they were trying to destroy the bridge, the subject of the opposition's protection, then they would require a considerable amount of military might. Furthermore, a fight would undoubtedly result, bringing about further casualties.

Eveam: 「 That's why, even though I think that Hiiro's judgement of destroying the bridge is correct, it is difficult to execute such a plan. 」

Eveam shook her head side to side in an exhausted manner.

Hiiro: 「 Then it's fine if someone just goes alone, right? 」

Eveam: 「 .....eh? 」

As Hiiro had issued such words in a natural manner, Eveam was caught off guard as her gaping mouth hardened.

Hiiro: 「 Why are you spacing out? Were you listening to me? 」

As Eveam didn't return an answer to Hiiro's words for quite a while, he scowled in displeasure. Eveam, who had suddenly returned to reality upon hearing those words-

Eveam: 「 Eh, n-no, Hiiro? A-alone, you say.....w-what do you mean by that? .....alone? 」

The word 'alone' had most likely caught her attention as she had

repeated it twice.

Hiiro: 「Aa, you don't want to lose your war potential. If you say that you don't want to dilute your defensive forces, wouldn't it be fine if one were to go alone? 」

Eveam: 「.....ah, no, un(3), that's right. It's as Hiiro says, if we only sent one person, then it would not become an inconvenience. However, I should have also said earlier that the 《Cruel》 cannot move, yes? 」

Hiiro: 「Since I've heard you say that a little while ago, I'm already aware of that. I didn't say that we should mobilise these guys, you know? 」

Eveam: 「Eh? .....y-you don't mean? 」

Eveam's eyes blinked rapidly as she looked towards Hiiro.

Hiiro: 「If I go, then there won't be any problems, right? 」

As the atmosphere in that location grew silent, only Liliyn's sigh could once again be heard.

As something chilly fell onto his cheeks, he suddenly opened his eyes as he realised his sudden predicament. Although he was asleep until now, even though it could not be confirmed whether he was fully awake or not, as he was unable to determine where he was, he wore a blank expression as he surveyed his surroundings.

And as he finally remembered what had happened to him, light dwelled in his eyes as he began to restlessly shift his line of sight about, as if he were looking for something.

Taishi: 「Chika-! 」

As Chika was sleeping next to him in a similar manner, Taishi called out Chika's name. Taishi then placed a hand on her cheek and became relieved as he could still feel warmth emanating from them, even if slightly cold.

Taishi: 「Thank god.....Chika. 」

Although she had yet to awaken, Taishi felt comfort due to the fact that it appeared that she had not yet passed away. Following this, Taishi once again checked his surroundings.

This place appeared to look like a limestone cave. If one were to look up, one could confirm several groups of rocks that resembled needles. In addition, water was dripping from said sharp rocks.

It appeared that Taishi had been roused from his sleep due to said droplets landing onto his cheek. The falling water had most likely been caused by the moisture in the air condensing due to the cold, or so Taishi had thought.

The reason for this was because the chill within the cave's interior was quite dominating. For the time being, they had been given blankets, yet, even though they had wrapped their bodies with the blanket, it was still cold.

In this situation, Chika's safety was Taishi's salvation. If he was alone in this situation, he might have gone mad.

???: 「You've finally woken up, huh su?(4)」

At that moment, a voice could be heard coming from within the darkness. As he winced at the sudden voice, Taishi's body stiffened as she turned around and squinted towards the darkness.

\*peta peta\*(5) The sound of someone walking could be heard. Following this, a shadow shaped as a person began to surface from the darkness.

???: 「To think that we'd be reunited in a place like this, it's real surprising, huh Hero-kun(6)? 」

Taishi's eyes opened wide. Of course, that was to be expected. The reason for this was because the one before him was somebody that Taishi was familiar with.

Taishi: 「.....f-from that time.....the painter? 」

Taishi had remembered. He was certain that he had met this individual at the 【Victorias】 palace, during the time when they

attended the Birth Festival of King Rudolf and the first princess Lilith.

Accepting Lilith's explanation that he was a famous painter of sorts, Taishi had exchanged words with him. If he were to express his thoughts of him, although Taishi thought that he was an unusual individual, as he felt that he possessed the atmosphere of a good person, Taishi remembered that he had a favourable impression of him.

Taishi: 「 I-It was.....Nazaar, right?. 」

Taishi was unable to comprehend why Nazaar was in such a place, nor why he had his hands restrained by handcuffs.

Nazaar: 「 Oo~(7), it looks like you remember me su. 」

Nazaar's eyes narrowed happily as they peeked out from his annoying, unkempt hair that covered half of his face.

Taishi: 「 W-Why are you...? 」

Obviously, Taishi was not aware of why he was here. Moreover, even though he was handcuffed and trapped in here, it was a fact that Nazaar had, like himself, been captured.

Yet, Taishi could feel a eeriness from this entity. Without thinking, Taishi stood up, as if he were trying to protect Chika. Looking at such a Taishi, Nazaar, in a humbled, yet troubled manner-

Nazaar: 「 It's alright su. I don't really have any intention of doing anything to you guys su 」

Taishi: 「 .....I don't believe you. 」

Nazaar: 「 Well, that's to be expected su. In that case, I won't move from here so I'd appreciate it if you were to calm down su 」

As he expressed his intention of not moving, Nazaar dropped his waist down onto that spot. Although it wasn't clear as to whether Taishi had believed him or not, while not diverting his gaze, Taishi sat down in a similar manner.

Nazaar: 「First things first, I guess I should perform a self introduction su.」

Taishi: 「Self Introduction? Aren't you Nazaar?」

Nazaar: 「Nn~ That's just an alias su」

Taishi: 「Ha? Alias? Eh, why?」

Taishi couldn't comprehend the meaning behind why the famous painter was claiming that his name was merely an alias.

Taishi: 「Ah, I see. An 'Art Name'(8) or something like that, right?」

Taishi thought that it was something similar to a Mangaka's pen name or the net world's handle name.

Nazaar: 「Nn~ I guess so su...if an artist were to make such a claim, then that would be correct, without a doubt. However, because of this situation, allow me to once again introduce myself with my real name su.」

Taishi: 「O-oo.」

Teckil: 「I'm called Teckil Shizaa su. Even though I look like this, I hold the position of the Cruel's 《Rank 3》 su.」

Taishi: 「Na-!?」

## Notes:

1. Aa: An expression of affirmation often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people. Think of 'yeah' or 'uh-huh'.
2. Nn: An expression of intrigue.
3. Un: Not to be confused with 'uun'. An expression of affirmation.
4. Su: Nazaar/Teckil's speech quirk.
5. \*Peta Peta\*: Japanese onomatopoeia meaning \*step step\*.

Sound of footsteps.

6. -kun: A suffix often attached to male names. Can be used to address people of any hierarchy.
7. Oo: A lengthened 'o' sound, not an 'oo' sound. An expression of affirmation.
8. TL Note: [Artist Name](#) is the RAW. This was the best English alt I could think of. I didn't use pseudonym as that works for several other occupations.

## Chapter 145 – The Mysterious Boy

Involuntarily, Taishi stood up and entered a combat stance. It was only natural. The opponent, was an 『Evila』 and to top it off, a person who had top-class power. Taishi's reaction was only normal.

I'm a hero, and in hopes of gaining control of 『Evila』, I came to 【Demon City□Xaos】. Then the war broke out.

As he started to think, he understood that it wouldn't be strange for Teckil to come and kill him, since Taishi was a hero after all. Such thoughts caused his face to turn pale. Seeing Taishi in such a state, Teckil shrugged his shoulder.

“You can relax, it's not like I'm thinking of killing you-su.” (Teckil)

“Wha-, Why?” (Taishi)

“I didn't receive an order like that-su~.” (Teckil)

“Order?” (Taishi)

“That's right-su. I haven't received any order to kill the heroes, from her majesty-su.” (Teckil)

“.....” (Taishi)

“Besides, in this situation, I believe it is better to join you guys, rather than oppose you-su.” (Teckil)

“This situation..... Do you know where this is?”(Taishi)

“That is something, you who was brought here should also know-su.”(Teckil)

Taishi recalled the time he arrived at the place.

He was caught up in a big tornado, and when he thought he had been blown far away, a strange person appeared in front of him. It took Chika as hostage, and since Taishi had no means to use magic, he had to listen to that person.

He obediently followed him, and then arrived at a cave. The inside was very dark; it seemed to be like a space that blocked the light.

He was taken into a hole inside the cave, where there was a blind alley. At its entrance, there were grid patterns established, along with the structure of a prison cell.

Then, the man who guided them here, tossed Chika carelessly to the floor, and in his rage, thrust a fist into Taishi's abdomen; an intense pressure had caused him to fall to his knees.

The man had then faced towards Taishi and Chika who were in a crouching position, and threw a blanket at them. He then placed a bracelet like object on both of their wrists. Then, Taishi's consciousness faded away after that.

“W-What, about you Teckil-san?” (Taishi)

“Just call me Teckil-su.” (Teckil)

“Ah..... Teckil were you caught by those guys?” (Taishi)

“That's right-su. Though, I don't know about the man who brought you two here. I'm your senpai here-su. ” (Teckil)

He said it in a light tone. Looking at him, it was highly likely to forget the seriousness of the situation they were caught in.

“You don't know him? Then who brought you here?” (Taishi)

“That is.....” (Teckil)

At that moment, the grid pattern made a rattling sound as it opened. Both of them changed their line of sight in that direction. There was one person standing over there, it was the man who had brought Taishi and Chika to the cell. A wound in the form of a cross decorated his cheek.

“Ho~, finally that man has also woken up” (suspicious person)

He faced Teckil and started speaking. Teckil had been pretending to be asleep all this time, after giving Judom the information he had.



Thus, it was his first time meeting this person face-to-face.

“My lord, is calling for you guys. Come with me” (suspicious person)

Taishi made a gulping sound involuntarily.

“Uu.....” (Chika)

As if measuring the timing, the other prisoner woke up.

“Chi, Chika!” (Taishi)

“.....Ta.....Taishi.....?” (Chika)

Chika gazed at Taishi with half opened eyes. As she opened her eyes, Taishi felt relieved.

“Excellent. You three, stand up quickly.” (Suspicious person)

The Person said the same thing again, and stood near the door, Taishi gripped his fist and considered taking the person out but,

“Don’t do that-su” (Teckil)

Teckil said in a low voice.

“Wha-, Why?” (Taishi)

“You don’t understand-su. This is right in the middle of the enemy territory. Even I don’t know how many enemies are here, and if we made an untactful move, not only you but that child over there will also be exposed to danger.” (Teckil)

“Ah.....” (Taishi)

What Teckil said was undeniably right. Certainly, right now there was just the cross cheeked man as the enemy, but it might not be the same outside, there might be many of them lurking outside.

Even if they did subdue the man, there was no guarantee that they would be safe after.

“Besides, he is strong-su. Are you thinking of winning without a weapon-su.” (Teckil)

“Well, there is magic, right?” (Taishi)

“It seems like you don’t know about it-su, so let me tell you-su.”(Teckil)

Teckil jerked his chin and motioned it towards Taishi’s right hand.

“Those bracelet are called 《Magic Sealing Bracelet》 -su” (Teckil)

“Eh? Is this a Magical Tool?” (Taishi)

“They are similar to my handcuffs” (Teckil)

The handcuffs placed on Teckil were more powerful than the ones on Taishi and Chika. It meant they viewed Teckil as more of a threat, but in this situation both of their magical powers were sealed.

“Now then, in this situation can you defeat him without any weapon and magic-su?” (Teckil)

“Tha-, That is.....” (Taishi)

“In addition to that, this girl has only just woke up. At the moment, it would be better to quietly obey him for our own sake-su.”

Taishi accepted the words from Tekil and dropped his shoulder.

“.....Understood. Chika, can you stand up?” (Taishi)

“Y-Yeah.....” (Chika)

Without understanding the situation she was in, she could only nod.

“I know there are many things you would like to ask, but for now bear with it” (Taishi)

“I want to ask, where is this place, what happened, also about that person, but it doesn’t seem like the right place for it.” (Chika)

When Chika woke at last, judging that the situation was not favourable, she agreed.

“What are you doing? Follow me fast.”(Person)

Upon hearing the man’s voice, the three stood up and left the prison.

The place Taishi and others were taken was supposed to be inner part of the cave, but the place was surprisingly bright. However, it was not the sunlight rather; it was a bluish-white gemstone casting a strong light.

The sources of the strong radiance were four giant gemstones. From inside the cave sprouted roots similar to that of a giant tree which supported the four giant gemstones, the roots wrapped and entwined around them.

There were two giant gemstones at each side of entrance. In front of the entrance was the stairs and on top of stairs, an ornamented chair like a throne was erected.

“I was waiting.” (Throne guy)

There was a person sitting on that throne and on the left side were two women, standing close, holding some kind of white paper in their hands.

“A child?” (Taishi)

Taishi upon seeing the figure of the person sitting on the throne involuntarily muttered. As Taishi saw it, there definitely was a child sitting on the throne.

His age seemed to be around 10 years old. He had blonde hair, and his smiling face had the charming power to capture the heart of anyone regardless their gender or age.

The word ‘bishounen’ won’t be able to cut it. As Taishi saw his face, he thought, if the boy were to go on television, he would become a ‘super-idol’ overnight.

Even Chika, who was standing beside Taishi, was staring at the child, astonished and in blank amazement.

(He has the atmosphere of a character that only comes out in games)(Taishi)

Taishi, who on reflex prepared to walk towards a beauty like that. If the boy grows up to be an adult, his beauty would be more polished and would attract each and everybody, Taishi gulps.

“Come on, over here. Let’s talk.” (Bishounen)

As if the boy understood what the three were thinking, he chuckled.

Involuntarily, Taishi’s legs start walking in his direction, but the moment Teckil’s face entered his vision, he is brought back to his senses, and his eyes open wide.

“He-, Hey Teckil, what happened?” (Taishi)

Taishi asked him, because Teckil, for some reason was sweating, from his head, abnormally.

His eyes were wide open, as if he had seen something unbelievable.

Following this, Teckil’s mouth, apparently becoming tongue tied at a single word, began to heavily ask the following.

“N-No way..... such.....did you betray us.....?” (Teckil)

Teckil said those words towards the person sitting on the throne. Taishi thought that the boy had betrayed Teckil, and so he was saying such words.

“I need an answer-su. Did you betray us-su .....Kiri-chan!?”

That was obviously a way of calling some close to you, due to that Taishi now believed his thinking was right.

“D-Do you know, that kid?” (Taishi)

Regarding the question, Teckil slightly shook his head.

“It’s different.....no, it’s not-su . I also know about the boy-su. But, the person I’m talking to right now is you, Kiri-chan-su.” (Teckil)

And so, the line of sight of Teckil fell not on the boy, but on one of the girls standing beside the boy. Judging from the flow of talk, it seemed like he was speaking to the women and not to the boy.

“Is it alright for me to talk, Your Majesty?” (Kilia)

The women gently lowered her head toward boy.

“Yeah, it’s okay” (Bishounen)

“I give my thanks” (Kilia)

She easily got the permission, and now faced Teckil.

“It’s been a while, Teckil-san” (Kilia)

“.....Kiri-chan” (Teckil)

He clenched his teeth, and spoke in a forced voice. He made an unpleasant face when he found out that the woman was indeed the person he knew.

“Why are you in a place like this-su? Wasn’t Eveam-sama supposed to be the only one you decided to follow-su” (Teckil)

“.....” (Kilia)

“.....Did you from the start-su? Did you betray Eveam-sama from the start.....” (Teckil)

Looking at him talking in astonished expression, the boy opened his mouth with a gleeful voice

“It’s alright NO.05, tell him the truth.” (not so good bishounen)

“Th- .....the truth? N-No, leaving that aside, what do you mean by NO.05-su?” (Teckil)

Looking down on Teckil with a lifeless and cold stare, the woman addressed as NO.05 spoke.

“I’m the intelligence specialised Varukaria, identification NO.05. The Kilia you knew is an artificial being made for the purpose of getting close to you guys.” (NO.05)

“Wha-What, are you talking about-su?” (Teckil)

“There is only one leader to me, and that is, His Majesty, sitting over here.” (NO.05)

“No-No way.....” (Teckil)

Teckil fell down on to his knees as he stared hard at the ground.

“Then, that means the information I obtained till now.....?” (Teckil)

“Yes. Do you remember that, you always used me as an intermediary and gave me all the information. And naturally, so my situation was always convenient, altered it and gave it to the country. ” (NO.05)

Teckil’s face became more and more pale.

“Wha-What about, the information about the ‘Gabranth ‘and ‘Huma’ having secret agreements, and that the conference had a dark plot behind.....? ” (Teckil)

“Yes, I told them the information that was convenient for us” (NO.05)

He clenched his hands which were now on the ground.

“WH-What, about the conference!? What about demon lord-sama!? What about 【Xaos】 !?” (Teckil)

“Rest assured, during the conference an unforeseen event occurred. Well leaving that matter aside, Eveam and 【Demon City】 are somehow safe” (NO.05)

Teckil sighed heavily as he felt exhausted from all the exertion.

“Well, these works are done by people, so there will always be mistakes Teckil-kun” (really asshole bishounen)

The boy still didn't break his smile. It was as if he was even enjoying the mistake he had made.

“.....That's right, the biggest problem here was you-su.”  
(Teckil)

He started glaring at the boy.

“Ahaha, you're scary. It is wrong to glare at me with eyes like that. Even though, I look like this, I'm still your boss.” (really asshole bishounen)

“Kuu.....” (Teckil)

Taishi, as he saw the two exchange glares, spoke mildly.

“H-Hey Teckil, who is that kid?” (Taishi)

“.....” (Teckil)

“Hmhmhm, come on now tell me, Teckil” (Taishi)

Taishi glanced at the boy and once again looked towards Teckil. Teckil exhaled a large breath and slowly opened his mouth.

“He is..... the Demon Lord.” (Teckil)

## Chapter 146 – Ex-Demon Lord Avoros

As they heard the words from Teckil, Taishi and Chika both froze.

“Eh.....Hey, Taishi. The Demon Lord is a girl, right?”(Chika)

“Ah-Aah.....that’s what I’ve heard from the King.....”(Taishi)

Towards the two people who were bewildered, Teckil showed a wry smile.

“Ah, that way of speaking was a mistake. He is a Demon Lord, but from before. In other words, he is the ex-Demon Lord.” (Teckil)

“E, ex-Demon Lord?”(Taishi)

Taishi, opened his eyes wide and stared at the boy. The boy was still smiling as if he was having fun.

“At that time, when ‘that’ appeared before my eyes.....it was also your doing, right-su?” (Teckil)

“Ahaha, don’t you miss it? But, it did mature, and you killed it one time already. Though, in the old days ‘that’ was only dealing with you with just one hand.” (Avoros)

“Thanks to you, right now I’m a 《Cruel》 -su” (Teckil)

“It means, that time is certainly flowing.” (Avoros)

“.....Leaving that aside, the fact that you’re alive means, your death was a lie-su?”(Teckil)

“Yeah, that’s right.” (Avoros)

“But how did you do it-su? At that time, it was Aquinas who had confirmed it-su ?” (Teckil)

He was the person holding the title of the strongest 『Evila』 . It was indeed a mystery, why didn’t Aquinas discover that Avoros had faked his own death.



“Yeah, his eyes were the the most troublesome thing. That’s why, as you just said I was living, but maybe it is better to say that I was revived.” (Avoros)

“Revived.....?” (Teckil)

“Well, to to be more precise, I’m still incomplete” (Avoros)

“Incomplete.....?” (Teckil)

“Anymore than that is a secret? Yes, for now.” (Avoros)

He said that while bringing his index finger near his lips and closing one eye.

“.....What is your aim-su?”(Teckil)

“Nh~? I said just now that i’m incomplete. So maybe.....,becoming complete” (Avoros)

“.....?”(Teckil)

“You’re making a face expressing that you don’t understand what i’m saying. Well, it is to be expected. If so, how about you let that hero-kun over there, explain what is happening in the world right now?” (Avoros)

While an “eh?” escaped his lips, Teckil looked towards Taishi.

“Eh.....Me?” (Taishi)

“Yeah, that’s right. Didn’t you guys invade the 【Demon City□  
Xaos】 ” (Avoros)

Teckil was startled after hearing those words, and understood the reason why Iraora had given them the permission to pass the bridge.

Then he discovered a single truth regarding the existence of this Kilia, and the reason to why he who had the job of gathering information was the first one to be captured.

“.....Are we.....at war-su?” (Teckil)

“Whoa~, as expected of Teckil-kun. That’s right, right now we are at war. By the way the Humas and Gabranth are in an alliance.” (Avoros)

“Wha!?” (Teckil)

What could be considered as the worst case scenario had just unfolded. Before the conference he had told Kilia about the strange actions the two races were taking, but if it was as she said just now, then the information was not delivered to Eveam.

He remembered one more thing. Kilia said that Eveam and the 【Demon City】 were both safe. At least, it meant that they have not been assaulted yet.

But the fact that there was a war going on, meant the situation was dire. After all, two races are in an alliance and are trying to destroy the 『Evila』.

The boy seeing Teckil, gritting his teeth, and spoke,

“I said just now that an unexpected event occurred. That is in one way your fault too.”(Avoros)

Teckil’s body stiffened. That was indeed true, the fact that he passed the information to Judom could not be revoked.

“Well, whatever happened in the conference, wouldn’t have become a hinderance for the plan. Even so ,it is also the truth that I was underestimating your power. The handcuffs, this time will not restrain your physical abilities, but it will seal your magical power.”(Avoros)

When Teckil was brought here, certainly they took away his favorite pen and placed handcuffs, which restricted physical movement. The boy thought if he took away Teckil’s favorite pen, then he wouldn’t be able to use magic.

That was because Teckil had always done actions that made it look like he needed his pen for using magic. For times when he was in a

dire situation he had this trump card saved up, but now, everything was revealed and he was handcuffed with magic sealing handcuffs.

“This way, you can no longer do anything. As for why I called you here, simply put, it is to talk about what is gonna happen from now on.” (Avoros)

The three stared at the boy quietly.

“In truth, the other two heroes should have also been here, but it seems like there was another unexpected event. From what I gathered, both of them are with Eveam.” (Avoros)

That moment, a shock ran through the spine of Taishi and Chika. They couldn't remain calm after learning that Shinobu and Shuri had been captured by the enemy leader.

“Th-That story!!”(Chika)

“Nh?”(Avoros)

“That story, tell me in detail.”(Chika)

Chika as if she had lost control over herself pressed forward for an answer.

“I-It's useless Chika!”(Taishi)

Taishi tried to stop her advance, but the man with the cross wound appeared before her.

“Ahh.....!”(Taishi)

Taishi was surprised at the speed he had appeared in front of Chika.

“Women, you move any forward and i'll cut off one of your legs.”(Bruise man) (the X-man seems much better tho)

An intense bloodlust pierced Chika, as if it was a sharp blade.

“Chika!” (Taishi)

Taishi rushed towards Chika, who was hit by the bloodlust and had fallen on her knees.

“Ahaha, don’t scare them too much.”(Avoros)

The cross wounded man bows his head to the words of the boy.

“Ah, yes, yes. You don’t have to worry about the other two heroes. Eveam is really kind, and i don’t think she will get them killed. Well, they might be in confinement though.” (Avoros)

But Taishi and Chika didn’t believe his words. As they had been told nothing about Eveam, the two thought that their friends might have been killed by them.

Taishi supported the body of Chika which was trembling.

“Ta-, Taishi.....”(Chika)

“Let’s..... believe that Shinobu and Shuri are still alive.”(Taishi)

They did not believe in the boy’s words, but rather in the strength of Shinobu and Shuri. While feeling uneasy, Chika nodded at Taishi’s words.

“Now, is it alright?” (Avoros)

The boy resumed his talk from before.

“I said, I will talk about things from now on, did you understand it’s meaning? You people know right? That you guys have no right to refuse me.”(Avoros)

Unpleasant sweat started flowing from each on of them.

“First of all, let me tell you why I started this war.” (Avoros)

The three unknowingly gulped after hearing the boy’s words.

“This war, to tell you the truth, I don’t really care about it’s conclusion.”(Avoros)

“.....What do you mean by that-su?”(Teckil)

“Only the fact that a war has started, is all I need.”(Avoros)

“.....?”(Teckil)

“Fufufu.....”(Avoros)

The boy stood up from the chair and slowly descended the stairs.

“These things called ‘people’ are really interesting. Instead of good emotions, the bad emotions start welling up more easily. And that so even from a single opportunity.” (Avoros)

“.....What are you trying to say?”(Teckil)

Avoros stopped walking when he reached the middle of the stairs.

“The negative feelings are more powerful than any other feelings. On top of that, it is easy to dye something that is pure with it”(Avoros)

Not understanding what he was saying, Teckil frowned.

“Fufufu, looks like I talked too much. Anyhow, now that a war has started, the negative feelings will continue to rise up within the hearts of people. My aim is to strengthen that feeling. And in that case.....Ufufufu”(Avoros)

“.....It doesn’t change at all, that face of yours-su.” (Teckil)

“Oya? Is that so?”(Avoros)

“It doesn’t change.....Those eyes that see humans as chess pieces haven’t changed from the time you were Demon Lord-su.”(Teckil)

“Ufufufu, are you perhaps gonna say something? Like, because I have these eyes, I was removed?”(Avoros)

“.....”(Teckil)

“Ufufufu, like I said before. I was not removed. I let you remove me. It was for my goal.”(Avoros)

“.....”(Teckil)

“Well, let me tell you guys your role here.”(Avoros)

The boy faced towards Taishi and Chika.

“Ah, now that I think about it, I haven’t introduced myself yet, have I?”(Avoros)

From the point of view of the people who hadn’t heard the talk just before, the smile of the boy would seem to come from a lovely child, but Taishi and others only felt chills down their spines.

“Well then, like Teckil-kun said I am the ex-demon lord. In other words, I am the brother of the current demon lord, that is Eveam.....”(Avoros)

“You’re her brother!” or so Taishi made an expression to retort.

“It’ll be good if you remember it. As from today it’s the name of your master.”(Avoros)

The boy grinned and spoke again.

“My name is Avoros. Avoros.Gran.Early.Evening.”(Avoros)

## Chapter 147 – Hihiro's Mission

Hearing the name of the ex-demon lord, Taishi once again realised that they got involved in something ridiculous.

They had heard rumours about the ex-demon lord from Rudolph, the King of 【Victorias】.

He had an inhuman and unparalleled cruel personality, just hearing those words had sent a shiver down his spine. Though, they had never thought that he would be a child, but all their doubts were discarded the moment they saw Teckil's expression.

For this reason, the shivers they had from before didn't stop. Right now, the lives of Taishi and others were in the palms of his hand. Avoros could easily crush them anytime.

Chika trembled as her face became pale. Thinking how did it come to this, Taishi closed his eyes and grit his teeth. The teeth make chattering sound while grinding. Taishi realised that he was trembling.

“Well then, the talk derailed, but it looks like I can finally get down to the main business.”(Avoros)

The boy, who was the source of fear, spoke..

“Even though you guys have a role to play, Teckil-kun will be in confinement for a while.”(Avoros)

Teckil couldn't change the expression that said he had been expecting such an outcome. No, he had already made his resolve to fall dead in that cave. And so he doubted whether things would end just with confinement.

And next was the turn of Taishi and Chika.

“You guys whatever.....You.”(Avoros)

And the one he pointed his finger towards

was.....Chika.

“.....Eh?”(Chika)

“That’s right, you. You seem like you could become a good vessel.”(Avoros)

“Eh.....vessel?”(Chika)

Chika became astonished without knowing what was happening. Taishi was the same, without understanding the words Avoros said, he stiffened.

Then, Avoros pointed his finger to one of the four Shining stones from before.

“I want you to enter that”(Avoros)

“Wha, What did!”(Taishi)

At that moment, an impact ran across the nape of Taishi’s neck.

“Yeah, you’ll have to be silent for a while.”(Avoros)

When he turned his head to see, there stood, Avoros, who was supposed be in front of him. Then, Avoros grabbed the hands of Chika and pulled her along.

“Ta,Taishi! Le-let go of me!”(Chika???)

At that moment, Taishi saw it. From Avoros, a dark muddy magical power started oozing out, and it started to flow towards Chika.

“Get a.....w.....a.....y!?”(Chika)

Chika’s eyes become hollow, and she started losing power like a marionette which had its strings cut.

“”Chi.....Kaa.....”(Taishi)

Desperately trying to open up his closing eyes, Taishi extended his hands towards Chika. However, Chika was pulled away heartlessly by Avoros who then started approaching the blue stone.



The dark magical power which Taishi saw, covered Chika's body and like a hand it grabbed hold of Chika, causing her to float in mid-air. And just like that, she was placed in front of the blue stone.

Gradually her body was sucked in by the blue colored stone..

“.....Ta.....ishi.....”(Chika)

Taishi understood that she was calling his name, but at the same time his consciousness faded.

---

“Hey, it doesn't look like Lenion-sama is going to wake up any time soon.”(solder 1)

“Nh? Yeah, after all he was beaten up by Ornoth of 《Cruel》.”(soldier 2)

The ones who were talking were the soldiers of Gabranth. They were monitoring the bridge, to check for anything abnormal happened .

Yesterday night, the prince was carried in by Barid of 《Three beast warriors》 . He had lost consciousness and his body was worn-out.

The soldiers who saw that scene had a shock run through them. Lenion was not inferior to any of the Three warriors in terms of power. That Lenion was worn-out and wouldn't have been saved if the three warriors didn't help him in time.

After all, the demon lord and Cruel, who weren't been supposed to be present there, suddenly appeared, which caused unrest in all the soldiers. Their strength matched that of that of their rumors, the soldiers of Gabranth and Humas were suppressed in the blink of an eye.

When changes occurred in the situation, taking refuge for rearranging the formation became unavoidable . It was told to soldiers that Lenion was brought on to **【Mutich Bridge】** to rest.

Here, there were sufficient forces and excellent medical teams too.

But a lot of time had passed since then and the soldiers were worried about Lenion, who had yet to wake up. Although he had a bad mouth and attitude, in the current situation without the king and first prince Leglas, his existence became the core.

If he remained out of the front lines any more, it would also affect the morale of the troops. That's why the fact that Lenion has been beaten up was only told to certain soldiers.

"Come back quickly"(soldier 1)

"That's right. Even though he is like that, but during a war he is one we can rely on."(soldier 2)

The soldiers started to laugh.

"And on this bridge there is a lot of security."(soldier 1)

"Well, yeah, I don't think the 'Evila' will come attack us in this kind of situation."(soldier 2)

"That's right. Even if they do come, they would encounter the war potential here."(soldier 1)

The soldiers started laughing once again and soon a beast man soldier came running over. Seemed like he was in a hurry as he was panting heavily.

"O,Oi. What happened?"(soldiers 1&2)

The soldier asked the male soldier who was breathing heavily while supporting his body, with hands on his knees. It was easily understandable that he was in a serious hurry.

"Fuu~, Can I have a moment?"(male soldier)

When the male soldier raised his face up, the other two soldiers were,

"A,Aa"(soldier 1)

"What happened? Ah, did Lenion-sama wake up."(soldier 2)

The soldier shook his head.

“No, that’s not it.”(male)

“Nh? So why are you in such a hurry?”(soldier 1)

“That’s right. Nh? By the way I’ve not seen you here? Are you the person in the defence group?”(soldier 2)

The man’s lips stretched into a grin.

“No, instead of defence.....it should be destruction.....?”(male)

“.....Ha? What are you say.....!”(soldier 1)

Slash!

In that moment the soldier slashed by the man, fell on his knees as he lost consciousness

“Wh, What are you!?”(soldier 2)

The other soldier spoke in startlement, but the man drew his sword towards him.

“Slow”(male)

In the blink of an eye he covered the distance between them and,

Slash!

His body was slashed. But instead of feeling pain of being cut, as if his brain had jolted, his body stopped responding to him. During his fading consciousness, he took a good look at the man’s face.

(It is really not a face I’ve seen. He is wearing the same armor and also wearing spectacles. But his swordsmanship can’t be said anything less than a superhuman feat.)(soldier 2)

“U.....a.....”(soldier 2)

While looking at the direction of the soldier, the man spoke.

“Sleep. By the time you wake up, everything will be finished, probably.”(an innocent bystander)

Hihiro used the special effect of the “Severing Sword – Slasher”, which used magic which could make the person cut by it lose consciousness on the two soldiers.

The place was still far away from the **【Mutich Bridge】**. There were small hills in that area, which could be considered the best place for patrolling.

(So they are waiting on the bridge as expected)(Hihiro)

On the bridge, a large number of soldiers were been stationed. Practically, it was not that difficult to destroy the bridge as a whole. But he was asked by Eveam to,

“Keep the damages to as a minimum as you can”(Eveam)

Hihiro realised that he had been given the burden of not injuring even the enemies even by a scratch. Normally, it was something so stupid that one would just laugh at.

“It seems to me, Hihiro can do it so I ask you of it.....can you do it?”(Eveam)

If asked like that, it was really difficult to deny.

(Geez, I took up a really troublesome request. But oh well.....)  
(Hihiro)

“If you come back just as fine, then even though it is difficult, I will ask Musun to make food for you everyday.”

He had no choice but to accept it after she said such a thing. The food made by [Demon City. Chaos]’s head chef Musun was quite exquisite . He thought if he could get to eat such a dish again, he was willing to do a small amount of troublesome work.

“Well then, now what shall I do.....”(Hihiro)

Hihiro once again observed the bridge. The bridge was smaller than

other bridges. And also extremely small. But well, other bridges were abnormally long. From the view, the bridge seemed to be about 2 kilometers long.

The width was a little more than 10 metres, but it didn't seem too sturdy.

(To me, it doesn't matter how much sturdy it is)(Hiiro)

While thinking so, he closed his eyes and started forming a plan. After thinking for a while,

“Then, this will do for now, though this will be pretty conspicuous, but it'll also act as a restraint for them.....”(Hiiro)

He started collecting magic in the index fingers of both his hands. The moment he finished writing, he activated the 'transfer' character he had prepared beforehand.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 148 – Mütich Bridge, Great Collapse!

\*pishun

Everybody was dumbfounded on the sudden appearance of a beast-man just before the bridge. Although they did not understand from where that person appeared from, the face of the sudden visitor had an identical appearance to that of the beast-men soldiers. They could only stare in utter amazement.

(These guys are all incompetent. If it were me, I would have swiftly attacked any suspicious person who appeared before me) (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro thought so, it was also convenient for him if they did not retaliate.

As a start, he thrust the forefinger of his right hand to the bridge and a pale light glittered from his written character. He then immediately activated his magic. Suddenly,

“Owawawawa!” (Soldier A)

“Hee? nowa!” (Soldier B)

“W-we are slippinggg!” (Soldier C)

Suddenly, the people on bridge began falling over to the shore. Some kept sliding non stop on the bridge. Furthermore, since most of the people on top of the bridge had fallen over, the people who were still standing on the ground were also dumbfounded as they had experienced a very strange spectacle.

(Kuku, Stay together just like that) (Hiiro)

This time, Hiiro raised his left hand towards the bridge

“Now, fall over with this bowling ball-!” (Hiiro)

When he invoked the character, an intense wind gathered at the tip

of Hiiro's finger.

buwon!

The wind accumulated together to form a ball and when released from one side of the bridge, it flew to the opposite bank.

“””””Uwaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!””””” (Bowling Pin-Soldiers)

Similarly, all the members present on the bridge were also pushed to the farther shore. No one was able to resist as they amusingly slipped away. one by one.

Some managed to escape from falling over to the sea by clinging to the bridge. However, even they fell off as they were washed away by the sea.

Moreover, due to the power they had witnessed, the remaining people abandoned the bridge as they fell over one after another.

After Hiiro dealt with the garbage on the bridge, he made a smiling face as he quickly wrote another character. Then, the character turned towards the bridge and invoked itself.

dogogogogogogogogogon!

Cracks suddenly appeared on the bridge as it began to break down. The collapsed splinter sank into the sea. And, the approximately two kilometers long continental bridge quickly changed to an empty space in the blink of an eye.

The soldiers were taken back in astonishment. The soldiers in the farther shore, including the numerous fallen soldiers, were frozen still on witnessing such a spectacle before their very eyes.

(What a disappointment. Although I thought I would be obstructed a little .... I was a fool to have expected something from them)  
(Hiiro)

Although the main reason why they were not able to retaliate was because of Hiiro's abnormal phenomenon.

(Well, I guess that woman won't have any complaints with her request) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro destroyed the 【Mütich Bridge】, he made sure there was no casualties and missing people. He was able to accomplish it without injuring anyone. It was an unexpectedly simple task.

At first, he had shot the character 『摩擦無』 | 『Frictionless』 towards the bridge. Actually he was troubled as he could not choose between 『摩擦零』 | 『Zero Friction』 and the previous one, either one of the characters gave the same effect and were both easy to write.

The effect was literally defined by the character that got rid of the frictional resistance of the bridge. In other words, it was impossible to stand on the bridge and so the beastmen kept slipping over and over. It was similar to a phenomenon caused by a ground spilled with oil. Naturally, air friction still existed, sooner or later they would have stop slipping over.

Following this, as if Hiiro had entrusted his body to the surrounding, power surged into his body as he stared at a certain direction.

However, those movements alone were incomplete. So, he used the character 『風の弾』 | 『Ball of Wind』, intending to use it to push the soldiers out of the bridge. The purpose of the usage of three characters was to gain power to neatly clear the bridge off the people, which was about two kilometers of wind force.

At the end was 『大崩壊』 | 『Large Collapse』. A literal effect. The bridge collapsed instantly when the character was invoked.

If the plan went well, nobody should have died. Even if there is truly anyone on the bridge, 『大崩壊』 | 『Large Collapse』 answered that plan. Also, Hiiro decided to take this method because Eveam sternly requested.

(Now then, while those guys are befuddled, I guess it's time for me to leave) (Hiiro)



While Hiiro thought about it, he wrote the characters 『転移』 | Transfer』

“Wait” (???)

Those words were simply directed to Hiiro himself as he heard it mysteriously from the sky. When he glanced there, there was a beast-man who had a face of a human with wings.

“.....A bird-man?” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro muttered unintentionally, the being was evidently a human bird.

“Who are you?” (Bird-man)

“..... Can’t you understand by looking? I’m your comrade” (Hiiro)

Hiiro said those words while he shrugged his shoulders feeling oblivious to what had transpired before. The bird-man who heard his remark, narrowed his eyes, then answered him back.

“I remember all the faces and names of all the soldiers. Among them, there was never a person who possessed a silver hair like you” (Bird-man)

As the bird-man had said, currently Hiiro was wearing the appearance of a nostalgic beast-man in the past.

“Heh, you have quite a special talent” (Hiiro)

Hiiro couldn’t help but be amazed at the remark as the bird-man said that he remembered the name and faces of all the soldiers.

“I will ask again. Who are you?” (Bird-man)

“I have no obligation to answer” (Hiiro)

Then, the other party’s eyes sharpened.

“If that is the case, I will have to make you confess by force” (Bird-

man)

Suddenly, he fluttered his wings and several feathers flew from them.

zakuzaku zakuzaku!

Although Hiiro avoided by jumping sideways, he saw the feathers had pierced the ground, similar to a knife, and confirmed that his judgement of dodging that kind of attack was correct.

Although feathers were thrown out again, Hiiro avoided them with light steps.

“Heh, you have a considerably good movement. I want my subordinates to learn a thing or two from you” (Bird-man)

“Why thank you” (Hiiro)

Hiiro spoke those words with the usual sullen look.

“Then, how about this one?” (Bird-man)

The attack was straightforward this time, similar innumerable feathers charged towards him in a parabola. Since Hiiro’s rear faced a cliff, he was simply unable to avoid it by jumping towards the side.

“Chi” (Hiiro)

Hiiro clicked his tongue and jumped up from the place to the sky to avoid the attack. But, the bird-man expressed a sneer when Hiiro did so.

“I won’t let you avoid my attack!” (Bird-man)

His aim was apparently to narrow down Hiiro’s method of escape, which was only through the sky.

Innumerable feathers attacked Hiiro again in the air. The way things were going, Hiiro might completely become a cactus with those needles. But,

Hyun!

The bird-man widened its eyes in astonishment when he saw Hiiro fly from the place to the sky. Following this, the feathers lost their target as it just went straight to the ground.

“He.....can fly?” (Bird-man)

Although his appearance was that of a beast-man, Hiiro who didn't have wings seemed to be unbelievably capable of flying.

The character 『飛翔』 | 『Flight』 glittered on Hiiro's arm. This was one of the characters he had installed before hand. It was no wonder the partner who did not know of it, couldn't understand what had happened.

As the bird-man made a suspicious expression, they similarly moved their wings and rose to the sky in the same way.

“Are you really a beast-man? Rather, this feeling.....Is this magic?” (Bird-man)

“Correct Answer” (Hiiro)

“Impossible! Why is a beast-man capable of conjuring magic?!” (bird-man)

“About that mystery.....” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Bird-man)

“Feel free to guess on it” (Hiiro)

Quickly, Hiiro wrote the character 『煙』 | 『Smoke』 and invoked it, and then, smoke appeared from the character. With that density of smoke, the birdman would have a hard time confirming its surroundings.

“If that is the case!” (Bird-man)

The bird-man waved its wings grandly, causing the smoke to clear up. And, in a few minutes, he was shocked to see the figure of

Hihiro, that was supposed to be there, had gone missing.

“I-Impossible..... where in the world is he.....?” (Bird-man)

In reality, Hihiro had used the characters 『転移』 | 『Transfer』 and returned to the 【Demon Capital】, the bird-man who didn't know of it, searched the vicinity for a while. And, of course, was not able to find him at all.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 149 – Role End?

Hihiro returned to the castle located at 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 , as he came back, the word awaiting for him was....

“You are really unbelievable Hihiro” (Eveam)

Those were the words of Eveam which were mixed with amazement.

Needless to say, Hihiro’s companions and the members of 《Cruel》 were also there. And, there was a big crystal ball near Eveam.

The crystal ball besides Eveam was a kind of demon tool called the 《All-Seeing Crystal》 , this object can seek a far-off scene occurring outside. Eveam used this to look at Hihiro’s activities.

Nevertheless, his activities were beyond their expectations, the people who did not know of Hihiro were completely astonished.

“T-to think that it took you only one hour to finish that...”  
(Marione)

Even Marione’s cheeks were cramping.

“I’m surprised.” (Ornoth)

“Yes, for Hihiro’s magic to be capable of this much, perhaps I should say, his movements was by no means inferior to Barid of the 《Three Warriors》 , what’s more, he was completely toying with him” (Aquinas)

Aquinas replied to Ornoth’s words while feeling admiration towards Hihiro. Although Aquinas watched the fight with Crouch who is also one of the 《Three Warriors》 , he seemed to have been surprised for him to flawlessly come back after taking on Barid who is the leader of the 《Three Warriors》 .

“Ufufu, Hihiro~kun is so~ amaz~ing” (Shublarz)

Shublarz expressed a bewitching smile when she gazed at Hiiro,

“Hey you, don’t approach Hiiro too much.” (Liliyn)

For some reason, Liliyn seems to be ill-humored as she spoke those words mixed with anger.

“Ara~, I wonder why~?” (Shublarz)

When she turned her body towards Liliyn, her chest jiggled. Upon seeing that, a vein popped out on Liliyn’s forehead.

“Ey! What is with that body X-! Such things should be punished this way!” (Liliyn)

\*mugyu!

“Ah~!” (Shublarz)

Amorous voices echoes throughout the throne room. The cause is because Liliyn suddenly gripped Shublarz’s chest with both of her hands. Moreover, she angrily massaged it as hard as possible.

“H-Hey Liliyn-chan, what are you trying to do~?!” (Shublarz)

“Ey! You’re a damn fool for facing that body of yours to me!” (Liliyn)

“Ah, mou, please stop it. Despite what you see, I’m quite sensitive you know~” (Shublarz)

“Shut up! These lumps of fat should be punished this way!” (Liliyn)

“AH~ MOU~!” (Shublarz)

Shublarz’s pair of mountains was being shaped into various forms in Liliyn’s hands. The appearance of such people was observed (mostly at the chest), and there was a person who had gotten excited as his nostrils have swelled up.

“Muhooo~! This is a splendid scene! The scene where a little girl passionately rubs the breasts ignites my passion! Nofofofofof!”

(Silva)

That person was the well-known Hentai butler.

“Did you just say little girl? ” (Liliyn)

Numerous veins popped on Liliyn’s forehead.

“Nofofo! This is good! This is so good ojou-samaaaa-! Hooray for Boobies-!” (Silva)

“You bastard, what are you talking aboutuuuuuuut!” (Liliyn)

Liliyn throttled to Silva in an instant and gave him a heel drop to his face.

“Buhiin-!” (Silva)

The hentai’s head sank into the floor.

“Feeeeeeee! Silva-samaaaaaa!” (Shamoe)

The flustered Shamoe went to see Silva’s condition on the ground but she was speechless as Silva raised his thumb like he had no regrets.

“Who is a Little Girl you Hentai Butler! Shamoe, leave that fool alone!” (Liliyn)

“Y-y-y-y-y-y-y-y-es-!” (Shamoe)

Hiroyuki who was looking at the three with half-interested eyes, [As usual, those guys are so noisy], he shrugged his shoulder while saying so.

“Does Silva-dono love chests that much?” (Nikki)

Nikki lovely inclined her neck.

“It seems to be so? Because ojii-chan speaks oppai oppai all the time~mon!” (Mikazuki)

When Mikazuki’s said those words, every single woman nearby

hastily retreated from Silva. Even Nikki hid behind Hiiro from fear.

“I believe you are mistaken Mikazuki-dono!” (Silva)

A woman leaked the voice [Hiii-!] from Silva’s sudden revival.

Silva did not mind that sort of attitude from the women as he grasped his fist.

“In my opinion, boobs are wonderful! But, the charm of a woman is not only there!” (Silva)

“Heh~, then what else is it?” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki innocently inquired him, seeing this, Silva raises the corners of his mouth and nodded subtly.

“The buttocks exist as well!” (Silva)

“Oshiri(おしり) ? “ (Mikazuki)

LoliQ: Mikazuki does not understand what buttocks literally mean so she spoke the literal rōmaji

“Yes! Buttocks are great.... although the firm ones also makes me tremble, the big ones also has its own merits.....” (Silva)

The people around felt sympathy for the figure who had his hands on his chin and closed eyes lost in a delusion. Of course, there were people who did not want him left unattended.

“You bastard! Just sleep for eterniiiiiiiiiiity!” (Liliyn)

“Bamyuda!?” (Silva)

His face was hit with a fist which contained quite a magical power, this time his whole body sank into the wall.

“...Do these people always have this kind of atmosphere?” (Eveam)

Eveam had a cramp on her cheeks as she asked Hiiro.

“Yeah, this is their usual atmosphere” (Hiiro)



Hihiro who did not mind them returned to his human form using the word 『Origin』 | 『元』 .

He returned to his former form because Hihiro was already well-known in the castle as a human.

“....B-By the way.” (Eveam)

“N?” (Hihiro)

Eveam face was looking down as she shakes her body restlessly. When he looked at her, he knitted his eyebrows at that figure.

“Does.....Hihiro also.....like bre-bre, bre-bre-bre-bre-bre” (Eveam)

“What in the world are you trying to say?” (Hihiro)

Her face was suddenly dyed red, as Hihiro was dubious on the woman's incomprehensible behavior.

“Th-th-therefore.....bre-breast..... that is big... is attractive?” (Eveam)

“.....ha?” (Hihiro)

If it's shameful to the point of blushing, she should not inquire if she cannot clearly speak it out, he thought as he opened his mouth.

“Am I alright with breasts? Frankly, I'm not interested. Books are more charming for me than breasts.” (Hihiro)

“I.....is that so.... so Hihiro was that kind of person...” (Eveam)

It can be seen that the woman nearby dropped her shoulders while letting out a sigh, he was sure he did not say anything wrong, so he shrugged his shoulders.

“Anyway, with this, finish this war quickly. I want to enter the library as soon as possible.” (Hihiro)

“Ah, yo-you're right. Since the bridge was broken, sending reinforcement from the other side will be difficult. In case of the

people at 『Evila』 , we can suppress them if we gradually corner them.” (Eveam)

“Then, move quickly. When you spend too much time, the other side might deal with this somehow. Their confusion right now is a good opportunity to take initiative.” (Hihiro)

“Understood. Aquinas, Marione.” (Eveam)

When she called out the two people, two people got down on their knees at the same time and bowed.

“You two must deal with the enemy that remains in this country.” (Eveam)

“ “ Ha-!” “ (Aquinas & Marione)

“Ornoth, Shublarz.” (Eveam)

The two people similarly bowed.

“You two must organize an army and face the bridge. We will decide this in a instantly by using this chance.” (Eveam)

“ “ Ha-!” “ (Ornoth & Shublarz)

The four people left at once to accomplish their duties.

“I wish to express my gratitude to you Hihiro. I will deal with the surrounding people with Aquinas. You must take a rest in your room.” (Eveam)

“....Are you sure?” (Hihiro)

“Yes, you have done well. Rather, you have done enough since you were the one who lead us in this benefitting situation. You can entrust the rest to us now.” (Eveam)

Apparently, his role seems to have ended with this. Besides, considering the situation, evaluating the strength ratio of the forces that has been left behind and the forces of 『Evila』 , the 『Evila』 clearly has the overwhelming advantage.

As for the other side, the main war potential has been cut down, since all war potentials were concentrated there. Even if the other side has the advantage in number, they greatly differ in quality. Moreover, the effect of breaking the bridge is quite big, as they cannot send their reinforcements.

They will possibly be cornered really soon, they have won this war the moment they were able to corner the enemy.

Even for Hihiro, he thought that this will all be concluded in a few days, until then he decided to take a rest as Eveam had recommended and went to his room.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 150 – Resolution of the Gabranth

“....Uuh” (???)

“You have finally woken up Lenion?” (???)

“...A.....Aniki?” (Lenion)

Lenion was laid on a makeshift bed. Leglos smiled wryly as he saw the bandaged person speak.

“You seemed to have been beaten up pretty badly.” (Leglos)

Lenion slightly clicked his tongue as he remembered the reason for being bedridden.

“Big Brother, how long did I pass out?” (Lenion)

“When I asked Barid, you seemed to have slept 2 whole nights.” (Leglos)

“Shit.....what a mess.” (Lenion)

“Your opponents were three people from 《Cruel》 right? But even so, wasn’t it a miracle when you managed to survive that?” (Leglos)

“Haa, I would rather die than live in disgrace, about that place...” (Lenion)

“You’re a fool!” (???)

Beast King Leowald who made that angry remark suddenly showed up in that place.

“Old-man...” (Lenion)

“Lenion, what were you going to say that time? You would rather die than live in shame? Oh? You would rather die and grumble in disgrace in here?” (Leowald)

“....tsk.” (Lenion)

Lenion looked away seemingly embarrassed. Leowald who saw such attitude from Lenion, loudly sighed.

“Listen well Lenion, you are not strong enough yet to be able to choose the place where you will die.” (Leowald)

His gaze had a certain sharpness, including the light of relief in the depths of his eyes. He had a sense of duty to lead his son out of his wrong attitude, as he was quite relieved that his son was safe.

“The soldiers who died to defend you, you must repay those lives as well, you should become strong from this to be able to choose the place where you will die. Right now, you still have a long way to go.” (Leowald)

“.....I understand.” (Lenion)

Lelgos, the elder brother who saw the blunt response shrugged his shoulders in amazement.

“Hm, by the way Old-man, you got here quite early. Were you able to defeat the Demon Lord?” (Lenion)

“No, an unexpected hindrance turned up.” (Leowald)

“A hindrance?” (Lenion)

Leglos told Lenion what happened at the conference.

“Such a thing happened huh? Who was that red-robe?” (Lenion)

The red-robe was Hiirō.

“I have not understood the details. What I do know is that person is a user of light magic while being an 『Evila』 ...that person does not seem to be an ordinary person.” (Leglos)

Lenion who saw the serious expression of Leglos, found this quite interesting as he was intrigued by this person.

“Furthermore, that person seems to be the central figure who obstructed our plan.” (Leglos)

When he told Lenion that this information came from the soldiers, even he cannot help but be dumbfounded.

“Hey, wait a minute, then that outrageous explosion, and the one who quickly defeated Crouch, he was that person as well?” (Lenion)

“It appears to be so.” (Leglos)

“Did we not receive any information about that existence at all? I mean, isn’t it strange for that person to not be well-known if such a non-standard existence like that is real?”

“Perhaps, that person is not the type to leisurely displays his own power.” (Leowald)

Leowald promptly answered his question.

“Rather, at least up to now, that person was avoiding actions that may stand out. He seems to have said such things to the Victoria’s King.” (Leowald)

“....Then, for what reason did that person suddenly move this time?” (Lenion)

“Who knows, though I do not understand the reason, the ability of that person is nothing but a threat.” (Leowald)

“Indeed, that person was even unharmed from Father’s attack.” (Leglos)

“D-Don’t say such foolish things Aniki! That person received Old-man’s attack unscratched?” (Lenion)

“It’s the truth.” (Leowald)

Lenion hardened without being able to object due to Leowald admission. He knew Leowald’s ability. Even now, he is still being treated by that power single handedly.

Neither receiving Leowald's attack nor the talk of its flawlessness was too believable.

"Besides, another problem occurred. Rather, I believe this is the biggest problem..." (Leglos)

Leglos frowns as he had a hard time saying it.

"What happened?" (Lenion)

".....The bridge was destroyed." (Leglos)

".....Ha?" (Lenion)

Leglos has been at his wits end when he heard what took place two days ago while Lenion was bedridden.

"This action is too much for our situation." (Leglos)

They were perplexed about the cause of that disturbing situation. Besides, it would not be even an exaggeration to state that this was their defeat.

"Betrayal from a beastman? What the heck is that?" (Lenion)

The bonds of the beastmen are strong. Therefore, it was unbelievable that a fellow comrade who they once trusted had betrayed them. However, what was confusing was the fact that the bridge was destroyed by some unusual power for a beastmen.

"Rather, to tell you the truth, I have an idea of that person." (Leowald)

".....Eh?" (Lenion)

"When I heard the characteristics of that person from Barid, though the face was certainly a beastmen, he said some things about that person which for some reason is similar to the red-robe I confronted." (Leowald)

Physique, attitude, usage of magic, everything closely resembled the boy in red-robe.

“If that person is able to impersonate someone, that person would likely have taken the shape of a beastmen and came here. Apparently, that person seems to be able to teleport as well, due to the fact Barid lost sight of the that person instantly.” (Leowald)

“.....Who in the world is that person?” (Lenion)

kukukuku, then, they heard Leowald strange laugh, the two people who saw this stared dumbfoundedly at him.

“Isn’t he quite an interesting boy? To think he even destroyed the bridge. Moreover, he came alone right in the middle of the enemy’s territory. I want see him again by all means.” (Leowald)

The two people shrugged their shoulders in amazement as they saw the man expressing such a happy-looking smile.

“S-say, Aniki?” (Lenion)

“W-what is it?” (Leglos)

“Regarding about that person, Old-man seems to have been pleased with him” (Lenion)

“It looks like it. Even if I was in Father’s position, it would be my first experience. To have my attack easily reflected back at me. Moreover, flawlessly too.” (Leglos)

“Ha? He did not only prevented it but also intercepted it.... who the hell is that...” (Lenion)

Although jealousy clearly dwelled in his expression, he had similar feelings with Leglos as he also expressed a wry smile.

“However, I kind of understand Father’s feelings too. Up to now, there was not a single person who fought him directly. Therefore, though Father looked forward to being able to fight with the general Aquinas, he seemed to have found a rather more interesting toy.” (Leglos)

“.....I kind of want to give my sympathy to that person a little, becoming Old-man’s practice target.” (Lenion)



“I’m of the same opinion.” (Leglos)

Leglos who sees Leowald still in his own world laughing while reminiscing, let out a sigh.

A sudden thought came to him.

(If I’m not mistaken, half a year ago, Mimir’s voice has been restored by a 『Spirit』, however, I seemed to have heard that it was also wearing a red-robe..... Don’t tell me...) (Leglos)

Although, they are evidently the same person, Leglos craned his neck as he wipes out that kind of notion.

“By the way, what shall we do from here on out? This is the territory of the 『Humas』 right? Do we have any method of collecting our colleagues in the demon world?” (Lenion)

Leowald who laughing broke his smile as he made a serious expression on Lenion’s question.

“About that, a lot of our brethren were arrested in the period of two days.” (Leowald)

“Na-!? .....nay... that is right” (Lenion)

Lenion tightens his teeth as his fist quivered. This was the result of him comfortably sleeping for two days, he was somehow convinced this would have happened.

“Those guys did not let this chance slip by. Of course, that’s natural.....but why did they arrest them? If it was me, I would exterminate them.” (Lenion)

Leowald who was a father smiled wryly on Lenion’s scary remark.

“The Demon Lord of this generation seems to possess a different disposition.” (Leowald)

“Ha?” (Lenion)

“In case of the predecessor Demon Lord, he would definitely

murder all our brethren as you have said. However, the current Demon Lord is still a young lady” (Leowald)

“I know that....but...” (Lenion)

“Although I was able to observe her a little, with regards to her speech and behavior, the Demon Lord is too naive.” (Leowald)

“Therefore, she arrested them without murdering?” (Lenion)

“I fear that it’s likely they want to end this war.” (Leglos)

Leglos answered his question. As he had said, in exchange for liberating the captives, they intend to conclude the war using a non-aggression treaty.

“This war, no matter how we think of it, this is 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』 defeat. Since the bridge was destroyed, we lost the method to invade the demon world with our war potential.” (Leglos)

“What you are saying is that we are in a deadlock?” (Lenion)

“Yes, the place in which our remaining potential is gathered has been trying to look for a method on the other side now. Although future talks are originally necessary with the Victoria’s king, strangely, the humans returned to their own country.” (Leglos)

“Whoa, are they running away?” (Lenion)

“I don’t know if they ran away, I do not even understand if there is any significance of returning home, anyway, only a few 『Humas』 is assigned to this place now.” (Leglos)

As Leglos says, only the human soldiers originally tasked to guard the border were left, the other soldiers had returned to their country as ordered by their commander.

“Did something happened at 【Victorias】 ?” (Lenion)

“I have no idea. Even if something did, I do not have the time to pay attention to it.” (Leglos)

“That’s right. The enemy will likely move soon from our side if we wait in here. They may try to force us to negotiate using our captured comrades.” (Leowald)

Leowald spoke with a grim expression. After all, he did not like to be the one playing the second move. However, since a large quantity of his comrades were arrested by the opponent, he can’t move thoughtlessly as he does not know what the fate of his comrades would be.

He was prepared to defeat the enemy even if his companions died in vain, but such method does not exist right now. After all, not being possible to cross the bridge is quite an awful obstacle.

“However Old-man, supposing they intend to use the non-aggression treaty for our comrades liberation, how will we respond?” (Lenion)

Lenion and Leglos both glanced at their King requesting an answer from Lenion’s question.

“.... I wonder.” (Leowald)

“Hey, what is with that I wonder.....” (Lenion)

“At any rate, we will talk about it when that time comes.” (Leowald)

“Is that so.” (Lenion)

“However, if you want to hear my true intentions, I want to regain our comrades safely. I consider the beastmen the same as my family. But, I need to meekly accept our situation, though I’m sure that our pride will not permit this. Do not forget that we have tasted a lot of hardships in the past.” (Leowald)

He spoke those words mixed with anger.

“We are this time allied to the humans due to our similar hatred, only because the 『Evila』 are too strong. I judged that we could surely suppress them with this. Well, the result ended up this way.” (Leowald)

He sighed as he was self-ridiculing himself.

“Speaking of grudges, the 『Humas』 has a bigger grudge towards them. But, so that we may live in this world in our own way, we should first defeat the 『Evila』.” (Leowald)

“However, we failed right?” (Leglos)

“You have a point. However, to give up because of this one defeat, I believe our will is not that weak.” (Leowald)

He clenched his fist and turned to the two people where a strong will appeared in his eyes.

“This time, it is surely a big loss to have lost a comrade. However, if the opponent thrust that condition into our shields, isn’t the act to nod in agreement the right thing to do?” (Leowald)

“.....” (Leglos)

“As for the captured comrades, all of them have resolved on this. Rather, they participated in this war simply because they have prepared for this. If we regret our lives here and accept defeat, aren’t we trampling down their resolutions?” (Leowald)

“Old-man..” (Lenion)

“Father...” (Leglos)

“Let’s have a conference for the time being. However, everyone’s opinion is identical. We should not yield to those guys. Everything has not yet been deprived of us!” (Leowald)

Then, suddenly.

“ “ “Uooooooooooooooooo! “ “ “

He heard a loud voice shaking the atmosphere from the surroundings. When he saw it, beastmen soldiers had gathered before him unnoticed, everyone raised their fist loudly and raised their morale.

“Y-You guys...” (Leowald)

Even Leowald cannot help but be taken away in astonishment.

“Cheers to our King-sama!”

“Right, right! We haven’t been defeated yet!”

“We will fight to the last!”

Those words came from several soldiers intending to show their willingness to fight. Due to those voices, Leowald gladly raised the corners of his mouth.

“Well said my comrades! That is right! We can still fight! This is the blazing pride of the 『Gabranth』, while it is still hot, it will continue to burn!” (Leowald)

Leowald shouted while grasping his fist around his heart.

“If they want to win from us, they have to extinguish this flame!” (Leowald)

“””””Extinguish! “””””

“This flame will be together with us to the last!” (Leowald)

“””””Be together with our flames!”””””

“We are!” (Leowald)

“””””We are!”””””

“On the day, this flame will burn out!” (Leowald)

“””””“On the day, this flame will burn out!”””””

“We will continue to fight!” (Leowald)

“””””We will continue to fight!”””””

And again at the end, an earsplitting loud voice was heard. Apparently, they seem to have already decided on their path. Leglos

and Lenion, mutually nodded with each other as a sign that they have steeled themselves.

Although they didn't know when 『Evila』 will move out , Legios believed that they needed to find a way to cross over to the demon world. With that in mind, he left the place to find a certain person in the army.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 151

### – After a long time, Evila Conference

Presently, in the 【Demon Capital – Xaos】 , an 『Evila』 conference was finally being held after a long time. Nevertheless, they had vacancies from their usual lineup.

Kiria, who was the Demon Lord Eveam's aide, had betrayed Eveam, and, to make things worse, Greyald of 《Rank 6》 was killed.

Only the Demon Lord and four people of the 《Cruel》 were now in this location.

“Everyone, the purpose of this gathering is to decide our future, as well as to understand the condition of our country and our people.”  
(Eveam)

The four silently returned a nod to Eveam's words respectively.

“But Your Majesty, are the contents written in the paper true?”  
(Marione)

Marione said those words while gazing at the sheet of paper in front of Eveam. The paper was what Teckil had entrusted Judom with. Hiirō, who had received the sheet of paper, handed it to Eveam directly.

“Ah yes, I definitely sensed Teckil's magic. Furthermore, at the present time, I cannot contact Teckil. Perhaps, most likely, Teckil has already been caught as written here. And the one who seized him was.....” (Eveam)

She had a relentless look as she heavily moved her lips.

“The former Demon Lord, Avoros Gran Early Evening.” (Eveam)

Marione, who had hit the table with a don!, then said-

“Isn't that just a mistake or something? Aquinas and I were the one who confirmed the corpse of the previous Demon Lord, you know?

There wasn't anything strange about it. Isn't that right, Aquinas?" (Marione)

".....Yeah." (Aquinas)

"His 《Demon Core》 which is also known as the second heart of an 『Evila』 had been destroyed. With that gone, it's impossible for him to revive any longer." (Marione)

"That's true but..... What do you think, Aquinas?" (Eveam)

Eveam turned her gaze towards Aquinas.

".....His death was, indeed, confirmed by these two eyes of mine. That was definitely a corpse. And, it was not a doll Kiria made either" (Aquinas)

"That's right. No one can escape from this guy's pair of eyes; he wouldn't be able to fake his death." (Marione)

From Marione's words, one could understand that he held great trust in Aquinas' eyes.

"So, was what Teckil saw a mistake then?" (Ornoth)

"That seems to be the only possibility." (Shublarz)

"He is the country's greatest intelligence operative, you know? Teckil may not look like it, but he is next to the two of you who is 《Rank 3》. A half-baked person shouldn't be able to capture Teckil alive. Unless they were someone of your class." (Eveam)

"mumu....." (Marione)

Marione groaned without being able to answer back from the sound argument.

"Besides, there is also the existence that Iraora mentioned, as well as the one that created Kiria for the sake of the conference. I have a feeling these two existences seem to be connected to one another." (Eveam)



As that was something everyone present had sensed, none of them were capable of refuting her words.

“But, that person may not necessarily be the former Demon Lord. Even that paper only wrote that the possibility was high.” (Ornoth)

“It’s true that the details that Teckil wrote on this paper were, indeed, all of his ideas that lead to this conclusion. But, he said that he saw that guy, right? Even though he should have died.....he saw Teritorial’s face!” (Eveam)

The room fell silent. It was a testament to the weight that her words had carried.

“Teritorial..... the right arm of the former Demon Lord, huh?” (Aquinas)

Aquinas spoke, breaking the silence that permeated the room

“Now that you mention it, Their relationship was similar to that of Her Majesty and Kiria’s.” (Shublarz)

“It’s true..... However, he died earlier than my elder brother. Rather, he was killed. By none other than my brother’s hand!” (Eveam)

The place became quiet once again.

“If the dead was brought back to life, and was manipulated, then only one person is capable of doing it, and that is the former Demon Lord.” (Aquinas)

Everyone turned their gaze at Aquinas’ mutter.

“I agree, it is only Avoros, the 《Necromancer》, who can do it.” (Eveam)

gokuri, the sound of everyone’s throats gulping rang out.

“Supposing that what Teckil saw was Teritorial’s corpse that was being manipulated, then, without a doubt, it would be Avoros’ deed. Moreover, if it was a strong man like Teritorial who defeated

Teckil, then I can also agree with this matter. After all, Teritorial was Teckil's master.” (Aquinas)

As Aquinas said, The person known as Teritorial was Teckil's master. Rather, he may possibly be considered an existence similar to a foster parent. Teckil lost his parents at an early age. One day, he was picked up by Teritorial and became his adopted son.

Everything that Teckil knew was taught to him by Teritorial. And, everyone who was in this place knew that fact. It should be impossible for him to misidentify Teritorial's face.

However, Teritorial who should have died, lived and captured his very own son. For him to be able to do that, one could only think that he was being manipulated by someone.

And, up to now, there was only one who could manipulate the dead, that person is the former Demon Lord Avoros.

“It is as Aquinas says. Perhaps elder brother.....Avoros camouflaged his death by some method, and has lived until now. I do not understand what are his objectives but I'm sure elder brother is the one who planned this war. It's not surprising if such a guy like him would move within this war” (Eveam)

Even though he was Eveam's relative, she continued her sharp words about him. Disgust rather than sorrow appeared on her facial expression.

“And from now on, Avoros will undoubtedly move openly in the future. For the sake of his own incomprehensible desires.” (Eveam)

“....I wonder if Kiria was also allied with the former Demon Lord from the beginning.” (Shublarz)

Shublarz spoke her doubt, but when Kiria's name came out, Eveam showed a dark expression.

“.....I don't know.” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty....” (Shublarz)

Shublarz muttered anxiously.

“You see.....Kiria was by my side all the time ever since I was a child. For her to be an artificial existence..... Who could’ve thought that.....” (Eveam)

She grasped her fist and trembled.

“She said she was.....Val Kiria.” (Aquinas)

With Aquinas’ words, Eveam nodded feebly.

“In the ancient times, when the 『Demon Capital: Xaos』 did not exist yet. A woman who was named the first Demon Lord gathered a large number of our brethren to create a country. However, the 『Evila』 of those days had neither knowledge nor wisdom about building a country. Simply put, their intelligence was low. The founding Demon Lord, who was the only wise one, thought that teaching them carefully one by one would take too much time.” (Aquinas)

Everyone listened to Aquinas’ story. Even Marione was listening attentively to his words for the first time.

“Thereupon, the founding Demon Lord thought that if she made many existences identical to herself, the establishment of the country would advance smoothly.” (Aquinas)

“D-Don’t tell me” (Eveam)

Eveam was wide-eyed on that revelation.

“She called it, 《Val Kiria Series》. They were the excellent doubles of the Demon Lord. Although it seems that she was unable to create too many of them, they led the people and advanced the establishment of the country. And, the result of that is the 【Demon Capital: Xaos】.” (Aquinas)

“This is the first I have heard of such a story? The founding Demon Lord was the one who founded this country by commanding the people at her side as per written on the history books.” (Marione)

Aquinas answered Marione's doubt.

"That is indeed so. If problems did not occur, their existence should have been left in the history records." (Aquinas)

"P-Problems you say?" (Marione)

"Yeah, when this country was founded, some incidents happened soon after." (Aquinas)

"Incidents.....?" (Eveam)

Eveam asked this time.

" One of the Val Kiria started to run wild without any prior warning" (Aquinas)

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 152

### – Eveam’s Decision

“They went on a rampage?” (Eveam)

“Yes, they rampaged with such dreadful force to the point of destroying everything in its path until it was stopped. Furthermore, the rampage didn’t stop there, it even occurred to all 《Val Kiria Series》. Considering that those dolls were the double’s of the Demon Lord who possessed profound wisdom and power similar to their origin, imagine every existence of it is driven towards their destructive impulses. I’m sure you understand what that will cause, right?” (Aquinas)

It would become exactly like a scene from Hell.

“W-why did such a thing happen?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz asked while having a cramp on her cheek.

“To put it simply, their magic went out of control” (Aquinas)

“They were not able to control their magic?” (Eveam)

“Yes, the double’s of the Demon Lord were certainly excellent. However, the power of the Demon Lord was too much for them to control. At first, the containment was stable but the container that held the Demon Lord’s power was gradually screaming in pain as they were unable to endure the huge quantity of magical power. In the end, the container crumbled” (Aquinas)

It was similar to when a dam collapses due to the intense destructive force of the water it was trying to contain.

“Of course, the Demon Lord did not stay silent and destroyed them by her own hands. Even the doubles, did not have all the abilities of the Demon Lord. So, the Val Kiria’s were overthrown by the Demon Lord. However, the consequence was high” (Aquinas)

Due the fight between the Val Kiria and the Demon Lord, the

country was ruined. The residents were almost annihilated as well

“T-that happened....?” (Eveam)

Eveam put on a sorrowful expression.

‘After that, the Demon Lord concealed the existence of the 《Val Kiria Series》. They became non-existent in this world. And then, she took time once again to gather countrymen and established the country genuinely by her own hands” (Aquinas)

“So the Demon Lord concealed their existence so that the future generations would not be burdened about it?” (Eveam)

“Yeah” (Aquinas)

“Isn’t that too selfish? She invented them for herself, the people were injured because of them, in addition.....she concealed her own doing...” (Eveam)

Eveam trembled from anger. She cannot permit such a selfish Founding Demon Lord.

“I know that Her Majesty’s words is plausible. However, there is another reason of the concealment” (Aquinas)

“A...Another?” (Eveam)

“She did not want to leave behind a dangerous existence such as the 《Val Kiria Series》. This is because they were not completed even with the knowledge of the Demon Lord. If the Val Kiria’s are imperfect, a tragedy like from before will be born again. The Demon Lord judged that it shouldn’t be researched due to curiosity alone, so she buried how to make the Val Kiria’s in the darkness” (Aquinas)

It would surely be a problem to leave behind the method of making such a dangerous existence which nobody in the world could control. Since the Demon Lord was not able to complete it, she thought that it would be impossible for another person to finish it.

For this reason, the Founding Demon Lord did not leave behind the

method of its production to the future generations, in fear of somebody producing another incomplete Val Kiria and was unable to stop it.

“Muu...” (Eveam)

Unbeknownst whether Eveam was ashamed from her previous remark awhile ago, she looked down. Nonetheless, she felt the fact that the Demon Lord who got the civilians involved was perhaps something that should be remembered in the world in some shape or form.

The Demon Lord seems to have thought that if it was remembered, the following person can make a better policy in response to it.

“I see, it would definitely cause some uneasiness if it was found out by the future generation. But Kiria...exists” (Eveam)

“It is as Her Majesty says. Even I was surprised when I heard from Kiria that she’s a Val Kiria. Which means.....” (Aquinas)

“Avoros?” (Eveam)

Aquinas nods to Eveam’s word.

“Although I’m still unsure, I fear that it’s likely that he knows the manufacturing method ....” (Aquinas)

“Nevertheless, why do you know such a thing?” (Marione)

It was Marione’s foremost doubt. Everyone’s glance turned towards Aquinas. Following their gaze, Aquinas who had his eyes closed, exhaled and slowly opened his eyes. Then, he answered.

“.....As for the people, not all of them perished. There were a number of people who, indeed, survived. I’m one of the people who has a connection to them” (Aquinas)

In other words, Aquinas heard the story from one of the survivor’s descendants

“I see....but, to think Kiria came from such circumstances...”

(Eveam)

“It’s no wonder you wouldn’t know of it. Even I only heard the story, recently. I might be the only one in the country who knows about it” (Aquinas)

“Muu, Her Majesty, the situation will not change even if Aquinas’ story is true. Leaving that aside, the war before us is the main problem right now. How should we treat the captives?” (Marione)

Marione who arrested the captives, asked how to act from the current stalemate.

“Ah, thanks for reminding me. First of all, I have made my decision regarding that matter” (Eveam)

Eveam exchanged looks to the people around her and exhaled a big breath.

“This time, I made you all arrest the 『Humas』 and 『Gabranth』 who entered the demon continent. However, i do not have any intention of depriving the lives of the captives” (Eveam)

The four people who knew her way of thinking did not say anything. Everyone kept silent though Marione had a ill-humored face.

“I intend to liberate the captives, and create with them a non-aggression pact” (Eveam)

“Hou, not an alliance ....?” (Aquinas)

She glared at Aquinas who spoke with some sarcasm.

‘Even I understand that it’s impossible to form an alliance in the current situation. Therefore, I decided to give priority to the the peace of 『Evila』 right now” (Eveam)

“Stil Her Majesty~, do you really think the other side will accept such a proposal?” (Shublarz)

“Let’s see. The partner that betrayed us was the 『Humas』 , and



the pride of the 『Gabranth』 was damaged in the last miraculous battle. Therefore...” (Ornoth)

Shublarz and Ornoth respectively spoke. More than half a year ago, the 『Evila』 fought against the 『Gabranth』 once. Although the war was immediately concluded with Eveam destroying the bridge, Eveam and the others admitted that they had damaged their pride at that time.

“Perhaps..... It will be impossible with the 『Humas』 . There is a high probability that their king will betray us even if we use their captives as a reason for an alliance. After all is said and done, he readily sacrificed the heroes who should have been their trump card” (Ornoth)

“Hmm~, then it’s possible to negotiate with the 『Gabranth’s』 -?” (Shublarz)

“Yes, they are the races who values bonds above all. Although the probability is low, it would still be possible “ (Eveam)

“I feel like it would be a waste of effort if the partner is that Beast King, though...” (Marione)

Marione spoke those words while he faintly shook his head sideways in rejection.

“Certainly, those fellows do value bonds. However, they have never admitted defeat during a fight. They will advance forward in order to win the fight even if they have to put their life on the line” (Ornoth)

“However, there is a companion this time. right?” (Marione)

“Still, they wouldn’t stop. Because those guys are simple minded people starving for blood” (Ornoth)

Blood thirst leaked from Marione. He still harbours hatred toward the 『Gabranth』 , because his wife and child were murdered by them.

“.....Nevertheless, I recommend it” (Eveam)

“Still, how will you handle them if they don’t have any intention of stopping?” (Ornoth)

Eveam shut her eyes and set her lips. Everyone was waiting for her response. And then, she opened her mouth.

“At that time..... We will fight them” (Eveam)

Marione hardened from her response as he was caught off guard by it. Rather, it was not only Marione. All the people except Aquinas were flabbergasted.

They never expected the words “Fight” to come out surely from Eveam’s mouth.

“Y-Your Majesty? You do understand what fighting entails ?” (Shublarz)

The dumbfounded Shublarz asked Eveam.

“Yes, if my demand is not accepted, then the only remaining option is to fight against them. We only delayed the fight but the uneasiness did not fade away even when we destroyed the bridge.” (Eveam)

“Y-you have a poin~t” (Shublarz)

“I was made to understand that nothing changed, it was as if we overlook them and waited for the other party to make a move.” (Eveam)

She seemed to have clearly learned from her mistake. The mistake was to never trust a partner blindly.

“Therefore, supposing the demand doesn’t pass, we will fight. In addition, we will get to dominate them and let them feel the strength of our ideals! Our desire for true peace!” (Eveam)

“By force.... right?” (Marione)

She affirmed Marione’s question with a nod while clenching her teeth.

“Yes, however, I want to refrain from killing as much as possible.....that’s why I decided to enforce the proposal by liberating the captives!” (Eveam)

After they heard her proposal, the people who were gathered in the area were at a loss for words.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster: Web Chapter 153

### – Unprecedented Demand

Leglos came back to the tent, and Lenion, who saw his brother's troubled expression, inclined his neck.

“What's the matter, Aniki?” (Lenion)

“Hm? Well, Yuhito appears to be absent.” (Leglos)

Yuhito was one of the brilliant minds of 【Gabranth Capital – Passion】. He was the creator of the 《Nameless Bracelet》 and the one who worked out the method for the 《Binding Technique》.

“Haa? You mean that Mad Rascal?” (Lenion)

“Yes, after all, he was supposed to be deployed too.” (Leglos)

“Why are you looking for that rascal?” (Lenion)

“You see, I thought he might devise a method to cross over to the 『Evila』 continent.” (Leglos)

“Ah, I see. I'm sure he will unexpectedly appear sooner or later since it's that guy we're talking about.” (Lenion)

“I agree. He is, after all, elusive.” (Leglos)

Both of them did not seem to mind Yuhito's disappearance at all, as that guy had always showed up suddenly. Leglos who was concerned, was fed up with Yuhito doing things at his own pace in such a situation.

“By the way, how's father?” (Lenion)

“It seems he is going around, visiting the tents of the others. He is calling out to the people who have suffered injuries during the war.” (Leglos)

“Fu~un, he is as companion-loving as ever” (Lenion)

“That is our strong point after all.” (Leglos)

While they stood for a while in their place, a soldier hurriedly entered the tent. The soldier had a rather flustered appearance as his breathing was heavy and rugged.

When they enquired the reason for the soldier’s frantic appearance, he said that, the 『Evila』 had sent them a letter.

After the two mutually gazed at each other for an instant, they ran out to the Beast King, Leowald in a hurry.

“Oh, you guys came.” (Leowald)

For some reason, the two felt a sense of incongruity in his tone. Leowald’s expression seemed a little loose, and had a happy atmosphere around him as he spoke those words.

“Father, is that the letter sent by them?” (Leglos)

“Ah, Read it. Something interesting is written in it” (Leowald)

Leglos read the letter that was handed over to him, “What in the world is this?!” he instinctively raised his voice.

Naturally, Lenion who was seemingly interested in the contents of that letter, requested an explanation from Leglos. And after the explanation was done, he too had an expression of astonishment.

First, the contents demanded a non-aggression treaty in exchange for liberating the captives. Naturally, this part was not that surprising as Leowald had expected this to happen.

The problem was, when the demand requested was not accepted.

The letter stated that supposing the demand was not accepted, they will conclude the war with a fight. Although this was a little surprising as it came from the naive Demon Lord, it was the fight itself that took their breaths away.

The letter was written as,

『Currently, your military forces are most likely scarce. If this fight towards one's annihilation were to continue, both sides would receive huge damage, and this is something that both countries will not benefit from. If circumstances were to allow, we do not wish to recklessly kill soldiers or the people, and so we should necessarily choose a more appropriate way, which the two concerned parties deem convincing, to fight this war. Previously, you said something like, "Defeat us by showing us your power". if that is what you want, then we will show it to you. We will truly show you our power. We will have a confrontation between our strongest war potentials to decide the winner and loser among us. We will hand over to your side, the right to decide the specifications of the fight. Naturally, the number of figures should match. We will also liberate your comrades, if you acknowledge this. However, this is our greatest compromise. If you refuse this demand, we will not hesitate to annihilate you with the whole power of 『Evila』. Of course, if the war ends without fighting, I believe that is for the best of both countries. I will be expecting a favourable response』

Everyone in the place, who heard Leglos' explanation about the letter, were flabbergasted. The content of the letter appeared to be reasonable. This is because, they too share some consentient on the matter at hand.

From what they understood from the letter, if they were to wage a war, then it would surely become a fight towards one's annihilation. All those who were there now, could, without a doubt, imagine the death toll in such a situation

However, if they were to fight out between them, through the method suggested by the letter, the soldiers would not be needlessly sacrificed. Moreover, they were given the rights to choose the specifications for the fight. This was obviously to their side's advantage.

No matter how they thought of it, the 『Evila』 seemed to be at a really disadvantageous position. They could have easily crushed the remaining Gabranth army, let alone slaughter the captives.

Nevertheless, why?, everyone inclined their necks in confusion.

“Gahahahaha! They really got me there! They have totally pulled off something strange here! Gahahaha!” (Leowald)

Leowald who found it interesting, laughed from the bottom of his heart.

“F-Father! This is not the time to be laughing! How are we going to respond to this?!” (Leglos)

He answered Leglos’ question while his face carried a smile.

“No matter how we think of it, this is quite a convenient negotiation!” (Leowald)

“But, this may be a trap!” (Leglos)

“No, that is not possible.” (Leowald)

“W-Why is it?” (Leglos)

“Even if they didn’t request such a thing, they could win this war easily by fighting us with their current forces. No matter how we think about it, we are the ones on the unfavorable side.” (Leowald)

What’s more, the 『Humas』 had already withdrawn, they were evidently overwhelmed by the enemy.

“Besides, I told you that the Demon Lord was naive, right? This letter probably don’t have any trace of deceit. I may be saying this, but this is all just based from intuition!”

“I-Intuition huh.....” (Leglos)

Leglos who was astonished, exhaled.

“Moreover, a confrontation between the highest war potentials of both sides.....fufu, It’s been a long time since my heart has pounded like this, merely from such a suggestion!” (Leowald)

“F-Father...” (Leglos)

At that time, a hand grabbed onto Leglos’ shoulder with a pop!

“Aniki, no matter what you say, it’s useless” (Lenion)

It was Lenion, who had stopped Leglos, however, he too was grinning, happily.

“Isn’t this a bit more interesting? Although I think that a warrior should confront the enemy directly, to settle this war, this way, is very intriguing.” (Lenion)

When Leglos saw that kind of facial expression, he hung his head in submission. He lightly shook his in resignation at the two war loving people beside him.

“Gahaha! Don’t make such a face Leglos! Look at them.” (Leowald)

Leowald jerked his chin, prompting Leglos to change his line of sight. What they saw there was Barid and Putis of the 《Three Warriors》 bowing down deeply.

“Y-You guys……” (Leglos)

“We will do our best to bring us victory.” (Barid)

Putis nodded in agreement with Barid’s word. The two seemed exceptionally motivated..

“…… haa, I understand. You really are going to accept their demands?” (Leglos)

“Yes, besides, if it’s such a fight like this, then that guy will probably participate as well.” (Leowald)

Leowald had his hands on his chin as he gladly smiled in anticipation.

“That guy?” (Leglos)

“Well, there might be some who will object this fight, but we have a chance for victory within our grasp.” (Leowald)

“ “ “ “Ooooooooooooo! “ “ “ “ (Gabranth Soldiers)



The soldiers raised their arms as they shouted in eagerness.

“All the soldiers in here! Believe in us and leave the rest to us!”  
(Leowald)

“ “ “Ooooooooooooo! “ “ “ (Gabranth Soldiers)

Thus the curtain to an unprecedented decisive way of war between the 『Gabranth』 and 『Evila』 was unveiled, clashing against each other, using their best forces.

## Chapter 154 : A Conversation At The Jail

“I see, so the other party accepted it.....that’s good. For now, we can say that things went well.” (Eveam)

Eveam was relieved to hear the reply they had received from the beastmen. This way, there would be no more deaths than needed for both parties. Of course, there’s no telling what would happen to the 『Evila』 if they were to lose.

Just in case, they had used a 《Contract Roll》 for the agreement and within it was the promise to not indiscriminately kill the loser’s people or perform other such actions. Even so, the likelihood that they would be able to continue living as they had up until now was low.

“The loser will have to obey the winner”. In other words, the loser would essentially have to become the winner’s subordinate. However, this agreement was not perfect. There was a possibility of the other party committing suicide and betraying the winner.

Nevertheless, Aquinas removed that anxiety.

“They won’t go back on their word once they have decided upon it. I believe that is the pride of the 『Gabranth』 . That’s why, up until now, there has never been a situation in which they have betrayed someone. At the very least, if the current Beast King accepts our demand, they’ll likely follow him due to sentimental reasons. And in the event that we win, Your Majesty has no intention of oppressing them, right?” (Aquinas)

“Of course.” (Eveam)

“Then, there’s no need to be dissatisfied. All that’s left is to take the time to communicate with them in a way that will allow them to understand our true intentions, correct?” (Aquinas)

“I see...yeah, that’s right.” (Eveam)

“But, in order to do that, we need to win at all costs.”(Aquinas)

“Yeah, you are exactly right. Let’s beat them head on, fair and square!” (Eveam)

Seeing Eveam clenching her fist strongly, Aquinas exhaled as his face relaxed.

“But, to think we chose this kind of method. Marione’s jaw dropped as though it would never close again, you know?” (Aquinas)

“Hahaha. Actually, this method was thought of.....by Hihiro.” (Eveam)

“Hihiro?” (Aquinas)

“Y-Yeah.” (Eveam)

The contents of what Eveam had demanded of the Gabranth this time, were part of a plan devised by Hiiro. When she had a talk with Hiiro, she blurted out how she wanted to resolve this war peacefully.

At that time, Hiiro laughed and teased her, while telling her that she spoke too naively. Naturally, Eveam understood what Hiiro was trying to say. However, she couldn't agree with his remark and got mad.

After Eveam became sullen for a short period of time, Hiiro spoke these words to her.

“There's no such thing as a war that doesn't hurt anybody. If you don't want anyone to get hurt, then you should make it so that there is no reason for any wars to begin.” (Hiiro)

That was only natural. In response, she told Hiiro that she had also put in much effort in order to do that.

“Once a war starts, there is no guarantee that you can stop it without casualties. However, damage can be reduced depending on the opponent. I have an idea. Well, maybe I should call it a kind of naive fantasy, and it's a foolish plan that could probably be found infrom some hot-blooded action manga or something, but.....” (Hiiro)

After saying that, he then reluctantly began to teach her about the method used this time.

“Hou, so this ridiculous proposal was Hihiro’s, huh?” (Aquinas)

As he said that, Aquinas gave a seemingly satisfied expression.

“Still, I’m surprised you decided to go with that plan.”(Aquinas)

“It can’t be helped right? At this rate, we would keep fighting until one of us is destroyed. That alone is absolutely no good. That being the case, I thought that if we went to our opponent’s home-ground, they’d be willing to listen to what we have to say.” (Eveam)

“I see, so this method is only possible because the opponent is the 『Gabranth』, huh?” (Aquinas)

“Yeah, although this method certainly won’t end with absolutely no injuries, at the very least, we should be able to get off with minimum damage. Also, unlike for our opponents, the proposal is clearly disadvantageous for us. If we are able to defeat them despite that, our opponents wouldn’t be able to say anything about it.” (Eveam)

“Fu..you seem to be pretty determined.. Is that also because of Hihiro ?” (Aquinas)

“U-Umu. Well, yeah.” (Eveam)

She looked the other way in embarrassment.

“Well, they certainly have the advantage, but if they lose despite having been in such an advantageous position, even the 『Gabranth』 would have to recognize it. Their own defeat, that is.” (Aquinas)

“Ah, Hiiro also said that!” (Eveam)

Aquinas stared at Eveam, who joyfully expressed a smile. Noticing his gaze, she hastily turned away from him as her face became bright red.

“.....Fuu.” (Aquinas)

Eveam saw Aquinas who wore a smile that seemed to have some hidden meaning.

“Hey, do you have something to say?!” (Eveam)

“Nope, you should just be like that, and change yourself little by little” (Aquinas)

Somehow, the affection of a parent watching over their child protectively seemed to be included into his expression.

\(^\_)/

“Eh..What are y.... ?” (Eveam)

Then, Aquinas turned around and started walking to somewhere else.

“Where are you going, Aquinas?” (Eveam)

“..... I’m just going for a stroll.”(Aquinas)

She stared at Aquinas’ back as he departed/left.

“...What was that all about..?” (Eveam)

She tilted her still feverish face in confusion.

“Fumewa ~, My body still hurts mewa~” (Crouch)

The individual that said that as he lay on a straw while rolling

about was one of the 《Three Warriors》 , Crouch.

Having lost to Hihiro, he was taken as a prisoner of war and thrown in jail.

“Uhh~as expected, my body is still white nya~” (Crouch)

Staring at his hand, he sighed, as his fur, which should have been black, was currently white like snow.

“It’s the 《Rebound》 from having summoned those big-shots all at once after all, mew... I might be stuck like this until the next full moon.” (Crouch)

Furthermore, not only had his fur turned white, his height had also clearly changed. When he was black, his body was sturdy and tall, but now, he was no taller than a child. His chest also swelled a bit. It was obviously the body of a girl.

“Uhh~I’m bored-nya~” (Crouch)

Crouch rolled around and then suddenly stopped. She then started to remember that person.

“..... Hihiro..huh?” (Crouch)



Having battled with him, Crouch recalled the person who had defeated her with his overwhelming power.

“Red robe...Glasses...And also, that scent.” (Crouch)

When they fought, Hihiro’s scent entered her nose and she experienced a sense of discomfort.

“Why does he smell like Tarou-nya?” (Crouch)

Nobody retorted “It’s because they’re the same person!”. When she first met Hihiro, he was disguised as a beastman and refused to give his real name, instead calling himself Tanaka Tarou. However, his red robe, glasses, and scent were all the same.

Alt: Unfortunately, there was nobody to retort “It’s because they’re the same person.”

That was why she was unnecessarily confused. If she knew that Hihiro could change his form, she would know the reason immediately, but sadly, Crouch wasn’t aware of that fact.

“..... Aah! Forget it !” (Crouch)

She rolled about again.

“Who cares-nya! More importantly, I want to fight him again-

nya! I want to meet with Hiiro-nya!” (Crouch)

Her shrill voice resounded throughout the jail. The other beastmen who were similarly captured and imprisoned there said, “Ah, she’s irritated again.” and exasperated sighs could be heard from all over the place.

As this had occurred numerous times already, the guard also gave off an atmosphere of resignation as they simply shrugged their shoulders. However, they couldn’t afford not to pay attention to it.

“Hey, quiet down a bit, would you?!” (Jail-Guard)

The guard’s tone was a bit soft, probably because Crouch’s appearance was clearly that of a child. While she certainly was an enemy, it still felt awkward to one-sidedly treat such a child as an object of anger.

“Uu~Call Hiiro here-nya~” (Crouch)

“I already told you that it’s impossible, right? That person is the country’s saviour, and is certainly a heroic individual. There’s no way I could bring him to this kind of place.” (Jail-Guard)

“Nya? Is Hiiro that popular nya?” (Crouch)

“Well, I guess so. That’s what everyone who saw him fight directly

would say. Even more, that person blew up the bridge by himself you know? To us, the 《Evila》, such a person is no less than a hero!”

(Jail-Guard)

The Jail-Guard’s eyes glittered, staring at the distance with envy.

“The bridge!? By himself?! Amazing nya…… “(Crouch)

Crouch knew that the bridge was quite sturdy. To destroy it alone...Crouch’s eyes glittered just by thinking about Hiiro’s power.

Crouch didn’t doubt the man’s words. Based on his tone, she concluded that the man probably wasn’t lying.

“The surprising part is, that man is a 『Humas』.” (Jail-Guard)

“He? What do you mean nya? 『Humas』?” (Crouch)

“Well, he seems to be able to change into anything; his original appearance is that of a 『Humas』 though. But to think there was a person like that amongst the 『Humas』; he’s completely different from those in 《Victorias》. Ah. but that person also originally came from 《Victorias》 too……is it alright to say that?” (Jail-Guard)

“..... What do you mean-nya?” (Crouch)

Crouch’s face turned serious as she began to probe for information. The man, caught up in his own world, didn’t notice. He was drunk with his own words.

“Nothing. Just that he seems to have been summoned along with the heroes.” (Jail-Guard)

“.....” (Crouch)

“Well, he doesn’t seem to be a hero. They say that he just somehow got involved in the summoning, so he came here...Oi, are you listening?” (Jail-Guard)

Seeing as she wasn’t replying, he grew curious and peered at her cell. Unlike earlier, she was quietly lying on top of the straw. Seeing her like this, he regained his composure.

“Damn.. Did I say too much?” (Jail-Guard)

He grew agitated having given the enemy information. However, seeing that she wasn’t moving, he assumed she was asleep. He clasped his hands in prayer, hoping she would forget everything. Then, just like that, he continued his work.

However, Crouch did not plan on forgetting anything. Now, she knew that Hiiro and Tarou were connected.

(Transformation ..... hmm ..... so they were the same person nya!) (Crouch)

She felt excitement swell up in her heart. The feeling of wanting to meet Hihiro again became even stronger.

Not to mention, she heard an interesting story.

(Furthermore, being summoned from another world! Interesting! Hihiro is really interesting nya!) (Crouch)

Crouch smiled, her cheeks flushing.

“Nyahaha..... Nyahaha..... Nyahaha.....” (Crouch)

For a while, only her voice could be heard inside the jail. The guards, creeped out by the laughter, stayed silent.

## Chapter 155 Unexpected Visitor

.....Shudder !?

Liliyn asked Hiiro ‘did something happen’ because he suddenly dropped the book he was reading.

“No, nothing”

“Really?”

Hiiro who felt a shiver suspected that someone was staring at him. Furthermore, it would’ve been better if it was without the crooked feeling he was getting.

(.....Let’s keep it as an imagination.)(Hiiro)

Wiping off the bad feeling, he once again laid his eyes on the book.

Hiiro and others were staying in a single room within the Demon Lord’s Palace. He was living in a big room which he had borrowed for a while. When he was asked to stay here for a while to rest, he cheerfully took that request.

The biggest reason why he agreed was because he could be informed about the latest situation of the war, but also because he could eat all the food he wanted.

While reading the book, he looked towards Nikki who was sitting in a prostrating position on the floor. Her body was covered with blue light. And floating in front of her was a sphere about the size of a tennis ball. The light covering her was connected to the floating sphere.

“You’re distracted, Baka-Deshi”(Hiiro)

“Y, Yeah desuzo”(Nikki)

From her forehead slight sweat seeped out. She was biting her teeth with her eyes closed and somehow looked in pain.

“Ho~, Nikki is now able to control magic, too.”(Liliyn)

To Liliyn words, Nikki broadly smiled and looked towards her. But,  
Creak!

Suddenly the sphere snapped, and she instinctively turned her face away.

“.....It’s still a long way to go”(Liliyn)

Liliyn shrugged her shoulders in amazement.

“Au~.....”(Nikki)

“This happened because you lost concentration. Do it from the start.”(Hiiro)

“Y,Yeah desuzo.....”(Nikki)

She dejectedly nodded at Hiiro’s words

“Mumumu”(Nikki)

Hiiro stared at Nikki who once again started concentrating with her eyes closed.

(Come to think of it, it’s been a long time since I’ve picked her up)  
(Hiiro)

He recalled his first meeting with Nikki who was desperately trying to control her magical power. At first, her expression was like that of a corpse, not showing any emotions. One couldn’t tell whether she was even living or not.

Even though Nikki was a human, she was raised by a monster in the demon continent. One day that monster was killed by another monster.

For Nikki, it was the same as losing her parents. After living on her own for a while, she was met with an unexpected event.

That time, it was Hiiro who saved her. Due to some strange fact he

was liked by Nikki, and she wanted to become his student.

Naturally, Hiiro would've rejected her, but he could not reject her.

(Sympathy.....was it? It was not my character)(Hiiro)

Yes, at that time what he felt towards Nikki was without a doubt sympathy. He thought it would be interesting to make her into his disciple while seeing Nikki cling on to his waist.

Once Hiiro decided on something, he would never regret it later. He doesn't like to blame others using excuses for the choices he made himself.

He had decided to take responsibility for the choices he has made by himself. And as long as he had thought to let Nikki grow, he would look after her till she became independent.

And as a human stands out in the demon continent, he changed her form to a Imp race using his“Word Magic”. When Nikki abruptly asked for a proof of her connection with Shishou, Hiiro used his “Word Magic” to write “Literature” on a cloth similar to a martial cloth uniform.

Thereupon, Mikazuki also asked for a proof, so he did the same thing he did for Nikki.

(Still why do little children gather around me? And all girls on top of it?)(Hiiro)

He turned his gaze towards Nikki and the moment he turned his gaze towards Liliyn, he was attacked by a tremendous stare as if he was being made fun of by her.

(.....She has good intuition)(Hiiro)

Keeping his usual poker face, Hiiro exhaled a sigh and once again concentrated on his book.

The door opened and a noisy guy entered.

“Maaaaaaster! Mikazuki has returned!”(Mikazuki)



Hihiro swiftly dodged Mikazuki.

“What!?”(Mikazuki)

And just like that Mikazuki kissed the floor .

“Fuua! I, IT hurts~! Master is a meanie! Hug Me!”(Mikazuki)

“Shut Up. It’s damn hot, so don’t cling onto me.”(Hihiro)

“That’s right Mikazuki! Only I can be hugged by Master!”(Nikki)

“It’s wrong! Only Mikazuki can be hugged by master! Nikki can do her practice!”(Mikazuki)

“Wha, What did you sa~y?”(Nikki)

Hihiro sighed while looking at the unproductive quarrel between the two.

“Nufofofofo! I have returned, My Lady!”(Silva)

“Aa”(Liliyn)

“Oho! I am impressed even by the cold words from my Lady! Nufofofofo!”(Silva)

“Hihiro, he is being irritating, shut him up using your ‘Word Magic’.”(Liliyn)

“That is harsh! That is indeed harsh! Nufofofofo!”(Silva)

Liliyn directed her line of sight towards Shamoe standing beside the Hentai butler. [ET: hentai gives more impact than pervert]

“Thank you for gathering information. So what is the situation right now?”(Liliyn)

“Tha, That is.....”(Shamoe)

Shamoe stared at the door with a face saying ‘it’s hard to say’

“Nh? Is someone over there?”(Liliyn)

Someone suddenly entered through the door. Hiiro twitched his eyebrows while Liliyn was making a grim expression.

“Ho, we have a rare guest here. No, actually, we are the guests here.”(Hiiro)

Saying so he closed the book.

“I wanted to talk with you for a bit”(Aquinas)

While saying so, Hiiro looked at Aquinas with a investigating stare. Liliyn herself was displaying an displeased mood. Silva who had been laughing was also being cautious.

“With me? Just the two of us?”(Hiiro)

“Yeah”(Aquinas)

A loud sound of someone stomping the floor was heard. Hiiro realised it was the work of Liliyn.

“Don’t joke around.....I told you.....not to put your head in our business.”(Liliyn)

Hiiro widened his eyes seeing Lilyn emitting hostility towards Aquinas.

(I thought they were acquaintances but it feels like it’s more than that)(Hiiro)

He suddenly remembered. It was their names. When he peeked at Aquinas’s 《Status》, he felt some uneasy feeling. He finally remembered it

Liliyn Li Reysis Red Rose and Aquinas Li Reysis Phoenix. The ‘Li Reysis’ was the same in both their names.

(And If I look at them closely.....these two.....look alike)(Hiiro)

Their red hair resembled each other, particularly their eyes looked similar. And they both had a similar atmosphere too. Hiiro tried to guess their relationship, while both stared at each other and spoke.

“Don’t worry. It’s not like I want to stick my head in your business. I came only to talk with him.”(Aquinas)

“.....Really ?” (Liliyn)

Aquinas exhaled while staring at her.

“Well, I do have a request too”(Aquinas)

“See! It might be some troublesome request, right? Solve it yourself!”(Liliyn)

“I can do that, but if I do, then maybe I cannot fulfill the promise made to him”(Aquinas)

Hiiro who remained silent, reacted towards those words.

“What does that mean?”(Hiiro)

“The continuation from the story will be just between us? So what is it? Will you take it or not?”(Aquinas)

“kuu! You are a coward Aquinas! If you say it like that then Hiiro will.....!”(Liliyn)

“Aa, I’ll take that offer.”(Hiiro)

Hiiro easily accepted the offer.

“Ah Mou! See,it ended up like that!”(Liliyn)

“My Lady, please calm down”(Silva)

“Eei! How can I keep calm with this happening!?”(Liliyn)

Silva’s words didn’t work on her and she pouted. But surprisingly the one she turned her attention to was Hiiro.

“Aka-Loli, I don’t know what happened between you and him, but I should choose my decision here not you.”(Hiiro)

“B, But Hiiro, this man is.....”

Hihiro raised his hand and made a gesture as to not speak anymore.

“As a matter of fact, I have already guessed what his so called request is”(Hihiro)

“R, Really?”(Liliyn)

Liliyn made a blank expression in an instant. Aquinas made an understanding face saying ‘As expected’.

“Aa, So you guys wait here. Let’s go Aka kami”

“Yeah”(Aquinas)

Just before he was about to leave,

“H, Hey Hihiro”(Liliyn)

Hihiro stopped his feet and asked “What?”.

“It should be fine knowing it’s you.....but do tell us if something happens”(Liliyn)

It implicitly meant that in case Mikazuki or Nikki was unable to move, the word that was set up on them should be activated.

Hihiro took a quick glance at his friends. When he looked at them he saw Nikki and Mikazuki staring at him with worrying faces.

tap.....tap.....Hihiro poked their heads with his index fingers.

“Wait patiently.”

Upon hearing Hihiro’s words both felt reassured. And then, Hihiro was taken out of the room by Aquinas.

## Chapter 156: Hiiro and Aquinas

Aquinas guided Hiiro to what appeared to be his room. On the terrace, there was a circular table along with a couple of chairs.

After being offered to take a seat, Hiiro sat down silently.

“Can you drink?” (Aquinas)

After he asked so, Aquinas took out a bottle, which seemed to contain wine.

“Sorry, but I don’t really understand the appeal of alcohol.” (Hiiro)

“Hmm, you’re missing out on quite a bit in life.” (Aquinas)

“Hey, I can enjoy life even without drinking, you know?.” (Hiiro)

“Is that so? Well, pretend I tricked you and you tried drinking some. If it doesn’t suit your taste, you can just leave it be .” (Aquinas)

Then, Aquinas tipped the bottle to the glass and a liquid similar to red wine flowed out.

“I’m telling you in advance, there’s no poison in it.” (Aquinas)

“I’m not worried about that. There is no merit in poisoning someone you are asking a favor from.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro lifted the glass and brought it to his lips.

“Nh?...nh?” (Hiiro)

It gave him a rather unexpected feeling. It wasn’t bitter at all, and if he had to say, it had a sweetness to it that made it rather easy to drink.

“How is it? There isn’t a lot of alcohol in it. Does it suit your taste?” (Aquinas)

“It isn’t as bad as I thought.” (Hiiro)

“Good to hear that.” (Aquinas)

Aquinas sat down, took a small sip, and let it flow down his throat. Then, he silently placed the glass on the table and opened his mouth.

“Hiiro.” (Aquinas)

“.....What?” (Hiiro)

“You have my thanks.” (Aquinas)

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro thought he was going to ask his favor immediately but was so surprised at the sudden words of gratitude, that he reflexively responded.

“...What are you thankful for?” (Hiiro)

“Various things.” (Aquinas)

“Various things...huh?” (Hiiro)

“That is right, various things.” (Aquinas)

Hiiro thought that it was for helping out during the war. But, to him, that was work related to the contract he had signed with Eveam. He didn’t remember anything else that Aquinas would be thankful for. As long as he properly received compensation, then he would be satisfied..

“It isn’t just about the war preparations....you know?” (Aquinas)

He said as if he had read Hiiro’s mind.

“Then what is it?” (Hiiro)

“.....Prin..it’s about Her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“The demon lord, whose head is full of flowers, right?” Hiiro said

with a slight laugh.

“Fufu. Only you would say something like that about the ruler of a country.” (Aquinas)

Instead of finding fault in Hiiro’s words, Aquinas smiled heartily.

“Aah, that is right, it’s about Her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“.....I haven’t done anything, you know?” (Hiiro)

If he had to say he did something, then it’d be about how he healed her wounds. Nonetheless, he had simply thought at the time that if she died, he would lose his long-sought ticket to the library.

“No, thanks to you, Her Majesty is able to move forward, towards her goal.” (Aquinas)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“During the conflict this time around, we should have suffered a significant amount of damage. But, because of your efforts, we were able to resolve the incident with minimum damage to the country. It was also because of you that Her Majesty gained the determination to fight.” (Aquinas)

“I just explained common sense to her. Besides, if you are talking about the proposal, you are thanking the wrong person. That was just a flash of inspiration I had. I normally wouldn’t think that there’d be people willing to put it into practice nor accept the proposal.” (Hiiro)

“Yet it was proposed to us, and it was accepted by the other side.” (Aquinas)

“.....There really is something wrong with the rulers of this world.” (Hiiro)

“Perhaps...” (Aquinas)

Aquinas quickly took another sip from his glass.

“....Hmm, Her Majesty is able to continue down her path in her own way. The one who helped her get to that point was you, Hiiro.” (Aquinas)

They both looked at each other in mutual understanding.

“Her Majesty suffered a blow. Not only was she betrayed by her aide, who was by her side for many years, the peace conference also ended in failure.” (Aquinas)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“But you are still here. For some reason, Her Majesty believes in you completely. At the moment, your very existence is a great support to her Majesty.” (Aquinas)

“Even though I find it troublesome?” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, don’t say that. Even though she looks like that, she is genuinely an innocent girl. Her views are still shallow. But just like you, she has something that attracts people towards her.” (Aquinas)

“Even though I don’t believe I have something like that?” (Hiiro)

That was something he truly believed.

“If you say something like that, your companions will get angry, you know?” (Aquinas)

“Why?” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Aquinas)

As expected, even Aquinas blinked in disbelief when he heard such a response.

“...Hiiro, have you ever been regarded as thick-headed?” (Aquinas)

“Ah? Thick-headed? Hmm, I remember Aka-loli and the Hentai saying something like that.” (Hiiro)

“Aka.....loli? H-hentai?” (Aquinas)



“Aka-loli is the one who glared at you. The Hentai is the old butler.” (Hiiro)

“.....Kuh.” (Aquinas)

Hearing that, Aquinas looked away while his body started shaking little by little.

“.....?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro wondered what was wrong with Aquinas as he watched over him. Shortly after that, Aquinas seemed to have returned to normal since he turned back towards Hiiro with a refreshed expression.

“As expected, you are an interesting person. No wonder Liliyn is interested in you.” (Aquinas)

“What are you trying to get at?” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, lets leave that aside. About her majesty...” (Aquinas)

“Oh, alright.” (Hiiro)

“Either way her majesty has decided to fight.” (Aquinas)

“I see.” (Hiiro)

“Up until now she never wanted to fight, but now she has finally opened her eyes to reality. It’s all thanks to you.” (Aquinas)

“Choosing not to fight can be considered a respectable thing. It is a wonderful notion.” (Hiiro)

“Indeed, a wonderful notion.” (Aquinas)

“However, that is something difficult to do in reality. Especially when you live in an era ruled by kings.” (Hiiro)

“That is indeed the case.” (Aquinas)

“Well, isn’t it fine that she is now able to see reality a little? For the time being, you could say that she grew up a little.” (Hiiro)

“But, the biggest question is whether or not her decisions will bear fruit.” (Aquinas)

In other words, he was saying that there was no point if they didn’t win against the Gabranth.

“I see. It seems that the favor you’re planning on asking is just what I thought.” (Hiiro)

“Hou, would you like to share?” (Aquinas)

“You want me to... participate, right? In the duel with the Gabranth.” (Hiiro)

“.....” (Aquinas)

Hiiro considered Aquinas’ silence as acceptance. Rather, when Hiiro told Eveam about the way to resolve this situation, he had predicted that something like this would happen.

And so, while he had found it unexpected that Aquinas would come to ask him for the favor in this manner, Hiiro had already figured that Aquinas had come to ask for his participation in the duel.

It was, of course, in order for them to win. If a person thought about it, everyone would look to Hiiro’s power. Even though he was an outsider, it would be odd if they didn’t use his power when it was nearby.

Nonetheless, Hiiro knew something like this could happen so he had something prepared. He wanted to end the war as soon as possible so he could gain access to the 《Fortuna Grand Library》 right away.

In addition to that, he was also committed to fulfilling Liliyn’s dream. Her dream was to create 【A place that everybody could enjoy】

With the current state of affairs, something like that was impossible. That was exactly why Liliyn wanted to create a new country and establish her dream place; though at the moment that was still a distant goal.

However, if they continued to lay around doing nothing, even if a hundred years passed, the chances of still being unable to realize her dream were high. That being the case, Hiiro's idea was to make use of the existing countries.

This world had three countries, each with their own great history. But they fought each other continuously and created extreme hatred against each other. As they were right now, it would forever be impossible to create a place where people from each country could live in harmony.

With that in mind, any country was fine, as long as they could keep the other countries in check. With that control in place, civil liberties could be established and there would be a high chance of them being able to control the opposition.

Instead of domination and servitude, one would seek out freedom and friendship. However, something like that could not be established without resolving the conflicts between the countries. While Hiiro was still unsure how to resolve these, as long as the method used to bring the conflict to an end was agreed upon by both sides, he thought it would be fine.

With that in mind, Hiiro was unsure how he would approach the 『Humas』. However, he figured that for the 『Gabranth』, his proposed duel would work the best. A primary reason for that was that he somehow felt that if it was that Beast King, he'd be willing to take up the offer.

The Gabranth were a group that held the belief that strength was everything. As such, Hiiro felt that if they had a method to show off their power, they would be able to persuade them. If things went well, then both sides would be willing to participate in the battle.

Thus, if the 『Evila』 won, then they would be able to obtain the Beastmen country. Although he might have said "obtain", what they really meant to do was to finally pave the way for an alliance.

If they could do that, then all that would be left for them to do would be to deal with the 『Humas』 somehow, thus allowing Liliyn to take a large step towards her dream.

Naturally, there were still a lot of uncertainties, but at the moment the only thing he could do was ensure that 【Demon Capital: Xaos】 won. That was why-

“Sounds good. I will also participate in this duel against the Gabranth.” (Hiiro)

This answer was prepared in advance.

Next time, finally.....’they’ will appear !?

## Chapter 157 – Longtime Companions

After Hiiro returned to his room, Liliyn interrogated him about his discussion with Aquinas, just as he expected. In order to make her understand, Hiiro spoke without hiding anything.

Not only that, but for some reason she seemed to be making a relieved expression. It was likely because her concerns were proven to be false.

“Well, if that is what you have decided, I won’t do anything to stop you.” (Liliyn)

“Nofofofof! Ojou-sama was really worried about Hiiro-sama and kept asking “Has he returned yet?” She was not able to settle down at all!” (Silva)

“T-t-t-t-that’s not true, you morooooooooooooon!” (Liliyn)

“Buhen—?!” (Silva)

Because of Silva’s unnecessary remarks, Liliyn’s face instantly flushed a deep red. As if to hide her feelings, she kicked Silva in the face.

Although Shamoe was surprised by the sudden act of violence, she took care of the now silent Silva who was sprawled on the ground.

“Haa haa haa haa..... Listen well, Hiiro! That bastard was spouting nonsense! It wasn’t like that, alright?!” (Liliyn)

With somewhat teary eyes, she pointed her finger and frantically denied the validity of Silva’s comments. Hiiro glanced at her and—

“Is that so...” (Hiiro)

He replied in a completely indifferent manner. Naturally, Liliyn was taken aback by his total disinterest. She glared at him and said —

“Y-y-y-y-y-you fool! Someday, I will make you kneel before me!”  
(Liliyn)

Even as she yelled, Liliyn’s still-red face and tiny body didn’t evoke a single ounce of fear. Rather, seeing her act so desperately would make anyone smile.

(What are you acting so desperate for.....) (Hiiro)

Sadly, nothing Lilyn said affected Hiiro in the slightest. He gave out the same dry answer as usual.

“Sh-shishou!” (Nikki)

Without any warning, Nikki clenched her fists and yelled.

“What?” (Hiiro)

“S-Shishou is, um... going to the duel, right?!?!” (Nikki)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

Nikki then gave a clearly restless expression. Hiiro understood what she wanted to say and indifferently told her—

“You’re no good.” (Hiiro)

“Eeeh!? W-why?!“ (Nikki)

Nikki showed a very disappointed face, as though she had received a great shock.

“It’s only natural; it’s still too early for you.” (Hiiro)

“B-But..... I want to help Shishou!” (Nikki)

“This request is for me. You don’t need to be involved.” (Hiiro)

“Uuuu.....” (Nikki)

She fell silent at Hiiro’s complete rejection.

“This is a duel involving the fate of this country. You’ve still got a

long way to go before you can even think about shouldering such a responsibility.” (Hiiro)

“Uuuu~ stronger!” (Nikki)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“Stronger, stronger, strongeeeeer! If I become stronger, then can I fight alongside Shishou?!” (Nikki)

She set her lips straight and gave Hiiro a serious look. After seeing such a display, Hiiro sighed and nodded his head.

“Let’s see, just getting stronger isn’t enough. But, well, if you become stronger, then I guess I can let you fight together with me.” (Hiiro)

“Then, I will become stronger! So when the time comes, I will look forward to fighting with you!” (Nikki)

“....Well, I’ll be waiting for it.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro flicked Nikki on the forehead, making a *ton* sound. Nikki’s expression lightened considerably, but Mikazuki was dissatisfied with this turn of events and puffed her cheeks.

“Buu~! Why is it only Nikki~? Mikazuki wants to be flicked too!” (Mikazuki)

Although Mikazuki started to throw a tantrum, Hiiro completely disregarded her. Nikki stuck out her chest with pride, making a \*fufun\* sound, while feeling superior over the childish Mikazuki.

“Ku..... Ku..... Ku!!!! Shamoe-chaaaaaan!” (Mikazuki)

The mortified Mikazuki dove towards Shamoe’s chest. Shamoe then kindly stroked Mikazuki’s head to console her.

“Speaking of which, when will the duel take place?” (Silva)

Asked Silva, who had recovered without anyone noticing.

“I still don’t know. Even if we finish all the preparations, shouldn’t we also worry about the other side? Well, we can be sure they’ll bring their best fighters.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, then the < > will certainly be there. The Beast King and...There were two, right? The two princes, as well.” (Silva)

Silva’s investigation churned out nothing but top-class names.

“Iya.....” (Hiiro)

“Nofo? Are there others?” (Silva)

“.....It’s nothing” (Hiiro)

Hiiro recalled his conversation with Aquinas. As they talked about the opponent’s strength, he heard a nostalgic name.

(Don’t tell me that person’s thinking of participating. But then again, there’s a small chance they will.) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro gazed into the distance, everyone tilted their heads while looking at him.

In a place filled with alcohol bottles, something moved with a \*goso goso\* sound. From its movements, it seemed to be a person. While half asleep, that person rolled around and hit some bottles, toppling them over and making a \*karan!\* sound.

Soon after, someone’s footsteps could be heard approaching. Upon looking at the sleeping person, that individual let out a sigh while making an amazed expression.

“Oi-oi, there isn’t even room to stand here.” (???)

The individual skillfully stepped over the bottles littered around and approached the sleeping person. They then placed their hands on the other’s shoulder and tried to shake them awake.

“Shishou? Hey Shishou?” (???)

“Munya.....ushishi.....” (???)



You could tell from their smile that the sleeping person was having a good dream. Their unchanging child-like face had some drool at the edge of their mouth. Not only that, they were also hugging a bottle of alcohol. There was such a gap between their appearance and their actions that it was scary.

“Haa, good grief. This person is really bothersome.....” (???)

As they thought to themselves, just how much does this person like alcohol?!, they began to shake the sleeping person gently. They had been told to wake them up at this time, so they couldn’t possibly stop shaking them until the sleeping person woke up.

“This is bad, could you clean up a bit?” (???)

“Ah. Sure, I’ll do it” (???)

It seemed that there had been two people who entered the room, and one of them asked the other to clean up the room.

“Shishou, please wake up soon. If you don’t ..... I won’t make any more snacks for you?” (???)

“I c-can’t accept that!” (???)

The sleeping person suddenly erupted up with their fists in the air. They seemed to have finally woken up.

“I see you’ve finally woken up, Shishou.” (???)

“.....nh? Oh...so it’s the lolicon.” (???)

“Who are you calling a Lolicon?!” (Lolicon)

The lolicon said with a voice so loud that it echoed through the room.

“Nahahahaha! I’m just joking!” (???)

The person laughed happily while shaking their green hair. As that person stretched, the long ears perched on top of their head unfurled demurely until they were fully straight. The girl was a

「Were Rabbit」 with the stature of a grade schooler, who could always be found wearing a dirty white lab coat.

“Geez, in the first place, if that bastard hadn’t said such unnecessary things to Shishou, then I wouldn’t have had such a title stuck onto me...” (Lolicon)

While dropping their shoulders in a crestfallen manner, that person recalled the one who gave him the Lolicon title and let out killing intent.

“Nahaha! Speaking of that kid, it’s been over half a year since he’s left, huh?” (Rabbit girl)

At that voice, the person who had, until then, been peacefully cleaning the room stopped and looked down with a lonely look in their eyes.

“Aa mou, that guy isn’t thinking about keeping his promise at all! Look, Muir shouldn’t worry about it either!” (Lolicon)

“U, un.....” (???)

Muir Castrea. That was the girl’s name. And the name of the only guy in the room was that of Muir’s guardian, Arnold Ocean.

The two of them were formerly Hiiro Okamura’s travelling partners. And the cause of Arnold’s earlier burst of killing intent was Hiiro himself.

Over half a year ago, the three of them arrived at this place and met the little child wearing the white coat: Arnold’s shishou, Rarashik Fan’naru. It was then that Arnold asked Rarashik to train both Muir and himself.

However, after being told that it would take a considerable amount of time for Muir to become a full-fledged adult, Hiiro decided to leave the two, saying that he could no longer stay in the **【Beastman Capital: Passion】** .

At that time, he said that if he was free after half a year, he would come and meet them again. Since then, however, there had been no

word from him. Muir, who had been looking forward to talking with Hiiro after a long time, grew depressed.

Muir had a favorable impression of Hiiro as a person of the opposite gender. During their journey, she had not been aware of it, but when he left, the feeling of wanting to meet him once more grew steadily.

Hiiro's existence became much bigger within her than she had expected, to the point where she herself was surprised. So, with the prospect of meeting Hiiro after half a year, Muir completely devoted herself to training.

「Become stronger.」

In order to respond to Hiiro's parting words.

Rarashik started grinning as her eyes turned towards Muir.

“Seriously, that brat really is a sinful guy. I've heard that Mimir-sama was charmed by him as well.” (Rarashik)

Mimir was the second princess of the Beast Kingdom. At a young age, an illness had taken away her voice following a high fever. For her, who loved to sing above all else, losing her voice was an ill fate comparable to the despair of death.

However, as she felt that she didn't want to make the people around her sad, she wore a fake smile. That smile, however, was not only ripped away by Hiiro, but what even the best doctors could not fix, Hiiro cured with his 《Word Magic》 in mere seconds.

From then on, Mimir thought of Hiiro as her saviour. She then proceeded to approach him while holding feelings of admiration so strong, they could compare to those of worship. Within those feelings, the faint stirrings of love had formed. One could say that she had fallen in love with him at first sight.

“Muir and Mimir-sama; I wonder who else has fallen for this guy in the past six months. Nahahahaha!” (Rarashik)

Just as Rarashik said these words in an amused manner—

\*crack!\*

Surprised, Arnold looked towards the direction of the sound and saw Muir who had bare-handedly broken the sake bottle she was holding. Moreover, there was not a single injury on her hand.

“Mui, Muir.....?” (Arnold)

“Eh? Ah, umm..... A- I’m sorry! I’ll clean it up immediately!”  
(Muir)

Whether or not she was unaware of what she had done, Muir swepted the broken glass as though nothing had occurred. No, if you looked closer, you could see that there was a faint blush in her cheeks as she appeared to understand exactly why she had done that.

“Nahahaha! Teasing Muir sure is as fun as always!” (Rarashik)

## Chapter 158: It's Definitely about Him!

“Haah, please go easy on me, Shishou” (Arnold)

“My bad, my bad. In exchange, make me some snacks, ‘kay?”  
(Rarashik)

“.....yes, yes.” (Arnold)

Arnold rubbed his temples as he helplessly agreed, because defying her was dangerous. At one point, there was an incident where he had promised to make her snacks, but had forgotten to do so. At the time, her eyes had lost all light as she proceeded to spend half a day masquerading her one-sided beating of him as if it were actual combat training.

Arnold also helped tidy up her room. After finally making it somewhat tidy, he asked Rarashik.

“By the way, you told me to wake you up at this time, but is there something you need to do?” (Arnold)

“No, not really. It’s just that this tsukemono tastes best when eaten around this time” (Rarashik)

As she said that, she took out a small jar from the alcove slab.

“I was planning on having a drink with this!” (Rarashik)

“.....um, Shishou?” (Arnold)

“What is it?” (Rarashik)

“Didn’t your head hurt in the morning because of hangovers?”  
(Arnold)

“Hmph, don’t speak so foolishly Arnold. Did you think that something like a hangover could stop me from drinking alcohol?”  
(Rarashik)

Although she said those words as though they were final with a

dangerous glitter in her eyes, Arnold's face simply cramped in exasperation.

Deciding to himself that there was no point in arguing any more, Arnold feigned laughter. At that moment, he heard the sound of knocking coming from the house's door. The three of them tilted their heads simultaneously.

The reason for their surprise was that for the past half-year, nobody had ever to come visit them. Rarashik's interactions with her neighbours were simply that lacking.

Below this house was an enormous space that Rarashik had created, within which there were numerous rooms established. Arnold and Muir lived within one of those rooms, but this was the first time they had ever heard knocking like this.

“Mu.....somehow I have a bad feeling” (Rarashik)

Rarashik spoke while scowling. As she did so, Muir narrowed her cute large eyes, while the ears on her head stood up attentively.

“You shouldn't say something like that Oshishou-sama. It is our first guest in a while after all” (Muir)

After saying that, Muir replied to the knocking with a, “Ha~i”. Her beautiful silver hair fluttered as she headed towards the door. Seeing that, Rarashik and Arnold quietly watched her.

“Excuse me, but Rarashik-dono should be here, correct?” (???)

On the other side of the door was a beastman with wings growing out of his back. Muir figured that he was a 『Birdman』 based on his appearance alone.

“Hm? This voice....” (Rarashik)

Rarashik murmured in a low voice as her eyes narrowed and gazed over at the person standing in the doorway to confirm their identity.

“Ah, yes. Um.....” (Muir)

Muir moved her body to the side so that Rarashik could see the visitor.

“Hou, this is quite the unusual guest. To think that the famous 《Thunder Lord》 Barid-san would step into a civilian’s house like this” (Rarashik)

Responding to Rarashik’s words dripping with sarcasm, Barid dropped his shoulders with humility.

“Please stop. Compared to you, someone like me is still the same as some youngster. Although I may have risen in status, that is simply because you trained me, is it not?” (Barid)

Muir approached Arnold and asked who their guest was.

“That person is a member of the 《Three Warriors》, Barid-sama, who holds the second title of 《Thunder Lord》” (Arnold)

“Th-th-th-th- 《Three Warriors》!? Th-then isn’t he an important person!” (Muir)

“Young lady, why are you surprised? Isn’t the one over there clearly a great person?” (Barid)

Muir was not surprised at Barid’s words. This was because she was aware of how great a contribution Rarashik had made to the beastmen. After all, the invention of 《Binding》 was praised as one of the beastmen’s greatest, most historic achievements.

“That is exactly why we prepared a dwelling much more suited to someone of your stature, as opposed to this kind of tiny place. Even now, I still don’t understand why you didn’t accept any kind of honour or status, you know?” (Barid)

“Hmph, why do I have to justify anything to you? I like this place. Glamorous jewels or lavish honour and statuses won’t fill up your stomach at all” (Rarashik)

“Ah, but if it’s alcohol, then you’ll accept it right?” (Arnold)

“Of course” (Rarashik)

Readily nodding at Arnold's comment, Rarashik ate the tsukemono and proceeded to chug down alcohol. Thinking that she somehow resembled Hihiro after all, Arnold gave a wry smile. Especially in how she was faithful to her own desires.

"Rather, you came to talk about stuff like that Barid? Actually, aren't you in the middle of a war right now? What happened, did you lose?" (Rarashik)

Seeing her talk indifferently as though it were someone else's affairs, Barid let out a sigh.

".....actually, it's about that war. Right now, the King has returned to the castle" (Barid)

".....hah? Oi oi, did you really lose the war?" (Rarashik)

Unless that was the case, there wouldn't likely be any other reason why the King would return during wartime. Naturally, if they had won, they would have returned in a much grander manner while notifying the entire town of their success.

"No, we haven't lost.....yet." (Barid)

"Yet? .....you mean that even though we formed an alliance with the 『Humas』, the situation is still bad?" (Rarashik)

"It'd be fine if the situation was just bad. After calmly analyzing the situation, at this rate we'll definitely be defeated. No, we've actually already been forced to retreat once." (Barid)

Rarashik's eyes widened with surprise at Barid's words.

"Even with the alliance.....we still had to retreat? After going all the way to invade the Demon Continent?" (Rarashik)

Barid then spoke as he gave a bitter smile.

"Yes. An unbelievable irregular appeared, and everyone was toyed with by that one person" (Barid)

"That person? Oi oi, don't tell me that you were all cornered to the



point of retreat by a single person?” (Rarashik)

“.....precisely.” (Barid)

The room fell silent as though time had stopped. Arnold too was astonished after hearing that story. The war in which they should have had an advantage was overturned due to a single person. After finding such a thing out, anyone would doubt its authenticity.

However, upon seeing Barid’s expression, it was hard to think that he was exaggerating or joking around. Everyone in the room understood that he was sincerely speaking the truth.

“Fu~n, and? Did you come to tell me to lend a hand ‘cause things got bad?” (Rarashik)

“.....” (Barid)

“.....haa, you know, Barid. Aren’t you aware that I hate being used like this in wars?” (Rarashik)

“I am aware of that” (Barid)

“Then you know that my answer won’t change no matter how much you beg, right?” (Rarashik)

“Yes. However, I would like for you to at least speak with the King once” (Barid)

“It’s a pain, so I don’t wanna” (Rarashik)

As expected, after seeing Rarashik deny the King’s request for such a frivolous reason, Arnold chilled with fear.

“This time, the war has moved in an unforeseen direction. All because of that irregular.” (Barid)

“Nahaha, for them to make you guys that confused, they must be quite the individual.” (Rarashik)

Seeing her smile as though she were having fun, Barid became slightly sullen.

“Is there something amusing about this?” (Barid)

“It simply means that there’s always someone better. After obtaining 《Binding》 you all seemed to be happy, but after this time, you guys understood, right? Even if you have power, opponents against which that power doesn’t work exist” (Rarashik)

“That’s.....” (Barid)

“Just why do you think I developed 《Binding》 ? It wasn’t so that you guys could wage war.” (Rarashik)

“.....I understand that, but-“ (Barid)

“You don’t understand. Do you remember what you guys first said while celebrating when you finally obtained power?” (Rarashik)

“.....” (Barid)

“You guys said, ‘Now we can finally defeat the 『Evila』 and 『Humas』 ’” (Rarashik)

Probably because it was the truth, Barid didn’t object.

“That’s why I quit being a military instructor and distanced myself from you guys. Simply put, I became disgusted with your remarks and compliments” (Rarashik)

“I-I understand that.....but please, at least this one time, please speak with the King!” (Barid)

As he said that, Barid politely lowered his head. Seeing one of the top members of their country, Barid, the leader of the 《Three Warriors》 lower his head so easily made both Arnold and Muir want to disappear as they fidgeted restlessly.

“.....go back Barid” (Rarashik)

Nevertheless, Rarashik struck him with chilling words.

“Rarashik-sama!” (Barid)

“It’s the war that you guys started. Whether you win or lose, wipe your own asses” (Rarashik)

“Kuh.....” (Barid)

Deciding that it would be useless to say anything more, Barid turned his back to the three of them while grinding his teeth. Rarashik said one last thing as she saw that he was about to leave.

“Now that I think of it, at least tell me about it. What kind of guy was that irregular?” (Rarashik)

“.....I do not know. All I could conclude was that they were simply an abnormal existence. They were a 『Humas』 that used a strange magic” (Barid)

“Hou, a 『Humas』 being the ally of the 『Evila』 ? That’s quite the strange situation. But more importantly, what do you mean by a strange magic?” (Rarashik)

“They used transformation, healing, explosive, and other magics whose origins we couldn’t figure out” (Barid)

At Barid’s words, Arnold and Muir twitched.

“They were able to withstand the King’s attack unharmed using a wall of light, destroy a bridge in a single breath, and even fly in the air.” (Barid)

“O-oi oi, was that really a human?” (Rarashik)

Hearing such a joke-like story, Rarashik’s face cramped. However, Arnold was-

(I-it couldn’t be.....) (Arnold)

At the answer that had emerged within him, his body involuntarily became hotter.

“Based on appearance, they were human. Based on what the King said, they had black hair and eyes, and wore glasses as well as a red robe” (Barid)

(Hiiro!?) (Arnold)

Arnold screamed within his heart. Meanwhile, next to him Muir may have also reached the same answer as him, as her expression was warped with surprise.

Both of them then glanced at each other in assessment.

“Ah, he also said that he was a boy with an incredibly arrogant attitude” (Barid)

(It's decideddddd!) (Arnold)

The two of them were certain within their hearts. That the irregular existence that he had spoken of was the Hiroy Okamura that they knew.

“Arrogant? Red robe? Hm? Wait.....a moment?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik also became taken aback as she looked at the faces of the two. And as the three of their eyes met, they nodded in assent: their answers matched.

“That's all the information I have. Now then, I will be.....”  
(Barid)

Then, just as he opened the door dejectedly-

“Wait Barid” (Rarashik)

He was called out by Rarashik, and froze.

“Wh-what is it?” (Barid)

Unable to comprehend why he had suddenly been stopped, Barid looked blankly as he asked. As he did so, the corners of her mouth rose as she grinned-

“I've changed my mind a bit. Let me meet the King, Barid”  
(Rarashik)

## **Chapter 159: The Red Robe's Identity ~Arnold's Rampage~**

Frankly speaking, Muir was surprised. She didn't think that she'd be hearing rumors of that person in such a place after all.

That person.....over half a year passed since she had separated with Hihiro Okamura. Half a year ago, Hihiro had said that he'd come back if he was free.

That's why Muir believed in Hihiro's words and trained desperately so that when the time came, she'd be able to fight alongside him. In order not to become a burden, she had trained hard together with her foster father, Arnold.

While thinking that it would soon be 6 months since their separation, she excitedly waited for Hihiro's return. However, even after the promised 6 months had long passed, he had not contacted them at all.

As for their training, it had ended off at a good place where all that remained mainly centered around self-practice. Thinking that they'd be better off finding Hihiro themselves if he didn't come back on his own, Muir discussed the idea with Arnold.

However, Arnold told her that even if they knew Hihiro's destination, it would be too dangerous to go meet him themselves. That was to be expected. If his destination was as he had told them before, it was likely the Demon Continent.

It was not a place that beastmen like Muir and co. could easily go to. If they were like Hihiro and could use transformation magic, then it'd most likely be fine, but unfortunately, they did not possess such convenient magic.

Arnold had also said that they should just leave such a heartless guy alone. However, Muir knew that he did, truthfully, want to see Hihiro as well.

The reason she knew that was because when she had mentioned going to meet him on her own, Arnold had made a happy-looking face. But in reality, they had no means to do so. That was why they had no choice but to continue staying with their master, Rarashik, and train themselves to reach even greater heights.

At that time, an unexpected visitor appeared. Muir couldn't have possibly predicted that the visitor would have been one of the great 《Three Warriors》 of the 《Beastman Capital: Passion》, Barid. Not only that, but they heard a surprising story from Barid.

Right now, they were at war. That was something that anyone within the country would know. Along with the fact that they had made an alliance with the 『Humas』 for it. However, in that war, the beastmen were forced to retreat by the 『Evila』.

Furthermore, the cause of that retreat was a single person. A 『Humas』 who was being thought of as a hero by those on the side of the 『Evila』. Not only that, but that person's features seemed to highly resemble that of a certain person that Muir knew really well.

No, likely, Hiiro was the only one she could possibly think of, who could do such unprecedented feats. Arnold also seemed to have arrived at the same conclusion, as he was displaying a shocked expression. His obviously warped face was then confirmed by Muir.

Then, at last, Rarashik also arrived at the same answer. While she had initially adamantly refused Barid's recruitment for the war, she suddenly changed her mind and accepted his invitation to at least go back and listen to the King's story.

And so, currently, all three of them had followed Barid to 【Passion】's castle, and had arrived at the 《King's Tree》's 《Throne Room》.

“It was good of you to come, Rara.” (Leowald)

The one who was sitting on the throne while speaking was the King of this country, Leowald King. This was not the first time Muir had met with him in person.

Following a series of unexpected events, she had become friends with the Second Princess Mimir. Occasionally, she had been invited by Mimir to play at the castle.

During those times, she and Arnold had met Leowald on numerous occasions. However, even if this wasn't their first meeting, seeing him here on such a formal visit did, as expected, make her nervous.

It seemed that Arnold, who was kneeling next to her, also held similar thoughts, as his nervousness appeared on his face.

However, Rarashik alone kept her usual attitude as she stood right in front of the King.

"It's been a while, Leo-sama." (Rarashik)

"It's good that Rara also seems to be energetic as usual. Also, sorry for suddenly summoning you." (Leowald)

Muir was aware that the two of them had a fairly intimate relationship. When Rarashik was still working as a martial arts instructor, she had taught Leowald.

"No, I actually didn't have any intention of coming. It's just that I heard an interesting story." (Rarashik)

".....about the Red Robe?" (Leowald)

Leowald's eyes glinted.

"Yeah, that's right. After all, it seems like Leo-sama was shown up by that guy." (Rarashik)

"Gahaha! That's right! What a pleasant youngster he was!" (Leowald)

"Looks like you're having fun, Leo-sama." (Rarashik)

"Yeah, my blood's boiling for the first time in a while. I had a small battle with him. Undoubtedly, he has the qualities needed to become my rival." (Leowald)

Upon seeing Leowald's happy smile, Rarashik shrugged her shoulders.

"I see, seems like that guy's become liked by a troublesome person." (Rarashik)

As she said that, Leowald's eyebrow twitched. Barid, in addition to the other soldiers in the room, froze suddenly, having been caught off guard by Rarashik's statement.

".....Rara, do you know? Who exactly that Red Robe is?" (Leowald)

"Yeah, but just in case, I'll at least ask what his name is. Since it is possible that it's just a misunderstanding on our part." (Rarashik)

Although she said that, it could be seen from her expression that Rarashik was confident in her answer. Muir was also confident, but listened carefully in order to reaffirm her answer.

"I don't know if it was his real name, but he was called Hiirou by the Maou." (Leowald)

As he said that, the corners of Rarashik's mouth rose into a large grin. Seeing her expression, Leowald also understood.

"It seems that he's an acquaintance." (Leowald)

"Yeah, although if it's about that youngster, then these two here would be more informed. They were his former travel companions after all." (Rarashik)

"What!?" (Leowald)

The eyes of everyone in the room widened.

"Is that true, Arnold and Muir?" (Leowald)

As they had introduced themselves when they had met previously, Leowald knew their names.

" "Yes!" "



The two of them raised their voices in affirmation at the same time.

“I see! That is quite the coincidence! Do tell some stories about that youngster!” (Leowald)

Arnold answered Leowald’s request. He spoke about where they had met and what kind of adventures they had gone on together. However, he had, for the time being, attempted to speak in a way that would conceal the details of Hiiro’s magic.

Well, as Hiiro seemed to be acting as if he had no intention of hiding it, it might have been okay to talk about his magic. However, as long as he didn’t have permission from the person himself, Arnold felt awkward about explaining the details of Hiiro’s magic to others.

Even so, it wasn’t like Arnold knew all that much about Hiiro’s magic anyways. So all he said was that it was an excessively omnipotent magic.

Leowald enjoyably listened to Arnold’s stories.

“Hohou, so you came to this country with this Hiiro person. How unfortunate. If we had been able to recruit him at that time, then around now, we would have returned with our heads held high.” (Leowald)

It seemed that his assessment of Hiiro was simply that high.

“However, Arnold, having heard your story and seen Hiiro’s actions myself, he’s likely a user of a Unique Magic. Not only that, but he’s human. I’m surprised that he would come to trust beastmen such as yourselves.”(Leowald)

His words were only natural. The discord between the 『Gabranth』 and 『Humas』 was considerably higher than that of the discord between the 『Gabranth』 and the 『Evila』. The reason being that in the past, they had been treated as livestock and slaves by the humans.

“That’s true. Certainly, there are many things that he says and does that I can’t understand at all. However, for better or worse, that guy

is straightforward.” (Arnold)

“Hou, straightforward, you say?” (Leowald)

“Yes. He’s a guy that continues forwards according to what he feels. It’s like he doesn’t believe in the values of others and their rumors. He’s a human who reaches an answer based solely upon what he has directly seen with his own eyes, heard with his own ears, and felt with his own skin.”(Arnold)

“Fumu.” (Leowald)

“When he found out that I, no, when we were beastmen, do you know what he said?” (Arnold)

“That sounds interesting, what did he say?” (Leowald)

“That.....he has nothing to do with it.” (Arnold)

“.....” (Leowald)

“ 『Race has nothing to do with it. In the first place, even if your race is different, it doesn’t change the fact that we’re all alive, right? To be honest, I have no interest in it. What’s so fun about fighting over it? 』 .....it really pulled all the fighting spirit out of me.” (Arnold)

At Arnold’s words, Muir smiled while Leowald’s face once again broke into a smile.

“Hohou, that’s excellent.” (Leowald)

“Heh?” (Arnold)

“Excellent.....that’s excellent, Hiiro. This truly makes me want to obtain him by all means.” (Leowald) (TL: Hyu hyu~ another one for Hiiro’s harem~)

As Muir became dumbfounded, Rarashik murmured, “Ah, shoot~” as she realized what Leowald was thinking.

“It seems that the youngster has been completely targeted. By that

battle junkie.” (Rarashik)

“O-Ojisan.....?” (Muir)

When Muir looked towards Arnold anxiously, she noticed that before she knew it, he had brought his hands together in prayer, and said,

“You have my condolences, Hiiro.” (Arnold)

“Wait, Ojisan!” (Muir)

“It’s fine, Muir. It’ll be a good medicine for that idiot. This is revenge for leaving us without saying anything and breaking his promise with us.” (Arnold)

Upon seeing the obviously evil expression Arnold was making, Muir dropped her shoulders as if she were amazed. While she understood his feelings, she also felt that he had gone a bit too far.

“Hiiro.....?” (???)

As she did so, she heard someone’s voice.

“Ooh, what is it, my daughter, Mimir? Your friends have come, you know?” (Leowald)

“Father, um, just now.....I thought I heard Hiiro-sama’s name.....” (Mimir)

“Mu? Hiiro? Why do you know Hiiro’s name?” (Leowald)

“Ah, eh.....that is.....” (Mimir)

Upon seeing that, Arnold’s eyes glinted. Muir’s face cramped up, as she thought to herself-

(O-Ojisan, don’t tell me.....) (Muir)

Although she thought that and was about to stop him, she was too late.

“Leowald-sama, actually, there is one more thing that I feel you

must hear.” (Arnold)

Upon seeing Arnold suddenly making a good face while acting respectfully, Rarashik’s eyes flickered as she froze.

“Wh-what is it?” (Leowald)

“Do you still remember? The incident from half a year ago when Mimir-sama’s voice suddenly returned?” (Arnold)

Realizing that he was planning on blabbing everything like she thought, Muir’s mouth flapped open and closed with shock.

## Chapter 160: Coming to Like Hiiro

“There’s no way I could possibly forget. Say, Mimir, since then, have you met with the 『Spirit』 at all?” (Leowald)

“Eh.....I-I haven’t but.....” (Mimir)

Mimir stole a couple glances at Arnold, giving off a feeling of restlessness. As Hiiro had asked her to be quiet about it, she had told them that she had been healed by a 『Spirit』 at that time.

“About that 『Spirit』, please try to properly recall it. What did it look like? And what did it say to Mimir-sama?!” (Arnold)

“Fu-fumu.” (Leowald)

Although he was confused because of Arnold, who appeared a little excited, Leowald recounted the details of the 『Spirit』’s appearance that he had heard from Mimir before.

“If I remember correctly.....he wore glasses, and had a red robe.....hm?” (Leowald)

“Do you see now?” (Arnold)

“.....w-wait a moment.” (Leowald)

Leowald looked at the grinning Arnold, confirming that the conclusion he had just thought of was true. Then, he turned his gaze towards Mimir.

“Mimir, please answer honestly.” (Leowald)

“Umm.....” (Mimir)

After seeing Mimir’s flustered-looking face, Muir became nervous, as she didn’t know what to do.

“The one who healed you was not a 『Spirit』 .....was it?” (Leowald)

“.....” (Mimir)

She kept quiet as she continued to stare at Leowald. It seemed that she kept her mouth closed in order to protect her promise with Hiiro. Arnold opened his mouth in an attempt to help her out.

“Mimir-sama was ordered by Hiiro to keep quiet. That was her promise with Hiiro and it is also a bond that Mimir-sama has been treasuring greatly. That is why she cannot possibly break that promise herself. Therefore, Leowald-sama, I will tell you the truth myself.” (Arnold)

“.....hou.” (Leowald)

“As you may have guessed, the one who restored Mimir-sama’s voice was Hiiro. Rather, I feel that the only one capable of doing that is Hiiro.” (Arnold)

“O-Ojisan! Is it really alright to say that?!” (Muir)

Unable to endure it anymore, Muir involuntarily yelled. However, Arnold shook his head.

“It’s fine already. He clearly isn’t trying to hide his magic anymore. It’s also sad for Mimir-sama if she has to keep the truth from her family forever, after all.” (Arnold)

“Ah.....” (Muir)

After realizing that Arnold was not simply rampaging, but also thinking about Mimir’s circumstances, Muir’s chest became warm.

“Well, honestly speaking, I figured that with this, that guy will get mixed up in some sort of trouble.” (Arnold)

The warm feeling in Muir’s chest chilled at light-speed.

“O-Ojisan.....” (Muir)

Seeing her half-closed eyes glaring at him, Arnold began to spout out excuses.

“N-No, in the first place, it’s entirely his fault! He’s always, always, way too self-centred! His reason for participating in this war is probably because of that, you know? I’m pretty sure that it’s because 【Xaos】 has some delicious food or rare books, right?” (Arnold)

“Uu.....” (Muir)

She couldn’t deny it. Rather, Muir herself also thought that was the case. He was not the sort of heroic person who would move based on a sense of justice. He truly was a person who was faithful to his own desires after all.

However, if it was for the sake of some food or book he was fascinated with; Hiirou would calmly go to dangerous locations or perform some dangerous actions. He would easily bet his own life in these situations for trivial reasons that other people would be completely unable to understand.

Leowald seemed to find the exchange between Arnold and Muir rather interesting, as he heartily laughed with a “Gahaha!”

“That youngster Hiirou must be quite the eccentric individual! You know him too, right Rara?” (Leowald)

“Yeah, he’s an extremely interesting guy.” (Rarashik)

“Hohou, for you to say that much.....umu. Mimir, come here.” (Leowald)

Mimir gave a small twitch. Most likely, rather than choosing to remain silent up until now, she was afraid that she’d be scolded for lying.

Leowald picked her up with his large arms and sat her down on his lap as he pat her head.

“I’m sorry.” (Leowald)

“Eh? O-Otou-sama?” (Mimir)

She was surprised as she suddenly received her father’s apology.

“I forcibly asked without taking your feelings into account. That’s right, to you, he’s your benefactor. No, he’s your great benefactor. You couldn’t possibly break a promise you made to someone like that.” (Leowald)

“Otou-sama.....” (Mimir)

“However, there’s no need to worry anymore. Arnold said this as well, but it seems that your great benefactor is not trying to hide his power anymore. It must have been tough being unable to tell your family the truth up until now.” (Leowald)

“Uu.....I-I’m.....very.....sorry.....” (Mimir)

Mimir buried her head into Leowald’s chest and lightly cried. Leowald gently stroked her head; everyone stayed silent until she finished crying.

(Isn’t that great, Mimir-chan?) (Muir)

Muir also watched over the two of them warmly. For a short while, she had been worried, but it seemed that Arnold’s actions had led to a good turn of events. However, it was also possible that they would have led to a series of bad events.

(That’s why, no meals for Ojisan today!) (Muir)

When she glared at Arnold while thinking that, he let out a small scream and went “Hii!”, as he brought his hands together in apology towards Muir. It seemed that he was aware that he had gone a little too out of control.

“Umu, but still, this is quite the problem.” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s sudden murmur, Rarashik asked,

“What’s wrong?” (Rarashik)

“It’s just, you know, we said it before too, but right now that youngster is on the 『Evila』’s side.” (Leowald)

Everyone gasped in realization. Indeed, Hiirō was currently



standing as an enemy of the beastmen.

“To think that he would be Arnold’s friend and Mimir’s great benefactor.....muu.” (Leowald)

As nobody knew what would be the best thing to say in this situation, they all remained silent.

(That’s right.....right now we’re at war with the Demon Continent that Hihiro-san is in.....) (Muir)

Just as Muir started to become uneasy, her eyes suddenly met with Mimir’s. Mimir too seemed to have had an epiphany as her face became dyed with anxiety.

As they did so, Leowald suddenly clapped his hands together.

“Ooh, if that’s the case, then isn’t it simple?!” (Leowald)

Everyone gave a blank look as they turned their eyes towards him.

“Let’s have that youngster participate in the upcoming duel! No, someone possessing that degree of power will definitely be made to participate. And once we win, we’ll take him!” (Leowald)

“.....duel? What do you mean by duel?” (Rarashik)

“Ohh, now that I think of it, Rara, I still haven’t told you about that yet. For now, why don’t you read this letter?” (Leowald)

After saying that, Leowald took out the letter sent to him by the Maou Eveam from his bosom. Rather than proposing a large-scale battle, its contents suggested that they decide the outcome of the war by having each countries’ strongest members fight each other in a duel.

Taking the paper, Rarashik scanned over its contents. Then-

“.....haha, nahahahahaha! What a foolish Maou! Nahahahahaha!” (Rarashik)

“Right? But it’s quite interesting and really is a likeable way of

thinking.” (Leowald)

“So it seems. Kukuku.” (Rarashik)

Unable to understand the reason for their laughter, Arnold asked about it and Rarashik explained the contents of the letter.

Both Muir and Arnold were surprised at the contents as feelings of shock ran through them.

(Somehow, it might be my imagination, but this duel.....I wonder why it feels like it's one of Hihiro-san's ideas.....?) (Muir) (TL note: Best waifu right here. ED: She knows her man like the back of her little hand.)

In truth, Eveam really had used Hihiro's idea. As expected of Muir's intuition.

“So how about it, Rara?” (Leowald)

“No, I understand without you telling me. You want me to participate in this duel, right?” (Rarashik)

“Exactly. If it's this kind of interesting battle, I figured that you'd also want to try participating.” (Leowald)

“That's true.....I'm interested. I want to see the Maou who'd propose this kind of foolish idea with my own eyes, but above all.....” (Rarashik)

She turned her gaze towards Muir and Arnold.

“I want to try meeting with that brat one more time.” (Rarashik)

“In that case-“ (Leowald)

“Yeah, I'll participate, but only if you accept my conditions.” (Rarashik)

“.....conditions? Name them.” (Leowald)

“It's alright, it's pretty simple. These two.....” (Rarashik)

Naturally, she was talking about Muir and Arnold.

“If you let Arnold and Muir participate as well, then I’ll take up your offer.” (Rarashik)

For a short while, silence reigned over the surroundings. And then-

“ “EHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHHH!” ” (Arnold and Muir)

The two of them released a tremendous scream.

.list3 { list-style-type: decimal; }

## Chapter 161: Arnold and Muir, Duel Participation Confirmed!

Arnold: 「Shit! Mind telling me how it came to this again? 」

Currently, Arnold was desperately dodging the sword slash that Beast Kind Leowald had unleashed. Although he has been barely evading it since earlier, if Leowald were to land a decent blow on him, it would undoubtedly become fatal.

Leowald: 「Hora hora(1), what's wrong Arnold?! If that's all you got then I can't bring you along, you know?! 」

Without moving an inch from his spot, Leowald swung down a giant sword, worthy of his stature, as he aimed for the Arnold, the one who was right before his eyes.

\*Shubaa-!\*(2)

Accompanied by a noise that sounded like the air had been cut and torn apart, the pressure generated by the sword came flying towards Arnold, as if it was a blade of wind.

Arnold: 「Uooo-! 」

Rarashik: 「If all you do is evade, you won't be able to defeat the enemy! 」

Arnold: 「E-Even if you tell me tha~a~a~t-! 」

While Arnold was fending off Leowald's attacks with full force, he began to resent Rarashik's remarks internally.

At that time, Rarashik mentioned that she would participate in the duel with the 『Evila』 under the condition that she could bring Arnold and Muir. It went without saying that it wasn't merely the two who were mentioned that were surprised. Leowald, Mimiru, and even the all the soldiers present had expressed astonishment.

However, in the midst of this, Rarashik simply spoke the following with a grin.

Rarashik: 『How do I say this, I'm fairly certain that you know that these guys are my disciples. This will probably be a good experience for them.』

Of course, Arnold refused. He mainly expressed his distaste due to Muir's participation. He didn't really mind if he himself had been elected. As he had fought his way up to this point, he was confident that he had grown stronger thanks to the training that he had received.

Although he would be participating, as the opponent's side would obviously have the 《Cruel》, his chances of winning would be considerably low. Yet, even so, if it was for the sake of his country, he would not hesitate to fight.

However, Muir was different. She had yet to fight a full-fledged battle besides her encounters with monsters and Rarashik. Furthermore, she had yet to experience a fight where one would have to risk their life.

It was precisely because of this that this duel was important for her, or so Rarashik had said. However, from Arnold's perspective, it was still too early for her to participate in such battles.

It was needless to say that Arnold was aware that Muir was working hard in order to become stronger. In fact, Arnold thought that Muir had indeed become stronger. Yet, in spite of this, he was still not convinced that he should allow her to participate in such a war.

Muir: 『But, if I go there, then I'll be able to meet Hihiro-san(3), right?』

In the face of Muir's words, Rarashik nodded. And then-

Rarashik: 『Don't you want to show him how strong you've become?』

At those words, Muir's resolve had been determined. Seeing her

firm expression, Arnold's shoulders drooped. He did not expect that things would turn out in such a manner.

However, it was not Leowald, but the one who was near him, Barid, who gave a voice of complaint. The contents of such complaint was regarding doubts about Arnold and Muir's strength.

Even if they were Rarashik's disciples, the opponent had requested this confrontation while practically demanding that the Gabranth prepare their best forces. If they were to present half-baked individuals in this duel, the one who would be shamed would be the king himself.

It is precisely because of this that Barid doubted the two's ability. Rarashik and Leowald had also thought that this was natural.

Therefore, Leowald issued a certain condition. He said that he would consider it if they could cause a scratch on his body, even if the wound was a mere scrape.

Following this, as everyone headed towards the square where the soldiers were training, it was suddenly decided that they would hold a sparring match there. Furthermore, the setup was that it would be both Arnold and Muir against Leowald.

Arnold: 「Muir! I'll try to somehow block the next blow so you go on the offensive!」

Muir: 「U-Un!」 (4)

Although both Muir and Leowald's offensive power was tremendous, even after they had been fighting for a long time, the fact that he had not moved from his starting position since the beginning of the match was a tribute to the king's strength. Muir, filled with awe towards such a king, spoke in a voice that attempted to dispel such feelings.

Muir: 「Please take care as well, Oji-san!」 (5)

Arnold: 「Aa!」 (6)

Watching these two, Leowald happily laughed.

Leowald: 「Hohou(7), you're going to try something? Then I guess I should bring my strength up a level, huh? 」

Saying this, the large sword that he was holding began to release a fine vibration as it gradually reddened, as if it were being tinged with heat.

Leowald: 「Now, how will you respond to this, you two!? 《Flame Fang》-! 」

As he swung down the large sword that he had raised high in the sky, this time, as if it was wearing flames, a bright red sword blast came flying towards the two.

Arnold: 「Ku-! It's coming-! 」

Arnold also began to concentrate power into his large sword. As he did so, the wind began to converge onto the sword.

\*Buuuuuuun.....\*(8)

A sound that shook the atmosphere could be heard coming from Arnold's sword. Following this, he simply turned towards the sword blast and began to assault it.

Arnold: 「Nuooooooooooooo-! 」

Arnold received Leowald's flying sword blast head on.

\*Gigigigigigigigigigi-!\*(9)

Almost as if two knives had been rubbed together, the noise of impact roared.

Arnold: 「Nugu.....ku-! Uwoo-! 」

In order to protect Muir who was behind him, Arnold, who was slightly losing his ground, stood firm so as to ensure that he wasn't blown away.

Leowald: 「Hou, not bad. 」

Witnessing Arnold block a blow that he had place a reasonable amount of force into, Leowald narrowed his eyes due to Arnold's unexpected power.

Arnold: 「Doon't.....come.....closeeeeeeeeeer-!」

As Arnold had swung his sword with all his might, he was able to successfully tear through and pulverise the sword blast.

Arnold: 「Now, Mui~~~r-!」

Behind Arnold, Muir was present, her lovely set of Kemono-mimi twitching with a \*pikopiko\*(10). Every time that those ears moved, the crackling resembling a discharge phenomenon occurred.

Muir: 「Go! 《Fangs of Lightning》-!」

Muir vigorously shook her hands one by one, from bottom to top. As she did so, like how Leowald had launched his sword blasts earlier, a pillar of lightning had been emitted from her hand.

As she had two hands, two columns of thunder had been created. As if to avoid Arnold, the pillars split off to the left and right before rushing towards Leowald, who was in front of him.

Leowald: 「Mu-!?」

As Leowald had instantly understood that Muir was a user of 《Binding》 that possessed the element of lightning, although his thoughts had halted for a split second, his expression soon reverted to normal as he wielded his large sword in an attempt to mow down the incoming thunder pillars.

\*Suka-!\*(11)

Although it was thought that he had completely captured the columns of lightning, strangely, as if they had a will of their own, the pillars completely evaded the sword's attack. Following this, a pincer attack came from both sides and-

\*Bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi bachi!!!!!!-!\*(12)



-splendidly landed a direct hit on Leowald.

Leowald: 「Mumu-!」

He involuntarily scowled. Muir, who had saw this, smiled with pleasure as she thought that her attack had hit it's mark. However-

Leowald: 「Nuo-!」

\*Bachin-!\*(13)

As Leowald placed all his strength into his entire body, his muscles began to inflate. At the same time, the lightning that had wrapped around his body was blown away.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! I was slightly surprised, but you won't be able to make a scratch on me with just this?」

Certainly, Leowald had not suffered a single wound due to Muir's attack. However, Muir-

Muir: 「No, just this much is fine!」

Leowald: 「What?」

It was then that Leowald had noticed Arnold's imperceptible disappearance.

Leowald: 「Mu? Where did he go?」

As he spoke, he felt a presense in the sky above him. There, the figure of Arnold was present, his large sword being cloaked in wind like what had happened earlier that fight.

Arnold: 「How's this-!? 《Wind Faaaaaang》-!」

Leowald: 「That lightning was just a distraction! However, I won't let you!」

Leowald also readied his sword by reflex. As the two swords collided, sparks began to fly. Furthermore, due to the two's powers colliding, a small explosion occurred.

Arnold: 「Guwaaaaaa-!?」

Having been blown away by the shock wave, Arnold rolled up to where Muir was standing.

Muir: 「Oji-san!」

Muir rushed over in a split second.

Arnold: 「Itete.....」 (14)

While painfully rubbing his butt that had received a nasty blow, Arnold waited for the smoke before his eyes to dissipate. Following this, a large shadow appeared.

Leowald: 「Fumu(15).....Gahahahaha!」

Leowald was laughing with his large sword slung over his shoulder.

Leowald: 「I guess I slightly underestimated you! You two aren't bad at all!」

It was then that Arnold and Muir both understood why he was laughing.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! To think, not only did you scratch me, but you launched me all the way over here!」

Indeed. From where he was earlier, it was clear that his position had been displaced further backwards. Furthermore, when Arnold and Leowald's swords collided, as his attack had become a fine blade of wind, he was able to make a scratch on his body.

Of course, if you were looking at it in terms of damage, it would almost be nil. However, it was true that the fine sword had engraved a number of wounds on Leowald's body.

Leowald: 「Furthermore, you only used the elementary 《Fangs》. This is.....they've been honed quite well, Rara.」

While saying this with an elated grin, Leowald shifted his gaze towards Rarashik.

Rarashik: 「Eeh(16), that's because I showed these guys hell everyday. If they weren't able to do this, I would have made them start their training from the beginning.」

At these words, the two's faces grew pale as they felt a chill creeping up their spines. It appeared that their bodies had remembered the contents of their training as they began to tremble.

Leowald: 「Gahaha! Certainly, there are still doubts as to their individual abilities but...I see. We should make sure to properly bring those that shine! That is the the 『Gabranth』 way! Gahahahaha!」

At this, Leowald turned his face towards Barid.

Leowald: 「How's that, Barid? I felt that these individuals had a good amount of resolve, but?」

Barid: 「.....very well. With this, it would not pose a problem if we were to bring them to the duel.」

Leowald: 「-is what he said. However, there is still one week before the duel. Until then, I myself shall train you.」

Rarashik: 「Hou~. So it's been decided, yes?」

Towards Rarashik's question, Leowald nodded vigorously.

Leowald: 「Aa, let's achieve victory together! Arnold! Muir!」

Seeing him once again fearlessly laugh, Arnold and Muir's cheeks twitched.

Arnold: 「T-This turned into something unbelievable, huh.....」

Muir: 「U-un.....but with this, I'll be able to meet him.....right?」

Arnold: 「.....seems so.」

Muir: 「.....although I don't like the enemy's side.」

Arnold: 「That guy doesn't care about stuff like that, right?」

Muir: 「 Ahaha, you might be right. 」

Arnold: 「 Besides, Leowald-sama also said something about bringing Hiiro over to this side, you know? 」

Muir: 「 F-For some reason, Hiiro-san has become liked by a really amazing person, huh? 」

Arnold: 「 Seems so. It was kinda unexpected that he was thinking of making Mimiru-sama's son-in-law.....Hii-! 」

As Arnold suddenly saw a Hannya(17) behind Muir, he raised a scream. Although the person herself was smiling, for some reason, it was a smile that reeked of lies.

Muir: 「 Ahaha.....I'm really looking forward to seeing him. Isn't that right, Oji-san? 」

Arnold: 「 Ah.....un. That's right. 」

As Arnold felt a bleak sensation emanating from Muir's voice, he cowered. Although he had an idea about why her attitude had changed, if he was to pursue it, there was no doubt that sparks would fly. Therefore, he had restrained himself from doing so.

Arnold: (Daamn it! Hiiro, you bastard! You better remember this! But, it's true that I'm looking forward to meeting again. Just you wait, Hiiro! I've already decided that I'm going to give your face one good punch!)

He looked up at the cloudless sky. Arnold's thoughts held a strong resolve towards Hiiro, the one who was once his adventuring companion.

## Notes:

1. Hora: 'Hey'.
2. \*Shubaa\*: The sound of wind tearing.
3. -san: A Japanese suffix used to denote distance and respect with the subject. Think of 'Mr.' or 'Miss'.

4. Un: Not to be confused with 'Uun'. A Japanese expression which denotes affirmation.
5. Oji-san: An affectionate way of referring to an elderly person. Sometimes translated as 'Uncle'.
6. Aa: A Japanese expression which denotes affirmation. Often used by, but not exclusive to, masculine, dominant people.
7. Hohou: An expression that denotes intrigue.
8. \*Buuuun\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*buzz\*.
9. \*Gigigi\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*creaking\*.
10. \*Pikopiko\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*twitch\*.
11. \*Suka\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*swoosh\*.
12. \*Bachi bachi\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*crackle crackle\*.
13. \*Bachin\*: A Japanese onomatopoeia which means \*bzz\*. Described as the sound of electricity suddenly being turned off.
14. Itete: A Japanese expression that is often said when in pain. Think 'Ouch' or 'Owie'.
15. Fumu: A Japanese expression that denotes affirmation.
16. Eeh: A Japanese expression that denotes affirmation.
17. Hannyu: <https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Hannyu>

## Chapter 162 – Triumphant Hiiro

NB: Partially edited (will updated it later this took way too long T\_T, must get it out....)

Translator: Chuck (sorry, i'm leaving a lot of work for the editor here)

The duel between 「Evila」 and 「Gabranth」 was set to take place at the beast continent. Normally, it should have been difficult for either party to travel to the other's continent, but the 『Evila』 readily consented to it.

They were able to go there immediately because they had the means to do so. That means was provided by Hiiro, who had the ability to teleport people. Because the Beast King Leowald knew about this, he was not surprised by their method of transport.

Both the duel location and method were decided by the beastmen. That being the case, if they still lost despite all that, they wouldn't be able to make any more complaints. Especially because they were the prideful beastmen. The Demon Lord Eveam took that into consideration as she let the beastmen decide the conditions of the duel.

【Beast Kingdom: Passion】. Located to the east of it are the 【Valaaru Wilds】, the most expansive wilderness of the Beast Kingdom. And in that wilderness, a strange place exists.

There was a crater in that strange place, which seemed to have been created from some enormous object falling from the sky. The radius of the crater was at least 200 metres. And it was that crater which was designated as the dueling location.

Furthermore, the conditions of the duel set by the Gabranth dictated that both sides would pick an equal number of people, who would then fight within the crater. There would be duels fought one-on-one, but also duels fought two-on-two or three-on-three as well.

One person from each side would be designated as the “King”. That person should be protected while the fight goes on. Of course, if that person were to fall in battle, it would mean a defeat for that side.

Spectators would watch from outside the crater. Of course, in the event that a spectator were to interfere with a duel, the side from which that spectator came from would lose the battle.

To be declared the victor, the opponent’s King had to admit defeat or be rendered incapable of combat. This system of duelling originally occurred amongst the [Gabranth] , and was used to resolve the conflicts between beastmen where neither side was willing to give in.

The winner was awarded status and honour, while the loser would lose everything. This was a method of dueling which was once used between the Gabranth called 『Agasshi』 .

Eveam understood the location and the method for the duel from the letter. Because she let the other side determine the duel conditions there were no major issues, but there was a slight problem.

If it were Hiiro’s magic, they would be able to arrive at the duel location in an instant. However, this only held true for places Hiiro had actually gone to.

Hiiro had gone to Passion before, but he had not gone to the Valaaru Wilds. That’s why it was more convenient for Hiiro to go there at least once prior to the duel.

Thus, when Hiiro was told about it, he said, “Then I’ll head off for a bit” in a tone as though he were going for a stroll. After saying that, he instantly disappeared from the room.

Hiiro’s destination was [Passion].

“Ugh, it’s as large as ever huh.” (Hiiro)

Symbolizing the town was a large tree, the 《Tree of Beginnings, Aragorn》 . The town spread around this tree with the kingdom at

the centre. Moreover, unlike towns made by humans, the entire town was made of trees. Houses were carved out within trees to create living spaces for the citizens.

Within the country was a clear stream flowing, and there small fishes could be seen swimming freely within it. It was a dwelling suitable for the beastmen, who lived together harmoniously with nature.

The royal castle, which was appropriately called the <<King Tree>>, was where the royal family lived. A large number of gigantic trees surrounded it, giving it the appearance of a fortress (or: turning it into a fortress-castle??)

In the town many merchants and travelers visited, offering up their prayers to the 《Tree of Beginnings, Aragorn》. 『Founder Beast King』 Jingwald set the tree as a symbol and ever since the town was built, it was worshipped as a sacred tree.

At the yearly festival called the 《Origin Festival》, a large number of people gathered there. In particular, there were many who would bring their children with them. The reason being that they believed that during that time, if the children climbed the 《Tree of Beginnings, Aragorn》 and offered up their prayers, the children would be able to receive divine protection from it.

To grow up to be a strong and fine adult the 《Tree of Beginnings, Aragorn》 was used to perform rituals similar to a Buddhist prayer. Of course, such blessings were limited only to the children of the beastmen. In the past, there had actually been a time when humans who were discovered trying to climb the tree had been executed.  
first line needs tlc

As he looked up at the great tree, Hiirō uttered words nostalgically. There were a number of reasons why he decided to come here.

The first was to have them guide him to the duel location. However, even without a guide, if he used the

The second was that he wanted to see the Beast King one more time. Although they had met once in the past, during the



conference he didn't have much time and hence was unable to do much observing.

Moreover, he truly did want to try talking to the king who was willing to decide the future of his race using this kind of dueling method. He could be described as an 'idiot', if you had only a single word to describe him with, but Hiiro could not bring himself to hate such a person. needs tlc

That feeling may simply have come from the fact that his first travel companions had been beastmen. They were stupid, but honest. As for the king that ruled over such people, Hiiro felt that he was an idiot, but couldn't help but have a slightly good impression of such a king.

Lastly, the third reason was that he wanted to fulfill the promise he had made to those companions of his. Although he had honestly forgotten about it until now, he had judged that this was the perfect opportunity to fulfill his promise.

Naturally, those companions were Arnold and co. It had been over half a year since he had parted with them. Hiiro was slightly anticipating how they had grown since then.

Since quite a bit of time had passed since the half-year mark, Hiiro resolved himself for the scolding that he was likely to receive. However, since he had taken the trouble to come all the way here, he figured that he should at least drop by to give them his greetings.

For the time being, Hiiro had used the 「Change Form」 word to transform into a beastman. From there, Hiiro walked over to Rarashik's house.

He thought that Rarashik's house would be old and decrepit as before. However, unlike when he last saw it, while it couldn't be said to be in the best condition, it had an ordinary door installed onto it.

Hiiro then concluded that this was probably due to Arnold or Muir fixing things up. He opened the door and casually entered the

house. However, there was nobody in the room.

However, this was the case before. Inside the house is a basement. Figuring that they would all be there, Hiiro was about to head over to the basement when his eyebrow twitched and he stopped moving.

“Nn? Who’s there?” (???)

A voice came from behind him. Turning around, he saw a white-robed figure of a little girl with long ears. In her hands was a bottle of alcohol. No doubt, this girl was Rarashik.

“Yo” (Hiiro)

“.....Could it be you are.....?” (Rarashik)

At first, she had looked at him as if he were a suspicious person, but soon gave a blank look as she stared at Hiiro.

“It’s been a while, chibi-rabbit.” (Hiiro)

Hearing the nickname she became convinced that it truly was Hiiro. double check this please

“It’s you, b-brat?!” (Rarashik)

“Who else does it look like?” (Hiiro)

“N-no... it’s just that...eh? Seriously?” (Rarashik)

Still unable to believe in what she saw, Rarashik became confused. She knew that Hiiro was going to be on the enemy’s side for the upcoming duel.

That was why Rarashik was confident that they would only meet on the day of the duel. However, Hiiro suddenly appeared in front of her, in her own house, none the less. It couldn’t be helped that she had been surprised.

“The others?” (Hiiro)

Hihiro asked as though completely ignoring Rarashik's panicked state.

"Eh? Ah, oh, so that's it. You came here to see them?" (Rarashik)

"Yeah, seeing as I'm here already." (Hihiro)

For a short while, Rarashik's eyes were blinking with surprise, but after letting out a deep sigh, she appeared to have calmed down as she gave a small giggle while smiling.

"I see, you came here to meet them. It is regretful, but they aren't here right now." (Rarashik)

"They're not?" (Hihiro)

"Yeah, Leo-sama... no, I mean, they've gone out hunting a certain monster due to a command from the Beast King." (Rarashik) needs tlc

"A command from the Beast King?" (Hihiro)

Why Arnold and Muir would be sent by the Beast King to exterminate a demon was puzzling to Hihiro. He would understand if it were a mission from the guild, but instead it was a rare direct order from the king of the country himself.

"Yeah, it's a test." (Rarashik)

"A test?" (Hihiro)

Then Rarashik explained precisely why they were undergoing such a test.

"Yeah, it's so that they can participate in the duel. That's why they accepted the orders of the king." (Rarashik)

"So it's like that." (Hihiro)

Hihiro was surprised.

No matter what kind of personality the Gabranth have, they are not

a group of people who would easily go to war. Arnold, in particular, was expected to have no interest in the war because of Muir.

However, because Rarashik told them to participate in the war, they had no choice but to accept their fate.

“Well, this time it isn’t a just fight to the death. It would be an opportunity to obtain some battle experience. Also, don’t they have something they want to express as well? Like how they want to show that person how much stronger they’ve become.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik grinned and glanced at Hiiro, who sighed.

“I see. Well, it’s their life. They can do what they want, I don’t have any say in the matter anyway.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, is that so.” (Rarashik)

“If that is the case then it would be better if we don’t see each other here.” (Hiiro)

“What do you mean?” (Rarashik)

“Right now I’m your enemy right? Also, you’ll be fighting with the weight of the country on your shoulders. Wouldn’t it be better if we didn’t meet each other?” (Hiiro)

There was a good chance that their determination to win, which took a long time to build, would waver. He really wanted fight with all his effort.

“Fuu~n, well you do have a point there. However, what if we do it in this way?” (Rarashik)

“Hm?” (Hiiro)

In a flash, Rarashik instantly appeared behind Hiiro. She raised her arm towards his head, and something like a stiletto (mesu) appeared in her hand and pointed at his neck. It was all done with god-like speed.

“I will restrain you here, which might improve the chances of the

Gabranth winning by a bit.....Hm?” (Rarashik)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“And I think those guys would also want to meet you after all, kozou” (Rarashik)

“.....” (Hiiro)

“Oh my? I thought you would have gotten stronger since then but you are still unable to respond to my speed, right? Nahaha!” (Rarashik)

She smiled happily, but,

“That is right, I have gotten a bit stronger since then.” (Hiiro)

Rarashik’s eyes went wide in surprise. That was because Hiiro’s voice came from behind her. When she turned her head to look back Hiiro was leaning casually on the wall with his arms folded across his chest.

“H, how is possible?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik looked back and forth between Hiiro’s previous and current location and they were both there.

SFX: Boshi

“Bugh!?” (Rarashik)

When Hiiro suddenly disappeared in a puff of smoke from in front of her, Rarashik drooped in a dumbfounded expression.

“H-how...what is happening?” (Rarashik)

“It is just a clone” (Hiiro)

“C-clone....” (Rarashik)

That was right, the moment Hiiro sensed someone coming into the house he quickly used the character “Shadow Clone” 『影分身』 and

hid his presence with “Transparent” 『透明』 .

As a matter of fact, both of them were Set Words, so he would be able to activate them anytime. Rarashik, who didn't know about it was talking to a clone.

“With this I've returned the favor from before” (Hiiro)

Previously it was the same move that she used to corner him before. Thus, the next time she did something like that he would return the favor. But being able to trick her completely, it made him smile.

“...Haha, even for the Gabranth, this is going to be a troublesome duel.” (Rarashik)

She managed to glimpse Hiiro's power and was surprised with his growth.

“Fu-un, oh well; actually, it was bit regretful that you got me there; I'll return the favor later. Are you only here to visit those guys?” (Rarashik)

# Chapter 163 – Hihiro Charges to Passion

Tense : Past

Translator: EnTruce

Editor: Ghost | Sakkun

Proof Reader: Leo-tan

Hihiro made an expression which showed that he was convinced with Rarashik's reason for coming here. Seeing as they both had the same destination, the two headed towards the < > together.

She said that she also had some business with the king, but-

“Besides, there's no way I could let myself miss out on such an amusing event, right?” (Rarashik)

Her smile was brimming with resolve/resolution. Even Hihiro acknowledged that if she was with him, the talk would go without any unnecessary hindrances and hence permitted her to join him without any words of opposition.

Some soldiers might remember his beast man face, and so he was asked by Rarashik, to wear a hood. Certainly, this way, he might be able to avoid any unnecessary conflicts.

However, upon entering the < >, it was natural for others to stare at a person wearing a red robe in a manner that prevented them from confirming his identity.

However, as Rarashik was near him, they judged him to be her companion and so, nobody said anything. Before entering the < > Rarashik informed one of the soldiers that she was seeking an audience with king.

The soldier bowed towards Rarashik with a nervous expression and entered the < >. After a while, he came back and permitted the

two guests to enter.

Rarashik took the lead as Hiiro followed behind her.

(Hou, so this is the < >, huh.....and that is)(Hiiro)

He thought that as his gaze fell upon the majestic throne. Sitting on it was the beast king Leowald, who gazed at the two, with doubtful eyes.

Hiiro's eyes scanned the room thoroughly, assessing his surroundings. Near the throne stood a birdman, whom Hiiro had met once before. He seemed to be on guard against him and was glaring at Hiiro with sharp eyes.

“What’s with the sudden visit, Rara?”(Leowald)

Leowald asked to Rarashik, while his eyes were fixed on Hiiro.

“No, it’s nothing. I was just thinking of reporting my idiot students’ current status and.....I wanted to introduce someone interesting to you.”(Rarashik)

“Hou.”(Leowald)

Everyone focused their gazes on Hiiro. Upon doing so, the birdman, Barid, attempted to approach Leowald in attempt to protect him, but was stopped immediately by the beast king himself.

“.....Is that the one?”(Leowald)

“Yes, I’m sure you’ll be surprised.”(Rarashik)

Leowald glanced at Rarashik, who showed a big smile, and returned his line of sight to Hiiro.

“..... You over there, take off your hood and show me your face.”(Leowald)

Then, just as asked, Hiiro took off the hood. The next moment, the atmosphere chilled. Especially Barid, who had previously met Hiiro in his beast man form, guarded Leowald by positioning himself



before him..

“Rarashik-sama, what are you trying to do?”(Barid)

He questioned the woman; bloodlust oozed out of him with every word he spoke. Such a reaction was nothing out of the ordinary. After all, it was Rarashik who had guided Hiiro, an enemy, all the way to the throne room.

But she shrugged her shoulders as she spoke with a smile that remained unbroken.

“Well Hiiro said that he wanted to meet Leo-sama, so I just brought him here. I mentioned this before, right? That this boy was an acquaintance.”(Rarashik)

“B-But still!”(Barid)

Barid’s complaint was natural. Yet, no matter how much of an acquaintance Hiiro was, they were to duel with their respective countries at stake in a few day’s time. Moreover, he was the person they had to be most vigilant towards. Anyone would likely feel that it wouldn’t be too far off to think that Hiiro had come to steal away the life of the king in this instant.

“Calm down. This boy has really come here just to talk.”(Rarashik)

“Wh, Where is the evidence of that!”(Barid)

“After all, he is not someone who would do something that troublesome.”(Rarashik)

“.....Ha? T-Troublesome?”(Barid)

Barid became astonished when he heard Rarashik’s words. And then, a hand grabbed on to his shoulder.

“M, My lord?”(Barid)

“Step aside for a bit.”(Leowald)

“B, But!!”(Barid)

“Move aside.”(Leowald)

Being overpowered by the king's stare, Barid reluctantly stepped aside. Leowald gazed at Hiiro and,

“It has been a while.....I suppose?”(Leowald)

Leowald asked.

“Aa, without a doubt, it has been a long time.”(Hiiro)

“The 『Evila』 I faced at 【Holy Oldine】. That was you, right?”(Leowald)

“That's right. At that time, you attacked me all of a sudden. Are all rulers here that quick to resort to violence?”(Hiiro)

“You bastard!”(Barid [Third wheel])

Barid spread his wings to fly, but was once again stopped by Leowald's glare.

“Uu.....understood”(Barid[Third Wheel])

After Leowald confirmed that the wings were retracting, he once again looked at Hiiro with an inquiring stare.

“Those who are capable of talking to the king of a country like that are either a big shot or an idiot.....which one are you?”(Leowald)

“Isn't it obvious that I'm a big shot?” (Hiiro)

Seeing Hiiro reply without a second's hesitation, Leowald grinned.

“Gahahahaha! I see! This is definitely the same brat from that time! Gahahahaha!”(Leowald)

Seeing their King laugh in such an enjoyable manner, the soldiers' faces went blank. The tense atmosphere from before vanished as if it was a lie.

“Well then, you certainly do seem to be Hiiro Okamura. However, you're supposed to be the strongest war potential on the enemy's

side. Do tell me why someone such as yourself would come all the way here.”(Leowald)

“I have many reasons, but there are only two reasons that concern you people. One is to know about the exact location for where the battle will take place.”(Hiiro)

“Nh? You don’t know the battle place? I heard from the Maou that that place was fine, you know?”(Leowald)

While frowning, he asked.

“No, there is no problem with the place itself. I just need to know the exact location, so I came here.”(Hiiro)

“Hou, for what reason?”(Leowald)

“Because I’ll be transporting the guys from 『Evila』 there.”(Hiiro)

That had been written in the letter from the Demon lord as well. That a person from their side would be teleporting them to the battle location on the appointed/promised day. Of course, normally one wouldn’t think that a person capable of doing that would exist.

However, during the conference, Hiiro teleported the Demon Lord and others to the far away demon continent within an instant. That was why they judged that it was possible.

But as Leowald thought of why Hiiro would need to know the precise position of the battle location, it suddenly dawned on him.

“I see, your magic can’t take you to places you don’t know?”(Leowald)

“.....Hou, looks like you can use your head after all. I thought you were a complete muscle head.”(Hiiro)

On Hiiro’s words Rarashik laughed out loud with a pfffft, veins popped out on Barid’s head, and the soldiers gasped in fear. And the most important individual Leowald, was laughing cheerfully as he said,

“Gahahahaha! It is a fitting phrase! Isn’t it Rara!”(Leowald)

“Nahaha! It certainly is!”(Rarashik)

Leowald was laughing excitedly, as if he was having fun. The soldiers were fretting that a fight would break out due to such insulting words towards their king, but felt relieved once they realised their fears were baseless.

“Muscle head, huh! I believe, that was something Rara also used to address me! Gahaha!”(Leowald)[Seriously his laugh is creepy]

“But you really are one!”(Rarashik)

Looking at Leowald not getting even slightly agitated , Barid was baffled.

“I see, I see! So you want to know where the place is so that you can teleport there?”(Leowald)

“Well if I were to give a reason, then that would be the case.”(Hiiro)

“Mu? If you were to give one?”(Leowald)

“Yeah, even if you don’t tell me where it is, I’d be able to find it myself after all.”(Hiiro)

“Hohou, meaning that you have another reason for coming here?”(Leowald)

“Well, I just wanted to talk to you to see what kind of person you are. To learn more about the cheerful king who accepted this absurd duel.”(Hiiro)

“Gahahahaha! From your point of view, it may appear to be an absurd decision!” (Leowald)

“.....”(Hiiro)

“However, Hiiro, for us 『Gabranth』 , who value power and bonds above all else, this duel is, in a sense, the best method that we could

agree with.”(Leowald)

“.....Aren’t you just a battle idiot?”(Hiiro)

“You could say that. But it’s easy to understand. Is that not so?”(Leowald)

“.....I don’t hate it. That kind of easy to understand thing.”(Hiiro)

“Gahaha! I see, I see! So then? You said you wanted to try talking with me beforehand like this, but how was it? Did you learn anything?”(Leowald)

“Well, I guess that I can kind of understand the reason why you’re adored so much by the rest of the beastmen.”(Hiiro)

He was someone whose aura alone revealed him to be different from a normal person. He had a lively way of speaking and a fierce fighting capability. Furthermore, he had that ‘something’ which drew people to him.

Hiiro somehow felt that he could understand why the beastmen relied on Leowald. He had thought of the possibility of a battle occurring without them hearing what he had to say. Hiiro wasn’t so thoughtless as to think that it wasn’t a possibility

However, on the contrary, it looked like not only his power, but also his mind was good. Hiiro made a bitter smile, thinking that Leowald’s charisma was incomparably higher than that of the Maou Eveam’s.

Leowald must have been happy due to Hiiro’s words, as he once again began to boldly laugh.

Taptaptaptaptaptaptaptaptaptaptap!

Thereupon came the sound of the footsteps of someone approaching them. Following that, a girl appeared behind Hiiro. She breathed heavily while grasping her chest desperately as she gazed towards the throne.

“I, I’ve heard that Hiiro-sama has come here.....is.....that.....

true?”(Mimir)

As she said that, her eyes gradually widened. Her sight focused on a single person.

“.....Hi.....Hiiro.....sama?” (Mimir)

Hearing his name being called, Hiiro lightly turned his face to look behind him. Upon seeing the young girl, he paused to think for a moment. However, when he saw the large blue ribbon on her head, he went, “Oh?” and seemed to recall her as his eyes widened a little.

“You.....aoi ribbon, huh?” (Hiiro)

## Chapter 164 – The Doting Beast King

If Hiiro recalled correctly, when he had previously come to 【Beast Capital: Passion】 half a year ago, he was able to enter the 【King's Tree】, where the Beast King lives, through a series of unexpected events. During that time, he had met a lone, young girl while exploring the place on his own.

Her chestnut hair ran down to her waist, and a blue ribbon, which was large enough to be called her 'trademark', rested upon her head. Although she couldn't be said to be tremendously beautiful, her attractive, large, almond-shaped eyes and near-transparent white skin gave off the feeling that she would grow up to become a beauty in the future.

She had communicated with him by writing on something that looked like a board. It seemed that she had lost her voice due to an illness that afflicted her in her childhood.

Although it honestly had nothing to do with Hiiro, he remembered that, somehow, seeing her expression made him irritated. She was living for someone else's sake. That was something that would normally be said to be magnificent.

If she herself had fully desired to live in such a manner, he wouldn't have thought anything about it. However, deep in her eyes, he could detect traces of resignation and bitterness concealed.

And then, when she turned her smile towards him, he noticed that she was faking it, and found it annoying. Although it truly was just a simple whim, he, without thinking about it, restored her voice using 《Word Magic》.

He had a feeling that it was something that he had to do, but at the same time, he also truly did feel that he wanted to see her real smile.

After healing her, he realized the significance of his actions and thus, after forbidding her to speak of him, quickly left the country. Had he remained there that time, it would have certainly become

troublesome for him.

Of course, he had not encountered her after that event. Rather, he had honestly forgotten about that incident until she appeared in front of him just now.

She was wearing a similar blue ribbon to the one she wore the first time he had met her.

“Hi-Hihiro-sama....Hihiro-samaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!” (Mimir)

She came running at him with full force, completely unlike a princess. He intended to avoid the incoming body blow, as he expected it would have considerable power, but–

“.....Hm?” (Hihiro)

He found his clothes being gripped by someone.

“C-Chibi Usagi!” (Hihiro)

It was Rarashik. Her lips relaxed into an amused grin, and said–

“It’s a man’s job to shut up and accept a woman’s hug, isn’t it?” (Rarashik)

“What are.....gufu!” (Hihiro)

He could have avoided it in time if his clothes had not been gripped, but as he was unable to do so, he was tackled by the blue ribbon girl, Mimir. The impact of her blow wasn’t something that could be called a mere ‘hug’.

Of course, she did not have the intention to attack Hihiro. It seemed that she was so overjoyed, she simply wished to embrace him.

“Hihiro-samaaaaa!” (Mimir)

She rubbed her small head against his chest as her face broke into a smile. Seeing such a scene, everyone became dumbfounded, except for the grinning Leowald and Rarashik.



“Mi-Mimir-sama! Please separate from that person! He is an enemy!” (Barid)

Although Barid gave Mimir a warning, it seemed to not have reached her, as she raised her face and looked at Hiiro.

“Finally.....I was finally able to meet Hiiro-sama.” (Mimir)

“Ugh.....I got it, I got it already, so hurry up and get off of me!” (Hiiro)

As he said that, she tightened her embrace even more.

“I don’t wanna! You’re gonna go off somewhere again, aren’t you?” (Mimiru)

“Hah? What are you saying....” (Hiiro)

“Gahahaha! Hiiro, no matter what you say to Mimir right now, it’s useless! That child has inherited my stubbornness after all!” (Leowald)

Having felt that he saw something rare, Leowald let out a hearty laugh. Even if she was displeased with his words, Mimir gave a sour look and stubbornly held on to Hiiro, expressing her strong desire to continue holding him.

Seeing such a Mimir, Hiiro let out a shallow sigh and swiftly wrote the character 『Untouchable』.

Suka!

All of sudden, Mimir, who had been clinging to Hiiro, passed through his body.

“E.....Eeeh!?” (Mimir)

Not only Mimir, but also the rest of the people in the room were so surprised that their jaws dropped.

Hiiro turned back towards Leowald as if nothing had happened. Mimir gave a blank stare as she once again stretched out her hand

in an attempt to touch him, but-

Suka!

As expected, she couldn't touch him. Even though Hiiro was standing right in front of her, it was as if he were an untouchable hologram.

"Too bad, Blue Ribbon." (Hiiro)

"Uuuu~ Hiiro-sama!" (Mimir)

Mimir, who inflated her cheeks with displeasure, stretched out her hand over and over again without giving up. However, it was as if she were trying to catch a cloud, as she felt no solid response.

"Hohou, so that is your magic, Hiiro." (Leowald)

"Did it serve as a good reference, Beast King?" (Hiiro)

The two of them exchanged glances while faintly smiling at each other.

"Fufu, still, I was quite surprised to find out that Mimir had a side like this." (Leowald)

".....Ah!.....U-Uhm.....I'm sorry for my discourtesy, Otou-sama!" (Mimir)

After coming back to her senses, Mimir fixed her appearance as she hung her head in shame.

"It's alright, it just goes to show how much you like Hiiro, eh?" (Leowald)

Mimir's face flushed a bright red and it seemed as though steam would start erupting from her head.

"For you, who is usually more mature than anyone else, to lose your composure to this extent....you really are interesting after all, Hiiro." (Leowald)

“I don’t really get it, but it seems.....” (Hiiro)

Hiiro gazed at Mimir’s face. Having suddenly been stared at, Mimir’s heart thumped as she blushed even more.

“It seems like you have become a bit better at smiling compared to before.” (Hiiro)

Upon hearing Hiiro’s words, her eyes widened as she grinned and-

“Yes!” (Mimir)

-answered energetically. It seemed that she was no longer lying to herself. Hiiro once again thought to himself that it had been worth it to take the time to cure her.

“However, Mimir, how did you know that Hiiro had come here? We hadn’t really been spreading the word about it, but...” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s question, Mimir said, “You see.....” while glancing at Rarashik. Following her gaze, they saw that a white figure had appeared on top of Rarashik’s head without anyone realizing it.

Hiiro had seen that figure before. According to Rarashik, the white figure was a 『Spirit』. Hiiro recalled that Rarashik had said its name was “Yuki-chan”. Its appearance was like that of a snow rabbit made by children on a snowy days.

“..... Chibi Usagi, don’t tell me you.....” (Hiiro)

“Nahahaha! Exactly! As soon as we came here, I sent Yuki-chan over to Mimir-sama. Naturally, it was to inform her about your visit, youngster.” (Rarashik)

“Is that true, Mimir?” (Leowald)

When Leowald asked her, Mimir clearly nodded in affirmation.

“Yes. Although Yuki-chan can’t talk, I had her write the words using ice.” (Mimir)

I see. So she became aware of my presence thanks to Yuki informing her. Meaning that when she came running at full speed and hugged me, that was, naturally, Rarashik's aim from the start.

"You've really done it now, oi....." (Hiiro)

"Nahaha, it's revenge for earlier." (Rarashik)

As he thought, the root of this offense was her grudge from him one-upping her at her home. Rather than feeling angry over her unwillingness to let anything go, Hiiro was more shocked as he let out a sigh.

"B-By the way Otou-sama, why is Hiiro-sama here? Based on what Muir-chan told me, Hiiro-sama was, um.....standing on the 『Evila』's side of the battlefield." (Mimir)

Her face darkened with anxiety.

"He seems to have come here to talk to me about something." (Leowald)

"A talk.....with Otou-sama?" (Mimir)

"Umu. Mimir, it's fine if you stay here, but don't get in the way, understood?" (Leowald)

"Y-Yes! Thank you very much, Otou-sama!" (Mimir)

After saying that, she bowed. Then, although Leowald had thought that she would move away from her current position, for some reason, she remained standing beside Hiiro.

"Mimir?" (Leowald)

"What is it, Otou-sama?" (Mimir)

"I-Iya, why don't you come over here?" (Leowald)

"I cannot do that." (Mimir)

"W-Why?" (Leowald)

“This place is good.” (Mimir)

She said that with an awfully brilliant smile.

“Otou-sama said that it’s fine if I stay here.” (Mimir)

“U-umu...” (Leowald)

Everyone else did, indeed, hear that.

“That is why Mimir will not part from Hiiro-sama’s side.” (Mimir)

Seeing her declare that so distinctly, Leowald judged that even if he said anything else, she would stubbornly refuse to listen. Therefore, he didn’t pursue the matter any further.

“.....I guess that it’s alright. Incidentally Hiiro, what do you plan to do after this?” (Leowald)

“Ha?” (Hiiro)

“After speaking with me.” (Leowald)

“I was thinking of having someone guide me to the duelling location, but do I have your consent for that?” (Hiiro)

“I don’t particularly mind, but even if we didn’t guide you there, you said that it wouldn’t be a problem, right?” (Leowald)

“I guess so. That’s why I figured it would be fine either way. So, frankly speaking, I don’t have anymore business to take care of here...” (Hiiro)

“..... In other words, you plan on going back?” (Leowald)

“Yeah.” (Hiiro)

At that moment, Mimir gazed at him sadly. Even though she had finally met him once more.....it was likely difficult for her to separate from him again.

“You’re not going to go meet with Arnold and Muir?” (Leowald)

“Yeah, I’ve already asked Chibi Usagi, but it seems like it’d be better not to meet them right now. I will set aside our joyous reunion for now.” (Hiiro)

“..... I see.” (Leowald)

Leowald folded his arms and faintly groaned as if he was in deep thought. Hiiro ignored him as he began to focus magic into his fingertips. The people who saw his actions were convinced that he was planning to leave the place.

“It was quite enjoyable.” (Hiiro)

And, just as he was about to write the characters,

“Well, wait.” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s words, Hiiro twitched and stopped moving.

“...What?” (Hiiro)

“There’s no need to rush like that. Just take your time here.” (Leowald)

Mimir, who had been making an uneasy expression, suddenly brightened and stared at Leowald.

“I refuse. There is no reason for me stay here.” (Hiiro)

At Hiiro’s words, Mimir instantly became depressed.

“Hou, I see. Even if we have prepared some entertainment in order to welcome you?” (Leowald)

Hiiro twitched as he heard those words.

“.....entertainment, you say?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah.” (Leowald)

“..... I’ll at least ask. What might that include?” (Hiiro)

Feeling that he had captured Hiiro’s attention, Leowald’s face

relaxed.

“Actually, yesterday we were able to get our hands on some 《Aqua Hound Meat》 .....” (Leowald)

“I’ll be troubling you for a while.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro could never forget the name 《Aqua Hound Meat》. The reason being that, after coming to this world, it was the meat dish that had left the greatest impression on him.

Honestly speaking, he had felt that he wanted to eat that meat once more. That meat contained a deliciousness that seemed like it could make you melt with pleasure.

“Ohh, I see, I see!” (Leowald)

Leowald did a small fist pump and winked at Mimir. Indeed, he had intentionally made Hiiro stay for Mimir’s sake. He was a typical doting parent.

Mimir smiled like a blooming flower as she gazed at Hiiro’s face.

“Hiiro-sama, until the promised entertainment is prepared, please talk with Mimir!” (Mimir)

“How troublesome.” (Hiiro)

“Hau!” (Mimir)

Seeing her drop her shoulders as if she had received a large shock, Leowald said-

“I apologize Hiiro, but please do as Mimir wants. In exchange, we will prepare a satisfying meal for you.” (Leowald)

“..... It can’t be helped.” (Hiiro)

Hiiro released the effect of 『Untouchable』.

“Lead the way, Blue Ribbon.” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro-sama.....yes! This way please!” (Mimir)

As she said so, the both of them left the room.

Translator Notes:

Suka! = This is the sound of Mimir passing through Hihiro, unable to touch him. There is...honestly, no English equivalent. People don't normally pass through others, after all.



## Chapter 165 – Hiirō Leaves from Passion.

“But for him to really be motivated by food, although I have heard about it from Arnold, but.....” (Leoward)

Leoward was told by Arnold that Hiirō is motivated by food and books, but for him to actually take the bait that Arnold set for him is a bit disappointing..

“That is where Hiirō’s Charm is at.....that’s what those idiots were saying.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik speaks while shrugging her shoulders.

“But still, is it really alright? To leave Mimir-sama in their hands.....” (Barid)[ET: Leaving the name as it was in chapter 163]

Barid’s anxiety is reasonable. Hiirō is, to put it bluntly, a completely unknown existence. It’s only natural to think that, what if something bad were to happen.

“I did it for Mimir’s sake. Wasn’t she also happy with it, eh?” (Leoward)

“H-However”(Barid)

Rarashik speaks with a smile.

“Calm down Barid. Just like I said before, he ain’t a guy who will willingly put himself into a troublesome situation. And he won’t do something that would make him lose his all food. Well this is all what I’ve heard from Arnold and Muir” (Rarashik)

“I can’t believe it!”(Barid)

“Then go ahead and observe him yourself”(Rarashik)

“That’s what I’m going to do” (Barid)

Saying that, Barid leaves the < < Throne Room > > .

“\*Sigh\* He’s a stubborn guy as always.”(Rarashik)

“Gahaha! Seeing the truth through his own eyes. Isn’t that a good thing, Rara?” (Leoward)

“Well, I can’t refute to that” (Rarashik)

Seeing Leoward laughing happily, Rarashik thought about something and then asks.

“Leo-sama, is the reason you stopped the brat only for the sake of Mimir?”(Rarashik)

“Nh? that’s what I said, right?”(Leoward)

“.....I don’t think that’s all, is it?”(Rarashik)

“What you trying to say?”(Leoward)

“By any chance, could you be thinking about pulling the brat to our side or something?”(Rarashik)

“.....”(Leoward)

“Or making it hard for him to fight after letting him have all the taste of this country’s good qualities. Well, that’s only one part of the strategy, I think.”(Rarashik)

Thereupon, Leoward’s cheek slacken.

“No, well, I did have that intention at first”(Leoward)

“.....Then am I wrong?”(Rarashik)

“After talking to the brat, it just seemed impossible to do that.”(Leoward)

“.....”(Rarashik)

“He is pretty frank, for better or for worse . Arnold also said that before.”

“Yes”

“I understand it now. He will move as he wants. No matter what obstacles block his way.”

“ .....

“Right now he is for some unknown reason aiding the 『Evila』 . It is most probably impossible to change it. He himself wouldn't try to overturn something he has already decided upon.”(Leoward)

“I see”(Rarashik)

“Even if it was due to him being hooked up to the food or books, he won't change his mind. He is a person who won't change something of great importance for some other reason.”(Leoward)

“Hoho, so Leo-sama understood him to this extent.....”(Rarashik)

For making a king of a kingdom to say so much about someone, generally is impossible for any person.

“And you know what, Rara? The reason that it's for the sake of Mimir is the greatest reason of all.”(Leoward)

“.....This foolish doting parent.”(Rarashik)

“Gahaha! That's the best compliment for me! Gahahahahaha!”(Leoward)

“Knowing it's you, I thought that you might be thinking of taking him in as a husband for Mimir-sama.”(Rarashik)

“What are you saying, Rara?”(Leoward)

Rarashik judges that her thinking was going too far after seeing Leoward looking at her blankly in amazement.

“Ain't that a natural thing! Mimir has taken a liking to him a lot! And he also is her benefactor! No wait.....Kukuria also said that she wanted to meet him.....”(Leoward) [ET: Really great bastard]

Hearing his words, Rarashik's mind goes completely blank “What?”

“If Kukuria also likes him, then he will become the husband of both my daughters! Yeah, let’s do that! Gahahahaha!” [ET: HELL WITH HIM!!!!!!]

Seems like her thinking was not far too much but far too less. Rarashik thinks while looking at him with scornful eyes.

(It’s gonna be troublesome for that brat from now on.....really troublesome.)

Thinking about Hihiro’s future, she prayed for him in her heart.

.  
. .  
.

Mimir brought Hihiro to a familiar place. It was the garden where Mimir and Hihiro first met.

It’s appearance was the same as it was half a year ago, but the blue sky can be seen from here, so it wasn’t a bad place.

Mimir moves towards the centre of garden with a happy expression and suddenly starts spinning. She grasps Hihiro and brings him forward and then slowly bows her head.

Hihiro conflicted that why would she do something like that, but the next words cleared his doubts.

“I will say it once more. I am really grateful to you for bringing my voice back that time.”(Mimir)

Tears were flowing from her face while she said that.

“Ah, I’m sorry. I was just so happy to say the words of gratitude to you that.....”(Mimir)

She wipes her tears off and shows a strained smile. Hihiro scratches his his head in embarrassment and slowly stands in front of her.

SFX: Ton.....

He gently with his index finger touches her forehead. Mimir while blushing, touches her forehead a little later.

“Hi-Hihiro-sama.....?”(Mimir)

“I said it before, right? That you owe me this favour and you’ll have to pay it back someday. So don’t forget it till then”(Hihiro)

As if these words won over her heart, she shows her best smile.

“Yes! Someday I will, definitely!”(Mimir)

.  
. .  
.

Barid couldn’t believe the scene that was taking place in front of him. That was because Mimir was showing an expression she has never shown to anyone.

Mimir smiles after Hihiro poked her forehead and said something. Her smile was not a strained one, but it was the one that has the power to fascinate anyone.

In truth, Barid too was fascinated by her smile.

He thought, even though he is the benefactor for Mimir, but Hihiro is not person who is worthy of faith due to him being on the enemy side.

Thanks to Hihiro, the war they could’ve won ended up with them losing. He can’t put his faith in Hihiro like Rarashik or Leoward.

He came till here thinking that he will have to protect Mimir if something happens even if he has to put his life on line, but he was taken aback seeing Mimir’s happy expression.

Right now, they both are enjoying the <<Aqua Hound Meat>>.

Seeing the figure of the boy eating it with a happy expression, Mimir keeps on smiling.

No matter how anyone saw it, it was a peaceful scene.

(Just what is he.....?)(Barid)

He can't understand about the boy named Hiirō more and more. Just when he thought for what reason he came in the centre of enemy territory, that turns out to be that he wanted to talk with the King.

And furthermore, he is nonchalantly eating a meal in the enemy's castle.

He is one that surpasses common sense. Whatever he does is something a person with common sense won't do. Barid for the first time thought to peep in someone else's mind.

'There should be a limit to being unusual'. Barid's head was about to go haywire, due to the impossible to understand existence.

But strangely, he feels relaxed by looking at him. His mind says not to drop his guard, but his heart says the opposite.

That might be definitely due him seeing Mimir's smile. And before he knew it, the soldiers who were to escort her as bodyguards were also smiling while eating the meal.

He listens carefully, seems like they are talking about Arnold (mostly bad-mouthing him and telling their personal experience with him).

".....What do you think?"(Barid)

When Barid murmurs as such,

".....Really Fun"(Putis)

From behind Barid, a cute voice came from a small person wearing cartoon costume of a bear.

She is one of the <<Three Beast Warriors>>, Putis.

“Is it.....fun?”(Barid)

Putis replies by nodding her head in agreement.

While they both were looking at each other, Hiiro finishes his food and leaves that place with Mimir. Most probably, they're returning to the <<Throne Room>>

“I will follow them. I leave the observation from outside to you.”(Barid)

After taking a glance at her nodding, he leaves that place too.

.  
.  
.

Seeing Hiiro who has returned to the <<Throne Room>>, Leoward shows a wry smile.

“Going back already?” (Leoward)

“Yeah, my works all done.”(Hiiro)

Seeing Mimir's gloomy expression, anyone would try to lend her a hand, but it's also a truth that they can't keep Hiiro here forever.

She also knows that. But she is bearing an incomprehensible feeling. She doesn't know when again they will meet after today.

When she thinks that, it's natural for her to make a gloomy face. Even the dense Hiiro understands the fact that she is feeling lonely.

That is because he has seen this type of face a lot of times in his travels. But he can't just remain here always. There is something he has to do, no, he wants to do.

“Chibi-Usagi, tell them that I'm looking forward to meeting them.”(Hiiro)

“No problem, but don’t forget? That I’m also entering the duel?”(Rarashik)

“Yeah, I know that”(Hiiro)

This is because Aquinas was really afraid about her participation in the duel, to an extent that he wanted for Hiiro to help him. That explains that she is a lot powerful.

“Ah, and I already heard about the case in which that old man disclosed a lot about me from Mimir. Looks like he needs a punishment now, so don’t tell him about this matter or else he will run away, okay?”(Hiiro)

“Y-Yeah”(Rarashik)

Rarashik’s cheek cramped upon seeing Hiiro’s evil smile and prays for Arnold thinking his life is soon going to end.

Hiiro sighs on seeing the depressed Mimir.

SFX: Ton.....

Her forehead is once again poked.

“Eh.....?”(Mimir)

“Let me hear your song next time”(Hiiro)

“.....Hiiro-sama?”

“You said it’s your good point, right? Or are you not confident?”(Hiiro)

“N-No! I will keep on practicing! A lot of it for Hiiro-sama!”(Mimir)

“.....is it good to have high expectations?”(Hiiro)

“Y-yes”(Mimir)

Seeing her reply with a happy expression, he turns his line of sight to Leoward.



“Beast King”(Hiiro)

“Yeah”(Leoward)

After they glare at each other for a while,

““Next time we meet a battleground!””

Both say the same words at the same time as if understanding each other.

SFX: Flash!

And Hiiro, uses his ‘Transfer’ words and disappears from that place.

“He went already”(Leoward)

Leoward says as such while facing Barid who is standing in besides him.

“Yes!”(Barid)

“And? How was he?”(Leoward)

“.....no matter what he is, for now he is our enemy.”(Barid)

“Pfft.....for now.....eh?”(Leoward)

Leoward laughs while seeing Barid speaking soft words that he rarely ever speaks.

‘He even changed Barid’ when he thought that his desire for getting Hiiro on their side and as his son-in-law increased greatly.

(I just said it as a joke that I want him as my son-in-law, but looks like I need to think about it seriously now)(Leoward)

His cheek slacken a bit, when he felt excitement in his heart. He also wants to fight with Hiiro once.

(For getting me this excited. Interesting! I’m gonna get you as my son-in-law by sheer strength, Hiiro.)(Leoward)

The Beast King makes a decision in his mind 'It's for this country's sake and for my daughter's sake!!'.

# Chapter 166: Victorias' Circumstances

Tense: Past

Translator: Chuckoy

Editor: Ghost

Proofreader: NB

Link to raw: <http://ncode.syosetu.com/n7031bs/166/>

TN: Man this shit was hard. A lot of keigo used in the chapter.

(Author's Note: Let's slow down the story a bit..... The action scenes and (finally) the duel will happen in the next chapter)

While experiencing the hustle and bustle of **【Victorias】**' royal castle, a single young lady was being tormented by her thoughts.

Apparently, during the peace conference, negotiations with the 『Evila』 had broken down. At the same time, she heard that the military higher ups and her father, Rudolf, had gone missing.

Yes, the young lady was the first princess, Lilith. She had not been told all the details regarding the conference.

She heard that even the heroes, whom she was on friendly terms with, were on an escort mission for the conference. That was the reason they weren't at the castle at the moment.

News of the failed diplomacy attempts had been reported. Thus, nobles arrived at the castle one after another, panicking and holding discussions. The faces of the soldiers were also fraught with tension, and their frustration was evident.

Thus, it was then that Lilith was spotted by Vale Kimble: 2nd lieutenant of the 『Humas』 army, the heroes' trainer, and the one who had been assigned to defend the castle walls. Vale then

immediately approached her.

“Ah, Lilith-sama!” (Vale)

“Vale-san! Um, is it really true? That..... that father and the other captains are missing.....?” (Lilith)

“Ah, yes.....” (Vale)

Not having any good news to deliver, Vale looked worried.

Upon seeing Vale like that, Lilith felt that something was off; she tilted her head and asked:

“Di, did a problem arise?” (Lilith)

She wondered if there was a problem even more serious than the disappearance of the King.

“Ah, no..... that is.....” (Vale)

Because it was such a difficult thing to say, Vale was hesitant.

“Please tell me!” (Lilith)

Although she was scared, Lilith steeled herself and raised her voice. After seeing Lilith’s resolve, Vale swallowed nervously.

“.....I understand. The truth is.....” (Vale)

The soldiers who came back from the war told Vale about the events that had transpired. The events at the conference, at the **【Demon Capital: Xaos】**; he himself couldn’t believe his own words as he explained what happened to Lilith.

“Such, such a thing..... that can’t be true.....” (Lilith)

Lilith muttered as she trembled upon hearing what happened.

“.....I know how you feel. However, up until now, there has been no word from the King nor the heroes, so you can’t help but think that perhaps.....” (Vale)

“I, I don’t believe it!” (Lilith)

“Lilith-sama.....” (Vale)

“I mean! Things like father turning into a monster and the heroes dying..... I don’t believe that Taishi-sama would be beaten by the enemy! (Lilith)

Lilith was desperately trying to hold back her tears; Vale, with a painful look, said:

“.....It is with my deepest regrets that I inform you of this.....” (Vale)

Lilith’s face became increasingly pale, and then.....

“Lilith-sama!?” (Vale)

Vale managed to catch Lilith as she fell. It appeared that she could no longer handle the shock and fainted.

It should be noted that Lilith, out of everyone in the country, was the one who worried the most about the King and the heroes. Learning of their situation was a big shock.

Vale, understanding how she felt, worriedly stared at her face.

“Anyone! Is anyone there?!” (Vale)

Hearing his shouts, two maids quickly rushed over. Vale asked them to carry Lilith to her room.

Vale then walked to a different room.

This was the King’s bedroom. Incidentally, it was also the Queen’s. Inside, the Queen was resting on the bed, after having collapsed for the same reason as Lilith.

Vale asked the maid beside the door for permission to enter. She went inside and came out after a while. She then opened the door.

Although he was given permission to speak with her a little, Vale

still felt tense as he carefully stepped inside.

Inside the large room was a huge bed, highly decorated as one would expect. He could feel an aura of exhaustion coming from Maris, who was lying on top of it.

“You are..... the one who trained the heroes, right?” (Maris)

Moving only her eyes, a trembling voice came from her slender throat.

“Yes! I am the second lieutenant of the army, Vale Kimble. For seeing me despite the current situation, I give you my utmost gratitude.” (Vale)

“..... How are things going? Do we know the full extent of the situation yet?” (Maris)

She said without any strength in her voice.

“Yes! Because of my impudence, Lilith-sama has also fainted.” (Vale)

“..... Is that..... so. That child has heard as well huh.....“ (Maris)

“I deeply apologise, there is no excuse for what I did! As for my punishment.....” (Vale)

“No, it’s fine.” (Maris)

“.....?” (Vale)

Vale believed that he was the cause of Lilith’s’ collapse. Thus, he was surprised when Maris forgave him, even though he was expecting punishment for his actions.

“That child is that man’s daughter. She has a right to know. Although the result of that knowledge left pain in her heart, you did nothing wrong. So please stop worrying about such things.” (Maris)

“The, then...” (Vale)

“It’s that child’s responsibility to overcome such difficulties by herself. It’s alright. She is stronger than I am. She will surely find the correct answer.” (Maris)

“Ha, haa.....” (Vale)

“More importantly, we must discuss what lies ahead. This country has become unstable. We need someone to step up and manage the country. We have no idea when the other countries might attack.” (Maris)

That much was obvious. Certainly it could be said that the country was currently in great turmoil. The King, who was the pillar of support for the country, had disappeared. The heroes, the hope of the country’s citizens, failed to return as well. Moreover, most of the army’s commanders were lost.

Now, the country’s war potential had become remarkably small. Rumors were abound between the citizens as anxiety settled in. If this situation were to continue, the other countries might take this opportunity and invade.

That was why there was a need for someone who would rise to the top and bring everyone together. Normally, it would be Queen Maris or First Princess Lilith who would unite everyone. However, their current state prevented them from doing so.

Furthermore, Vale alone didn’t have the ability to organize everyone.

“How frustrating”, Vale thought. He didn’t have the sufficient charisma to attract people in such a way. He himself was aware of that fact.

As Vale was worrying about what to do,

“Is it alright if I rely on you? I think that you, who should be well known amongst the soldiers, would be more capable than I am.” (Maris)

As Maris asked him about it, he made an apologetic expression.

“N-no..... I cannot simply.....”(Vale)

“Is..... that so? Lilith also made a similar face.....” (Maris)

As she smiled bitterly, Vale felt that Maris did not want to suffer the repercussions of their country’s actions even though she was the Queen. He thought that this person who was supposed to succeed the king, even for just an instant, should stand up and govern the country, no matter how harsh the circumstances may be.

Moreover, Lilith was Lilith. Although he could understand her position, he felt that her heart was too weak. With the current situation, he thought that she would show more resolution.

“However, it is as expected; if the Queen that supports the country was someone like Lilith, someone greater than myself, the citizens of the country would have peace of mind.....” (Maris)

“.....I suppose.....” (Vale)

At that time, Maris gazed at Vale who looked like he had suddenly realised something.

“What?” (Maris)

“N, no..... I, it’s just that, I know of someone who can lead us in this situation.” (Vale)

“You know..... someone?” (Maris)

“Yes” (Vale)

“.....Is that person trustworthy?” (Maris)

“It is someone you know.” (Vale)

At his words, Maris’ eyes widened as she realised who he was talking about.

“Bu, but that person shouldn’t be able to come back yet right?” (Maris)



“No, that great person can. That person can’t shut up about this country’s affairs. It’s just a hunch, but soon.....” (Vale)

Just then, one of the maids drew close to Maris and whispered something into her ear. Then, with medicine in hand and a smile she said,

“Speak of the devil and he shall appear.” (Maris)

“Cou, could it be, my Queen?” (Vale)

“Yes, that person is right outside this room. He has my permission to enter.” (Maris)

At her words, the maid walked towards the door. The two then gazed towards it.

And at the appearance of that person, both of their faces showed expressions of relief.

“Please excuse my intrusion. Nn? What, Vale is here as well?” (???)

That person was Judom Lankars, the Guild Master.

(Author’s Note: I wrote a special work for Christmas so look forward to that as well. I’m dying due to the large number of characters. The chapters will be divided between Christmas Eve and Christmas Day)

## Chapter 167 – Reunion

In the 【Demon Capital: Chaos】 , a large number of personnel was gathering in front of the castle gates.

Cruel's 《Rank 1》 Aquinas, 《Rank 2》 Marione, 《Rank 4》 Ornoth, 《Rank 5》 Shublarz; the overseer of the country's army, 《Head Commander of the Demon Army》 Rushbelle, 《Demon Army – Captain of the Herbreed Corps》 Herbreed, and 《Demon Army – Captain of the Eonis Corps》 Eonis.

All of these famous faces were currently gathered together. The surrounding soldiers were also swallowing nervously as they were encompassed by a sense of anxiety.

Within all of this were Hiiro, Liliyn, Silva, Shamoe, Mikazuki, and Nikki.

Today was the long-awaited day of their showdown with the 『Gabranth』 . In other words, it was a crossroad.

If they lost this showdown, the chances of them being unable to live the same lifestyle they had up until now were high. According to the 《Contract Roll》 , it was agreed that the losing side's people would not be needlessly killed. Even so, everybody felt that as long as their country was being made to live under the opponent's rule, they couldn't possibly expect to have the same rights as they had up until now.

That was exactly why the faces of the gathered soldiers and civilians, who had come to encourage them, were currently stiff.

In order to cheer up the people, the Maou Eveam, who had come later from the castle on her own, opened her mouth.

“Everybody! Do not worry! We will definitely obtain victory! I will show you the peace that I shall grab with these hands!” (Eveam)

As she proclaimed that, tension could be seen draining from the faces of a few people here and there.

“In addition, it is within our expectations for someone to take this chance to assault our country! That is why we will be leaving our strongest warrior, Aquinas, here!” (Eveam)

At those words, each and every one of the nation’s people exhibited signs of bewilderment. It seemed that they couldn’t understand the reason why she wouldn’t let the country’s strongest fighter, Aquinas, participate in this battle, even though defeat was absolutely not permitted.

“Silence! In his place, we have our greatest benefactor! I’m sure everyone also knows of him! He is the one who has performed great achievements in the recent war, Hihiro Okamura!” (Eveam)

Everyone’s gazes all turned towards Hihiro at the same time. The person in question had his arms crossed and his eyes closed, as if her announcement didn’t concern him.

“His existence is the reason why our country suffered minimal damage from the battle! The monster clean-up, the defeat of Crouch, one of the 《Three Warriors》, and the destruction of the 【Mütich Bridge】. These are all feats that he managed to perform single-handedly!” (Eveam)

The cheers of the people resounded, going “Oooooooooohh!”

“It may be hard to believe, but he possesses power that is equal to that of Aquinas! That is something that Aquinas himself has admitted! That is exactly why Aquinas has entrusted him with the important duty to take his place in the duel!” (Eveam)

Shouts of joy once again caused the air to tremble.

“That is why, please believe in us and wait! The next time we meet, I will have grasped victory with these hands!” (Eveam)

Tremendous voices and the sound of feet stomping the ground at regular intervals rang out. It seemed that her words of encouragement had succeeded in raising everyone’s morale.

Hihiro grimaced at how noisy it had become, but Eveam was smiling happily. Then, she turned her face towards Aquinas.

“Aquinas, in my absence, I leave the country to you.” (Eveam)

“No problem. Hurry and go win this.” (Aquinas)

“Yeah!” (Eveam)

Then, as Aquinas glanced towards Hiiro, who was scowling in an annoyed manner, once more, Ornoth approached him.

“I’ll leave the Princess……Her Majesty to you.” (Aquinas)

“I’ll protect her even if it costs me my life.” (Ornoth)

The two of them gazed at each other intensely and gave a small nod.

“Hiiro, do it.” (Eveam)

Upon being told that by Eveam, Hiiro gave a small sigh as he wrote the word, [Transfer] / 『転移』 .

“Hold on to each other’s bodies so that everybody is connected in some way.” (Hiiro)

At Hiiro’s words, everyone except Aquinas began to touch the ones next to them. The scene of everyone being connected was created.

Not only the strongest individuals, but also the soldiers behind them were similarly touching each other’s bodies. There were likely around 100 people in the entire group who were connected together. They were connected in such a way that if electricity were to be run through Hiiro, it would flow through the entire group.

“Let’s go.” (Hiiro)

“Yeah! Everyone, wait for us!” (Eveam)

“Oooooooooooooohhh!” (Evila)

Then, as Hiiro activated the word, the figures of 100 people disappeared all at once.

“……It’s up to you now, Hiiro.” (Aquinas)

Aquinas muttered as he returned to the castle.

The place they arrived at upon teleporting was the location for the duel, 【Valaaru Wilds】. In front of everyone's eyes lay a giant cavity.

It was a crater with a radius of approximately 200 metres. The duel would be held within it.

When they looked towards the centre of the crater, they saw that the 『Gabranth』's army had already taken up their positions.

“Let's go.” (Eveam)

Eveam's face tightened as she took the lead and descended into the crater.

“How admirable of you to come, ladies and gentlemen of the 『Evila』!” (Leowald)

The one who spoke was the king of the 【Beastman Capital: Passion】, the Beast King Leowald King. Near him were the strongest warriors 【Passion】 boasted of.

However, after moving his eyes around restlessly, Leowald posed a question towards Eveam.

“Red Robe.....What happened to Hihiro Okamura?” (Leowald)

“Uu.....about that.....” (Eveam)

Eveam displayed a face that expressed it was something difficult to say.

“He said that doing something like giving greetings was troublesome and that he'd ‘wait here’, so he's over there.....” (Eveam)

She then pointed her finger towards the place they had teleported to. Hihiro's figure could be seen standing there.

“Sorry for his lack of courtesy.” (Eveam)

Eveam apologized for Hiiro’s behaviour, as he had, for the time being, become her subordinate. However, Leowald simply said-

“Gahahahaha! He’s an interesting fellow after all, that Hiiro! For him to be selfish even in a situation like this! Gahaha!” (Leowald)

As he said that, numerous shadows could be seen running towards Hiiro.

“Don’t tell me it’s a surprise attack!? You bastards!” (Marione)

Marione shot a bloodthirsty gaze towards Leowald, but surprisingly, the one who stopped him was Eveam.

“Stop it, Marione.” (Eveam)

“Bu-but they were planning a surprise attack!” (Marione)

“No, that’s not a surprise attack.” (Eveam)

“.....Hah?” (Marione)

“Hiiro told me that this might happen beforehand.” (Eveam)

“Wh-what do you mean?” (Marione)

Unable to understand the meaning of her words, Marione gave a blank look.

“It’s alright. According to what Hiiro said, those people are.....” (Eveam)

“Fly off and explodeeeeeeeeeee!” (???)

Someone, who came diving towards Hiiro, thrust out his fist, using the momentum from his run to power it. Hiiro glanced towards the incoming fist and closed his eyes. It was as if he were resolving himself to receive the fist and decided not to move. And then.....

Suka!

“.....hahe?” (???)

Zudodododdodododooooooo!

Having lost its target, the fist which cut through the empty air caused the person to lose their balance due to the power used to thrust it forward. As such, the person's body crashed into the ground magnificently and began to roll.

And then, the one who silently watched the shameful appearance of the person on the ground said—

“.....So he died, huh.” (Hiiro)

“LIKE I'D DIEEEEEEEEEEE!” (???)

The person on the ground stood up with great vigor and sharply turned towards Hiiro while pointing his finger.

“Gooraaaa! You shitty Hiiro! Don't go avoiding it, really!” (???)

“My bad. I really was planning on letting you hit me at least once, but the moment I saw your face, I figured that avoiding it would somehow be more interesting. Forgive me.” (Hiiro)

“LIKE I COULD FORGIVE YOU, YOU FOOL! Rather, even though it's been a while, you really are 'going at your own pace' like always, oi!” (???)

“Of course. Because I am me.” (Hiiro)

“Hmph, you really are an impudent guy.....Hiiro.” (???)

As the person grinned while saying that, Hiiro also narrowed his eyes with nostalgia.

“You're also as hot-blooded as usual, eh.....Ossan.” (Hiiro)

The one reflected in Hiiro's eyes was Arnold Ocean, who was as hot-blooded as he had been half a year ago.

“U-um.....” (Muir)

“Hm?” (Hiiro)

Hearing a voice call out to him from behind, Hiiro turned around. There stood-

“I-I-I-I-I-It’s been a while, Hiiro-shan!” (Muir)

-a stuttering young girl.

“.....Talk properly, Chibi.” (Hiiro)

“Uu.....au.....” (Muir)

Muir Castreia stood there with her face flushed a bright red as she became depressed at her blunder. She seemed to have slightly grown over the past half year, as Hiiro asked-

“Did you grow a little?” (Hiiro)

“Ah.....y-yes.” (Muir)

She seemed to be happy that he noticed, as she smiled radiantly.

“Ooh~ The Muir who gets bright red and bashful while also feeling down is so cute! The way she smiles like an angel is also great~.” (Arnold)

It seemed that Arnold’s doting parent-tendencies were also running strong.

“Nofofofofo! It has arrived once more! A sympathizer has arrived! That precisely, is the royal road of the Loli character! Now, Ojou-sama, please learn from her actions and act bashful!” (Silva)

“You should just throw out that pink-smeared brain of yours!” (Liliyn)

Dogooooon!

Before anyone realized it, Liliyn, who had been behind Silva, performed a German suplex on him. The scene of a pervert having his cranium smashed into the ground was then completed.



“Feeeeee! A large amount of blood is coming out from Silva-sama’s headddd!” (Shamoe)

Shamoe turned pale as she screamed in surprise.

“O-Oi, Hiiro.....these guys are.....hii!?” (Arnold)

Just as Arnold was about to say that, he felt a threatening gaze from Liliyn, so he-

“.....h-how are you related to these people?” (Arnold)

-changed his wording to something more courteous.

“Hm? That’s right, I don’t really want to believe it, but they’re something like companions of mine.” (Hiiro)

“Oi Hiiro, stop with the jokes! I’m your master! Don’t misunderstand!” (Liliyn)

“.....Um, the other side seems to be saying that, but?” (Arnold)

Arnold asked as he felt a chill similar to when Rarashik was glaring at him.

“No, her head’s just a bit weak. She’s a little girl with a habit of telling falsehoods and day-dreaming. That’s why you don’t need to worry about it.” (Hiiro)

“Hohou, it seems like you want me to turn the insides of your head into slop, huh, Hiiro?” (Liliyn)

“Just try me.” (Hiiro)

In response to Hiiro’s cool words, a blue vein popped out on Liliyn’s forehead.

“U-umm.....” (Muir)

As Arnold was bewildered due to not knowing what to do next, a hand suddenly tapped his shoulder from behind. When he turned around in surprise, Silva’s figure, with blood dripping from his nose,

appeared in front of him.

“The two of them are always like that, so please do not mind them. More importantly, are you Arnold-sama, one of Hihiro’s first travel companions whom he spoke of? And the charming young lady over there is Muir Castreia-sama, correct?” (Silva)

Silva said that as he took a handkerchief from his breast pocket and wiped his nosebleed.

“Y-yeah....” (Arnold)

“N-Nice to meet you!” (Muir)

Following Arnold’s reply, Muir bowed her head respectfully.

“Ohh, that is quite courteous of you.” (Silva)

Silva similarly bowed his head.

## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 168: Start of the Duel of Evila and Gabranth

“Well then, there isn’t much time, so let me give a simple introduction. First that person is my Lord, Liliyn.” (Silva)

“Eh... that child is...” (Arnold)

Even while in the middle of a quarrel, Liliyn suddenly gave a death glare, so he immediately revised his words.

“S-so that exquisitely beautiful princess is...!” (Arnold)

“Yes, by the way, our princess has a complex about her age and height, mostly her appearance, so it would be best if you took caution with your choice of wording.” (Silva)

“G-got it...” (Arnold)

Muir also told herself to be careful, as she nodded repeatedly alongside Arnold.

“And that girl is one who, like me, is in service to Liliyn, Shamoe.” (Silva)

“I-I’m Sh-Shamoe, shir!” (Shamoe)

With a blush on her face, she tried to spit out words, but still, she bit her tongue. For Muir to feel a certain affinity with her was something to could perhaps be called inevitable.

“And this is Nikki-dono. Even though she looks like this, she’s Hiiro-sama’s number one disciple.” (Silva)

“Nice to meet you!” (Nikki)

With a bright smile Nikki turned to them.

“H-hah... that Hiiro’s Disciple, is it...” (Arnold)

“It just means things change with time, Uncle!” (Muir)

As if they had happened upon a curious case, the two stared in wonderment.

“And...” (Silva)

“Long time no see, you two!” (Mikazuki)

Mikazuki raised her hand as she spoke, but the two seemed clueless.

“Eh... who? What’s this child?” (Arnold)

As Arnold muttered that...

“Bu~ How cruel of you to forget me~! Mikazuki even still remembers you faintly~!” (Mikazuki)

Her face was bloated up to the limit as she pouted.

“Your presence is just too thin to linger, Mikazuki!.” (Nikki)

“Shut up, Nikki!” (Mikazuki)

Against Nikki’s cynicism, Mikazuki yelled out with a bright red face. But even having learned the young girl’s name, nothing seemed to come to Arnold’s group. And so, Silva offered an explanation.

“In truth, she is an existence that took on human form by Hirosama’s hand.” (Silva)

“T-took on human form, you say!?” (Arnold)

“That is correct. She was once a monster called a Raidpic, and it seems she’s met with Arnold-sama’s party before.” (Silva)

And there, Arnold remembered. They had once borrowed a Raidpic to get a ride close to 【Beast Kingdom Passion】.

“S-so you’re the Raidpic from that time?” (Arnold)

“That’s right! You’re all mean; forgetting me! Gramps and even Muir!” (Mikazuki)

“S-sorry!” (Muir)

“G... gramps...” (Arnold)

Muir honestly apologized, while Arnold fell into shock hung his shoulders having been called gramps.

“Finally, my name is Silva Plutis. It is a pleasure to be acquainted with you.” (Silva)

He politely bowed his head.

“Even so... personification, and teleportation, it seems as time passes, it’s getting to be that anything goes for that guy...” (Arnold)

Arnold’s face stiffened as he looked at Hihiro.

“Nofofofofof! By the way, Arnold-dono, for some reason, I feel the presence of something similar to me within you.” (Silva)

“Yeah, you’re right! It kinda feels like I can just understand you, or...” (Arnold)

“Exactly! I wonder why! Nofofofofof!” (Silva)

“Who knows! Ahahahaha!” (Arnold)

An unknown bond was thus formed between the pervert and the lolicon. Though they had just become acquainted, as if they were old friends... no, a feeling as if they were soul mates surround them.

While Muir was hesitation over what to say in regards to the incomprehensible chemical reaction, perhaps as the quarrel had ended, Hihiro wandered over.

“Hmm? You were still here? Go return to your own camp already.” (Hihiro)

“Nugu... Y-you... even when we had just met again, you’re really... it’s sad just how much you don’t change, oy... and I heard from Master that you came to the country recently, but at least give us a word or two... for god’s sakes...” (Arnold)

“As if that much would change in half a year. And the reason I didn’t meet you when I came to the country was simply because you weren’t there. I’m of no fault here.” (Hiiro)

“... well how nice of you...” (Arnold)

“Ahaha... it really feels nostalgic.” (Muir)

The two let out sighs of exhaustion.

“Oh right, old man, I heard that you happily disclosed everything about me to that Beast King.” (Hiiro)

“Eh, ah, t-that is...” (Arnold)

The corners of Hiiro’s mouth raised, but his eyes were definitely not laughing. From his back, a black aura was emitted.

“It seems you wish to become a test subject to my magic for the first time in a while, right?” (Hiiro)

“W-wait a sec’ Hiiro! I-I definitely did say it, but y-you never even tried to get in touch, didn’t you!?” (Arnold)

“..... So?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro scowled as he tilted his head.

“H-hey! We were comrades travelling together, so shouldn’t you try to contact us a bit!? With your magic, it would be easy, right!?” (Arnold)

“As if I know. That sounds like a pain.” (Hiiro)

“A-a pain...” (Arnold)

The severity of the exclamation made Arnold’s jaw drop.

“Hiiro-san!” (Muir)

All of a sudden, Muir cried out, so everyone shifted their gaze to her.

“What, shorty?” (Hiiro)

“I-I-I was worried too! M-Mimir chan as well! A-and...” (Muir)

Muir looked over Liliyn’s group.

“E-everyone with you seems to be having fun... and for some reason, there are a lot of little girls...” (Muir)

“What did you say?” (Hiiro)

She was speaking in a low voice, so it didn’t get through. With a red face, Muir spoke up.

“A-anyways, it’s somehow frustrating! U-uncle definitely blabbed on you as payback, but it’s only because he cares for you that he even thought to get even with you!” (Muir)

“O-oy, wait Muir-san...?” (Arnold)

“Hmmm... Payback... I see.” (Hiiro)

Arnold timidly turned back to face Hiiro.

“You’ve resolved yourself, right?” (Hiiro)

“H-hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiii!” (Arnold)

Hiiro wrote a certain word, and shot it at Arnold before activating it.

“Nooooooooo! Stop! I don’t have such interests! T-that’s my important.... Ah, ah, ah, nuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuu!” (Arnold)

Seeing Arnold’s face turn pale as he writhed in agony, Muir looked blankly at Hiiro.

“What, I just showed him a bit of a nightmare.” (Hiiro)

Hihiro used the word 『Dream(夢)』 to torment Arnold alone with a certain vision. The contents included a stampede of oiled up muscular men, among other things.

“I see! To put it simply, right now Arnold-dono is surrounded with certain types of men as they do this and that to his body? My, my... what Hell it is.” (Silva)

On Silva’s brief exposition, Muir’s expression stiffened as she looked over her guardian

And after a minute passed, the old man had collapsed on the ground, completely exhausted.

“Are you repenting?” (Hihiro)

“... Gusu... gusu... hic... I can’t become a groom anymore...” (Arnold)

Something beyond imagination had been done to him. Tears flowed from his eyes without cease. As it was Arnold’s form of paying for his mistakes, Muir remained silent, but on her face floated a wry smile.

“Oy, shorty, did that blue ribbon not come?” (Hihiro)

“Eh? B-blue ribbon? Could you be talking about Mimir-chan?” (Muir)

“Yeah.” (Hihiro)

“Oh, she’s together with everyone else.” (Muir)

“So she did come.” (Hihiro)

“In truth, I wanted to bring her all the way up here, but she had to remain behind, saying it was my long awaited reunion.” (Muir)

“Well, I did just meet her the other day.” (Hihiro)

On those words, Muir’s ears twitched.



“... Really unfair.” (Muir)

“What is?” (Hiiro)

“You really are too unfair, to only meet Mimir-chan! Last time when you came, I wanted to... meet you.” (Muir)

“... Well we’re meeting here now, so isn’t it fine?” (Hiiro)

“T-that may be true... but...” (Muir)

“And I determined that it would be better if we met here.” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Muir)

“Because I wanted to save the fun for the end.” (Hiiro)

“Hiiro-san...” (Muir)

At that moment, as his consciousness had finally recovered, with a terrible face, Arnold looked over with a scowl on his face.

“Y... you... I... I’m going to kill you someday...” (Arnold)

“If you think you can, then try it.” (Hiiro)

“It was Uncle’s fault this time.” (Muir)

“Muir~.” (Arnold)

Arnold called out her name as if he had been relying on her, but Muir shrugged her shoulders with resignation. It was Muir’s off-hand remark that had instigated this mess, but as a doting father, Arnold’s soul did not allow him to condemn her for it.

“More importantly, how long do you plan on staying here? You guys are on the enemy side right now. Do you understand the meaning of that?” (Hiiro)

The two took a deep breath. And making a business-like expression. Arnold spoke.

“..... Right. Let’s go, Muir.” (Arnold)

“Eh, ah... I’m...” (Muir)

Muir didn’t seem to know what it was she should do. Perhaps she wanted to be by Hiiro’s side longer after finally having reunited with him. But as he said, right now they were mutual enemies, and being here wasn’t something that was supposed to be permitted.

And while she was like that, Hiiro approached her.

He lightly prodded her forehead with the tip of his finger.

“Shorty, make sure you show me the result of your half year of growth.” (Hiiro)

She was put in a daze by his sudden words, and she slowly moved her hand to her head. After taking a breath...

“Yes!” (Muir)

She gave a strong answer before taking her place beside Arnold. But before long, she approached Hiiro again.

“U-um, Hiiro-san.” (Muir)

“Yeah?” (Hiiro)

“... There’s lots I’d like to talk about, so once this battle is over, can you give me some time?” (Muir)

“What?” (Hiiro)

“Mainly about why you have so many people with small bodies like mine following you.” (Muir)

“... W-why are you so caught up on that?” (Hiiro)

He felt a slight chill on his back. The image of a demon peeking over Muir’s shoulder must have been his imagination, though.

“Mimir-chan probably has much to discuss with you on the matter as well, so we’ll be taking some of your time together, alright?” (Muir)

“S-sure...” (Hiiro)

Muir gave a bright smile as she returned back to Arnold. He felt an absurdly oppressing aura coming from her, but for her to be able to release something like that... she sure has grown, he thought.

“Hiiro, we’ll make sure to show you just how strong we’ve grown!”  
(Arnold)

“You don’t need to make any dramatic declarations. Just go already.” (Hiiro)

“Ku... I get it! Can’t you at least respond with, ‘I’ll be waiting,’ or something!?” (Arnold)

“Uncle-san, let’s go!” (Muir)

“Yes~, okay Muir~!” (Arnold)

“... So the Lolicon is in good health.” (Hiiro)

“I’m no lolicon, fool!” (Arnold)

“Nofofofofo! I feel I will become the best of friends with that Arnold-sama.” (Silva)

“Yeah! I’d like to exchange drinks with you once, and talk about...”  
(Arnold)

“Let’s go already, uncle!” (Muir)

“Ah, wait Muir! (Arnold)”

Pulled away by Muir’s hand, the two left.

“Fuu, as allway’s he’s a sweltering man.” (Hiiro)

“Despite that, it looked like you were having quite a bit of fun.”  
(Liliyn)

Liliyn directed a grin at him, so his face warped in discomfort.

“Hmm, surely you jest... well, it did feel nostalgic.” (Hiiro)

And everyone smiled as they looked at him.

—  
—  
—  
—  
—

“It appears it ended without conflict.”

Hearing the words of Eveam, who watched Hiiro’s exchange with Arnold from afar, those present tilted their heads.

“Your majesty, those individuals are...?” (Marione)

Eveam answered Marione’s quandary.

“Hiiro’s former travel companions, apparently. He said that after being transferred here, they would probably come to slap him a few times, but that it was a natural phenomenon. As such, he gave a strict order not to raise a hand at them.” (Eveam)

“The brat... gave it?” (Marione)

“Yeah, and it was the same for your side, was it not, Beast King?” (Eveam)

Her eyes rest on the one who followed suit and didn’t intervene, Leowald.

“Pretty much. Arnold said he had to go meet his friend, so I accepted it. Perhaps Hiiro’s words meant the same.” (Leowald)

It seems both sides got the message.

“Well, now we’ll be able to start this without reserve... right, Demon Lord?” (Leowald)

“... I understand.” (Eveam)

As they began to glare at each other, the first to open their mouth was Eveam.

“I’ve already heard the details of your proposed dueling method, but just to make sure, could you explain it?” (Eveam)

“Understood. The dueling method is an old tradition passed down by the 『Gabranth』 race, one called 《Agas Shi》.” (Leowald)

(TL: 《アガッシ》 taking Romanization suggestions.)

One: duels are carried out with equal numbers on both sides.

Two: duels consist of five individual fights.

Three: of them, the team that wins three of them is the victor.

Four: a battle is not lost until the designated leader of that team declares defeat.

Five: if once all is over, it ends in a tie, each side selects a single fighter for a one on one match.

Six: the outcome is decided once one side has become unable to fight, or one side admits defeat.

Seven: an individual can participate in battle up to two times, but on the second, they cannot be designated as leader.

Eight: participants are selected beforehand, and changes are not permitted.

Having confirmed there was no problems with the methods, they went on to discuss what would happen upon the outcome.

“It’s already been decided by 《Contract Scroll》, but the losing country comes under the command of the winning one. But we will respect the other party, and there will be no senseless killing. Is that fine?” (Eveam)

As Eveam spoke with a solemn space, Leowald returned a small nod.

“Yes, in this battle, our side has an overwhelming advantage. If we are to lose, we will obey, and humbly enter into your ranks. Similarly if we are to win, we will not handle you unreasonably. As long as your side is to honor the contract, we will not go back on our word. I swear it on the pride of all Gabranth.” (Leowald)

The Gabranth waiting behind him all nodded in uniform. They had the resolve.

“Yes, we wouldn’t ask for any more. If we win, we’ll let you know we truly desire for peace! On top of that, I’d like to form a true alliance!” (Eveam)

After they exchanged glances a little while longer, a smile broke out on Leowald’s face.

“I see, I think I kinda understand the reason that Hiiro sided with you.” (Leowald)

“... Eh?” (Eveam)

“You guys are too soft.” (Leowald)

“Uu...” (Eveam)

“But for some reason, I feel the desire to support you.” (Leowald)

“...” (Eveam)

“That’s a natural talent you’ve been born with, girl. Make sure you make good use of it.” (Leowald)

“Beast King...” (Eveam)

“But we’ll be the ones taking victory this time!” (Leowald)

“We won’t be losing either!” (Eveam)

Glares passed between them again.

“Well then, let’s start it already.” (Leowald)

As Leowald said that, Eveam raised her hand.

"I'd like you to wait a bit. As per agreement, we'll release a portion of our prisoners of war." (Eveam)

"Mu?" (Leowald)

"However, transporting them in large numbers is probably best left to Hiirō, so we'll lend him to you for that." (Eveam)

He turned his eyes to the soldiers, and found the form of a handcuffed Crouch among them. In the jail her fur had turned white, and her stature that of a little girl, but now her body was wrapped in darkness like a black panther.

"Oh, now that you mention it, I had forgotten." (Leowald)

"Leowald-sama... how cruel nya." (Crouch)

"Gahaha! It's a joke, a joke! No more than that, I plan to have you participate as well. Can you fight?" (Leowald)

With that, the corners of Crouch's mouth rose fearlessly.

"Of course, nya." (Crouch)

"But even if it was decided beforehand, are you sure this is fine, Demon Lord?" (Leowald)

"Yes, there is only meaning in defeating you when your power is at its peak." (Eveam)

"Hmm... interesting. Then we will use all we have to oppose you." (Leowald)

Saying that, he took a paper out of his breast pocket. On it, the names of the ones set to participate were written.

"Nofofofofo! Then from here on, I, the neutral Silva will take control!"

Silva had somehow appeared suddenly between both parties, putting everyone in a fright.

“S-Silva-dono!?” (Eveam)

Eveam unintentionally let out a loud voice.

“... Who are you?” (Leowald)

Leowald asks with a wary voice.

“No, no, I am but a humble butler.” (Silva)

Leowald sent a glance at Eveam as if to search for an explanation, so Silva began to explain exactly what his standing was.

“I see, then take this.” (Leowald)

The paper was handed over.

“I would like you to take charge of ours as well, Silva-dono.” (Eveam)

“Certainly.” (Silva)

He lowers his head, before taking a paper from Eveam who had produced it from her breast pocket as well. On both papers, he confirmed the names of those who would participate in the first round.

“Well then, let me announce the participants of the first round of this 《Agas Shi》! First, from the 『Evila』 camp is Marione-dono.”

The Gabranth side started getting noisy, as a big name was announced in the first round. But the fact that only one name was announced meant...

“From the 『Gabranth』 camp is...”

Everyone’s dubious gaze gathered on Silva, who unintentionally stared at the sheet.

“Ehem, I apologize. From the 『Gabranth』 camp... Beast King Leowald-dono!”

Not just the 『Evila』 side, the 『Gabranth』 side that didn’t know



the order fell silent as well.

Among them, the only ones with pleasant smiles floating on their faces were Marione and Leowald.

## Chapter 169 – Marione Vs. Leowald

The cards for the first round were ones that would make anyone astonished.

It was a showdown between the king of 'Passion' Leowald and Marione, who was the 'Second Seat' in the 'Cruel' which the Evila boasts of.

With Aquinas not present and not including Hiiro, it ended up as a showdown between the strongest 'Evila' and the Beast King of the 'Gabranth'.

As a matter of fact, it was only natural that both parties were engulfed by a nervous atmosphere.

Right now, Eveam returned to where Hiiro was.

"Marione, frankly speaking, this was truly unexpected. Do you have any chance of winning?"(Eveam)

He revealed a daring smile when asked by Eveam.

"That's a stupid question, Your Majesty. He is the guy I've been waiting to fight. My resentment will only disappear when I kill him."(Marione)

"No, killing him is....."(Eveam)

She said as such, but Marione was intently staring at Leowald, disregarding his surroundings.

"But, but~, for the King to come out at the very start....this truly is an unexpected situation."(Shublarz)

Shublarz spoke while frowning as if she was troubled.

"Indeed, he is a quite formidable opponent, but if it's Marione-dono he should be able to win."(Ornoth)

Ornoth gave a slight nod.

“Hiiro, do you think Marione can win?”(Eveam)

“Don’t know”(Hiiro)

He replied without any hesitation to Eveam, who had asked him anxiously. She made a slightly gloomy expression due to his reply.

However, he couldn’t help it as he really didn’t know. He had never seen Marione fight so he couldn’t predict the outcome.

In terms of level, bluntly speaking, Marione’s was lower, but victory couldn’t be decided by level alone.

There were also problems with magic, compatibility and even differences in fighting styles. Leowald looked like the type excelling in close-combats while Marione seemed to be good with long-distance attacks. He figured that the battle would most likely end faster due to the good balance.

But there was no doubt that it would be an interesting fight. No matter who won, it would be a battle which would fascinate everyone.

In the meantime, Marione entered the crater alone. And Leowald also seemed to have moved.

And both parties face each other at the center.

Marione while looking at the man standing in front of him, and asks something.

“Hey, Beast King Leowald”(Marione)

“What is it?”(Leowald)

“I want to ask you something”(Marione)

“...”(Leowald)

“Do you know a beast man with inconsistent patterns of black and white fur on their body?”(Marione)

Leowald reacted to those words by moving his eyebrows with a twitch.

“...What are you going to do after you find out about him?”(Leowald)

“I will kill him with my own hands.”(Marione)

“.....”(Leowald)

“In truth, I had the intention of massacring all of the ‘Gabranth’ who would protect him, but that contradicts the intention of Maou-sama. But you, the king of the country which gave birth to that kind of monster, will have to accept my blade filled with grudge!”(Marione)

Leowald spoke while watching Marione’s eyes.

“.....Revenge?”

“That’s right. I will definitely kill that bastard with these hands!”

Marione emitted bloodlust so powerful that it seemed to shake the atmosphere. Silva, who was standing there as the referee, stiffened his body as a reflex.

“.....You want to know?”(Leowald)

“Of course!”(Marione)

“Then defeat me first! Ask me that after you defeat me in battle!”(Leowald)

“Let’s do it then”(Marione)

Silva after realizing that both parties had already decided—

“Now then, the first round.....Start!”

—Spoke the words indicating the start of duel.

.

.  
.  
“ < < Rock Bullet! > > ” (Marione)

Numerous rocks rose to the surface from beneath and were fired towards Leowald.

“Uoooooooo!”(Leowald)

Leowald destroyed the rock bullets with his bare hands.

“Kuu! What ridiculous physical strength you have! Then how about this!”

Marione loaded magic in his right hand and punched the ground.

“Get turned to dust by my demon hand! < < Ray Disruption > > .”

A giant hand appeared from the ground and rushed to attack Leowald. Leowald tried to destroy the hand with his fist, but failed due to the difference in strength.

“I’m gonna crush you to death!”

Leowald grimaced from the pressure of getting his fist caught in the hand of sand. Voices expressing worry for Leowald could be heard from the surroundings.

“Guoooooooooooo!”(Leowald)

“It’s pointless! You can’t break my devil hand that easily!”(Marione)

Just as Marione said, even after putting power in his fist, the hand didn’t even twitch and instead increased the pressure and power.

“Kuu…….I’ve got no choice now!”(Leowald)

He grabbed the hilt of the greatsword that was strapped to his back and started concentrating power in it.

SFX: Buuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuuun!

The sword started vibrating and turned red as if it was put in a furnace.

“Uooooooooo! < < Fire Fang > > !”

He swung the greatsword with all his strength and cut through the hand of sand with ease.

“Wha!?”

The section of the hand where it had been cut was molten. It was proof that Leowald’s sword had reached high temperature.

“Tsk! One more time! Ray Disruption!”

But the the hand was cut in half by Leowald once again. As Leowald swung his greatsword—

“Out of tricks, huh?”

—Marione clenched his teeth seeing that. But then he revealed a smile.

“As expected from the Beast King. Even my Devil Hand doesn’t work on you.”

He threw away the mantle he was wearing.

“I’m going to the next stage then”

His eyes became narrow and sharp, black feathers sprouted from his back and he started floating in the air.

“Let him taste the power of darkness!”

Marione raised his hands up high and numerous tridents appeared in his surroundings.

“Eclipse Trident!”

Marione swung his hand downward, aiming at Leowald. The

tridents took that as a signal and rushed at him with tremendous speed.

“Mu!”

Leowald cut the tridents flying at him like rain while swinging his sword heroically. The beast men started praising Leowald as none of the attacks were working on him, but rather than being startled, Marione smiled.

Leowald frowned when he noticed the smile and in the next moment, he gulped. That was because he realized his sword had started to turn black in color.

“What.....?”(Leowald)

The black colour steadily spread along his sword. Leowald dropped the sword before the black color reached the hilt as he felt danger from it. He stared at the sword falling to the ground

“Hmm, it would have been better if you hadn’t dropped your weapon.”(Marione)

Marione clicked his tongue while still floating in the air.

“.....What did you do?”(Leowald)

“Kukuku, my Eclipse Trident is not any normal dark magic. Everything it touches turns black.”(Marione)

“Tuns black.....you say?”(Leowald)

“My dark magic stops the time of everything it touches. Just like ice, just like death.....”(Marione)

“Oh my! What a troublesome magic. So in other words, my sword is no longer usable after getting swallowed by the darkness?”

“No, you can use it. It is just that if those without the proper qualifications touches it, they will be eroded by darkness.”

While saying that, Marione landed and lifted the big sword.

“Mu.....you really have great physical ability to keep swinging this heavy thing around.”

He threw it back on the ground as if he lost interest in it.

“Well then, I wonder how you intend to stop my magic now that you’ve lost your sword.”

He rose up in the sky and once again fired the Eclipse Trident.

Right now, Leowald doesn’t have a weapon to block the attack with. In that case, he would be forced to evade the attacks if he wanted to avoid being eroded like his sword.

“Don’t underestimate this Beast King!”(Leowald)

Suddenly, he punched the ground. His right hand easily sunk into the ground.

“Nuooooo!”(Leowald)

He raised his hand again while screaming. And surprisingly, cracks appeared on the ground and started to spread.

In doing so, his hand dug out the land as if it were a spoon. Using the piece of ground he had lifted up as a shield, Leowald tried to defend against Marione’s attack. The tridents bore into the ground.

But Leowald thought something was weird. Although the tridents were stuck in the boulder, it did not change its color as the sword had.

He frowned while pondering about it. And, as if taken aback, he surveyed his surroundings.

He came up with a hypothesis as to why the ground was not being eroded by the darkness.

“.....Looks like your so-called Darkness thing has a limit.”

Marione’s eyebrow drew an arc as if surprised. He kept silent and didn’t reply, but in truth, Leowald was right.



For the special effect of Eclipse Trident to start, it had to have a target determined- If it were to hit something other than the chosen target, the darkness wouldn't spread.

Only one target could be designated at a time. He chose Leowald as the target, but since he blocked the tridents with the boulder, the darkness effect didn't activate.

Before, he had targeted Leowald's sword and it had worked as intended, but this time it did not.

Marione showed admiration because he had never thought his magic would be analysed so quickly.

“So they don't call you Beast King for nothing.”(Marione)

“It's my turn now!”(Leowald)

Leowald narrowed his eyes and suddenly the atmosphere changed.

“Let me show you! This is the secret technique of <<Binding Arts>>! This is <<Thermal Blast Formation>>”

SFX: Buooooo!

Tremendous amount of flames gushed out from Leowald's hands and surrounded him. The heat produced reached Marione who was still flying in the sky.

“Just how hot is that!?” (Marione)

It was so hot that he unintentionally scowled. The flames started getting smaller while forming a whirlpool, as if it was getting absorbed by something. From inside appeared a red colored Beast King.

“Let's have fun!”(Leowald)

He looked up up at Marione while revealing a ferocious smile.

“It's about time that you should get serious.....<<Sword General>>.” (Leowald)

The corners of Marione's mouth curled up and he narrowed his eyes.

“.....So you do know about it.”(Marione)

Marione landed on the ground slowly. He held his right hand towards the ground and emitted a large amount of magical power which then was absorbed into the ground.

SFX: MekiMekiBaki.....(Sound of something)

Just as it seemed that cracks were forming across the ground, the ground began to flow like sand as it began to form some shape while converging onto a single point.

It gradually became bigger and transformed into a sword.

“..... < <Iryaduru> >”

He grabbed the hilt of the sword and swung it slowly.

SFX: Bakiiii!

All of a sudden the ground split. Seeing the ground getting cleaved apart by just a swing of his sword, even Leowald was at a loss for words.

“Taste the power of my strongest sword.”

“.....So that is the partner of you, who is called the 《Sword General》 ”

The sword was of a reddish brown color and its blade was so thin that it seemed like it would break if it was touched. But, it couldn't be a fragile sword since it was made by compressing the earth.

Leowald understood that the sword had unbelievable offensive and defensive power despite its appearance.

## Chapter 170 – The Outcome of the Clash between the Sun and the Earth

Hihiro first thought was like this. The close-quarters combatant Leowald and the long distance combatant Marione. He had thought that each of them would use their specialized combat range to gain the upper-hand over their opponent.

However, currently Marione's hand was equipped with a single sword. Hihiro realized that his initial impression had been wrong.

Marione's true optimal fighting range was not long distance, but close combat. Leowald, on the other hand, was utilizing a 《Transformation》 similar to what Crouch had.

Regular physical attacks wouldn't work against it at all. However, upon seeing Leowald's appearance, Marione was able to guess that physical-based attacks wouldn't work and hence, created a sword.

Hihiro judged that the sword likely held some hidden ability which would somehow make it capable of dealing damage to bodies that had undergone 《Transformation》.

The battle that had been occurring up until now had been a sufficiently high-level fight. It was a duel that was to be expected of two top-class fighters. However, what was about to begin was likely a battle which would surpass the previous one.

Hihiro's heart beat wildly, giving him a feeling similar to when one watched the climax of a sports match on TV. The surrounding people also gazed upon the fight as if they had forgotten to breathe.

It simply showed just how sight-stealing the battle the two of them were having was. And upon thinking how they'd be able to see something even more amazing from here on out, anyone would watch over the battle quietly.

“.....That sword is troublesome.” (Liliyn)

Liliyn, who was next to Hiiro, suddenly murmured.

“You know about it?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah, it wouldn’t be an exaggeration to say that it’s a sword born from the earth itself. In other words, it’s sort of like a kind of 《Spirit Sword》.” (Liliyn)

“《Spirit Sword》?” (Hiiro)

“Simply put, it’s a 《Magic Sword》.” (Liliyn)

“In other words, it’s a sword which possesses the power of magic?” (Hiiro)

“Yeah, against 《Transformation》, where beastmen become 『Spirits』 themselves, physical attacks have no meaning. However, with the 《Spirit Sword》, which has the power of magic within it, he should be able to mercilessly wound that body.” (Liliyn)

“I see, as I thought, there was a trick to it, huh?” (Hiiro)

Having come to an understanding, Hiiro nodded lightly. He didn’t think that Marione would use a simple sword.

“However, to create that level of sword, the risks must be proportionately high.” (Liliyn)

“What do you mean?” (Hiiro)

“It’s highly likely that he used up the majority of his magic power to create it. In addition, simply using it should cost him some magic as well.” (Liliyn)

“It doesn’t really seem to be worth the cost.” (Hiiro)

“Don’t be stupid. There’s no way a normal person could create a 《Spirit Sword》. It just shows how great a power the 《Spirit Sword》 holds. I must say that it’s quite appropriate that the 《Rank 2》 member is capable of creating one.” (Liliyn)

As Liliyn said that in admiration,

“As expected of Hihiro’s companion. You’re quite knowledgeable.”  
(Eveam)

The one who similarly raised her voice in admiration was Eveam. It seemed that she had heard their conversation.

“Like she says, that sword is one of Marione’s trump cards.”  
(Eveam)

“To think that he would use something like that.” (Hihiro)

“It just shows how far he has been driven into a corner. As expected of the Beast King.” (Eveam)

It was true that Marione had opposed Leowald on countless occasions with magic, but even so, he was being pulverised. In order to gain the upper hand, it was necessary for him to take the initiative before his opponent.

“However, the king is also using 《Transformation》. He too, has been led to use one of his trump cards.” (Eveam)

Eveam uttered those words in a slightly excited manner. It seemed that she also found this battle to be worth watching, as her heart trembled while she watched it.

“However, like she said, he cannot use that sword for extended periods of time. Leowald’s 《Transformation》 should similarly use up a considerable amount of stamina, so he shouldn’t be able to maintain that state for too long either.” (Eveam)

“Meaning that they’ll probably reach the conclusion sooner than expected.” (Hihiro)

“Yeah, I believe in Marione! He’ll definitely win for us!” (Eveam)

“But, I didn’t think that the Moustache Baron could use a sword, you know?” (Hihiro)

“I see, Hihiro doesn’t know about it. Marione’s swordplay is the best. Up until now, there hasn’t been a single swordsman in the country who could beat him.” (Eveam)

That particular piece of information greatly surprised Hiiro. Well, it was to be expected, as he hadn't shown any interest in it at all. Hiiro let out a light sigh as he calmly gazed at the two combatants.

(A trump card....huh.) (Hiiro)

He used the word 『Pry』 as he thought of that and confirmed the 《Status》 of the two.

Marione Judou Crisis

Lv 168

HP: 8489/8522

MP: 3455/7098

EXP: 5356789

NEXT: 119890

ATK 1200 (1700)

DEF 1167 (1150)

AGL 1317 (1390)

HIT 1050 (1300)

INT 1120 (1135)

《Magic Attribute》 Earth | Dark

《Magic》 Rock Bullet (Earth – Attack) | Gran Needle (Earth – Attack) | Ray Disruption (Earth – Attack) | Iruyaduru (Earth) | Shadow Sickel (Darkness – Attack) | Dark Impact (Darkness – Attack) | Eclipse Trident (Darkness – Attack) | Black Ash (Darkness – Attack)

《Titles》 Earnest Man | High Class Demon | Feathered One | Bothersome One | Indulgent One | Short-Tempered Handlebar Moustache | Obstinate One | The Natural Enemy of Monsters |

Ripper | Unique Genocider | One who Exceeds | Sword General |  
Cruel | Caring One | Avenger | Brutal One | Beastman's Poison |  
One who has a Splendid Moustache | Moustache Baron | One who  
Seeks the Strong | Overly Determined Person

Leowald King

Lv 202

HP: 11589/13765

MP: 3055/4300

EXP: 11930081

NEXT: 221107

ATK 1830 ()

DEF 1533 (1663)

AGL 1221 (1301)

HIT 1509 ()

INT 816 (840)

《Binding Attribute》Fire

《Binding》Flame Fang | Blaze Fang Attack | Ultimate Flame Fang  
Attack | Wildfire Transformation | Awakened Fireball of Truth |  
Ceremony of Actualization | Fang of the End

《Titles》Friend of Fire | One who Trains | Strong Arms | Battle  
Enthusiast | Musclehead Man | Doting Father | Binge Drinker |  
Considerate Comrade | One who Follows His Own Path | One who  
is Popular | Reliable Person | Unique Genocider | The Monster's  
Poison | King Dandy | One who Exceeds | Gabranth Fighter | Power  
of the Wilds | One who can Influence Cause and Effect | Overly  
Determined Person | Flame Bullet | Beast King | One who  
Transcends

Simply based on the 《Status》 that he had confirmed, Marione was at a disadvantage. And, although Eveam said that the two of them were using their trump cards, it seemed that Leowald still had numerous hidden trump cards that he had yet to use.

However, no matter how many cards he might hold, if Leowald erred in the timing to use them, or thoughtlessly attempted to conserve them for future battles, then there were enough chances for Marione's attacks to easily drop him.

In addition, due to the skills that they were using, Marione's MP was rapidly decreasing, while Leowald's HP and MP were decreasing.

Hiiro understood well that the 《Spirit Sword》 and 《Transformation》 were skills that, as expected, had a certain degree of risk to them. If they continued to do nothing, then there was a chance that they'd become unable to battle by simply standing there.

(In particular, the Beast King's MP is decreasing, so he probably can't let the battle go on for too long.) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, Hiiro once again looked at the two combatants. Both of them were making feints at each other while waiting for a gap in the other's defence to attack at. And then, finally, the battle began to move.

The one who moved first was Leowald. He used his incredible speed to close the gap between them and thrust out his fist. That fist was clad in a burning red flame.

Bushu!

The two collided and kept going until their backs were facing each other. Then, the sound of something falling to the ground was heard. Upon looking carefully, one could see that Leowald's right arm had been severed at the elbow and had fallen on to the ground.

“Ku-!?” (Leowald)

The fallen arm that continued to be clad in flames gradually began



to disperse.

In that single instant, Marione had avoided Leowald's fist and cut off his arm with his sword. The fact that Leowald had been unable to avoid that sword simply displayed how fast Marione's slash had been.

“Gahaha! You've got me now! As expected of the 《Sword General》!” (Leowald)

Seeing Leowald's figure as he laughed heartily after losing his right arm, Marione gave a dubious expression.

“You'll only be able to laugh for now. Next time, I'll turn you into a daruma.” (Marione)

“Gahaha! You'll have to spare me from becoming a daruma!” (Leowald)

As he said that, fire began to shoot out from the area where his right arm had been cut. The flames then began to take the shape of an arm.

“Wha-!?” (Marione)

Marione's eyes widened greatly at that scene. It was only natural. After all, the right arm that he had taken great pains to cut off was regenerating.

“.....I see, it seems that it'll be necessary to mince your entire body up into pieces in order to kill you.” (Marione)

“That's how it is. If you cut off one hand, then I feel the pain, but that's about it.” (Leowald)

“If that's the case-!” (Marione)

This time, it was Marione who kicked the ground and closed the gap between them. And once he had reached Leowald's bosom, he swing his blade upwards, slashing at Leowald from below.

But unfortunately, Leowald appeared to be a step quicker, as he

easily took Marione's back. However, Marione seemed to have predicted that, as he soon twirled his body and, this time, dropped his blade from above upon Leowald.

Bakiiiiiiiiiii!

A large slash mark was carved into the ground. And, at the same time, Leowald's right arm was once again cut off.

Judging it to be a good opportunity, Marione followed up with his assault. His sword moved at a speed that no ordinary man could follow. True to his word, Marione chopped up Leowald's left hand, right leg, and left leg in order to turn him into a daruma.

And then, for the finale, Marione made a large horizontal swing. Following that, Leowald fell to the ground.

“How was it?! This is the power of 《Cruel》!” (Marione)

He stated as he looked down upon Leowald. The moment he became sure of his victory against the burning, unmoving body of Leowald-

Shuuuuuuuu.....

Surprisingly, the collapsed Leowald in front of him began to disappear like an extinguished flame.

“What the-!?” (Marione)

Then, Marione felt a tremendous amount of killing intent coming from above him. He immediately turned his face upwards to check. When he did so, he saw an uninjured Leowald in the sky.

“When did you switch in a substitute?!” (Marione)

It seemed that the Leowald that Marione had just sliced up was a clone made out of Leowald's flames. The person in question had, apparently, taken that opportunity to fly up into the air and prepare his next attack.

“With this, you should turn into ashes, oh 《Sword General》!”

(Leowald)

An intense flame was being emitted with Leowald at the centre of it, it looked like it was cloaking him to protect his body from harm. That flame gradually became bigger, as if it were turning into a miniature sun.

“Take thisssss! 《Awakened Fireball of Truthhhhhhhh》!” (Leowald)

Leowald remained in that form as he dropped from the sky towards Marione. With that size, even if he tried to run now, he’d still be caught by it.

Marione grit his teeth as if resolving himself to take the hit and began to concentrate a large amount of magic power into 《Iruyaduru》.

“I cannot allow myself to lose here! For her Majesty’s sake, this Marione will become a single blade in order to cut open the way of her path!” (Marione)

Marione vigorously stabbed his sword into the ground.

“Come! The Earth!” (Marione)

Gogogogogogogogogogogogogogo!?

The ground began to shake strongly as though a major earthquake had occurred. As it did so, something began to emerge from the ground. That something was an enormous dragon.

Goooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!

As it released an intense bellow which resounded throughout the area, the dragon born from the earth began to head towards the falling sun.

Bachiiiiiiiiiii!

The moment those two existences touched, a sound similar to an electrical discharge rang out. Both parties refused to give a single inch to the other, and it had completely turned into a contest of

strength between the two.

Just when one thought the sun had pushed forward, the dragon would once again push back. The opposite was also true. This repeated countless times.

Seeing them, anyone was capable of understanding the fact that the one whose willpower was exhausted first would be the one to lose.

And then, finally the conclusion appeared to have been reached. The one which displayed a change first was.....

.....the sun.

“Nuguuuuuuuuu!” (???)

At the dragon’s attack, the sun split into two. Leowald, who was in the middle of the sun, then fell prey to the dragon’s fangs.

He managed to narrowly avoid being eaten by using his entire body to hold onto the upper and lower jaws of the dragon.

“.....the sun has fallen to the ground.” (Marione)

Having become confident of his victory, Marione grinned.

And then, Leowald, who truly appeared as though he would end up an offering to the dragon’s belly if things continued this way, ground his teeth as he closed his eyes.

“.....I pray.....” (Leowald)

Marione, upon seeing Leowald recite something which sounded like a spell, said-

“Haa haa haa.....s-so those are your final words. As expected of the Beast King, how manly.” (Marione)

Marione panted heavily as he glared at the suspended Leowald.

Even for Marione, this was his highest class attack, which had his everything packed into it. It seemed like he would collapse if he relaxed, but thinking that he had to wait until he had gained victory, he desperately braced his legs.

As he did so, the dragon's mouth firmly closed. The others, who saw that, all received a shock.

Amongst those people were those holding various opinions, such as those who felt that Marione had gained victory, those who felt Leowald had lost, and those who were simply taken aback by the twos' incredible offensive and defensive abilities.

“.....fufu, I've won.” (Marione)

The moment Marione muttered that-

Bakibakibakibakibakibakibakibakibakiiiiiii!

Cracks suddenly began to run throughout the dragon's body. And then,

BOBOBOBOBOBOBOBOOOUU!

Flames began to sprout from the cracks.

Dokaaaaaaaann!

With the sound of an incredible explosion, the dragon burst open. From within it, something flew towards Marione.

“.....a red.....lion.....!?” (Marione)

There, the figure of a bright red, flame-clad lion appeared.

Dogoooooooo!

“Gafuu-!” (Marione)

Marione was rammed into by the lion, and his entire body was slammed into the large crag behind him. Blood spouted from his mouth, and he crumbled to the ground.

“.....wh.....what.....ha.....” (Marione)

The lion which was looking down upon Marione, then disappeared into wisps of flame. And from behind it, Leowald's figure appeared.

Upon seeing him, Marione's face warped with surprise.

“That was a dangerous spot. To have forced me to use this power, as expected of 《Cruel》's 《Rank 2》.” (Leowald)

Leowald's body was no longer burning bright red like earlier. His body was back to normal, like it was prior to the start of the duel.

“Yo.....you.....” (Marione)

Marione ground his teeth, mortified and frantically attempted to raise his body, but it wouldn't listen to him.

“.....k.....kill me.” (Marione)

Marione closed his eyes as if he had given up. However, Leowald simply quietly looked down on him.

“I cannot face her Majesty. Now, kill me!” (Marione)

“.....what a waste.” (Leowald)

“.....what?” (Marione)

He reopened his closed eyes.

“I said that it was a waste. I'd like to fight a strong warrior like you once again.” (Leowald)

“.....are you an idiot? I don't mean to boast, but I'm one of the 『Evila』's top class fighters. If you simply leave me here, then one day I may once again turn my fangs against you, you know?” (Marione)

If one was a strong warrior, then normally that would be all the more reason to kill them prior to them becoming a problem.

“Very well, then come at me again. I'll beat you at your own

game.” (Leowald)

“.....” (Marione)

“And if we win this duel, then you will naturally become my subordinate. That being the case, then I don’t want to lose an excellent subordinate in a place like this.” (Leowald)

“Don’t screw with me! If I have to receive that kind of humiliation, then dying would be-“ (Marione)

“Revenge.....” (Leowald)

“.....!?” (Marione)

Just as he was about to deny Leowald’s words, he heard some unexpected words and faltered.

“《Sword General》, you have a desire that you wish to fulfill, correct?” (Leowald)

“.....” (Marione)

“If that is so, then why are you trying to rush to your death?” (Leowald)

“.....ku-“ (Marione)

“It is true that this is a duel. I also fought you with the intent to kill. However, right now I can tell with a single glance that you are no longer able to battle. To deal the final blow to such an opponent isn’t interesting at all.” (Leowald)

“I-Interesting....” (Marione)

“And also, your sword when I fought you did have blood thirst contained within it, but I didn’t feel a single drop of the desire for revenge in it.” (Leowald)

“.....” (Marione)

“Gahaha! It was fun, Marione!” (Leowald)

Upon seeing the man in front of him, Marione felt his heart involuntarily begin to tremble. This was because when he thought back to the battle he had just fought, he was able to find that he truly had enjoyed it.

In addition, while the man in front of him truly was an idiot, at the same time he was driven by the impulsive desire which made him want to fight with Marione once more. Marione let out a deep sigh.

“.....you really won’t kill me?” (Marione)

“You’re persistent. The loser isn’t allowed to force their opinions upon the winner!” (Leowald)

“Ku.....I’ll make you regret this one day.” (Marione)

“Gahaha! I look forward to that!” (Leowald)

And just as he saw Leowald turn back to his camp, his consciousness swayed.

“Ahh, now that I think about it, I’ll tell you one last thing.” (Leowald)

At Leowald’s words, Marione’s gradually fading consciousness focussed upon Leowald’s voice.

“The name of the beastman that you’re after is Kurou.” (Leowald)

“.....-!?” (Marione)

“He’s a fiend who’s even on the wanted list within the Gabranth continent.” (Leowald)

After saying that, Leowald returned to his camp. And Marione, who repeated the words he had heard within his mind, fell into the darkness.

Silva, who confirmed that Marione had become unable to battle, raised his hand towards Leowald and shouted.

“The first match is the 『Gabranth』’s victory!” (Silva)



Author's note: Sorry to everyone who was cheering for Marione!!!

## Chapter 171: Arnold and Muir's Duel Debut

“.....Uu” (Marione)

“Marione! Marione, are you alright?!” (???)

The duel between Marione and Leowald was finished. Eveam and the others rushed towards Marione who had lost consciousness. They then carried Marione outside the crater and proceeded to treat him.

After a while, Marione regained consciousness.

“Your..... Your Majesty.....” (Marione)

Marione had been fighting up until now, and was contemplating his defeat. He was clenching his fist and said with an apologetic face:

“My..... My power was not enough..... I deeply apologise.....” (Marione)

Marione was expecting to hear harsh words and criticism. After all, he had boasted about achieving swift victory. However, when Leowald got serious, it had ended with him dealing the decisive blow.

Getting defeated so soundly although he was a part of 《Cruel》, Marione could not say anything in return if he were to be reprimanded. However, Eveam only shook her head in silence and said:

“Don't say such things!” (Eveam)

All of Marione's negative thoughts were swept away by Eveam's words.

“.....Your Majesty?” (Marione)

“It is indeed a shame that you lost; however, that doesn't mean I no

longer have any faith in you!” (Eveam)

“.....” (Marione)

“Rather than thinking about how you lost; you managed to push the Beast King that far. If he were to participate in any duels afterwards, we would have a good grasp of his abilities. His next opponent will have an easier time.” (Eveam)

“Your Majesty.....” (Marione)

Marione’s gloomy expression dispelled upon seeing Eveam’s bright smile. A sense of calmness flowed through his heart. Slowly, Marione closed his eyes and uttered:

“Your words..... are too much for someone like me. Next time..... I’ll definitely win for you, Your Majesty.” (Marione)

“Aa, I’ll be expecting it!” (Eveam)

At those words Marione’s eyes slowly opened as he smiled faintly, and then he closed them again.

Eveam entrusted the treatment of Marione to one of the subordinates present and stared at the center of the crater in preparation for the next battle.

The second round of the duel was beginning.

“Good job, Father!” (Leglos)

At Leowald’s victory, the 『Gabranth』 sprung up in celebration. Everyone pumped their fists up in joy.

And the one who shouted the most was the First Prince Leglos.

“Hmm, that was a rather enjoyable fight.” (Leowald)

Leowald answered with a satisfied nod.

“Uoo~ I want to fight soon as well!” (Lenion)

So said the Second Prince Lenio. His body was throbbing and he

could not help but smile after experiencing the heat of the previous battle.

“Well then, how is it, Kukulia and Mimir? That is what a real fight is like.” (Leowald)

While Leowald was celebrating his victory, some of the faces there were tense after having seen a real duel for themselves. That level of violence, as well as the danger of possibly losing one’s life shocked them.

“.....Does Father always fight under circumstances like this?” (Kukulia)

The First Princess Kukulia asked this. She was the spitting image of Leowald with her red, light brown, short-cut hair.

She inherited the slightly sharp eyes of her father, even at a young age. Everyone would also agree that she had cute features, which she probably inherited from her mother, Blantha.

“Yes, he does. In war, one’s life can easily be lost. That is why everyone is fighting with everything they have: so that they won’t die.” (Leowald)

“.....” (Kukulia)

“Of course you can’t help but feel fear. However, you— wait, not just you, but Mimir as well said that both of you wanted to see this with your own eyes. Originally, I didn’t intend on letting you come with us to the duel, however, I allowed you to. Do you know why?” (Leowald)

Kukulia and Mimir shook their heads.

“Well, that is to say, this battle will decide the future of our race. Moreover, precisely it is because it is this particular duel that I believe that you are able to observe it. Also, I wanted the both of you to witness this turning point in our history with your own eyes.” (Leowald)

“.....Why?” (Kukulia)

“It is because you are the hope of the next era.” (Leowald)

While it is true that now, Leowald is the one ruling the country, eventually, someone else would succeed him. If, through some misfortune, the eldest son Leglos or the second son Lenion were to perish during the war, those successors would be either Kukulia or Mimir.

“However, should the youths that were to rise to the top not know about the realities of war, problems would undoubtedly arise. It would be even more noticeable because of the current era.” (Leowald)

That was why he wanted to show them how horrible war could really be. He wanted to show them this through his battle.

Regardless of whether or not the 『Gabranth』 were to win or lose this duel, it did not change the fact that this was a big turning point for their race. That was why Leowald judged that experiencing this turning point first-hand was very important.

Leowald softly put his hands on top of Mimir’s and Kukulia’s heads.

“Thus, watch carefully and learn to live like those who are facing this fight!” (Leowald)

“.....I understand.” (Kukulia)

“.....Yes.” (Mimir)

Leowald nodded with satisfaction at both of their replies.

“Next up are..... you guys.” (Leowald)

Leowald directed his gaze towards the next fighters.

“Ma, if it’s like that, I’ll be going, then.” (???)

Saying this while scratching her head in irritation was Rarashik.

“Well, I’m mostly doing this to check up on the growth of my disciples.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik glanced behind her at Arnold and Muir. Their faces were stiff with nervousness. Especially Muir, who looked like she could collapse at any time as her face paled.

This time, the ones participating in the duel were these three.

“Don’t be so nervous, Arnold. No matter what opponent we face, I’ll beat them up with all my might!” (Leowald)

Although Arnold understood that it was Leowald of all people saying this, it did not dispel the fact that the fate of his race hinged on this battle. Arnold never expected that he would be asked to participate in a war of such great importance. No matter how much he had trained for this, it was only natural for his body to tremble in nervousness.

Muir’s body was shaking rigidly as well. “If possible, I really don’t want to fight”, thought Muir. Although she had been following Hiirō’s parting words and trained rigorously in order to become stronger, standing on such a big stage made her shrink from fear.

“Oi Rara, although we decided the order of participants already, did you not inform Arnold and Muir?” (Leowald)

“I know, Leo-sama. If these guys are too cowardly, I’ll abandon them myself.” (Rarashik)

“Aa, no..... I wasn’t saying something like that.....” (Leowald)

“No matter what you say, if they were truly scared then they should have already left by now. However, they are still here; they have decided to stay. If they die without being able to give it their all, then my judgement truly was faulty and I’ll surrender.” (Rarashik)

Upon hearing Rarashik’s words, Arnold and Muir thought to themselves: “No, no, aren’t her words simply an exaggeration? That’s not the case at all!” as they felt a shock like electricity run through their bodies.

Yes, they should have been able to back out by now. However, as she said, they persevered until now because they wanted to see

Hiiro. They wanted to show Hiiro their power.

Thus, they were truly grateful for being allowed to fight in such a grand stage just for that reason. Just so they could demonstrate their growth.

That was why they wanted to respond to the expectations of Rarashik and Leowald who had acknowledged their strength. While very late, they finally thought that they could do it.

Arnold and Muir stared at each other and nodded. Looking at the state of the two, Rarashik burst into a grin.

“Saa let’s go, you guys! Time to make your flashy debut!”  
(Rarashik)

“O, ou-!” (Arnold)

“Ye, yes-!” (Muir)

Each of the three pumped themselves up and shouted loud and headed to the center of the crater.

At the heart of the crater was Silva, waiting to be given the papers confirming each fighter’s participation. And thus, the two teams of each side of the second round faced each other.

“Ehem! Let me now verify! For the 『Gabranth』, the participants are Rarashik-dono, Arnold-dono, and Muir-dono! As for the 『Evila』, the participants are Shublarz-dono, Herbreed-dono, and Eonis-dono! Am I correct? (Silva)

Both parties nodded in response.

Herbreed was a tall man who had three horns growing from his forehead, characterising his manly appearance. Eonis was a girl, only slightly taller than Muir, who, for some reason, was wearing an eye mask.

Coincidentally, there were two girls and one boy on each team.

“Oi Arnold, it’s still too early for you to be facing off against that

Shublarz. So I'll be the one fighting her..... are you even listening?" (Rarashik)

While silently attempting to discuss tactics with Arnold, Rarashik noticed that he was fixatedly staring towards the person in front of him.

"Nn....." (Arnold)

Shublarz let out a long, seductive sigh, and then Arnold's eyes became bloodshot.

\*BAGO-!\*

"Nohou-!" (Arnold)

Suddenly Rarashik headbutted Arnold who, in response, yelped in pain.

"Wha-what are you doing Shishou?!" (Arnold)

"Shut up you stupid disciple! Till how long were you planning on staring at that woman's chest?!" (Rarashik)

"N-nono nono, I-I-I-I I wasn't doing anything like that!" (Arnold)

".....Uncle....." (Muir)

Desperately trying to defend himself, Arnold could not deny his previous lecherous actions when Muir let out her disappointment.

"Hohou, then you don't like looking at those breasts? You have no interest at all?" (Rarashik)

"E? A, no, a-although I do think they are wonderful things, somehow I could not help but look at them..... A-" (Arnold)

".....Uncle....." (Muir)

And thus Arnold's fate was sealed. He was kicked upside-down by Rarashik, driven to near-death even before the duel had begun.

"Fufufu, what an interesting guy~" (Shublarz)



While squeezing her breasts between her arms, Shublarz' already ample chest was further emphasised. Beside her, Herbreed averted his eyes as his cheeks slowly reddened while Eonis tilted her neck as she imitated Shublarz' actions to her own chest.

\*drip\* \*drip\* \*drip\* \*drip\* \*drip\* \*drip\* .....

However there is someone who should not be forgotten. More so than Arnold, a pervert lustfully gazed at Shublarz' twin peaks from afar.

“Nofoooooooooo-! What a superb chest! Aah, but I mustn't! I am supposed to be neutral! No matter how much you try to tempt me, I won't give in! HOWEVER! Once this duel ends, I will look and massage it to my heart's desire!” (Silva)

“Have some shaaaaaaaaaaaaame!” (Liliyn)

Suddenly Liliyn came from the skies spinning like a corkscrew. She executed a heel drop directly on top of Silva's head, making mincemeat out of him.

Dogagagagagagaga-!

“Binyunpuu-!?” (Silva)

Silva's head was buried beneath the ground, and only his feet could be seen sticking out from the ground— thus, the illustration of a pervert was completed.

“You're supposed to be impartial you bastard!” (Liliyn)

“O..... Gu.....” (Silva)

“Answer me!” (Liliyn)

“Y..... Yes..... My..... Lord.....” (Silva) (T/N: Silva says this in English)

Liliyn said this while dragging Silva to the back. The people left behind were completely dumbstruck.

“Wha, what the hell just happened.....” (Arnold)

Everyone else wondered what was going on as well. Not one of them was able to answer Arnold’s question.

“Nofofofof! Everyone, the duel is about to begin! Nofofofof!” (Silva)

The revived Silva said, politely bowing his head as he walked back to the arena.

“O, oi, that old man’s nose bled to such an extent and he’s still okay?” (Arnold)

“Ye, yes.....” (Muir)

Muir also wondered about the state of Silva. However, seeing as the person himself didn’t seem to mind it at all, they did not press any further.

“Ehem! Then now, I will be verifying the designated 『King』s from each side! For the 『Gabranth』 it will be Rarashik-dono and as for the 『Evila』 it’s Shublarz-dono, right?” (Silva)

Both parties nodded. The duel this time followed the 《Agasshi》 system, where two teams composed of multiple people would fight, with one person from each team designated as the 『King』.

In order to protect the 『King』, the other members would devote themselves to supporting the 『King』. In the case of one-on-one duels, the two sole participants would obviously be the 『King』s. In that case, whoever is defeated is the loser. However, for the case of multiple people, whichever side’s 『King』 was defeated first would lose.

That doesn’t mean that the other members are useless: the less people there are compared to the other side, the task of defending the 『King』 would become much harder, thus increasing the probability of defeat.

“Then, are both sides done with their preparations?” (Silva)

As Silva said those words, both sides jumped quite a considerable distance from each other. Taking that as confirmation, Silva took a deep breath and:

“Let the second round begin!” (Silva)

The fight of Hihiro’s original travel companions: Arnold and Muir; had begun.

## Chapter 172: The Growth of the Former Companions

“Now then. Arnold, you take the man, and Muir will take on that small girl. I’ll take on the person with the mysteriously large chest.”  
(Rarashik)

Rarashik said that as she pointed at Shublarz’s chest in a displeased manner.

“Ara~, if it was up to me, I would be much happier facing that man over there though~” (Shublarz)

Her large breasts jiggled once again as she gazed intently into Arnold’s eyes in an alluring manner.

“.....\*gulp\*” (Arnold)

Arnold wavered and seemed to forget himself as his nostrils flared pervertedly.

“You want to die first, Arnold?” (Rarashik)

“N-no! I-I’ll fight the other person! L-leave it to me! Ahahahaha!”

(Arnold)

When he sensed a clear killing intent from Rarashik, he shook with fear as his teeth clattered, and he desperately attempted to smooth things over. Muir also gave a fed up sigh, and then focused her gaze upon the one who would be her opponent in the upcoming battle.

Her light green hair was tied up in a sidetail, and was coiled around in a curl. However, the most significant feature of her opponent was the eyepatch like object that covered both their eyes.

She thought that her opponent probably couldn't see anything and so believed that she could find a blind spot with ease. But making an assumption without any clear evidence could result in a grave mistake, she shook her head at the thought.

This was mainly because she understood that the person before her was someone who had enough power to participate in the duel. Muir assumed that it would definitely be someone really strong even though her opponent's size was just as small as her's.

She then looked at Hihiro who was outside the crater

(...Just watch me Hihiro)

Her eyes then drifted towards Lionis

(Watch how much I've grown!)

To persuade them so, she put in all her effort

“Now then, let start as soon as possible. I won't forgive you guys if you were defeated too fast!” (Rarashik)

Rarashik declared with motivation; while Arnold and Muir strongly responded.

“Are you two ready?” (Shublarz)

“Yes!” (Blindfold person)

“Understood” (Man)

The other side also responded accordingly, to Shublarz command.

“First spread out! Then fight!”

Rarashi raised her right hand towards her opponent, then uncountable blades of ice erupted from the ground and flew toward her opponent.

Shublarz and her group were able to avoid the attack but were separated in the attempt

Then they were enraptured in a one-on-one battle.

---

Arnold faced his opponent Halbreed, then Arnold drew out the large sword strapped on his back and rushed at the opponent,

”UOoooooooooh!” (Arnold)

“Naive! Shadow blade!” (Halbreed)

A dark sword manifested itself in Halbreed’s hand, which he used to defend against the attack from Arnold.

The two gritted their teeth as their blades clashed and soon, it became a test of strength.

“Mu, as expected from the Gabranth. You have great strength!” (Halbreed)

“I’m thankful for th...that!” (Arnold)

Arnold pushed against Halbreed, who reacted by jumping backward. Arnold chased him soon after but Halbreed simply thrust his sword towards the approaching Arnold.

“.....What?” (Arnold)

“Shadow Ball!” (Halbreed)

Suddenly, the sword changed shape and became a bow and arrow.

“Wa!?” (Arnold)

The arrow flew towards Arnold who was rushing at his opponent in a straight line.

“Ku!” (Arnold)

Arnold stopped his forward movement and jumped to the side to avoid the arrow.

“It isn’t over yet!” (Halbreed)

Halbreed didn’t hesitate even a bit as he pulled the string of his bow and a volley of arrows flew towards Arnold once again.



“Hey, this is BS!” (Arnold)

Shouted Arnold as he swung his broadsword to intercept the arrows that were flying at him.

“It seems I can’t hurt you with just this. Then, let try something else!” (Halbreed)

Halbreed quickly closed the distance between his opponent, and made preparations to attack.

“Shadow Axe!” (Halbreed)

This time a war axe came out from the shadow. Equipping the war axe, Halbreed executed his attack..

Dogan! (Bam)

“Neh! W-what power?!” (Arnold)

Arnold tried to block the attack with his broadsword, but the force of the attack sent him flying through the air along with his broadsword which he had been gripping very tightly.

“Chance! Dark Dagger!” (Halbreed)

With his opponent off balance, Halbreed changed the shape of his weapon once again and rushed at his opponent.

“Ku!” (Arnold)

It took too long for Arnold to counteract the force from the blow and parry the attack. At the rate things were progressing, his stomach would be pierced.

“You are mine!” (Halbreed)

Sensing victory, Halbreed quickly stabbed the dagger home.

Bushi!

He was sure that he had hit his mark. It wasn't a fatal blow but it was enough to render the opponent incapable of combat. Thus, when Halbreed passed Arnold, he looked back to confirm his victory.

At that moment, Arnold stood up with a gash on his armor, but then Halbreed noticed something was wrong.

.

He expected some blood to gush out from the place he had attacked but not even a single drop of blood came to his view.

“W-what is going on.....?” (Halbreed)

He stiffened at the sight for a moment.

“That hurt like hell. Really. I would have died from it.” (Arnold)

Arnold who had received an almost fatal blow to his side, now stood like nothing happened.

Then, Halbreed looked carefully at the spot he had struck, and saw a green glow around the area and realized what was going on right away.

“Is it... 《Conversion》 ...? “ (Halbreed)

At that moment, the wound slowly disappeared and Arnold turned to face his opponent.

“You didn’t think that I wasn’t able to use it, Evila-san, did you?” (Arnold)

“My apologies. As expected, from someone who was selected to participate in this battle. Would it be alright for me to ask for your name? My name is Halbreed Julius.” (Halbreed)

“My name is Arnold Ocean. I was made to participate in this battle abruptly, but now that I am here, I will not lose!” (Arnold)

“I see! Made to participate abruptly huh...no wonder I've never seen you before. Nonetheless, for the peace of the Evila, I cannot afford to lose either!” (Halbreed)

While saying so, Halbreed changed his weapon to a Shadow Blade.

“No matter how powerful your 《Conversion》 is, you still feel the pain of magic. Also, there is a compatibility risk to it as well. And...”

Halbreed then looked and observed Arnold carefully.

“It seems that you are unable create a complete 《Conversion》. Isn't that right?” (Halbreed)

“I don't know, let it be something for you to find out in the future!” (Arnold)

They then smiled at one another and, dashed toward each other again

“At this point, I think it is better for you to surrender” (Inois)

Inois said in an indifferent tone as she looked down her opponent.

“Uu.....” (???)

Standing before her was Muir. Since the beginning of battle, Inois avoided all of Muir’s attacks, while Muir had received numerous counter attacks from Inois, and was currently lying on the ground.

(I-impressive.....not a single attack hit her...)

When Muir looked at Inois who was wearing an eyemask, she was impressed by her graceful movements. She had dropped the thought of Inois not being able to see, long ago.

But what shocked her more was the fact that Inios was able to avoid every single of her attacks. Nonetheless, Muir stood up and tried again.

“《Lightning Fang》 ggg!” (Muir)

It was the same attack that Leoward used but with lightning. It flew towards the target and sent a shockwave through the ground. However,

SFX: HyunHyunHyun!

Without wasting a single move, Inios avoided everything at once. It was astonishing that even the random sparks that were discharged from the attack were avoided as well.

In addition to that, Ionis took advantage of the opening to throw a kick at Muir.

“Kya!?” (Muir)

She guarded against the attack, but a notable amount of force was put into it and thus was blown off balance.

“That is impossible. That kind of lightning attack will not hit Inois” (Inois)

Muir gritted her teeth and stood back up.

“You are not giving up? Well, then I’ll start attacking” (Inois)

Then she placed her hand between her chest, and took something out.

Immediately she appeared behind Muir.

SFX: Bogo!

In the next instant, a hole appeared on the ground. If she was hit by it directly Muir was sure that she would have received significant damage. Thus, she made sure to be careful, but,

“Kya!” (Muir)

Suddenly, something struck her left shoulder and sent her tumbling backwards. Then, at the edge of her vision, something slinked back towards Inois.

Not only the object that had hit her but also the object that was on the ground also returned to Inois.

SFX: Shirurururururururu....

While clutching her shoulder, she frowned at what Inois was holding in her hand.

---

“Is that a yo-yo?” (Hiiro)

Hiiro, who was watching the battle between Muir and Inois, looked at the object that Inois was holding.

He looked at the object in her hand, which looked like a sturdy chain attached to some rotating round plates. It definitely looked like a yo-yo.

The yo-yo like thing was able to create a dent in the ground so Hihiro realised that it clearly had lot of power.

“Nh? You know about it Hihiro?” (Lilyn)

Lilyn approached him from his side.

“A bit. In my world, something like that is just a toy for entertainment. I was surprised that it would be turned into a weapon in this world.” (Hihiro)

“Indeed, it is definitely a rare weapon. For something like that to be a toy in your world. You can clearly sense its killing potential.” (Lilyn)

Like she said, he wasn't sure what it was made out of, but with the rotational force and the centrifugal force, it could break bones, and could even cause instant death if a person were hit on the head with it.

“Hmph, that person is your acquaintance, right? No matter how I look at it, she seems to be in a difficult situation, even with all your encouragement.”



She seemed to say it with an unpleasant expression but,

“Right now we are enemies. It would be a harsh awakening if someone died, but if they lose in terms of power then there is nothing we can do about it.” (Hiiro)

”Hou, you are handling it surprisingly easily” (Lilyn)

“However, it would be strange for the chibi to give up. There is no way it will end in this state” (Hiiro)

“Mu.....you seem to know that person well” (Lilyn)

“It was someone that I went on a journey with, you know” (Hiiro)

Lilyn scowled when she looked at Hiiro. Something unnerving was just said.

“Well, you seem to be surrounded by children. To such a stunning extent that is.” (Lilyn)

“.....There are thorns in your words you know?” (Hiiro)

“Fun, I’m just telling the truth. I can’t believe it...for similar people to appear around me... this really dulls my presence.” (Lilyn)

“Did you want to say something?” (Hiiro)

Because she was persistent, he retorted. Soon after, her cheeks went red and quickly turned away from him.

“L..i, it’s nothing! Hey, don’t look this way dammit!” (Lilyn)

She blurted out, even though he wasn’t facing her,

“.....I don’t understand, but you are the one that brought it out in the first place, Aka-loli” (Hiiro)

“Ehh! Your noisy! Shamoe, help me out here!” (Lilyn)

“U-understood!” (Shamoe)

Hiiro pondered for a moment as she slowly exited the area, but there was nothing interesting to pursue so he returned to watching the battle.

(Old man is having an interesting fight over there. Chibi’s fight will not end in that state.....I see now, they definitely have gotten

stronger)

If it was Muir from half a year ago, she would have been knocked out by the first counter-attack, but now she is standing even after being hit several times..

Also, when she had received the attack, she managed to reduce the impact by shifting her body at just the right time. Being able to do something like that was enough for one to be impressed about.

(Now then, the person in question is that Chibi-usagi...but a coach is a coach so something good should happen)

Thinking so he looked in the direction of Rarashik.

## Chapter 173 – Their Respective Abilities

An ice-covered world spread across the field. It was as if that area was an entirely different world. However, this place should've undoubtedly been the inside of the crater in the 【Valaaru Wilds】.

Normally, the dry earth would spread out on the ground, but currently, that earth was frozen, and the temperature within the surroundings had dropped to the point where one's breath would condense when one exhaled.

And on top of that frozen field was Shublarz, her body covered with injuries. She gazed in a mortified manner at her opponent, Rarashik, who had created the current state of the battlefield.

“Just who might you be? I thought I had memorized all of the strong warriors amongst the Gabranth, who had participated in the wars up until now.” (Shublarz)

Shublarz believed that a beastman with this level of strength should have participated in the wars that had occurred up until now. But no matter how deeply she delved into her memories, not a single person matching Rarashik's appearance surfaced from her memories.

“Well, I suppose that should be the case. This is my first time participating in a war after all.” (Rarashik)

“.....seriously?” (Shublarz)

“Yeah, because I hate war.” (Rarashik)

“.....then why are you participating this time?” (Shublarz)

“Nahaha! You're probably trying to extend the conversation like that in order to allow your body to recover, but that kind of strategy only works on underlings, you know?” (Rarashik)

As she said that, numerous ice needles began to emerge from the ground, attacking Shublarz.

“Geez! At least let me have a conversation!” (Shublarz)

Although she frantically attempted to dodge them, due to the sheer number of ice needles, numerous small wounds began to appear on her body.

“Fuu, what are you going to do if the wounds leave scars on my body, I wonder?” (Shublarz)

“Even though I want to skewer those mysteriously large boobs of yours?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik clicked her tongue as she pointed towards Shublarz’s chest. Upon hearing that, Shublarz became pale and shivered as she imagined what would happen to her.

“G-Geez, couldn’t we be a bit more peaceful about this?” (Shublarz)

“Peace.....has already died out!” (Rarashik)

“I wonder if it’s just my imagination that the expression was taken wrongly–!” (Shublarz)

Ice needles once again came attacking. She somehow managed to dodge them successfully and stared at Rarashik as she panted.

Shublarz hadn’t thought that she would have lost the initiative in the battle like this. Although Rarashik hadn’t appeared to be all that strong at first glance, the power that she had contained within her was dreadful.

In the previous battle, Leowald had suddenly used 《Binding》 to fight, but Shublarz had a hunch that Rarashik’s 《Binding》’s power was stronger.

She couldn’t word it well, but it could be said to be like a perfectly coordinated partner, or more accurately, it felt like Rarashik was making use of a part of herself.

Shublarz felt that Rarashik’s power was wielded both naturally and effortlessly. She thought that while everyone, including herself, might think that the Beast King Leowald was the top in terms of

strength, in terms of skill with using 《Binding》, Shublarz sensed that Rarashik was actually much better.

“It’s boring if you just dodge it all! Here, 《Fang of Ice》!”  
(Rarashik)

Upon throwing numerous surgical scalpel-like objects, the scalpels were covered in ice and transformed into enormous ice scalpels.

“Wai-! You can do something like that!?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz froze after being startled, and, having thought that the attack would hit Shublarz directly, Rarashik snickered. However.....

Suu.....

Suddenly, the field that should have been covered in ice returned to its original earthly state. Not only that, but it did so in an instant.

“Wha-!?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik, unable to understand what had happened, unintentionally opened her mouth in surprise. It was only natural. Not only had she not deactivated her power yet, even if she had, she wasn’t capable of making all of the ice disappear instantly.

Even so, everything, including the giant scalpels and the surrounding ice, had returned to the exact same state that it had been in prior to the start of battle.

She looked around restlessly, attempting to find the cause of the phenomenon, but couldn’t discover anything. And then, she turned her gaze towards the one person who appeared unfazed from the situation, Shublarz.

She was smiling. Not only that, but the surprising thing was that the slash wounds which had been carved all over her body had

completely disappeared.

“.....what did you do?” (Rarashik)

“Fufufu, did you really think that I would tell you that?” (Shublarz)

Seeing Shublarz, who smiled like she had successfully deceived her, Rarashik scowled in annoyance.

Shublarz had done something. Rarashik understood that, but she couldn't even begin to guess what Shublarz could have done to cause this.

The reason being that Shublarz had simply avoided Rarashik's attacks all along.

Watching Rarashik's battle, Hiiro's face was once again dyed with the colour of surprise.

(What.....the ice suddenly disappeared?) (Hiiro)

Shublarz had likely done something, but as far as Hiiro had seen, he couldn't understand what exactly it was.

She had been in a defensive fight against Rarashik's attacks. While her body continued to bear numerous tiny wounds, countless ice needles had come attacking her from the ground, which she had then splendidly avoided with minimal damage.

Nothing unnatural had occurred.....is what Hiiro thought. If there was one thing that bothered him, it was that despite the fact that she had been in the middle of evading Rarashik's attacks, her body had been emitting magic power.

(.....don't tell me, this is the Dekachi woman's magic?) (Hiiro)

As he thought that, he realized that he wouldn't be able to reach an answer based on conjectures alone, so he reluctantly used 『Pry』 / 『司見』 to check her 《Status》.

Shublarz Crusel

Lv 130

HP: 6000/6000

MP: 5035/5835

EXP: 2400111

NEXT: 74980

ATK 1100 (1150)

DEF 1011 (1133)

AGL 1009 (1089)

HIT 922 (1000)

INT 999 (1099)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Dance Magic (Ancestral Gathering Dance (Unlocked) |  
Dance of the Pure (Unlocked) | Enchanting Dance (Unlocked) |  
Time Reflecting Dance (Unlocked))

《Titles》 Dancer | Voluptuous Beauty | High Class Demon |  
Connoisseur of Wine | Monster Slayer | Ripper | Boob-nee-sama |  
Tit Witch | Sexy Pudding | Charming Mistress | Capable Woman |  
Jiggle Jiggle | Dancing Lady | Cruel | Killer of the Unique | One  
who Exceeds | Man Killer | Likes to be Spoiled | Lonely One |  
.....Still a Virgin? | Fighting Woman | Overly Determined Person

Rarashik Fan'naru

Lv 138

HP: 7665/7665

MP: 786/786



EXP: 3421577

NEXT: 87020

ATK 1316 (1330)

DEF 1268 (1300)

AGL 1194 (1200)

HIT 1049 (1050)

INT 845 (880)

《Binding Attribute》Ice

《Binding》Frozen Fang | Severing Strike of the Ice Beast | Frost Inversion | Divine Frost Surge | Spirit Manifestation | Final Fang

《Titles》Friend of Ice | Little Girl | Binge Drinker | Blade of the Wild | Researcher | Monster Slayer | A Weirdo born of a Weirdo | The Creator of Binding | Gabranth Fighter | One who can Influence Cause and Effect | Chibi-Usagi | One who Raised Many Disciples | Overly Determined Person

(《Dance Magic》.....I see. So it was a Unique Magic.) (Hiiro)

Based on what he had read, 《Dance Magic》's defining feature was, as its name stated, that it could manifest by dance alone.

What interested him was the 《Time Reflecting Dance》, but in exchange for using a considerable amount of magic, upon completing the dance, it seemed to be a cheat-like magic that allowed one to return the state of the surroundings back to how it was a short period of time earlier.

For example, the wounds she had received. Once she had finished her dance, it seemed that she was able to return to how she was prior to receiving the wounds. (liberal trans)

However, naturally, there were restrictions. She could only turn

back the state of the surrounds up to one hour prior, and there was always a limit to the range of the past space that she could project.

Because it had been possible for her to return the entire area covered by ice back to its previous state, Hiiro was able to guess that her ability had an effect on an area of at least 30 metres in diameter.

(In other words, rather than turning back time, it's more like she can manifest the state of that things were in from the past.....Unique Magic really are cheats after all.) (Hiiro)

Rather than causing the ice to melt in an instant, it was more correct to think of it as her having returned the area to its state prior to being frozen over.

(Nevertheless, the people in that area will also have their bodies returned to their earlier states, but.....since the enemies bodies also have their wounds and fatigue returned to their former states, the magic could be said to be a little difficult to handle.) (Hiiro)

Indeed, originally Rarashik's HP and MP should have decreased by a certain amount due to her use of 《Binding》 to attack, but currently she was completely recovered. In other words, she had been returned to the same state as she was prior to the beginning of the fight.

(But she can't restore her own MP, huh.....) (Hiiro)

Only Shublarz's MP had remained diminished. This might be an extremely obvious risk, but considering that her opponent was now fully recovered, Hiiro felt that the gains Shublarz had received were, in comparison, not worth it.

(Well, there are numerous ways to put it to use, but in battle, this magic might unexpectedly be at a disadvantage.) (Hiiro)

Hiiro's concern was only natural. If it was a normal magic, then you could just activate it by either saying the name of the magic or thinking about it, but for 《Dance Magic》, one would need to dance before one could activate it.

In exchange, the effects of the magic seemed to be larger, but as one might expect, it would be quite difficult to use it during battle. It was likely that earlier, Shublarz had been pretending to dodge her opponents attacks while she danced, but as dancing took both physical and magical stamina, Hiiro felt that it was rather unsuitable for combat.

(Well, since Chibi-Usagi seems to be pretty smart, she'll probably realize it was the Dekka-Chichi woman's magic sooner or later, but until then, the battle will be decided by how the Dekka-Chichi woman takes advantage of her opponent's confusion in the fight.)  
(Hiiro)

As he thought that, Hiiro then turned to watch Arnold and Muir. He figured that he might as well confirm the two of their 《Statuses》 in advance.

Arnold Ocean

Lv 81

HP: 2430/2960

MP: 375/430

EXP: 610330

NEXT: 439

ATK 674 (794)

DEF 599 (649)

AGL 528 (558)

HIT 312 (332)

INT 234 ()

《Binding Attribute》 Wind

《Binding》 Wind Fang | Explosive Wind Claw | Blast Inversion |

## Wild Limits of the Anger Storm

《Titles》 Friend of Wind | Former Slave | Chef | Super Doting Father | Man of Burning Soul | The Man Referred to as a Pervert | Lolicon | Boob Lover | Feminist | Wild Old Man | Blade of the Wild | Monster Slayer | Killer of the Unique | Gabranth Fighter | Sage | One Who Endured Hell

Muir Castrea

Lv 72

HP: 1320/1800

MP: 320/380

EXP: 400222

NEXT: 17843

ATK 504 (574)

DEF 427 (477)

AGL 412 (442)

HIT 340 (355)

INT 253 ()

《Binding Attribute》 Lightning

《Binding》 Lightning Fang | Thunder Formation Vacuum Attack | Thunderclap Inversion | Silver Lightning of a Thousand Ends

《Titles》 Friend of Lightning | Kidnapped | My Angel | Cutie Flower | Girl of Tolerance | Earnest Child | Bothersome One | Good at Getting By | Veiled Girl | Little Girl | A Changing Maiden | Shocking Lolita | Blade of the Wild | Monster Slayer | Killer of the Unique | One Who Endured Hell

As they had grown even more than he had expected, Hiiro was surprised. He understood just how hard the two of them had worked during the past 6 months. Previously, Arnold should have been at level 40, while Muir had been at level 30.

There was quite a difference compared to his own growth, but normally, it would be considered to be quite amazing to have been able to grow this much during a mere 6 months. In Hiiro's case, he had 《Word Magic》, so no matter how strong his opponent was, he had a high chance of beating them.

After all, so long as he hit them with words such as 『Sleep』 / 『眠』 or 『Bind』 / 『縛』, he could attack his defenceless opponent. That was why even if his opponent was an SS-rank monster, as long as his word hit them, the outcome of the battle would be determined.

However, in Arnold and co.'s case, as they didn't have such a convenient magic, they likely had to steadily raise their own levels.

In addition, by seeing their movements, Hiiro was able to understand that they had gained a lot of battle experience. Muir's movements in particular had become so good they could hardly compare to her movements from half a year ago.

(It just goes to show that the battle still has a ways to go before it'll end.) (Hiiro)

Currently, Muir's situation was rather bad, but she still hadn't begun to fight seriously. It seemed that she would most likely begin to exhibit her true power from here on out.

(And even if her opponent is said to be strong, in terms of level they aren't all that different.) (Hiiro)

As Hiiro thought that, he confirmed their opponents' 《Statuses》.

Herbreed Julius

Lv 88

HP: 2380/2630

MP: 2890/3110

EXP: 709657

NEXT: 10076

ATK 600 ()

DEF 500 (555)

AGL 666 (686)

HIT 560 ()

INT 412 ()

《Magic Attribute》 Dark

《Magic》 Shadow Blade (Darkness) | Shadow Spear (Darkness) | Shadow Bow (Darkness) | Shadow Axe (Darkness) | Shadow Lance (Darkness) | Shadow Hammer (Darkness) | Shadow Dagger (Darkness) | Shadow Whip (Darkness) | Arm Shootram (Darkness – Attack)

《Titles》 Demon Swordsman | Prodigy | Worldly-Wise Man | Upper Class Demon | Monster Slayer | Ripper | Gabranth Slayer | Sage | Gentle-Mannered One | Soft-Hearted One | Weapon Master | Demon Army Captain | Considerate Comrade

Eonis Kitfar

Lv 84

HP: 2160/2190

MP: 2880/2880

EXP: 650101

NEXT: 3786

ATK 550 (675)

DEF 437 (500)

AGL (770 (800)

HIT 440 (480)

INT 330 (350)

《Magic Attribute》 None

《Magic》 Magnetic Magic (Level One Magnetic Field (Unlocked) | Magnetic Inversion (Unlocked) | Level Two Magnetic Field (Unlocked))

《Titles》 Genius | Little Magnet Girl | Eye Mask Girl | Upper Class Demon | Monster Slayer | Sage | My Pace | Ripper | Gabbranth Slayer | Magnetic Cutie | Demon Army Captain | Hidden Idol | Scarred One | Taciturn One | Small Child | Demon Army Loli | Strongest Flat One | Lightning Speed

After seeing the young girl, Eonis', 《Status》, Hihiro felt a sense of admiration. Honestly speaking, he was surprised to find that even she was a Unique Magic user.

However, he didn't know why she was wearing an eye mask. If he used the word 『Investigate』 / 『調査』, he could examine as to why she did so, but as he wasn't that interested in her, he stopped himself from doing so.

Right now, she wasn't his enemy, so he didn't really need any unnecessary information. However, he was curious about how the battle between the 'Little Lightning Girl' Muir and the 'Little Magnet Girl' Eonis would turn out, as they had similar affinities.

Hihiro was interested in the 《Magnetic Field》 she possessed, and thus looked into it a bit more, but it seemed that she was able to use magnetic forces to move things that she herself had touched, or any objects touched by things she had poured magnetic forces into. However, it only applied to inanimate objects.

In other words, Eonis had poured magnetic force into the yo-yo that she was equipped with. Even if Muir attacked, she herself couldn't be affected by the magnetic force, but the clothes that Muir was wearing were a different matter.

(In short, if Chibi is hit by any of her attacks, the chances of her being affected by the other girl's magnetic force are high.) (Hihiro)

If that occurred, it would become a disadvantage in the battle to come. Simply put, Eonis would freely be able to attack her with forces of attraction or repulsion.

(.....whether or not you can realize that early on will be the deciding factor in the match, Chibi.) (Hihiro)

Hihiro sent a glance towards Muir as he did his analysis.



## Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 174: Muir's Struggle

“Haa haa haa...”

Muir had been desperately dodging her opponent Ionis' yoyo attacks. She had been forced to move intensely, and her stamina was being expended.

(But because of that weapon, she can't close in at all...)

Because of the irregular movements of the yoyos Ionis had equipped on both hands, dodging was all she could do, and approaching was unthinkable.

“It's about time to end this. I knew I didn't have to be worried, but Shublarz-sama has it quite easy with two on one as well.”

It seems she wanted to finish things with Muir already, and head off to aid Shublarz. Again, she moved both arms to send her yoyos flying.

“Even I won't be beaten so easily!”

She reached her hand to the holder she had hung on the back of her hips, and took something out. Like Ionis, she made a show of brandishing something in both hands, and throwing.

Chink!

The Yoyo, and whatever Muir threw collided, and a metallic sound rung out. Both of their thrown weapons returned to them.

“... So that is your weapon?”

Ionis looked at Muir's face as she spoke.

What Muir had seized in both hands were metallic discs with holes in the center, and blades garnishing the outsides. Chakrams.

She had caught them as they came back, but seeing through the movements of, and catching a weapon that spun at high speeds like a chakram would require quite a bit of training. From how she was casually wielding them without problem, one could understand just how desperately Muir had practiced with them.

“They’re called 《Koen》 ! Here I come!”

(TL: The Kanji for Koen spell out crimson, and circle.)

She held her breath, and tossed her two 《Koen》 once more. There truly were red ornaments on the center of the blades, so as they spun, they looked like red circles deserving of the name.

With irregular movements, the 《Koen》 flew at Ionis. But Ionis directed her yoyos to the ground, and lowered them.

“It’s impossible.”

The 《Crimson Discs》 suddenly fell from the air to the ground. And without directing themselves at Ionis herself, they collided with the yoyos.

“Eh!?”

What’s more, they didn’t fall off. As if they had been caught on flypaper, they remained stuck fast to the yoyos.

“W-why...?”

She was thrown into confusion, unable to understand why such a phenomenon had happened.

“So these weapons are called 《Crimson Discs》 . A good name.”

“ ... ”

“But Io’s 《Kaijin》 are also amazing.”

She stuck out her chest as if to brag. It looks like the yoyos were named 《Kaijin》 , but Muir didn’t have the time to care about that. She was in the middle of questioning what it was that had just

happened.

(That weapon's characteristic? No, that doesn't feel right... it's like some magical power is...)

She could only think about what she had seen, and she didn't have sufficient information yet. So first, in order to determine what Ionis had done, Muir took out a small knife she had hung at her waist, and threw it.

But Ionis quite easily dodged it.

“...”

“No matter what you do, it won't work.”

She started to swing 《Kaijin》 down at her like a lasso.

“Be done in by your own weapon!”

The 《Koen》 that had stayed stuck to 《Kaijin》 even when it had started to spin suddenly separated, and flew towards Muir.

“That's your mistake!”

Muir's face lightened up a little, as she narrowed her eyes, and stood ready. She skillfully caught the two chakrams heading towards her. The moment she had thought she had regained her weapons, Ionis surprised her with her next actions.

《Kaijin》 were approaching before her eyes. She had probably attacked in the gap of time after throwing 《Koen》.

“Ku!?”

Not wanting to be hit, Muir jumped to the side. But...

“Gu, Kyaah!”

Mysteriously, the yoyos made a right turn in midair, and continued to chase her. She was somehow able to defend with her 《Koen》, but as her footing was unstable, she was thrown into the air.

But there, Muir saw it. The 《Kaijin》 remained attached to her 《Koen》. Normally, it wouldn't be strange for the two to separate on impact, but as if that flypaper phenomenon was carrying on, they remained attached.

(... S-so that's how it was... that's why that knife was...)

When it seemed that she had figured something out, the yoyos finally went to return to their owner. A little unsteady, Muir rose, to get confirmation.

“Fuu~... I got it.”

“Hmn?”

“Y-your magic... it's something that creates a magnetic attraction in objects you've touched once before, isn't it?”

Ionis quite obviously twitched.

“W-wHaT CouLd yOu Be talking aBout? Io dOeSn't UnDerStaNd.”

Her unrest was clearly visible. On her much-too-blatent change of attitude, Muir was slightly taken aback.

“IO DoEsn't UnDeRstanD WhAt this MaGnetIsm is. Io DefnateLy isN't a 《Magnetic Magic》 UsEr.”

Sweat started to gather on her brow, and her speech was falling in level.

“If you're that flustered, it becomes quite obvious, you know...”

U...uu...”

She gave an embarrassed frown.

“... How did you figure it out?”

“The knife.”

“Knife?”

“Yes. You attracted the 《Koen》 without trying to dodge, but you avoided the knife I threw after. ”

“... Ah.”

Ionis opened her mouth, as if to say oh crap.

“Also, in that previous attack, your weapon remained stuck to my 《Koen》 for quite a while, so it was clearly strange. And before that, the way your weapon turned strangely got me caught up on it. It was as if they were being drawn closer by my own... Like a magnet.”

“... That’s all?”

“The truth is, my master told me there was a user of that sort of magic in the past. And so, I was able to arrive at the answer surprisingly quickly.”

Since Hihiro had told her that knowledge could become a splendid weapon, Muir ended up reading numerous books over the past half-year. And what she didn’t know, or had questions about, she assertively brought up with her master Ralashik.

“... Amazing. Well done.”

Ionis started hitting her hands together in pure admiration.

“I never thought you would see through it.”

“And so, it looks like it would be best if I don’t use 《Koen》 against you, unfortunately.”

As she said that, she quietly placed them on the ground. If she kept them, she would become a moving target.

“Ah, if it was going to end up like this, I should have poured my magnetism into you the first time my attacks hit.”

“As, as I thought, you didn’t use it at that time. If you had, I wouldn’t even be able to dodge your attacks now.”

“Yeah, in truth, I was sure I would be able to beat you quite easily.”

“I-I see...”

It seems she was in shock at how much she was being taken lightly.

“But it was a failure. A mistake.”

“Eh?”

“... Can I hear your name?”

“Ah, yes. It’s Muir. Muir Castrea.”

“Muir... yep, I’ve remembered it. It is called Ionis. You can call Io Io.”

“Eh, ah... yes. Io...san.”

“Io is fine. And honorifics aren’t needed. Io will also call Muir Muir.”

“... Underst... no, I got it, Io-chan.”

“..... Io-chan... First time I’ve been called that.”

For some reason, Ionis’s face turned a deep red.

“Ah, wawawa, I’m sorry! Was that... too intimate?”

“No! That’s fine. It was just a little surprising.”

“Hwah... G-good...”

Muir put her hand to her chest, and took in a deep breath.

“But Muir, from here on, I’m not holding back. Io goes after opponents she’s recognized at full force.”

“... Yes, I’ll also put my all into it, Io-chan!”

They faced one another.

“《Fang of Lightning》!”

From Muir, a pillar of lightning was emitted.

“That won’t hit!”

Io lightly dodged, and threw 《Kaijin》.

“It’s the real deal from here on!”

This time, from both of Muir’s hands, several soap bubble-like things emerged.

The moment 《Kaijin》 hit them, the bubbles suddenly grew bigger, and enveloped it.

Within them, a fearsome amount of electricity discharged, and the yoyo’s movement halted.

“It’s 《Lightning Void》!”

The bubbles also flew towards Ionis.

“Good job!”

Ionis admired Muir’s attack, as she avoided it magnificently once more.

“A-amazing...”

The sight of her getting off without a scratch made her unintentionally let out her voice at the girl’s dodging ability.

“This time I’ll touch you directly, and send in magnetism!”

Ionis rushed directly at Muir. From how she easily discarded 《Kaijin》, it didn’t seem that she was all too dependent on her weapon.

The way she remained calm after having her weapon taken was fitting of a captain with an army left to her.

Ionis’s speed was high, and at this rate, like the first time, Muir was

going to easily take a kick. And if her body was polarized, her own body's movements would be completely taken over, so she wanted to stop that no matter what.

But she didn't have her weapons either. She was frantically moving to dodge, but continuing to avoid her was difficult. Finally, Ionis's fist was able to seize Muir's left shoulder.

The moment she felt she had the advantage in the match...

...

The moment she touched Muir's body, a pain like static electricity assailed her body, and...

...

A large electrical discharged centered around Muir's body manifested.

"Guh!"

Ionis immediately jumped back to gain distance. And with her body feeling numb all over, she looked at the girl in front of her in surprise.

The reason was that on the top of Muir's head, her beast ears had changed shape into wings. Even now, a large quantity of electricity was being released from her body.



## Chapter 175 – Two vs. Two

(Uu~ I used it.....but if I didn't, I probably would've been taken out.....) (Muir)

As Muir regretted having to use this technique, she bitterly gazed at Eonis, who had forced her into using it, against her better judgement. At the same time, she felt vexed at having been unable to deal any serious damage despite having to use it.

Usually, upon activation of the 《Thunderclap Inversion》, all nearby people would fall prey to the resulting electrical discharge, but Eonis, having promptly sensed the danger in an unbelievably short period of time, quickly left the area.

It seemed that part of the shock from the lightning had gone through her, but it had practically done no damage at all. Although she had not completely exhausted her 《Transformation》, as she had planned on defeating her opponent at the time of its activation, Muir was quite unsure of what to do.

“That’s..... 《Transformation》?” (Eonis)

A question came from Eonis.

“Yup, although I still can't use it too well, I'll use it since I decided to use all my power!” (Muir)

From what Eonis could see, it seemed that Muir couldn't do a full body 《Transformation》 like Leowald. If she couldn't use it well, Eonis deducted that it likely meant that Muir could only perform 《Transformation》 on one part of her body.

“.....I'll also get serious.” (Eonis)

Eonis' aura did a full 180 as her body suddenly blurred. By the time Muir had realized it, Eonis had already reached her.

She thrust her fist towards Muir's stomach. Not only that, but surprisingly, it pierced through Muir's body. Seeing that, screams

could be heard coming from those on the Gabranth's side, but-

“.....-!?” (Eonis)

The one whose face warped the most with surprise was Eonis.

The reason for that was because , not only was no blood flowing from the stomach that she should have pierced through, but more importantly, she had clearly felt no feedback from her attack.

Bachibachi.....

“《Transformation》-!?” (Eonis)

Earlier, it had seemed that Muir's left shoulder had undergone 《Transformation》 into lightning, but currently, it was Muir's stricken stomach that had turned into lightning.

Eonis immediately attempted to get away, but-

Gashi!

Muir firmly grasped Eonis' arm with both hands to prevent her from taking it out.

“I won't let you escape!” (Muir)

Muir, feeling that she would no longer be able to catch Eonis if she let her get away here, resolutely allowed Eonis to attach her magnetism to her as she grabbed Eonis' arm with both of her non-transformed hands.

“Ku-!” (Eonis)

“With thissss!” (Muir)

A fierce electrical discharge gushed out from Muir's body.

“Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhh!” (Eonis)

Eonis raised a shriek at the intense pain that ran through her.

Muir also shut her eyes firmly, as she desperately mustered

strength from her body. She grit her teeth, with the intention of continuing like this until Eonis became unable to battle.

Doga!

“Auu!” (Muir)

Suddenly, 《Kaijin》 came flying and hit Muir’s arms. Because of that, Eonis, who had been released from her restraint, used all her power to take some distance from Muir.

“Haa haa haa.....” (Eonis)

“Uuu....” (Muir)

Eonis, who was breathing heavily while holding her knees, and Muir, whose face was warped by the pain in her arms. Her ears, which had transformed into wings, had also returned to their original beast-ear state.

(I-I see.....she sent her magnetism through my arm, and made that weapon come flying at it.....) (Muir)

Eonis had used 《Magnetic Magic》 on the 《Kaijin》 that had fallen on the ground, and drew it towards Muir’s arm. It was a technique that just barely allowed Eonis, whose movements had been sealed, to counterattack.

Only, what the magnetism had been sent through hadn’t been Muir’s arms exactly, but her clothes.

(B-But, for her to deal with me this calmly is.....) (Muir)

As her body should have been numb due to the lightning, Eonis had been unable to move. That was exactly why Eonis had made her weapon fly instead, commendably breaking down the previous status quo.

Muir was simply astonished at the composure with which Eonis dealt with the situation. Not only that, but Muir’s right arm which had been hit by 《Kaijin》, seemed to have received some damage to the bone, as even the simplest movement caused an intense pain

to run through it. At least for the duration of this duel, Muir would be unable to use her right arm normally anymore.

“Uu.....gu.....I was.....surprised.” (Eonis)

Though Eonis had managed to escape using the only possible method available to her, she had still received quite a bit of damage from taking the lightning attack directly.

“But.....with this, it’ll be Eo’s win!” (Eonis)

As she said that, 《Kaijin》, which had fallen on the ground, and Muir’s weapon, 《Kouen》 began to fly towards Eonis of their own accord. Then, they spun as if they had received some sort of recoil, revolving around Eonis before accelerating towards Muir at an incredible speed.

Muir tried to dodge them by running away, but the weapons began to pursue her.

“It’s impossible! Weapons that have been clad in magnetism can’t be defended against, even if you were to use 《Transformation》!” (Eonis)

Like she said, no matter how much Muir ran, the weapons continued to follow her relentlessly. And then, Muir tripped, falling onto the ground.

Muir crossed her arms in front of her in resignation, preparing to guard against the weapons as she grit her teeth.

Clang! Clang! Clang!

Someone suddenly appeared in front of Muir and repelled the weapons.

“Muir, are you okay?!” (Arnold)

“Oji-san!” (Muir)

The one who had arrived was Muir’s reliable guardian, Arnold Ocean.

Eonis, wary of Arnold, who had suddenly appeared during Muir's crisis, immediately took some distance from the two.

“.....that person should be Herbreed's opponent.” (Eonis)

As Eonis looked around restlessly, searching for her comrade Herbreed-

“I'm sorry Eonis!” (Herbreed)

Herbreed arrived at her location.

“.....Herbreed.” (Eonis)

“During the time my vision was blocked by the wind, it seems that he came over here.” (Herbreed)

Herbreed spoke as he looked at Arnold.

“Muir, can you stand?” (Arnold)

Looking at Muir's worn-out appearance and the figure of her opponent, Eonis, Arnold discerned just how hard Muir had fought.

“You really fought well. Just leave the rest to me while you.....” (Arnold)

“No, I can still fight!” (Muir)

“.....but you....” (Arnold)

She was clearly giving off the impression of having reached the limits of her stamina. Not only that, but Arnold could see that her right arm had received a pretty serious injury, making it quite dangerous for her to continue any further.

That was why Arnold had thought to do what he could on his own, until he had seen Muir's unwavering gaze.

“Thank you for saving me, Oji-san. But I don't want to be someone who is just protected all the time! That's why....” (Muir)

Muir ground her teeth as she desperately rose and stood next to

Arnold.

“This time I’m going to fight next to Oji-san and everyone!” (Muir)

The weak, young girl who could only watch from behind Hihiro and Arnold’s backs as they fought no longer existed.

Even though just standing should have been painful for her, upon seeing Muir whose gaze looked only straight ahead of her, Arnold’s chest was filled with a feeling that didn’t let him say anything back.

After murmuring, “You’ve really gotten stronger, haven’t you?” in a quiet voice, Arnold said,

“Got it! Then I won’t say that we should just hold on until Shishou defeats her opponent! We’re gonna defeat them!” (Arnold)

“Yeah!” (Muir)

The resolve of the two had been decided.

“.....it doesn’t seem like we’ll be able to take it easy on them because they’re injured.” (Herbreed)

“I wasn’t planning on doing that to begin with.” (Eonis)

Sensing Muir and Arnold’s resolve, Herbreed braced his body.

“Muir, let’s show them our combination!” (Arnold)

“Okay! I’ll cover you with my last bit of power!” (Muir)

As she said that, Muir ground her teeth while enduring the pain and raised both hands.

“《Thunderclap Inversion》!” (Muir)

From Muir’s two hands, a bobbling soap bubble was produced. Then, it skillfully avoided Arnold and began to head towards the enemy.

“Herbreed, it’ll be dangerous if you’re hit by that.” (Eonis)

“Understood. Then, Shadow Bow!” (Herbreed)

Herbreed sent a black arrow flying towards the approaching bubble. When the arrow hit the bubble, the bubble wrapped around it, releasing an electrical discharge as it stopped moving.

“I see, so we won’t be able to carelessly approach, huh.” (Herbreed)

“I want to use that.” (Eonis)

“That? It’s true that if it’s that, we’ll be able to take care of them at once, but my magic’s basically run dry, you know?” (Herbreed)

“No problem. I’ll definitely deal the final blow with that chance.” (Eonis)

“.....understood. Then....” (Herbreed)

Taking a single step backwards, Herbreed raised both of his hands high up into the sky. As he did so, a large amount of bluish-white magical power began to rise up from his body into the sky.

“What?” (Arnold)

Although Arnold also felt that Herbreed’s actions were questionable, thinking that it was convenient if he wasn’t going to move, he rushed forward to attack Eonis, who was in front of him.

“Be careful Oji-san! If you touch her even a little, then she’ll be able to send her magnetic forces through you!” (Muir)

“Something like that doesn’t matter! I’ll cut her down with all my power!” (Arnold)

Arnold swung his giant sword down upon Eonis.....but his sword suddenly avoided Eonis’ body of its own accord, and 《Kaishin》, which had returned to her feet before Arnold had realized it, collided with his sword.

“I’ve already sent my magnetism through that sword.” (Eonis)

Because he had repelled the weapons with his sword when he had

saved Muir, Arnold's sword had already fallen under Eonis' influence.

"Che! Then take thissss!" (Arnold)

Boooooon!

Suddenly, wind began to swirl around rapidly with Arnold in its center.

"Funuoooooooo!" (Arnold)

This time, 《Kaijin》 and all the other swords spun around and began to attack Eonis. She also used the gap in between that attack to immediately jump high into the air and escape.

"Like I'd let you run! 《Explosive Wind Clawwww》!" (Arnold)

He turned to the sky and shot off countless wind blades.

"Ku-!" (Eonis)

Eonis tightened her guard against the unexpected attack, but her body became covered in wounds. And then, with a small snap, the string of her eye mask was also cut.

With a twitch, she fell to the ground. As she did so, her eye mask also landed gently on the ground, and her eyes, which had been covered up until then, were exposed.

"Eonis!?" (Herbreed)

Seeing that, Herbreed unintentionally let out a shout. With that, Eonis, once again, realized that her eye mask had been taken off, and-

"Iyaaaaaaaaa!" (Eonis)

-suddenly covered both her eyes as she cowered on the ground. Upon seeing her current state, Arnold and Muir became dumbfounded as they froze.



Having seen that, Herbreed shot off some words in a flustered manner.

“Kuh! It can’t be helped!” (Herbreed)

As he did so, a giant magic circle-like figure appeared in the sky.

Herbreed swung his raised arms downwards in one fell swoop.

“Arm Shootram!” (Herbreed)

At Herbreed’s words, something fell towards the ground from the magic circle. If one were to look at it closely, that ‘something’ included numerous black swords, black arrows, black axes, black spears and other various weapons.

The many weapons poured down upon the battlefield like rain. No, more accurately, they rained down upon the place where Arnold and Muir stood.

## Chapter 176 Unrelenting Spirit

“What is going on!?” (Arnold)

Arnold was surprised by the countless number of attacks. Even if his entire body had undergone 《Transformation》, it would still be impossible to come out completely unscathed with that many attacks. Most importantly, Muir was nearby as well.

Not only that, Muir had just ran out of power from her use of the “Thunder Void Formation” skill earlier.

“Ojisan! I’m not done yet!” (Muir)

“Muir!” (Arnold)

“I haven’t given my all yet!!” (Muir)

When she said that, Muir’s beast-like ears then transformed into the shape of wings, and started sparking. Then at breakneck speed, she appeared beside Arnold.

”Ojisan!”(Muir)

“Kuh! Ahhh, fine, I got it! I’ll go all out as well!” (Arnold)

Muir transformed with a violet-blue aura around her body, while Arnold transformed with a light green aura around his body.

“Thunder Conversion!” (Muir)

“Wind Conversion!” (Arnold)

When Herbreed saw both of them transform, he shouted

“No way! They can both use the 《Transformation》 skill?” (Herbreed)

He thought that they were unable to use “Conversion” on their entire body, but the situation before his eyes proved otherwise.

While Herbreed was pondering, Muir made the first move.

“Please! Let my body maintain this! 《Thunder Void Formation》 oonnn!” (Muir)

Unlike before, numerous orbs of lightning flew out from Muir’s body.

It somehow stopped the dark weapons from flying at them but,

“I can’t hold it up for very long oojisan! Do something!” (Muir)

“Leave it to me!” (Arnold)

Arnold leapt into the air and started spinning his body.

“How is this! Final Tempest》 sssst!” (Arnold)

Wind swirled around Arnold’s body eventually converged into a large tornado. Then, the weapons were all swallowed by the large tornado

“...No way...” (Herbreed)

Herbreed who stood protectively beside Eonis was surprised at what happened before him

Then, the tornado disappeared and Arnold landed on the ground

“Damn...that hurt...my body isn’t used to it still...even now my body feels like it is in tatters...” (Arnold)

Putting in a lot of effort, Muir revealed a similar fatigued expression and desperately stood up

“Ar-are you alright? ...Muir” (Arnold)

“Nh...nh....but I’m sorry...my body...” (Muir)

At that moment, Muir dropped forward in exhaustion. Arnold barely managed to kneel down and stop her before her face was about to hit the ground.

“...Honestly, I’m surprised at your latent power” (Herbreed)

He listened to Herbreed’s compliment but,

“Still, we can’t move anymore. But, please do not lay a hand on Muir. If you want to do something then do it to me” (Arnold)

When Herbreed heard that, he laughed out loud.

“Don’t look down on us. I am not a person who would enjoy attacking a person who can’t fight anymore.” (Herbreed)

Although, he spent a notable amount of mana on the attack, it would not be hard to kill Arnold and Muir who can’t fight at the moment. But it is dishonourable to attack someone who cannot attack back, is what Herbreed was saying

“Also, we can’t leave Eonis alone” (Herbreed)

Barely conscious, Muir looked at Eonis who was crouched on the ground with her hands over her face, and said

“W-what happened....Eonis-chan?” (Muir)

However, Eonic just whispered “No, no, no, no” under her breath

Looking at her, Herbreed took a deep breath and said

“There is a significant scar on her eyes” (Herbreed)

“Eh? Scar?” (Muir)

“Yes, a scar” (Herbreed)

Arnold wanted to say, “is that all?” but he kept quiet. Then, Herbreed grimaced and said.

“You guys might not understand but, because of this scar, she was alienated from others. As a matter of fact, this scar was given by... actually, nevermind, talking more about this will be rude.” (Herbreed)

When Herbreed ended abruptly, Muir said

“That is pathetic Eo-chan!” (Muir)

When Muir shouted at Eonis. Eonis stopped muttering and looked up

“Did you expect me to say something insulting because I saw your scar?” (Muir)

Everyone remained quiet and listened to Muir.

“Even though we are enemies, I was happy! It was a desperate fight, but I enjoyed fighting you with everything I got!” (Muir)

Muir put in all her effort to walk towards Eonis while distorting her face in fatigue.

“Most people would judge a person by their beast-ears or their looks, but we are not like that! That is because we fought with all our might. Isn’t that right?” (Muir)

Muir walked and stood before Eonis as she said her thoughts outloud.

“So don’t judge us as that kind of person as well. Don’t look at me as if I would say something bad because of your scar, it is sad for me to think so” (Muir)

“...But everyone who looks at these eyes are disgusted” (Eonis)

At last she received a response from Eonis

“True, but that does not mean you are bad, it is those people who do not understand Eo-chan’s situation who are bad.” (Muir)

By fighting against her, Muir somehow understood that Eonis was pure and fair person inside.

“Muir...” (Eonis)

“Thus, ...right? Please show me Eo-chan?” (Muir)

“...No! It is definitely grotesque!” (Eonis)

“...it is alright” (Muir)

Muir put on a soft voice and said.

“But, even though we are enemies, I like you Eo-chan!” (Muir)

Hearing the response, she moved her body abruptly.

“Eo-chan...can’t be liked by anyone...right? You are also a different race so you think we can’t be friends?” (Muir)

“.....friend?” (Eonis)

“Nh, friends” (Muir)

“.....are you sure? Muir won’t hurt Eonis?” (Eonis)

“That is how we got to know each other right?” (Muir)

“.....” (Eonis)

“So...please be my friend” (Muir)

Eonis removed her trembling hands from her face, raised her head and looked at Muir

“Like I said, it is definitely better to look eye to eye.” (Muir)

A smile floated on Muir’s face. There was a large burn across both her eyes. For a girl it was definitely not something one would want to show others.

“That said, you have beautiful eyes Eo-chan” (Muir)

Eonis wasn’t blind. She used the eyemask to cover the scars. Even then she managed with blood-curdling effort to fight with all her strength.

She had large brilliant jade brown eyes. Muir moved her body and smiled pleasantly..

“There is no point in hiding it, you know” (Muir)

“U.....uu....uwaaaaaaaaaan!” (Eonis)

At that moment, tears began to fall from her eyes, and she ran toward Muir and hugged her. Muir gently stroked her head.

After she finished crying, Eonis turned away with her cheeks dyed red. It seem that she felt some shame after she cried.

“Ah! Eo-chan is so cute” (Muir)

“Mu....Muir you bully..” (Eonis)

When Herbreed saw the two, he opened his eyes wide in admiration

“I’m surprised. For someone like Eonis to be moved so easily.” (Herbreed)

“It isn’t easy” (Arnold)

“How so?” (Herbreed)

“It is only because it is Muir” (Arnold)

“.....” (Herbreed)

“My daughter is able to understand and feel the pain of another person. That is why her words were able to get through to others” (Arnold)

“.....Is that right? I see, I now understand why you were a friend of our country’s Hero.” (Herbreed)

“What? Hero?” (Arnold)

“Eeh, it is Hihiro-san” (Herbreed)

“Buho~! Hi-Hihiro is a hero!?” (Arnold)

Arnold exclaimed involuntarily.

“What-what? What is wrong?” (Herbreed)

“A-actually, well, it is that...” (Arnold)

From what Arnold remembered from the time he was journeying with Hihiro, Hihiro didn't seem to be someone that Arnold would call a Hero.

As someone who wanders the world, doing anything, even participating in a war, for food caused Arnold's face to twitch in uncertainty.

“Ah, that said it is only Eonis...only right?” (Arnold)

Arnold turned to look at Muir.

“What do you mean oojisan?” (Muir)

“No, it is only a wound, wouldn't that person be able to heal it?” (Arnold)

“.....ah!?” (Muir)

Muir stopped abruptly and thought about it

“That is right, Eo-chan!” (Muir)

Muir grabbed both Eo-chan's hands

“Hihiro can erase the burn scar that you have!”

“Eh? Hihiro...the Hero?” (Eonis)

“Hero?” (Muir)

“That is right, that Hero-sama” (Eonis)

Muir put on a puzzled expression and looked at Arnold

“If it is Hihiro, then it is possible to return your face to its original beauty” (Arnold)

“That is right! I'll ask him for you” (Muir)

“.....Can it really be fixed?” (Eonis)



Actually, Eonis tried a lot of treatments before, but none of them worked. So, she gave up.

“I’m sure of it! Hihiro is an amazing person!” (Muir)

“He is also abnormal, beyond comprehension, and an irregular monster” (Arnold)

At that moment, Arnold felt himself enter someone’s glare and shivered. He was too scared to respond to it so he pretended that he didn’t feel anything.

“Let’s do this together, Eo-chan!” (Muir)

“...If it can really be fixed then...I want it to be fixed” (Eonis)

“.....yes, but you need to prepare some sort of compensation or...”  
(Arnold)

At that moment, Arnold heard a voice behind him.

“You don’t have to worry about that. As long as a nice feast is made for him, surely Hihiro will lend you his power right?” (???)

“Uwah!” (Arnold)

Arnold jumped up in surprise and looked at the figure behind him, and saw Silva

“Y-you, what are you doing here?” (Arnold)

Then, Silva smiled and said

“Ah, I was just here to inform you that the second round was over”  
(Silva)

“...What?” (Arnold)

Being unable to understand the situation, everyone stiffened up.

## Chapter 177: Ability of a True Ace

TL: Chuck

ED: NB

“Is..... Is it over?” (Arnold)

“Yes, it has already finished.” (Silva)

Not only Arnold, but also everyone else in the surroundings had a blank look on their face after hearing from Silva that the second round had reached its conclusion.

“Wha, what are you saying?! Rather, we were still fighting even though the match had already been decided?!” (Arnold)

“Yes, that is the case.” (Silva)

“Th, then why didn’t you stop it earlier!” (Arnold)

Arnold’s shouts were only natural. If what Silva had said was true, then the match had already finished, and they wouldn’t have had to fight as desperately as they did before.

“Regarding that matter, I naturally tried to make the announcement when the duel had been decided, but I was stopped by a certain person.” (Silva)

“A-A certain person?” (Arnold)

As Silva chuckled quietly and let out a smile, he said-

“Naturally, it was someone from the winning side.” (Silva)

“R-Right! Just who is that winner?!” (Arnold)

The gazes of the four people simultaneously turned to look at Silva’s mouth.

“Well, if you look over there, then everything should become

clear.” (Silva)

After saying that, Silva gestured towards a large iceberg.

“Eh.....ah.....an iceberg?” (Muir)

“D-Did there used to be an iceberg over there before?” (Arnold)

After following Arnold, Muir also raised her voice in surprise. Though her consciousness had been faint only a few moments earlier, after she received such surprising information, she was currently on full alert.

“I-I didn’t notice it all all..... When did an iceberg like that.....” (Herbreed)

“Eo noticed just now, too.” (Eonis)

Since the two of them were completely engrossed in the battle, they failed to notice the appearance of the iceberg.

“Look veery well at the center of the iceberg.” (Silva)

At Silva’s words, everyone’s eyes strained to see the inside of the iceberg.

“.....Nn? Is someone..... inside the iceberg?” (Arnold)

At Arnold’s words, Herbreed and Eonis seemed to realize something with a start as they began to run toward the iceberg.

“Ah, oi!” (Arnold)

“Eo-chan!” (Muir)

Silva then said to the two left behind,

“Well then, let’s get going as well.” (Silva)

Surprised as well, the two tried to move their body so as to follow after them. But as expected, Muir and Arnold, who had reached their limits could not move.

“Mumu, I guess it can’t be helped.” (Silva)

As Silva waved his hand towards the ground, a black smoke manifested from his hand and gradually took form.

And that form was, no matter how one looked at it, a cycle rickshaw. One by one, Silva loaded them into the rickshaw, and as he ignored the two who were dumbfounded by his magic, he said-

“Well then, shall we go?” (Silva)

In that state they headed towards the iceberg.

“Shublarz-sama?!” (Herbreed & Eonis)

Upon seeing the iceberg, Herbreed and Eonis screamed in astonishment. It was because frozen inside the iceberg was Shublarz, who was not moving.

As Arnold and co. arrived, they froze, as though they forgot how to blink.

“Hou, looks like you’ve moved up in the world, my idiot disciples.” (Rarashik)

A rather displeased-sounding voice was directed at the two sitting in the rickshaw as they arrived. When they looked towards the source of the voice, they saw Rarashik lazily drinking sake.

“Shi-shishou?! ” (Arnold)

Hearing Arnold’s voice, Rarashik directed a sharp glare towards him, causing Arnold to shrink from the pressure.

“.....Maa, although I didn’t think you’d win in the first place, couldn’t you have fought much better than that? Aahh?” (Rarashik)

Rarashik said with a displeased expression, most probably because the pair’s battles had failed to live up to her expectations.

“For whose sake did you think I had the two of you participate together in this duel? Although you managed to team up in the end,

do it faster next time! Because the both of you are severely lacking in combat experience, didn't I teach you countless times that you had to cooperate together to make up for it?!" (Rarashik)

Arnold and Muir could not retort and fell quiet at Rarashik's sudden lecture. It was because they themselves knew that what Rarashik said was true. Particularly Muir, who had been focused on fighting by herself, the thought of joining forces had not crossed her mind at all.

As a result, when she got into a tough spot, Arnold had to jump in and save her. Had they linked up and fought together sooner, they would've had more ways to fight the enemy.

Falling prey to her desires and thinking that she had wanted to take down Eonis on her own had been Muir's mistake. Arnold, too, wanted to fight one-on-one for a while as well.

However, after battling for a while, he had realized the reason why Rarashik had Muir participate in the battle together with him, and had hastily headed towards Muir's location.

".....Haa, well did the two of you at least learn a bit from this? Especially Muir, analysing your opponent is natural, but work harder in trying to keep proper track of the situation around you. If you just keep on rushing head-on at whatever is in front of you, your growth will stop there." (Rarashik)

"Y-yes. So, sorry for that....." (Muir)

Muir spoke, clearly becoming depressed as she dropped her shoulders.

"Arnold as well, I was watching you through Yuki-chan, but you shouldn't just rely on pure strength; learn to be more flexible. Learning to predict your opponent's next move based on their slightest movements and reacting accordingly will be the next step." (Rarashik)

"I-I understand!" (Arnold)

Having been firmly scolded, Arnold involuntarily let out a sigh.

“Umm, Rarashik-dono, would you mind releasing her now?” (Silva)

Hearing Silva’s words, Rarashik promptly responded,

“Ooh, right. Well, with this, it’s our victory, then?” (Rarashik)

“Yes, that is the case. Well then...” (Silva)

Silva then inhaled deeply,

“The second round goes to the Gabranth!” (Silva)

Hearing the announcement, Rarashik snapped her fingers.

\*CRACK\* \*CRACK\* \*CRACK\*

Cracks suddenly appeared on the iceberg, which began to crumble apart from the top.

“Shublarz-sama!” (Herbreed)

As the iceberg was breaking apart, nothing was supporting Shublarz any longer, and she started falling to the ground. Herbreed moved to catch her, checking her well-being.

“.....Uu” (Shublarz)

And although Shublarz had been in the iceberg for a while, strangely enough, her body did not lose heat. If you touched her body, you could definitely feel her body temperature normally.

“Shublarz-sama?” (Herbreed)

Herbreed wasn’t sure if Shublarz had heard his words or not, but whatever the case, Shublarz slowly opened her eyes.

Then, moving her upper body and looking at the surroundings, she said with a heavy voice,

“.....I lost, didn’t I.....” (Shublarz)

“Shublarz-sama.....” (Herbreed)

“Is your body...alright?” (Eonis)

“.....Ara, Eonis? You’re not wearing your eyemask?” (Shublarz)

“Yeah, a lot of things happened.” (Eonis)

“Is that so, but first, let me say something.” (Shublarz)

Shublarz then lowered her head towards the pair.

“I apologise for not being able to win.” (Shublarz)

“Th-that’s too much! Please raise your head!” (Herbreed)

“That’s right.” (Eonis)

Having their superior lower her head to them and apologize so suddenly, the two of them became flustered, unsure of how to react.

“No, although I fought until I became beat up like this, I still couldn’t win. That’s why, I am truly, very sorry.” (Shublarz)

“Such a thing..... Rather, for not coming to your aid immediately, we deeply apologise.” (Herbreed)

“Sorry.” (Eonis)

Shublarz smiled lightly and shook her head.

“No, but I am the reason we lost this match. Thus, I want the two of you to properly accept my apology. Don’t make me embarrass myself any further, please?” (Shublarz)

“.....Understood.” (Herbreed)

“.....Okay” (Eonis)

The two affirmed with a nod.

“B-by the way, Shublarz-sama, just what in the world happened? For someone such as yourself to be defeated so quickly is.....” (Herbreed)

To further add to the point, Rarashik was nearly uninjured. Even if they had lost, Herbreed thought that it should have been a closer fight, so he couldn't believe it after seeing how apparently one-sidedly she had been beaten.

“.....Well, now I know just who the ace of the Gabranth is.”  
(Shublarz)

While saying so, Shublarz looked towards Rarashik. Noticing that, Rarashik laughed and looked back.

(TN: Not sure about this line)

“Maa, if you thought the opponent was a bad match then just give up. All the top individuals of the 『Gabranth』 were once my disciples, so I can't just go around losing so easily.” (Rarashik)

(TN: Flashback to their battle starts here)

Other than Shublarz' 《Dance Magic》, whose effect of removing the damage inflicted on the user confused Rarashik, she had already analysed her opponent while keeping up a steady attack.

However at that time, while Shublarz was dancing again so as to continue avoiding Rarashik's attacks, Rarashik had suddenly lost sight of her opponent.

“Nn?!” (Rarashik)

And then Shublarz appeared from behind.

“What-?!” (Rarashik)

Looking at Shublarz' hands, her fingernails had grown to a frightening degree. Shublarz then swung her hands down as if aiming to behead her opponent.

“Tsk-!” (Shublarz)

\*SPLAT\*



Although she had managed to brilliantly launch an attack at Rarashik's rear,

\*SNAP\*

“Eh-?!” (Shublarz)

Shublarz, who did not feel even the sensation of tearing off the flesh from her attack, concealed a frown.

“Nice try!” (Rarashik)

This time it was Rarashik who let out a kick, which Shublarz avoided, instantaneously leaving from her previous location.

Then, having taken some distance, Shublarz observed Rarashik's transformation. Her body, as if made of ice, emitted a cold chill as its color changed.

“..... 《Conversion》 , huh.” (Shublarz)

Apparently, the snapping sound from her attack a while ago was the sound of the ice breaking.

“Well then, it seems to me that your magic is the so-called Unique Magic.” (Rarashik)

“I wonder if that's the case.” (Shublarz)

The two exchanged smiles at each other.

“Kukuku, then show me the attribute of your magic.” (Rarashik)

“.....” (Shublarz)

“Using my analysis, I can more or less comprehend any magic once I see it. For your magic, it's probably a special magic relating to your footwork.....well, if it is dance magic, it's under the class where you need to do dance in order to activate it, right?” (Rarashik)

Shublarz was smiling in silence, but she was letting out a cold

sweat borne from being the target of Rarashik's analysis which was right on point.

"First of all, all the ice in the area suddenly disappeared. No, rather than disappearing.....time was reversed.....right?" (Rarashik)

"....." (Shublarz)

"Well, this much was easy to infer. In addition, my magic returned to its original form as well. Even if I threw more of my scalpels to your chest, that would have been restored as well." (Rarashik)

".....Let's continue already." (Shublarz)

"Heh, so you'll acknowledge it?" (Rarashik)

"Yeah, having been analysed to this point, it's a pretty big deal." (Shublarz)

"Wait wait, next up is that attack just now. Your sudden burst of speed, completely unlike your speed before then, it was probably because you were skillfully dancing while evading my attacks. Meanwhile, your dance this time doubled your speed..... no, rather, it amplified it several times over..... am I right?" (Rarashik)

".....That's really scary. Just what in the world are you?" (Shublarz)

Shublarz clicked her tongue at Rarashik's analytic skills. She hadn't thought that someone would be able to grasp the nature of her magic after just seeing it twice.

Her first magic didn't really turn back time; it merely projected the state of her surroundings to what they were 10 minutes before. However, that didn't mean that Rarashik's hypothesis was completely wrong.

Moreover, her faster attack speed was also because of her 《Dance Magic》. Specifically, it was the effect of her 《Ancestral Gathering Dance》.

Given the five parameters STR, DEF, AGL, HIT, and INT, this magic

allowed her to concentrate on a single parameter and boost it.

With her previous use of the magic as an example, she halved her four other parameters and increased her AGL as a result.

So if each parameter had 10 points in it, the target of the magic, AGL, would rise to 30, while the others would fall to just 5.

With that boost in speed, Shublarz launched a renewed attack. However, Rarashik sensed the killing intent behind her attack and evaded a fatal blow.

“Well, I’ve finished analysing you. Other than that, all that’s left to do is to carefully observe my disciples’ growths. Since we’re basically done here, is it alright if I call for some reinforcements?” (Rarashik)

“Eh?” (Shublarz)

“My wish, spun from blood since ancient times, come forth and manifest now.” (Rarashik)

Rarashik muttered as she chanted.

“Come, it’s Yuki-chan’s turn now, right?” (Rarashik)

Although Rarashik said such words, there was no visible change around her. The moment Shublarz thought just what Rarashik was trying to do, she suddenly felt the presence of something trembling behind her. And over there was.....

“.....A snow rabbit?” (Shublarz)

Yes, on the ground was a snow rabbit sitting.

“That rabbit’s name is Yukiouza. Well, feel free to call her Yuki-chan. But hey, is it really alright for you to just be standing there? This bunny is kinda..... scary, you know?” (Rarashik)

Yukiouza’s eyes shine with a bright red light. Yukiouza trembled again and broke off into a dash, causing Shublarz to panic and jump to the sky.

However, when Shublarz directed her gaze towards the ground to look for Yukiouza, she could not find anything there.

“.....Eh-?!” (Shublarz)

\*Whoosh\*.....

Suddenly Shublarz felt something sitting on top of her head; a small object that felt cool to the touch. “It can’t be...”, Shublarz thought, but on her head was definitely Yukiouza.

“Su- such speed?! When did it-?!” (Shublarz)

Naturally, Shublarz moved to remove Yukiouza from her head, however, when she tried to do so.....

\*PISHIIIIIIIIIIII\* (Freezing sound)

With speed that looked like it burst, Yukiouza had finished creating a large iceberg. Frozen inside was Shublarz, for whom time had stopped.

“Good job, Yuki-chan” (Rarashik)

And thus, Silva approached Rarashik, so as to confirm the state of the battle.

“.....Hmm, well, with this, the battle is over. Thus—” (Silva)

As Silva tried to announce the conclusion of the match,

“Wait for a bit.” (Rarashik)

“.....What’s the matter?” (Silva)

“I want you to hold off on announcing the results for now.” (Rarashik)

“Mumumu, but isn’t being stuck in such a state dangerous to her well-being? Although this is a ‘dead or alive’ duel, if I see a participant that can be saved, it’s my policy to do so. Moreover, this particular participant is such a beauty. Nofofofof!” (Silva)

Trying to figure out Rarashik's reasons for not wanting to stop the match, Silva sighed.

"Be at ease. Yuki-chan's ice simply freezes time. Her body won't grow cold, so there's no danger of her dying." (Rarashik)

"I see, but still, there's no harm in releasing her from the ice, right?" (Silva)

"Aah, although the match is over, for the sake of the growth of my two idiot disciples, I don't want you stopping the duel just yet." (Rarashik)

"I see, I see. Although, there's also the danger of Arnold-dono and the other one dying, you know?" (Silva)

"Fufun, if they were to die in a place like this, then that's simply the extent of those two idiots." (Rarashik)

Silva stared at Rarashik for a while, and, with a puff of his cheeks, said:

"Understood." (Silva)

"You have my thanks. Yuki-chan will head over there, so I'll be waiting here." (Rarashik)

Rarashik was able to survey the battle through Yukiouza's eyes.

'Alright. Then I'll be going to the remaining participants' original positions." (Silva)

Said Silva as he left. Left behind, Rarashik muttered to herself.

"Well, if they were such poorly trained people, they wouldn't survive this much." (Rarashik)

As Rarashik said those words, she brought out a sake bottle from her pockets.

## Chapter 178 – Considerate Friend

Translated by Anri and NB

“Now you see that it isn’t just the difference between our levels. So, see ya, I’m heading out.” (Rarashik)

She spoke those words, and then left Shublarz who lost the fight, without another word.

“Fufu, good grief~, although her appearance was that of a petite young researcher, her movements were of a natural-born soldier. What a shocker~” (Shublarz)

With those thoughts in mind, she watched Rarashik’s back moving away in the distance, and shrugged her shoulders helplessly.

“Well then, I believe we should leave as well. We must report to Her Majesty~”

Maybe because she lost the fight, Shublarz had a gloomy expression thinking whether she could still maintain her dignity.

“A-Ah, P-Please wait a minute!” (Muir)

Muir raised her voice at Shublarz’s group who was preparing to leave the area.

“May we help you?” (Shublarz)

“Ah, um... it’s about... Io-chan.” (Muir)

“Eh? Ionis?” (Shublarz)

Shublarz shifted her attention to Ionis in response to Muir’s words.

“Ah, now that you have mentioned it. Err... you are the superior in charge of that child, right?” (Arnold)

Arnold joined their conversation.

“Y-Yes, yes I am, is there something wrong?” (Shublarz)

Arnold explained to her that Hiiro could heal Ionis’ injury; her burned face.

“Eh? Hiiro-kun could restore old scars back to normal?” (Shublarz)

Although Shublarz had witnessed the scene of Demon Lord Eveam’s injury being healed before, she thought that he was only able to heal a wound that happened recently.

However, she one-sidedly judged that his powers would have no effect on past wounds, or more specifically speaking, on things such as life-long scars and illnesses.

“Well.. I think he can probably do it? Asking him personally is probably more reassuring.” (Arnold)

“.....hee, although I heard it from Her Majesty, you really do put a lot of trust on him~” (Shublarz)

Her eyes glittered; she seemed to have found something interesting.

“Y-You might say it like that. Setting aside the human nature of that guy, I believe in his strength or perhaps I should say it that I was forced to place my trust on him....” (Arnold)

His cheeks had a slight cramp when he said those words. Certainly, people who experienced Hiiro’s magic would be made to trust him against their will..... As a non-standard existence.

“Fufufu, still, can Hiiro really heal Ionis’ scar?” (Shublarz)

“I’m not sure about it but...:” (Arnold)

“Hey.” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Uwa-! Hiroooooooooooooo!?” (Arnold)

It was no wonder Arnold would be surprised. Because Hiiro, the person in question, was nearby.

“W-w-why are you here right now?” (Arnold)

“Haa? I heard you called my name, that’s why I came here.”

“Eh? We called you...”

Then, Silva who was behind Hihiro, matched eyes with him, and smiled faintly; he grasped his intention,

“AH! That’s right! Yes it it true! As a matter of fact, we have a request for you!” (Arnold)

“Request? In such a place, and at such a time?” (Hihiro)

Hihiro stared at Arnold in doubt while crossing his arms together.

“H-Hihiro!” (Muir)

At that time, Muir called out to Hihiro.

“Hm? What is it Chibi? Don’t tell me it is something you are involved as well?” (Hihiro)

“Eh, uhm, err...” (Muir)

As she looked eye to eye with Hihiro, for some reason, her face flushed red and casted her gaze downward. Although she was fidgeting, Muir suddenly looked up

“P-Please heal Eo-chan’s face!” (Muir)

“.....ha?” (Hihiro)

When Hihiro was asked abruptly he wasn’t sure what she wanted. But after listening to her story, it seemed that Muir wanted Hihiro to heal the burn scar.

“I see, that is why you called me” (Hihiro)

“U-um...can you heal it?” (Muir)

“Did I have an obligation to do something like that?” (Hihiro)



Since it was a response that Muir expected, she let out a sigh

“Hey Hiiro, you should consider helping people without compensation sometime...” (Arnold)

“Shut up, you half-corpse. Do I look like someone that would do something like that?” (Hiiro)

“Gu...fine, fine I get it...hey who are you calling a half-corpse!” (Arnold)

Ignoring Arnold’s protest, Hiiro looked at Muir.

“Hey Chibi, you know that Yo-Yo is your enemy right?” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Yo-Yo?”(Muir)

Not only Muir, but also Ionis craned her neck in a puzzled expression. Since it was troublesome to remember the person’s name, he used her weapon 《KaiJin》, which looked like the yo-yo toy in his original world as a nickname.

“Yo-Yo....” (Ionis->Yo-yo)

Ionis looked at the weapon 《KaiJin》 in her hand

“Putting the toy aside. Answer me Chibi, she is an enemy right?” (Hiiro)

“Ah, ye.....yes, but a friend” (Muir)

“Muir.....” (Ionis)

Although, her face was expressionless, she was deeply moved and stared at Muir while muttering something.

(A friend...) (Ionis)

She looked sweet and naive. But by looking at her face, her true feelings could be understood. She then look at him with an honest expression.

Hiiro move his gaze naturally to look at Ionis. She was probably

embarrassed when he looked her way and tried to hide her eyes with her hair.

“Fun, I feel there is nothing to worry about” (Hiiro)

“Eh?” (Ionis)

Even though she was unsure what Hiiro meant, something gripped her heart.

“Well, I guess girls are worried about it” (Hiiro)

Ionis diverted her gaze and looked at Muir

“Not as responsibility, or self-interest, nor rewards. You want me to help as a friend right?” (Hiir)

“Yes!” (Muir)

As if he was a master looking down on a disciple, he crossed his arms and let out breath.

“However, you also know that I’m not someone that would take action without some sort of compensation right?” (Hiiro)

“eh, ah, yes....” (Muir)

When Muir was about to give up, she look toward Arnold for answers, then Hiiro said

“Then, this time, you should prepare something delicious for me to eat.” (Hiiro)

“.....Eh?” (Muir)

Her mouth opened in surprise at Hiiro’s response.

“From what I heard, from Aoi-ribbon, you are the one that taught the old man how to cook right?” (Hiiro)

“Y-Yes.” (Muir)

“Then, make something that I can eat until I’m satisfied. That is

price.” (Hiiro)

She was a bit taken aback by the response, but eventually recovered and said

“Y,-yes! I’ll try my best to serve you well!” (Muir)

She replied with a face full of smiles.

“Oi-oi, Muir...you are thinking of something else right....?”  
(Arnold)

No one heard Arnold when he muttered the Tsukommi (quip). When he looked at Hiiro’s broad smile, punching him in the face would be a form of divine judgement, but he kept the thoughts and action to himself.

“Then lets hurry up and do it” (Hiiro)

Hiiro concentrated magic power into his finger. An enormous amount of magic was focused on his finger tips; it was so enormous that it scared Shubluarz group.

Then he wrote the words 『Restore』 and moved it toward Ionis

“Ah...” (Ionis)

When Hiiro approached Ionis, she retreated in fear, but Muir embraced her arm and said in a soft voice

“Don’t worry. Believe in Hiiro” (Hiiro)

“Muir....” (Ionis)

Whether it was because she didn’t feel safe, or she didn’t want Hiiro to see her burn scar, she turned her face away.

When Hiiro saw something like that, he let out a sigh and said

“Hey, Yo-yo, give me your hand” (Hiiro)

“Eh? Ah.....”(Ionis)

Without warning, Hiiro quickly gripped her hand. Even though Hiiro was a country Hero, holding hands with a boy for the first time caused her heart to beat faster.

“Don’t be so tense” (Hiiro)

Although Hiiro said something like that, her heart only beat faster. But at that moment, she felt something warm light up from the center of her body

“Ah...” (Ionis)

It might have been from the battle, but something warm started to spread from her cold hands.

“...it’s warm...” (Ionis)

The words came out of her mouth involuntarily. When she became aware, the fear that she felt before vanished like an lie.

She felt like she was standing in the rays of the spring sun. Soon, she understood that the feeling was caused by Hiiro’s magic flowing through her hands.

(Why? Why is this person’s magic power so warm.....it even feels pleasant.....) (Ionis)

She unconsciously raised her face and closed her eye with a pleasant expression on her face.

Then, she felt something warm touch her forehead. And then, she felt her body becoming hot. It was especially hot between her eyebrows.

However, it wasn’t painfully hot. The parts that were less hot slowly became cooler; and the fever around her eyes gradually diminished.

No matter how much time passed. One minute, one hour the strange feeling can still be felt.

Then, she heard a voice in her ear.

“It is finished” (Hihiro)

She slowly opened her eyes.

## 179th Episode – Hihiro, stand!

The first thing Ionis saw as she opened her eyes was Hihiro's blunt expression. Then Muir clapped on her shoulder, producing a 'pop'.

「Un, Io-chan is soooooo cute!」 (Muir)

A delightful smiling face was directed at her.

「Take this.」 (Silva)

Thereupon, as one would expect from a butler, Silva gave Ionis a hand mirror.

「Take a look, Io-chan!」 (Muir)

Even as Muir told her thus, she still was trembling in uneasiness as she hadn't confirmed the outcome yet. But when she looked at the people standing around, everyone gave her nods of affirmation and smiled.

Then Ionis cleared her throat and slowly lifted the mirror into the front of her face.

And there ..... there was not a single stain on her baby-like skin reflected on the mirror.

In an instant, a large amount of tears flowed out of Ionis' eyes. Muir tightly hugged her,

「Un-un, It's good..... It's good, Io-chan. 」

「Higu..... gusu..... Ueeeeeeeeeeeeen! 」 (Io) ((crying sounds.))

Everyone but Hihiro was looking at the two of them with pleasure.

After she finished sobbing, she became silent, hanging her head in shame of the embarrassment of defenseless crying.

「Thank you, Hihiro-kun. 」 (Shu)

Suddenly he got a voice of gratitude from Shublarz.

「I just did the request. If you want to thank someone, talk to the Chibi that requested me. 」

Looking at the disappointed Hihiro's attitude, Shublarz shrugs her shoulders with a smile.

「Of course I am grateful to that child, but still, let me say it. I thank you. 」

Normally her smile was voluptuous, always attracting the men around her, but this time, her smile was naturally and innocent. One could see with one glance that she truly was grateful.

「H-he truly is our hero! I-i truly was deeply moved!」 (Herbreed)

For some reason Herbreed's stared at them with sparkling eyes as he remembered his excitement over Hihiro's actions. There couldn't be done anything done against it in such a situation, but Hihiro felt that no matter how much time passed, he'd never grew accustomed to it.

As his back became itchy, he started to move in order to get away from here –

Kui..... (SFX)

He felt that his clothes were being pulled. As he looked there was Ionis, standing with her head hanging down, slightly pulling his clothes with index finger and thumb.

「..... What's the matter?」 (Hihiro)

But she didn't speak. After he waited for a while, Ionis faintly raised her face. One could clearly see that her cheeks were bright red.



「.....ank you.....」 (Io) ((she says “...gatō...” as in arigatō))

「Huh?」 (Hiiro)

Ionis chewed on her lower lip, then she suddenly gulped. She slowly opened her mouth.

「Tha..... Thank you!」

It seems she just wanted to thank him.

(.....why does it take her this amount of time just to say ‘thank you’?) (Hiiro)

It was truly incomprehensible. ((Yeah, as if.)) It wasn’t that bad to be told ‘thank you’, so he didn’t plan to investigate it any further.

Apart from that, seeing her being that desperate to thank him somehow piqued his interest and his face loosened.

「Don’t worry about it.」 (Hiiro)

Bou ! (SFX)

Misunderstanding Hiiro smiling at her, Ionis said 「.....be..... careful.....」 and turned hot.((TL-Lib.: She says 「.....あう.....なの.....」 and as the “no” is (still) just her way of speaking, it would be: あうな – doesn’t have any meaning I know of. However, あうな (difference between う and っ) can mean something like “Don’t

have an accident!” ...))

「 Oh dear... 」 (Shu)

Shublarz pleasantly smiled as she saw her getting completely embarrassed. And then Hiiro looked at Muir.

「 It seems like she suffered extremely harsh damage in her past. 」  
(Hiiro)

「 Uhhh..... well, thanks a lot! 」 (Muir) ((the “uhm” – eto – is cut into two parts originally...))

「 Why are you thanking me? 」

「 B-because you cured Io-chan for me. 」

「 If that’s the case you better respond with a delicious meal. 」

「 Y-yes! 」

Looking at her face one could clearly see that Muir was still happy about her friend’s restoration.

「 As for you, Old Man, I’m afraid to say that you might have won this round but will lose the game in the end. 」 (Hiiro)

「 W-well! That’s your fault! 」 (Arno) ((Lib. ?))

Arnold also still wanted to take complete victory, but he felt the weight of Herbreed’s and Ionis’ loss as a result suddenly awakening inside of him.

「 But well..... 」 (Hiiro)

He looks at Muir and Arnold, then focused onto Muir.

「As I've said before, the Chibi seems to have become stronger.」  
(Hiiro)

Chokon..... (SFX)

He lightly poked her forehead wearing a smile and Muir got shy. ((changed colon to full stop))

「Ehehe.....」

And yet she was laughing while joyfully touching her forehead. Looking at her smiling face, Arnold made a sullen displeased face. ((Lolicon. And doting father.))

「Such words coming from Hiiro...」 (Arno)

「What?」 (Hiiro)

「Won't you also participate? When the heck are you going to start?」

Muir was also interested in that topic and motionlessly stared at him.

「Aah, about that matter.」 (Hiiro)

The two of them focused on Hiiro's mouth.

「I'm next.」

((Hell yeah.))

---

「Muir-chan!」 (Mimir)

As her Muir came back to the camp, Mimir was rushing over with uneasiness, smiling in order to give a feeling of relieve.

「Your arm..... is it alright? 」 (Mimir)

「U-un. But it hurts. 」 (Muir) ((u-un is stuttered un=nod. Don't mix it up with uun))

「Please go and receive medical treatment immediately! 」 (Mimir)

As she frantically gave off her own feelings of worry, Muir's heart became warm. ((the author wrote Mimir's heart became warm, but as it is Mimir who is worried.... and you can easily mix them up))

「Arnold-san as well, please let your body rest by all means. 」 (Mimir)

「Thanks a lot, Mimir-sama. 」 (Arno)

Then Rarashik approached together with Leowald.

「I've seen something interesting, did that youngster do something? 」 (Rara)

As Arnold explained it to Rarashik, Leowald, who stood nearby, growled in admire.

「Hmm, so he can also do such a thing. Hihiro is really a surprising fellow. 」 (Leo)

「Haha, that guy is certainly a force full of mystery. 」 (Arno)

Hearing those words, now the first princess Kukklia also showed great interest and looked at Hihiro standing in the crater's center. ((I'm following Kiriko's index of names here. Personally, I like "Kuclear" better, but I can see why they didn't take it.

Pronunciation ...))

「The next fight will be that child? 」 (Kuk)

「Eh? Oh, yes, that's true. 」 (Arno)

Arnold directly looked at her.

「Is he really that strong? 」 (Kuk)

「Haha, in fact I don't know about his current ability. But I guess the fact that the King accepted him met my expectations. 」  
(Arno) ((Lib. ?))

「Fu ~ un..... I can't believe it. 」 (Kuk)

Certainly Kukklia couldn't see his abilities by constantly looking at the delicate figure of Hihiro, but that couldn't be helped.

「Kukklia, watch closely now. That man now, a 『Humas』, is called the 『Evila』 's hero. That strength..... I verified it with my own eyes. 」 (Leo)

「..... Understood, father. 」 (Kuk)

Leowald made a small nod –

「Now, the next ones are you, guys. We got two victories in a row, but don't lose focus until it ends. Apparently, it seems like the next opponent is going to be that hero. 」 (Leo)

「 「 「Ha! 」 」 」 ((I'd guess はっ is a military form of はい, like “Sir, yes sir!”... I left it as “ha!”))

The answer came from three people kneeling in front of Leowald. Those three men were 【Passion】's pride, the 《three beast warriors》. ((I'm not sure anymore how they were called exactly, and I'm too lazy to look it up. If you'd kindly....?))

「The combination of the three of you is perfect. You see, although I said it earlier already, you won't take your opponent lightly, will you? And even if I say this, Barid, and especially Crouch, don't worry too much.」 (Leo) ((the last sentence – I'm not sure about it...))

Two of them shortly nodded.

「Alright, see you later! Come back after you grabbed the 『Gabranth』's victory with your very own hands!」 (Leo)

「 「 「Ha! 」 」 」

... please, once again, notice that this site is a projekt for reading ahead. I do not guarantee for anything, not content nor grammar.

... got an editor now, though ^^

## 180th Episode – How to insta-kill

「 Oh? They already arrived? 」 (Silva) (Anon: stahp the question marks!) ((It isn't: sometimes you have to change it a little... but really, most of the questions aren't really questions.))

Standing next to Hiiro, Silva announced the 『Gabranth』's team for the third fight.

「 .....gross. 」 (Hiiro) ((He says ㄌㄞ – and it's an exclamation of surprised disappointment, such as yuck, ack, eeew, crap!, etc. Description directly copied from Rikai-kun.... never mind.))

Hiiro involuntarily groaned as he saw the opponent, because one of them directly stared at him with passion.

( Wait a minute, it's that Nyanko-bastard again. ) (Hiiro)

The opponent was Crouch. As she raised the corners of her mouth to a grin, her expression gave him the shivers.

「 Ah? You were also coming? 」 (Hiiro)

And as they saw the 『Evila』 arriving, even Silva was petrified with an 「 eh? 」 .

Because obviously the two who appeared to match the numbers were two common soldiers. The 《Three Beast Warriors》 furthermore didn't even know their names or faces.

Especially Barid was clearly emitting blood-thirst towards Hiiro.

「What does this mean, youngster? 」

「.....what is it? 」 (Hiiro)

「Don't play dumb. Those two aren't either army captains nor 《Cruel》, are they? 」

After seeing those two soldiers being completely restless, a blue vein appeared on his forehead.

「No matter how I look they're just normal soldiers. Doesn't the demon lord understand that the fate of her race is at stake here? 」  
(Barid)

「Of course she does. 」 (Hiiro)

「Don't make fun of me! This one match defines your future! If you lose it's our third win and it's over for you! And you dare to bring twosoldiers to such an important match! 」

As he felt like being made of a fool, or being underestimated, he angrily raised his voice as his face got completely red.

「Haa, I'm not messing around at all. I just judged these two would be sufficient, so I wrote their names beforehand. Well, the Demon Lord was about to refuse my proposal. 」

It seemed as if Hiiro was saying that even soldiers were sufficient as partners as long as he was fighting. Being in a team with powerful guys was a pain in the ass, so he proposed putting quiet soldiers in his team.



Of course not only the Demon Lord, but also everyone else was against it. After all it was the match that would decide the fate of the country. They decided to take someone strong to increase the probabilities of winning even a little.

But Hiiro wanted soldiers no matter what. He said he wouldn't participate otherwise. The Demon Lord Eveam could only reluctantly nod to his word afterwards.

「..... so you mean that you can win against the three of us just with those two cowardly soldiers in your team? 」 (Barid)

「That's right. 」

As he was told this directly, Barid clenched his teeth.

「Hohou, I will make you regret this. Both you, the 『Humas』 and former outsider who suggested this, and that idiotic Demon Lord who acknowledged your proposal! 」 (Barid)

As he growled and glared at them, the soldiers behind Hiiro couldn't help but be taken aback by the huge pressure he emitted.

「The price of underestimating us will be high! 」 (Barid)

「..... don't look down on us. 」 (Putis)

「Nyahaha! You really nyonly do interesting things, Hiiro..... uun, Tarou? 」 (Crouch)

After Barid and Putis spoke Crouch opened her mouth, and Hiiro opened his eyes a little as he heard her words.

「 ..... so you noticed? 」 (Hiiro)

「 Nyahaha..... I wanted to meet you nya..... 」

「 But I didn't want to meet you. And my name is Hiiro. Tarou was an alias. 」

「 I knyow. I just said to confirm it nya 」 ((...she could at least stop that nyan-talkin' ...))

Her former grinning mouth distorted.

「 But at that time you became completely white of exhaustion, how does it come that your condition is recovered now? 」 (Hiiro)

「 Thanks to you nya. Also nya, this form, was simply made with my power from the start nya 」

「 ..... in that case the white form is your original shape? 」

It seems that the white form is Crouch's true form. (lib.)

「 Exacly-nya. You wanted to know why I have that form-nya. 」

「 Aah, I'm not really interested so it doesn't matter. 」

「 Nyaaattt!? 」

After Hiiro refused her so easy, her shoulders dropped in disappointment. Then Crouch's height started to gradually shrink as her black hair became completely white. (Anon-senpai: yay! loli confirmed.)(Itisn1t: wasn't it confirmed already?))

Thus she started crying, rubbing her watery eyes with her hands.

「 This is it nya! My full name is Crouch and I only turned into the form of a cool adult man to increase my presence nyaaaaa! 」 (Anon: edit – So I went to search again, and apparently, 貫録 “Kanroku” and 貫禄 “Kanroku” mean the same thing, but the former is barely used. Guess which of those he used? At least I've learned something new) ((Itisn1t: I would have had trouble with it ^-^;))

Seeing the little girl beginning to speak even though he didn't ask for an explanation, Hiiro let out a sigh.

「.....mhhhh.」 (Hiiro) ((It isn't: He said あつそ = lackadaisical, noncommittal reply. Once again rikaikun.))(Anon: lib. Pissed-off "thank you" to an unnecessary explanation)

「Why do you have no little interest nyaaaaaaa!」 (Anon: lib. she starts to go full nya mode at this point, I tried to make it the easiest to understand as possible, while retaining the "nya") ((It isn't: her way of speaking pisses me off -.-))

The little girl's head entered a state of panic. Certainly no matter how you look, the pressure from a while ago that felt like that of a black panther could not be sensed.

The form looked like that of a personified white cat, but however.....(Anon: lib. trying to stay as close as possible to the literal)((It isn't: well, it's as close to the original as you can get without losing it.))

「Nofofofof! This is a truly cute form! I suddenly want to give you a warm hug! Nofofofof!」

.... it only attracted the hentai's attention.

「It doesn't matter so let's start already, you perverted butler.」 (Hiiro)

「Those are some harsh words! Nofofofof!」

Hiiro could only sigh at his usual behavior. But after a single cough, Silva expressed a resolute attitude.

「Then, are you ready?」 (Silva)

Hiiro and Barid nodded.

「First, the confirmation of both participants.」 (Silva)

Thus Silva called their names, and each one of them replied.

「Next is the confirmation of the kings. The 『Gabranth』 side's king is Barid-sama. The 『Evila』 side's king is Hiiro-sama. There is no mistake, right?」 (Silva)

Again, both of them shake their heads vertically.

「Well then, third match..... Staaart!」 (Silva)

Thereupon Crouch immediately rushed out as if repelled by something, trying to attack Hiiro. However....

「Uguu!?」 (Crouch)

Suddenly she crashed into the ground as if being made to cling to it. Cracks opened on it as Crouch desperately tried to move but couldn't get free.

「Nya..... nhyat is this.....!?」

Of course her current situation was Hiiro's doing. He previously wrote 『Gravity』 without anyone realizing it. 重力

As effect of the word he was able to control gravity. As it met the

approaching Crouch, she was burdened with the power of the surrounding gravity being multiplied by ten or even more.

「Crouch! 」 (Barid)

Barid screamed , but –

「It..... it nyurned out like this..... 」 (Anon: lib.) ((Itisn1t: no other way than lib. with “nya nya” all the time...))

Then Crouch’s shadow expanded and her body began to be sucked in by it. As over half of her body already was inside of it –

「That’s what I was waiting for. 」 (Hiiro)

Hiiro released the word 『Restraint』 towards the shadow. As some electrical discharge phenomenon crackling sounded, Crouch stopped sinking. 拘束

「Nyaa!? Move nya-i-nyaaaaaaaaa! 」

Both her arms and legs felt as if they were bound to the shadow and wouldn’t even flinch. Hiiro dispelled the effect of 『Gravity』 and slowly walked to Crouch’s side.

「..... that’s the first one. 」 (Hiiro)

Barid and Putis stared at him. After Crouch had her movements restrained this easily, the wariness of both of them increased to the maximum.

「Don't lower your guard Putis! That boy really is a threat! 」

「.....got it. 」

Putis, who was wearing a bear costume gave a deep nod. (Anon: lib.)

Then Hiiro used 『Luminescence』, creating a light strong enough to blind everyone in the vicinity. 発光

In an instant, both of them jumped back at the same time to distance themselves, but at the moment Putis landed she felt a shocking sensation of discomfort at her foot.

「I cannot move? 」 (Put)

In a split second, Hiiro shot the word 『Adhesion』 towards the ground. The ground Putis was stepping became like birdlime and stole her movement. 粘着 (Anon: Birdlime again? Author-san, you've got some problems...) ((Itisn1t: so damn right ...))

「.....!? 」 (Anon: lib.) ((Itisn1t:... I did the exactly same thing and wouldn't have said it's lib. ...never mind.))

As she realized that the previous light was a distraction to prepare for this, she clenched her fist in frustration.

「..... and that's two down. 」 (Hiiro)

Then he looked up at Barid who was flying without landing on the ground.

「Dammit! Then I'll get serious as well! 」 (Anon: death flag incoming)

Barid's face stiffened as he wagered the moment to attack Hiiro, but –

Gashii.....

Suddenly his head was grabbed from behind.

「Wh-when did you..... no, more importantly.....」 (Barid)

Barid looked down, and Hiiro was definitely standing down there. Of course he would be curious about who was behind him. However –

「With you that's three down.」 (Hiiro)

Hiiro's voice entered his ears from behind. Then Barid made a startled expression, power started to escape his body, his consciousness sinking into darkness.

---

What Hiiro did was actually something pretty simple. Hiiro, who was thinking of defeating each of them individually started by defeating Crouch, who knew of his power. (Anon: lib.)

That's why he used 『Gravity』 at the moment she came towards him, stopping her movements first. Because she was the only opponent who could use shadows, he thought she would try entering them to escape.

Thus while she was in the middle of entering them, he would use 『Restraint』 to stop her movements completely. Then next, he used 『Luminescence』 to distract them. But then for Putis, Hiiro was thought to only have used 『Adhesion』, but in truth he did one more thing.

What he used was the same as before with Rarashik, 『Shadow Clone』. 影分身 (Anon: shadow clone. yup, written the same as 'that') ((It isn't: please, don't mention it.)) Then, leaving only the clone's body, he hid his presence with 『Invisibility』 and got away from there. 隠形

After succeeding in stopping Putis' movements

with 『Restrained』, Hihiro turned his attention to the remaining Barid. Of course, this is only what the clone did.

His main body then used 『Transfer』, approaching his opponent's back in a split second, grabbing his head and using 『Faint』 to steal his consciousness. 気絶

To be honest, this had to be executed quickly. Because, even if 『Restrained』 and 『Adhesion』 were used, if they used 《Conversion》 and cut their arms and legs, they could release their bodies.

He needed to be careful this time, because if this happened, defeating them would likely become a pain in the ass. Thus Hihiro used a single, quick series of moves. (Anon: lib.)

In truth, it was surprising that it went so well this time, but it was miraculously a victory with all participants unharmed, thus being an outcome that made Eveam raise her hands in happiness.

For all of that this match was definitely –

「The third round is the 『Evila』's Victory!」 (Silva)

— Hihiro's overwhelming victory.



## 181st Episode – If you think about it, she is just a little girl

((Lib. よく考えれば幼女ばかり – one of some possible translations.))

「No..... no way.....」 (Kukklia)

It was just Kukklia murmuring, but it was like a cry inside the mind of every single one of the 『Gabranth』 group.

In addition it was just to be expected. The 『Three Beast Warriors』, the pride and the greatest strength of the 《Gabranth》, were defeated without fighting in a matter of minutes. Moreover, it was done by only one person, a mere juvenile.

But as it didn't happen by mere chance, some of them weren't surprised. Muir and co. knew Hiiro's extra-ordinariness and the current situation just solidified their opinion.

「F.....fa.....ther?」 (Kukklia)

Kukklia only shot those words into the air, not even looking at Leowald standing next to her.

「Th-this is..... that person's..... strength?」 (Kuk)

「.....」 (Leo)

Leowald just stared at Hiiro, making a stern face, not answering in the least.

「..... that's right.」 (Muir)

Thereupon Muir seriously answered her. Kukklia also turned around and faced her.

「This is..... Hiiro-san now.」 (Muir)

However, Muir also admired just how much Hiiro seemed to

have grown in the meanwhile. ((Lib.)) Then, the sound of deeply breathing in can be heard from Leowald.

「.....Kukuku..... Gahahahahahahaha! What a guy! To treat the 《Three Beast Warriors》 like little children! Gahahahahahaha!」 (Leo)((seriously, that laugh gives me the shivers.))

And in his eyes, the face of Mimir still being befuddled is reflected.

「Oh? What's up, Mimir?」 (Leo)

「.....」 (Mimi) ((I know its “Mimir” – but I shortened it. Deal with it))

「Nh? Mimir?」 (Leo)

She certainly was mentally slowed down, but her cheeks were stained red as if she was totally impressed. And as his words finally reach her, Mimir returns to sanity.

「Ah, father.....」 (Mimi)

「What was it, Mimir? Admiring the brave figure of your future husband?」 (Leo)

「Fa-father!」 (Mimi)

She raised her voice as steam flows from her head. And as he slowly turns his attention towards Kukklia –

「Kukklia, you think it isn't your problem at all, do you?」 (Leo) ((ED: found a double negative so I eliminated one))

「Heh?」 (Kuk)

「If you're pleased with him, I'm prepared to greet him as husband for both of you.」 (Leo)

「Na-nanananananana!」 (Kuk)((honestly, I don't know no other way.))

In that Moment, Kukklia got a bright red face and started stuttering, helplessly opening and closing her mouth. Mimir also hung her head and made an embarrassed face.

And yet another girl felt uneasy inside as she was just a single person. This girl was Muir, and as he saw it –

「 Hii! 」

Arnold screamed unintentionally. ((Lib: the last three lines were actually one full sentence without direct speaking, but ... it's better this way.))

---

That was because a black aura seemed to emit from around her.

「 I-it's no good! 」 (Muir)

Not being able to stay patient Muir entered the conversation. Leowald first had a blank look, but seeing her facial expression a grin creased in the corners of his mouth.

「 Hohou, it seems like that guy shouldn't be underestimated. No way, is it really like that, Mimir? 」

As he ascertains Muir's feeling from Mimir as well – ((ED: "Muir's feeling in Mimir" gives me a totally different impression than this one))

「 Th-that..... 」 (Mimi)

「 Gahahahaha! That reaction tells me enough already! 」 (Leo)

Laughing happily, he returns his line of sight to Muir.

「 I see, in that case it's a simple negotiation. Muir will just take Hihiro as her husband as well. 」

「 Hohe..... heeeeeeeeeeeeeeee! 」 (Muir) ((and again, I don't know how I should change this. The "...eeeeeh" is pronounced like the e in edge – just extremely prolonged.))

---

It seemed as if she didn't expect that proposal as she cried and made a similar expression as Kukklia before.

「What are you surprised about? I think it is only natural for us 『Gabranth』 to take possession of our loved ones. And furthermore, it's a matter of fact that strong men are surrounded by a lot of women! Well, I myself loved just one person in my lifetime, but never mind that! Gahahahahaha! 」 (Leo) ((... I like this idea. And afterwards I take Io-chan for myself as she isn't included here ^-^)) -----  
-----

So to say polygamy was likely less recognized in 【Passion】. ((As in: They don't particularly care.))

「Wa-wait a minute, Papa! D-don't go and decide on our husband on your own accord! 」 (Kuk)

「Kukklia, didn't I tell you to call me father already? Leaving that matter beside, don't you favor him, a man of that caliber? 」 (Leo) ((Lib↓))

「Eh, ah, that.....that is.....」 (Kuk)

((con: "didn't I tell you to call me 父上 (Chichiue) or 父様 (Chichi-sama) already": both mean father in a really polite and kinda impersonal way. And "Mr. father" would be just stupid.))

Glancing at Hihiro by accident, her cheek gets dyed with a swoosh.

「S-so, as I said previously, I only want to be with the person I fell in love with! 」 (Kuk) ((actually, she didn't say marry.)) (( ED: took the word marry out))

「I know. So let's not put you under pressure. Moreover, maybe you'll even fall in love with Hihiro? That being said, as you're a descendant of mine, I guess you're already a little bit attracted to him. 」 (Leo)

As Leowald fixed his eyes on her with a smirk, Kukklia averted her face with a pout. ((TL: フイツ would be the pout here.)) \_\_\_\_\_  
\_\_\_\_\_

「I don't know and I don't care! 」 (Kuk) ((Tsunidere incoming.))

「Gahahahaha! Well, that aside, the matter is already settled for Mimir and Muir! At this rate, won't they surpass you at their very young age? Gahahahaha! 」 (Leo)

Hearing his words, Muir and Mimir once again became bright red and cast their eyes downwards.

And Arnold, watching this kind of conversation in silence, had his own thoughts.

( Hiiro..... what an enviable guy. )

Actually, the fact that he got the kings permission was quite shocking. ((Permission for harem.)) -----  
-----  
-----  
-----

( However, I'll absolutely not let him have his way with Muir!)

As he looks into Hiiro's direction he clearly emits thirst for blood, but suddenly his face got serious.

( However, it's entirely true, that idiot entirely surpassed us..... )

In no way he could believe how high he ascended in a mere half year, and thus he clearly received a shock. Even Arnold had been frantically training. And he was proud that he became stronger to that extent.

But as he saw Hiiro's overwhelming strength, he dropped his shoulder heartbroken. Thereupon, a hand was placed on his shoulder. It was Rarashik.

「Shi-shishou? 」 (Arno)((means “master”... as you should know

already.))

「I see, desperately trying to catch up.」 (Rara)

「.....that's how it is. Really, he runs ahead at ridiculous speed.」  
(Arno)

「However, continually being left behind, isn't it a reason to apologize?」 (Rara)((Lib))

「Certainly!」 (Arno)

His powerful gaze met her eyes. Thus, laughing –

「In that case it doesn't matter if you're strong or not. But if you truly want to stand next to him, having a half-hearted resolution won't work. However, you can say his magic is truly a habit of foul play.」 (Rara)

「Haha, you can really say that.」 (Arno)

Staring at him with immobile eyes, without fail he determined to catch up with Hihiro's strength.

---

「Funya!」 (Crouch)

Hihiro's magic was undone and Crouch escaped from the restraint. And Putis was freed as well and returned to the ground.

「It's my win again, Nyanko-bastard.」 (Hihiro) ((btw “nyanko” means kitty cat. But as it's not only a pun on her visuals but also on her way of speaking ...))

「Don't call me-nya a bastard now-nya!」 ((... and I've got serious problems with translating it.))

Thus Hihiro came to think about it again, as her current form was that of a little girl again. ((And we all know that he can't withstand to fulfill little girls' requests))

「That reminds me, you did say it was your original form. 」 (Hiiro)

「That's right-nya! Were you surprised-nya? 」

Although she spoke with utmost pride, he answered her with his basic indifferent manner –

「Well then, Miss Nyan. 」 (Hiiro)

「You are still using that-nya!? 」

As she got yet another nick from Hiiro's wicked naming sense, she certainly received a large shock.

「.....youngster. 」 (Barid)

Barid called out to him. It seems he recovered consciousness after being waken up by Putis. And judging from his mortified face one could guess that he noticed their loss.

「Why do yo call me, isn't a win a win? 」 (Hiiro) ((Lib))

「.....no, I'm not going to object to the battle. 」 (Barid)

This was a little surprising. He surely thought that they would be dissatisfied to some extend.

「We certainly were defeated by a boy. That's the result. And the result is everything that matters in battles. 」 (Barid)

「..... as one would expect from a man of the military. 」 (Hiiro)

He said it and shrugged a shoulder at the sportsmanlike thought.

「..... can I ask you one single question? 」 (Barid)

「As long as it can be answered. 」 (Hiiro)

「In case your plot failed, and you hadn't been able to defeat us individually, when it had become a fight of 3vs1 – what would you have done? 」

His question implied the two common soldiers were a force not

to be counted in this matter. Certainly, Hiiro did not choose them for war potential.

「That's right, at that time.....」 (Hiiro)

「At that time?」 (Barid)

「..... just crushing you altogether would have been sufficient. With brute force, that is.」

「And you are able to do that?」 (Barid)

「Aah, without any problems.」 (Hiiro)

Therefore Barid stared at him through narrowed eyes, but in return Hiiro only gazed at him with a feel of ease. Thus Barid's face suddenly loosened.

「I see. No, sorry, I just had one little regret.」 (Barid)

「.....」 (Hiiro)

「I just wanted to try and compete in an 1vs1 with you. Hitting each other with one's best.」

Apparently he was dissatisfied with his share. But his intent wasn't to condemn Hiiro, but rather just a desire to seriously fight him.

「That's not particularly a problem.」 (Hiiro)

「.....eh? Really?」 (Barid)

Barid was taken aback at the Hiiro's unforeseen reaction.

「Aah, but you'd have to pay compensation.」 (Hiiro)

「Co-compensation?」 (Barid)

「Of course. Who would work for free.」 (Hiiro) ((Now here is where one would use a question mark... never mind.))

「.....fufufu, I see, you have just the personality that Rarashik



described. 」 (Barid)

Being amazed he smiled wryly, quickly reaching out his hand.

「Then, until you have prepared a compensation. I'm looking forward to that time. 」 (Hiiro)

Hiiro also reaches out, and they firmly shake hands.

「Aah, but I won't do it if it's a foolish sort of compensation. 」 (Hiiro) ((such as food?))

「Haha, I will handle the matter carefully. 」 (Barid)

As it was, Barid returned back to their encampment directly. Behind him Putis followed, restlessly hobbling around.

「Go home already, you guys. 」 (Hiiro)

Immediately after they became aware that he spoke to them the soldiers became overwhelmed by the shock of Hiiro talking to them for the first time, but soon after they came to their senses and quickly bowed their head, leaving right afterwards.

And for some reason Crouch remained immobile at the spot, just admiringly looking at him.

「..... something the matter? 」 (Hiiro)

「Tarou..... I meawn, Hiiro! 」 ((じゃニヤかった ... dunno. Also you may have noticed that I'm mostly just adding the nya at the end. Better for comprehensibility ^-^))

「Ah? 」 (Hiiro)

「Become my subordinate..... 」

「Rejected. 」 (Hiiro)

「Funya ~ 」 (Nyanko)

Turned down right away her face became cheeky. ((orig: it became bigger. As in: she get's sassy.))

「Len, I already told you this the other time, but I won't work under anyone weaker than me.」

「T-to say such nya thing! You're just lucky to work under the Demon Lord-nya!」

「Wrong. I'm here just simply because of a request. In short, work is work.」

In reality he felt that staying with Maou Eveam brought him a step closer to realize Liliyn's dream.

「Fuun..... whatever-nya, after finishing this duel, come back-nya!」

「Huh? Visit? 【Passion】?」

「Correct-nya! And then join the 《Three Beast Warriors》-nya! Oh, wouldn't it become Four Beast warriors after Hiiro joins?」

As she expressed her trivial troubles, Hiiro distinctly addressed her.

「It doesn't matter, I'm not up to choose an exact permanent residence somewhere yet anyways.」

「.....is that absolute?」 (nyanko)

「It is.」 (Hiiro)

Thereupon Crouch hung her head, and as her shoulders began to tremble –

「hunyahaaaaaaaaa ~ !」 ((crying))

And suddenly she began rolling on the ground.

「Nyo way, nyo way! Hiiro should come with me-nyaaaaaaaa!」

Again she acted just like a common spoiled brat.

「Nofo..... this is exceedingly cute ~ .....」 (H-Butler)

Apparently the scene was rewarding for the Hentai Butler. But as Hiiro naturally didn't share his preferences, he solely was shocked by it.

「Huh, I'll go back.」 (Hiiro)

As he tried to do what he declared and went to leave, his waist was firmly grasped.

「Uuh ~ Hiiroooo ~」 (nyanko)

Her eyes were dripping of tears, as she emitted the attitude of a little child begging for a toy.

(Yodare Tori, Baka Deshi, Ao Ribbon, and now this one. Why is every little girl around clinging to me? ) (Drooling bird, foolish disciple, blue ribbon, and Nyanko. → he forgot Io, Muir and Liliyn... and Rarashik. Well, he probably still hasn't noticed about Muir and Io – as he is kinda blind in that regard – and Rara is just a guess. But Lily – no way he doesn't know.)) ((ED: I think he means those that like to touch him))

Even as he got the title 《God that brings down little girls》, he wasn't aware of bringing down even one. Becoming aware of being clung to or being overly relied on his respect for the title grew.

( I don't know..... I really don't know it's true meaning. )

Clearly, he don't have such hentai skills at hand to flatter little girls. ((Lib?)) ((ED:please check))

( Lolicons like Ossan and Jiisan would surely be delighted with it, however..... Practically right now the Hentai butler is enviously looking at me..... ) ((Ossan = Jiisan = “old man” = Arno&Silva))

Fixedly staring at her, rubbing her face against Hiiro's lower waist, Silva watched them.

「 .....huh, anyway, just get away already.」 (Hiiro)

「No-nyaa ~」

Thereupon someone firmly grabbed Crouch's neck.

「Funi!?」 (Nyanko)

Involuntarily she leaks a voice as her neck tightens.

「Nya..... who.....?」

At her rear, stood Putis, who should have gone along with Barid earlier.

「Pu-putis? Nhyat are you doing-nya?」

「..... come home.」

As she apparently didn't come back no matter how much time passed, Putis came to pick her up.

「Uh ~ take Hihiro as well-nya!」

「.....Selfish, no good.」

「No-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya no-nya!」

Dosuu! (SFX)

In magnificent refusal, Crouch's neck swinging from side to side is hit by Putis.

「Funya ~ .....」 (Nyanko) ((well.... spoken SFX?))

As she got an exhausting feeling like a flower about to wither, Crouch blacked out. Seeing it and finally being freed from his troublesome state at last, Hihiro –

「I survived. Thank you.」 (Hihiro)

「.....nothing special.」 (Putis)

She seemed strange, wearing that bear costume all the time, but since she helped him she probably was a pretty good fellow.

As he noticed that for some reason Putis was motionlessly staring at him –

「 .....what is it? 」 (Hiiro)

「 .....I wonder... 」 (Putis)

「 .....ha? 」 (Hiiro)

「 You..... are a mysterious person. 」

Told him that much and went back to dragging Crouch behind.  
( (ED:changed it to behind as they're going back ) )

( .....what did she.....? )

Although he met another unusual Gabranth fellow, he went back to his own camp, back to Liliyn and the others.

## 182nd Episode – Passion Raid

Two People wearing black robes entered 【Passion】. While looking at 【Passion】's symbol, the 《Tree of Beginnings – Aragorn》, one of them wore an eerie face, distorting his mouth's corners.

On the black robes the two persons wore there was a drawing on each of their backs. Well, they were just simple signs, the one being a [X] and the other one being a [□]. ((I could have said cross, but you'd think of it like the christian one or like + sooooo ...))

In this connection, the one that had been eerily laughing just now was the person with the cross-sign.

「Kehaha, As usual, it's only a stupid tree ~ .」(X) ((I don't like him speaking. Annoying.))

The cross-marked person imposingly spoke with burning sarcasm.

「Don't you think so as well ~ , newcomer?」(X)

However the square-marked person doesn't answer. Although their true identity couldn't be confirmed as their faces are concealed under a hood, judging from his voice the crossed one is male.

「Keh, you ~ are quite the bastard ~ 」(X)

Then he noticed two soldiers approaching as they grew suspicious towards the intruders.

「O ~ lala, we were completely found out ~ 」(X)

He said those words somehow delighted.

「Hey guys, are you travelers? Won't you be nice and show me your face, if it's possible?」

「Oyoyo ~ y, what strange bullshit, why should I show you my noble true face? Aah? 」 (X)

Being spoken to in such a manner, the soldier approached, strongly clenching his spear,

「Suspicious guy! Remove that hood, Now! 」 (Soldier)

「Aah, you came..... you came, you came..... 」 (X)

「Nh ? How often will you tell me that I came now? 」

Not understanding why the cross-signed man would mutter this, his distrust only increased.

「There ~ fo ~ re ~ ..... you did come after all ~ 」 (X)

「S-so what? 」 (Soldier)

「.....Kehaha. 」 (X) ((Ok, forget about Leo's laughter giving me the shivers.))

Bushu! (SFX)

The soldiers head suddenly whirled through the air. And the headless body collapsed. A blood spray sprinkled from the sky whilst the head came falling down.

As he coldheartedly looked down on the fallen head-

「Well, I guess I did tell him that he came ~ ..... that homicidal impulse of mine, though ~ 」 (X)

Once again his mouth eerily formed into the shape of a crescent moon.

「Aah, that's good as well. Now, shouldn't we quickly finish our job here? 」 (X)

The square-marked person still didn't answer. And then the citizens casually passing by screamed in surprise as they saw the bloodstained ground.

「Kehaha! Gimme more ~ ! Give me even more of that comforting voice! 」 (X)

Seeing the cross-marked man holding a blade in his hand, the people once again screamed loudly.

「That's right, shout ~ ! And remember ~ ! Washing blood with blood, this massacre is a serious thiiiiiiiiiiiing ~ ! Kehahahahahahaha! 」 (X)

More and more people gathered at the spot. Thus he sharply observed the faces of the people around as they glared at the man in return.

「Whaaat ~ ? That foolish peace is nothing but a mask ~ ..... Kehaha, oh well. I'll remind you in case you forgot it ~ . 」 (X)

Everyone watches the scene as if they were at loss of words in the face of this guy's oddness.

「This is a world of the survival of the fitteeeest ~ ! 」 (X)

「Wh-what is it!? 」 (Branza) ((well, Bransa would be more correct, but it looks better that way. Also, I'm translating offline right now, so no way to check on Kiriko's character list.))

The royal family lived in the 《Kings tree》, where the wife of Beast-king Leowald, Branza, working in the office, was currently raising her voice in surprise as a maid suddenly barged in without even knocking.

As the Maid looked really pale one could understand that the current disturbance didn't occur because of any trivial matter.

「Branza-sama.....the country..... the country is..... 」 (Maido)

「Now what is with the country? 」 (Bran)

And after the maid has taken a deep breath –

「The country, it is currently attacked by someone! 」 (Maido)



「Naa?!」 (Bran)

Branza immediately moved to a place where she could overlook the rooftops. Therefore, as she saw the scene spreading out beneath her eyes, she had her breath taken.

Here and there arose smoke from local fires, and not few people had collapsed to the ground, bleeding.

「Wh-what the heck is.....!?」 (Bran)

As she was taken aback, feeling as if she were dreaming –

「Watch out!」 (Raive) ((or Raibu or Live or whatever she was called. Arno's sister. Offline.))

「eh?」 (Bran)

Kakyiiin! (SFX)

Suddenly two people held a fierce battle behind, waking her from daydreaming. One of those two was a person all too well known to Branza.((TL: 鍔迫り合い → instead of “fierce battle”, it's rather a locking of swords in a duel, pushing forward with one's strength. Rather hard to include, though.))

「Raive!」 (Bran)

Really, it was Arnold's older sister, a long-serving maid of Beast King Leowald, Raive Ocean.

「Chi!」 (hooded person)

The person facing Raive until now jumped back from that spot. It couldn't be determined who it was as the person wore a black robe with hood.

「Huh, and even though I tried to kill that woman there at great pain...」 (X)

Hearing the voice one could guess it was a man.

「How dare you, to stop that sort of blow of mine – but well, I have to praise you a litt ~ le bit at least ~ 」（X）

The man pointed at Raive holding a kitchen knife in each of her hands. However, both of them were visibly useless now as they were clearly worn out.

「Raive! Your hands!?!」（Bran）

There was blood dripping from both of her hands.

「Kehaha! I think you can be grateful that your arm still remains ~ !」（X）

It appeared that she was able to defend against the man's previous attack, but while Raive was able to perfectly avoid being killed with her kitchen knives, but as a result her arm naturally also received damage.

Thence one could easily understand that this guy was a man of outstanding ability.

（To that extent..... It may look like this now, but Raive used to teach the ways of sword arts to Leglos and the others in the old days.....）（Bran）

She thought that if it was just an ordinary attack, it wouldn't have left a single scratch on Raive. However, probably she would easily get injured if that man truly went serious and hit her. Moreover, she already used the kitchen knives as defense in spite of that.

「Please run away, Branza-sama」（Raive）

Raive puts a cigar to her lips, not showing even a single sign of pain on her face. Even as she probably feels considerable pain, she apparently still conducted her mind to the well-being of Branza.

「We can not afford to run away leaving you behind!」（Bran）

「You are the queen! And now we stand against this enemy, but myself and the maid, we will even put our life in line in order to

protect our master's life. 」 (Ray)

「 Raive..... you..... 」 (Branza)

Thereupon, a clapping sound can be heard from the man as he applauds her.

「 All right, all right, all ~ right, splendid splendid ~ ! Thank you for taking part in that terrific deeply moving speech scene ~ . But, rest assured. I already failed in assassinating her once, but you soon won't be able to even raise your arm anymore ~ . 」 (X) ((Lib))

「 As if I'd believe such a thing! 」 (Ray)

Raive strongly gripped her kitchen knives still looking worn-out.

「 The truth is ~ , I just came to do the job. Moreover, killing the queen just entered the plan ~ 」

「 ..... the plan? 」 (Branza)

Branza muttered.

「 I just came here to say hello ~ . But as I saw your face, I just suddenly felt like stabbing someone ~ ..... Branza King. Or should I say, Branza König-sama ~ 」 (X)((Btw “König” is the german word for King. Not that much of a change...))

Branza made big eyes, her mouth getting dry in an instant.

「 .....how do you know the name König? There is only a small handful of people in this country who knows this name..... 」  
(Branza König)

Raive frowns as she also didn't know anything about this.

「 Kehaha, didn't you notice ~ it yet ~ ? Even though – hooray – we do meet again for the first time after years ~ . 」 (X)

Thus, as Branza finally discovers some sort of breathtaking information, she gets taken aback.

「No.....no way.....」 (Bran)

「Branza-sama?」 (Raive)

Worrying about Branza being completely shaking, laying bare, Raive called out to her, but Branza is just too preoccupied with motionlessly staring at the man to even think about answering.

「Kehaha, that's right, It's me.....」 (Me) ((seriously, it's dumb to introduce yourself with "I'm just me."..... wait, I did that myself not too long ago...))

The man raised his arm to remove the hood, exposing his true face to them. And then Branza's expectation was fulfilled, leaving her at a loss of words similar to terror as her concerns became firm.

The man had an aloof uni-sex hairstyle, the color being particularly unusual, having black and white spot patterns standing out.

「.....Kokurou.」 (Branza)

As he heard Branza's murmur, a grin slowly began to crease on the face of the man called Kokurou.

So, here is the second thing I mentioned above. You remember, as I said "never mind, have fun"? So, here it is: Black and white patterned hair ... being an acquaintance of the Gabranth queen ... is it just me or does this person seem like the one Mustache baron is looking for?

ED: As my brain isn't functioning well yet, I still tried to edit this. Will probably edit this later again as I am busy with college work.

LastEdited: 12:34PM [GMT + 8]

## 183rd Episode – The puppet Taishi

((it's funny, as I didn't know it was Taishi's name my first trans was "The puppet's ambition"...))

「Kehaha! That's right, I'm Kokurou ~ ! Kehaha! 」 (Kuro)

Sticking out his tongue like a complete fool the man turned around, now facing them.

「.....is that the reason for you to be here? If you only do such things, how dare you came back that nonchalantly! 」 (Branza)

「I thought I said it already ~ ? I'm working ~ ! 」 (Kuro)

「.....if dead father saw you now, he certainly would be grieving because of you. 」 (Bran)

「Ke, don't tell me stories about a father that was killed long ago. Does murder make you nervous ~ ? 」 (Kuro)

The unthinkable amount of he blood lust in the air was almost stirring. However, as one could think that most of the blood lust settled down for an instant –

「Well yes ~ , I nearly planned on killing you a moment ago, but you don't need to show resentment to that degree ~ . Where is..... 」 (Kuro)((Lib.))

「.....my husband, you mean? 」 (Bran)

「Kehaha..... I'll definitely kill that guy without fail as soon as I spot him. ~ 」 (Kuro)

「If that's the case, why didn't you come to kill my husband then? Even more, shouldn't even someone like you be afraid of my husband and the 《three beast warriors》 ? 」 (Bran) ((Lib.))

「Who would be scared by those people ~ ! The plan is the plan ~ ! Just now I'm under that guy, carrying out his scheme, meanwhile

having this convenient time ~ 」（Kuro）

「..... that's a surprise. That a person like you would take orders from someone else... 」（Bran）

「Did you misunderstand me? It's just by chance that I follow his orders, as our interests match, and moving is the last resort ~ . Of course I'd only work for myself ~ 」（Kuro）

「You're still the same self-centered thinking Kokurou. 」（Bran）

「Ha, I thought that's the proper behavior for Gabranth ~ 」（Kuro）

As they mutually stared at each other, Kokurou suddenly noticed something as his eyes narrowed and a smile floated across his face.

「It seems like the job was perfectly done. 」（Kuro）

「.....what..... 」（Bran）

Hearing his words, Branza looked where Kokurou's line of sight was previously directed at. There was the pride of 【Passion】, the 《Tree of Beginning》Aragorn. But in the next moment –

Shuuuuuuuuuuu..... (SFX)

Suddenly a lot of the overgrown green of 《Aragorn》 withers, taking the shape of a dead tree in winter.

「W-what the-!? 」（Branza）

Her cry was involuntary. It was due to 《Aragorn》 being a big tree covered with fresh green leaves all year round. The leaves hadn't withered even once until now.

For this reason of course she became increasingly confused as the situation occurred now.

「Kehaha, the honored me is going home now ~ 」（Kuro）

Before they became aware of it, Kokurou already jumped upon a branch above, but hearing his vice she came to her senses, sharply

looking at him –

「W-what the heck did you do, Kokurou! 」 (Branza)

Before Kokurou had met with Branza, the person with the square on their back that came to 【Passion】 along with Kokurou was heading towards a building, lurking in the shadows, concealing himself, whilst Kokurou was wandering around, destroying one building after another, keeping the citizens' attention with his behavior. ((That's a long sentence... hope I didn't forget anything.))

While skillfully concealing himself, he reaches his destination – the 《Tree of the beginning – Aragorn》. Screams were to be heard from around. Probably Kokurou had claimed peoples' lives mercilessly.

But now he himself couldn't help but do it even as he wasn't in high spirits. He couldn't afford to neglect it. Really, he couldn't afford to fail.

Then, as he arrived at the foot of 《Aragorn》, there stood a little boy nearby. His Kemonomimi were twitching lovely.

Thus, as the boy looked into his direction –

「Hey hey, did something happen? 」 (Boy)

Seemingly he wasn't aware of what was happening in the country yet. And as he didn't get an answer –

「Tee-hee, whatever. Hey hey, do you know? This large tree, it is our guardian deity. 」 (boy)

「..... 」 (Square)

「So ~ everyone loves this tree ~ 」 (boy)

Then suddenly there was a explosion to be heard in the vicinity and a building began burning. Hearing the explosion, the boy flinches.

「.....get away from here. 」 (Square)

「 Eh? 」 (Boy)

Having told him that much, the person takes a dagger out from under his robe. From the dagger a sinister-looking dark red aura radiates. Seeing the dagger, the boy's expression shivers.

He turns the dagger towards 《Aragorn》 and prepares to stab the tree.

「 Eh..... w-what are you doing? 」 (Boy)

Of course the boy raises his voice in question against the square-marked person. Its eyes are shaking in uneasiness. But the man just gnashes his teeth –

「 ..... I'm sorry. 」 (Square)

And with this he strongly pierces the dagger into 《Aragorn》 .

「 AAAH!? 」 (boy)

Hearing the boy's scream, he motionlessly stares just as before as the dark-red aura dwells in the dagger and continues to move as if injected into 《Aragorn》 .

「 W-why did you do thaaat!? Hey, I asked you somethiiiiing! 」  
(boy)

The boy grasped his robe and shook it, but he just continued to ignore him. After some time, the appearance of 《Aragorn》 changed.

The beforehand brilliantly green leaves began to change in color, getting burned brown like a withering leaf. Having seen the changes, the child stiffly stood there with open mouth and eyes, unable to do any more.

Thick branches that once were full of vigor now would seemingly break like small pieces of wood once you applied some force upon them.

「 Hey! What does that mean!? 」 (Boy)



Of course he'd ask the reasons why the person had created this situation. However, the person solely was entrusted with doing his job and didn't know why he had to produce this situation.

With this he surely had accomplished his task and felt relief, but at the same time seeing the child's sorrowful face hurt his heart.

( But if I hadn't done it..... ) (square)

He shakes his fist while gritting his teeth within the hood.

Thereupon somebody descended from above.

「 Apparently the newcomer has finished his job ~ 」（Kuro）

It was the man called Kokurou.

「 Hey hey, Onii-chan! Those people there were bullied! 」（Boy）

Kokurou was showing his face. And as he had Kemonomimi on his head as well, the boy relied on him. But that was a mistake.

「 Aaah? Shuddup, brat ~ 」（Kuro）

Baki! (SFX)

Without pardon he raised a kick against the boy.

「 Stop it! 」（Square）

Involuntarily the square-signed man shouted towards Kokurou, catching the boy as he fell from the sky.

「 Uuh..... 」（Boy）

「 Are you okay? 」（Square）

「 Uh.... 」（Boy）

The person turns towards Kokurou.

「 Huh? What do I see here? Good then ~ , you're just a piece to be thrown away anyway ~ . Discardable pieces should stay silent and

do their work until I throw them away ~ ! 」 (Kuro)((Lib))

This time the other guy was kicked by Kokurou.

「 Bh!? 」

He fell down on the ground holding the boy. At this moment his hood came off and his face was openly visible.

「 Just realize your own position already ~ . Naah, Hero-sama ~ ? 」  
(Kuro)

Really, the person wearing the robe marked with a square picture was Aoyama Taishi, the hero summoned to this world. ((Surprise, surprise.))

「 Argh..... 」 (Tai)

More and more citizens gathered there.

「 Hey, a 『 Humas 』 ! 」 (Person A)

「 It's true! 」 (Person B)

「 You don't say, this is the work of the 『 Humas 』 ! 」 (Person S) ((← intentional.))

Seeing the figure of Taishi, they began to flutter about it one by one. Taishi hastily fixed his hood.

「 Kehaha! Uh oh ~ , now they've seen your true character ~ 」  
(Kuro)

Kokurou speaks with joy.

「 Isn't our work already finished? In that case we should leave quickly..... 」 (Tai)

「 Ah, you can go ahead ~ . I'll return after I enjoyed myself a little more ~ . 」 (Kuro)

He feels a shiver running down his spine as the guy licks his lips with his tongue.

「I-I think it is good already! You don't need to kill any more.....」 (Tai)

「Shut uuup」 (Kuro)

「Gu.....」 (Tai)

Having his neck grabbed firmly, he isn't able to breathe anymore.

「Who gives the orders, huh?」 (Kuro)

「Ugg.....」 (Tai)

He couldn't afford to loosen his own grip as he was still holding the child. As Kokurou throws Taishi to the ground –

「I say it the second time ~ . Leave quickly ~ .」 (Kuro)

Taishi softly lays the boy he held in his arms to the ground even as he himself coughs violently.

「Aah.....」 (Tai)

His gaze meets the boy's.

「.....I'm sorry. But.....」 (Tai)

Taking in the mortifying words, he silently starts to walk away. As soldiers try to chase him –

「Whoops ~、 Let me entertain myself with that scum! Kehahahahaha!」 (Kuro)

「Haah, haah, haah.....」

Straight after Taishi left the region, his knees bend as he feebly leans on a tree.

「Damniit..... I'm sorry ..... I'm sorry .....」 (guy)

He repeats the words of apology many times as he holds his head.

( I'm not doing these things because I like it! I..... I.....! )

He hits his head on the wood.

「 .....Chika.....」 ((btw her name can be read as Kazuyo, Chika or as Chiyo... says my names dictionary. However, I guess she was given special readings in one of the first chapters.))

As he listened to the explosions and screams to be heard from the city, he muttered a word while looking up at the sky with an empty look on his face.

## 184th Episode – Ornoth & Rushbelle VS Lenion & Yuhito

Even before the 【Beast Capital□Passion】 received the attack, in the crater of the 【Vuaraalu-plateau】 the duel between 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 proceeded, and the gong for the fourth round had already sounded.

Ornoth, the participant with the ‘king role’ in this duel, glared at the person just before his eyes, shooting him to death with his gaze, opening his mouth in the end.

「We didn’t see each other since the 【Chaos】 incident, did we?」  
(Ornoth) ((Lib.))

「Heh, I’ve got good luck. Now I can fill you up with my revenge, bastard!」 (Lenny-boy)

It was Lenion, the second Prince of 【Passion】. Those two already had a confrontation in the past. ((yeah, we do remember that, don’t we? Wasn’t that long ago ...))

At that time he was knocked out and lost consciousness after receiving a praiseworthy blow to his belly from Ornoth. As he then tried to capture him on the spot, the 《tree beast saints》 appeared and blocked his attempt, and it seemed like Lenion was furiously angry at Ornoth because of that incident all the time. ((Lib.: the sentence involves腸が煮えくり返る(“Harawataganiekurikaeru”) → in that context something like “his intestines were boiling”..... I took the liberty to say he was “furiously angry” instead ^-^))

「In this duel, we are mutually the “kings” together. Whoever is a little bit stronger than the other one will win. That much is easy to understand, oy.」 (Lenny)

Like a beast that found a trophy, his mouth distorted. ((Yet again another person whose mouth doesn’t know its boundaries -.-))

「Did you investigate? What the heck is a 『magical beast』 ,

bastard? 」 (Lenny) ((Lib.))

「 ..... 」 (O)

「 We share the bond of descendants of the same beast. Let's enjoy this killing together! 」 (Lenny)

「 .....Fu, those young people full of vigor and energy. 」 (O)

Ornoth also spouted the words somewhat happily.

「 But didn't you forget something? That this duel doesn't consist of only us? 」 (O)

「 Oh? Those other two people matter? I think it's perfectly fine if they just enjoy themselves. 」

「 .....Hou, you believe into your partner to that extend? Even though that one over here is the Total Commanding Officer of the Demon Army? 」 (O)

This fourth round of the duel was supposed to be a 2 vs 2 fight. And Ornoth' partner was the Total Commanding Officer of the Demon Army, Rushbelle. He owned a strength inferior only to the 《Cruel》. Surely the other party couldn't afford to use a half-baked person of less influence here.

However, according to his speaking, Lenion seemingly didn't even see the possibility of his partner being defeated and his duel being disturbed.

Thus it was probably a person of significant power, so Ornoth wore a somewhat difficult expression as he told Lenion his own opinion.

「 ..... What's the matter? 」 (O)

「 Nay, well.... I can clearly say that it's hard to understand that his level and violence are low, but I grew accustomed to it. 」  
(Lenny) ((Lib.))

「 .... huh? You allowed such a person to participate in this duel? 」

(O)

「..... well yes, but however, thanks for the satisfying explanation.」 (Lenny) ((?))

「..... ? 」 (O) ((Exactly. That's the same thing I thought.))

「I'm not able to imagine him losing. Even if it is against my father.」 (Lenny)

Ornoth was obediently shocked by his words. That persons level and his combat experience were seemingly lower. Yet, Lenion had a strange confidence in his partner. He couldn't understand the reason behind.

「I don't know whether he is strong or weak, but losing is a no..... huh?」 (O)

「You could say it's a little insufficient, but shouldn't we stick on until we reach a conclusion? Therefore shouldn't we start? It's likely I'll explode if I resist the itching feel to do something anymore!」 (Lenny) ((Lib.))

Lenion strongly kicked the earth and came flying.

「There is no way back here anymore! Let me bring you down with all my strength!」

Two people crashed with scattering sparks. ((They could have done that from the start ...))

—

At the same time, in the same field, Total Commanding Officer of the Demon Army Rushbelle was wielding a gigantic spear. The target.....

「Nyohohohoho! As expected from the Total Commanding Officer of the Demon Army! That is one splendid spear you have!」 (Yu)

His name was Yuhito Fan'naru. He was a researcher living in 【Gabranth Kingdom □ Passion】. However, with his green

unkempt hair and his round glasses, always wearing a dirty white coat, even if he hadn't researched, everyone would refer to him as the mad scientist. ((It's so coooool – Sonuvabitch.))

He is also Rarashik's brother, thus he had the same pair of long rabbit ears shaking on top of his head.

Now he was standing completely still in order to observe Rushbelle. That body was torn by the long spear Rushbelle was yielding. But miraculously the spear just slipped through the body, unable to split it in half.

「Damn! This one is also just a fake!?」 (Rush)

In fact, in Rushbelle's surroundings, there were surprisingly Yuhitos..... No, rather, several persons standing. ((Yuhitos as in plural of Yuhito -.-))

「Eey! Annoying 《Trick art》!」 (Rushbelle) ((? I'm not sure how the latest translation of 化装術 was, they kinda had..... a lot. I don't even know what translation I used the last time..... if I ever had to “translate” that before. Well, you know what's meant ^-^))

As Yuhito heard Rushbelle's speech mixed with him clicking his tongue –

「Nyohohohoho! No, not at all, I am afraid I will have to tell you that this is not a 《Trick art》 at all?」 (Yu) ((He was totally polite here ... so I tried to avoid abbreviations and stuff ... dunno, I'm not that good at being polite ^-^))

「..... What?」 (Rush) ((He totally went “nani” here. Sry, I'll have to restrain myself.))

The voice has been emitted from every Yuhito in the surroundings. They were moving as one entity, as if they were reflections from a mirror.

「Do you understand? Uh-hu, that's right. The desire of knowledge, that's something to cherish in the people!」 (Yu)

「.....」 (Rush)



The long Kemonomimi on his head were moving with piko piko, and Ornoth' face became stiff as he felt like being made a fool of.

「Nyohoho, this might be good! If that's the case, unworthy Yuhito Fan'naru shall explain it to you!」(Yu) ((I totally wrote this sentence with an “^” at the end instead of the exclamation mark... sry. Changed it now.))

Thereupon the Yuhitos in the environment suddenly disappeared, leaving just one Yuhito standing.

That one took a bunch of silvery shining square papers out of his breast pocket. They were sized just to fit into ones palm, but apparently there were over a hundred of them.

「As for those, they are an invention of mine named 《Mapping papers》.」(Yu)

「..... You don't say, magic tools?」(Rush)

「Nyohohoho! Sure, just like that! And if you lick it this way.....」(Yu)

After licking a piece with his tongue and shooting it towards the ground, the paper suddenly changed its shape withBokobokoboko like a swelling rice cake. ((Those SFX in the middle of a sentence ...))

And after a moment it had the same figure as Yuhito. Closely watching this, Rushbelle –

「I see, that 《Invention King》 of the 『Gabranth』 was you, Yuhito Fan'naru.」(Rush)

「Nyohohohoho! When you are praising me to that extend then I'll ride on the trend! Nyohohoho! Please praise me even more!」(Yu)

Watching him skeptically as he displayed a good mood and laughed, Rushbelle took action immediately. Taking him from behind with speed as he put force into his feet.

「 But if you careless expose your own abilities, Unpreparedness is your greatest enemy! 」

Rushbelle's spear strikes Yuhito. That one turned its face as if he hadn't noticed yet. Again he was able to determine that that one's physical ability wasn't that high.

As he considered that his blow would surely kill him –

Suka! (SFX)

Again he got the feeling like when attacking the previous fakes.

「 Wha-!? 」 (Rush)

The Yuhito in front of him disappeared. And unexpectedly Yuhito emerged from behind a rock where he hid his body.

「 Nyohohohoho! The reason is that I've been watching from that way as well! After all is said and done, I am a civilian! Nyohohoho! 」

Apparently the one person who has been wary had returned. Being hidden behind a rock, he let his fake body do the talking. ((Lib))

「 Impudent imitation..... 」 (Rush)

「 Oh, but it was also to avoid risk. And it sure was useful. But I got rid of it in the end ~ 」 (Yu)

「 Can't you lay down that incorrigible politeness now? You can display some composure even while staying in your bounds! 」 (Rush)

Thereupon he began to swing and buzz the spear. And, aiming at Yuhito, he threw it.

「 Uhhiiiiiiiiiii! 」 (Yu)

Yuhito promptly jumped to the side, rolling over the ground. As if it was a boomerang the spear came back to Rushbelle after

missing him.

「Hou, just now you were able to react to that extend to avoid it.」

「D-don't just suddenly surprise me like that!」

Yuhito cried out while taking care of his waist after his downfall.

But this time he decided for a straight flying aim. ((He?))

「T-take this!」

Thereupon Yuhito took a book out from his breast pocket.

「..... What?」

Giving it a dubious look, Rushbelle thinks about what to do.

「《Magic creation judgmental area》, construct!」(Yu) ((wait, what? (《魔造判定領域》構築!) come up with a better one, if you'd be so nice? That much Kanji non-stop —))

Suddenly magic waves were emitted from that book like hemispheres.

「I don't know what you are planning to do, but that's the finishing blow!」(Rush)

Straightly firing the spear, he plunged forward to bring Yuhito down. But he was unintentionally startled by Yuhito's following words.

「That 《Killer Javelin》, will go down to my general!」(Yu) ((I'm not sure... he uses impolite words now.))

「Wha-!? How do you know the name of my spear?!」(Rush)

Together with that outcry, the 《Killer Javelin》 had been fired, but had been unexpectedly absorbed into the book.

「.....Phew, it had a little possibility of leaking.」(Yu)

Yuhito was stroking his chest as he was genuinely relieved.

However, Rushbelle, to preoccupied to even think of anything —

「Wh-what did you do! 」 (Rush)

As a matter of course the question was mingled with an angry roar.

As Yuhito slowly rose, he rearranged his glasses. Thus, boasting with pride, he displayed the opened book.

Rushbelle was frightened as he saw the books interior. Because his favorite spear 《Killer Javelin》 was trapped inside like a displayed treasure.

「Nyohohoho! You want to know? Would you like to know? 」  
(Yu) ((he's definitely mocking him now ...))

「uh-huh..... yeaah..... 」 (Rush)

He honestly stated the truth, even though he felt the irritation of that being, completely getting into the mood. He didn't understand what was done, but he instinctively felt the danger of carelessly getting closer. ((Lib.))

「Nyohohoho! In that case I'll explain it for you! As I thought, you have a splendid thirst for knowledge! 」 (Yu)

Even though he really thought that this guys attitude was annoying, this time Rushbelle decided to quietly hear the explanation.

「This book, do you understand it? 」 (Yu)

Even though he wanted to shout out that he didn't understand in the slightest, he kept silent.

「Nyohoho! This book is named 《Domination》 , as it can take control over an object that exists within a certain area. And if you can control it, you sure can use 《Domination》 to seal that object away within it! Nyohohohoho! 」 (Yu)

## So... I did some arbitrary changes to naming in this chapter:

I'll be using 'Rushball' for now, as it feels nicer for a man's name.

《Magic Construct Evaluation Field》 instead of 《Magic creation judgmental area》.

My research got that 写像, from the item's name 《写像紙》, can mean picture, statue, or simulacrum, so just because simulacrum is cool, I changed it from the previous kinda nonsensical "Mapping Paper"... It's not like I'm a Chuuni or anything, bwaka!!!

Chapter 185: The ones who fight and the ones who protect

[Field...? Oh, so the magic power back then was...](Rush)

He was talking about the magic power that expanded in a hemisphere.

[Well, the area extends to somewhat around 20 meters, but it is not like I can control all objects in this area.](Yuu)

[What did you say?](Rush)

[In the end, the only things it can control are inanimate objects, they're the only displayed contents of this book, right?](Yuu)  
(Senpai: Right now I hate this guy, the way he speaks is just too confusing...)

[...Wait. If that's the case, then there's something strange. My 《Killer Javelin》 is supposed to be unique. It's a heirloom that was only permitted to be taken for this duel. Why do you know about this 《Killer Javelin》? If you don't know its name and description you can't possibly control it, right?](Rush)

If it was as Yuhito said, If 《Killer Javelin》's description isn't written in 《Domination》, then the book would not have been able to absorb it a while ago. However, being a heirloom, the 《Killer

Javelin》 should be known by no one other than the family.

Towards Rushball's question, Yuhito curved his mouth with a happy-looking smile.

[《Killer Javelin》... Its handle was crafted from 《Godovius Ore》, the three-pronged spearhead was made by processing the fangs of the 《Marquis Dragon》... It's also the spear known as the 《Beast-Killing Spear》, right?](Yuu)

[...!?](Shocked Rush-chan)

It was an absolutely complete description. It was only natural to ask why someone who wasn't even part of the family could know the details so well.

[Hey, why do you know about it to that extent? No, from whom did you hear that?](Rush)

Although he thought it was impossible for him to be close to his family, he couldn't find any reason other than having heard from one of his family members.

[Nono, I just glanced at it and it came to me naturally?](Yuu)  
(Senpai: Author-san, I know what you're trying to do, but stop with the damn question marks.) ((XDD))

[...Eh?](Even more surprised Rush-chan)

What did Yuhito just say? No matter how he looked at it, he could only think that he didn't hear it right, and tried to ask again, but,

[As I said, the first time I saw it today, I just wrote it in 《Domination》 mid-fight.](Yuu)

It didn't look like he had heard it from someone. Then how could this be. If it's as he said, this meant that he had seen the 《Killer Javelin》 for the first time here, and then decided it was the 《Killer Javelin》 and wrote it in the book.

But why did he know about this precious spear? such a question floated around.

[Nyohohoho! You seem to be lost, but just as I said I just analyzed it at first sight!](Yuu)

[.....?](Confused Rush-chan)

[When I looked at the shape of those black-lustered patterns at the handle, I could guess that it was composed of 《Godovius Ore》, the same for the spearhead. Just by looking once I understood it. A black spearhead that looked like a mix of jade and amber, and even won't reflect light even if bathed directly in it, those are the exact characteristics of the 《Marquis Dragon》's fang. Also I had read in some books about the 《Beast-Killing Spear》 created long ago, far in the Demon World's lands. Its form looks a bit like the 《Killer Javelin》, doesn't it. Probably far in the past, your ancestor stored the 《Beast-Killing Spear》 safely at the Demon World, isn't it? By the way, wasn't that 《Beast-Killing Spear》 known as 《Killer Javelin》 in literature? Well, time has passed so much it has already started weathering, iya~ it was nice to glance at it once! Nyohohohoho!](Yuu-san, please BURN IN HELL) ((he's a troll.))

Towards Yuhito who said something so absurd with no hesitation, Rushball was taken aback and petrified on the spot.

[Maybe, you didn't want to think that this spear wasn't a secret family heirloom, but it is just something your ancestor got his hands on. It's previous information was that it was certainly somewhere in the world, you see.](Annoying Yuu)

[As expected of the 《Invention King》](Rush)

This was said not with sarcasm, but with admiration.

[But as expected what with explaining like a fool. Even if I've lost my spear, your only ability is using magic tools. So how do you plan to win?](Rush-kun pissing me off too)

Truly, after all the only thing Yuhito knows is completely devoting himself to defending. If there's no attack, then there's no damage. And even the magic tools, as he keeps explaining them honestly like an idiot, can be dealt with just by thinking a bit.

He started doubting about Yuhito's sanity, knowing that he was chasing himself into a corner.

[Nyohohoho! It can't be helped, right. 'Cause I'm not a fighter, but a researcher!](Yuu)

[.....](Rush)

[Besides, my job is just to keep you occupied until Lenion-sama settles it with his opponent. That's why it's fine even if I don't win, as long as I don't lose~. Nyohohoho!](Yuu)

He felt frustration with those words.

[Hohou, then if I get serious, even without being a fighter, you think you can stop me? You think you can fight without losing?](Rush)(Senpai: Yes! Please start fighting and stop this text wall madness, it hurts my eyes!)

[Nyohohoho! That's what I said, didn't you hear me?](Yuu)

A switch had turned on inside his head.(lib.)

[Then I'll make you scatter right now!](Rush)

Suddenly, cracks started to run across the ground, and from there three giant snakes made of water appeared.

[Blue Viper!](Rush)

The three snakes spread their mouths open, as if trying to swallow a prey whole, and then went towards Yuhito.

[I, If it's like this, how's that! take this power, 《Liberation》!](Yuu)

While issuing a command in panic, a pale blue light started to burst from 《Domination》, and suddenly a water-colored mantle appeared.

And then Yuhito covered his body with this mantle,



Bachin~!

The surprised snakes who tried to swallow the mantle and all inside whole, as soon as they touched it, turned back into just water as if repelled by it, and splattered across the ground.

[Wha-!](Rush)

Obviously, Rushball, was surprised as he saw something unbelievable in front of his eyes.

[Th, Then how about this!](Rush)

This time, a huge fissure started opening quickly at Rushball's front, and strong water erupted from it.

[Try receiving the culmination of my water! Tidal Wave!]

An unbelievably big tsunami swept down on Yuhito. If one were to be swallowed by this tsunami, one would normally be crushed by the pressure of the large amount of water.

Dogogogogogogogogo~!

The tsunami rushed at Yuhito without any mercy, but he was laying face-down on the ground.

[Be crushed, or drown in the water that way, 《Invention King》 !]  
(Rush)

And in the instant the tsunami tried to swallow him,

Bachiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiinnnnnnnnnnnnnn!

Once again, the moment it touched that mantle, it was repelled. The tsunami was repelled as if it had encountered a colossal wall, and the wall once again vanished in an instant.

[What the hell is this!!?](Rush)

It couldn't be helped that such words escaped from his mouth. It was an attack that would certainly frighten an ordinary person.

Even so, far from having any damage, Yuhito's mantle didn't even have a scratch.

Then, Yuhito unexpectedly let his face out of the mantle while smiling.

[Nyohohoho! It's a shame, right! But it's not something to feel depressed about! This is that type of mantle after all! Nyohohoho!]  
(Yuu)

Then, once again, he started his boasting disguised as explanation. That mantle named 《Water Suppressor》 was a kind of mantle with the effect of nullifying any water magic. However, the activation of the effect has a restriction, it can only be activated by staying still and without attacking. (lib.)

[all such unthinkable magic tools...](Rush)

He muttered while glaring vexingly.

[Nyohohoho! So~reeee~!](Yuu) (Senpai: left this without a translation, 'cause it's kind of hard to even think of a translation to this, and it doesn't have much context to it, just something he said while throwing)

This time, he had something at his hand, and when he thought he would throw it at his mouth, he threw it high at the sky. It started to reflect dazzling light.

It started to fall back to the ground, changed shape, and became Yuhito.

[It's the 《Simulacrum Paper》 again, huh.](Rush)

Indeed, Yuhito had fulfilled the 《Simulacrum Papers》' condition, soaked with saliva, and threw them to the skies. They numbered hundreds.

[Now, who is the true one?](Yuu)

While he said that with a happy-looking face, it could be clearly seen that Rushball was displeased at the situation as his face

crooked. But then his face quickly tightened into a reprimanding one,

[Hm, you really don't look like you plan to fight head-on. Then I'll also give priority to other fight.](Rush)

[Arere? What happened?](Yuu)

[You don't plan to fight, right? Then I also don't have any duty of taking you as an opponent. I'll just allow myself to go and help Ornoth-sama.](Rush)

He said so, and walked away. He threw away any thoughts of defeating Yuhito, and went to Ornoth as reinforcement. Because helping him would make victory easier.

In truth, he had received orders from Ornoth to fight in order to test how strong Yuhito was, seeing as his opponent didn't seriously want to oppose him, he decided that going to help instead of just messing around was far better.

Hearing Rushball's words, Yuhito's smile crumbled, but soon he smiled happily again.

[I won't let you, you know? Take this power 《Liberation》!](Yuu)

《Domination》 started to gleam... then...

Bushuuuuuu!

Yuhito thrust a scalpel at his arm, then blood started flowing out from it. However, at the same time, Rushball's movement stopped completely.

(Wh, What... My legs won't move!?)

Even though he had to go to Ornoth quick, every time he tried to move forwards, his legs would stop moving. Without thinking, he took a step back, but...

(I can move back?)

He couldn't walk forward, but towards the direction where Yuhito was, he seemed to be able to move freely.

[... What did you do?](Rushball)

He slowly turned around and glared at Yuhito. He thought he had used another of his magic tools, but his eyes widened when he saw Yuhito's blood flowing. It was obviously creepy, as hundreds of other Yuhitos were doing the same thing.

[Nyohoho! I'm sorry, but I have to fulfill Lenion-sama's orders, you know?](Yuu)

In other words, he would keep on being a distraction. But what did any of that have in common with that blood flowing?

[This... What is it, I wonder?](Yuu)

Yuhito pointed at his feet. There was an hourglass on it, and a pale blue sphere made out of magic power covered it.

[... What is that?](Rush)

[This is a 《bind watch》. As its name says, until all the sand falls, you can't leave a certain space.](Yuu)

[Another troublesome thing...](Rush)

The truth is that he already thought of it as boring.

[Nyohohoho! Well, to activate it, blood is needed, but nyohoho, it might have been a bit too much stabbing, right?](Yuu)

Just by looking at the blood dripping to the ground, he could guess that it was a wound that shouldn't be left alone. However, right now he needed to break the 《bind watch》 as quickly as possible and go to Ornoth's place.

Immediately when he tried to kick the ground to shorten some time, and attempted to crush it, but...

bachibachibachi~!

The moment he touched it, an electric discharge-like phenomenon happened, and burnt his hands.

[...tch](Rush)

[Nyohohoho! Destroying it is quite hard, you know! Now, Demon Army Head Commander-dono, I'd be happy, if you could keep entertaining me, just for some more time.](Yuu)

He clicked his tongue, seeing that his enemy would be even more of a hassle. However it was true that he had no other choice but to deal with this opponent.

(Forgive me Ornoth-sama, it looks like it'll take some time)

As he felt apologetic, he started gathering magic power.

**Senpai:** The chapter came a bit later 'cause one of the lines has some really obscure kanji, and I'm still not sure about it, so if anyone wants to help with it, here it is: 射殺さんばかりの視線

I've also put a note at the line to identify it. Also, I've eaten something I'm allergic to, it's just a light allergy so my nose just burns like hell, but well, can't help it.

It isn't: ((It's kinda stripped out of the context here ... but for now: 射殺 means "shooting (sb.) to death"; then there is さん – with actually a lot of meanings changing on occasion – ばかり – "approximately", "merely" – の – 視線 – "one's eyes", "line of sight". With just that I'd say something like "shooting (him?) to death only with his eyes ..."))

Chapter 186: Winner of the fourth round!

Sweat started dripping in large quantities from his forehead, the sword in his hand was broken in two, right at the middle. The second prince of the 《Beast Kingdom Passion》, Lenion was breathing violently while glaring at the unscathed enemy in front of his eyes.

「It looks like you still can't use a full-body 《Conversion》.」  
(Orny)

Hearing the words that the 《Cruel Rank Four》 Ornoth said while folding his arms with a fearless expression, Lenion clicked his tongue.

「Heh, did you get it wrong? The real revenge starts from now on!」 (Lenny)

A windstorm formed around Lenion. Ornoth braced his legs in caution. Then, Lenion's body gradually discolored into a light green

color.

「Hou, so you could use a full-body 《Conversion》 huh.」  
(Ornoth)

「Like I said! It starts from now on!」 (Tsun-Lenny)

「So you were just checking until now. You gave quite an allowance, huh.」 (Ornoth)

「... Shut up.」 (Still Tsun-Lenny)

The truth is that Lenion's full-body 《Conversion》 has a condition. That is, along with his excitement, his battle condition must be at a certain level. Originally, there would be no such condition, this goes to show that Lenion still lacks experience.

However, this condition also makes it so that, once activated, his 《Conversion》 can be used continually for quite a long time.

「Here I go you dog bastard!」 (Lenny)

「Then I'm also going」 (Orny)

The two clashed in an instant. Lenion started to throw the broken sword at his hand, and in that same movement threw a kick.

While parrying the sword flying in a straight line, Ornoth tried to grab Lenion's leg.

「It's useless 《Explosive Wind Strike》 !」 (Lenny)

In an instant, Lenion's body started to burst open, as if exploding.

「Nuo~!?」 (Orny)

Starting from Lenion's body blast, he was sent flying at a tremendous speed, and crashed into a huge rock.

When he thought he was stuck in the rock, like the wind, Lenion suddenly appeared in front of his eyes.

「First of all, a thanks for last time!」 (Lenny)

He put power on his right fist and thrust it into Ornoth's stomach.

「Guu!?」 (Suffering Orny ;-)

While destroying the rock, Ornoth who received the attack was blown off. Immediately afterwards, Lenion appeared at his back.

「Ora~!」 (Lenny)

This time, he kicked Ornoth like a soccer ball, who then was sent flying to the skies.

「Take this! One more time! 《Explosive Wind Strike》!」 (Lenny)

Rotating his body, he dropped his heel at Ornoth, who was blown to the skies.

Dogagagagagagagan!

Taking the blow, Ornoth fell down to the ground, and a violent impact sound resounded. In the middle of the cloud of dust, Lenion let out a smile after finally having returned the favor.

「So, how is it? This is the power of the great me!」 (Lenny)

An almost invisible shadow quietly started rising from the cloud of dust. A sound of stones and pebbles falling from that shadow could be heard.

Immediately after the cloud of dust was cleared, seeing Ornoth standing there, Lenion became frustrated.

「.....Impossible.....!?」 (Shocked Lenny)

That's because the wounds, that should have been engraved in Ornoth's body, started to close quickly.

Bruises and scratches alike, were healing quickly with a 'shuuu~' sound. This scene looked exactly like having applied healing magic to himself.

「..... Is that all?」 (Badass Ornoth)



「 .....!? 」 (Very Shocked Lenny)

Looking at Ornoth who said so with a calm attitude, Lenion clenched his teeth.

「 You bastart... Weren't you supposed to be a 『Demon Beast』 ? How the hell can you use healing magic! 」 (Lenion)

「 Nn? Ah, this isn't healing magic. 」 (Orny)

「 ... What did you say? 」 (Lenny)

「 Do you know why did I get a position in the 《Cruel》 ? 」 (Orny)

「 ....? 」 (Lenny)

Lenion raised his eyebrows.

「 Of course it's also because I surpass all others in term of physical power. But you know, if it was only that, I, a 『Demon Beast』 , would be far from being a 《Cruel》 . Even with my friend Aquinas's recommendation, it wouldn't be so easy. 」 (Orny)

Interested in Ornoth's talk, he continued to listen silently.

「 However, I had this absurd restoration ability. 」 (Ornoth)

「 Restoration... You say? 」 (Lenion)

「 That's right. I, since I was born, had this unthinkable high restoration power. Thus I was told by the Maou-sama to use this tough body. To become a shield that protects the Maou-sama as long as I'm alive. 」 (Tanky Orny)

「 ..... 」 (Lenion)

「 I might not be able to use magic, but with my combat ability and this toughness, I was able to become a 《Cruel》 . Thus I'll teach you something. 」 (Orny)

「 .....? 」 (Silent Lenny)

「 With attacks of that level, no matter if you do keep it forever,

you won't be able to kill me?」(Badass Orny-sama)(Senpai: I thought it had been too long since the last misplaced question mark, guess I've raised a flag...)

「Guu~!」(Lenny)

Staring Ornoth to death only with his eyes, Lenion immediately tried to thrust at his bosom with 《Explosive Wind Strike》 to blow him away... but, (Senpai: So... this line alone caused the chapter to be released half an hour later than it should)((changed it a bit ^~))

Doga~!

Suddenly Ornoth fell back a bit and thrust his fist towards the ground. He sank it up to his shoulder. He used his arm as a ledge, in order to not be blown away from the explosion.

Then, the expanded wind returned to its previous form... also known as Lenion. Aiming at this moment, he pulled his arm vigorously and,

「There's an opening when you change back!」(Orny)

「!?」(Lenny)

Lenion grasped his stomach with his hands, slowly distorting his face because of the sharp pain, while being blown off backwards.

「Gu... Ga...」(Lenny)

In an instant his breath escaped from his lungs, it was a strike that caused all on his eyes to turn white. There is a state of defenselessness immediately after using 《Explosive Wind Strike》, he became quite tired and received a lot of damage.

However, while being holding his stomach, he started glaring startled.

「What, what does this mean, you bastard...? Wh... y... can you hit me?」(Surprised Lenny)

Indeed, Lenion was using 《Conversion》 right now. This means it

would be okay to say he turned into wind itself. If you think a bit, wind can't be normally hit. To hit it, you either have to use magic, or a weapon loaded with the power of magic. A simple physical attack won't be able to hit a target using 《Conversion》.

But when he looked at Ornoth's body, he lost his words. What was standing there was unmistakably Ornoth, but manifesting itself, as if enclosing his body was a red aura.

「Wh... What's that...? 」 (Shocked Lenny)

Of course, he understood it was not magic power. Because magic power has a pale blue color. If one were to release magic power while attacking, it'd certainly be able to cause damage even with 《Conversion》, but the efficiency was too bad.

After seeing the force of the received strike right now, and seeing the thing that looks like a red magic power, it certainly isn't strange to feel puzzled.

「... In case you're interested, after this duel ends, I'll teach you when we become comrades. 」 (badass Ornoth-sama)

Hyun~!

「eh? 」 (Shocked Lenny)

As if teleporting, Ornoth vanished from his vision. Immediately afterwards, he felt a flame-like hot sensation on his left arm. Then, feeling it being grabbed by someone, he turned his attention to it,

「Let's end it with this then. 」 (Badass-as-ever Ornoth-sama)

A beast with an eye-widening ferocity was there.

「Uoo~!? 」 (Shocked Lenny)

When he thought his arm had been hit, his other hand touched Lenion's abdomen. He didn't know what he planned, but, he tried to escape using 《Explosive Wind Strike》 and then,

「Too slow! 」 (Orny-sama)

He felt a scorching heat on his grabbed right arm and his abdomen. Then,

「《Blazing Palm》！」 (Orny)

「Gohooo~！」 (Lenny)

Suddenly a red shock blew through Lenion's back, at the same time, the back section of his clothes broke off while exploding. Steam started to rise from his back, with this, Lenion's knees collapsed.

「Gaa..... u....」 (Lenny)

He then fell prone to the ground.

「Gu... Cr...ap...」 (Lenny)

Lenion frantically tried to move his body, but he could not feel any power, he felt all his power vanishing. Without him having realized, 《Conversion》 also seemed to have stopped, he glared coldly at Ornoth.

「Such power despite being so young, I'm amazed. However, I also cannot afford to lose. I'm sorry.」 (Orny)

Feeling the burning heat at his abdomen and back, Lenion clenched his teeth so hard he cut his lips.

「Are you frustrated?」 (Orny)

Without any answer, his body started to tremble. And there were certainly tears falling from those eyes. Losing to an opponent similar to himself, he felt frustrated.

And to add to that, being beaten this throughout was the first time since Leowald. Maybe because he was aware that Ornoth had a strength rivaling his own father, jealousy and regret started to swirl deep in his chest.

「Grap... crap crap... craaaaaaap....」 (Lenny)

After seeing such reaction from Lenion, Ornoth closed his eyes silently, then,

「 You are still young. You still have quite a lot hidden potential to become strong. After having your heart-broken by this fight, to improve or not, it's up to your decision. 」 (Ornoth)

「 ..... 」 (Depressed Lenny)

「 Fuuh, also, I still want to try and fight you once again 」 (Orny)

Towards these words, Lenion moved his eyebrows just a little.

「 However, that will be when you surpass your father. I'll be happily waiting for you, Lenion. 」 (Orny)

「 .....Chii~ 」 (Depressed Lenny)

Silence took over the field for some time. Then Lenion slowly moved his mouth.

「 ..... Next time, I'll surely win. 」 (Lenny)

「 ..... Ah. 」 (Orny)

「 ..... I've lost, huh. 」 (Lenny)

Thus the winner of the fourth round was decided.

## 187th episode – Towards the final fight

The other battle between Yuhito and Rushball was also coming to a close. Silva appeared to inform them about the results of the fourth round.

「.....phew, really, but that was just as to be expected from Ornoth-sama.」 (Rush)

Rushball slightly sighed. And it was right on the spot if you consider that Ornoth didn't lose against Lenion. The real problem however remained, as he was not able to be of help to Ornoth even if he wasn't asked to aid him either.

It really wasn't like Yuhito was a warrior like his companion, but after both of them finished he still was the one unhurt in the end. In any case, his chest was swelled with pride at the thought of Ornoth rushing away.

「Nyohohoho! Nay ~ Lenion-sama would not be defeated either!」 (Yu)

Indulging in such sentimental thoughts, although he didn't dare to read the mood Yuhito's laughter echoed.

In the end, he had the undeniable feeling that he played his magic tools quite good. One hit, merely one hit with the fist would have had to reach him in order to finish him, but that blow was felt from far, far away.

Even though he didn't get to experience a dangerous opponent like Aquinas or Marione, he bore a quite different, eerie feeling. It truly differed from standing on stage. Anyway, he seemed to have been made to dance from the beginning to the end. ((Lit.: he was manipulated.))

Moreover, even though it was thought that this one was his original body until now, in fact it appeared that it was yet again another remote-controlled body of himself. It was similar yet different from the 《Simulacrum Paper》, as this other body of

himself resembled his real form far enough to make his opponent believe it was him all the time, while he was nonchalantly still hiding in the safety of the rock's shadow.

It meant that he just played the clown all along. No, probably it was Rushball himself who had been treated as a clown on stage all the time.

In the end he didn't suppose to lose, so the result of not winning left a bad aftertaste.

「Nevertheless, it was a very interesting fight! 」 (Yu)

「..... I don't want to fight against you ever again. 」 (Rush)

「Nyohohoho! Somehow Lenion-sama said the exact same thing! 」 (Yu)

Apparently there was a time when Lenion had fought with him, and his feelings probably resembled his own. ((POV:Rush))

「Ah, that reminds me – concerning the 《Killer Javelin》. 」 (Yu)

「..... Well, it's like you won it from me the moment you defeated me. So just give me your word that you'll return the ugly thing. 」 (Rush)

「Eh? Doesn't it satisfy you? Mhh ~ And I even planned to return it right now. 」 (Yu)

「I see..... mh? Now? 」 (Yu)

He involuntarily asked again.

「Yes. After I examine that spear in various ways it will properly be return to you. 」 (Yu)

「..... you sure? 」 (Rush) ((I know the grammatically right version would be “are you ...” – but.))

「Of course I am. Since it isn't my hobby to collect things I am not interested in! Nyohohoho! 」

「..... even though it's an heirloom? 」 (Rush) ((changed it a bit, 'cuz: question mark.))

His face twitched repeatedly. (Picopico) ((Another version: his face had a spasm.))

「Nyohohoho! I verbally slipped! But once I am satisfied, don't you want me to return it as promised? 」 (Yu)

「..... I'd like you to return it safely if possible. 」 (Rush)

However, he didn't expect it to happen. And thus he already prepared himself in case his favored arms wouldn't come back.

「Nyohoho! When my interest fades and I return it you will definitely feel a power-up! Nyohoho! 」

Just normally returning would've been enough, but he couldn't possibly say that, so he just stopped talking at this point and returned to Ornoth' position.

—

「Are you all right! 」 (Regulus)

Lenion had returned to the camp with Yuhito's support. His evil smile indicating punishment, Regulus came rushing.

「E-evil Aniki..... I've completely lost. 」 (Lenny) ((in case you wondered: Aniki = elder brother.))

「Ah, indeed..... 」 (Reggy) ((he said あ、ああ..... – but I didn't want to write “ah, aaah” or sth.))

Even without Regulus saying it he completely understood and his eyebrows furrowed. With big footsteps their father, the Beast king Leowald, appeared.

「..... Father..... 」 (Lenny)

Deciding in his heart not to excuse himself, he stood straight in front of Leowald and stared at his face. Leowald wore a stern



expression as he stared at his son Lenion as well.

No sound was heard as the surrounding persons held their breath. After the tension grew unbearably, finally Leowald spoke up.

「Two wins, two losses, huh.....」 (Leo)

The first two games were a winning streak, followed by two losses. It caused all the surrounding people's faces to grow gloomy.

「..... Kuku」 (Leo) ((giggling. Manly giggling.))

Suddenly hearing his voice, everyone became fluttered.

「Kukukukukuku」 (Leo)

The muffled laughter came from Leowald.

「Fa-father.....?」 (Lenny)

Lenion unintentionally muttered.

「Gahahahahahaha!」 (Leo)

Sharp edge-like laughter echoed. While everyone else wore a blank look, Rarashik only shrugged with a sigh.

「Gahahahahahaha! Really, really, two wins and two losses! How interesting!」 (Leo) ((battle freak))

Everyone was confused as they didn't know why he laughed in such a situation, but –

「It's really easy to understand!」 (Leo)

「..... huh? I-in what way?」 (Lenny)

Lenion asked.

「The side which wins the next round..... Wins the whole 《Agasshi》!」 (Leo)

As Leowald's mouth's corners distorted into a grin –

「It's indeed easy to understand! Isn't it, Lenion! 」 (Leo)

「Eh, y-yes..... but I would be more at easy if we were a little stronger..... 」 (Lenny)

「Yeah, therefore you shall become stronger. 」 (Leo)

「Eh? 」 (Lenny)

「This time, the matter of winning or losing bears an even greater importance. But because of that it hasn't ended in failure yet. Aim at the heights even further! Decide upon your objective! That is persisting in power, what we 『Gabranth』 take pride in! As you lost, we shall take even more effort into winning! We shall pursue treating the former winners with even greater strength! This is not the end! Your life, the time you are living, always consists of beginnings! Gahahahaha! 」 (Leo) ((I'm not sure with the last one: 人生は生きている間はずっと始まりだ! – “間” is normally translated as gap or space... but I found “(among) members” as one of the other meanings, soo...))((edit: thanks, Anonymus ^-^))

Splendid. Simply splendid, thought Lenion. This man, his own father, considered the outcome fortunate even though it was mortifying.

The upper end of the high wall ((in his mind)) was near. Lenion unintentionally grasped his chest as it became hot. And every single person around felt more than just a little bit the same.

「Father! 」 (Lenny)

「Mh? What is it, Lenion? 」 (Leo)

「I myself..... I want to exceed you one day! 」 (Lenny) ((he says “I” both times – 俺様 vs 俺))

In response to Lenion's honest eyes, Leowald smiled happily. And then, putting a hand on Lenion's shoulder, Regulus as well –

「I can't afford to perform simply good in front of you as well! 」

(Reggy) ((I.e: challenge accepted!))

「Gahaha! That's what makes you sons of mine! 」 (Leo)

Nevertheless, Lenion was smiling as he now looked at Regulus.

「Well, big brother is rather a person of literature than one of the arms. So even in this quarrel I will completely win. 」 (Lenny)

「Hey, idiot! I might as well consider fighting my little brother seriously hereupon! 」 (Reggy)

Regulus' answer had a touch of an excuse. His face reddened a little bit. But suddenly Lenion's expression became serious. Regulus also realized it as he looked back.

「..... Next it's big brother's turn. Can I rely on you? 」 (Lenny)

「..... entrust it to me. 」

「Rest assured, both of you. Don't you know that I will go out in this last one as well? 」 (Leo) ((originally there is no “don't you know” here, but question mark...))

Really, the fifth and last round was a parent-child combination of Leowald and Regulus.

「Good now, Regulus, you are the king in this duel. Handle it with care. 」 (Leo)

「Yes! 」 (Reggy)

「It's a shame we lost the last fight. I don't know who'll come out, just don't be careless. 」 (Leo)

「Certainly! 」 (Reggy)

「In that case, go! I want the victory in our 『Gabranth』s hands! 」 (Leo)

「Assured! 」 (Reggy)

In order to inspire the two of them, the 『Gabranth』 raised

cheers for both. Pushed by the voices, the two of them turned their feet and advanced towards the battle grounds.

---

---

The other way. At the 『Evila』 camp, they were somehow relieved with what had been managed so far. By no means they would have ever thought they would suffer two losses in a row, followed by a winning streak in the continuation, closed by a decisive fifth and last round.

But that's where a problem occurred. Participating in the fifth round should Maou Eveam and Marione.

Only one person could participate twice in fights, and the soldiers raised many voices supporting the reliable Marione.

Of course, those who knew of Hihiro's efforts supported rather him than Marione, including Marione himself, but he was supposed to be out in the fifth round nevertheless.

Hihiro himself said nothing at all. Of course he favored the 『Evila』's win, but being a 『Humas』 himself it was not unlikely that him speaking up could give birth to a strange misunderstanding. ((I'm quite sure about this sentence, changed it a little bit for fluidity though, but it seems odd nevertheless: shouldn't everyone know about his efforts by now? He's their hero, after all.))

Therefore he would tolerate being chosen by the 『Evila』. The 『Evila』, however, were condemned by Lilyin and co with lines such as 「Only when we choose Hihiro there will be certainty!」 or similar ones.

But more as this time, they simply had to win at all costs. And it was left to Marione who sustained severe loss in the first round to his partner.

Moreover it was probable that the opponent that defeated Marione, Leowald, would participate again. The situation was near to worst. No way it was just because Marione and Leowald were not

expected to play in the first round instead of a complete order mistake.

「 Well, I think it will happen again? 」

Lilyin has been heard.

「 Come on now. It just turned out that way because of the matching. 」 (Hiiro)

「 A dry fellow, as usual. Don't you know, once this is lost you'll probably never get entrance permission for the library? 」 (Lilyin) ((and again, no “don't you know” here – but a question mark.))

「 Hmph, I'll handle that occasion once it occurs. I'll just creep in even if I have to use under-surface tricks. 」 (Hiiro) ((Lib.: the first sentence, その時はその時だ。 – means literally “that time at that time”.))

「 ..... well, that's just like you. But will you be able to carry those things quietly? 」 (Lily)

「 Naturally. Peace comes first. 」 (Hiiro)

「 If you say so... 」 (Lily)

Lilyin shrugs her shoulder in amazement. While folding his arms, Hiiro stares at Leowald coming from the opposite site.

「 But well, coming out the second time this fellow can't be burdened with the position of 'king'. In other words, the opponent's 'king' is that prince. Certainly there is a disadvantage, so depending of the method the probability of winning is sufficient. 」 (Hiiro)

「 This site's 'king', isn't it that young girl? That youngster will beat her before she can even land a hit on the Beast king. 」

She giggles and happily smiles. (Kukuku)

「 It might become an unexpectedly interesting fight. 」 (Hiiro)

「Mh ? 」 (Lily)

「You wouldn't know the game's outcome until it's finished. 」  
(Hiiro) (( 下駄を履いて literally means “putting on the Geta” ( = those wooden sandals)... I guess it's an idiom. Seems to have to do something with market prize?))

「How do you mean that? 」 (Lily)

「Well, you'll understand once you see it. Just a little longer and the final of this war begins. 」 (Hiiro)

Supported by the 『Evila』s voices Eveam and appendage went towards the duel grounds. Finally, the fifth match..... the finals began.

## 188th episode – Forgetting offense and defense for a blink

—((maybe “Forgetting the fight for a moment” or sth. would be nicer, but less accurate, I guess?))

「Marione, how’s your body? 」 (Eveam)

While they’re walking, Eveam asks Marione next to her. Marione also wears a calm attitude, not changing his expression as –

「I am greatly obliged by your concern. But you do not have to worry. I shall offer victory next to Her Majesty without fail as it was declared, in order to be able to accomplish your efforts. 」 (Mari)

「Is that so, in that case: obtain victory, Marione! 」 (Eve)

「Yes! 」

And then they urged their line of sight towards the opponent incoming from the other side. Even though their figures were small as they still were distant, Leowald’s presence was to be felt clearly. As one would expect from the beast king’s nature, her hand began to sweat.

And thus, the two camps had finally directly met each other. If you look again, Eveam was admiring Leowald’s proportions.

This great character was directly fought by Marione. He had put on a good fight and was defeated nevertheless. But still, almost able to grasp his skills, it was thanks to Marione’s struggles that they had been able to erect an efficient strategy.

「Nofofofofo! Welcome at the fifth round, nice to see you! 」 (Silva)

Nobody interrupted Silva as he fabricated an atmosphere similar to the opening of a meeting. Although I think he definitely would have got a response of some sort or another if Lilyin were here.

「.....Ahem, let me confirm. From the 『Gabranth』 camp:

Leowald-dono and Regulus-dono, ‘King’ is Regulus-dono. Is this correct? 」 (Silva)

The two responded with a small nod.

「From the 『Evila』 camp: Eveam-dono and Marione-dono, ‘King’ is Eveam-dono. Is this correct? 」 (Silva)

This side also firmly affirmed.

「In that case, both camps: make sure not to have any regrets. You were able to prepare beforehand, do you have any last words? 」 (Silva) ((Lib.: This time it isn’t a question, but I made it into one. The second half of the sentence, 声をおかけ下さいませ, literally means “please sit down your voice”. Tch ...))

As Silva said it and took a step backwards, Leowald was the first to open his mouth.

「The person who wins this last fight will be able to obtain everything. 」 (Leo)

「Yeah, let me overthrow you with all my might. 」 (Eve)

As Eveam answered such, Leowald’s face expressed a knitted smile and he stared at Marione.

「I think this one will be difficult for you. Even more than the last fight. 」 (Leo) ((Lib.: I’m not exactly sure about the first sentence (悪いとは思わんぞ。 ) Changed the second one a little bit.))

「Naturally. And even more, after I arrived in this place, mercy and the like get useless. I’ll take victory without fail. 」 (Mari)

「Gahaha! That’s a good atmosphere. As I thought, you won’t waver once you entered battlegrounds. 」 (Leo)

It was true ferocity, but his mouth’s corners had risen in happiness nevertheless.

「Moreover, Maou. 」 (Leo)



「What? 」 (Eve)

「Once I win, let me have Hiiro. 」 (Leo) ((here we go again ...))

「Wha-!? 」 (Eve)

「I am quite pleased with this fellow. I want to make him my daughters' husband without fail. 」

At such a proposal from Leowald, Marione wore a blank look and Regulus dropped his shoulders in disappointment. And, speaking of Eveam –

Purupurupurupuru..... (SFX) ((sound of shaking?))

Her shoulders were trembling slightly. And, her head still facing the ground –

「.....ver. 」 (Eve) ((She simply said ない “nai” = verb-negating suffix. Same ending as ↓))

「Mh? Did you say something, Maou? 」 (Leo)

「I-i..... 」 (Eve)

As the other people hereupon gazed at Eveam, she suddenly raised her face –

「I won't hand him over! 」 (Eve) ((hence “...ver” above.))

Even Leowald was amazed by that ambition. ((Lit.: “His eyes were popping”))

「Good! Hiiro will absolutely migrate! Hiiro is mine! 」 (Leo)

Thence followed a flow of silence, as Eveam remembered what she had blurted in a heated moment and instantaneous entered a state similar to a boiling water heater – (( 瞬間湯沸かし器状態になリ ... like that?))

「Ah, uh, n-no, that, i-it's totally different..... 」 (Eve) ((But of course it is.))

The gazes of everyone around somehow felt cold when Eveam squatted, covering her face with both of her hands and — ((しゃがみ込む, Literally crouching with your face between your knees. So it's more like that?))

「Aahhhhhh! I want to return to my castleeeeeee! 」 (Eve)  
((intonation slightly off...))

— and cried preposterous things.

「Y-your Majesty..... 」 (Mari)

Marione showed as much compassion as you'd expect, gently calling out to her, then suddenly glaring at Eveam sternly as –

—((↓the author really used the sign “=”... -.-))

「A-all right! Th-th-that right now was just a fi-figure of speech! As me = 『Evila』, in short my objective is the 『Evila』's aim, therefore I'd never use personal affections as starting point here! 」  
(Eve) ((affections is the right word.))

「Y-yes, we already knew that because of your resolution, Your Majesty. 」 (Mari)

「I-i knew that already! 」 (Eve) ((...))

Her tone varied as well, so as she was halfway through with recovering from her desperation, Leowald raised his finger with a snap.

「I-i will win! 」 (Eve)

Hearing Eveam's ninety percent certain energetic declaration, Leowald smiled happily.

「Gahaha! I see, as one would expect from Hihiro! He already seized the Maou's heart as well! 」

And in that instant, eyes were narrowed and serious expressions were made.

「If that's the case I'll use my full strength to snatch him away!」  
(Leo)

Sparks were flying between the stares of the two of them. They both suddenly averted their glances and mutually left to take their distance from each other.

「Preparations complete here.」

「Here as well.」

Hearing Eveam's and Leowald's declarations, Silva coughs lightly and –

「Well then, I have the privilege to carry out the starting announcement.」 (Silva)

The surrounding air was filled with keen tension at once. Mutually watching each others slightest movements they even forgot to blink.

「Fifth round..... Start!」

The curtains of the final round were lifted.

---

「Your Majesty, I'll restrain the Beast king somehow! Therefore go at that person!」 (Mari)

It was no wonder their tactics set attacking First Prince Regulus, the carrier of the 'King' role, as first priority. But naturally, the other party held the same thoughts.

Leowald was standing in front of Regulus, feeling as ambitious as one would expect.

「Marione, fly up!」 (Eve)

As Eveam put her hands onto the ground –

「Ground Dasher!」 (Eve)

Along with tremendous earth-shaking, a crack in the ground was advancing upon Leowald and his son. And as the fissure spread wider and wider, it got mixed with blasts of stones and lumps of dirt from within that attacked them as well.

「 Ungh! Regulus, leap left! 」 (Leo)

「 Understood! 」 (Reggy)

The two of them escaped from the spot in order to avoid Eveam's attack.

「 Marione! 」 (Eve)

「 I understand! Eclipse Trident! 」 (Mari)

Several pitch black tridents were born in Marione's surroundings. And thus the formation of spears rushed into the sky to attack the enemy.

「 Father, above! 」 (Reggy)

「 Don't ever touch that! 」 (Leo)

「 Acknowledged! 」 (Reggy)

Regulus quickly drew a sword, concentrating his power in its blade. Thereupon water focused on the sword after being born out of the air. Just as it was enough to cover the blade, Regulus directly scythed the sword down just like to shake it off.

「 《Water Faaaaaang》 ! 」 (Reggy) ((intonation -.-))

An edge of water was emitted from the blade, hitting the group of spears. And the instant it touched them, 《Water Fang》 brushed the tridents away easily.

「 Well done, Regulus! 」 (Leo)

Although Regulus was praised for skillfully countering the opponents attack –

「There is still a trick left! 」 (Eve) ((she used 手 as in “hand”, but supposedly it can be “trick”, “technique” as well.))

Eve immediately went into action next. Now she was aiming her opened hands at the two people.

「Brave Flame! 」 (Eve)

A flame erupted from her right hand, and —

「Air spiral! 」 (Eve)

— from her left hand a tornado-shaped wind was emitted. Put together, those two formed a flaming tornado, assaulting Leowald and companion.

Although Regulus saw it coming and promptly attempted to evade from the spot in shock —

「Regulus, just ignore it and brace your legs! 」 (Leo)

「.....Father? 」 (Reggy)

Leowald's body became red as fire as grimaced at the hot wind flying at him.

「Uooooohhhhhhh! 」 (Leo)

He faced the flaming tornado surprise attack.

「F-father?! 」 (Reggy)

By no means surprised by the mobilization, Leowald suddenly went towards the fire and shoot his own flames with a swing of his strong arm. Then the tornado changed its direction, dispersing into the sky.

Completely knocking off the tornado in a style simply out of standards, Leowald stunned even his own son Regulus.

「Don't be careless, Regulus! 」 (Leo)

「Eh? 」 (Reggy)

Behind Regulus, Marione had taken position before anyone became aware of it.

「 We'll get to finish this early, boy! 」 (Mari)

In his hand, he held the trident from before.

Bushu! (SFX)

The trident broke through Regulus' chest, displaying a cruel appearance towards Leowald. But Leowald only looked a little bit surprised, not showing any sign of advancing towards Marione.

Although he didn't know why, it became clear in the following instant.

Pashaa! (SFX)

In front of his eyes, Regulus' body suddenly fell to the ground, bursting into a liquid form.

「 Wha-!? 」 (Mari)

And as he felt blood-thirst from behind, he turned around and saw the mass of water jumping at him there.

「 Tch! 」 (Mari)

Evading from the spot, he flew into the air with open wings. As he confirmed the position from where the mass of water had been fired, he saw the figure of Regulus standing.

「 ..... Youngster, you deceived me well. 」 (Mari) ((一杯喰わされたか))

Apparently his previous attack was only able to strike a water offspring.

「 Mastering the 《Binding》 and handling it like magic..... I guess I'll have to alter my evaluation of you. As one would expect from the Beast King's descendant. 」 (Mari)

Surely he had considered him a spare, still able to attend the match, but in contrary he completely underestimated him. Moreover, judging from the fact that he handled his 《Binding》 that well, he probably had undergone intense training.

「You are indeed worthy of being chosen as the Beast King's partner.」 (Mari) ((btw what is Leo doing? Messing around in the background I guess ...))

He slowly descends near Eveam.

「Your Majesty, apparently this youngster isn't just for show.」 (Mari) ((You don't say...))

「It seems so. He is King Leowald's successor. I already knew from our investigation that he achieved both wisdom and knowledge about the art of war, so probably that's why he can use his 《Binding》 that skillfully. Thus he can clearly show himself in battle.」 (Eve)

Thereupon Leowald also smiles delightful and walked to Regulus' side.

「What's up, Maou Eveam and Marione! Did you really take a King that lightly?」 (Leo)

「..... Oh, I am fully aware. However, knocking off my magic, just what kind of body structure do you have?」 (Eve)

「Gahaha! Did you forget? That I'm holding a fire 《Binding》?」 (Leo)

Thereupon Eveam's throat made a gulping sound. Even with fire resistance, only Leowald could truly pull off that move.

「But I was surprised as well. I knew Marione's abilities due to our previous battle, but for the Maou to have such strong magic..... and even handling multiple attributes. Moreover, fusing two magic attributes in that attack, I'm filled with awe.」 (Leo)

「Don't mock me. I may not look it, but I'm the Maou!」 (Eve)

Eveam's sharp gaze hit him with utmost certainty.

「There is also the thing about Marione's physical condition, so I planned to immediately end this, and am in contrary not able to enjoy myself here. 」 (Eve)

Her Ferocious thirst for blood almost electrically shook the atmosphere. If they were half-hearted people, probably even just thinking about continuing the battle would get impossible under the breathtaking pressure of that presence.

「Marione, your condition..... Nay, the answer remains the same. 」 (Eve)

「That's right, answering it is just as useless as asking it. 」 (Mari)

「If that's the case, entrust your life to me! 」 (Eve)

「Your Pleasure! 」 (Mari)



## 189th episode – Freely wielding the mutual war potential

Hiiro was staring in astonishment at the high-level duel unfolding before his eyes.

「Hou, and I even questioned that lass.」 (Lily) ((小娘 → also “young girl”, adolescent female in general. But as it is Lily talking ... I needed something more insulting. Just sayin’, as it is used repeatedly here.))

Even Lilyin seemed to be rejudging Eveam after she showed power far beyond her expectations.

「Well, even if just temporarily, she is the Maou. I guess that much is naturally.」 (Hiiro)

「Kukuku, and I was imagining the figure of that lass to be trampled down by the Beast King, but in the contrary, she really surprised me with even being able to use combined magic.」

He was indifferent as she said such scary words, but the phrase combined magic burdened his mind.

「Don’t you know? Just some time ago that lass was bound to bed after combining fire and wind magic.」 (Lilyin)

「Hou, so that’s combined magic.」 (Hiiro)

「In order to successfully cast combined magic, you have to equally control both magic’s power. Moreover, to sufficiently control the fusion and compatibility of magic, you’d have to pursue considerably precise control over your magic power.」 (Lilyin)

「I see, and I also observed the power level raising to a remarkable different height.」 (Hiiro)

「Yeah, in case of success it will probably be several times as powerful. But in the case of a failure, you get a spontaneous outburst. Using it in the opening, she must have quite some

confidence in her magic power control. 」 (Lilyin)

「Even though I read in a book that the definition of ‘Maou’ is originally ‘the 『Evila』 s King’, in reality it should additionally also include the strength of one named King. 」 (Hiiro)

Agreeing, they nodded several times.

「The young girl as well, but that Gabranth prince is also to be considered. 」 (Mikazuki)

「Yeah, there is no wastefulness in his use of the 《Binding》 . Well done, I guess. 」 (Shamoe)

「However, the Beast King’s utilization of his 《Binding》 is as brutal as ever, especially if you see that prince’s struggle in the fight over there. Is it just me..... Or is the Prince somewhat weak in the presence of the Beast King’s strength? 」 (Mika)

「Seems so. 」 (Shammy)

Here, in Nikki’s eyes the shape of nearby Mikazuki was reflected. Whilst Nikki’s eyes were fixated on the fight and she even forgot to blink, Mikazuki was chatting with Shamoe as if the duel held no interest for her.

It was obvious from her demeanor that Nikki was itching to fight herself. Even though she was definitely a human being, she seemed to have an interest in belligerent, or should I say, strong persons.

Besides, she was raised by monsters. That she might behave differently if raised in a human environment might be a good example.

Thereupon, he shifted his gaze towards the crater again. He had already checked the 《Status》 of Marione and Leowald. Using 『Pry』 , he confirmed the other two’s strength as well. 覗

Eveam Gran Early Evening

HP 4750/4750

MP 6000/6500

EXP 820989

NEXT 41111

ATX 840 (1040)

DEF 850 (1050)

AGL 825 (900)

HIT 819 (919)

INT 1087 (1287)

《Magic Attributes》 Fire, Water, Wind, Earth, Ice, Thunder, Darkness

《Magic》 Brave Flame ( Fire, Attack)

Death Heat ( Fire, Attack )

Aqua Jet ( Water, Attack )

Cool Pain ( Water, Attack )

Air Spiral ( Wind, Attack )

God Press ( Wind, Attack )

Ground Dasher ( Earth, Attack )

Astral Rain ( Earth, Attack )

Icicle Storm ( Ice, Attack )

Innocent Saber ( Ice, Attack ) ((Saber is anything but innocent ...))

Lightning Force ( Electricity, Attack )

Bomb Bolt ( Electricity, Attack ) ((could be “vault” as well.))

Imperial Zero ( Darkness, Attack ) ((Lelouch?))

Phantom Meteor ( Darkness, Attack )

Abyss Blade ( Darkness, Attack ) ((アヴィス, “Avici” as well. Meaning doesn’t change ...))

Cosmos End ( Darkness, Attack )

《Titles》 Maou

————Elemental Lady

————Highest-class Evila(最上級魔族)

————Book-lover ((oh?))

————Monster Slayer

————Going her own path

————Incompetent Woman

————Unbelievable Child

————Unique Slayer

————Urbemensch (lol)

————Behaving like a spoiled Child

————Lonely Person

————Frightened One

————Miss Perfect

————As green as grass (頭がお花畑 – literally means “has her head full of alpine flowers” -> means “naive, someone who believes the world to be a kind place full of good people where

nothing bad can ever happen, therefore having an excessively merry disposition and being very easy to fool”.)

—————Maou (Lawl)

—————Dream-chasing Girl

—————Selfish Princess

—————Maiden in love

—————Person who carried to the extremes

Regulus King

Lv 83

HP        2870 / 3100

MP        380 / 455

EXP       652910

NEXT      12319

ATX       675 [825]

DEF       622 [672]

AGL       700 [770]

HIT       442 [502]

INT       312 [315]

《Binding Characteristic》    Water

《Binding Techniques》    Water Fang

—————Jewel-shaped Water

—————Water-style Conversion

—————Purple Water Flash

《Titles》 Friend of the Water

—————Desires Family

—————Feminist

—————Prodigy ((o.O))

—————Worldly-wise man

—————Next Beast King

—————Blade of the Wilds

—————Monster Slayer

—————Human Slayer

—————Unique Slayer

—————Fighting Beast

—————Expert

—————General of the Water

Eveam's M P were indeed befitting her. She could be proud of its considerably height. And then this amount of attributes. Certainly, normally it was one attribute per person, it was even rare to have two or three. ((And the heroes, having four, are considered "legendary class" XD))

Notwithstanding that, she was at a completely different level. She carried all seven attributes other than light within the ability categorization. Moreover, as she even used combined magic, he could probably expect some more tricks from her.

( It's a good thing she is able to increase the width of fighting ways to that extent. ) (Hiiro)

The opponent being compatible, it would be disadvantageous to

use your only and hardly effective attribute. But as she was holding that many attributes, she was at the advantage as she could choose her attribute in accordance to the opponent's attacks.

( That Beanpole Prince seems to be hiding his true strength as well. ) ((ヒヨクツ – “thin and tall” – hence beanpole.))

He thought what he saw was Regulus starting to use 《Conversion》. By the way, as Regulus appearance was thin and tall in person, he named him Beanpole Prince.

( Now that the mutual opening phase ended, this is going to get intense..... No, it's clearly visible that the Maou and her mongrel are going to be at disadvantage if this is prolonged unnecessarily. ) ((he doesn't say “mongrel”, but I'm getting creative with the suffix “-tachi”).))

Marione had recovered at first glance, but not considering his fatigue would be a mistake. Naturally, they would be at disadvantage when the match was prolonged any more. For this reason, the Maou and her companion had to settle this in a brief but decisive battle.

( Who will launch first now.....)(Hiiro)

Hiiro awaited the four people's near future with great interest.

---

Marione suddenly spread his wings and ascended into the sky. Thereafter, in order to join him, black wings emerged from Eveam's back as she soared into the sky as well.

Wary of the two people, Leowald and Regulus followed them with their eyes, putting themselves on guard.

Eveam suddenly stopped in mid-air, losing her eyes as she clapped her hands.

「Mh? I don't know what you're planning, but moving first won't help you!」 (Leo)

Leowald jumped upwards into Eveam's direction. But in front of him, Marione blocked his way.

「 Out of my way, Marione! 」 (Leo)

「 You'll have to pass me if you want to proceed! 」 (Mari)

As Marione waved the mantle he was wearing –

「 Black Ash! 」 (Mari)

A black mist thing was erupting from Marione's body, dyeing the environment with darkness in the blink of an eye.

「 That sort of thing! 」 (Leo)

Although he tried to remove it with his hand's momentum –

「 Whoa!? What's that?! It wraps around my body!? 」 (Leo)

Really, the fog covered around the fist he wielded as if it was alive. Then, suddenly a voice was heard out of nowhere.

「 I am the very darkness itself. As soon as you enter this world of darkness, your movements are sealed! 」 (Mari)

He didn't feel any pain from the darkness wrapped around his body, but a feeling of gradually becoming heavier run through his body. And as Regulus was worried as Leowald, grasped by the darkness, didn't fall down but remained in the air, he tried to hit it with 《Water Fang》, but it was completely repelled.

Thus in Eveam came into his field of view, releasing terrific amounts of concentrated magical power from her body.

「 Oh Darkness that dwells in the Abyss of the Beginning..... 」  
(Eve)

The red gems fitted into the earrings and bracelets Eveam was wearing were emitting a suspicious light. Apparently they responded to Eveam's aria.



「 Oh God of Death, Bringer of Chaos in Dark Hours, Destroyer of the All-creation, I summon thy fragment of power upon me..... 」  
(Eve) ((changed it a little bit. Damn prayer's hard to translate.))

As she slowly raised her hands towards the skies, as she made a gesture as if to grab something with her hand –

「 Pierce hiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiiim! 」 (Eve)

From within the fog Leowald, pitch-black dyed, assaulted her. As Eveam caught her breath and hastily evaded to the left in order to avoid his attack –

Bushu! (SFX)

Blood spurted from her right wing as Leowald hit it. ((So I guess she was disrupted? And I thought he was restricted... “Binding” attack?))

「 Urgh! 」 (Eve)

Eveam's face was distorted in pain as she fell to the ground. Eveam, without doubt going to slam into the ground at this rate, desperately moved her severely hurting wings to prepare her landing.

The black fog that almost stopped Leowald's movements in the sky left his body. And as it formed a shape, it transformed into Marione. Apparently the fog itself was Marione. ((You don't say.))

「 Your Majesty! 」 (Mari)

He returned to his original form in order to immediately rush to Eveam. As Leowald also fell from the sky to the earth again, Regulus turned up nearby.

# Konjiki no wordmaster Christmas Special 1

hey there~ im here just translating the konjiki no moji tsukai [Special]~ and im not that diligent... truth to be told, i'm new in translation~ if there any mistake, better say to me~ :3 thanks~

Source URL: <http://chronazero.blogspot.co.id/2015/11/konjiki-no-wordmaster-christmas-special.html>

## Silent night Christmas special extra chapter miracle p 1

This is the story from Hiiro travelling with liliyn and co.

「Fuee~~ recently it's gotten colder doesn't it, Sylva-sama?」  
(Shamoe)

while shamoe rubbing her hand and breathing out white air. Now they are preparing for breakfast. They had stayed in Sylva magic cottage, that come out from the shadow of the wood in the forest.

while in the morning it's very cold, it's better to make hot soup for breakfast, is what sylva thinking while letting out a large pot for the Shadow and cook the soup. (T/N it means sylva using its magic to let out cooking utensil and cottage, :v its a 4th dimensional pocket :v nekoemon!!)

The truth, they want to let out the mansion and cooking in the mansion, but the tree are in the way and letting out the mansion became impossible. so with no other way out, they let out the cottage and cooking outdoor.

「Nofofof! it because now are the season of Liu (Winter)」

Then liliyn come out from the cottage while being irritated and say、

「yes ! cold ! it's cold you fool ! do something Silva ! 」  
(Liliyn)

while shouting with her red nose, she apparently not good with cold. even Sylva can't anything with the weather, so he just gave a wry smile.

「Liliyn-sama ! If you move your body like this it will became warmer ! 」 (Silva)

While moving pyokopyoko (T/N ??) and moving its bob hair (T/N: bob hair = ahoge , the hair that stand alone in the head) while moving it's fist like kata in karate 。

「 even if it cold Mikadzuki is fine mon ~ 」 (Mikadzuki)

Mikadzuki were actually a demon ridepeak that have been personified by hiiro, so it's okay for mikadzuki even if its cold, or rather ridepeak became more active in the cold.

From there hiiro walking usually. On a day as cold as this he wore poker face like nothing had happen and make liliyn muffed.

「Oi hiiro、 do you like the bird over there that like cold ? 」  
(Liliyn)

「 ha ? i'm not fond of that thing 」 (Hiiro)

「 Then why do you hace that no problem face ? 」 (Liliyn)

「 ..... it's just patience 」 (Hiiro)

It was a lie. Right in the morning he used 《Word magic》 immadiately.

『Thermal Sensation』

It was Hiiro's way of the coldness measures. So now, Hiiro not feeling any cold from the winter. Rather, he feel the nice and

warm feeling from the Spring.

「.....Something seems not right but, Silva, Finish the soup faster ! 」 (Liliyn)

While trembling with the coldness, Shamue pick up the pace.

「 It's Done 」 (? dunno who say it)

Carefully lower the head ,Silva put out a such as a desk from the shadows, While guided Lilin to sit. And after awhile, the were prepared in front of them.

「 Bon apetit 」 (?)

Cannot wait anymore, Liliyn Drink the soup. At that moment, She have been fascinated and leaked a happy breath.

「 a ~ it warming my body ~ 」 (Liliyn)

「 They say when you grew older coldness became more harder、 as expected you to..... 」 (Hiiro)

Knife suddenly stick in the table in front of Hiiro.Then, the air in that place furthermore reduced.Especially Shamoe saying [Fueeee~] while being surprised by the thing that happened.

「 Did you going to say something now ..... ? 」 (Liliyn)

Lilin with sparkling eyes, unleashed black aura from behind her. And it's definitely she was the one that threw the knife.

「 .....never mind 」 (Hiiro)

Thinking if it really a coincidence、 They just let the bread past their mouth.

「 By by by the way Silva-sama! 」 (shamue)

Shamue that trying to change the atmosphere.

「 What is it ? 」 (Silvia)

「 a、 hi、 now are what day and what season is it ? 」 (Shamue)

Everyone stare to puzzlement with the unknown question that shamoe ask. Recognized that she herself don't know what kind of topic did she asking about, she look down in embarassment.

「 Soon it will be 24th day of gillis 」 (Silva)

Says Silva firmly with a smile.

「 2 4 ? 」 (Hiiro)

「 Oya ? what' wrong hiiro-sama ? 」 (Silva)

「 Nope、 if im not wrong gillis mean the 12th month doesn't it ? 」 (Hiiro)

「 It is. Originally Gillis long , or precisely the name of month 1-12 、 Have been determined by the 『Pheom』 。 Gillis long is 12 month、 it could be readed by 《Cold Weather next month》 (dont know waht it means~ '寒来月') 」 (Silva)

「 that's mean, it's December 24th isn't it 」 (Hiiro)

「 It is. Month 12、 and Days 24 」 (Silva)

{T/N It is are what i used for 'Sayou de gozaimasu' really, i can't the right word for the formal saying of 'You are right'}

There were hero say's 'So it seems' and closed his eyes、

{Naruhodo <- i know it but i cant find the right phrase...}

「 What's wrong with that day, hiiro? 」 (Liliyn)

Said liliyn With suspicious expression.

「 Nope、 you all know that i am otherworlder doesn't it? 」 (Hiiro)

「 yep, what's wrong with that? 」 (Liliyn)

They had been told that Hiiro is from another world. It's not from Hiiro's mouth、 but it is from Liliyn searching for the information、

also reading some material to guess, and then someday she ask hiiro to confirm it.

That information is very precise, So there was no need to hide it, Admitted the guess because they know it until there. Well, he just felt greatly attracted to the book that Liliyn read but.

「 the truth is, in my world it's the time for Christmast eve 」

Still no "Christmas" culture in this world [idea], the unknown word make everyone tilting their head.

Hiiro were telling about Christmas, they easily know that it is interesting.

「 hmph, im surprised there are a person who act hpyritical like that. What is it, that person called santaku rosu ? 」 (Liliyn)

「 it's Santa Claus 」 (hiiro)

then Shamue,nikki,and mikazuki's eye were sparkling and、

「 Fuaaa ~、 There were that kind of nice person isn't ! i want to meet him ! and that present thing, it's interesting ! 」 (Shamue)

「 me too want a present desu zo ! 」 (Nikki)

「 mikazuki too ~ ! 」 (Mikazuki)

hopefull and gleaming eye's were shot to hiiro but、

「 It is a pity, but Santa Claus that I was talking about is not real 」 (hiiro)

that three's smile were solidify、 it is very well understood that they're shocked 。

「 Flying in the sky using a red nosed reindeer that pulling a cart..... 」

「 giving a many present in the white bag for a good kid..... 」

「 red dressed uncle were..... 」

Shamue, Nikki, Mikazuki mouth were pakupaku (??) , breathing heavily and

「 「 「 Not real ! ? 」 」 」

Shouting in unison. With teary eyes that hauling a big tears. so they're that shocked.....

while disappointed and dropping their shoulder, the three were continue eating their meal 。

「 Nofofofo ! still there are that kinda culture, hiiro's world had many interesting thing desu ne~ ! 」 (Siva)

「 then what ? that day, giving a present to loved one to tell thanks to them is that what it's meaning ? 」 (Liliyn)

「 Well, its not wrong. the person is lover or family, and there are friends and a person that took care of them 」 (Hiiro)

「 .....to, to who are in love too? 」 (Liliyn)

it seems liliyn was attracted with a weird place and knit her eyebrows 。

「 hmm ? yes, but it is well, giving a present to a person that had no lover, and from that they became a lover is common thing too 」 (Hiiro)

「 tha tha tha that means it is okay to give it to a person you like ? 」 (Liliyn)

「 Yeah. At that time, the confession person will get an answer, then they will became a lover. That's why in my world Christmas can be referred as a day for the lovers, or the day that good for confession 」 (Hiiro)

「 he, heee (na,naruhodo)..... 」 (Liliyn)

Liliyn while touching her jaw mumbling about something, while i'm not interested in what seh think, i'm eating the soup.

(T/N: Hiiro's POV, just remember, the author like to change its point of view)

「ん？ hiiro-sama、that 《Eve》 what is it meaning？  
《Christmast》 is on the day 25 isn't it？」 (Silva)

「Well、Originally in the 24th and 25th day were  
《Christmast》」 (Hiiro)

「ho～」 (Silva)

「it's troublesome to describe so simply to say、24th evening is the start of 《Christmast》。That's why in other time they called it "Ccristmas", once i read in a book it's to make it diffrent. (hiiro)

「hohou, it's an interesting thing～」 (Silva)

Then with a 'Batatto (it's a sound effect' Liliyn stood.

「Yoshi ! then we will do a party ! a party!」 (Liliyn)

With a suggestion from Liliyn, at 25th day it will became a day for "Christmas party". Therefore, today we will diligently collect the material. Also, it's not just a food, we need to search a big tree too.

It's because, Liliyn want me to make a Christmas tree. Hiiro think it too troublesome, but everyone else is weirdly motivated, without a choice anymore he though of make it.

Because in the party Silva will show himself off and make a delicious food, Hiiro moves.

They make a goal of making food and searching for the big tree. Hiiro will search for the big tree, and Liliyn,,mikazuki co. will search for the material.

Then while walking in the forest, one of the girls had been leaked a sigh while looking at the tree.

「Wrong.....It's also wrong.....」



such murmur were passing the ear, but it seem the girl were no aware of that. When mikazuki approaches, she suprised.

「 u..um ! ? Wh、 Who ? 」

The sky color hair long until the shoulder waving. Using a red headband. The eye are a little bit squint but、 the style was good、  
『 Demon race 』 can be determined by her sharp ear and、 her little horn that peeking form the forehead.

Her age is possibly the same as Hiiro. When you see the appearance, it's not seems to be a traveler, maybe she came from a nearby village.

When asking about her name, she say it honestly.

「 i'm Allen. I'm here searching for something 」 (Allen)

I came here looking for a certain tree, She says. Any fruit that you desire will ripe in that tree.

「 N ~ Nande nande( why why?) ? Why does that tree need to drink ? 」 (Mikazuki)

[T/N : I think it's a gag, with minori (desire/pray for) with Nomi (drink)]

When the Mikazuki asked in curiosity, Allen make a dark look.

「 th, the truth is..... 」 (Allen)

The village that she lives ini, it's distant from other people, and it's far away from this place. She has a little sister there, and here little sister were caught in a disease. and, that's disease has a cure, it is the fruit that rippen from the tree.

「 That tree are here in this forest, but i can't find it... 」 (Allen)

Hiiro hear that story, if it him, he can cure any disease, but he had no obligation to do that, so he just stay silent.

If the nice person Arnold and Muir is here、 and definitely

pleading to hiiro to help the sister is what he think, Liliyn were the type that will move according to the prize too, Mikazuki is mikazuki that kind of clever come up will not come to her.

Allen says the characteristic of the tree, and hiiro think it's the same characteristic as a pear fruit.

「hohou, it is a convenient」 (Liliyn)

Wearing an unpleasant smile. It seems she digging up the information more, and try to locating the tree.

'Let's search it together' was what Liliyn said, and Allen while smiling lower her head many times.

「a, is it okay? even you guys have a work to do」 (Allen)

「no problem, don't mind it. kukuku」 (Liliyn)

「he, he~?」 (Allen)

「Nenee~(hey hey)、oneechan (big sister)、Is that tree big?」 (mikazuki)

Aski mikazuki while Allen answer it with a smile.

「yes, i hears it is a big tree. The tree name war 《Nijihikari tree》、the fruit and flower that blooms on the tree is so beatifull and leeking a light out i hear」 (Allen)

「hee, wanna see it!」 (Mikazuki)

For now, it's seem we were moving with a target to find the tree with Allen.

Walking a little bit、then Liliyn approaching hiiro.

「Oi Hiiro, you can search the tree with your magic right?」

It certainly is true, if we're just walking around searching like this is a hassle that i think right now.

『SEARCH』 is the word he activated、the word then changing

into a pale light, then the word became a guide.

「 Gosh ! ? A、 thi、 What... is this ? 」

Of course Allen became wary because of the sudden phenomenon, because hiiro is stay silent and walking through the path, she walk with them and keep her warriness herself.

And the light were extended to some cave, It seems that it giving an order to go to the cave.

「 Inside of there ? 」 (Allen)

「 Dunno 」 (Liliyn)

Liliyn answer her blandly, and keep walking without any wariness.

「 Ah, umm、 can i get an explanation ? 」 (Allen)

As expected, walking without any reason is make her wary and stopping her feet.

「 It's Okay ! It's because it's Master's magic ! 」 (Mikazuki)

「 huh ? 」 (Allen)

「 It seems that, in this way there are it ! The big tree ! 」  
(Mikazuki)

Mikazuki say so, not being convinced she came to hiiro for an explanation.

「 Ha~, Believe it or Not it's your choice 」 (Hiiro)

Answering it with an expresionless expression and walking deeper into the cave. Allen being fed up with them and stopping her feet, then Mikazuki grab her、

「 Let's go ! 」

seeing mikazuki say it with a big smile, she remebered her little sister. She walking again with a thought of let's trust them for

now。

The cave seems weird、 it;s seems it were climbing to the sky。  
While climbing in a spiral way, light is seen。

While Bathing in the sun、 exposing the body under the sun、  
there were a big and glorius tree rooted。

While sorrouned by mountans of rock, standing in the center  
with 20 meter lenght and it overwhelming pressence。

「 Fuwa ~ It's Big ~ 」 (Mikazuki)

While being dumbfounded mikazuki looking up by breaking her  
neck。 They seems to have they own though themself、 Hiiro's the  
only one that keep his composure and use a word 『Pry/  
Investigate』 、 and investigate is it really 《Nijihikari tree》 or not。

It is it, is what you feel because what you see is really a fir tree。  
but as you investigate it、 It really is 《Nijihikari tree》 。

But、 There were something suspicious。

「 .....There are not any flower that bloom..... 」

yes、 it was what Allen say it is 、 let alone the fruit that she  
wanted、 there were not even had a flower bud。 It's as id, the fir  
tree in front of them were just a decoration。

( I go it。 The flower bloom in the Raea.....in other word  
Summer..... )

Investigation result、 She were came in a opposite season。 Liliyn  
looking in the tree and 'fufun' to 'hoho' smiling 、 probably were  
happy that she found a big tree like waht she think。  
It certainly can make a big "Christmas tree", depending  
on the decorations。

But for Allen it will be Unfortunate。 Hiiro look at Allen with a  
depressed look、 want it or not he tell her。

「 The fruit will ripe in summer。 how about waiting until it

ripe ? 」

「 Lie ! 」

( .....Lie ? )

Interesting word came out.

「 What happen tsu ! if like that it will be late tsu ! It's because li'l sis is.....Shuno has been sick for a long time.....it'll be dangerous. That's why i can just depending on 《nijihikari tree》 the two of us..... 」

「 .....it is ? the two of us ? she is nearby here ? 」

「 yes、 There were settlement nearby、 She was there 」

「 i get it 」

「 And she says... she want to see it too 」

「 .....ha ? 」

「 you know ? this 《nijihikari》 you see、 when it comes to night the leaf will became a fruit、 and it will shine a beatifull light 」

That i know. it was from the investigation result、 i know it had that kind of speciality.

「 It was very beautifull. Shuno want to see it even if just once. that's why i brought her.....together with me 」 (Allen)

I understand、 Of course Curing the disease is the number one priority but、 It seems seeing 《Nijihikari》 lit in the darkness is an additional target.

But, sadly the season were completely wrong.

「 Oi, Why didn't you investigate it in advance ? 」 (Hiiro)

So、 If you know the flower will bloom in summer, you won't feel this kind of thing.

「I investigated it. After all 《Nijihikari》 supposed to bloom in Liu (Winter) ! 」

.....ha ?

Involuntarily hiiro had a blank look. Nope, this tree is undoubtedly 《Nijihikari tree》 it means, Investigation result, it speciality flower will bloom in summer.

( it reminds me this guy, when i say it will bloom in summer 、 she say i was lying )

When thinking like that, Now he used 『Understanding』 word, 《Status》 screen appears. in there Information about 《Nijihikari》 written as tall as mountain.

( .....So it's like that )

There i start to know that it is i who is wrong. The truth is 《Nijihikari》 had two kind of tree, the one to bloom in winter and the one who bloom in summer.

( well, she is an unlucky girl )

my side wish had been granted, thus able to rejoice beside a person who stricken to a despair is.....

「Kuhahahaha ! if it this big then it's good very good ! it will be a good 《Christmas Tree》 ! 」

「ooo ~ tsu ! 」

.....it seems two people can't read the mood.

「Okay Hiiro ! I will tell this to Silva ! tomorrow we will had a party ! a party ! 」

「i'll be looking forward to it ~ tsu ! 」

two of them were caught up in the party 、 and not looking the surrounding. then, with just that they came back to the cave.

Hihiro caught in a pity、 can't stand while looking at her and want to give her information about the 《Nijihikari》、 remembered there are still a part of book he don't read、 stay silent about the thing.

( this is..... )

In that moment, he feel hostility from the sky。 squinting his eyes while looking up、 there are a big winged sharp eyed beast coming here。

「 that is.....Thousand Hawk ! 」

reading and searching information from his memory。 if not wrong that is an A rank magical beast, Big hawk、 With its feature.....

「 Kwaaaaaa ! 」

With a sudden cry、 the same kind of magical beast pouring out。 there too many to count and its troublesome to count it。

( pop out.....it's call a thousand of companion。 that's why it is called.....Thousand Hawk )

Hihiro blame this thing happening because of Lilyn who go back first。 this thing is just a burden and troublesome thing to do。

「 hey drool bird ! hurry go back to the cave ! you too hurry up stand up ! 」

Mikazuki were running to the cave while screaming。 Hihiro call up to Allen that had sat down、 she still have a face that not aware of waht happen。

「 ku~tsu ! How troublesome ! 」

he hold her hand at once、 and running back to the cave。

if he can catch up to Lilyn who still walking in the cave、

「 what happen ? Some bird screaming profusely ? 」

given an explanation、

「ho、tomorrow it will vanish」

while walking like nothing had happen to the mouth of the cave、the scowl focusing on certain part.

「by the way hiiro, until when do you want to held that woman hand?」

Obviously she say's that with anger in her voice.

「it's because no matter how loud yelling to her, she doesn't hear without. noticing i grab her」

while telling the reason、Allen the person, still silent because disheartened.

Mikazuki pull her hand、and took her to the location of cottage.

they has come back and silva pour the tea to Allen cup、at least she calmed down a little

「tha, thank you very much」

「fofo, please drink it, to warming up your body」

kuitto moisten her throat, then she letting out white breath.

「I've heard the story. it was difficult. no、it's still difficult even now....」

「.....mother (はは)、it's not hopeless」

then, Silva and Shamue stare at hiiro. he know what they want to say but.....and start thinking then scratching his head. seeing her depressed like that, he think it's okay to gather more information. 先程のリリンたちとのギャップのせいで余計にそう思ってしまう。[Dafuq?] Sakihodo no riryin-tachi to no gyappu no sei de yokei ni sō omotte shimau.



google translate - Due to the extra I would think so the gap between the previous Riryin us.

bing

Because of the gap between the lilin who earlier thought in the bells and whistles.

「 .....oi, headband 」

「 .....e ? me ? 」

「 yes, you did you ever investigate about those tree ? 」

「 etto.....what i told you before is all i know..... 」

「 is that so, then that 《nijihikari》 in this season there's a possibility that it will be 《Versatile》 ? 」

「 .....Reincarnated ? 」 (The Versatile i used is from TENSEI word, well, just to make it different, i make allen say reincarnated :3)

《Versatile》 is not only 《Nijihikari》 private characteristic, there must be a special condition to fulfill it for example it's season, and there must be another tree that have opposite characteristic of it.

《転性》というのは《ニジヒカリ》だけの特性と言うわけではないが、ある一定の条件が整えばその性質が、もう一方の同じ存在であるが逆の特性を持つものになってしまう現象のことである

Although not necessarily refer to the characteristics of only "Nijihikari" because "rolling resistance", its nature if certain conditions are trimmed is, although it is the other of the same there would change to one having the inverse characteristics to phenomena is that. (GT)

"Versatile" that doesn't mean only the "nijihikari" property, that certain con  
(Bing)

the 《Nijihikari》 have 2 speciality but, one is the type that bloom in summer, and one is the type that will bloom in winter. For example if summer 《Nijihikari》 is, 《Reincarnated》 and do

does the winter.

「just the timing it's this season、 and more likely it is tomorrow」  
that is what written in 《Clarification》。

「is、 is that true ! ? 」

思わず日色に詰め寄ってくるが、 さっとそれを日色は避ける。

Although come Tsumeyo~tsu to involuntarily day color, avoid quickly it a day color

Involuntarily toward coming day, but quickly avoided it day

Involuntary she jumped to hiiro, and hiiro quickly avoided it.

「I'm not lying. just as i said before, it's up to you to believe it or not」

それだけ言うと、 さっさとコテージに戻ってしまった。残された  
皆は沈黙に包まれつつも、先に口火を切ったのはシウバだった。

Soredake iu to, sassato kotēji ni modotte shimatta. Nokosa reta  
mina wa chinmoku ni tsutsuma retsutsu mo,-saki ni kuchibi o kitta  
no wa shiubadatta.

If you say much, I've returned to quickly cottage. Also are all that  
are left while wrapped in silence, was sparked earlier was Silva.

Just say that's, he goes to the cottage as soon as possible. while the  
left behind people wrapped in silence, the first one to move their  
lips were Sylva.

「.....What happen ? 」

するとしばらく考え込むように黙っていたアルリエンは、

Suruto shibaraku kangaekomu yō ni damatte ita Ari En wa

The person that in her own world and stay silent Allen, Then

「.....あたしにはもう信じるしか道は残っていませんから」

Watashi ni wa mō shinjiru shika michi wa nokotte imasen kara

「For me... i just have the way to believe」

その道を日色なら幾つでも広げることができるのだがとは誰もが思ったが、彼女の決意を聞いてそれ以上何も言わなかった。

Sonomichi o hiiro nara ikutsu demo hirogeru koto ga dekiru nodaga to wa dare mo ga omottaga, kanojo no ketsui o kiite soreijō nani mo iwanakatta

The way is plentiful to open if it Hiirō, everyone thought. But, everyone didn't say anything because of her determination.

「そうでございますか。ならばその妹君もこちらへお連れしてはいかがでしょうか？　ここならば《ニジヒカリ》にも近いことですし」

Sōdegozaimasu ka. Naraba sono imōto-kun mo kochira e o-dzure shite wa ikagadeshō ka? Kokonaraba “nijihikari” ni mo chikai kotodesushi

「So it is like that. then, bringing that Little sister here is good isn't it? if it here, then <<Nijihikari>> is not distant」

「.....is it okay？」

「How does it sound mistress？」

「a? do what you like to do. Instead of that, i will go out for a bit」

「a、Schamue will go with you！」

Liliyn and Schamue, both gone somewhere.

「Then, let's go too. How about Nikki-dono, want to go with us? as a Bodyguard」

「O! Bodyguard!? What a good sound! Unworthy this Nikki! Will become a dependable bodyguard！」

ニカッと笑うニッキを見て、こんな子供で大丈夫と思ったような表情を浮かべているが、シウバもともに来るようなのでホッとした。

Nikatto warau nikki o mite, kon'na kodomo de daijōbu to omotta yōna hyōjō o ukabete iruga, shiuba mo tomoni kuru yōnanode hotto shita

Nikatto (i think it's an SFX) looking at smiling Nikki, if this child is alright kind of thinking appear in Allen face, but relieved because Sylva also coming along.

By the way, Mikazuki were sleeping next to Hiroyuki while drooling all over the place.

そして夜になり、皆がコテージ周辺に集まる。シウバがおんぶをして連れて来たシュノという少女は、そこで皆に自己紹介をした。

Soshite yoru ni nari, mina ga kotēji shūhen ni atsumaru. Shiuba ga onbu o shite tsurete kita shuno to iu shōjo wa, sokode mina ni jiko shōkai o shita

Then it's became night, everyone gather around the cottage. Girl that Sylva brought by piggyback is a girl named Shuno, There everyone self introducing themselves

見た感じ病気には見えない。アルリエンと同じ髪色だが、こちらはストレートでおかっぱ頭になっている。ニッキと同じ年頃のように、すぐに打ち解けたようだ。

Mita kanji byōki ni wa mienai. Arurien to onaji kami-irodaga, kochira wa sutorēto de okappaatama ni natte iru. Nikki to onaji toshigoro no yō de, sugu ni uchitoketa yōda.

She does not appear to sick. The same hair color as Allen but, it's Straight with bobbed hair. looking the same age as Nikki, and seems a bit relaxed now.

日色はシュノを『調査』の文字で調べてみると、確かに彼女の体は病に蝕まれていた。それは《硬化病》といって、幼い『魔族イビラ』の子供によくかかる病気らしい。

Hihiro wa shuno o “chōsa” no moji de shirabete miru to, tashikani kanojo no karada wa yamai ni mushibama rete ita. Sore wa “kōkabyō” to itte, osanai “mazoku ibira” no kodomo ni yoku kakaru byōkirashī

Hihiro Using 『Investigate』 Word to Shuno to learn about her、Sure the girl body infected with a disease。It's named 《Cure disease》 [twas sound better in japanese]、Young 『Demon Race』 often disease...

皮膚が硬質化してしまい、手足も自由に動かせなくなる病だ。

Hifu ga kōshitsu-ka shite shimai, teashi mo jiyū ni ugokasenaku naru yamaida

The skin Will be hardened, and it will make the person hard to move.

本来ならきちんと安静にしておけば自然と治るものなのだが、シュノの場合、それが重くなり心臓にまで手が届きそうになっているという。さすがに心臓のみならず、全身全部が硬質化すれば命は無い。

Honrainara kichinto ansei ni shite okeba shizen to naoru monona nodaga, shuno no baai, sore ga omoku nari shinzō ni made te ga todoki-sō ni natte iru to iu. Sasuga ni shinzō nomi narazu, zenshin zenbu ga kōshitsu-ka sureba inochi wa nai

It's normally will cured naturally with a rest, but Shuno case is different. it will be harder as the heart will be hard as well. as expected, if it goes to the heart, it's not just her mobility... she will also lost her life.

その特効薬として、《ニジヒカリの果実》があり、それを体に取り込めば病を治すことができるというのは本当らしい。

Sono tokkōyaku to shite, “nijihikari no kajitsu” ga ari, sore o karada ni torikomeba yamai o naosu koto ga dekiru to iu no wa hontōrashī

The antidote is, < <Nijihikari Fruit> >, it seems it's true if the body accept the fruit it will healed.

彼女の進行度も結構進んでいて、もう手足はほとんど動かせず、皮膚も石のように硬かった。

Kanojo no shinkō-do mo kekkō susunde ite, mō teashi wa hotondo ugoka sezu, hifu mo ishi no yō ni katakatta

Her progress seems to advanced, her hand and feet already cannot move. the skin also hardened like stone.

(それにしても、異世界はいろんな病気があるもんだな)

(Sorenishitemo, i sekai wa iron'na byōki ga aru monda na

(Even so, another world has many kind of disease...)

このまま自分が治したら一番早いのだが、彼女たちの望みはそれだけではない。《ニジヒカリ》が輝くのを見てみたいのだ。

Kono mama jibun ga naoshitara ichiban hayai nodaga, kanojotachi no nozomi wa sore dakede wanai. “Nijihikari” ga kagayaku no o mite mitai noda

If it like this, it's better to cured her as soon as possible. but, her wish is not only that. she want to see<<Nijihikari>>'s Shine too...

治すにしろ治さないにしろ、日色が動くのは、明日を経験してからだと思った。もし《ニジヒカリの果実》で治せるのならその方が一番良い。

Naosu ni shiro naosanai ni shiro,-bi-iro ga ugoku no wa, ashita o keiken shite karada to omotta. Moshi “nijihikari no kajitsu” de naoseru nonara sonokata ga ichiban'ii

Cured is not good enough not cured is not good enough, hiiro will move according to tomorrow experience. If <<Nijihikari Fruit>> will enough to cure her, then it was the best..

万能で規格外な力に頼るのは、最終手段の方が良いのは分かるのだが、日色はただ単に、力を使う義理が無いので、最後まで様子見しようと思っているだけだ。

Ban'nō de kikaku-gaina chikara ni tayoru no wa, saishū shudan no kata ga yoi no wa wakarū nodaga,-bi-iro wa tada tan'ni,-ryoku o tsukau giri ga nainode, saigomade yōsumi shiyō to omotte iru dakeda.

Just thinking of using an unknown power are a last option. Hiirō had no obligation to use his power for other people, I am going to see until the end, so hiirō though.

それからアルリエンとシュノは、日色たちとともに夜を過ごしていった。

Sorekara arurien to shuno wa,-bi-iro-tachi to tomoni yoru o sugoshite itta.

Thereafter Allen and Shuno were spending the night with Hiirō co.

明日、《ニジヒカリ》に花が咲くかは神のみぞ知る。アルリエンは空に浮かぶ星々に祈りながら明日のキセキを信じていた。

Ashita,“nijihikari” ni hanagasaku ka wa kaminomizoshiru. Arurien wa soraniukabu shinshin ni inorinagara ashita no kiseki o shinjite ita.

Tomorrow, <<Nijihikari>> will bloom or not is god knows. Allen Allen believe tomorrow Miracle will come, and praying to the sky.

この番外編の続きは明日の25日に更新します。

とても長くなりましたが、楽しんで頂けたらと思います。

This extra story will continue Tomorrow 25th. It became very long but, i hope you like it...

Kono bangai-hen no tsudzuki wa ashita no 25-nichi ni kōshin shimasu. Totemo nagaku narimashitaga, tanoshinde itadaketara to omoimasu.

TL NOTE: yeah... Author... it is VERY LONG... well... if for the author it will done tomorrow, for me it will be done in a month or two :3 \*PEACE\*

sorry for the different style~~ kinda lazy to use the same style~~~

Dont mind the little thing~~ just enjoy the story :3

open for error checking just comment :\*



# Special Chapter Christmas Night Miracle

~Latter Part~

Kurisumasu tokubetsu bangai-hen seiya no kiseki kōhen

Meris long, 25th in the morning.

Hihiro is always wake faster than anyone else, in the weather that colder than yesterday, he used 『Thermal sensation』 word again, then walking in the forest.

There was a girl that looking to a tree deeply. It was Allen. Brooding is what her face says, because he knew the reason, hihiro just stay silent.

「.....Ara? I'm sorry. did you perhaps came to looking for me? 」

Her eye a little red, probably she just crying. But, the girl make a smiling face, utter words in zany feel.

「I'm just taking a walk 」

Bluntly he said that, she laughed a little, soon look at him with a serious face.

「is it okay if i ask? 」

「What? 」

「.....Why did you know a lot about 《Nijihikari》? 」'

「Nothing, It's only a knowledge i got from book 」

「i did too investigate about many thing、but it is the first time i heard about 《Versatile [ten-sei(転性—i dunno what is that)]》」

「then, it's just your investigation that were not enough 」

In reality, the cheat power he used to investigated were not told.

‘i don’t want to talk about this topic more than this’ kind of look is let out by hiiro、

「 .....a wa wa、 then my luck is good 」

「 ..... ? 」

「 after all、 because i met you. That i’m not abandoning my hope 」

「 ..... 」

「 finding 《Nijihikari》 this fast too all thanks to your weird magic.then hearing the information about 《Nijihikari》 chance of bloom too..... that’s why i really feel gratefull. Thank you 」

Allen says kindly, giving her hand, and asking for a handshake. But Hiiro didn’t do anything, he think that he didn’t do anything enough to be thanked.

「 your thanks was too early. Your hope still not fulfilled doesn’t it ? After all it’s just my whim to give you the information 」

、

「 .....even so、 i feel grateful. Today that girl fate will be decided、 that is what i believe 」

Hold her fist tightly,

「 what i could do is to believe. What’s why i will believe it. That a Miracle will come 」

,

「 .....do as you like 」

Just saying that and leaving that palce. Then he hear Allen voice from behind him.

「 hey、 is it okay... to call you hiiro ? 」

「 .....do as you like 」

After everyone awake, ASAP they go to 《Nijihikari》 location.

As i suspect it still yesterday's 《Nijihikari tree (rainbow tree?)》、not a flower nor a bud is seen it means. With this it's really 《Versatile》 will happen, flower in nighttime will shine, thinking now will not change anything. More importantly, since it will be dangerous they check the surrounding.

It's a matter of the thousand hawk that attacking yesterday. It will be troublesome if they will attack it while they having a party.

Climbing the rock mountain will make you see the sky, but there was no beast presence felt. Even seeing it closely, thousand hawk whereabouts is none.

( it might already left from here..... ? )

While thinking about that,

「 Master ! Tell me more about the christ and mas guy ! 」

She want to ask 《Christmas tree》 's decoration. Even if she say that, hiiro himself in the orphanage had a little experience with decoration、but that day he used origami、used that to decorate, it mereley a simple ornament.

He had a little experience but、if it this big of a tree, is the partner the decoration to fill the tree and illuminated it were none.

「 for now it is okay to decorate it as you want. One that reflect the light will be better. and 《christmas tree》 」

`Toriaezu, sukinamono o kazareba idaro. Hikari o hansha suru yōna mononara nao ī. Ato “kurisumasutsuri”da'

Hearing Hiiro's word、Nikki and Mikazuki were letting out their bag.

「 what is this ? 」

Nikki brag her (found) smooth stone to Mikazuki.

「 Mu ~ Mikazuki have many thing too mo ~ n ! 」 '

Then what she brought out is、 white brush that have been used。  
This is from before、 the item that Sylva gave.

「 awawa ! It's not reflecting light~desuzo ! Mikazuki is  
stupid~desuna ! 」

Looking at the laughing Nikki、 Mikazuki were puku~ swelling her  
cheeks.

「 Iimon! ! (it's okay mon!) from now on i wil find ma~~ny  
more ! 」

Say that, then entering the cave.

「 a、 it's not fair zo ! I won't lose desuzo ! 」

Saying that and entering after Mikazuki.

「 .....N ? Where's Redloli?(akaloli) 」

Leaving sight from her just a little、 Lylyin that there before were  
missing.

「 e、 eto eto、 i it、 about that..... 」

Somehow awa awa Shamoe behavior became suspicious. Looks  
like hiding something. Looking at her direction of view、 Lylyn  
sitting atop of the rockmountain.

「 .....what did she do ? 」

「 A、 that、 umm.....de、 if it possibe it.....doing it gently if  
possible..... 」

From what she says it is a fact that lylyn want to do something  
but、 there's no big interest、 he changed his gaze to Sylva that  
along with shuno.

In Shuno side there was Allen holding her hands. Then shift his  
glance and enter the cave which nikki and co enter.

It's more smooth than what predicted. The cave had a crystal kind of thing, that had many kind of shape.

There's other kind of pretty stone, tree were decorated by many shape and style. And there come the countdown to the night.

Then the food is ready, sky began to covered by the darkness. Star showing itself, good smell drifting, still 《Nijihikari's tree》 doesn't give any respond.

Allen look gradually became sullen, Hiiro was completely silent and not say anything. In that unbearable state, the girl that held shuno hand, no one says anything.

Hiiro too, seeing the girl like that, he look up to the sky.

( a little cloudy isn't it..... )

The moon is not visible because covered by cloud.

「 ev ev, everyone ! The dinner is ready ! 」

Sylva letting out gorgeus and delicious meal(likely) out on top of the desk. Hiiro cheek loosen intentionally, Nikki and Mikazuki and Schamue's gaze became darken unknowingly. (T/N owhhh it's the gaze of...)

Hearing the reason, it seems that the decorated tree were, not letting a beautifull ray of light like what they hear from Hiiro.

There were no other choice. There were no electricity. Nor, magical beast that letting out a electricity, moonlight were not leaking out, it's still dark.

Somehow the air is heavy. The food is looking good but, in this kind of mood, the food will be bad because of the Air.

Then, lyllyn was getting closer.

「 what is this atmosphere ? 」 (T/N of course you know what i mean right?...)

「What redloli、 the work from yesterday is done ? 」

「u~~tsu ! wh、 why did you know ! ? 」

Her Face became red、

「you huh、 do you really believe you could hide that ? 」

Going somewhere alone、 just appear when it's time for eat、 then go leaving again。 With that kind of thing to do、 everybody could tell something about it、

「fu、 fun ! It、it's nothing、 it got nothing to do with you ! 」

「is that so 」

淡白にそう返すと、ムッと頬を膨らませて睨みつけてくる。(T/N: anyone know this meaning?)

Inflatable and return parsnips so stuffy and cheek, applying.

When bland to return so, come glared inflatable a stuffy cheek.

When so it returns to pale white, being able to add mutsu and the cheek, it is accustomed to glaring

Tanpaku ni sō kaesu to, mutto hoho o fukurama sete niramitsukete kuru.

「shuno~tsu ! 」

Suddenly scream were heard。 The scream keeper was Allen、

「Aa.....she became hard~tsu ! 」

Just by looking、 Shuno's face and skin that looked normal before、 starting to become like a rock. Allen keep screaming while crying.

「Please tsu ! 」

Then, she combine her hands and start praying to 《Nijiko》。

「Please tsu ! I beg you ! I beg you... light... give us your light ! 」

Everyone in that place, drowned by the atmosphere, the pray became more and more intense.

Whether it's a bad luck, or disaster looking at 《Nijiikari》 there's no respond、 just letting out tears only.

「 anything! I will do anything... that's why... please... save my little sister... save Shuno-tsu ! 」

Hearing the heartbreaking cry、 Sylva approaching Hiiro.

「 Hiiro-sama 」

「 i know what jii-san want to say。 you want me to cure her right ? 」

「 ..... 」

His silent is the answer.

「 .....Ha、 Then i'll help just a little。 It's because this atmosphere make me tired 」

Saying that、 『Sunny』 word is writed 。 the effect of the word makes the star shining brightly.

Hiiro climb the rock mountain、 still until now combine her hand and praying, Allen is looked.

「 oi headband、 do you really believe of miracle ? 」

Then the back is pikuri(SFX) moved、

「 .....E ? 」

「 do you really believe in miracle i say。 That feeling、 until now do you still belive it ? 」

「 .....Ob coutse-tsu ! (of course!) 」

While holding the tears for the sake of screaming, it's hard to perceive though, her will was told.

「 then just wait a little, i will make that miracle happening 」

Hiroyuki face is, little by little appeared because the light of the moon. Then that light, pouring to the 《Nijihikari tree》。

「 .....Moonlight 」

「 .....E ? 」

「 Moonlight is the condition for 《Versatile》 to happen 」

「 Th、 Then..... 」

Allen eye's full of expectation.

「 Still, whether 《Versatile》 happen or not is based on luck. There's no prove that it will happen. For now there just.....pray to do 」

While everyone watching patiently, thanks to the decoration that reflecting the light kirakira to 《Nijihikari》。

But nothing happen. Little by little Allen dragged to despair. But, seeing upside, facing up a little there's you found 《Nijihikari》。

And then.....

.....from the branch appear the bud.

The bud is growing, there is flower bloom. More and more flower filled the 《Nijihikari》。

Yes, the miracle is happening.

After that from the center of the flower, puku ~ to like a bubble a thing is appearing.

「 So it's like that. That is 《Nijihikari's fruit》、 Known as 《shabon mochi》 huh 」



countless 《shabon mochi》 shining in raibow color。 What surprising is、 it's just like a 《Christmas tree》 substitute、 it's wrapped around a bright light。

「 in、 incredible desuzo～o ! 」

「 pretty～～ ! kui ～ ! 」

「 fue～e～e～e.....it's beautifull desu～u 」

Nikki and Mikazuki showing full bloom smile happily。 Schamoe looking at it while looking dreamy。

「 Nofofofofo ! Korewa(this)korewa(this)、 wonderfull spectacle desuna ! Nofofofofo ! 」

「 Fumu、 it's certainly is impressive 」

Lylyin too say her satisfaction。

「 Thank you very much ! Thank you very much ! 」

「 it's good to believe 」

Allen that receive Hiiro's word、 giving a large nod and、 immediately took 《shabon mochi》、 and try to give it to shuno。  
だがモチモチとしている < <Shabon mochi> > は、 it's hard to let the sick to eat it。

「 I beg you ! I want to steam this ! Can youu do it ! 」

Pleading to sylva、 that laughing a bit

「 of course de gozaimasu 」

Letting out the cooking utensil for the shadow、 then prepare it to steam it。

Allen said、 the steamed mochi starting will melt、 and change to liquid form。 If you do that it will be easier to give it to the sick person。

Putting the palm sized mochi to a cup, then steam it atop of

bamboo steamer。

「faster...faster.....i beg you tsu ! 」

Allen praying、it's finally steamed up、when opening the lid、The cup had subsided things filamentous. It was transferred to a soup dish, carries to Shuno's mouth with a spoon.....

Gulp.....

Certainly shuno's throat rang. Then、the progressing disease is pitatto(SFX) stopped、the closed eyes were opened faintly.

「Shuno-tsu ! 」

「.....o.....ne.....cha'(bi..g...sis..) 」

Allen hug her with all her power。

「Thank godness tsu ! Thank goodnessssssss tsu ! 」

All her might letting out the cry of joy。

「it was a close call 」

Sylva pat his chest。But at that time、

「Kuwaaaaaatsu ! 」

A recognized voice of beast is heard。Like a joke、in the sky there was many thousand hawk coming。

「this is... again..... 」

Sylva too rub his beard while looked troubled。

「fueeeeeetsu ! Amazing number tsu ! 」

「Troublesome smallfry crawling 」

Schamoe is swallowed in fear、Lylyin had a look of dismal。

「hoe ~、come desuzo..... 」

「good luck nikki ~」

「a、this Mikazuki ! Since when ! ?」

Without anyone realized Mikazuki has cheering Nikki atop of rock mountain. While Allen hug Shuno while protecting her.

Then in front of Hiiro、one of the thousand hawk is eating 《shabon mochi》。

( N ? they... is it..... )

What they targetting might be 《shabon mochi》 since the first time. This might be one of their food field、based on the weather they might come here because it's hte weather.

「is 《shabon mochi》 taste good ?」

Hearing the word Allen says。

「u、umm。 It should get the first rank in delicacy ?」

「E , ē. Ichiō chinmi to shite saishu ranku ga takai hazu yo?」

「.....wha ?」

The word that cannot miss heard.

Kikizute naranai kotoba ga kikoeta.

「delicacy.....you say ? And it's good ?」

Chinmi.....dato? Sore ni umai?」

「e, e e.....」

What Allen says, make Hiiro somehow feel terrible.

「hohou, then it will be too god for them」

After heating that、 he says word to Sylva and Nikki.

「Stupid disciple、 at all cost protect the 《shabon mochi》 ! Old

man, keep the delicacy and don't let it get snatch ! 」

「 allright desuzo ! 」

「 leave it to me 」

「 yosh!, let's go stupid disciple 」

「 yes tsu ! 」

When Nikki jump、 magic were harboring in her fist、

「 ichigeki kei kill !    《bakuken》 tsu ! 」

The thousand hawk that touched Nikki fist were exploded.

「 it will coming more zo !    Achaaaa tsu ! 」

One after one the beast were attacked

「 kuwaaaaatsu ! 」

One of it is approaching lylyin。 But lylyin eyes were shining red、 、 the thusand hawk that seeing the eyes were collapsed to the ground with it's eyes white。

「 fu~n、 small fry 」

The magical beast that try to steal Sylva cooking、 get multiple meal knife in their head, that sylva took out from his bosom。

「 Nofofofo !    You should not come here ? 」

The enemy indeed small fry、 but Hihiro take too much time while handling it one on one.

「 should i do it all at once 」

Letting his index finger harboring mana。

『Frozen』 and 『Magical beast』 word were writen。

After that the uncounted thousand hawk go stiff。 Pouring from the

sky like a rain. Then meet with the ground and splattering around like an ice cube became a pieces.

While around the 《Nijihikari》 the 『Protection』 word was used. For protecting it from the pouring magical beast.

「fu he e, as expected from master desuzo ! 」

Says Nikki proudly with a smile in her face.

「yoshi、 extermination complete. Shall we go to meal time 」

「 《shabon fried mochi》 and 《shabon juice》 。 And then 《shabon mochi》 that included in 《wild vegetable soup》 were ready 」

Sylva immediately explain every 《shabon mochi》 dish for the party. Including the meat from thousand hawk that Nikki brought down.

Shuno that awaken in preparation beside Allen was letting a smile. Everyone gathering and says 「itadakimasu」 that starting the meal.

「amu.....muo tsu ! ? 」

this 《shabon mochi》 was、 crisp on the outside、 but the insides were surprisingly soft enough. And from the insides comes out a soup, that unbelievably delicious.

And 《Shabon juice》 was、 simply letting out a strong acid like a fruit juice. When you take a sip, ut's like a power gushing out from your body.

《wild vegetable soup》 that contain 《shabon mochi》 。 When it move to mouth, it really is a new texture. It has a texture like a mochi but、 that just in the outside、 while the inner layer were puchitto like texture were tasted.

It was a good large thing feeling. It's unpredictable that 《shabon mochi》 this delicious.

「allright then、 this is a dish that hiiro-sama ask、 please enjoy 」

Then what showed is 、 yep、 the thing that cannot be forgotten in 《Christmas》 it was 《christmas cake》 。 It was just a simple cake with a white cream but、 it was a cake that including many type of fruit and 《shabon mochi》 a cake with a colorfull beauty。

「 Nofofoto ! I name it 《shabon cake》 degozaimasu ! 」

Nikki and mikazuki co were really happy that make their cheek stretched。 Tasting a nostalgic cake、 hiiro too delightfull and saying satisfactory。

Meanwhile a white little thing is dancing in the sky while pouring to the ground。

「 N ? .....is it snow ? 」

What coming is really a snow。 Without anyone notice、 sky was covered by cloud、 and a gift from the heaven has come down。

「 《white christmas》 isn't it 」

«shabon mochi» that emit light itself start to make the big «christmas tree» shine a reflection of it light、 while the snow that receive the light were glittering。

「 o、 oi hiiro ! 」

Hiiro that looking to the sky looking to the person who had the voice . Behind him, Lylyin that blushed. The body were squirming that indicated she is embarassed。

「 .....What ? 」

She extend her arm in from of him。 Because he think, he will be punched, without thinking he evaded. But that's not a punch, when he see it carefully it was a rosary ring。

「 .....What's that ? 」

「 i、 i i i i t's.....umm..... 」

Near it、 for some reason schamoe say 「 good luck desu ojousama

(mistress)」 with a low voice.

That rosary ring was, apparently a thing that created with a crystal, was equipped in beatifull sheen. It's just the right size to put it on the arm.

「ku, kukukuku 《christmas present》 da~~tsu ! 」

There the riddle was solved. From yesterday, Lylyin behavior was weird, because she was preparing this. Hihiro take the ring into his hand and stare it.

「i, it was ! is a thing that processed by my mana, it's a magic tool that can restore your mana ! 」

「hou (TN:impressed kind of voice) 」

That was a convenient item. Magic of mine(jibun) is used a lot of mana, this is a perfect item to improve my recovery rate.

「this you giving it ? 」

「do, do, dont get the wrong impressionz ! I, it's just a protoype, there were not in the slightest me thinking of making that especially for you..... 」

「ah, i know it 」

「.....u~u..... 」

Somehow glared me wistfully but i dont know what the reason. But because i was given, there must be a gratitude.

「i've got a good thing. Sankyuna (thank you) 」

「a.....u.....a~u..... 」

For a moment there i think there's a steam coming out of her face, she quickly avert her face to schamoe.

Then sylvia who was there, became red seeing lylyin,

「fuoooooooootsu ! How lovely gozaimashou ! This sylvia

was.....sylva was.....being touched degozaimaaaaaaaaasu ! 」

「 read the mood a little you pervert stupid butler ! 」

「 jinlge tsu ! ? 」

Sylva that jumped , while in air、 get an extreme uppercut from lylyin.

「 be.....bell yu.....」

`Be.....-beri ~yu.....'

Gakutto (SFX) the pervert dive into the ground. Schamoe looking at sylva who bloodsoaked saying 「 scourge's christmas ! 」 、 while hiiro think lively people as always huh.

After the event、 shuno that became better、 with allen says、 we will return to our village.

「 we really in your care 」

「 th、 thank you very much ! 」

Shuno too give a greet in good spirit. Allen was giving thanks to every one by one、 then the last person is hiiro.

「 receive it this time 」

So to say she give a handshake. Without any choice he grab the hand、 and quickly being pulled. An then.....

.....chi~yu~tsu

Warm feeling were feeled in his cheeks. (ew... in cheeks? Just in cheeks?! A kiss of course :v)

「 aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa ! 」

The one who screamed was Lylyin. Hiiro wearing a blank look as to not know why did he receive something like that. Then the smiling allen say、



「 thank you Hiiro ! This is a feeling of gratitude yo ! 」

Saying that, while having a red shy cheeks running from that place.

「 see you later ! All of you ! Thank you very much ~ ! 」

「 fueeeeee tsu ! Allen is a bold woman tsu ! 」

「 Nofo fo fo fo ! I'm not crying ! I want my cheek to be kissed too i's not like i'm envious or something zo~o ! 」

「 m、 my master is doing something perverse ! ? 」

「 N ~ what's wrong with just a kiss ? 」

Many opinion were sayed about the kiss、 the most in rage was、

「 kukukukuku、 so it is、 that little girl.....looks like she doesn't need a life 。 next time we meet i'll make her head mixed wi..... hey Hiiro、 until when do you want to look stupid like that ! Or is it ! So it's true you like a woman that have abnormally grown breast so to say! 」

As expected it's a berserk mode little girl.

While hiiro touching his cheek、 wearing a tired look he sigh.

「 ha~、 it looks like i got hit know, damn headband 」

Knowing how troublesome this situation is Hiiro is、 brought back to the reality looking up to sky.

「 well, yesterday was fun 」

Then the time is back to 《christmas》、 similiarly heroes too making a party 【Victorius】 in the castle.

「 however、 in this cold season... why should eru and co. patrolling border 」

The one who says that was one of the 4 summoned heroes Aoyama Hiroshi.

「well、 that is their job so it can't be helped doesn't it ? 」

Suzumiya chika answer while letting in the food into her mouth.  
She is a hero too.

「 still、 under such a cold weather、 it's really amazing 」

Minamoto Juri nodding in approval、 to the exclamation.

「 aint it okay、 if we are still here next year、 we'll do it again 」

Akamori shinobu says cheerfully.

「 still in everyone world were、 had this kind of thing is a surprised 」 (i know it's kinda puzzling~~ sorry... T-T)

The 1st princess lilis sitting beside taishi says with a kind voice.

「 a、 let's changing present by now ze ! 」

Everyone nod in taishi's word、 everyone hold their own present.  
Then taishi closing his eyes、 singing 《christmas song》 and 《jingle bell》 。

By the song、 left and right everyone rolling their present to the person beside them. After a while taishi's song stopped、 the present in front of them is become theirs.

「 Ouu ~ ! This is gloves huh ! 」

Taishi opening the cover to check what insides. Gloves for men had been wrapped clearly in there.

「 A、 that's mine desu ! 」

Apparently it was a gift from lilis.

「 but lilis、 if anyone beside me receive this it can't be helped..... 」

「 no、 i've got a premonition that my present will definitely comes to hiroshi-sama ! 」

Getting a big smile from lilis, taishi cheek became red. While chika giving a 'that's not funny' kind of face.

「that fool, aa his nose became longer aa i don't want it」

a mood with lilis is unforgivable, obvious jealousy is visible. The other two that look her giving a wry smile.

「a, s=chika, that present was mine ! Somehow i'm sorry, i can only manage that !」

「E ? th, this is.....taishi's.....present ?」

When opened what inside is, a music box. It's white thing that taishi can make by requesting it in town.

「so, so.....so it seem. This is taishi's.....eee」

The person that in a bad mood, made a smile. Then just like before lilis looking at chika, again it's a annoyed face, lilis inflating her cheek.

「Muu, bu, but the present that hiroshi sama hold is just mine desu !」

「w, what ! I too am get a present from taishi !」

「i, it's just a luck !」

「so do you !」

Sparkle sparkle sparkle, a spark could be seen between the two, taishi starting to have a cold sweat on his back.

「Ne taishi !」

「Hiroshi-sama !」

Being approached by the two taishi took a step back.

「Today i want to hear it clear !」

「that's right, hiroshi-sama !」

「u、umm.....for now would you two calm down ? 」

Juri and Shinobu were looking at those battle。

「 whatever they say, it is peace doesn't it 」

「 s、 so it seems 」

「 A, a snow ya ! It's pouring in here too ! 」

「 Ha ~、 Beatifull desune 」

二人は触らぬ神に祟り無しな精神で、距離を一定に保っていた。  
(dunno anyone know what the meaning of this?)(if i rephrase it it maybe)

The two of them getting a cursed from untouchable god, keeping a distance.

futari wa sawaranu kami ni tatari-nashina seishin de, kyori o ittei ni tamotte ita.

「 so、 someone save meeeeeee ! 」

In resonate with the eve、 was a sound of harem creator。

-----TN

NOTE~~~~~

DONEEEEEEE! I want to make it out in 24th of december~~ so it's like the preset of the story~~ but faster release is much better doesn't it? :3

I know i'm a noob, so there's many phrase that ~~~ :v

#your love ChronaZero :\*

## 190th episode – That thing she held in her hand

「Father, are you safe! 」 (Regulus)

「Yeah, fortunately that extreme magic was closely avoided. 」  
(Leowald)((極大 means “maximum”/ “extremely large”. Duh.))

「Extreme magic..... was it? 」 (Reggy)

「Yeah, it is without doubt what is referred to as ancient magic, dark sorcery to be used by nobody but the Maou only. 」 (Leo) ((Don't wanna translate it as magic twice in a row ...))

「That's what that just now was? 」 (Reggy)

「Yeah, that aria you heard gave me the creeps. There's no way that youth has actually mastered it. 」 (Leo) ((Lit.: “the aria [...] froze my entrails”))

「It is assured that it is that strong? 」 (Reggy)

「I once saw the previous Maou using it. 」 (Leo)

「What kind of magic was it? 」 (Reggy)

「..... a spontaneous discharge. 」 (Leo)

「..... wha-? 」 (Reggy)

「It ended with a spontaneous discharge as the previous Maou's power was cut off. The result it brought forth..... is this crater. 」 (Leo)((whoops.))

「.....eh? 」 (Reggy)

—

After hearing the unexpected information Regulus was at a loss of words.

—

「Nay, rather than saying there was a spontaneous discharge, it's probably no exaggeration to say that fellow allowed it to spontaneously misfire. Although there was originally a town right here, it was annihilated in an instant. 」 (Leo) ((Whooops.))

A gulping sound was to be heard from Regulus' throat.

「Th-that's the first time I hear this kind of story. I only knew about rumors claiming a meteorite had fallen down here..... 」 (Reggy)

「Right. That isn't entirely a mistake. A gigantic pitch-black meteorite fell right here. However, it was the deed of previous Maou Avorus. You are my successor, so I would have told you once you replaced me. 」 (Leo)

「I-is that so..... S-so the Maou really attempted to use that magic right now? 」 (Reggy)

Hearing the story, fear ran down his spine. Leowald was also wearing a grave expression.

「No, her version of the aria differed from his in various parts, so as it wasn't really the same, but something of similar might and strength..... probably. 」 (Leo)

「..... so she isn't able to do it. 」 (Reggy)

As Regulus recognized the significance of this, he wept the sweat from his forehead and glared at Eveam.

「Yeah, even if the opponent uses the ancient dark magic against me, I honestly tell you to catch victory then. But still, as one would expect from the current Maou. 」 (Leo)

「Eh? 」 (Reggy)

「When the prior Maou used the aria, his face was distorted by pain, and in contrary, that person was quite peaceful during her recitation. Prodigy ..... is what one would call such a person. 」

And in accord with his bad habit, a strong joy could be seen on Leowald's face as he noticed his opponent's true strength.

「Listen, Regulus, we have to make sure that she is absolutely never allowed to complete that aria, do you understand me? 」 (Leo)

「Yes! 」 (Reggy)

「Your Majesty, are You safe? 」 (Mari)

「Y-yeah, Marione, I'm sorry. Your chance failed because of me..... 」 (Eve)

She gritted her teeth in regret.

「Nay, I was unable to completely stop that guy as well. 」 (Mari)

Apparently Marione was accusing himself for his mortifying weakness as well.

「I nearly completed it..... but just like in the previous generation's fight it was stopped by the Beast King. 」 (Eve) ((naturally, she is referring to her brother.))

「Well, I was surprised when they chose this place as the duel's location, but there might be a reason why it is exactly here. 」 (Mari)

「Yeah, there is no doubt my predecessor's doings are the 『Evila』's stain. In order not to forget the tragedy, I thought it was a good idea to choose this place as the location. 」 (Eve)

「..... 」 (Mari)

「Sin remains sin. Therefore, instead of forgetting the sin, it is absolutely necessary that we put every last effort into building up peace again while carrying that burden on our shoulders. 」 (Eve)

「Your Majesty..... 」 (Mari)

「We absolutely cannot afford to lose here, Marione! Whether we were burdened with this sin because of ourselves or not, we ought to shoulder it and make our way to the other side! 」 (Eve) ((Lib.:

私たちは背負われる存在ではなく、背負う存在になり、罪に向かい  
合わねばならないんだ！))

「..... As you wish. 」 (Mari)

After Marione politely bowed his head, he once again lifted his face to stare at the enemy.

「I will prepare a chance for the magic for sure this time. Your Majesty, please focus on completing the spell. 」 (Mari)((once again, no difference between magic/spell))

「..... I entrust it to you, Marione. 」 (Eve)

Both sides begun clashing into each other again. Leowald used 《Wildfire Conversion》 as his full-body 《conversion》, apparently eager to end the duel at once. But Marione as well, now fortunately well-informed about the opponent's scope of power, moved as he saw the disadvantage of Leowald closing the gap between their distant positions.

「Dammit! As I thought, you behave just like the first time we fought, Marione! 」 (Leo)

Nevertheless, a delightful smile floated across his face as he shouted.

「Now that's what you said! Black Ash! 」 (Mari)

「I'll never ever be hit by that again! 」 (Leo)

Although he swiftly evaded on the spot, thick black fog chased after him nevertheless. Thereafter a mass of water aiming at the fog came flying. And then, as the water approached the front of the mist, it suddenly started to change its form.

—

「《Water Orb》! Container Form! 」 (Reggy)

And really, the water orb emitted by Regulus changed its form, shaping a bag as it proceeded to cover the fog.



「 Well done, Regulus! I'll handle the Maou now! 」 (Leo)

As he wanted to finish Eveam while Regulus was restraining Marione, he couldn't see her figure no matter where he looked.

「 Whoa..... where did she go? 」 (Leo)

He couldn't even find her as he checked the skies. If he didn't find her quickly, she surely would be able to finish the aria for her ancient dark magic soon.

As he panicked and looked around hastily, he was able to find her figure behind Regulus.

「 When did she-!? I-is it that, from the outset she aimed to strike him unnoticed while we were on the lookout for her magic! 」 (Leo)

If he didn't stop her immediately, they probably would be beaten. Regulus was not aware of his back as he concentrated on his 《Binding Technique》 .

「 Regulus! Behind you! 」 (Leo)

「 Eh?! 」 (Reggy)

After hearing Leowald's cry, he noticed Eveam approaching from behind. She held a sword in her hands. At this rate, he would receive a direct hit.

「 I-i cannot afford to let you do this! 《Water-style Conversion》 ! 」 (Reggy)

He therefore interrupted his use of 《Water Orb》 in order to focus on 《Conversion》 .

「 Don't think this sword is just an ordinary blade! 」 (Eve)

Eveam pulled the sword overhead, directly using it in order to rip the watery blue colored Regulus apart. Being literally split in half, an enormous moan was to be heard from Regulus.

「 Regulus! 」 (Leo)

As Leowald tried to assault Eveam, she instantly spread her wings and fled into the sky. But as she did, her spoiled wing began to gradually bring her down again.

Seeing her struggle, it was Marione, now freed from the 《Water Orb》, that came to her aid.

「Your Majesty! 」 (Mari)

「I-I'm fine..... 」 (Eve)

Meanwhile on the ground, Leowald rushed to Regulus' side, confirming his safety. As the ripped body part returned to its original form, Leowald growled as he saw Regulus distorting his face in agony.

「That wasn't just an ordinary physical attack. That sword..... 」 (Leo)

Thereupon, as he closely observed the sword carried by Eveam, he noticed a familiarity in the fine blade.

「As I thought, it's similar to the sword Marione created that time. 」

Really, the sword held by Eveam was just like the 《Earth-governing Épée》 that Marione drew from the earth. ((épée is supposed to be french for "sword"... meant here is a particularly fine and small blade. And french seems to suit the Mustache Baron ...))

That sword was made of magic itself, being a 《Spirit Blade》 it was able to deal damage even to 《Conversion》.

「Regulus, show that you're a man. This doesn't end here. 」 (Leo)

「Stu.....pid..... I-i know that! 」 (Reggy) ((Baka!)) ((no, he doesn't use that.))

Even though blood was dropping from his forehead, it didn't seem like he was unable to continue fighting yet.

「It seems like you're still able to do it. 」 (Mari)

「Yeah, but that 《Conversion》 brought naught but trouble. Now we have to play for time and use the aria. 」 (Eve)

「Yes, and if the Beast King tries to intervene, I will stop him. Even in exchange for my life. 」

「.....no, I won't allow you to lose your life. However, I expect you to give your best until the very end. 」 (Eve)

「..... as you wish. I'd guess that youngster won't be able to move. By any means I will lay victory into Your Majesty's hands! 」 (Mari)

「Gotcha! 」 (Eve)

As they were flying into high skies once more, she begun clapping her hands in rhythm again.

「Not good..... 」 (Leo)

Seeing Eveam's actions, Leowald understood that he had to move as well.

(What to do..... use the 《Phenomenon Ceremony》 to end it at once? Nay, if it fails she will be able to complete her ancient magic. But still, the only way to stop her would be the 《Phenomenon Ceremony》 after all..... now that's really a disadvantageous position.....)(Leo)

Finishing his trouble in deciding the next move, Leowald —

(Well! At any rate we'll take down Marione with a swift attack first! And without a moment's delay the Maou is gonna be next! )  
(Leo)

Leowald's body was flaring up with flames.

「Regulus, just protect your body! 」 (Leo)

Leaving him with just those words, Leowald jumped up high again. Being in a faint state, the mouth only a straight line, the

teeth clenched, only a faint 「Yes」 was to be heard from Regulus as he stared at his father leaving him.

---

「I'll stop you here by all possible means, Beast King! 」 (Mari)((I'm thinking... “Shishiou” sounds better than “Beast King, doesn't it?))

「Passing through! 」 (Leo)

Once again Marione's body was covered by thick black fog.

「I'll pour all my magical energy into you this time! 」 (Mari)

「Uurhg! 」 (Leo)

Experiencing Marione's determination, a smile was floating on Leowald's face even in his tough situation.

「As one would expect..... from Marione..... but I'm not called Beast King for nothing as well! 」

Leowald's body became increasingly seething hot, burning even.

「HAaaaaaaaaaaaaah! 」

「UUoooooooooooooooooh! 」

Both of them mutually put all their effort into breaking the other one's spirit.

Seeing such resolution in Marione, Eveam decided to behave likewise. Thus she was absolutely determined to chant the aria without fail this time.

「My Darkness that dwells in the Abyss of the Beginning, God of Death, Bringer of Chaos in Dark Hours, Forebringer of the renewal of the All-creation, I summon thy fragment of power upon me.....」 (Eve) ((A note: last time I wrote “Destruction of the all-creation” ... it's both correct. This is the E.N.D. (hint, hint.) – and the beginning. Meant is the new start of a cyclical process involving the death and the birth of ... everything.))

Dark clouds were formed out of nothingness in the sky over Eveam as she was accumulating her power. She then directed her hands up into the clouds as she made a gesture as if to grab a sword.

—

「 Oh power which allows me to overthrow every last One standing in my way..... 」 (Eve)

—((By the way that “pierce hiiim!” last time ... was probably coming from Leo, and falsely translated.))

As she faced her hand in the black cloud, turning her head to the skies as it gradually began to transform, she suddenly opened her eyes widely and —

「 Fang of the Fist Blade, become! 」 (Eve)

From within the darkness, a large sword was created in her palm.

「 Damn!? As if it were a crimson 《Phenomenon Ceremony》 ..... 」

Leowald was determined to throw himself at Eveam with all of his remaining strength, but in this very moment he saw a figure appearing behind her. In an instant, his eyes flew open with might and main.

「 .....Regulus.....? 」 (Leo)

Really, it was Regulus himself. Now, behind Eveam, he approached and restrained the wings on her back.

「 Ha!? 」 (Eve)

Focused only on her aria up to now, Eveam only became aware of Regulus' existence as he grabbed her. Hearing her scream, Marione raised as well.

「 Your Majestyyy! The sword has already manifested! Now concentrate, or .....!? 」

Taken aback by those words, Eveam looked at the sword in her hands. Thereupon, the sword began to grumble from inside as it began to crumble, and everyone, discovering the possibility of an explosion, grew pale.

「Your Majesty! You have to throw that sword away! 」 (Mari)

Just as Marione told her, she threw it into the skies in a hurry with utmost strength. And the tossed sword creaked as it inflated just as a balloon would.

BogooooooooOOOOOOOOON!

A tremendous explosion emitted from the sword.

「Kyaaaaa!? 」 (Eve)

「Uwaaaaaaaaa!? 」 (Reggy)

Eveam and Regulus, being quite close to the explosions epicenter, were instantly blown away by its tremendous momentum.

And Even though Marione and Leowald wanted to protect the two of them, they received the blast and were blown off as well.

Those who were watching the duel from the surroundings also felt the explosion's might and were at a loss of words. Even though the sword had been thrown up considerably high, the four contestants had been blown away by it as they were still quite close to the detonation itself, and if someone died that could be considered as unfortunate, but not surprising.

「A magical explosion ..... huh. 」 (Lily)

Hihiro nods in agreement with Lilyin's murmured words.

「Yeah, and one of significant scale. 」 (Hihiro)

「Do you think they're safe? 」 (Lily)

「I think you can entrust that to the old man. 」 (Hihiro)

As the referee, Silva was in the crater as well, so supposedly was effected by the explosion as well, but he strangely had the feeling that this guy was unhurt.

Just in case Hiroyuki checked the surroundings in his view as well. Thereupon he was able to detect Leowald and Marione. Apparently the two of them crashed into the rocks, but they seemed safe from what he saw. Marione was somehow hurt, but there was the damage he received in both his battles to take into consideration, so it was alright for him to walk with a little struggle, and Leowald was walking calmly, even nonchalant, after he got out of his boulder.

( But still, that physical durability is just a cheat, isn't it. )

In utmost amazement he could do nothing but stare at Leowald's carefully trained body.

—(( ... Hiroyuki harem member confirmed.))

Apparently the two of them were looking for Eveam and Regulus as well. Accordingly, Silva raised his hand to validate their safety. In a haste they went there, where.....

.....laid the collapsed body of the unconscious Eveam.

Thus, as he saw her figure, Marione involuntarily broke to his knees. As it was only to expect. With this, as Eveam, burdened with the 'King' role in this fight, laid down, unable to carry on, they were defeated in this duel.

As Marione went to her side —

「 I am ..... so terribly sorry ..... your Majesty ..... 」 (Mari)

Much sound was to be heard as he grinded his teeth and snorted for at least a whole minute. But there —

「 I see, so the Maou as well lost consciousness. 」 (Leo)

He heard Leowald's voice from behind.

「Argh..... spare me the sarcasm, Beast King! Now that her majesty is in this ..... state ..... what did you just say? 」 (Mari)

Marione slowly turned around, finding Leowald with a solemn but dark expression. Accordingly he was taken aback, his breath taken away. Leowald was carrying Regulus in his arms, who fainted just like Eveam did.

So that's why Leowald said 「the Maou as well」 a while ago. Because Regulus had lost his consciousness in the explosion as well.

「Good grief..... I even told him to just protect his own body and observe. 」

So said Leowald as he looked at Regulus in his arms, but expression of his son was somewhat calm. Before his face was dominated with pain when he even tried to move his body, but he acted to stop Eveam nevertheless, an action normally judged to be absurd by Leowald's standards, but at that time, with a face of inevitable death, Regulus stopped Eveam —

( It became a man's face before I even became a ware of it. ) (Leo)

He was glad that he could observe his son's growth into adulthood in person, but as his previous actions also put him to the edge of death, Leowald also thought about lecturing him later.

「Marione, apparently the fifth round is going to be a draw his time. 」 (Leo)

「 ..... so it seems. 」 (Mari)

Marione somehow showed an expression of relief as he stood up, likewise carrying Eveam. Thus, as the two of them faced Silva, he also shortly nodded and —

「The fifth round ends in a draw! 」 (Silva) ((somehow I think it's supposed to mean “silver”...))



# Konjiki no Wordmaster Chapter 191

## Finale

The fifth match resulted in draw; however no one in their minds thought that it would end like this leaving them dumbstruck. Especially on the [Gabaranth] side since King Leowald himself participated, everyone was sure of their victory, but due to the result being draw they were unable to believe it. But only Rarashiku approached towards the arena grinning while Leowald was carrying Regulus under his arms.

“This results is due to that bad habit of Leowald isn’t it?. As for this... “

“Rarashiku sama!?”

Unintentionally Barid raises his voice so that Rarashiku word’s couldn’t be heard by many people, but,

“Sorry.” “Suman ai..”

Surprisingly, it was Leowald who spoke the words of apology.

“Leowald sama.....”

Not only Barid but everyone present directed their attention towards him.

“We might have kept it under the fifth game if we had gone all out from the beginnings”

“So. Leo sama became so engrossed in trying to measure the unexpected ability of the other party that you lost the game. Are you saying this is the reason of your loss?”

“.....fuuu, Even though everyone in the [Gabaranth] fought with their everything I the king was unable to give you the victory”

Leowald remained silent without knowing what everyone might say.

“Leo sama, but it hasn’t finished yet right?”

“.....huh”

“Rule of <<AGASSHI>>. even if the five games have finished without a conclusion, we can still take a representative from each camp and a final game can be performed. That is the rule”

Leowald slowly lowers Regulus to the ground.

“Please heal him.”

Seeing that Kukuria and Mimiru came to his side and nodded slowly. Leowald also reacted after seeing everyone in front of him by slightly rubbing his chin with his hands.

“This time it was my mistake that it resulted in a draw. But since we can still recover victory can I have the final chance in order to assure our victory?”

After hearing the word, silence was overflowing until someone shouted “The Beast King” after that everyone shouted out there support for him.

“We believe in you Leowald sama!”

“Right! our king is the strongest!”

“The destiny of [Gabaranth] is in the hands of our king!”

Voices of praise were heard by Leowald unanimously. Hearing this he couldn’t control his emotion. Seeing this much confidence and trust towards him by his people he felt really grateful towards them

“But is it really okay? for Leowald sama who was already participated in two games, you should have exhausted a considerable amount of strength and magic?”

“I have some time until the representative game begins in the mean time I’ll recover as much as possible please call the healing group”

“.....I shall look after you Leo sama”

“Sorry” “Suman na”

And Leowald pumped his fist high when he did cheering erupted and roars shaking the area were heard.

“By all means victory shall be in our hands!”

“““““ooooooo tsu!”““““

Everyone’s feelings were unified. Leowald steeled himself in order to assure victory in the next game.

“It’s bad Rara, to pull me away when everyone’s morale is finally so high

“ahaha! No I have already seen enough”

While saying so she caught Muir and Arnold who were staring at them. She was able to confirm the growth in her disciple.

“But do you get it? the opponent in the final game might be.....”

“aa.....yes.....it’ll probably be that guy.....”

“.....Leo sama you’re grinning too much..”

“Oh!! is it so visible?”

Unintentionally he tries touching his face. However looking at Leowald Rarashiku couldn’t help but smile.

“Your feelings are clearly visible on your face ne. but he’s strong you know..... Hiirō that is”

“..... I know that”

Both of them turn their gaze towards that [Evila] which is on the other side. People from the [Evila] had already rushed towards where Eveam had fainted. As for Marione he lowered her quietly

“.....uu.....”

It seemed that Eveam had somehow recovered her consciousness

“.....here.....is.....?” “.....koko...wa.....?”

Her consciousness still wandering and then marione and the rest of the [Evila] appeared in front of her eyes.

There expressions gradually changed from being worried to that of cheerfulness. After grasping the circumstances she looks around to find herself out of the crater, lifting herself.

“So...!?”

However she felt tremendous pain throughout her body due to which she was unable to take another breath.

“Your majesty please don’t push yourself”

“ku.....a.as..for...a..as...for..a..a....Marione.....i.....we.....”

Marione after hearing her words which included grievousness shakes his head in disapproval. Looking at the circumstances her face is warped to that of despair. Gripping her fist tightly her whole body was shaken with regret and rage.

“What is it.....I.....after all this.....defeated....”

“No, your majesty”

“.....Huh?”

She was staring at marione with a blank look on her face.

“It is true that we were not victorious, but there is no defeat either.”

“...Huh! what do you mean?”

Changing her tone instantly Eveam was so shocked that she forgot to blink her eyes while waiting patiently for the reply.

“It was a draw”

“Draw is it.....?”

“Yes, your majesty”

During the game Eveam who was about to unleash the demon king magic was interrupted by Regulus which ended in failure and exploded as a result. All four participant of the game were involved in the explosion which happened at that time. Eveam and Regulus who were nearby were blown away instantly while Marione and Leowald fainted simultaneously resulting the game being a draw.

“.....so.....we still have some hope..ne”

Many of them had a relieved face, but even though it's still a fact that she was unable to gain victory with her own hands.

“Gu...”

Enduring the pain she once more lifted her body. Although still being told to have some rest by Marione she shook her head in refusal and tried to stand by clinging on Marione's support

“...I...I'm..Sorry..” “....go,gomen'nasai...”

She apologized to everyone by lowering her head. Silence dominated the surroundings.

“If possible .....i wanted to attain victory for everyone.....however that doesn't seem possible anymore.”

Her tone had already changed to that of a normal girl but everyone was fascinated by her sincere attitude.

“I'm sorry” “gomean'nasai....”

Shublarz hugged her gently.

“Your majesty it's okay.”

“Shublarz...”

“ufufu, even though i was also defeated in the game buuu..t... you

majesty you did say to me to do your best.”

“.....”

“And also, the game hasn’t finished yet entirely. the last game for representative is still remaining”

Everyone’s face harden’s at that word. So that the duel hasn’t concluded, with this the final game is yet to start.

“That is why please don’t cry anymore”

Shublarz persuades Eveam while seeing her face.

“Let’s cry after winning with everyone okay? right?”

After seeing the warm smile on Shublarz face that looked like that of a mother, Eveam’s mind settles down.

“.....i get it. As you say Shublarz”

After settling down Eveam directs her gaze towards a certain person.

There was Okamura with his arm in arm and eyes closed.

“Hihiro....can i also depend on you?”

“What’s with that tone of yours?”

“Ea? huh.....”

She finally noticed, that her tone had changed and blushed slightly,

“Now is, now is not the time to call each other like that!”

Somehow it seems that she was able to change her tone back somehow. And took a large breath,

“However Hihiro it seems that I’ll have to depend on you for the [Humas] as well.....”

“.....duration of the time.”

“Ei?”

Her jaw dropped after hearing the response from Hiiro which she was unable to understand immediately.

“During the duration of my stay i desire the cooking of that woman chef.”

“.....well.....do you only desire that much?”

“Just that? it is an important thing to me”

As Eveam glared at him he involuntary opened his eyes. He was unable to ignore the dishes with rice that the cook made.

“So? how about it? I’ll stay at [Haouse] can you promise me to provide me with a satisfactory meal?” {#i don’t know what it means#}

“.....it’s a promise”

“aa, after this duel is over please see to it that i can also visit and use the library soon. Those are the condition”

“....i also promise to do that.”

“yosh, then I’ll be back in a bit.”

As if he was going for a walk in the garden he left for the ring.

“Wait Hiiro”

Lily there stops him.

“What is it, Aka loli?”

“.....don’t be careless”

“aa, I’ll be sure to win”

Then Nikki, Mikazuchi and even Shamoe too approached Hiiro.

“Shisho! if its shisho then its easy victory right!”

“Mikazuchi will also cheer for master!”

“ga, ga ga ga ga ganbattekudasai..!” [be, be be be be best of luck..!]

Furthermore even Marione came.

“Originally i should have asked her majesty to go there but the present me..... it is vexing but asking the present her to defeat that person is unreasonable”

“ .....

“But since her majesty has enough faith in you to believe that you can win then i want you to respond to her expectation”

“.....I’ll definitely win”

Shublarz seems to also say a word with Ornorth.

“Hiiro Kun it might be a bit heavy but we entrust you our destiny with all our good will. gomen ne”

“If our majesty and Aquinas believes you and have recognized you then we also will believe in you. I’ll ask that of you boya.”

After giving her an understanding look I begin to walk towards the ring. The shout of the soldiers is also audible from the back. At that time i felt that someone was pulling the hem of my clothes. When I looked back.

“.....ganbatte na no..”

Ionisu said. And next to him was Haburido his eyes shining wildly.

“Hiiro dono!! i beg of you please!” “hiiro dono! onegaishimasu!”

After seeing everyone and thinking about my contract with Eveam and the request from Aquinas. I can’t possibly expect to give them any half assed result. There is also the compensation in that case. There was no intention of losing from the beginning but after this losing is not an option.



And i point my fingers towards Eveam. {sfx bishi}

“When this ends. do good to give me rice!”

“a,aa, i understand.!”

And with this Hiiro began to move forwards with everyone’s cheering in the back.

“Fofofofof! well this is as if Hiiro sama is the hero of the [Evila] right?”

The hentai butler was grinning at the crater.

“It’s just a joke. don’t compare me with such a hypocrite. To the last this is just a request.”

“nofofofofof! so it is like that! then let’s do it like that from now onwards!”

Since there was still time before the final game began. Hiiro and the hentai butler were chatting when they moved to glance at the absurd spirit that they felt, as if glancing towards the source of the spirit a ferocious beast was seen walking towards them.

“ hoho, kore wa kore wa this is the perfect place for someone like you isn’t it?”

“If it’s just someone else’s problem it’s easy jii san.”

“fofofofofo ! hora I’ve come brat”

There was an overwhelming difference in their physique. The one in front of him had a body just like that of a monster. The body of the beast king that had been polished to that of the ultimate, and it was incomparable to that of Hiiro’s . #some joke here where the ultimate body is that of the outer shell of tortoise and hiiro’s is the inner one.#

“I kept you waiting.” “mata seta ta na.”

“Huh, so? are you in perfect physical condition?”

“gahaha! I’ll show you that in the game”

Both of them glared at each other while waiting for the game to start.

“I can finally fight you Hiiro”

A deep voice with a dignified presence resonated in the area. It was as if Leowald was the child and Hiiro was the adult if one looked at them, however as the conversation between them continued the smile on Leowald’s face grew larger.

“I’ll fight you with my all. and will win this”

“No, I’ll be the one to win”

Both of them were glaring at each other not backing down in the slightest. Even Silva was overwhelmed by them.

“Oye Hiiro why don’t we make a bet?”

“Bet?”

“aa. of course there is benefit for you.”

“....can i hear it just in case?”

“If i win then you’ll belong to me.”

“I refuse with all power”

The atmosphere between them hardens instantly. Leowald also didn’t thought that he will refuse so blatantly.

“wh. why?”

“I’m straight. but if you are so keen about it then i can introduce you to someone i know.”

When [valentine] heard Hiiro a chill ran through his back and he shivered instantly. Both hentai butler and lolicon “arnold” where being looked at by Hiiro. The hentai butler was twitching but the lolicon had no idea what was happening.

“L.. idiot! who’s a gay! i didn’t meant to say that way!”

Even for Leowald, such a misunderstanding was disgusting and he desperately denied it.

“If that is the case then don’t talk in a way that one might misunderstand”

“Then.... if i win i want you to come to [Passion]”

It seemed like an invitation somehow or the other. Looking at Leowald it looked as if he wanted this but since I have not decided to settle down permanently.

“And if i win?”

“Then I’ll give you Mimiru.”

“I don’t need that fool”

It seemed that his words fell on deaf ears as Leowald decided to ignore his words.

“Then tell me what you desire”

So being said i pondered on it, but.....

“...nothing at the moment”      “.....nai na”

In particular i was unable to think of anything.

“.....Is our country so unattractive to you?”

Leowald slightly dropped his shoulder

“Hmmm..... how about you owe me a favor? if i win”

“Favor?”

“aa, yes I’ll come back to the city sometime in the near future to take back the favor that you owe me, so how about it?”

“....you really are a strange man”

“What?”

“This is the first time that someone asked me to owe them a favor. Until now everyone came back with me to the country and demanded wealth and lived there life leisurely.”

“nofofofofo ! its because Hiiro san can't be measured by ordinary means!”

“Shut up hentai butler” “damare! kono ero jiji”

“These hash words! nofofofofo!”

After looking at them talking Leowald loosens up.

“gahaha if that's the case then the bet's on. I'll definitely win this game and make you come with us to [Passion]”

“Try it if you can do it”

The verbal warfare seemed to have ended somehow. Silva too could feel that the air between them had tensed up.

“Then.....are the preparations complete?”

Both of them nodded at the same time.

“Then....”

Both of them jumped back in order to get some distance between them.

“Then let the final game begin!”

The Gong for the last battle between [Evila] and [Gabaranth] which would decide their faith had started.

## Chapter 192 Hiiro vs. Leowald

The final game began with both of them glaring each other without moving. As if both of them giving each other the chance to attack first they weren't moving.

Before a battle I shouldn't think about the difference in our levels, this jiisan has too much of an advantage in physical combat. When taking a blow from him there'll be considerable damage.

I can't be careless certainly. Healing is of course possible with < <Word magic> > but in case there is large damage the recovery time will be longer. I can't consider that he won't do anything while I recover.

So in conclusion it should be good to keep him at bay using long-range attacks, so i won't give him chance to come near me.

I'll have to keep my installed characters in reserve for the time being. just in case...

Hiiro moved the finger on his right hand at high-speed. Leowald who also perceived that charged in.

To charge in with < <conversion> > ! just what is that jiisan thinking.

Hiiro who was writing the character stopped and lunged sideways drawing Leowald in the center.

Leowald too responded, shifting his body towards him while keeping an eye on him.

If one were to be hit by that directly... if it would had been someone else he would had been dead.

While moving he directs his finger towards his opponent and shoots the character. Jumping instantaneously to the right Leowald tries to dodge it, but

Gui.....

With the help of his finger Hihiro was able to change the direction of the character and kept chasing Leowald.

“mu tsu!?”

Leowald groans as he didn't anticipated that the trajectory could be changed by Hihiro, he thought that it could only fly in a straight line. He pushes his hands on ground and twists his body in order to avoid it.

While moving he flings something towards the character and it hits it directly, since the character was hit directly it stopped in that moment.

I see so it's like that

In order for the character to activate it needed to hit its target. Something had suddenly stopped his character which shone deep scarlet; when he looked at it carefully it looked like a pebble. The character that was shinning on it was <Stop>. If the character would had been able to hit on Leowald then it would had been possible to stop his movement.

But Leowald, while in an attempt to dodge the character that was fired towards him was able to fend it off using the pebble on the ground.

I can surely remove the character from the stone and have it chase him again...

Even if i could just peel of the character and make it head towards Leowald once more the problem would be that once it touches something again it would start its effect on it.

“Hoo...! i doubted whether it would have worked but looks it worked well. Although by the looks your magic can transfer its strange effect when it touches the target, but if it's hit by an obstacle than its effect is transferred to the obstacle and its effect can be found out. Furthermore, it's not likely to stop the movement of itself even after its hit. It's because the speed of the pebble did

not change therefore since it has stopped it should be because of you strange character....right Hiiro?”

To think that this Muscle Brain of all people I have met would have gained such a deep insight on my < <Word Magic> > since he last met me.

“Then...”

Leowald’s left hand suddenly turned into that of a flame and the fire started to affect his surroundings.

“In this way my body can be protected from your magic <characters> .

Leowald stood there as if satisfied after explaining about Hiiro’s magic. Leowald started his < > and a wall of fireballs appeared surrounding him.

Certainly if < <word magic> > is used in this state then there is a chance that the characters might hit the fireball surrounding him.

“You thought well, beast king”

“gahaha! It’s because i was looking forward to the duel with you! Since you refused the prize that i thought of, but as far as it is concerned I’m happy to chat with you in the final game.”

“This battle freak”

Well i think, that disturbing group of fireball is actually his left arm, it will be a bit difficult to hit his main body. It’s a pain to attack him in that mess of a fireball field, but in the first place will characters like <Sleep> work in that array?

Even if it’s his left arm it has been separated from his main body, so the effect might not work. In the first place in < <word magic> > there is only target and effect, it has nothing to do with combination and separation.

In simple words one can say that it is the same as the landing of an attack on a shield, even if shield is not part of one’s body it still

affect its wielder. It is also a characteristic of << word magic >> .

But what the heck's with this case? It may be disconnected but that wall of fireball is definitely Leowald's left arm. What effect will flow if you are sharing your sense?

“...let's try it.”

Hihiro once again shoots the character for . And it hits the fireball surrounding Leowald. Activate.

“..... So it didn't go well.”

As it has been his concern only the fireball that it hit was stopped while Leowald was lively as always.

“How is it? It seems that i took quite the measure for you right?”

“Precisely. It's slightly troublesome to hit you.”

“gahaha! But it's my turn next!”

Saying so he jumped high, and rushed his way. Hihiro clicks his tongue and avoids the attack by jumping back.

But at that time the fireball surrounding Leowald started to move towards him.

“Huh!?”

He quickly activated the <safeguard> character that was previously installed; a wall made of pale magic covers his front instantly.

dododododododo!

The attack hits the wall as if it was an attack launched from a shotgun. Then as if suddenly feeling the bloodlust from the direction, he could clearly see Leowald charging in with tremendous momentum.

His right hand which he converted into magma became like a



tentacle. It was wriggling and bubbling as if waiting to devour its prey. One could understand just by looking, that a tremendous amount of power was being wielded in that right hand.

“So this is the true Maximum blazing fang attack!”

Hihiro packed the wall with more magic, at the point where his fist was about to strike. The point where his fist strikes at the defense wall, it starts to bulge in, as if extending in the direction towards his fist.

In the first place this defense wall is made by two character word magic that i use while battling SS rank monsters.

But soon Hihiro remembered that day. When he first met Leowald, he used a similar skill and he was able to guard against it using the same character .

But soon he also remembered that rare time when his defense wall deteriorated a little. Moreover unlike that time he was also using < <Conversion> > .

However as if breaking his train of thought the figure of Leowald which was quickly drawing near was suddenly visible to him. And his right arm as if a volcano suddenly erupted, and bursts out quickly improving his dash speed.

Suddenly he felt a chill in his spine, as he watched Leowald quickly closing the distance between them and,

bachiiiiiiiiitsu!

The defense wall of <safeguard> and his fist collided and in the next instant,

Bachin!

Surprisingly, the dense wall was shattered. Hihiro closed his eyes as if acknowledging the fact that the huge fist nearing the wall will shatter it.

dogooooooooooooon!

The severe impact sound shook the surrounding.

The scene was as if a tremendous explosion had happened at that place. Holding their breath both camp were watching the place of the impact.

A lot of people were worrying about the safety of Hihiro, who was inside the defense wall.

The smoke cleared up and at the place where Leowald was a crater appeared. It was quite the difference in the attack power of Leowald; also a part of the land near Leowald was also melted.

This would likely be the right arm of Leowald.

Leowald after resetting both of his arms stood at that place gently gazing at the sky.

“Uooooooooooooo!”

At that place was Hihiro who had unsheathed his katana. Pulling the body instantly with reflection, he lands a blow on his body but,

Bushu!

The right arm which was lobbed off fell to the ground.

“nuuu!”

His face was twisted due to the pain. Hihiro came once again to thrust at his body.

“Just like that!”

“I won’t let you!” directing his left arm towards Hihiro like some time ago it burst out like a volcano. Hihiro clicked his tongue and suddenly sidestepped to dodge it.

Both of them glared at each other.

“phew, if even though my right arm was in the state of < <conversion> > to feel pain in that state...”

The right hand which was lobbed off suddenly turns into flame and returns back to its place.

“But that sword....no, by the shape of the sword, it’s not just an ordinary sword.”

The sword was able to deliver a blow on him even though he was in a state of partial <conversion>, the pain that he felt. There was no way that it’s ordinary. But Hihiro instead of answering him simply takes a stance.

“I will explain if you manage to land a blow that is, but it’s not that easy.”

Leowald grins after he hears those words from Hihiro.

He strikes the ground with his fist.

In such a short time there was no way that Hihiro could have used the two character magic he was really shocked when [Safeguard] was destroyed. Therefore he evaded using the single character of [transfer] instantly into the sky.

By using the momentum of falling from the sky he used his katana to unleash <<absolute sword-Zetto zangeki>> in an attempt to land a blow on Leowald but since he was able to sense Hihiro, once again only a small cut was made on his arms.

From there Hihiro once again tried to rush in using the momentum of his sword but only was forced to leave from there due to the heat of the magma.

Well could it be that the two-word magic was destroyed because he is a SSS rank?

It’s surprising how Leowald’s attack power can rise so suddenly. In addition to his overwhelming body ability, he can also use his <<Conversion>> with a decent amount of power. His strength is surely admirable but he still has ways to improve it.

Even if Leowald inquires about the <Zetto zangeki>, there is no obligation to answer it.

Due to the enchants placed on the sword it certainly is not an ordinary sword. It was good to install the character of <Bewitchment> on the sword before the game began. The magic flow on his body should have started to flow rampant, he should lose his consciousness in any moment.

But as expected of the Beast king something trivial like the enchant on my sword isn't working on him. Should i have used another word that would have given damage to him?

And in the next moment Leowald suddenly ducked down, and cracks appeared on that spot and soon began to expand.

In order to stabilize himself from the sudden movement of the ground beneath his body Hiirou for an instant averted his eyes from him, but in the next moment Leowald who should have been in front of him was nowhere to be found.

But due to the sudden increase in the heat that could be felt he knew that he had leapt up, and there was only the big ball of magic when he looked up.

And he frowns due to the enormous heat that it gave off.

If I'm not mistaken... i saw that in the first round

So, it's the same <Binding> technique he had used on marione, surely it was <<Awakened Fireball Of Truth>>, but this one was way bigger than the one used in the first game.

That jiisan.... storing so much power it's unreasonable.

As if not wanting to say much he sheathed his katana, and looked up in the sky at Leowald.

My two words magic won't be able to put up much to it...but if

He raised his right hand and pointed it towards Leowald, soon a pale light started to converge on his index finger. The pale light was sparkling and he wrote a character in the sky.

(This time it's my turn to surprise him.)

## Chapter 193: Getting fired up

(Leowald POV)

Leowald put more power into the spell than when he used it against Marione. A small sun-like orb with him at the center dropped from the sky toward his target.

“Here I come! Eat this! [[Awakened Fireball of Truth]] !”  
(Leowald)

Then it dropped downward; it dropped toward a single boy on the ground.

“Now, what are you going to do Hiiiirooo!” (Leowald)

Hiiro looked up at the fireball and concentrated magic power into his index finger.

Magic again, huh! if it is anything like last time I can sweep it away! (Leowald)

With a loud rumbling sound a mass of pure fire crashed down, like a giant meteor.

Hiiro drew a word and then pointed at Leowald, who just grinned.

Leowald then created a wall of fireballs in front of the Flaming Meteor using the same technique as before. He knew that if the word was to hit the fire orbs, it would dissipate harmlessly.

There could be a good chance that his opponent is trying penetrate the wall. But it seemed like his opponent put on the expression that it was no good.

Then Hiiro started writing another word. Unlike the magic power he felt from the barrier before, it contained a lot more.

“Interesting! I don’t know what you are doing, but if you can stop this than do it!” (Leowald)

As the orb of fire approached Hihiro, Leowald was surprised by the outcome. For some reason, as the ball approached, it grew smaller and smaller until it disappeared.

“W-What!?” (Leowald)

Before he can recover, even the fire covering his body started to disappear.

“W-what. What was that!?” (Leowald)

It looked as if a balloon was slowly deflating. In order to prevent that he tried to increase the fire’s output but it was shrinking faster than he could recover. Then...

Sizzle...

As he stood speechless and watched his revered flames vanish into thin air, Hihiro appeared in front of him and swung his gleaming sword in a beheading motion.

Bushuwu’!

Unaware that his [[Conversion]] was dispelled a large gash appeared from his left shoulder down to his right abdomen.

“Guu!?” (Leowald)

The pain and chaos sent his consciousness into discord

But at that moment his head heated up (in anger) and grabbed Hihiro’s arm.

“Oops...!? (Hihiro)

Hihiro put on a surprised expression

Bachin!

Forming a hammer with his fist he struck Hihiro’s back which caused Hihiro to drop to the ground.

However, the body of Leowald sustained a some heavy damage;

intense pain clearly showed on his face.

He isn't sure what happened but if he took an attack right now it won't be good.

“Ku...Hiiro...” (Leowald)

A lot of blood was flowing out of his body. It would be grave if he remained in this state too long, so he used [[Conversion]] right away.

In this state the pain will ease, and he'll no longer bleed. However, he is unable to recover the damage taken. While using [[Conversion]], HP and MP will continue to decrease.

He knew that he wouldn't be able to fight much longer in this state. He looked for the body of Hiiro which dropped to the ground, and when he couldn't find it, a furious expression appeared on his face.

(Hiiro's POV)

Hiiro was scowling at his last action. No matter how happy he was that the move succeeded, he shouldn't of let his guard down.

Ouch..dammit (Hiiro)

Leowald's attack hit him with surprising force. He thought he landed a fatal attack on him, but didn't expect him to fight back right away. He certainly let his guard down.

No...if I observe the action carefully, it feels like it was was performed instinctively. (Hiiro)

It would be difficult for someone one to counter attack when they witnessed their ultimate attack dissipate, followed by their opponent landing a fatal attack on their body right after.

At that time, because his eyes were blank, he didn't think he would be able to counterattack.

However, at that moment life appeared in those blank eyes and Leowald grabbed his arm. He tried to cast a spell, but before he

could, his body was sent crashing into the ground.

At that time, when Leowald used [[Awakened Fireball of Truth]]. Hiiro used extinguish (鎮火) and fireball (火球)

With these two words, he extinguished everything related to the Fireball; the small fire orbs that Leowald used to form a wall, the sun like meteor, even Leowald's power; all of them were identified as "Fireball" from Hiiro's point of view.

In other words, Hiiro made everything disappear and then he used the [[Conversion]] word on his sword before slashing at his target.

Soon after, he made a miscalculation. First it was Leowald's abnormal body; it was as if he was trying to cut iron. Even then, he managed to inflict a large wound.

The next miscalculation was the counterattack. The speed was beyond comprehension. Even though he reacted with all his might with his arm being caught, the blow landed on him at about the same time.

Damage wise, even though it was only one attack, it's force felt like all his opponent's weight was put into it.

If he fell toward the ground with that much force, his face would be turned into a smashed tomato. Thus, he had no choice but to use the preset [[Protect]] word to nullify the impact damage.

...It can't be helped (Hiiro)

He active the preset word [[Cure]] to remove the pain. The pain would be troublesome later on in battle. Even if his opponent is in a grievous state, he couldn't let anything hinder him.

White light spread over his body, and the intense pain from before vanished.

Ha, really, this [[Word Magic – Magic]] has a lot of application (Hiiro)

If he didn't have magic, he wouldn't know what to do. He felt that



it was good fortune to have an all-purpose unique magic.

At that moment, he felt a strong chill and waves of heat started radiating from behind him

He felt an abnormal wave of bloodlust slowing moving toward him. The closer it got the drier his mouth felt.

Even though, the white light of healing hasn't disappeared yet, Hiiro turned around and looked at the mass of bloodlust.

Leowald was there. But it was in a completely different state than before; it didn't even have a facial expression. It looked as if all that it wanted to do was to kill its opponent; it was manifestation of its instinct. Actually, it was like a wild mass of wrath and hatred.

There is... no end to this huh (Hiiro)

It felt like he was trapped by a SSS Rank monster, without anywhere to run.

“Oh man, it looks just like a human magma” (Hiiro)

Some time ago only Leowald's right arm changed into magma, now his whole body was covered in magma. Even his legs which touched the magma also started to melt. Furthermore, it didn't react at all to Hiiro's sarcasm

It is definitely different than before ... if I were to be hit by that body, I would be melted right away (Hiiro)

Hiiro judged that it isn't a good idea to go too close to it. He used most of the words he set beforehand. Thus, he felt that he should strike at this moment; however there doesn't seem to be a reasonable way to do so.

If he retreated, and then came back, he would be able to finish it right away. However, the current situation won't allow it. Even then, he felt hesitant to do something like that.

As expected, I'm also a man ... (Hiiro)

Furthermore, the challenge of defeating someone with a cheat body like this piqued his interest. After he thought for a bit, to be able to completely control the opponent in this situation would be the best way to proceed. Being forced to do something like that really brought back the joy of fighting a worthy opponent

Whether it was in games or novels, fighting a strong opponent is thrilling. Also, running away in fear isn't something a man does.

If there was major difference in strength, and the body was in an unreasonable condition then it would be smart to give up. At this moment though, as long as there is a way to win against the opponent, then by doing so ...

If I don't get fired up then I am not a man (Hiiro)

Although, he isn't sure if his opponent was enjoying it or not, right now Hiiro had a smile on his face.

"...fu, lets proceed" (Hiiro)

With renewed resolution, he focused magic in front of his finger

"Hiiirooooooooooooooooooooo!" (Leowald)

The magma like monster rushed at Hiiro.

## Chapter 194 – The Beast King’s True Strength

The 『Gabranth’s』 were the one who was most surprised about Leowald’s transformation.

“B-brother Len.”

“.....What is it?”

Lenon responded to Kukulia’s call. However, they were simply conversing with their mouth as their eyes were completely focused on Leowald.

“W-was Papa always like that?”

“....not sure.”

“Now that you mention it, the image of Father losing his temper like that, I suppose this is Lenon’s first time witnessing it.”

It was Leglos who callously entered the conversation of the two. Nevertheless, since he’s still in a critical condition, Leglos was sitting in restraint. He seemed to have awoken a little while ago.

“Has Elder Brother seen Pops like that?”

“Yes. Just once. It was way back when the 『Humas』 entered our territory, and trampled one of our villages. When Father heard about it that time, he changed just like right now.”

“What happened back then?”

“....Father massacred all those 『Humas』. What’s worse, all the traces of them disappeared as if they have melted.”

The moment Leglos revealed such a past, both Lenon and Kukulia could only helplessly gulp in fear of it.

“That said, it would seem that boy haven’t ignited Father’s wrath,

although he was able to corner Father like this again.....and he's obviously younger than us."

Lenon clenched his teeth as he heard Leglos words.

"When Pops became serious back then, we were barely able to wound him just once...damn it!"

However, the fact is, that boy named Hiiro was quickly able to damage Leowald with numerous injuries to the point that Pops became serious. Who wouldn't get mortified by it? Especially for someone who is younger than Lenon.

"This is really unexpected. For someone to be able to push Father to this point, this is a first."

"....that bastard..."

Leglos smiled wryly as he saw his brother trembling in frustration.

"Hiiro-sama.... he's really amazing...."

On the contrary, while the brother's were frustrated about Hiiro's strength, their youngest sister Mimiru, was captivated to the said person.

"He's so cool.... don't you agree Kukulia-neesama?"

"Eh? Ah, y-yeah...."

Mimiru asked her sister with an expression of pure admiration, making Kukulia nod in assent as well. Mimiru's expression, however, soon darkened as she clasped her hands together.

"Please..."

"Mimiru?"

"I hope the two of them would return back safely."

"Mimiru..... yes, you're right, I hope they come back safely."

Similarly, another person also carried the same hope as the four

siblings.

“Oji-san, Hiiro is really strong.”

“Yeah, but Leowald isn’t still at his full strength yet. It will likely become more intense after this.”

“I hope Hiiro-san is alright.”

“Not sure ‘bout that, but the fact about him losing is also hard to imagine. He is after all (outside of the norm) non-standard.”

Arnold sighed when he saw Muir’s anxious expression.

“Although we need to cheer for Leowald as 『Gabranth’s』, that guy also, despite his overwhelming strength, needs our support too.”

“.....You’re right.”

“So with that, let’s both cheer for them.”

“.....right!”

Meanwhile, on 『Evila’s』 side, every one of them were amazed by Leowald’s transformation, as well as Hiiro’s incredible strength.

“As expected of Hiiro.... to damage the Beast King to such degree...”

Demon Queen Eveam was quite impressed by Hiiro’s commendable feat of damaging Leowald to such an extent. Even Marione who was not able to do such a thing, for a 『Humas』 who hasn’t been alive for 20 years of their lives, it was quite impressive.

“Why are you doubting? Hiiro can do even these kind of things.”

Eveam glanced at Liliyn with an expression as if Hiiro was her proudest possession,

“Oh~! As expected of my Mentor! He’s parrying most of the blows of the Beast King~!”

“No! You’re wrong! That’s not your Mentor but Mikazuki’s Master!”

“What are you trying to blabber? Mentor is my Mentor alone!”

“No, it’s Mikazuki’s!”

“Ey! Will you two just shut up!”

Irritated by their dispute, Liliyn snapped at Mikazuki and Nikki. Making the two of them cower in fear.

“Who owns who you say? That’s easy. I own Hiiro from head to toe. He’s mine alone! You two are just his accessories. Bear in mind your current standings!”

“Boo~! Boo~!”

“Lies! Lies!”

“Hou, you dare try to rival with me, huh?”

The next instant, Liliyn’s eyes glowed bright red, instilling fear to those who witnessed it especially Mikazuki who cried “Kui~!” as she escaped towards Shamoe for refuge. Nikki, however, didn’t run away, but instead stood still while she got drenched in cold sweat.

“... you want to join them, don’t you?”

“Ma-marione!? W-w-w-w-what are you talking about!”

While Eveam was quietly watching Liliyn’s dispute unfolding, Marione, who was besides her, couldn’t help but tease Eveam.

“But those people are apparently struggling for that boy? You even competed with the Beast King back then...”

“Wawawawawawa! W-what are you saying!?”

Before the start of the fifth round, as Leowald wished for Hiiro to be his, Marione remembered Eveam answered him with the words “Hiiro is mine alone.” .

Based from the appearance of her behavior that time, it was,

without a doubt, clear that Eveam harbors considerable good will for Hiiro. That's why even if Eveam doesn't admit with this amount of words. It was as clear as day about her feelings for Hiiro as her flustered face turned bright red.

"Ah mou! Let's stop with this topic! Besides look! The Beast King made move!"

"....As you wish."

"Ouch! It's hot! Darn this magma bastard!"

Even if Hiiro was dodging Leowald's numerous high-speed rushes, it's still necessary for him to keep a distance due to the scattering magma released from Leowald's attacks.

Not only that, the hot pressure received from their confrontation was rapidly draining his stamina. He could manage to avoid the attacks by reading ahead, but it was pushing too far if he had to keep dodging all the time.

Also, due to Leowald's transformation, the temperature around them was gradually rising bit by bit, making Hiiro sweat from their confrontation.

"Don't get carried away!"

After he avoided the attack, Hiiro shot the preinstalled character 『Freeze』, confident that it'll hit due to Leowald being in the offensive side. The magic hit the target without even moving.

Instantly, the magic took effect making Leowald into an ice sculpture. However, Hiiro was not that confident that it'll knock him down with this.

In just few seconds, the ice turned from blue to red, melting the residue completely. As he had expected based from the opponent taking on his magic, he judged that this kind of strategy wouldn't be effective anymore

Leowald smiled haughtily, conveying that such attacks was useless

against him.

Then, Leowald rushed towards him once again. His average speed seemed to have increased this time.

Hihiro deemed that he would be in disadvantage if this continues on, so he decided to use one of his preinstalled characters 『Acceleration』. Simultaneously, he unsheathed 《Extreme Slasher》 from his scabbard.

Bushun!

In that split second, he dodged incoming fist, and slashed the blade towards his opponent. However, the trace of his slash disappeared instantly, and returned to its former state due to the effects of 《Transformation》.

Leowald then rotated his body and launched a kick to Hihiro.

“Tsk!”

The katana withstood the attack, successfully repelling the assault. Hihiro rotated his body in preparation for his next attack, but was surprised by the approaching flaming fist towards him.

Hyun!

Hihiro avoided the attack instantly from his position. With the favor of 『Acceleration』, Hihiro was able to prevent receiving the attack head on, although the place he was standing burned to crisp.

After that, they clashed once again, with Hihiro avoiding the fiery blows from Leowald. Although Hihiro could clearly dodged his attacks, as expected, it was taking a big toll on his stamina.

That said, Leowald was also in a similar situation. He won't let this confrontation continue as it is.

“Hihiro.”

It had been long time since Hihiro heard his voice after they started their intense battle.



“Hou, so the Beast King is still conscious in this state?”

“Kuku... this is really fun.”

“.....what a battle maniac.”

“Don’t say that. I can also feel the same with you as we fought. Hiiro... aren’t you enjoying the same way as I am?”

“....who knows.”

“Kukuku... anyway, that Katana of yours, I suppose that’s not an ordinary Katana, huh? If I was in my usual state, I would definitely have lost from being cut by it.”

It was as Leowald said, normally if an ordinary Katana clashes with the magma of his, it should have melted by then. However, the 《Extreme Slasher》 haven’t had any trace of deterioration on it.

“That’s a fine sword. However, that won’t be enough to beat me.”

“.....”

“That said, I can’t also defeat you if this fight stays as it is.”

Without hesitation, Leowald returned back to his usual form before the 《Transformation》. His face was a little fatigued. It seemed that using 《Transformation》 was quite draining to use.

“Hiiro, this time I will show you my full power.”

“So this fight is going to the next stage, huh?”

“Yeah, so that I can beat you for sure.”

Suddenly, the atmosphere surrounding them changed. The excessive heat from the atmosphere cooled down instantly. The pressure he felt this time was more than Leowald’s blood thirst or his hostility, it was a pure desire. An aspiration to win.

The atmosphere shook as if Leowald’s existence was in control.

Normally, Hiiro would have attacked him already, but stopped

himself from doing so as the thought of confronting him poorly could get him in trouble.

(If that's the case, I'll use this change to make preparations.)

As he thought so, Hiiro rapidly installed characters into his body.

(Although my MP is still enough....I can't let my guard down.)

Hiiro anticipated that he would have to use more of his magic after this, he threw several 《Red Honey Candy》 into his mouth to recover his MP.

The candy was digested to his stomach, and felt his exhaustion gradually fade.

(Alright, I'm ready.)

However, all the while Hiiro was preparing himself, Leowald also took their fight to the next stage.

“Hear my wishes....under the sacred contract with my blood.... I now call you thee, Manifest!”

Abruptly, the space between them distorted

Pikin.....!?

A hollow crack appeared before them.

“Cooooooooome! Shishi Ligerrrrrrrrrr!”

From the hollow space, a huge lion clad in flames appeared before Hiiro. The 『Gabranth's』 were the one who was most surprised about Leowald's transformation.

“B-brother Len.”

“.....What is it?”

Lenon responded to Kukulia's call. However, they were simply conversing with their mouth as their eyes were completely focused on Leowald.

“W-was Papa always like that?”

“....not sure.”

“Now that you mention it, the image of Father losing his temper like that, I suppose this is Lenon’s first time witnessing it.”

It was Leglos who callously entered the conversation of the two. Nevertheless, since he’s still in a critical condition, Leglos was sitting in restraint. He seemed to have awoken a little while ago.

“Has Elder Brother seen Pops like that?”

“Yes. Just once. It was way back when the 『Humas』 entered our territory, and trampled one of our villages. When Father heard about it that time, he changed just like right now.”

“What happened back then?”

“....Father massacred all those 『Humas』. What’s worse, all the traces of them disappeared as if they have melted.”

The moment Leglos revealed such a past, both Lenon and Kukulia could only helplessly gulp in fear of it.

“That said, it would seem that boy haven’t ignited Father’s wrath, although he was able to corner Father like this again.....and he’s obviously younger than us.”

Lenon clenched his teeth as he heard Leglos words.

“When Pops became serious back then, we were barely able to wound him just once...damn it!”

However, the fact is, that boy named Hiiro was quickly able to damage Leowald with numerous injuries to the point that Pops became serious. Who wouldn’t get mortified by it? Especially for someone who is younger than Lenon.

“This is really unexpected. For someone to be able to push Father to this point, this is a first.”

“...that bastard...”

Leglos smiled wryly as he saw his brother trembling in frustration.

“Hiiro-sama.... he’s really amazing....”

On the contrary, while the brother’s were frustrated about Hiiro’s strength, their youngest sister Mimiru, was captivated to the said person.

“He’s so cool.... don’t you agree Kukulia-neesama?”

“Eh? Ah, y-yeah....”

Mimiru asked her sister with an expression of pure admiration, making Kukulia nod in assent as well. Mimiru’s expression, however, soon darkened as she clasped her hands together.

“Please...”

“Mimiru?”

“I hope the two of them would return back safely.”

“Mimiru..... yes, you’re right, I hope they come back safely.”

Similarly, another person also carried the same hope as the four siblings.

“Oji-san, Hiiro is really strong.”

“Yeah, but Leowald isn’t still at his full strength yet. It will likely become more intense after this.”

“I hope Hiiro-san is alright.”

“Not sure ‘bout that, but the fact about him losing is also hard to imagine. He is after all (outside of the norm) non-standard.”

Arnold sighed when he saw Muir’s anxious expression.

“Although we need to cheer for Leowald as 『Gabranth’s』, that guy also, despite his overwhelming strength, needs our support

too.”

“.....You’re right.”

“So with that, let’s both cheer for them.”

“.....right!”

Meanwhile, on 『Evila’s』 side, every one of them were amazed by Leowald’s transformation, as well as Hiiro’s incredible strength.

“As expected of Hiiro.... to damage the Beast King to such degree...”

Demon Queen Eveam was quite impressed by Hiiro’s commendable feat of damaging Leowald to such an extent. Even Marione who was not able to do such a thing, for a 『Humas』 who hasn’t been alive for 20 years of their lives, it was quite impressive.

“Why are you doubting? Hiiro can do even these kind of things.”

Eveam glanced at Liliyn with an expression as if Hiiro was her proudest possession,

“Oh~! As expected of my Mentor! He’s parrying most of the blows of the Beast King~!”

“No! You’re wrong! That’s not your Mentor but Mikazuki’s Master!”

“What are you trying to blabber? Mentor is my Mentor alone!”

“No, it’s Mikazuki’s!”

“Ey! Will you two just shut up!”

Irritated by their dispute, Liliyn snapped at Mikazuki and Nikki. Making the two of them cower in fear.

“Who owns who you say? That’s easy. I own Hiiro from head to toe. He’s mine alone! You two are just his accessories. Bear in mind your current standings!”

“Boo~! Boo~!”

“Lies! Lies!”

“Hou, you dare try to rival with me, huh?”

The next instant, Liliyn’s eyes glowed bright red, instilling fear to those who witnessed it especially Mikazuki who cried “Kui~!” as she escaped towards Shamoe for refuge. Nikki, however, didn’t run away, but instead stood still while she got drenched in cold sweat.

“... you want to join them, don’t you?”

“Ma-marione!? W-w-w-w-what are you talking about!”

While Eveam was quietly watching Liliyn’s dispute unfolding, Marione, who was besides her, couldn’t help but tease Eveam.

“But those people are apparently struggling for that boy? You even competed with the Beast King back then...”

“Wawawawawawa! W-what are you saying!?”

Before the start of the fifth round, as Leowald wished for Hiiro to be his, Marione remembered Eveam answered him with the words “Hiiro is mine alone.” .

Based from the appearance of her behavior that time, it was, without a doubt, clear that Eveam harbors considerable good will for Hiiro. That’s why even if Eveam doesn’t admit with this amount of words. It was as clear as day about her feelings for Hiiro as her flustered face turned bright red.

“Ah mou! Let’s stop with this topic! Besides look! The Beast King made move!”

“....As you wish.”

“Ouch! It’s hot! Darn this magma bastard!”

Even if Hiiro was dodging Leowald’s numerous high-speed rushes, it’s still necessary for him to keep a distance due to the scattering magma released from Leowald’s attacks.

Not only that, the hot pressure received from their confrontation was rapidly draining his stamina. He could manage to avoid the attacks by reading ahead, but it was pushing too far if he had to keep dodging all the time.

Also, due to Leowald's transformation, the temperature around them was gradually rising bit by bit, making Hiiro sweat from their confrontation.

“Don't get carried away!”

After he avoided the attack, Hiiro shot the preinstalled character 『Freeze』, confident that it'll hit due to Leowald being in the offensive side. The magic hit the target without even moving.

Instantly, the magic took effect making Leowald into an ice sculpture. However, Hiiro was not that confident that it'll knock him down with this.

In just few seconds, the ice turned from blue to red, melting the residue completely. As he had expected based from the opponent taking on his magic, he judged that this kind of strategy wouldn't be effective anymore

Leowald smiled haughtily, conveying that such attacks was useless against him.

Then, Leowald rushed towards him once again. His average speed seemed to have increased this time.

Hiiro deemed that he would be in disadvantage if this continues on, so he decided to use one of his preinstalled characters 『Acceleration』. Simultaneously, he unsheathed 《Extreme Slasher》 from his scabbard.

Bushun!

In that split second, he dodged incoming fist, and slashed the blade towards his opponent. However, the trace of his slash disappeared instantly, and returned to it's former state due to the effects of 《Transformation》.

Leowald then rotated his body and launched a kick to Hiiro.

“Tsk!”

The katana withstood the attack, successfully repelling the assault. Hiiro rotated his body in preparation for his next attack, but was surprised by the approaching flaming fist towards him.

Hyun!

Hiiro avoided the attack instantly from his position. With the favor of 『Acceleration』, Hiiro was able to prevent receiving the attack head on, although the place he was standing burned to crisp.

After that, they clashed once again, with Hiiro avoiding the fiery blows from Leowald. Although Hiiro could clearly dodge his attacks, as expected, it was taking a big toll on his stamina.

That said, Leowald was also in a similar situation. He won't let this confrontation continue as it is.

“Hiiro.”

It had been long time since Hiiro heard his voice after they started their intense battle.

“Hou, so the Beast King is still conscious in this state?”

“Kuku... this is really fun.”

“.....what a battle maniac.”

“Don't say that. I can also feel the same with you as we fought. Hiiro... aren't you enjoying the same way as I am?”

“....who knows.”

“Kukuku... anyway, that Katana of yours, I suppose that's not an ordinary Katana, huh? If I was in my usual state, I would definitely have lost from being cut by it.”

It was as Leowald said, normally if an ordinary Katana clashes with



the magma of his, it should have melted by then. However, the 《Extreme Slasher》 haven't had any trace of deterioration on it.

“That's a fine sword. However, that won't be enough to beat me.”

“.....”

“That said, I can't also defeat you if this fight stays as it is.”

Without hesitation, Leowald returned back to his usual form before the 《Transformation》. His face was a little fatigued. It seemed that using 《Transformation》 was quite draining to use.

“Hihiro, this time I will show you my full power.”

“So this fight is going to the next stage, huh?”

“Yeah, so that I can beat you for sure.”

Suddenly, the atmosphere surrounding them changed. The excessive heat from the atmosphere cooled down instantly. The pressure he felt this time was more than Leowald's blood thirst or his hostility, it was a pure desire. An aspiration to win.

The atmosphere shook as if Leowald's existence was in control.

Normally, Hihiro would have attacked him already, but stopped himself from doing so as the thought of confronting him poorly could get him in trouble.

(If that's the case, I'll use this change to make preparations.)

As he thought so, Hihiro rapidly installed characters into his body.

(Although my MP is still enough....I can't let my guard down.)

Hihiro anticipated that he would have to use more of his magic after this, he threw several 《Red Honey Candy》 into his mouth to recover his MP.

The candy was digested to his stomach, and felt his exhaustion gradually fade.

(Alright, I'm ready.)

However, all the while Hihiro was preparing himself, Leowald also took their fight to the next stage.

“Hear my wishes....under the sacred contract with my blood.... I now call you thee, Manifest!”

Abruptly, the space between them distorted

Pikin.....!?

A hollow crack appeared before them.

“Cooooooooome! Shishi Ligerrrrrrrrrr!”

From the hollow space, a huge lion clad in flames appeared before Hihiro. The 『Gabranth's』 were the one who was most surprised about Leowald's transformation.

“B-brother Len.”

“....What is it?”

Lenon responded to Kukulia's call. However, they were simply conversing with their mouth as their eyes were completely focused on Leowald.

“W-was Papa always like that?”

“....not sure.”

“Now that you mention it, the image of Father losing his temper like that, I suppose this is Lenon's first time witnessing it.”

It was Leglos who callously entered the conversation of the two. Nevertheless, since he's still in a critical condition, Leglos was sitting in restraint. He seemed to have awoken a little while ago.

“Has Elder Brother seen Pops like that?”

“Yes. Just once. It was way back when the 『Humas』 entered our territory, and trampled one of our villages. When Father heard

about it that time, he changed just like right now.”

“What happened back then?”

“...Father massacred all those 『Humas』. What's worse, all the traces of them disappeared as if they have melted.”

The moment Leglos revealed such a past, both Lenon and Kukulia could only helplessly gulp in fear of it.

“That said, it would seem that boy haven't ignited Father's wrath, although he was able to corner Father like this again.....and he's obviously younger than us.”

Lenon clenched his teeth as he heard Leglos words.

“When Pops became serious back then, we were barely able to wound him just once...damn it!”

However, the fact is, that boy named Hihiro was quickly able to damage Leowald with numerous injuries to the point that Pops became serious. Who wouldn't get mortified by it? Especially for someone who is younger than Lenon.

“This is really unexpected. For someone to be able to push Father to this point, this is a first.”

“...that bastard...”

Leglos smiled wryly as he saw his brother trembling in frustration.

“Hihiro-sama.... he's really amazing....”

On the contrary, while the brother's were frustrated about Hihiro's strength, their youngest sister Mimiru, was captivated to the said person.

“He's so cool.... don't you agree Kukulia-neesama?”

“Eh? Ah, y-yeah....”

Mimiru asked her sister with an expression of pure admiration,

making Kukulia nod in assent as well. Mimiru's expression, however, soon darkened as she clasped her hands together.

"Please..."

"Mimiru?"

"I hope the two of them would return back safely."

"Mimiru..... yes, you're right, I hope they come back safely."

Similarly, another person also carried the same hope as the four siblings.

"Oji-san, Hihiro is really strong."

"Yeah, but Leowald isn't still at his full strength yet. It will likely become more intense after this."

"I hope Hihiro-san is alright."

"Not sure 'bout that, but the fact about him losing is also hard to imagine. He is after all (outside of the norm) non-standard."

Arnold sighed when he saw Muir's anxious expression.

"Although we need to cheer for Leowald as 『Gabranth's』, that guy also, despite his overwhelming strength, needs our support too."

".....You're right."

"So with that, let's both cheer for them."

".....right!"

Meanwhile, on 『Evila's』 side, every one of them were amazed by Leowald's transformation, as well as Hihiro's incredible strength.

"As expected of Hihiro.... to damage the Beast King to such degree..."

Demon Queen Eveam was quite impressed by Hihiro's commendable

feat of damaging Leowald to such an extent. Even Marione who was not able to do such a thing, for a 『Humas』 who hasn't been alive for 20 years of their lives, it was quite impressive.

“Why are you doubting? Hihiro can do even these kind of things.”

Eveam glanced at Liliyn with an expression as if Hihiro was her proudest possession,

“Oh~! As expected of my Mentor! He's parrying most of the blows of the Beast King~!”

“No! You're wrong! That's not your Mentor but Mikazuki's Master!”

“What are you trying to blabber? Mentor is my Mentor alone!”

“No, it's Mikazuki's!”

“Ey! Will you two just shut up!”

Irritated by their dispute, Liliyn snapped at Mikazuki and Nikki. Making the two of them cower in fear.

“Who owns who you say? That's easy. I own Hihiro from head to toe. He's mine alone! You two are just his accessories. Bear in mind your current standings!”

“Boo~! Boo~!”

“Lies! Lies!”

“Hou, you dare try to rival with me, huh?”

The next instant, Liliyn's eyes glowed bright red, instilling fear to those who witnessed it especially Mikazuki who cried “Kui~!” as she escaped towards Shamoe for refuge. Nikki, however, didn't run away, but instead stood still while she got drenched in cold sweat.

“... you want to join them, don't you?”

“Ma-marione!? W-w-w-w-what are you talking about!”

While Eveam was quietly watching Liliyn's dispute unfolding,

Marione, who was besides her, couldn't help but tease Eveam.

“But those people are apparently struggling for that boy? You even competed with the Beast King back then...”

“Wawawawawawawa! W-what are you saying!?”

Before the start of the fifth round, as Leowald wished for Hiiro to be his, Marione remembered Eveam answered him with the words “Hiiro is mine alone.” .

Based from the appearance of her behavior that time, it was, without a doubt, clear that Eveam harbors considerable good will for Hiiro. That's why even if Eveam doesn't admit with this amount of words. It was as clear as day about her feelings for Hiiro as her flustered face turned bright red.

“Ah mou! Let's stop with this topic! Besides look! The Beast King made move!”

“....As you wish.”

“Ouch! It's hot! Darn this magma bastard!”

Even if Hiiro was dodging Leowald's numerous high-speed rushes, it's still necessary for him to keep a distance due to the scattering magma released from Leowald's attacks.

Not only that, the hot pressure received from their confrontation was rapidly draining his stamina. He could manage to avoid the attacks by reading ahead, but it was pushing too far if he had to keep dodging all the time.

Also, due to Leowald's transformation, the temperature around them was gradually rising bit by bit, making Hiiro sweat from their confrontation.

“Don't get carried away!”

After he avoided the attack, Hiiro shot the preinstalled character 『Freeze』 , confident that it'll hit due to Leowald being in the

offensive side. The magic hit the target without even moving.

Instantly, the magic took effect making Leowald into an ice sculpture. However, Hiiro was not that confident that it'll knock him down with this.

In just few seconds, the ice turned from blue to red, melting the residue completely. As he had expected based from the opponent taking on his magic, he judged that this kind of strategy wouldn't be effective anymore

Leowald smiled haughtily, conveying that such attacks was useless against him.

Then, Leowald rushed towards him once again. His average speed seemed to have increased this time.

Hiiro deemed that he would be in disadvantage if this continues on, so he decided to use one of his preinstalled characters 『Acceleration』. Simultaneously, he unsheathed 《Extreme Slasher》 from his scabbard.

Bushun!

In that split second, he dodged incoming fist, and slashed the blade towards his opponent. However, the trace of his slash disappeared instantly, and returned to it's former state due to the effects of 《Transformation》.

Leowald then rotated his body and launched a kick to Hiiro.

“Tsk!”

The katana withstood the attack, successfully repelling the assault. Hiiro rotated his body in preparation for his next attack, but was surprised by the approaching flaming fist towards him.

Hyun!

Hiiro avoided the attack instantly from his position. With the favor of 『Acceleration』, Hiiro was able to prevent receiving the attack head on, although the place he was standing burned to crisp.

After that, they clashed once again, with Hiiro avoiding the fiery blows from Leowald. Although Hiiro could clearly dodged his attacks, as expected, it was taking a big toll on his stamina.

That said, Leowald was also in a similar situation. He won't let this confrontation continue as it is.

"Hiiro."

It had been long time since Hiiro heard his voice after they started their intense battle.

"Hou, so the Beast King is still conscious in this state?"

"Kuku... this is really fun."

".....what a battle maniac."

"Don't say that. I can also feel the same with you as we fought. Hiiro... aren't you enjoying the same way as I am?"

"....who knows."

"Kukuku... anyway, that Katana of yours, I suppose that's not an ordinary Katana, huh? If I was in my usual state, I would definitely have lost from being cut by it."

It was as Leowald said, normally if an ordinary Katana clashes with the magma of his, it should have melted by then. However, the 《Extreme Slasher》 haven't had any trace of deterioration on it.

"That's a fine sword. However, that won't be enough to beat me."

"....."

"That said, I can't also defeat you if this fight stays as it is."

Without hesitation, Leowald returned back to his usual form before the 《Transformation》. His face was a little fatigued. It seemed that using 《Transformation》 was quite draining to use.

"Hiiro, this time I will show you my full power."



“So this fight is going to the next stage, huh?”

“Yeah, so that I can beat you for sure.”

Suddenly, the atmosphere surrounding them changed. The excessive heat from the atmosphere cooled down instantly. The pressure he felt this time was more than Leowald's blood thirst or his hostility, it was a pure desire. An aspiration to win.

The atmosphere shook as if Leowald's existence was in control.

Normally, Hihiro would have attacked him already, but stopped himself from doing so as the thought of confronting him poorly could get him in trouble.

(If that's the case, I'll use this change to make preparations.)

As he thought so, Hihiro rapidly installed characters into his body.

(Although my MP is still enough....I can't let my guard down.)

Hihiro anticipated that he would have to use more of his magic after this, he threw several 《Red Honey Candy》 into his mouth to recover his MP.

The candy was digested to his stomach, and felt his exhaustion gradually fade.

(Alright, I'm ready.)

However, all the while Hihiro was preparing himself, Leowald also took their fight to the next stage.

“Hear my wishes....under the sacred contract with my blood.... I now call you thee, Manifest!”

Abruptly, the space between them distorted

Pikin.....!?

A hollow crack appeared before them.

“Cooooooooome! Shishi Ligerrrrrrrrrr!”

From the hollow space, a huge lion clad in flames appeared before Hiroyuki.

## Chapter 195 – To the Next Stage

TL:

Alright, some things to note before you start reading this chapter.

The name of the creature Leowald summoned was シシライガ. I'm not entirely sure what exactly is the right term to call it, but I decided to settle with Shishi Liger (Lol zoids!)

Hihiro saw an enormous living creature appear before him, and took his breath for an instant due to its overwhelming presence.

This was the power Leowald showed during the first round of the match. The part where Marione materialized a huge earth dragon, when a lion suddenly overwhelmed that dragon, destroyed it, and deprived Marione of his consciousness.

The appearance of the said being was quite akin to a lion, except that its whole body was covered in flames, or more closer to the whole entity being made from the flames itself.

In addition, it was endowed with two protruding sharp fangs attached at the ends of its wide mouth, similar to a saber tooth tiger. Anything bitten by it would easily become a punctured doll.

Its staggering build was 5 to 6 times of the size of a normal lion. Even without experiencing, it was obvious that receiving any of its attack would surely bring anyone in a world of pain.

(This guy has summoned quite a troublesome fellow to handle....)

On the spur of the moment, Hihiro examined the Shishi Liger with 『覗』 | 『Pry』. Accordingly, he understood what had happened after. This new opponent was dangerous enough to turn this into a life-and-death situation for him.

《魔法無効化体質》 | 《Anti-Magic Element》

[TL: 体質 means constitution or disposition. However, calling it Anti-Magic Constitution sounds awful to me, or even worse Magic Nullifying Constitution. Instead I used something simpler like Element, or Attribute.]

He had confirmed it as many times, and was still wide-eyed from their existence. ]

(This is bad, so this means 《Word Magic》 won't work on them?)

It was, indeed, bad news. Based from how they defeated Marione, it was possible that this Shishi Liger's was also capable of agile movements. And supposing Leowald and Shishi Liger attacked him at the same time, it's likely that Hiiro would have a hard time due to his magic being ineffective against them.

“Hiiro, let me tell you one thing.”

Leowald broadly grinned as he spoke to Hiiro.

“Did you know that this Shishi Liger has a special ability?”

Of course he knew. Hiiro understood what Leowald meant because he had examined them already. Still, it's better for Leowald to be left in the dark of this knowledge.

“For you to offer me this, you seem to be surprisingly confident.”

Hiiro said with sarcasm included in his word. However, the said person just simply laughed in return.

“Nah, I'm guessing you'll probably notice it soon anyway. So I'll just look forward on how you'll fight your way with this one.”

Despite his opponent's composure, the critical injuries he bore from Hiiro was visible on his body after 《Transformation》 was released.

“I can't fight you that long. That's why I'll beat you in this fight Hiiro!”

The last stage Leowald prepared have started.

Immediately, the Shishi Liger vanished instantly from the place.

“Wha!?”

Before Hihiro was aware of it, a wide-opened mouth was approaching him from the sky.

“Like I’ll let you!”

Hihiro swiftly unsheathed his sword, and repelled the attack.

Gachin!

Surprisingly, his sword clashed with its sharp fangs. Due to its power, Hihiro felt like he pounded on a large rock.

“Ku!?”

A considerable shock ran through Hihiro’s whole body but he wasn’t even given the chance to feel it all together. Because the Shishi Liger have already approached him before he noticed it.

By reflex, installed character 『反射』 | 『Reflection』 was used,

Bachin!

A wall made from magic surrounded Hihiro. In that moment, he used another installed character 『転移』 | 『Transfer』, and attempted to escape from his current position.

Hihiro teleported behind a rock, and lay dormant besides it.

(Damn... these conditions are too difficult.)

As expected, the 《Anti-Magic Element》 was quite troublesome to deal with. Any magic attacks used against it was rendered ineffective, even his 『Reflection』 was easily broken as if it was nothing to them. To make the matter worse, he had used two of his pre-installed characters already.

(With that kind of ability granted on them, these guys would probably be my natural enemy.)

That said, there was something else Hiiro found strange all the while he confronted the Shishi Liger. Apart from Leowald's 《Transformation》, the said person never moved from his position.

An idea formed inside his mind. It's likely possible that Leowald can't move while the Shishi Liger was out in the field.

Supposing that's true, then the prospect of Hiiro confronting them both at the same time won't be happening anytime soon. Still, it's not yet worth of rejoicing about it.

First of all, it's necessary to verify if his idea was actually correct.

(And to do that, I need to approach the Beast King.)

Hiiro tried to quietly make a rough guess where their current position was, only to be interrupted by the presence on his rear.

(They found me already!?)

Hiiro jumped sideways avoiding the invasive bite that crushed what's left of the place.

"Ku! ...haa....haa... so 『Acceleration』 has reached it's limits too huh?"

Hiiro's current movement had been improved by his magic. And yet, he was still forced to avoid it by a hair's breadth. The movement of the Shishi Liger was way too fast.

"So this is a 『Spirit』 ..."

He remembered Rarashik's explanation from before. The final objective of the 《Binding Technique》 was to summon a 『Spirit』 and integrate with them.

However, pure talent was also necessary, and naturally a strong willpower to handle the 『Spirit』 themselves.

『Spirits』 were existence similar to magic, a fragment that composes the world, which is the reason for their immeasurable power. In other words, if one immaturely summoned a 『Spirit』,

their soul would likely be corrupted by their power, and most likely kill them in the process.

However, supposing one was able to completely summon a 『Spirit』, their enforced will would become their linchpin in controlling the 『Spirit』 as Rarashik had said.

(So if one could use such power with his own will, they'd be invincible, huh? Although I heard that the 《Binding Technique》 was a counter-measure to magic itself, I can now see now why they deemed it like that.)

Putting his Katana back to its sheath, Hiiro ran with all his strength away from his current location, distancing himself from Leowald's grasp.

Shishi Liger ran after him at a terrific speed. But as expected, Leowald never moved from his position, it seemed to be taking all of his concentration just to control Shishi Liger.

Naturally, it's also plausible that the cause of Leowald's immobility was to prevent his sustained injuries from widening, but the very idea itself was quite contrasting to his straightforward character, so it's likely that Hiiro's former idea was the correct assumption.

(Closer! Come closer!)

Hiiro distanced himself from Leowald at a fair distance, but still the Shishi Liger neatly caught him. At the moment he was about to get bitten, Hiiro put strength on his right leg, and dodged from it. And when he landed on the large rock for cover, he used the character 『影分身』 | 『Shadow Clone』.

[Trivia: 影分身 is read as Kage Bunshin. Feels familiar? ]

Hiiro's double began to move away from the rock, further increasing its distance from Leowald. Naturally, Shishi Liger followed after.

(Now have a good time playing with him.)

Hiiro made his double a decoy, and proceeded to beat Leowald

while he's occupied. He took a peek at his double and the Shishi Liger while he was writing the character 『Transfer』. His double seemed to have not yet been captured.

Pishun!

Then, 『Transfer』 character was invoked.

“Take this!”

In that instant, a Katana appeared behind Leowald aiming to slash him. However, the space near Leowald distorted, and a small crack manifested from it.

Hihiro felt a bad premonition about it as he slowly reached Leowald. And then, a beast clad in flame appeared from the depths of the crack.

Dogaa!

Before Hiiro could deliver his attack, he received a blow, shaking his entire bone structure.

(Not good! I'm losing consciousness...!)

The way things were going, Hihiro would lose. So he immediately invoked the installed character 『Healing』. However, upon invocation, Hihiro was blown off, and rolled on the solid ground.

While Hihiro felt the pale blue magic covering his entire body from his fall, Leowald walked towards Shishi Liger, and rode it.

(Fuu, what a tiresome opponent....)

Although the request fee from before was certainly a charming proposal, it was quite unthinkable to accomplish due to Leowald's troublesome partner.

However, Hihiro cannot afford to lose any more than this. Aside from the request fee, his pride wouldn't let him. And lastly, if he lost, he would have to deal with a noisy Liliyn.



Hihiro glanced at the direction from where Liliyn existed, although he couldn't make out what her expression looked like nor if she was shouting at him, he felt like she was telling him "What are you doing, you fool!"

(good grief...)

As Hihiro casually wiped the stream of blood from his mouth, he turned his gaze on Leowald who just descended from Shishi Liger.

"I admit I'm impressed, Beast King."

"Gahaha! Of course it is! Even though things may appear this way, I was called the strongest among the many emperors of our race!"

He was not altogether wrong about that.

"...you really called quite an unexpected fellow. Even my magic was rendered ineffective."

"Hou, so you noticed after all. You really never cease to amaze me!"

"....so this is your full strength, huh?"

"...i wonder about that? It's possible I may have some left hidden."

There was some hidden implication in Leowald's expression. It's likely possible that he really has something more up in his sleeves. If that's the case, Hihiro couldn't help but feel admiration on the Beast King strength, although he found it kind of troublesome in it's own way as well.

"Is that so. Then Beast King,"

"Hm?"

"I will also show it."

".....?"

"I'm going to take this fight to the next stage."

In that instant, the surrounding temperature suddenly dropped or so Leowald thought. He was taken aback by what Hihiro had said.

“The next stage...you say?”

“Ah.”

“Hou, so you still have something under your sleeves?”

The pale blue magical power covering Hihiro dispersed in an instant.

(What’s happening....?)

He doesn’t seem to have given up. His expression was enough proof of that. On the contrary, Leowald felt cold sweat oozing from his back, as he watched what was unfolding.

“To be honest. I thought I could win without even using this.”

Hihiro moved his mouth as he quietly watched Leowald.

“However, you showed me your true strength in this match, strangely because of it, I felt like showing you my true strength as well.”

“.....”

“Besides, if I don’t use this, I admit that I will likely lose to you.”

This was a bluff. The change in atmosphere, and his manner of speaking, it was all just a cover. A bluff.

“Let me give you a piece of advice. If you want to stop now, do so. Because if I use my full strength.... it might end before you know it.”

Now he was provoking him. It might be wiser to attack Hihiro immediately if he wants to win this duel. But Leowald’s instincts were shouting not to.

『I will show you my full strength.』

If what he’s saying is true, then Leowald would love to see his full

strength, and beat him at his own game.

(Kukuku.... sorry my fellow comrades. From here on out, I won't be fighting as your King, but as a man.....I've decided to fight my way as a soldier.)

Leowald threw a sharp glance at Hiiro after resolving himself from his decision.

“Then show me Hiiro! If what you're saying is true, prove to me and surpass me!”

Hiiro made a sneer as if he was making a scornful laugh. He brought a small bag out from his bosom, and took more than two of the 《Red Honey Candy》 he took a while ago.

“Magic recovery....huh?”

“You really are a fool for resisting me until the end, Beast King.”

“Gahaha! Like I said! Show me your true power! But know that in the end, I will be the one standing!”

Leowald thought that that big pride of his was just to make him shrink back as he felt his exhaustion fade away from his body.

“Although I may have used it for a few instance....pardon me if I end up killing you.”

“Mu?”

“I haven't gotten a grip on this power very much.”

Then, Hiiro raised his right forefinger forward. Leowald thought about the pale blue magic to be invoked from it....

“W-what are you doing...?”

Leowald instinctively asked back. Because the light that was released from Hiiro's fingertip was dyed in red.

## Chapter 196 – The Winner Raises his Fist

TL :

here are some things to note first before you proceed with the chapter.

Remember Shishi Liger (シシライガ)?

A certain ‘cat’, had told me that it was read as Lion Liger. Although the English sounds – you know – redundant, just bear with me for I will use that in this chapter.

“This is my full power.”

As Hiiro had said so, a red light glowed in his presence as his fingers quietly moved. The trace of the red light followed its intended course in the sky.

Upon the completion of characters being written on the sky, the characters poured out a red hue of light as it covered Hiiro’s body, making him look like he was wearing it on his body.

『天下無双』 | 『Peerless』

It was exactly these characters that Hiiro wrote in the sky. Hiiro spoke to Leowald who was surprised by this unexpected development.

“Shall we start the last round, Beast King?”

By reflex, the Lion Liger reacted to defend Leowald from the sudden rise of blood thirst coming from Hiiro.

“Sorry about that. I can’t go easy on anyone right now.”

As he said so, the red light in which Hiiro was wrapped in, automatically formed characters, and invoked it all at the same time.

『剛力』 『剛力』 『剛力』 『剛力』 『剛力』

TL Note: 『剛力』 | 『Herculean Strength』

Several 『Herculean Strength』 characters floated besides Hiiro. And in front of his chest was

『韋駄天』 | 『Swift-Footed』

『Swift-Footed』 was a three-character magic that exceeds the speed of 『Acceleration』. But when its effect is invoked, the load it gives to the body is too much to handle, and not only that, there's a time limit in place as well, which was why Hiiro never used it.

Hiiro's smooth movement made after images.

Dogoo!

He avoided the Lion Liger's fangs by hair's breadth, and quickly made a counter. The Lion Liger was blown off from the ground at a terrific speed.

Leowald who witnessed the whole fight was dumbfounded by what had happened. Hiiro spoke to him afterwards.

"I will leave you for later. I'll knock down this cat first."

Immediately following that, the character 『転移』 | 『Transfer』 instantaneously appeared from Hiiro's vicinity.

Pishun!

The place that Hiiro intended was the location where the Lion Liger was about to reach. He arrived there before the former reached its destination, and was greeted by the bullet-like projectile towards him.

Doga!

This time, Hiiro kicked the Lion Liger from right above. He continued this movement many times, moving it from one place towards another just like a pinball. With the effect of 『Swift-

Footed』, Hiiro's speed had become boundless. Also, while this ability is in use, he's now able to run in air as well.

The Lion Liger never bled from Hiiro's attack since they're not living creatures, but it seemed to have sustained quite a damage as he found it gradually weakening.

That said, while the Lion Liger was being blown off, it, at once, desperately tried to resist his grasp by baring his wide jaw towards Hiiro as it utilized the force of its gravity, and bite him in the process.

“So you can still move in that state, huh?”

The sharp fangs approached Hiiro, as it splendidly seized Hiiro's right shoulder. However....

Poof!

Hiiro's body unexpectedly dispersed into smoke. The Lion Liger was perplexed by what had happened, as Hiiro showed up at its rear.

“That's just my double you know?”

Indeed, the victim that the Lion Liger crushed in a split second was the effect 『Shadow Clone』. The Lion Liger was misled from attacking the real thing.

“Now time for you to fly.”

Following that, he kicked the Lion Liger towards Leowald's position.

“Ku!?”

Although Leowald guarded to protect himself from the impact with Lion Liger, the latter's condition was at death's door, twitching on the ground.

“Lion.....Liger....”

The expression drawn on Leowald's face was as if he saw something beyond his imagination, like a nightmare from his dreams.

"I told you right? I can't go easy on anyone right now. This fight will end in an instant."

Hiiro faced Leowald with those words spoken.

"Hiiro....who.....in the world are you?"

"Sorry, I'm bad at making explanations. But, if I dare say, I'm merely a unique cheat.

".....!?"

Before Leowald was aware of it, Hiiro moved towards his proximity, and delivered a kick to his stomach.

"Guhoo!?"

Leowald who received the full brunt impact of it, was thrown towards a large rock. He who hasn't received a blow until now, vomited blood upon impact.

"Ugh...."

Then, at the corner of his vision, Leowald noticed something on Hiiro. The characters that suspended overhead of Hiiro 『天-下-無-双』 have been reduced to 『天-下-無』. One character seemed to have disappeared from it.

"...i-it seems that power apparently has some sort of time limit."

"Who knows, I will leave it to your imagination."

"...gahaha, with my current condition, I don't think I can prolong that long."

"So you give up?"

"Like hell I'll do that you fool!"

Leowald's muscles expanded, destroying the rock, and freeing him from his constraints. Then, he faced Hiiro once again.

"Kukuku, this is great. You really are the best Hiiro!"

"How many times do you have to tell me that?"

"Gahahahahaha!"

Leowald scowled at Hiiro as he inhaled a large breath of air. His eyes burning with a clear resolve.

"This next one would be my very strongest. How about it? Are you up for it?"

Leowald was clearly provoking him. But, the current Hiiro doesn't have any reason to refuse him.

"Then, I'll surpass you."

"Gahahaha! Then, let's conclude this Hiiro!"

Upon saying that, the weakened Lion Liger showed up from the space again. Following that, the Lion Liger became a mass of flames as it focused on Leowald's right fist. The said flame was absorbed rapidly in his right fist.

The color of his fist gradually dyed to a different color. Although Hiiro thought that bright red flame would substantially appear, it didn't, what appeared however was transparent blue flame on his right fist.

(If I'm not mistaken, blue flames have a higher temperature than a red flame....I see, so this your final trump card, huh?)

Though it looked similar when he partially used his 《Transformation》 from that time, the density of it's power was vastly different. Hiiro understood that an incomparable power was being contained in there.

"This is my true 《Fang of the End》!"



This would seemed to be his final attack.

“I told you right? I will surpass you.”

Hihiro jumped back, taking a distance from Leowald.

(It's possible that attack bears Anti-Magic properties. If I receive that, there's a possibility that I might lose from it.)

Therefore, if he launched an attack before that came, he'll win. A very simple but comprehensive fight.

Aside from the 『Herculean Strength』 characters surrounding him, Hihiro wrote 『Herculean Strength』 this time. Red light merged in his right fist instantly. He stored all of his power into his right fist.

“I will go at full strength Beast King!”

“Come Hihirooooo!”

Both of them mutually kicked the ground, and charged. Both of them approaching one another.

10 meters.....Five meters.....Three meters.....One meter.....

Dogoooooooooooooooooooo!

The tremendous blast created a huge clearing on the land, red and blue light dazzled the whole area causing the onlookers to momentarily close their eyes. While the sky was covered by the cloud of dust, there was something that was whirled at a terrible degree from there.

.....It was Leowald.

His eyes were as white as snow, and his mouth half opened, as if he had lost control over his body. He was blown off to sky with his consciousness clearly out in the dark.

The impact of the blast had also reached the people who were

besides the Crater. Unintentionally, Demon Queen Eveam straddled on the ground. How the result of current confrontation after that? She didn't know, and desperately looked for Hiiro's appearance.

Then, she saw from the smoky fumes, Leowald flying out among it.

"I-is that...."

"The Beast King...it seems."

Even if Marione hadn't answered her, Eveam knew what exactly happened. It was quite obvious from the state of Leowald.

And as the fumes cleared out from the surrounding, there was Hiiro standing still wrapped in red light, as his fist was raised up high.

Leowald who crashed from the sky to the ground, didn't move a single bit. Anyone who saw it also understood what had happened, but were speechless altogether as they all stared wide eyed from the situation.

All the while the people were still speechless, Eveam saw Hiiro's gaze turned to her direction. It was as if he was conveying to her the words "Satisfied?"

However, it's not yet possible to rejoice. The declaration of his victory has not yet been recognized. Silva who was on the side of the stage was catching up with his breath as he checked upon Leowald, confirming his well being.

Then, Silva raised his hand, and turned it to Hiiro.

"The winner is Hiiro-samaaaaaaa!"

Like a switch turning on, soldiers of Evila threw all their weapons away as they raised a triumphant voice of joy.

" " " Uoo! " " "

The intensity of the shout was quite ear splitting. Eveam also thought of joining the fray, but was still in a daze. Though her body

was trembling from joy, her awareness seemed to have not yet returned from reality.

“We won....? Hihiro....won?”

“Yes Your Majesty! We are the victors of this duel!”

“We did it Your Majesty!”

Marione and Shublarz came towards her with a smile.

“We won....? S-should I be happy about it.....?”

Not only the two people answered her, but all members besides her. Because of that, her chest became heavy as she couldn't suppress her emotion inside of it, and tears began to overflow from within her.

Eveam fell on her knees,

“Thank you.... thank you so much.....Hihiro”

As Marione, and the others listened to Eveam's voice, they felt relieved, and happy at the same time. Shublarz then touched her shoulders.

“It's alright to cry now Your Majesty.”

“U....Uu.....I'm so glad....”

Eveam hugged Shublarz body similar to that of young child crying. Among them, Ornoth gladly smiled to such a scene, and slowly turned his glance at Hihiro.

“Aquinas... your eyes were right after all.”

Aquinas who put faith in him, wasn't mistaken. Although the scene certainly took on a dangerous turn, Hihiro splendidly responded to  
『Evila』.

“However.... that red light that boy used... was it just my imagination?”

Ornoth lightly rejected when muttering so, and was soaked in the aftertaste of their victory.

.....

“Kuhahahaha! See that? I told you he can do it! Hihiro won’t be defeated by the likes of that person!”

Liliyn cheerfully laughed aloud.

“As expected of my Mentor! Uoooo! He’s so coooool!”

“Ye~y! Master won~!”

“I-i-i’m so glad!”

Nikki, Mikazuki, and Shamoe each expressed their joy respectively.

“But still, as expected of the Beast King I guess. He even pushed Hihiro to use that.”

“B-but, Hihiro-sama seemed to have been in a pinch, wouldn’t anyone be forced to use it if that happened?”

“Iya, if he had overwhelmed him from the beginning, he could have won so easily! It’s likely possible that he wanted to heat things up from his battle with the Beast King.”

“Fueee!? i-is that really true?”

Shamoe who didn’t understand what Liliyn said, asked back.

“Of course it is! While the Beast King was bringing out that creature, Hihiro could have caused mayhem, and delivered the finishing blow that time. Moreover, if he used any of the other four characters, he could still win. He didn’t have to intentionally use that mode....good grief, that’s men for you.”

“Fue... does ojou-sama hate that sort of men like what Hihiro-sama did?”

“Ha!? W-w-w-what are you asking all of a sudden!”

“B-because I felt uneasy about it!”

Then, Liliyn groaned “Mumumu.”

“N-no.... I don’t hate that kind of guy.... or perhaps I should say, a child minded Hihiro tickles my fancy... hm?”

Liliyn noticed Shamoe grinning with a delighted smile on her face, which in turn caused Liliyn to turn her flustered face away.

“A-anyway, the important thing is that we won!”

“Fufufu~ ojou-sama is so cute~”

“W-what do you mean by that! Ey! Don’t hug me all of a sudden!”

“Iya~desu!”

END OF DUEL!

## Chapter 197 – Admiration to the Winner

TL Notes :

Gomenasai! \*bows\* Last chapter (196), I made a mistake on translating one of Hiiro's Word Magic.

『剛力』 | 『Herculean Strength』

This is the two character Word Magic that suspended around Hiiro.

『金剛力』 | 『Superhuman Strength』

This is the three character Word Magic that Hiiro wrote on his right fist.

I know some of you may have noticed, but the reason why I mistook these two the same, is because both had the same meaning.

= > How do you classify Hercules if he's not superhuman!?

A staggering surge of exhaustion hit Hiiro's body when he reverted back to his former state.

(.....fuu, although it's been a long time since I last used 《Four Word Chain》, it's still quite draining as usual...)

《Four Word Chain》 MP Consumption: 30% of the maximum Mana.

It is now possible to write four characters in the same line. Similar with 《Three Word Chain》, the effective range, the power, and its utility, greatly improves. When unlocking this ability, though the duration of its effect is still dependent on the desired character, the restriction for 《Three Word Chain》 is released. The content is identical to the 《Two Word Chain》. However this time, the stock for 《Invocation Management》 is increased, making it possible to install as many as 7 characters in total. 《Four Word Chain》 can be used up to three times a day, and the character with the

equivalent effect cannot be used simultaneously. After it uses it once, you can only use 《One Word Chain》 with your MP not recovering. Also, once the execution of 《Word Magic》 is interrupted in the process, all your stats would return to your Level 1 state as a 《Rebound》, and it will become impossible to practice magic. In addition, you will bear a random abnormal state: various kinds of pain, paralysis, sleep, loss of sight, and confusion. The status reduction, random abnormal state and loss of magic will return to its former state after an hour.

(Still, whenever I use 『Peerless』, the color really is different.)

Indeed, the four character 『天下無双』 | 『Peerless』 was equipped with a special effect when used, and it is what he had obtained after unlocking the 《Four Word Chain》.

First, to write the character 『Peerless』, it's necessary to create 《Red Energy》 by mixing his life force with magic, and once it's possible to do so, a red hue of light is then generated.

Though it's usually a pale blue color when Hiiro uses his magic, 『Peerless』 can't be invoked without using 《Red Energy》.

Once applied, he enters 《Peerless Mode》, where he is freely able to manipulate the red light to form the desired 《Word》 even if the said character/s were not written by him.

Moreover, once the body is covered in red light, his physical strength rises, especially his magic resistance, gaining an incredible boost.

That said, this mode is limited to five minutes at tops, making each character above Hiiro's head 『天下無双』 disappear one by one. And when all the character disappears, the mode terminates.

Once this mode ends, Hiiro's HP & MP decreases again by another 10% of its maximum amount, and he can only use 《One Word Chain》 at a duration of 1 hour. Furthermore, if he moves too much in that mode, the moment he returns to his former state, he would be greeted with an intense muscular pain, and joint pains. Lastly,

his MP will not recover during that duration. He can only do nothing but wait it to recover naturally.

Also, since Hiiro used 『Herculean Strength』, another considerable degree of muscle pain will assault throughout his body. In addition, at their final confrontation, he didn't just use 『剛力』 | 『Herculean Strength』 but 『金剛力』 | 『Superhuman Strength』 as well, plus he used 『洞察』 | 『Insight』 to predict his opponent's movement, and 『韋駄天』 | 『Swift-Footed』 to improve his physical strength to its utmost limit.

And due to the favor of these characters, Hiiro was able to predict Leowald's movement, nimbly dodge his fist, and hit Leowald head-on, though the after-risk of it was too severe.

As Hiiro saw Leowald who fell from the sky, and noticed his abdomen faintly move up and down, Hiiro felt relieved.

Honestly, Hiiro never held back throughout that last fight. He thought that Leowald might have died from his strongest attack, but apparently he seems to have not reached death's door yet.

( After all, even though he was 'officially' my opponent, it's troublesome if they die.)

While Hiiro thought so, he saw Muir and Mimiru's group running towards Leowald's body. Apparently, it would seem that all of the 『Gabranth's』 came.

“Father!”

It was the First Prince Leglos who called Leowald. And despite the large injury he sustained from his earlier match, he still ran with haste towards his father.

He confirmed first whether Leowald was still breathing, and felt relieved from his findings.

“Aniki! Is Pops alright!”

The Second Prince Lenon anxiously asked. When Leglos smiled, and



nodded in return, the people behind them felt relieved.

“Papa!”

“Otousama!”

Kukulua and Mimiru also ran up towards Leowald with a tearful expression.

“Legu-nii, Papa is bleeding!”

“I agree! Medical team! Come immediately!”

As Leglos said so, several human beast approached Leowald carrying a big container, and quickly confirmed his condition. However, their complexion turned pale.

It possibly meant that Leowald’s current condition was that worse.

“Y-you can save him, right?”

Leglos made an expression hoping for such a situation.

“.....we will do our best. But, due to his frequent use of 《Binding Technique》 one match after another, fatigue had accumulated in his body, and received considerable damage to his bones, and internal organs. Moreover, seeing this amount blood loss....”

“S-so you mean....”

Kukulua’s body quivered, and found dread ruling over her whole body.

“Don’t joke around! Do something about it! That’s what you guys are tasked for right!”

“Lenon stop! They already said that they’ll do their best!”

“But Aniki!”

“.....Rarashik-dono!”

Though Leglos requested for Rarashik’s assistance, even the said

person had a gloomy expression. One look at Leowald's state was enough to tell what his condition is. Leglos who saw that, couldn't help but grind his teeth, mortified.

And in the sort of affair, Mimiru was clinging to Leowald with a tear stricken expression.

"Otousama....Otousama... Please.... don't die..."

Leglos, and the others who saw such an appearance, stopped their quarrel, and became quiet.

When despair was about enter into their body, one footstep approached them.

".....Hiiro-san."

Everyone's gaze turned around as Muir muttered the name of the said person.

.....

"You bastard, how dare you do this to Pops!"

"I told you to stop Lenon! This man fought Father fair and square! There's no reason to blame him!"

Leglos stopped Lenon from getting enraged any further, and pinioned his arms behind. Hiiro disregarded the drama unfolding, and looked down at Leowald as he reached him.

".....Hiiro....sama...."

Mimiru looked up at Hiiro with upturned eyes. He lightly leaked a sigh, and

"Move away Blue Ribbon."

"H.....Hiiro-sama...."

"Trust me."

Mimiru reluctantly parted from Leowald's body.

(Right now, I can only use 《One Word Chain》 .... I guess there's no other option, huh?)

Indeed, only 《One Word Chain》 could be used as a risk of 《Tenka Musou Mode》. But, it's necessary to improve Leowald's current state in order to cure his fatal wound.

So, on his forehead, chest, left arm, right arm, left foot, right foot, 『治』 | 『Heal』 character was applied, and invoked. Following that, a warm pale light wrapped Leowald's body in that place.

Once Mimiru and others saw Leowald's complexion gradually improving, all of them felt relieved.

“To be able to this kind of things.... as well as that warm light...”

Kukulua who experienced that phenomenon, was intoxicated by that gentle light as it appeased her heart with a sense of security. Even the people besides them were also identical, all of them turned their eyes to Hiiro as if he did something unbelievable.

Especially, the people from the medical team, all of them were jaw dropped as they watched the astonishing spectacle.

“...fuu. With this I guess he won't be dying anytime soon. Even I'll have an uneasy conscience if he dies as it is..”

“Hiiro-sama....”

“But this is considered as a loan, alright?”

Hiiro turned his heels when he said so.

“Let's go Jii-san.”

“As you wish.”

Silva bowed his head in respect as he quietly followed near Hiiro. Mimiru who saw such Hiiro, stood up, and

“Thank you so much Hiiro-sama!”

Though Hiiro made no reaction to her words, Mimiru bowed with a joyous expression on her face.

“May you get some good rest Hiiro-sama.”

It was Silva who returned their appreciation as they walked away.

“That was tiring. I feel like going to a hot bath and some nice rest.”

“Nofofofofo! However, with this battle, it seems that their spirits have been slightly diminished.”

“What makes you say that?”

“Was there a need to use such power?”

“.....”

“If it’s the usual Hiiro-sama, he would have used other characters and still win that battle.”

Silva looked at him and, expressed his usual buoyant smile.

“.....it was just on a whim.”

“Hou, just on whim you say?”

“Yeah.”

To Hiiro’s brusque answer, Silva just laughed.

“Then, shall we leave it like that then.”

As they continued to head outside the Crater, they saw their colleagues 『Evila’s』 assembled together.

There doesn’t seem to have been a necessity of returning all the way to them apparently.

.....

“Mentooooooooooooor!”

“Masteeeeeeeeeeer!”

Nikki and Mikazuki ran at full speed, and jumped towards them. If Hiiro remain as it is, he would surely get hugged by these two. So,

Hyo!

Without change, Nikki and Mikazuki who have lost their target,

“Fupi!?”

“Funya!?”

Hit, and rolled over the ground.

“Fueeeeeee! A-are you two alright!”

Though Shamoe worriedly ran over the two people in panic,

“Fuooooo! That huuuuuuuuurts!”

Their nose might have hit too hard. Nikki, for that matter, rolled on the ground while she suppressed the pain with both her hands.

“Kuiiiiiiii! Shamoe-chaaaaan!”

Mikazuki seems to have also struck hard, and clung to Shamoe with a flustered face.

“These guys are noisy as usual.”

Liliyn approached from the side as she muttered so with a sigh, and shrugged her shoulders.

“Though this is a trivial thing to bring up, it took longer than I anticipated.”

“I don’t particularly mind. Besides, you won as I had told you so.”

“Hmm, next time I want a more stronger opponent.”

Though Hiiro says so, it didn’t meant that Hiiro wants to fight strong people similar to Leowald’s caliber all the time. At the very

least, his feelings right now was all about soaking in a hot bath, and getting a peaceful sleep.

“....Hiiro.”

When the Demon Queen Eveam came into his sight, Hiiro plainly spoke to her in this way.

“Don’t forget what you promised, alright?”

However, Hiiro was caught off guard. This girl did something he did not thought she would ever do, and because his body was quite tired.....

..... Hiiro was not able to dodge Eveam’s embrace.

“Aaaaaaa!? W-what are you doi—fuga!?”

Having lifted her eyes to Eveam’s unexpected conduct, Silva, in that moment, held Liliyn’s mouth from behind.

“Nofofofofof! Ojousama, why don’t we read the air for a little bit?”

“Fugaaaa! (Release meeee!)”

Though Liliyn struggled in his arm who seem to have no any intention of letting go, her movement was deprived completely.

However, not just Liliyn, Hiiro also wanted to say something about this. He was confused by her sudden behavior as he couldn’t understand the significance of it, so he placed his hands on her shoulders and tried to part from her.

“Oi Maou! Why are you clinging to me! Release me!”

But upon trying to push her away,

“.....I’m so glad....”

Hiiro heard a tearful voice. And instinctively stopped his movement, because Hiiro felt the slight tremble of Eveam’s body.

## Chapter 198 – Praise to the Hero

“I’m glad... I’m so glad you’re safe...”

The fight struck terror inside of Eveam. Considering the fact that Hihiro is a 『Humas』, the said person shouldn’t have any reason to participate in this duel.

And yet, Hihiro —even though he was commissioned by 『Evila』 — desperately fought to the point that it became a near-death battle, and snatched victory in the duel.

For that matter however, Eveam was so scared by the prospect of Hihiro dying. Though it was true that she had rolled Hihiro in her matters quite often than not, never had she wanted nor forsake him to die.

Even if she believed in Hihiro, just the thought of him getting wounded on the chest, made her brittle chest be crushed from nervousness so many times. She wanted him to win....that itself was quite obvious, but her wish of wanting Hihiro to return safely was far more stronger.

Hihiro did come back safely in the end. What’s more, he obtained the best possible present for 『Evila』, his victory. And no one in the world wouldn’t be any happier than that.

Which was why, when Hihiro returns Eveam decided to receive him with a cheerful welcome, and express her gratitude before anyone else.

However, once Eveam saw Hihiro’s exhausted body, she couldn’t help but embrace him closely. She was so relieved from the bottom of her heart the moment his warmth flowed directly within her outstretched arms.

Though at first he was desperately trying to free from her embrace, his struggle eventually died down, and put both his hands in surrender.

And then, he spoke, not in his irritated tone moments ago, but his usual flat tone of voice.

“Once you’re satisfied, please release me. It’s a little painful.”

Upon saying that, only then did Eveam notice how tight she was embracing Hiiro, and thereupon separated herself from Hiiro, which caused her however into staring at Hiiro’s profile up close....

Boof!

Though Hiiro indifferently looked at her with narrowed eyes, Eveam face became hot in an instant as steam came out of her face.

“N~ Her Majesty is really daring.”

Hearing Shublarz’s teasing voice, she became flustered in full embarrassment. Only then did she finally understood what have she done,

“Ah, t-t-this is a misunderstanding! I-i’m just expressing my gratitude to him!”

“Hee~ is that really so Her Majesty? Hugging a gentleman just to express their gratitude, that’s my first time hearing it~.”

“T-t-t-t-that’s not true! I-i’m not a woman who’ll ever do such things to anyone!”

“Fufu~ I see. So that means Hiiro-kun is S~P~E~C~I~A~L, right?”

“S-s-s-special.....!?”

Following that, she looked back at Hiiro, staring directly into his eyes. Her mind was in a complete mess, and she couldn’t settle herself down. It was as if a festival was happening inside her head.

“Aaaaaaaa! I want to return back to the castleeeeeee!”

Eveam crouched down on her knees, her face covered with both her hands.



Hihiro inadvertently raised his eyebrows from Eveam sudden nonsensical actions.

(What the hell is she doing this time?)

On the other side, Shublarz was smiling as if she's enjoying Eveam's dilemma. Marione and Ornoth shook their head in disbelief for what has unfolded.

That said,

"Isn't this fine now Silva! Let me give that lass a piece of her mind! I will turn her into a lifelike doll using my magic!"

"Nofofofofof! I won't allow such pranks to happen ojou-sama."

Upon the little girl blurting such disturbing things, the Hentai tightly embraced the said little girl enjoying it with a blush on his cheek.

Meanwhile, his apprentice was still rolling on the ground screaming in pain, his bird pet clinging to Shamoe in tears, and that Shamoe panicking, "Fueeeeee! What should I do! "

(Wh.....why does such people gather in my surrounding....?)

Unintentionally he leaked a sigh, time would be wasted if this situation continue as it is.

"Oi, what will you do now after this?"

As he said so in a rather bad mood, Eveam—even though her cheeks was flushed red from embarrassment— coughed and answered him,

"Ah, that's right, Hihiro let me say this first to you."

"....?"

Taking a step back, Eveam bowed to Hihiro.

"Thank you so much Hihiro, I'm really...really glad for what you've

done!”

Then, the people in that place began to also bow one after another. Even that aggressive Marione, behaved modestly as he also did so.

“If you understand that much, then show it to me through your actions. If you keep your promise, I’ll gladly accept your gratitude.”

“.....fufu, Hihiro is really Hihiro after all.”

In that moment, Eveam expressed a gentle smile. And, when her expression turned serious at once,

“I will face the Beast King right this instant. There, we will decide what would happen after this.”

That said, when they turned to Leowald’s direction, the treatment seemed to have ended apparently as they saw his upper body raised.

After Leowald was revitalized by Hihiro’s 《Word Magic》, he woke after a little while, and saw the faces of his family worriedly looking at him.

“.....I see, so I was defeated, huh?”

Leowald remembered everything.

He exhaled a big breath. Though Leowald could consent that he lost while he gambled his everything on it, there was something he felt uneasy about.

Why was his body slightly in pain? He brought out all his strength with the resolve to die, and even remembered receiving Hihiro’s mighty blow to his body. Leowald thought he received a large wound that time as his physical strength faded from him in that one strike.

And yet, the wide wound that he thought was there, and the heavy load that should have wearied his muscles, most of the damage he surely sustained from the battle had almost healed to normal.

To that perplexed expression of Leowald, Rarashik opened her mouth.

“Leo-sama, you got another debt from that youngster.”

Everything clicked in place just from those words alone.

“....I see, I seemed to have yet again increased my debt.”

When Leowald saw the tear stricken faces of Kukulia, and Mimiru, he understood that his condition was nearing death's door. But for Hihiro to have mercy on me....that's

“Hm? Mercy? .... say Rara, did that fellow say anything to me?”

“He did, ‘this is considered a loan’ he says.”

Indeed, Hihiro didn't help him out of mercy. Naturally, Hihiro wouldn't bother to do such a thing, he just declared it firmly as a debt to him.

Also, he seemed to have wagered something before the fight began. Hihiro had also said that his reward was considered a loan that time as well.

“Haa, so it's two debts, huh?”

As he thought of his consequences, he unconsciously leaked a sigh. His consciousness seemed to have returned to normal, so he raised his upper body upright. Though Leowald still felt a little pain, he faced in one look all of his people.

“Leo-sama, shouldn't you tell your children whether your condition is safe or not?”

Rarashik was correct. The heartache his family bore who heard about his death might have been too much for them.

And concerning the result, even though he lost, everyone was all safe and sound. While he's still unable to bow, just showing his sincerity was enough for this.

“Everyone.... I’m really sorry.”

As their ruler and as the person whom they all entrusted their future, he was not able to carry out their expectations.

“I was not able to snatch victory to our race. Although it’s a bit hard to accept it, after this 『Evila』 will likely claim 『Pacion』 as their territory....”

“We won’t take your territory Beast King.”

In that moment, the Demon King and people of 『Evila』 showed up.



From right to left, Liliyn, Shamoe, Silva, Hihiro (riding Mikazuki), and finally Nikki.



## Chapter 199 – Permanent Alliance

‘What do you mean by that Demon Queen?’

Leowald asked what the Demon Queen meant with her declaration some time ago. Behind Eveam were the many races of the 『Evila』 waiting upon her.

“I mean what I said. We, the 『Evila』, have no intention of depriving your territory.”

Even the beast men were now affixing their gaze at the Demon King. Of course they would. The 『Evila’s』 gambled on this duel to the point that they risked their life on the line.

Everyone thought that they were going to seize everything from 『Gabranth』. Even the beast men were planning to subdue 『Evila』 supposing they won.

It was for this reason that Leowald was confused about the Demon Queen’s true intention on why they started this fight all along.

But as expected of Beast King Leowald, despite his confusion on her intentions, he received the words of the Demon Queen with a serious face, and asked,

“....Then, what do you hope for?”

Indeed, if they were not intending to seize their territory, they still have a big demand to raise.

Eveam paused for a bit as everyone’s eyes were focused on her.

“....an Alliance!”

Her transparent voice resounded to everyone in vicinity. Leowald for that matter, narrowed his eyes as he looked at Eveam.

“An alliance....you say?”

“Indeed! However, it’s not just a simple alliance! It’s the eternal

peace that I hoped for! Therefore, I would like to establish a permanent alliance!”

“Permanent....Alliance....”

Leowald reflected upon Eveam’s declaration.

“We do not hope to go against your people. Supposing our people 『Evila』, crosses the borders of 『Gabranth』, even with the said contract established from this duel, hatred and anger will surely come out without fail. But I do not hope for such a thing to happen! I want the races from 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 to respect each other, and struggle hand in hand for peace! Therefore, the race who lives there should govern their own respective continents. However, I want to have a relation where each town’s trades mutually for the development of both countries, or in short an alliance!”

“An alliance that continues for eternity.... you mean that kind of alliance?”

“Yes. That is the demand we hope from this duel!”

Beast men also looked at one another, puzzled in the same way as their king. Though they assumed that the 『Evila』 were going to conquer them, even determined themselves the moment they lost the fight, but once they were faced with this kind of bewildering request, they didn’t know how to answer it, and simply focused their eyes on Leowald.

The Demon King and Beast King mutually looked at each other without turning their eyes away. Then, Leowald spoke first.

“Permanent....Eternity....Alliance.... Do you think that it’s possible to continue doing this kind of thing?”

“It’s possible.”

“Have you ever thought why your predecessors never tried to do it in the past?”

“....”

“People eventually fight one another, this is what our current world had become. Certainly, the alliance you propose is one step to peace. However, the eternity you hope for will never come.”

Eveam quietly closed her eyes when she heard those words.

“You’re exactly correct. The eternity won’t last even if we establish this alliance. History has proven us of that.”

“Then, why do you still hope for it?”

“That’s simple!”

Eveam opened her eyes wide.

“Hm?”

“We only have to make a new history if it doesn’t exist yet!”

“.....!?”

Her straight forward eyes were turned to Leowald.

“I don’t want to my dream to end up a dream. I may be naive, but if it’s about my idealism, I’ve always hope for the best of it! This is why it isn’t just an ordinary alliance, because what I hope for is an eternal alliance!”

Eveam’s aspiration gushed out from her. The atmosphere trembled from her words, as the beast men have their breaths taken away.

“.....kuku, you really are naive Demon Queen.”

“.....”

“This alliance won’t last throughout all eternity.”

“.....”

“But.....kukuku... To make a new history that hasn’t existed yet....kuku, gahahahahaha!”

Everyone’s glance turned towards Leowald who suddenly burst out



into laughter.

“.... though I had been told the same thing when I was appointed as the ruler, you however is an exception. To even propose a helping hand to the ones who aimed for your life....”

Eveam loosened her cheeks, and then

“Of course, I am what I am! Beast King Leowal—ah no— To all the 『Gabranth's』 ! Do you not wish to take this hand of mine?”

As Eveam said so, she presented her extended hands forward. Leowald watched that hand for a while before he straddled to his feet, and turned his eyes towards the beast men.

“.....the country cannot exist without its people. As a ruler, it is my duty to love and defend my people, and let no one take their future away from them.”

“.....”

“My father told me those words all the time.”

Leowald confirmed the faces of his people.

“.....my people, will you follow me together?”

Leowald's answer seems to have gone out already. Everyone noticed that, and

“Gladly!”

“Of course!”

“We will accompany our King no matter what road you take!”

As Leowald uttered so, everyone happily returned his words back at him. And because of the flood emotions from them flowing through him, he couldn't help but make a subtle smile.

“Father, this is the answer of your people.”

Leglos gently smiled, and nodded. Not only him, but Lenon,

Kukulia, and Mimiru similarly nodded as a sign of their agreement towards Leowald's decision.

Leowald once again faced Eveam. He saw the hand still presented to him, and slowly turned his glance to Eveam.

“Demon Queen Eveam.”

“Yes?”

“In the name of Beast King Leowald, we 『Gabranth's』, form an alliance — no, we hereby establish a permanent alliance with the 『Evila's』.”

And the moment they shook their hands, a shout of joy roared on both sides of their respective race.

“Let us make a new history 『Gabranth's』! Here is the first step towards peace!”

Thus, the duel between 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 finally reached its conclusion. Although the result ended with 『Evila's』 victory, Demon Queen Eveam was able demand a permanent alliance with the 『Gabranth's』 who lost the fight.

The Beast King accepted her proposal. They judged that instead ruling one another, an alliance between two nations wasn't a bad thing to establish.

By the favor of the duel where both race's fought with their very best, the human beast were able to see 『Evila』 in a different light compared in the past.

Demon Queen Eveam was certainly someone full of idealism, a naive lass who has a habit of speaking nonsensical things. But because of her pure earnestness to pursue her dreams, she was able to grab hold of Leowald's heart.

Although Leowald did not trust her completely, he thought that their future from now on could be made anew with the help of this

Demon Queen.

It couldn't be denied that both races lacked something compared to the other. However, if both races were able to fill each others needs, they would be able to take one more step towards peace.

With the thought of not being ruled by the other, each race might be able to spend their days peacefully.

(Kuku.... so this is what they meant about being an idealist idiot....)

Leowald also had a dream. He wanted to obtain a world where everyone can laugh one another without any worries. Hence, he decided to overthrow and control 『Evila』 and 『Humas』 who were supposed to be his enemies.

The reason was because he couldn't trust those people. However, once he matched fist with Eveam, her pure intention was transmitted to him.

As they fought with their lives on the line, they were able to gain respect and reconcile with their opponent. The two races that should have been dominated by hatred, were able to obtain a different kind of connection.

Of course, not all of the people would appreciate this alliance. However, he didn't actually feel that from the expression of the people who fought in that place.

Leowald thought that it's possible to struggle hand in hand with these kind of people.

(Though this is going to be difficult, what's important is that we've taken the first step..... making brave decisions is another role of a ruler...right Father?)

His deceased father resided in his mind. He was more rigorous than Leowald, and was a true ruler who regarded his people no matter what circumstance he had to take. Leowald remembered how jealous he was to his father as a ruler, and also how he yearned to be someone like him.

Leowald smiled unintentionally as he felt the warm hands of his sworn friend Eveam by his side.

“What’s wrong Leowald-dono?”

Eveam puckered up her brows, and asked him.

“Ah, sorry about that....I just noticed something. You 『Evila’s』 has the same hot blood flowing just like us.”

“Because we are alive.”

Even though she was still a young girl, she wore a very sophisticated smile on her face.

“Gahaha, I agree. It’s because we’re alive..... by the way, why did you add honorifics all of a sudden?”

Leowald felt uneasy when Eveam suddenly added honorifics in her way of speaking. Then, her cheek blushed from embarrassment,

“I-it’s because you are not an enemy anymore but a sworn friend. Moreover, Leowald-dono is a remarkable personage, of course I would naturally add honorifics.”

“Gahaha! You don’t need to mind those details! All the more if it’s for a friend!”

“B-but it’s impossible! It’s too unreasonable for me to talk like that to such a splendid ruler!”

“Fumu, you’re quite unexpectedly stubborn... wait, maybe it’s because you’re like that, huh? Anyway, you’ll eventually get used to it in the future. After all, we have a lot chance to see each other.”

“Y-yes! We have enough time to do that!”

Eveam replied gladly.

Then, he heard horse footsteps coming from somewhere. Leowald looked around trying to confirm its origin.

And then he saw soldiers riding on Raidpic's towards them.

"Father...."

"Ah."

Leglos leaked an insecure voice as Leowald noticed the heavy atmosphere from the soldiers coming towards them.

Suddenly, as the approaching soldiers gradually reached them,

Dogooooooooon!

A huge torrent of water appeared from the feets of the Raidpics, and the soldiers as they were washed away from it.

The water changed shape, this time in a form of a tentacle, and it entered through the soldier's body. In that moment, the soldiers body swelled up, and

Bon!

..... exploded.

## Chapter 200 – Uninvited Outlaws

TL Notes :

The standard format for Hiiro's Word Magic

Since all the choices are practically close to each other, I will translate as I had done in the past.

Furigana (e.g. 文字魔法) | English name (e.g. Word Magic)

Nicknames

I hate it. Why? I still think Mentor sounds good than Shishou. Sigh. But anyway, here's the verdict.

Romaji (e.g. Shishou, Ao Ribbons, Maou)

Miscellaneous

Since you guys prefer English, and I prefer more information. Here's my conclusion,

Furigana (e.g. パシオン, 赤気 – シャツキ) | English (e.g. Pasion, Red Energy)

Alright. Enough said. Here's chapter 200. Two characters finally makes their appearance!

“Iyaaaa!?”

Frightened by the inhuman scene, Mimiru clung to Leowald right away. The spectacle did not only deprived Mimiru's voice, but all of the people around as well.

But among them, Demon Queen Eveam didn't, she instead turned her gaze at her right side. Following Eveam's gaze, the other 『Evila』 also glanced to the direction of her suspicion.

Their eyes settled on an isolated pool of water that appeared

without their knowledge. It gave everyone a strong sense of incompatibility as if it was created similarly to an ink blotching a white piece of paper.

“Everyone retreat!”

From Eveam’s unusual tone of voice, all 『Evila』 followed her instruction, and took a distance from it. Likewise, the 『Gabranth』 also noticed the strange pool of water from Eveam’s warning, and similarly backed away from it.

And then the harmless puddle began to create ripples. It gradually grew in size, and changed into a large pool of water at about three meters in radius.

“Ahaha, it seems that you’ve grown up.”

A clear voice was heard from the depths of the puddle.

The moment Eveam heard that voice, she shivered. Her face began to turn pale, and her shoulder began to tremble little by little.

However, Eveam wasn’t the only who was affected, even the 《Cruel》 trembled from it. All of them froze in their place as if they heard an unbelievable voice.

Though the 『Gabranth’s』 bewildered faces were asking “what in the world is happening?”, it was only Leowald who gazed at the center of pool with blood thirst.

Then, something came out from the surface of the water. Moreover, several existences appeared from it.

Ten people approximately appeared from there, each garbed with a black robe covering their respective identities.

Some had a larger physique while the other were smaller, but each of them emitted a strange atmosphere.

And then the true origin of their incompatibility came from the a small boy at the center of the group.

They understood right away the nature of the boy because he was not wearing his hood while donned in a black robe. Eveam for that matter was drenched in cold sweat as a mutter escaped from her mouth.

“.....Avoros Grant Early Evening....”

Hihiro looked at the boy who showed up so suddenly. Just from Eveam's mutter to Avoros, he understood that they were apparently acquaintances.

(But who in the world are those black robed people surrounding the boy.... they're different....)

Their atmosphere's weren't ordinary by any standards. Though they may have individual differences, Hihiro felt that their strength were equally or far stronger than any of the people who participated in the duel.

His eyes then was naturally attracted back at the boy. He felt so unreal as if the said person came out from a majestic picture capturing the true beauty of perfection.

It was the first time Hihiro was impressed by such an astounding beauty, moreover a beautiful boy. Supposing he grew up as it is to his adulthood, men and women would surely be at a loss for words due to his breath-taking charm.

(Still....)

Hihiro felt a slight incompatibility regarding the boy. The people surrounding the said person were definitely strong, but the boy himself stood out more compared to the rest.

But literally speaking, the boy doesn't seem to be that different....Hihiro thought that he might have judged too early based from his incomplete knowledge on the boy's nature.

Among those people who heard Eveam's mutter, Leowald asked back in contemplation.



“Avoros....you say? So he really is that person....?”

“Come to think of it, this is Leowald-dono’s first time meeting him personally... it’s indeed as you have suspected, this is Avoros. At least only by face.”

“Ahaha, that’s mean Eveam. It’s kind of sad to be mistaken as an imposter to my own appearance. That’s because...”

In that moment, an explosive pressure of ambition gushed forth from the boy. Instinctively, each of the 『Evila』 and 『Gabranth』 took a stance to defend their respective rulers.

However, the only one who moved were those people who participated in the duel. The other soldiers were rendered frozen in their feet as if their heart’s were seized by the boy’s presence. Their faces were pale in comparison as cold sweat drenched their whole bodies.

Even then, just from the pressure of the boy’s ambition, the race’s representatives couldn’t help but cramp their faces as each of them understood the boy’s overwhelming presence. The reason was because of the boy’s distorted ambition coming from him..... it was not like the noble ambition of Leowald, it was similar to an Evil King spreading malice, kind of feeling.

Moreover such malice coming from the said person was ultimately the strangest of them all.

“See? I’m the real thing?”

The person in question made a calm smile as if what happened was nothing to him. However, Eveam who assumed a fake Avoros was forced to recognize the real thing, and groaned.

“Avoros.....”

To Eveam’s mutter, Avoros made a slightly regrettable expression.

“U~n, won’t you call me Ani-sama this time?”

Then, blurted something unexpected.

(Ani? Are they brother and sister?)

That sort of story was something Hihiro haven't heard. Rather, there might have been a similar story where he heard about the previous Demon King as Eveam's elder brother.

But his appearance was far more younger than Eveam, Hihiro couldn't believe that that person was her elder brother, especially the matter about being the previous Demon King.

However, his judgement previously might have been correct based on his atmosphere.

It seems Leowald knew it as well, but the people around him were wrapped in astonishment just like Hihiro.

“Don't joke around! You're not my brother any longer!”

Avoros who found Eveam's shout funny, replied back.

“You have a point. Certainly I don't recall being your elder brother.... even so, we're still connect by blood, no?”

“Ku.....”

Eveam made a disgusted expression as if she was displeased by that fact.

“Don't make such a disgusted face. I just came here to appreciate the efforts of my imouto ( little sister).”

Then, he began to suddenly clap his hands.

“Congratulations my little sister. With this, an alliance is formed with the 『Gabranth's』. Good job, you really did well.”

“How...”

“I was watching you for a long time you know. Even before you've ascended the throne... I've been always looking at you.”

“.... So you really did camouflage your death that time?”

“U~n, I camouflaged my death...or rather, I wonder if camouflage is the proper word for it. That said, I can’t tell you anymore.”

Eveam glared at him joking around as her fist trembled.

“What are you being aloof for! Don’t you understand that you’re the one who made us suffer this much!”

“Please don’t get angry so much. Though you are young, you’ll likely gain more wrinkles you know?”

Eveam’s anger rose from how he treated her protest with contempt.

“The hatred that you spread throughout the nation, how many times we’ve suffered from it, and finally arrived here, I don’t think you understand any of it!”

“If you say it that way, then I guess I’m far from understanding such trivial things.”

“Gu....d-don’t pretend that you don’t know any of it!”

When Eveam reached her limit, she pointed her right hands toward Avoros, and flames gushed forth from it. But the said youth didn’t flinch nor moved from his place.

Following that, one of the black robed people faced the incoming flames ahead. And then, the flame was inhaled into the hood.

“How!?”

Not only Eveam almost all of the people who witnessed that were wide eyed from the strange phenomenon.

“Ahaha, you really have grown up. In the past, you never even once bared your fangs towards me. Should I be glad from the flow of time? I feel lonely somehow.”

The black robed person moved behind Avoros. Based from that atmosphere, one could feel its intention of preventing any attacks necessary.

(What kind of magic is that? Or is that an in born talent of that guy?)

Hihiro did not understand how they prevented Eveam's magic. So to understand that person's information, he used 『Pry』 at once.

(.....what's the meaning of this?)

Hihiro frowned unintentionally. The character he used was supposed to view anyone's 《Status》 and look at it.

However, Hihiro couldn't confirm anyone of those people's 《Status》. Then, one person turned his gaze on him.

"It's useless. I don't know what kind of magic you used, but it's probably a magic intervention, right? I just made a conjecture based on the nature of the magic transmitted, but I'm afraid that kind won't be effective against us."

Hihiro didn't show it in his expression, but to honest, the boy was exactly right. The effect of 『Pry』 being negated never happened until now.

(Furthermore, he was able to notice the nature of his magic? That's some high perception ability)

In a different perspective, it was probably true that Hihiro used a magic which interfered with the desired partner. Because it can show the partner's 《Status》 and look at it. But Hihiro couldn't understand how the partner was able to notice and found out about that.

"You should stop it, kid."

It was Marione who advised him to stop. Of course, he didn't neglect his precaution on the surroundings as he made a stern expression on his face. When Hihiro asked him about it,

"The Previous King possesses a 《Demon Eye》 similar to Aquinas."

"What did you say?"

“Though this kind is different from that guy, that eyes has outstanding observation ability. Only to the extent of seeing it could he grasp its true nature.”

“That’s one playful ability, huh?”

In other words, his usual 『Pry』 or 『鑑定』 | 『Judge』 would likely have the same effect. Although it doesn’t seem possible to view a person’s 《Status》, there’s no positive proof yet. Nevertheless, he wouldn’t be able to know any ability of the said person.

(Interfering magic... if that’s the case, then 『Judge』 or 『調査』 | 『Investigate』 would probably obtain some little information.)

If 《One Word Chain》 is not possible, then 《Two Word Chain》 would do the trick, or if it’s not enough then 《Three Word Chain》 would likely render the interference ineffective.... but, since he’d used 《Peerless》, he can only use 《One Word Chain》 right now.

“Now that I remember...so you’re Hiiro Okamura.”

Avoros looked at him with interest.

“Fuu~n....”

Just seeing his eyes got Hiiro irritated.

“So this is what the irregular that No. 3 meant. And also the Otherworlder the heroes spoke of....huh?”

The moment those worrisome words were spoken, Hiiro’s brows subtly moved, this however was noticed in detail by Avoros.

“Ah, are you possibly worried about the heroes? I can assure you that they are all fine. I’ve been treating them with care.”

It would only mean that Taishi and Chika, the only two missing heroes remaining, were in Avoros’ custody. Though he didn’t know how it became like that, it would seem that they’ve been captured by these troublesome fellows.

(They really don't have any luck in these sort of thing.)

Hihiro thought just how lucky Shuri and Shinobu were for obediently surrendering themselves as they are in house arrest.

"Those heroes don't matter to me. How will you treat them is unrelated to me."

"Hee? Is that so?"

Hihiro didn't answer his question, and just scratched his head.

"Oh well. Anyway, would you like to join me?"

"Ha?"

The air around the place suddenly became heavy due to his callous solicitation.

"Why are you asking that all of a sudden?"

"You see, I had fun watching the whole duel, especially your duel, you were quite interesting."

"....."

"In case of your ability...let me see, if you work hard you could probably become my right arm? What do you say? Don't you think it's wiser to side with me than my little sister?"

"Don't fool around! I won't let you take Hihiro into your side!"

"Will you please shut up a little Eveam?"

An intense amount of blood thirst focused on Eveam even though he was smiling. She groaned, and her body stiffened.

"Good girl. So Hihiro-kun, how about it? Would you like to join us?"

Eveam glanced with an insecure expression towards Hihiro. And when Hihiro haughtily folded his arms,

"No thanks."

He quickly refused the offer.

Avoros was taken aback by his words, even the moment he smiled back, somehow there was a trace of cramp in it.

“May I know your reason?”

“I don’t have any intention of being under by anyone. Even less, to become a right arm of a person I barely know of. Especially for a cheeky brat who thinks and talks like a kid.”

In that moment, one of the black robed people who was standing up to now disappeared, then it instantly appeared and smashed Hiiro’s bosom.

Only his consciousness grasped the existence figure clearly. He was able to dodge it, but his reaction was quite dull due to the favor of his previous duel.

Then, blood thirst was transmitted from the assailant, he will surely attack again at any moment.

Nevertheless, the way things are going, he will likely received that attack defenseless.

As he thought so, when Hiiro looked towards the sky, he noticed something, and instantly made a big step backwards to his rear.

Then, something pierced from the sky, and immediately landed in front of Hiiro. It was a black sword. It felt familiar as if he’d seen it somewhere before, then suddenly the black robed person lost his movement as sand entangled him from below.

While everyone was stunned, there was one person who got off right in front of Hiiro from the sky.

He wore blue turban on his body, a long purple hair tied on his back, and his mouth was covered with bandages.

The appearance was exactly like from his memory. The figure took the black sword pierced on the ground, and placed it back on one of the two sheaths overlapped into a cross on his back.

And when the said person squatted, and placed his hands on the ground, a huge hand made from sand appeared in front of the restrained black robed person, and crushed him. Then, that person spoke,

“I won’t let you .....have Hihiro.”



## Chapter 201 – Avoros' Purpose

Although Hiiro was able to narrowly escape death thanks to the mysterious person who suddenly appeared from the sky, Hiiro still felt that he'd seen that appearance from behind somewhere, he searched his memories and tried to recall the said figure.

When that person thereupon faced Hiiro, he was taken aback by it.

“Are you.....Nitouryuu?”

“Un.....long time no see...Hiiro.”

The person took the bandage off his mouth showing his cheeks faintly loosened, and answered Hiiro. Hiiro knew this figure, this person was Nitouryuu. Camus of the 『Asura Tribe』.

『Asura Tribe』 was the race Hiiro and Liliyn encountered by chance when they entered the dessert on the demon continent, and among those people was this young lad who'd aided Hiiro as they seized the heart of the Demon-converted Father of his.

Hiiro treated the whole tribe injured by the demon, pushed Camus from hesitating on killing his father, and saved them all consequently in the end.

“What are you doing in here....?”

“Ah, that's because....hm? Please....wait for a moment.”

Breaking of from their conversation, Camus looked at the place where the black robed people was crushed a little while ago. Unexpectedly, an explosion occurred from the sand and something came out of it.

They understood that this person was strong as it was able to free from Camus' constraints. They felt that it was about to attack again and prepared to guard themselves. But,

“.....Die.”

Liliyn came out of nowhere, and approached the opponent in that brief moment.

(Red Loli!?)

Liliyn directed an abnormal amount of blood thirst towards the assailant aiming at Hihiro.

She poured strength into her thin foot, and kicked him with all her strength.

Bakii!

The opponent was blew off with a backbreaking sound. Though Liliyn tried to follow her attack, her foot stopped the moment she was about take a step forward.....

“.....chi, what a foolish behavior.”

Taking a good look at it, there was a needle-shaped object directed at the soles of her foot which was mounted on the ground, if Liliyn had continued her advance, she would have likely received such damage.

For a few seconds, Liliyn turned a deadly glance toward the person blown off by her attack, then she faced Avoros.

(That kid....)

Hihiro understood that Avoros directed his blood thirst so that Liliyn would become aware of his existence. Hence, Liliyn didn't confront him poorly, and glanced back towards Hihiro.

Everyone, including Hihiro, were in mute amazement for Liliyn's obvious indignation.

“Hihiro you bastard, that was careless!”

Hihiro couldn't answer back. After all, she was right, he was careless. Perhaps if Camus didn't came, Liliyn would have been the one to help him.

Liliyn was someone who would move if her companions is in great trouble. And she was right, Hiiro couldn't afford to be careless anymore. Settling the sermons later, he gazed back at Avoros.

“You were too careless Kainabi.”

The moment Avoros called Kainabi, the person who was blown off from Liliyn's attack, then kneeled on his feet and bowed his head.

“I apologize for my mistake My King. I have showed you something unsightly.”

The voice of the said person was high pitched similar to that of a woman.

“Sorry about that Hiiro-kun. This child is overprotective. So please forgive her, alright?”

“It doesn't seem you can manage your subordinates, is this what the rumored Previous Demon King can do?”

The air suddenly went cold again. Even if Avoros was laughing, there was a trace stiffness in it. He might have been shocked for being said by that for the first time.

However, Hiiro did not notice that as Silva turned his gaze towards him with a suspicious expression.

Even Eveam and the 『Evila's』 were nervous with cold sweat from Hiiro's words. Kainabi as well who saw Hiiro's indifferent face, stood up again but stopped when Avoros raised his hands.

“....Hiiro-kun, you haven't live here for more than ten years, right? Despite how I look, I'm more unthinkable as you imagine me to be. Don't you have any respect to your elders?”

“Unfortunately, I don't do such troublesome things. Also, while it may be true that you've lived longer, respecting you is a different matter. At the very least, not to a kid who runs his mouth here and there.”

Avoros flawless smile collapsed from his words as his cheeks had a

cramp.

“I-I see.... so the report wasn’t exactly false after all, you really are an arrogant youth. “

“Is that so?”

A vein was clearly standing on Eveam’s expression as all of the people rooted in their places took maximum precaution.

Nevertheless, when Avoros inhaled a big breath,-

“.... you really are an interesting man.”

-he made a sneer, then pulled away his piercing glance gazed to another person.

“.....for the time being you.”

“.....me?”

Avoros called Camus with the latter only inclining his neck with an expressionless face.

“Yes, that appearance, you’re from the 『Asura Tribe』 right? Why did you come here?”

He had a point, this was the Gabranth continent not the Evila continent.

“I came to help.....Hiiro.”

“Fu~n, are you possibly.....friends?”

Then, Camus turned his head sideways in rejection.

“No.....I’m Hiiro’s subordinate.”

“Eh? Hiiro-kun has a subordinate?”

Now that Hiiro was reminded of his words, it did happen. When he saved the 『Asura Tribe』, the compensation was Camus becoming his subordinate. But the moment Hiiro’s party decided to continue

their journey, Camus couldn't come as he needed to protect the 『Asura Tribe』 .

Within that time, Camus promised Hiiro that when he's in trouble, he would hastily come to his side.

(TL Note: Please, I recommend you to play this while reading the next few lines.)

“Hiiro.... I came here.....when I heard about the duel.”

Though Camus said that with pride and confidence,-

“Oi, the duel has already ended you know?”

“.....eh?.....eeh?”

-he became wide eyed as his current expression collapsed. It was clear that he's depressed from the drop of his shoulders.

“No way....and I even did my best.....to swim in the sea....”

He callously said something unbelievable. SS rank creatures inhabited that sea, the current as well were quite strong which was why it was deemed impassable. Taking those in mind, Camus swam that sea through all that?

This guy is an idiot, Hiiro thought. He even did such an act as if his life was unnecessary to him. Despite of this though, Hiiro felt a satisfying warmth in his heart when he heard Camus overcome those dangerous situations so that he could only reach him.

“Good grief. You are too unreasonable. Still, I'm pleased for your strong loyalty.”

As Hiiro said so with a smile, Camus made a joyous expression, and laughed with a flustered cheek due to his embarrassment.

Several people were attracted when they saw those two as such. Apart from Liliyn who knew her gender, Muir, Mimiru, and Nikki, these three people, were shocked by the appearance of this beautiful woman.

In addition, there also other people with that same thinking, though it wasn't to the extent of those three people's surprise.

"....e-errr. I kind of feel bad, but is it alright for me to speak now?"

(TL Note: You can stop the music now.)

Avoros restored their conversation as he intervened so.

"N.....what?"

"Does this mean you came here to support Hiiro-kun?"

"Yes."

"I understand. Then, you are considered as an enemy as well."

"However...."

"Hm?"

"I have one more.....errand."

"Hee, may I know what this other errand is?"

"....I came.....for one of those people."

As Camus spoke so, he looked at the black robed people.

"Who are you looking for?"

"On his cheek.....there's a cross shaped wound."

Indeed, Camus was looking for a man with cross wound. He was after the ringleader who changed his father into a demon. Which was why, Camus wanted to reenact revenge by his own hands without fail.

The moment Avoros heard Camus words, the corners of his mouth raised.

"Hee.... do you think he's here?"

“Yup.... and it’s that person!”

Sand appeared suddenly from Camus feet, and cluster of sand attacked one person among the group. However, something crept out from the latter’s feet.

Bashaaaaa!

It was a gigantic tree. The ground was suddenly divided, and a gigantic tree appeared from it, brushing away the incoming mass of sand.

“Not yet!”

The sand which should have dispersed to the sky, poured down on the black robed person similar to a rain. However, branches of leaves grew in abundance above the figure’s overhead. Still, part of the sand was able to make a small crevice on the leaf and reached the person.

It hit it’s hood, and the figure’s real face was exposed in broad daylight.

“.....I found you.”

Clear murderous intent emitted from Camus’ stare. That man had a splendid cross wound on his cheek.

The man was handsome in appearance, and was approximately aged at 40’s. His presence was not inferior to Leowald’s, and gazed at Camus quietly.

“....that Katana, I see, so you were that child back then, you’ve grown up.”

The man narrowed his eyes as remembered a nostalgic memory from his past.

“Do you know him?”

“Yes My King, I’ve known him a little in the past.”

“Fuu~n, somehow this became quite an interesting development.”

Though he was in the dark about Camus’s circumstances, he looked at him as if he was watching a movie.

“Anyway, although I’ve said that my purpose here is to congratulate Eveam for her victory, well, I also have thing to say.”

Then, it was followed by another unpleasant smile of his. Because of his rash expression, it felt like Avoros was fit for a good-looking villain role.

“My greatest objective.....ehem! After this, I’ll say it, so make sure to listen, alright?”

Everyone’s attention were now directed at him as Avoros prepares for his next words. And when his thin lips faintly moved,

“We are going to conquer 【Edea】 ”

.....Time stopped.



## Chapter 202 – Matar Deus

Avoros' declaration of world conquest terrified most of the people in the vicinity, as if time stopped for them. Nevertheless, he continued without minding such people.

“So I was thinking of inviting you people under my wings, how about it?”

His way of speaking were light. It was like someone inviting anyone on the way with their journey.

Still, there were people who rejected his offer.

“ “ Like hell we will! “ ”

The Demon Queen and the Beast King completely denied at the same time.

However, Avoros wasn't shaken by it, and spoke as if he expected such answer.

“Then we are going to war.”

This time, he answered without hesitation. Though the meaning of his words was a serious matter, everyone was still speechless from his previous words.

“War.....?”

“That's right, there are things I can't let you do as you please Eveam. And It's not possible to solve through your peace talks. How will I do it instead?..... Simple, I will deprive everything through sheer strength.”

“D-don't screw with me! We already reached a consensus here, and yet you intend to increase again the hatred!”

“Then, just be quiet and obediently become under my jurisdiction. If you do so, I could have handled you all properly.”

“All the more reason to reject your offer! It’s better to annihilate us rather than to become under your control you bastard!”

Leowald raised his voice with indignation.

“Maa, you’re probably right. I don’t need the 『Gabranth’s』 after all. Even if I didn’t invite you, you’ll eventually become pets, or rations, no? or probably just some heap of garbages.”

“You bastaaaard!”

However, because Leowald’s condition had not yet recovered, he bent his knee in the process.

“Oh my, you shouldn’t overwork yourself you know?”

It would seem that Avoros words didn’t reach the infuriated Leowald.

“You bastard.....”

“Ahaha, while I’ll be glad to keep you guys in company, as expected I don’t have such luxury. I’ve made a lot preparations in my side. Let me see.....you don’t mind if we make an announcement here, right?”

Avoros stretched his arms outwards, his eyes were burning with confidence.

“I hope that you’ll remember us. We are 《Matar Deus》, the rulers of this world.”

“That’s absurd....”

Leowald made a mutter in representation of all the people in the place.

“Fufufu, that ends my speech, I just wanted to show my face around here.”

Suddenly, the pool of water below the group’s feet spread as everyone in the place were blinded by a bright line. And then, the

group were slowly sucked by the water. They seemed to be taking their leave.

One by one the robed figures sunk into the pool with only a few left who hadn't yet.

"Ah, I forgot to say this! Beast King?"

"Mu?"

"Let me tell you something good."

As Avoros had called, Leowald turned at him with suspicious eyes.

"....the soldiers who came here a while ago were your subordinate right? Though we've killed most of them."

"You bastard...."

"Just hear me out. Although I think you shouldn't hear about these kind of things...."

".....what?"

And when Avoros takes a deep breath,

"Although he's not here, Kokorou is also under my wings you know."

"W-what did you say!"

It was assumed that Leowald was the one who shouted, but it was Marione. When Avoros saw Marione in his field of vision, he was wide eyed in surprise,

"Ah, now that you mention it, I think Kokorou was the one who killed Marione's family, no?"

"Is that story true, Previous King!"

His expression was as if he was about to pounce at anyone right now.

“It’s true. After this, feel free to go to 【Passion】 for confirmation, alright?”

“....oi, what do you mean by that?”

Naturally, Leowald couldn’t ignore what he said, and asked in doubt.

“Well you see, Kokurou said he was going to 【Passion】 ”

“What did you say!?”

This time, Leowald was the one who raised his voice. His face transformed into a ghastly expression as if he was flooded with despair.

“Ahaha, that’s why you should return home with haste, no? Also Eveam?”

“....what?”

“I’m taking care of Teckil in my side.”

“Wha-!? So you were the one!”

“Ahaha, farewell.”

“Wait!”

Avoros disappeared into the pool of water. Their feelings of festivity before were now replaced by a lump in their throats.

Meanwhile, Camus was throwing a sharp glance towards a certain man.

“I’ll absolutely....knock you down.”

“....can you do it?”

“....I will.”

“....then try me, my name is Hiyomi.”

“.....Hiyomi”

Camus stared for a long time without breaking his gaze at Hiyomi as the latter slowly disappeared in the pool.

“.....I will beat you for sure.”

Camus clasped his fist as he made a declaration to himself.

While silence enveloped the surroundings, Leowald's body staggered violently as he began to walk.

“Father!”

First Prince Leglos called out to him, but Leowald showed no signs of hearing him, and continued to walk with abandon.

Leglos blocked Leowald's path, and met him eye to eye. However, it was as if Leowald was saying to leave him alone just from the intensity of his gaze. Still, Leglos didn't tremble from it, and stood firm.

“Father, first of all, please issue your instructions!”

“.....”

“This is your role as a ruler!”

Leowald was caught surprised by Leglos' words, and closed his eyes as he inhaled a large breath.

“...that helped Leglos. I was about to nearly throw away my obligation as a ruler.”

“Don't worry, because that's my role right now.”

“Gahaha, your role....right now. Rara, it seems that my son has what it takes after all.”

“Yes, please value it. While I couldn't stop you, Leglos didn't and called you many times a while ago.”

“Gahaha! I seem to have worried you people, sorry about that!”

Seeing as Leowald was able to calmly think again, he cleared his throat, and

“At any rate, it is necessary to return to our country to confirm what had occurred.”

The beast men also nodded respectively to Leowald’s words.

“There are too much events that have happened today. Normally, after this I would speak with the people of 『Evila』 but.....”

Though he said so to Eveam, the latter also supported his decision,

“It can wait. There are a lot of things we should confirm first. After we prove what Avoros had said, it is necessary for us to work on the counter measures in future regarding his true aim. As representatives of our newly established alliance.”

“I agree. It is necessary to understand accurately our current state. After that, it would be wise to open a conference about it for the future.”

Certainly, It would be better to advance the relationship of both races in here. They’ve just recently established the alliance, but their people were troubled by the sudden irregularity that had occurred.

For the sake of mutual information, it’s necessary to return to their respective country, and calm the situation.

“Alright. Then, please contact me when you have tentative control on your side. Because Avoros may possibly do something while we are at it.”

Indeed, though Avoros may have said that he’d done something to 【Passion】 , it’s possibly a scapegoat to aim at 【Xaos】 next. It is necessary to confirm it right now.

“You’re correct. If he really intends to cause another war, then we can’t lose to the war. It’s necessary to exchange information closely

after this.”

“Yes. Then, let us make haste. I don’t know if Avoros was threatening us when he said it, but there was some truth to it about the state of the soldiers who came a while ago, something doesn’t feel right about it.”

“I apologize about that.”

Leowald began to turn his heels towards his people, and issued his instructions.

## Chapter 203 – Temporary Separation

“H-hihiro-sama!”

The owner of that feeble voice came from Mimiru. Along with her were Muir with Arnold in tow, and an unfamiliar woman.

These four people approached Hihiro. Perhaps they just wanted to bid their greetings to him. However, he felt uneasy about identity of the other woman.

“H-hihiro-sama, ...you were incredibly strong!”

“A-as expected of Hihiro-san! I-i want to know how you became strong like that!”

Two little girls spoke with their eyes sparkling in wonder, while their cheeks were blushing.

“Even if you ask me, it’s just the result of my training during half a year....”

“No no, we’re talking about your absurd strength you know...”

Arnold sighed in amazement.

“Oh yeah, you seemed to have lost your duel Ossan.”

“Ugu.....b-but we won the the match!”

“Yeah, it’s thanks to Chibi Usagi.”

“Ununu....”

Besides Arnold, Muir was also identically depressed. She was not able to defeat Ionis. Arnold was the only who was supposed to lose, but unexpected flying sparks spewed from their fight, making Muir unable to execute her finishing blow.

Seeing such Muir, Hihiro helplessly approached her,-



Ton.....

-and poked at her forehead.

“You’ve grown Chibi.”

“.....h-hihiro-san.....”

“Still, you seem to have not yet mastered your power, at least reach to the point where you are able to bring out your 『Spirit』.”

“....I-I understand!”

Her once depressed state transformed into a joyous expression.

“Mou....treating Muir-chan only is not fair.”

Mimiru pulled the hem of her skirt.

“M-Mimiru!”

Hihiro met eye to eye with the other woman who finally spoke. Then, for some reason, the woman averted her gaze with flustered cheeks.

(Huh....?)

Hihiro knitted his eyebrows as he was bewildered by the woman’s attitude just now,

(Is she angry? I won’t be surprised if she harbors any grudge towards me, but.....)

Why was she averting her eyes? Why is she blushing? It was different in comparison to his thoughts and couldn’t hit upon the reason because of it.

So Hihiro took the hint. It’s probably not a good idea to dwell further on this matter as it may increase more trouble for him.

However, as he thought so, Arnold began to speak unnecessary words.

“Ah, now that I think of it, Kukulia-sama doesn’t know Hiiro yet right?”

Hiiro disappointedly rebuked in his mind about this idiotic parent who couldn’t read the atmosphere. Even though he made a decision to avoid more trouble, this idiot pushed him back to where he’d started.

“Her name is Kukulia-sama, she’s the daughter of Leowald-sama and the elder sister of Mimiru-sama.”

Now that Arnold mentioned it, she called Mimiru by her first name, so Hiiro found it reasonable that she’s part of royalty.

However, that person named Kukulia was acting suspiciously. Her eyes were conveying her displeasure in this place. She might be uncomfortable with him being in here. While he thought so, she took a deep breath, and

“I-indeed, I’m Kukulia King! H-how dare of you to not know my name!”

As Kukulia said so, she extended her hand requesting a handshake from him. Though Hiiro anticipated her anger based from the tone of her voice, why was she requesting a handshake as well?

Then, all of a sudden, her face paled as if she made a mistake,

“Ah, t-that’s not it! What in the world am I saying!”

Because of her sudden reflection on her words, Hiiro unintentionally blinked in surprise.

Following that, Kukulia’s face flushed to bright red,

“I-i apologize for my rude behavior! I was supposed to greet you properly when I suddenly felt nervous talking to you...um....”

Her despondent state was similar to a small puppy being lectured by their own master. But somehow it felt this image was intended to be this way. He caught a glimpse of Arnold grinning.....it apparently seems that this idiot wanted to taste 『幻』 |

『Illusion』 again.

“...haa, here.”

Wanting to end the situation as soon as possible, Hihiro helplessly held out his hand.

“.....eh? ah...”

Of course, she took the hint, and silently shook his hands.

“E-err.... you’re quite strong.”

“You might say it like that...”

“Fufu, shouldn’t you normally answer it with humility?”

“I don’t have that in my dictionary.”

“Ahahaha! Is that so!”

She joyfully nodded in assent,

“Anyway, I want to express my gratitude!”

As Kukulia said so, she suddenly bowed in front of Hihiro. While the latter wondered “what is it this time?”,

“You’re the one who returned Mimiru’s voice right?”

I see, Hihiro thought, she’s expressing her gratitude for saving her younger sister.

“I admit that I’ve healed her, but it wasn’t for free. It’s a loan, isn’t that right Blue Ribbons?”

“Yes!”

Seeing the wide smile of Mimiru who affirmed his question, Kukulia couldn’t help but express a gentle smile.

“Even so, I’m really grateful for what you have done. Hence, my gratitude.”

When Hiiro saw her again bow in front of him, he felt a little ashamed for his actions,-

“Don’t worry about it.”

-and turned his face away. He thereupon saw Muir’s anxious face in the process.

“Uhm, Hiiro-san? Is.....is your wound alright?”

“No problems at all.”

“B-but you seem to have a hard time....moving?”

Hiiro was astonished by Muir’s precise observation. Certainty, he didn’t bore any injuries. But due to the side effects of 《Peerless Mode》, his body was experiencing a considerable degree of muscle pain.

Though he was sure to have prevented it from being shown on his face, but Muir unnaturally noticed his cover.

“I told you not to worry about it.”

“I-if you say so....but may I ask another question?”

She apparently has some other questions, huh? Somehow Hiiro found it difficult to answer her.

“What?”

“I’ve been wondering....who is that person besides you?”

“Besides me?”

When Hiiro followed Muir’s line of vision, –

“...hm? Me?”

-there was Camus. He seemed to have been at Hiiro’s side for a long time. His motionless, but firm appearance was exactly similar to a knight guarding his king.

“Oh, about Nitouryuu, huh?”

“Nitouryuu?....ah, so that’s how you call her. Yes, I was pertaining to her....”

Then, Hiiro heard something he couldn’t ignore.

“Wait a minute.”

“Hm?”

“What did you say again?”

“E-err.... I was pertaining to her....”

“You’re mistaken.”

“Eh?”

After Hiiro inhaled a short breath, he spoke to the woman inclining her neck in bewilderment.

“This guy is a man”

“.....eh?”

Though Muir was able to voice out her words, all the other people who heard were staring blankly in puzzlement.

“Hey Hiiro, that’s a joke right? No matter what angle you look at her, she’s pretty much a woman! Moreover a beautiful girl!”

Arnold spoke in agitation while pointing his finger on the assumed woman.

“Am....I woman?”

Camus pointed a finger to his face while inclining his head deeply in thought of the matter.

“Don’t listen to them. You’re a man, aren’t you?”

“Un.....you’re right. I’m....a man!”

Seeing Camus somehow puffing his chest in pride, a sigh escaped Muir.

“I-is he really .....a man...? E-even though she’s this cute...?”

“I-I agree with you! Somehow it feels borderline unfair!”

Though Arnold and Muir stated their own impression respectively, Muir, Mimiru, and Kukulia’s cheeks loosened as if they felt sense of security from it.

“...ehehe. They said I’m cute....Hiiro.”

“....isn’t that great for you.”

Though Camus candidly spoke, when they, who were relieved by their doubts, saw Camus embarrassed face, they could only hang their heads in defeat.

“A-at least we can be relieved....isn’t that right Mimiru-chan!”

“Yes, I agree with you Muir-chan!”

Though they don’t know what may happen in the future, as long as problems doesn’t occur, Muir and Mimiru were alright with it.

“Hey you people over there, we are about to return to our country.”

Though her hands were still in the pockets of her white robe while her ears was swaying sideways, Rarashik’s voice resounded from their distance as she approached them.

Apparently, the preparation for homecoming seemed to have been complete.

“We’d like to go back as well Hiiro, but....”

Demon Queen Eveam seemed to have ended her talk with the Beast King, and talked to him.

“Can you use now your magic?”

As Eveam had asked, all of them came here from Hiiro's 『Transfer』 character. Because they couldn't return by foot in their condition, they requested for Hiiro to use 『Transfer』 character again.

Of course, since he had decided to use it before their the duel, Hiiro doesn't have any problems using it again, but.....

“Sorry, I still can't use it right now.”

“So you're still experiencing the effects of 《Rebound》 huh? Though I've been told about it by Silva, it seems it might take some time for recovery.”

“If you understand that far, just wait for a little while. I may be able to use it again after a few more minutes.”

“I understand. Please tell me when you're able to use it again.”

“Sure.”

Eveam returned once again to the group of 『Evila』 .

“You, and you too! Move quickly!”

Muir and the other moved from the place as Rarashik urged them to do so.

“H-Hihiro-san! I hope we can meet more often again!”

Muir voiced out her words in desperation. Arnold besides her seemed ill-humored though.

“Your race are sworn allies already you know? You can meet me as much as you want once permission is granted.”

“I-I will also come to meet you! But Hihiro-sama must also come to greet us!”

“.....do as you like. But I won't be leaving the city for a while because I will be enjoying my spare time.”

Because after this, Hiiro will be shutting himself with abandon inside the 《Grand Fortune Library》. He won't leave until he'd completely read through all the books in there.

“Hiiro! Someday you'll pay for this! I won't hand Muir to you!

Arnold's legs were kicked by Rarashik urging him to move forward as he shouted like an idiotic parent. Following them, Mimiru and Kukulia lightly bowed in front of him.

At edge of his vision, he spotted a weeping Crouch... No, she'd been crying all along while being dragged by Putis pulling her neck. Perhaps, she'd been obstructed by Putis before she was able to approach Hiiro.

Well, Hiiro admits that Crouch is one troublesome partner to deal with, and thanked Putis in his mind due to her considerate endeavor.

“Funyaaaaaaaa, Hiirooooooooooooooooooooooooooooo!”

He's just probably hearing things in his mind.... Yeah, that's likely the case.



## Chapter 204 – Return to Xaos

“Mumumumu....”

After the Gabranth’s left, there was a particular person who was in a rather bad mood – growling – as she fixedly stared at a young boy.

“You did well enduring it, Ojousama.”

It was Silvia who spoke those words of comfort to Liliyn. Why? Because the moment she saw Hihiro harmoniously speaking with a lot of beautiful girls around him, she couldn’t help wanting to jump towards them, though she was able to endure such impulse.

“I-It can’t be helped! I’m not so stupid to ruin a conversation with some old friends.”

“Nofofofof! You’ve grown quite well Ojousama. For you...to even consider such a thing...ooooh! This butler has been deeply moved!”

“Shut up you blinded foooooool!”

“Dabugh!?”

As if all her stress were stockpiled into that blow, Liliyn delivered an uppercut to Silva’s chin, blowing him off from his place.

Usually Shamoe would have shouted worriedly on Silva’s safety, but it would seem that she wasn’t able to do so as she was taking care of a sleeping Mikazuki.

“What a pain the ass.”

And so Liliyn went to towards Hihiro, though Nikki who was heading on the same direction got to him earlier.

“Shishou! Is your talk with them done?”

“Yeah.”

“Also will you introduce this new personage besides you!”

Thinking how troublesome it would be to do that, Hihiro passed the responsibility to Silva, as the latter gladly introduced Camus to Nikki with a smile on his face.

Then, another person approached them. Her red hair was violently shaking as Red Loli had a pout on her face.

“....why do you have that kind of face?”

“Hmpf, it’s none of your concern.”

She had this unapproachable atmosphere that made Hihiro stopped inquiring her any further for he may bring unnecessary trouble for himself.

Then, she turned a glance towards Camus while folding her arms.

“Oi Camus, is Shivan doing well?”

“N.....quite energetic.”

Shivan was a former travel companion of Liliyn, and Camus’ kinfolk of the 『Asura Tribe』. Currently, he was now Camus’ foster parent despite his relatively old age, and as a former Chief of the 『Asura Tribe』.

“.....I see.”

Hearing her old friend’s well-being, her cheeks slightly loosened as she made a relieved sigh.

“That aside, is it alright for you to leave the village alone? Aren’t you the Chief of it?”

Liliyn worriedly said the thing that was one her mind, and listened carefully for his reply.

“I said to them....that I need to help Hihiro.... and they all agreed.”

“Those family of yours are soft-hearted as usual.”

“But.....I didn’t made it in time....”

His non-participation on the duel made Camus quite dispirited. Hihiro who saw that inadvertently leaked a sigh.

“You may have not made it in time for the duel Nitouryuu, but were you not the one who saved me in time?”

“....e?”

“From the attack of that unknown black robed person.”

“A.....yeah.”

“So how did I say this, thanks for that.”

“.....ehehehe.”

Camus shyly smiled. Anyone who saw such an adorable expression would be swooned by it.

(Seeing him like this, he really looks like a woman after all. I kind of understand why those people mistook his gender...)

Hihiro felt amazed by this person’s visage.

“Well then, I suppose you’ll be returning back once since this duel had ended?”

Liliyn asked.

“....what should I do?”

“Even if you ask me...”

Hihiro couldn’t answer his worry even if he asked him about his situation.

“I left the village.....in Jinu’s hands.”

Jinu was Camus’s right hand person. Hihiro had told Jinu many times that his outward appearance was more appropriate as the Chief of the tribe.

“Oh, so you left it to Topknot Rascal, huh?”

Indeed, this was the nickname Hiiro called Jinu because of the cleanly combed topknot hairstyle of his was similar to a Japanese samurai.

“Besides...the desert is safe right now.”

“Hohou! Then how about you join with us for the time being?

It was the Hentai who suddenly started that conversation, ignorant of his bleeding head.

“.....tsk, this guy hasn't died yet...”

Despite Liliyn's uppercut, this person was still fine which often made Nikki feel admiration.

When Silva brought out a handkerchief from his bosom and wiped the blood from his face,

“If anything happens unexpectedly, we only have to request Hiiro-sama to send you back to the village.”

“Oi, don't decide it without my permission.”

“Oh? If I remember correctly, wasn't Camus Hiiro's subordinate?”

“...what about it?”

“The superior should treat their subordinates importantly, right? Like how Camus-dono came here because he was worried about your safety, and splendidly saved you from danger, no?”

Silva talked again exaggeratedly without permission. Despite his sound argument, he just couldn't help think how ill-natured this person was.

“Hiiro-sama won't abandon such a cute and loyal subordinate....like him right?”

He smiled pleasantly as he thrust out Hiiro's means of escape.

Honestly, Hihiro specifically doesn't have any objections about it. He was actually thankful for Camus' arrival.

But when this Hentai butler pointed it out, he somehow felt angry. It further rose up in irritation as he saw the mark of the blood not completely wiped from his forehead.

".....haa, I didn't say I wouldn't send you back."

Even if he take notice of Silva as it is, the said person would likely just disregard the matter with a joke.

"Should I send you back now?"

He asked Camus with a sour look.

"...am I...a hindrance?"

"I didn't mention you being a hindrance though?"

"Then.....I'll stay with you....a little longer.....I want to be....with Hihiro more."

Hihiro silently stared at him.

"Then, do as you like. After this we'll be returning to 【Xaos】 , if you want to know why, hear the details from Jii-san."

".....ok."

Then, Hihiro felt the chains binding his body sweep away. It would apparently seem that the 《Rebound》 of 《Peerless Mode》 had been relieved. With this, Hihiro can finally use 《Word Magic》 again.

"Oi Idiot Disciple."

"Yes Master?"

Nikki replied giddily as she turned to Hihiro with starry eyes.

"Do you have the 《Red Honey Candy》 ?

"Please wait for a moment."

While Nikki said so, she put her hand inside the bag hung at her waist and rummaged through it.

“Mumumu.....ah, I wonder if this is it!”

As she took out the said object,

“....that’s the 《Poison Bead》 ”

It was obvious based from the color. It had quite the purple tint in it.

“Mumumu...alright, I’m sure this is it!”

“.....that’s just an empty shell.”

Wherever she picked it up from, the shell she presented was similar to the shell a hermit crab resides in.

“Seriously, haven’t I passed you some a while ago? A red candy used for recovering magic?”

“Ooh! I remember now!”

As she said so, Nikki shoved her hand on the bag again,

“This is it!”

And mightily brought out a.....

“.....that’s just a 《Red Seed》 ”

“What did you say!? N-now that you mention it, this was the squirrel food Mikazuki and I requested for Silva-dono to purchase!”

This apprentice is an idiot, he thought. Rubbing his temple irksomely, he grabbed the bag from Nikki.

He was able to find three pieces of it....but

“Oi, I believe I’ve passed you 10 pieces of it? What happened to the rest?”

“.....?”

Searching her memories, Nikki tilted her head sideways. And soon remembered why,

“I think I was racing with Mikazuki the other day and might have dropped them along the way!”

.....this apprentice is really an idiot.

“...haa, anyway I’ll be taking these.”

“Sure, feel free to take them all”

When Hihiro threw them into his mouth, the heavy feeling inside his body slowly lightened. With this, he could more or less correspond to the task at hand.

Just like the time when they faced the Gabranth’s, Hihiro used the 『Transfer』 character to return to 【Demon Capital – Xaos】 , and was at a loss of words due to the sudden shout of joy.

The place they arrived was crowded by people, and it was understandable that the people were waiting for their return.

It would seem that Eveam have informed their victory to Aquinas using a magic tool. And when they informed Aquinas about their return, he had told this to the people.

People who were unrelated even came in front of the castle and waited for their arrival just to hear the report of their victory as a sign of their appreciation.

Hundreds, thousands, or even more, the image of the people gathered was breathtaking.

They could be even described as a ‘sea of people’. No matter where they look, they would meet the gazes of the people on the ground.

At first, Eveam was also bewildered by this surprise, but soon recovered from the shock, and quickly raised her fist upwards.

“We are the victors!”

“ “ “ Ooooooooooooooooooooooooooooooh! “ “ “

The intensity of their shout had reached to the point of their eardrum being in pain. For some reason, they even began to stomp on the ground in rhythm as shout of joy continued to grow to the point of wanting to leave the place as soon as possible.

But Eveam being bathed by this wasn't frowning in displeasure, she was actually expressing a wonderful, glad-looking expression.

The shout of joy temporarily stopped when she raised her hands.

“Everyone! I'm quite pleased by our victory that I've decided to arrange a feast for tomorrow! There, we will gladly feast upon the fruits of our victory!”

Their eardrum were grandly shaken again. Apparently, they will have to rest for today, and would arrange the grand celebration tomorrow. Hiirō was quite grateful for that decision.

He was actually quite worn out for today.

He and the others entered the castle while receiving the shout of joy behind them.



## Chapter 205 – Warning for Hiiro

First order of things for Hiiro's return is a hot bath. When he stubbornly conveyed this to Eveam, she prepared it immediately.

What had happened today was quite exhausting, Hiiro thought as he soaked his body in the hot pool of water.

(Still, that Beast King.....was quite strong....)

He was truly non-standard after all. If he did not have his 《Word Magic》, surely it would be impossible to win that duel. It wouldn't surprising if he was instantly killed by Lion Liger.

Although Hiiro naturally took victory in that situation, still he was convinced that the Beast King was a strong man indeed.

(Besides there were those people as well....)

He recalled the sudden appearance of Eveam's elder brother, Demon King Avoros. Aside from him, he wasn't able to use 『Pry』 on any of this person's colleagues.

(Although I've thought this could happen someday... it's possible that beyond this point, there are a lot more situations where my magic won't be effective....)

Similar to Lion Liger that the Beast King had summoned, anyone who has 《Anti-Magic Element》 will most likely appear in the future and may render Hiiro's Word Magic.

(So I can't continue to exist without my magic....huh?)

Supposing Hiiro was driven into a situation where he couldn't use his magic again, can he confront people with same caliber as the Beast King?

(I should look for solutions about this...)

Because Hiiro had decided to help achieve Liliyn's dream, he

understood that there would be a big obstacle awaiting them in the near future.

And it seems that they had experienced the combat aspect of it. Can he fight properly.....supposing he encounter people capable of rendering his magic useless?

With a Chapun sound, he sunk his whole body in the hot water.

(I don't want to die yet....but.....I can't think of any measures to counter this situation.)

His face resurfaced from the hot water. Then, he slowly shut his eyes... as a vein appeared on his forehead.

“What do you want, Hentai?”

In front of his vision, there was the Hentai butler Silva standing in an imposing stance, stark naked.

Although it was less noticeable with his clothes on, Silva was considerably buffed with muscles. It was unexpected for an old guy like him to have such well sculpted form.

Not that it matters to him though.

“Oi, I believe I requested to be alone in this bath and take my time?”

“Nofofofofof! You don't mind as long as I don't disturb you, right? I myself want to relax my stiff shoulders a little.”

Though he said it while rolling his rigid shoulders, there wasn't a trace of tiredness on his expression.

“.....haa, and so? What did you came here for?”

“Hm? What could you be talking about?”

“Don't play dumb. You won't purposely enter the bath unless you want something to talk about by just the two of us.”

“.....nofofo, quite sharp indeed, Hiiro-sama.”

Whether it was because he realized his intentions, Silva was a little surprised. Originally, this man only comes here when there was something he had to talk about with Hiiro, all the more confirms it, by appearing to him with just the two of them in the bath alone. It was the same back then in their former travels.

“Then, if you don’t mind.”

Although the bathtub was considerably wide, for some reason, he sat near Hiiro.

“Hoho~this really hits the spot~”

Though Silva was enjoying the warm feeling of the bath, Hiiro, on the other hand, wanted to finish this talk as soon as possible.

“Quickly tell me.”

“...first of all, well done Hiiro-sama.”

Hiiro didn’t answer and kept on being silent.

“This time, you have confronted a 『Spirit』, you seem to be thinking a lot about it, haven’t you?”

“.....!?”

Incidentally, Silva was also a 『Spirit』. He said that he was a defective one, but Hiiro was sure that the Lion Liger he fought was of the same kind.

“Lion Liger-dono was...really strong.”

“....you know him?”

“Indeed I do.... Though if I have to put it plainly into words, it’s possible to say that I don’t know him too.”

“Stop with your roundabout way of speaking.”

“Nofofofofof! That was quite harsh! Nofofofof!”

(Seriously, I still don't understand what's so interesting about this.)

"To tell you the truth, that is not the true form of Lion Liger-dono."

"...what did you say?"

In other words, that unreasonable being name Lion Liger, had not demonstrated his true power yet. Hihiro couldn't hide the surprise on his expression.

"Originally, a high rank 『Spirit』 should have a more human-like appearance."

Hihiro quietly listens to Silva's story.

"『Spirits』 in either cases: low rank, medium rank, and high rank, are divided based on the strength of their existences. And among them, Lion Liger is one of the high ranking spirits 『Spirits』. The beast-like appearance of him, is the manifested form of Leowald's use of Lion Liger's power."

"....."

"I'm sure Hihiro-sama has also noticed it, but most 『Spirits』 are equipped with 《Anti-Magic Constitution》."

It was as Hihiro had expected.

"Though Lion Liger was in a beast-like appearance that time, supposing he was in his human form, his strength will likely be on a different level again."

Instinctively, Hihiro gulped.

"I deeply apologize if I may have discouraged you."

Certainly, Silva had informed something to him indirectly after finishing his fight.

"Supposing the human form of Lion Liger came out that time..."

"Is he really that strong?"

“Indeed he is....It is best for Hihiro-sama.....although I may be exaggerating a bit on my words, he is a natural enemy to you after all.”

“You mean the 《Anti-Magic Element》 right?”

“Yes. And he can also use magic. A power as strong as the magic used here in 『Evila』.”

Although Hihiro wanted to doubt such possibilities, but he, a 『Spirit』 had already warned him, so it might actually be true.

“That said, the 《Anti-Magic Element》 is more troubling than their use of magic, they are frightening and have very high intelligence, and let's not forget the fact that they can easily read the heart of any person because they are an 《All-Knowing Race》. Perhaps, before you were able to use 《Peerless》, and Leowald-dono was able to completely summon Lion-Liger dono, it's possible that....”

“I could have died...huh?”

“Yes.”

Hihiro soaked his body in the hot water more as he sighed heavily. Certainly, there were a lot dangerous events that had happened that time. Though he was somehow able to fortunately conjure his magic, but supposing he had unexpectedly received a blow before, surely the battle would have ended there.

In other words....he might have belittled his opponent, and ended up playing too much with him?

While brooding on the matter, Silva casted his eyes downward, and

---

“Besides...”

“Hm?”

“We even met with a group named 《Matar Deus》 today”

“Yeah.”

“...there, I sensed a 『Spirit』 similar to myself... a human type.”

“.....I see”

Indeed, so this was why Silva solely came here to advise him about this. A human type 『Spirit』 in 《Matar Deus》 that will become an enemy.

For this reason, Silva might have felt something from it as an identical 『Spirit』 .

“Hiiro-sama, please lessen your habit of playing with your opponent, alright?”

“Mu....”

At that time, Hiiro was weakened because he could only use 《One Word Chain》 . And yet, he still struck the partner without even ascertaining his opponent's true nature.

But fortunately, his opponent wasn't that hostile to Hiiro that it would attack him aggressively.

And then, it came to the point where Camus saved him from being killed. If it wasn't for him, a tragedy may have happened.

In other words, Silva was warning him about his reckless actions.

“.....my bad.”

“.....fufufu, times like this, you really are honest to yourself.”

“Don't laugh, or else I'll kick you.”

“Nofofofo! But I would like to also apologize for my self-assertive way of speaking. I was just truly worried about Hiiro-sama.”

“...I understand.”

So that's why. Certainly, he may have behaved rashly without thinking carefully of the consequence it may hold. He should have

observed prudence even if he was disgusted by Avoros.

“Hiiro-sama is an important person for Ojousama. I won’t let you die a noble a death.”

“Splendid loyalty you have there. I’m sure Red Loli would be proud to hear that from you.”

Somehow, there was a trace sarcasm in his words. But Silva didn’t mind it one bit.

“Well, that’s not the only reason. If you died back then, not to mention Ojousama, many people would be wrapped in sadness of your death. That includes me as well.”

“.....”

“I would like you to value your life. You are incredibly strong, but it does not mention that you have to let yourself die nobly.”

Then, for the first time, Silva made a sorrowful expression in front of him. Hiiro broke glances, and dropped his sight on to the hot water.

“Besides, I’m quite happy and satisfied with the current way of my life. A life where anyone I know is safe and sound. Please don’t deprive this enjoyment from me.”

His expression this time was like a boy making a joke unlike a while ago. Hiiro was completely confuted, and there was no room for rebuttal at all.

“....ou, I’ll bear it in mind.”

“That’s right.”

Then, bashaa, Silva suddenly stood up.

“Well then, since we’re done with it, Hiiro-sama, let me wash your back overflowing with manly spirit. You don’t min- eh? Hiiro-sama?”

Right away, Hiiro used 『Transfer』 character to arrive at the changing room.



## **EPISODE 206: THE BEGINNING OF THE FEAST**

The next day, after taking a good rest, although still suffering from his muscular pain, Hihiro was able to part with his fatigue.

Though it was already in the early afternoon when he woke up, loud noises dominated the castle. But, no sense of tension was felt. Instead, everyone's face was full of feelings of joy.

From the outside of the castle, cheerful music and the people's vigor have reached their ears. Yes. As Eveam declared yesterday, today is scheduled to hold a banquet of victory.

However, in the town overlooking from the castle, there are people here, people there, and people everywhere. Like ants gathering over a huge ice cream, they cover the ground busily.

Men who are having pleasant chat while holding liquor in one hand. Women who are wearing upright clothing and showing a splendid dance.

Hands are clapping happily here, children humming songs there, everyone was enjoying the reverberations of the victory everywhere.

Around the castle, many people gather to hear Eveam's speech. She look around such people with a broad smile on her face.

And Eveam, to everyone, formally announced the alliance with the [Gabranth]. Of course, there are those who have dubious expressions too, but still, everyone raised a roar to the Demon Lord who defeated the [Gabranth].

Even if there is still some way to go before fully implementing the alliance, still as this is one big new step, even a little bit, everyone felt it too.

Even though there are still some lingering discomfort, with this, the

beastmen consented that the fighting is finally over.

However Eveam, this time, didn't mention Avoros in her speech. With everybody rejoicing with so much effort, it became impossible for her say that there will be another impending crisis of a war again.

The real intentions of Avoros is still under investigation. She decided to consult with Aquinas and have decided to inform everyone after everything is grasped.

"Being a ruler sure is difficult."

Having picked up his muttering quickly,

"Ho-hou, fancying to be a king?"

It was Lilyn, also known as the Red Loli. She looks up to him with a cunning smile.

"I want to know how you made your decision with your present words."

"Fufun, this one has no guts"

"I don't want to accept leading others. It's a pain in the ass"

"Kukuku, it suites a bastard like you"

However, as he thought about it, he let his eyes swim to Eveam who continues making her speech.

(It sure have grown up a little.....that flower garden)

Eveam also, should have spent much efforts to be able to make them consider by this duel. Though what she have done in her life haven't still paid off so far, the alliance which she wished came true, and it became a matter of concern whether she was able to grow up as a ruler.

Even though Eveam's head is filled with ideas of an idealist, there is no other person this excellent other than her to arrive here.

(Well, judging from her face, she had become a little better...isn't she?)

When he met her for the first time, there is this pathetic feeling of insecurity drifting around her, and not a single atom of her being as a ruler was not felt either, but after the duel, he felt that she became a slightly firm face of dignity.

(Though I can feel her beginning to walk the path of a ruler, whether she will grow bigger or not depends on her from now on)

To be frank, even if Eveam grows up or not, it doesn't matter. What's more important is that she sticks to her promise.

As he heard that the <Fortuna Great Library> will open as soon as this party is over, Hihiro can't stand his anticipation for it.

And the feast today. Because the feast dishes were made by the cook named Musun, his stomach is rumbling just from thinking about it.

(Aah ~ Dinner isn't ready yet.....)

Because he missed the time of the day to eat with all his might, he anxiously waited for the meal tonight.

The sun has set, and the long-awaited night came. It wasn't in the dining area where there is a long table like the last time, but Hihiro was called in the banquet hall, and a surprising scene was revealed before him.

A party that seemed to totally celebrate a wedding ceremony of the King of the country was held. With the halls decorated gorgeously, illuminated by the light of a vivid chandelier, many persons who wore formal attire were totally waiting for Hihiro.

To Hihiro's appearance, various gazes flit about. Respect, Yearning, Envy, Love, Jealousy, etc. the people who were aware of his achievements aiming to be him by all means.

“.....slurp”

Even though Hiiro has no time for it, he was captivated to the gorgeous meal placed on the table. Seeming to be made from various high quality ingredients, he saw a shining halo in it.

Hiiro thinking that he may not be able to endure it any longer, runs into the table at full speed. By the way, he was dressed up as well and was wearing a black tuxedo.

It was troublesome to wear it one by one though, so he made a tuxedo by using 『変化』 (Change).

When he sat at the large table, Musun was there.

“Well well, if it isn’t Hiiro-sama, if you don’t mind, I could provide the description of the dish but-”

However, before she were able to finish her words, Hiiro lifts the plate with the dish in his hand, taking it away. And, gobbling it in his mouth, he made an expression full of ecstasy.

To his reaction, Musun’s cheek loosened a bit with pleasure to Hiiro who is with his mouth wide open.

“Nomnomnom.....Hmm? This is so good!”

He thrust something like a fish with his fork. Then stuck it out in order to show it to Musun, who broke into a smile and said,

“That is called <Grilled Salted Tiger Tuna>. A tuna which has a tiger-like pattern, its meat has less fat and has a very light taste. It has a perfect elastic body. The body which returns a tooth worth biting, it has a texture that leaves an impression of irresistible to connoisseurs.”

Certainly there is not a trace of elasticity left. Because the meat has a little fat, the taste isn’t too strong and really boosts your appetite. In addition, the seasoning is quite exquisite, it matches the rich sauce that looked like a soy sauce, making it even tastier.

Next, his eyes moved to a considerably big ball-shaped leaves

wrapped up like a lettuce.

“This one is called <Steamed Rice Cake in Lemon Leaves>. When steamed, the greatest taste of the <Rice Cake Meat> can be achieved. But that isn’t just merely wrapping it up with Lemon Leaf and steaming it. With the unique aroma and acidity of the lemon, soaking the <Rice Cake Meat> moderately into it, it brings out the best taste”

“Nomm.....Woah!?”

He didn’t think that the taste and texture of meat could be brought out in a rice cake. This is out of his expectations. Although it is a rice cake, it has a flavor of meat. And, with the aroma of lemon drifting about, the sour taste accumulating in the tongue incites the appetite even more.

“This is terrific.....Oh, what’s this?”

It was something which seems to be a certain food on the plate, but this one burns just like a fire. It was as large as a fist, but somewhat bewildering to be held by bare hands.

But seeing Hiiro being unable to stand it any longer, Musun happily gave an explanation.

“It’s all right. As for that, called the <Fireball Egg>, it is made by boiling the egg of the Flaming Red Bird, though it looks like it has been wrapped in fire making one hesitate to hold it, it becomes possible to hold and boil it after freezing it for once. Of course, this is edible. The very rich flavor, on the very first taste.....No, first of all, have a bite”

Though she ended it in a worrisome way, it is not certainly hot like fire if held barehanded. However, the fragrant smell of the totally burnt soy sauce drifts from the <Fireball Egg>.

He provoke it with his index finger in temptation, and took a gulp of it unconsciously.

“Guu.....Hmm?”

Quickly, the food texture is just like tempura that had just been fried, the pleasant aroma spreads in his mouth. It tastes like fried eggs yet this one has a secret ingredient within.

When it reached his stomach, it appeared. The insides of his tummy becomes hot suddenly. However, there is no unpleasant feeling. In fact, it gives somewhat a reassuring warmth in the whole body.

For the body that gets chilled completely, it has a sensation like a warm soup that was poured inside the stomach, he leaks out sigh of ecstasy unintentionally.

“Fufu, when the <Fireball Egg> enters the stomach, it gives a warming effect to the body. Moreover, that time, because a pleasant sensation runs through the whole body, this food becomes quite addictive”

Certainly, this sense of comfort is quite addicting, and I really want to feel it all the time.

“Mmmm, Delicious!”

“I am truly grateful. By the way, please have this main dish”

As Musun said so, she showed a huge platter.

“Whoa ~ look how round that is!”

Nikki who had come nearby before everyone is aware exclaimed with her eyes gleaming. She is also dressed in a formal attire suited for the party. She wore a blue dress like a girl, but unlike her usual image, she truly gave an atmosphere appropriate for a lady.

Besides her are Lilyn and Silva, Shamoe being led by a hand, and Mikadzuki approached, too. Though Silva is in his usual butler clothes, the three women wore gorgeous clothes in their bodies.

Shamoe was wearing a provocative jade dress that exposed skin and generally emphasizes her voluptuous chest while Mikadzuki was wearing something similar to Nikki.

And.....

“Hey, Nitoryuu, why are you in butler clothes?”

Before their eyes, there is Camus who wore a tailcoat which is strangely looking good in him. While the person in question inclines his neck,

“Nn.....Suit me?”

As he heard him talk, because Silva matches me somehow or other, he suggested this one, and because his face is certainly regulated well that he can be classified as a handsome man and a beautiful girl, when such clothes are worn, the height of his looks really stand out.

“This.....may I eat?”

“Do as you like”

“.....suit myself”

Camus, feeling hungry, began eating the meals with great relish.

Furthermore.....

“Hmm? What?”

Lilyn.....as expected, was in gothic Lolita outfit after all. But the way she dressed is so perfect, totally possessing the prettiness of a doll. Truly a shining red haired beauty in a white dress.

“Well, as I thought, that kind of clothing suits you well after all”

As one would expect of this loli, he nodded in his mind many times,

PUFF!

Her face boils up suddenly, with the complexion rivaling the <Fireball Egg> that he has eaten a while ago.

“Wha-Wha-What the hell are you saying, you pleb!”

Why are you getting angry? I only said that you look good because

you look good.

“Fu,Fun! O-Of courshhe, i-it’s all natural for me to look good!”

If you look more closely, your cheeks have slightly loosened, Are you not angry that much? When he thought that there is no need to worry and turn his face away,

“Ah...”

He heard a voice that seemed to be of disappointment, but it was already drowned out,

“Wooaah ~ ! This is so good!”

“It’s true ~ ! Shamoe-chan, you too, try it ~ ! ”

“Y-yes, right away!”

After seeing Nikki and Mikadzuki taking bites of the dish, Shamoe worrying about the mess on their lips, pulls out a handkerchief from her bosom and goes to the two.

“.....isn’t it great, milady? Hihiro-sama praised you”

“Wha!? I-it’s not like I’m glad or anything! O-of course, it’s natural for a retainer to praise her master..... Besides, he’s undergone great troubles about thinking on praising me in it...So I need a response even a little in order to satisfy him, or something like that.....”

“Milady, your true thoughts are leaking about”

“Wha!?”

While Silva and Lilyn are having a good conversation in the rear, Nikki’s loud voice was resounded greatly again.

“U-uhmm Musun-dono, what is this roundish thing!”

Yes, this is the main dish which Musun showed, and as you see it, it was in a sphere of considerable size, twice the soccer ball apparently.



And you could verify that around it is bound by strings.

“Everyone, by all means please look at it without averting your eyes”

As Musun said so to gather everyone’s eyes, she was holding a pair of scissors on her right hand.

Next, she cut the string around the sphere with a snap. Then,

Suddenly, a cut runs to the sphere lengthwise, and hot steam gushes out from that rift. Furthermore, it spread over the platter with ten equal parts as if it’s a flower in full bloom.

Though they’re unable to see ahead because of the steam, an aroma that terrifically stimulates the appetite fills in the surroundings. As the steam gradually fades away, the total picture of the dish becomes clear.

From that, red liquid which ooze out from the cut portion like melted cheese overflowed.

“oooh ~ What a nice smell!”

“mmm ~ This smell, I like it!”

Nikki and Mikadzuki’s noses twitch as they sniff through the aroma while having their eyes closed, dyeing their cheeks red. Lilyn and Silva also, captivated by the dish, stared hard.

“Everyone, this is the <Cheese Chili Meat Pizza □ Scorched and Ball-fried in Bean Curd>”

「皆さま、これは《チーズチリミートピザ・おこげボール揚げ》になります」

Pizza? This one? No, it is certainly cut above and divided, ridden with various seafood, and if the red liquid was the cheese, then it was completely a pizza in appearance.

However, I haven’t seen such pizza as weird as this. Just as this was in a spherical form a while ago, where did that smell that seemed to

be a burning rice coming from?

Becoming aware of my doubts, Musun moves her mouth without removing her smile.

“Please let me explain. First, was putting the food on the dough once. I cook it in an oven like a common pizza. In which was also baked, I make it like a sphere like the one you have seen earlier, and applied a protective coating with rice which I cooked in turn. After having tied it up with a string so that the form won’t collapse from the top, I tossed it into oil heated in 180 degrees Centigrade. Well, before rounding it, I inserted the red ingredient called <Chili Meat Cheese> inside to secure it all around”

I see, I See, Everybody nodded in response many times.

“As for this <Chili Meat Cheese>, while being fried in medium heat, it begins to gradually melt inside, and spreads to the dough evenly. It is a cooking style to fully contain the flavor inside. Please, have some”

Each one pick up a slice of the pizza carefully so as not to burn themselves.

“Ahm.....Nomnomnom.....Thi-This is.....!?”

But they couldn’t stop their hands anymore. Instead of savoring it slowly and carefully, they gobbled it in their mouths with surprising speed.

(What is this perfectly balanced pizza!?)

Moreover, the texture is very pleasant. The crust was tenderly done, the wrappings made out of rice, because it was fried, created a crunchy texture different from a burnt rice. It was a delicacy which integrated the perfect harmony of hardness and softness.

Also, the seafood appearing on top of it are delicious. The tender prawns, the oysters giving out milk-like extracts, and the seaweeds resembling Wakame (sea mustard) that have also spread about. Apparently, it is typically classified as a seafood pizza.

And this so-called red cheese. The cause that unified everything. Though I was prepared for the considerable spiciness from that color, it is really just harsh to. The taste of good quality meat that is included in the cheese, impresses you so many times with just one slice.

Mikadzuki eating it with great relish is a proof of that. Also this cheese, it also matches both the bread and the scorched part exquisitely. Naturally,

(This pizza is the best!)

That impression, was what everyone who ate the pizza spoke of tonight.

Nikki and Mikadzuki eat it whole-heartedly, and even requested another serving. Shamoe also stuffs it in her mouth with great relish while heartwarmingly staring at the two. But, if you focus on her left and right hand as it moves subtly, she's writing on something which seems to be a notepad.

Probably because she wants to express this taste too, she's writing down the recipe and the ingredients.

Camus also, with gleaming eyes was impressed by the pizza he ate for the first time.

“nohuohuohuohuohuo! This is so delicious that my cheeks would fall! nohuohuohuohuohuo!”

“Yeah. This is not bad. This goes well with wine”

With a glass of wine in one hand, two people nearby drank in satisfaction before everyone is aware.

(Yes, this is undeniably the best)

Hihiro also continued moving his mouth till it's fully satisfied.

## EPISODE 207: THE END OF THE FEAST

This is the final chapter of the fourth volume of KnW. Enjoy

“You sure are quite enjoying yourself well, Hiiro”

Demon Lord Eveam came up in a dash. She has this extraordinary atmosphere again. With her blond hair down shining like a jewel, she was wearing a black dress all over.

She's already a beautiful girl who is certainly captivating the eyes of men, and because her style is great, the figure of the dress he's wearing shines magnificently.

There is also Aquinas next to her, too. He is also wearing a tuxedo, and also has an outstanding figure that you can judge that any kind of woman of the world will be held captive by those.

With a well-refined expression, looking at his slim build, the women around them leaked sighs of admiration.

“The Demon Lord, huh. We'll talk later. I'm having a meal right now”

Even though the demon lord of the castle itself came to greet him, as expected of Hiiro indeed. But even after being expressed such an attitude, Eveam didn't break her expression. Rather than that, she smiled in delight.

“Well, sorry about that. If you enjoy it that much, then it's good”

Like that, Eveam stares at Hiiro's profile while eating patiently. Noticing Eveam's glance, Lilyn pouts her mouth sullenly. But being unable to approach because she hates Aquinas who is beside her, she watched them in silence without moving from her place.

“.....Hiiro, I want to express my gratitude”

The voice of Aquinas resounded, and he directed his gaze to him. And moving his mouth while still chewing, as he supply food to his stomach,

“As long as you keep your promise, it’s fine”

He only said that, and began eating again. Seeing Hihiro like that, a faint smile came into Aquinas’ cheeks. Eveam then calls his name, in which as he moves his line of sight reluctantly,

“S-so.....this.....thi-this dress.....how do I look?”

It’s pretty obvious know it in just one glance. However, to her who was fidgeting in embarrassment to hear his evaluation, he only tilted his neck as he heard her question.

He gave himself up and kept silent for a while, as she stared at him, yearning for his answer. Because it became an atmosphere that requires him to say something,

“...well, you look quite mature, somehow”

“Re-re-rerereally? A, aha, is that so.....fufu”

At once, she gave off a adult-like expression, vanishing her traces of childishness, and somehow, seeing her satisfied expression, happiness could be felt within.

As if ruining her mood, Lilyn had a difficult expression. As she wants to concentrate on her meal right now, she had a complicated feeling that she didn’t like.

However from Lilyn who is in the rear, a threatening atmosphere is felt by Hihiro, but he can’t remember doing anything that seemed to anger her. Therefore, he judged that it’s because Silva had done something it seems, he didn’t bother it.

Eveam talks with Aquinas in a cheerful tone. Thinking that he could finally enjoy his meal in peace,

Kui.....

He felt a sensation of his clothes being tugged from behind.

(Oi oi, give me a break already!)

When he confirmed in a bad mood who is the person in question,

“ah, I-I’m sorry, nano”

Did it sense that Hihiro was angry? It swayed its eyes somewhere in panic. She is the captain of the Demon Army Corps, Eunice. The girl who played an active part in the recent duel.

(TN: She was previously named as Eonis in the past translations, but I am sticking out with Eunice, as it sounds more proper)

With her light green hair braided to the side, coiled round and round, her eye mask worn when she went to the duel is no longer there.

The eye mask in the first place, was to hide the burn around her eyes which was cured by Hihiro. Big round eyes, fitted in such a cute face, you can confirm clearly that she’s a pretty child.

She was wearing a blue China dress-like with a slit flowing into. With three small bells attached near her chest, every time she move a refreshing sound drifts in your ears. How would you put it, she gave a feeling of a cute Chinese daughter.

“.....What?”

As she heard his unsociable tone, he saw Eunice catching glimpses with upturned eyes observing his mood. To such state, which look like as if he’s bullying her, he let out a sigh.

I just want to concentrate on something good, but.....

“.....hey”

For goodness sake, he presented a plate to the girl without needing any words. On top of it is the cut-off slice of the pizza from a while ago.

“.....Eh?”

“Try it”

“Ah.....un”

Eunice who received the plate, opens her mouth halfway and bites the pizza. Then her expression that showed gloom, brightened just like Nikki.

“.....delicious”

“Isn’t it? I mean, haven’t you eaten something like this before?”

He thought that she had already eaten these things before because she was a captain, but it looks like this seemed to be her first experience.

“Yeah. Musun said this. That this pizza can be made only at a special time”

“Oh? Then the more the reason to eat this food more”

Hiiro says so, and takes another pizza, too.

“.....Hey,nano”

His clothes are pulled again. Getting used to it, he turned back his eyes.

“Does Hideo, like eating-nano?”

“Guess so”

“Hmmm ~ ”

“By the way, stop saying Hideo”

“.....Why-nano?”

As for her and the others, I understand the feelings why she wants to call me so. I know that much. But,

“It gives me an itch in the back”

“.....then, what should I call you?”

“You can call me anything you like, but spare me with Hideo”

Lost in her thoughts, he sealed her lips with his forefinger. Coming up with an idea, she raised her face suddenly and fix her eyes on him.

“Then, may I call you Onii-chan?”

“I don’t mind it, but because if there is another guy whom you call similarly elsewhere, it will be kind of confusing”

“it’s alright-nano. As it’s only just Onii-chan-nano”

“then it’s good”

“un”

Although feeling shy, Eunice blushes in bliss. She’s embarrassed, but gives of a happy feeling.

After that, she was summoned by Eveam and has gone somewhere together. Lilyn, who was nauseated by the atmosphere and waiting for this opportunity, came up to the side.

“You sure are very popular right now, Hiiro”

“So this time, it’s you.....”

“Wha-why are you looking at me with an irritated face?!”

Saying something unexpected, she pointed a finger at him. However, the complaint is there. That is because he only wants to savor the taste of the meal slowly.

“Th-this pleb, even though I have waited for this opportunity!”

“What the hell are you talking about?”

“I’m also a woman too.....why are these special kind of guys so



dense one after another.....geez”

Muttering the last part as softly as no one was able to hear it, she knitted her brows without knowing what to do with him. Then, in the vicinity where Silva is smiling said “Milady who is jealous is cute, too” in a trance with cheeks in red,

(Where the hell is the jealousy? I mean I didn’t do anything, right?)

She’s jealous because she had no chance? Or, that’s because she had, that she’s jealous? .....I don’t get it.

Well, this is certainly a good chance to make a show in the society, but I don’t understand why she’s jealous.

(.....Oh well)

Because he was unable to find the answer even he think about it, he decided to leave it for the time being. If it’s something serious, he judged that he will find the answer eventually. For now, it’s the meal. He wishes to leave himself alone already.

Taking some distance to Lilyn who was muttering something alone, Hihiro who became alone finally intends to enjoy his meal to his heart’s content, bringing food to his mouth while discharging an unapproachable aura.

The surrounding women in the vicinity that wants to get closer to him, though judging that it’s their chance to get intimate with him if they approach him now, a feeling of overwhelming sense of rejection came from Hihiro, keeping them at distance.

Hihiro understood that their eyes are centered on himself, but he doesn’t know that it was detonated by his heroic nature. Therefore the women, though the fact among other things they’ll probably be rejected by Hihiro before even being aware, with his present mood today, as well as Lilyn’s checking up on him being an obstruction to them, there is now way Hihiro would know.

And thus, the feast had marked its end.

# EPISODE 208: PASION'S PRESENT CONDITIONS

We have reached Volume 5! rejoice!

The point of view changes by about two stories.

---

The day before when Hiiro and the others were indulging themselves in the feast, when the [Beast King] Leowald returned to the [Beast Kingdom · Pasion] from [Valar Wilderness], everyone was speechless at the scene spread before their eyes.

TN Note: Valar Wilderness 【ヴァラール荒野】 was previously translated as 【Valaaru Wilds】 by Kiriko-sama (please refer to chapter 167). I'm going to stick to this one as it is easier to speak in the English tongue.

Before they have gone to the duel, the country was covered with natural spectacle of greenery, but now, that green was destroyed, burned till it's carbonized.

Not only that, clearly you can discover traces hit by a sharp blade. As if a fire extinguishing event was over, soot and black smoke are dancing everywhere.

But what everyone being surprised the most, was the state of the <Tree of Origin-Aragorn> which was the symbol of Pasion.

The great tree possesses a fascinating green throughout the year, never withering, and with its enormous presence, it gives of a graceful feeling that wraps the heart of everybody.

But right now, the great tree which is supposed to be overflowing with vitality isn't reflected before their eyes, but one whose life was totally cut down, and won't live for another tens of years if left alone.

The young and vibrant thick leaves that has flourished could not be

found, and the strong and thick branches, they seemed so brittle that they may break with little effort.

Everyone who had witnessed thought the same thing. And that is.....

The tree is already dead.

All who had witnessed thought and want to deny it at the same time. however, this is without a doubt the reality, and to have done this.....

“.....Kokurou.....”

Leowald muttered unconsciously. That mutter was mad with anger, with thirst for blood to the maximum.

“.....You. deal with the medical treatment and rescue of the wounded. Get it?”

As Leowald gave the soldiers who came back together with him orders, they began to move from their places.

“I will go to the <Great Tree>. As I have heard from the people, Kokurou seems to have infiltrated the <Great Tree>. I'm anxious about Blansa and the others”

And thus, Leowald faced towards the <Great Tree> and went in a quick pace.

Muir and Arnold on the other hand, went opposite to rescue the citizens.

“.....so cruel”

Muir who sees the injured and collapsed citizens all over the place gave a frown. Some among them are little children, and because the houses were made from the hollow of a large tree, some of them were crushed beneath when it was cut down.

There are some who lost his home by being wrapped in flames, and some are suffering from severe burns being caught by the fire.

“How could they do such a thing.....?”

They thought that a person creating such tragedy is inscrutable.

“The one who would be able to do this is a madman”

Anger filled Arnold's face. Grinding his teeth, he moved his eyes towards those who need their help.

Screaming and groaning is heard from here and there. A mother calling for her child, and conversely, another child seeking for her mother's voice. Pitiful cries flit around the whole place.

“Unforgivable.....”

“uncle.....”

“And what's more! According to the rumors, this was done by a beastman! One of our very own kin!”

The bonds of the [Gabranth] are strong. For the beastmen who value these bonds above all, one could never betray a person who was recognized as a friend once.

“Yet this person..... Has he never found a friend in this country at

all?”

He only could think of it that way.

“.....I don't get it. No matter what happened, there is absolutely no reason to do these things”

“.....that's right”

“.....Good grief, and to think that our long awaited alliance that we had attained in great efforts to be settled with this!”

After the many years of continuous fighting, an alliance was eventually formed between the [Evila] and the [Gabranth]. By the fact that it was formed, there is no mistake that they are near in achieving peace, even if it's just a single step.

However, this time is an act of betrayal, by one of their comrades, of their very own kin. The joy that they have got in the forming of their alliance was totally ruined.

“A-anyway, uncle, we need to save them!”

“Ah, Y-yeah!”

The two swept away the anger in their chest, and gave priority of saving lives with great efforts as possible.

As soon as Leowald enters the <Great Tree>, he hurried to Blansa, his wife, at once. After reaching the place, he saw her currently nursing the injured older sister of Arnold in her arms.

“Mother!”

Mimir and Kuclear embraced their mother altogether. She felt

relieved after seeing that her two daughters are safe.

“Blansa.....”

“dear.....”

Leowald and Blansa stared at each other, then made a small nod. Then he was informed by Blansa everything that happened in the country.

“Is that so..... so it was that guy after all.....does Kokurou still bear a grudge towards me?”

Leni who was the second prince has picked up the matter.

“Father, who on Edea is that Kokurou bastard?”

But to that natural question, Leowald and Blansa gave back only a stern expression. It looked like they seem to be wondering how they should explain this matter.

Everyone was able to understand that that there is something serious going on between them and Kokurou.

“.....Dear, I think the children have the right to know”

“But, Blansa.....”

“Thank you for worrying, dear, but it’s alright “

“Uh, yeah.....”

Still, having difficulties to decide whether he should tell them or keep it silent, he stood still at the same spot. Everyone was watching him, waiting for his mouth to open.

And finally, Leowald started opening his uneasy mouth slowly.

“Kokurou is.....the predecessor of the right hand man of the previous generation’s Beast King Lendock, Gareos Konigh. And he is.....”

ガレオス・ケーニツヒ is the name in the raws.

Leowald paused for a moment, then,

“.....my own, and Blansa’s little brother-in-law”

“Little.....brother?”

Where did that mutter come from? He do not know. But those words are the questions that everyone here wanted to ask.

But, when he look at the state of Blansa, who was keeping silent as giving her consent, now they know that it wasn’t a lie, but the truth in itself.

However, there isn’t anyone who dared to ask.

“Kokurou, is an orphan whom Gareos had picked up in the battlefield”

Leowald explained plainly to everybody.

A story before Leo was crowned as the Beast King. The times when Lendock, his father, still ruled the country. The times where chaos still leads the whole world, when the everyday life of fighting hasn’t still died out and continued to torment people. And the time when a large scale war broke out between them and the [Humas].

As for what was done in the boundary between the beastmen and the humans, the beastmen were able to barely gain victory, but the damage dealt to them was serious, too. Many towns and villages are sacrificed, and many lives have lost.

A small village of [Egma], being engulfed in the war, was driven to its destruction. Gareos Konigh, who was leading the <Three Beast Warriors> that time, grieved about the village that they were

unable to save.

But fortunately, he heard an Intel that a couple of a certain family was still alive. As they went to confirm it in a hurry, there was an older sister and younger brother being protected by their father and mother from the attacking [Humas]. The kids were still young, around five or six years old apparently. They had pure white hair like the snow.

But the moment when they rushed, the parents were already killed by the humans, and had started bearing their fangs towards the siblings. That's why Gareos somehow managed to protect them from the detestable blades of the enemy.

"The older sister and her little brother were the only ones left in the village."

The elder sister's name is Nerei. And the younger brother's name.....was Kokurou.

"War orphans.....aren't they?"

A word with similar meaning flowed from the first prince Regulus's mouth. Leowald gave a slight nod, then continued the story.

"Gareos decided to adopt these two who didn't have any relatives left but themselves"

Coming from the debt of not being able to save their parents, this is the utmost of what he could do. Fortunately it can be done because he was not in the situation where increasing his attendants by two could endanger his life.

And also, he also has a seven year old daughter, all alone. In fact she is.....

"my wife here.....Blansa"

Everyone's eyes faced Blansa. It is connected to what Leowald was saying a while ago. Then he becoming his brother-in-law is not strange.



With the adopted son's story coming out unexpectedly, of course they were confused at Kokurou and Nerei at first. However, over time, they eventually became accustomed to it.

One time, accompanying the three people the young Gareos went to Lendock who was the king at that time to pay respects. Then, Leowald met Kokurou for the first time.

“When we met at first, Kokurou seemed to be a weak child at a first glance. I was already past ten at that time, and because I have been training harder than anyone else, Kokurou looked even smaller to me. However, his eyes hid a keen strength. Though it is weak, I could feel that they were the eyes of a challenger”

To Leowald's words, Blansa partly closed her eyes in nostalgia.

“Nerei was also young and beautiful at that time”

“Yes, it is so”

Still with closed eyes, Blansa agrees.

“She was a very talented child. Bright, polite, and a child with a strong heart above all”

Blansa tells as she recalled, Leowald furthermore added.

“It was to the extent that you will be speechless in admiration”

Everyone recognized and acknowledged her as the brain of [Pasion], as she could infer the things a common man couldn't understand.

After that, the four came over often to play with each other. Especially for the meagre Kokurou, he trained himself with Leowald with sword and fist as well.

Blansa and Nerei happily watched them. Though the world was at war, peace continued between the four people.

Ten years have passed, and the four people matured in both their mind and body. Especially Kokurou, who had changed completely,

and compared from the first time, he now has a strong figure, and reached the place that isn't far from Leowald in terms of swordplay.

Kokorou who was able to participate in the war, had reached the point where he was called the [White Blade] with awe by his allies and with fear by his enemies.

Nerei and Blansa opposed participating in the war, but they declared that they will be defending the country.

Kokurou, in order to repay the country for saving him and Nerei took up the sword and with Leowald, they went towards the battlefield.

“But on a certain day.....that incident happened”

## EPISODE 209: KOKUROU'S REBELLION

An epidemic suddenly spread in the [Beast Kingdom□Passion]. With the cause unknown, Yuhito and Rarashik desperately tried to elucidate it, but can't provide effective means against it.

At first, it spread to the citizens rapidly like poison. While many people were suffering, as for the cure, Lendock even tried make some runs in the nearby towns and villages to investigate, but everything was for naught.

It seemed to spread through only in [Pasion] for some reason. An illness called <Dehydration Syndrome>, and once you are infected, in each passing day the disease decreases the fluids in your body.

Even continuous taking of water can only delay the progress, and like deadly poison without treatment, it rapidly corrupted the whole country.

Many people died, but finally, Yuhito succeeded in the development of the cure. It's made from a boiled rare medicinal herb. The amount was not enough, but it can be administered through those people who are suffering from the disease somehow, so he managed to stop its advance.

But as the medicine was about to go out of stock, the <Dehydration Syndrome> have infected Blansa and Nerei at the same time.

Yuhito was ordered to hand over the remaining medicine immediately, but.....there was just enough for a single person. Of course, Lendock organized his troops and in his command tried to search for the herb, but unfortunately, the invasion of [Humas] had begun.

If he lessens the troops here, they may lose the fight. But Lendock's thoughts of saving the two are very strong. What's more, the two people both had the intentions of being Leowald's wife.

That time, Gareos volunteered. Even if he draws out, he declared that this war is not much of a hindrance for them, and decided to go for a trip to search for the medicinal herb.

Thus, on the day Gareos was about to start his journey, he said “I’ll get it away by all means” to Kokurou who nursed them without eating nor drinking. Kokurou believed those words in tears.

Originally, he himself wanted to go look for it, but he hated being separated from Nerei. Besides, to Gareos who was a first-class warrior in the country, leaving this to him is a good choice.

Concerned with the result, contrary to the time when he should be arriving, Gareos didn’t come back. Was he attacked by a brutal demon on his trip to find the medicinal herb? Or is he attacked by humans who were concealing for an ambush?

However, days passed, but there is no news of Gareos at all, and the worst part is, Blansa is at her limit.

Her usually healthy skin changed into a darker color, withering like a dry and dead tree, and she was unable to put out her voice freely anymore. Her beautiful face was so pitiful that you’ll seem to cry just from looking at it.

There is only one medicine. Of course Kokurou who was against it was determined that it should be administered to Nerei, her true elder sister. It’s because Nerei’s illness is spreading faster.

But Leowald who was unable to see Kokurou seized with despair, began to rage, and before things get out of control, with his little authority in between, he decided to have Kokurou behave himself in prison.

Receiving an unexpected surprise, Kokurou who have regained his consciousness, noticed that he was in jail. Leowald who came over to the prison, declared to him in this manner.

“It will be alright. I’ll save Nerei by all means”

Kokurou gave a serious look towards the words Leowald had said, and regaining his presence of mind, left his body to the drowsiness

which attacked suddenly as a result of several days without sleep.

And when Kokourou woke up, he heard the words of Leowald who came over to the prison, with his face dyed in despair.

“I’m sorry. Blansa was the only one I could save”

At that time, Kokourou has become strange. Wails resounded from the prison all day long, and three days later, the hair of the man who came out of prison has been changed to an irregular white and black pattern.

Everyone held their breath in his changes, he with a few words.

“I want to mourn for my elder sister”

And with that, everyone agreed to it and the funeral was done solemnly at that time it rained, and the rain that should be cold, seem to feel hot for some reason.

The rain continued for a long time, but there is no sign of crying of anyone at all. Then, some good news had arrived.

“Gareos have returned”

Everyone who has heard the news led their breath.

“The medicinal herb was certainly grasped in his hands. However.....it was too late”

Yes. He didn’t make it. With a ragged body, full of mud and bruises, he came back wounded all over, but he.....didn’t make it in time.

Then, suddenly, a ray of light flashed. When they noticed it, the sword of Kokourou had penetrated the body of Gareos.

“W-why.....”

Unable to endure, Mimir held her hands through her mouth.

“then that fellow began attacking every person in the place

indiscriminately”

That look that is warped beyond the thoughts of anyone, as if an Asura had manifested in this world. Series of black and with flashes ran with a speed of light.

(TN: I think the Asura the author is referring to is the one from Buddhism, and not the Indian one. [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asura\\_\(Buddhism\)](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asura_(Buddhism)) Well, if you played Asura’s wrath, I think it’s more closer to this one [https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asura%27s\\_Wrath](https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Asura%27s_Wrath) )

Leowald faced him to stop his rampaging, but is instinctively been overwhelmed by his power.

But he could not go with that. At that moment, a sword had cut through his body, and like how he did it with Lendock, Kokurou lunged the blade in his chest.

And with a few words, Kokurou

“...nothing but lies”

Jumped out of the <Great Tree> .

“Then, we desperately searched for that guy.....but he was not found. Though I had escaped death, Gareos’ wasn’t in an instant, and father has passed away because of the wound, too. And in such timing, the [Evila] attacked”

Although they had succeeded in the defense somehow, they took a lot of damage. Succeeding in extracting information from the captured [Evila], they have found out that Kokurou had fed them the information and gave them an opening to attack.

“That guy was serious in crushing this country. It happened not only once, but for many times. But with the help of the <Three Beast Warriors> and Rarashik and the others, we manage to overcome it somehow.....”

Even then the person who had lost was still at large. Kokurou’s insurrection gave the [Gabranth] a very deep wound.

“That guy didn’t appear after a while. Though there was the thought that he had died somewhere, but.....as expected, he’s still alive”

After Leowald ended his story, no one gave a word, and silence dominated the room. They seem to be wondering on how they would react to the past that they couldn’t have imagined happening.

However, Mimir resolved herself and opened her mouth.

“Bu-but then, mother, if I’m not mistaken, I heard that mother’s father had died of sickness”

Not only Mimir, this was also told to all the people who didn’t know Kokurou.

“It is so. As a result of this, I have lied to all of you. The people who knew that scandal, most of them have already been killed by Kokurou. After that, the Konigh name was treated as misfortune, so I was married to this man immediately, casting away that name”

“S-so that’s why..... But why didn’t mother and father tell the truth?”

To everyone who was seeking for the answer, they faced the two.

“.....That’s because we don’t want to convey that we [Gabranth] had a traitor appeared in history. Fortunately, Kokurou is judged to have died, and we thought that the truth would continue to be hidden in the darkness”

However, Kokurou didn’t die but have only lied low so far.

The bond of the beastmen is believed to be so strong that it's incomparable to the [Humas] and [Evila]. Even if you read the history, there is only the fact that Kokurou was the only person who have caused a revolt. Therefore, thoughtlessly informing them will only cause those bonds to be filled with insecurity..... apparently, I was wrong”

Leowald lifted his face with eyes looking at someplace distant.

“No matter how long you hide it, truth will be revealed sooner or later. There isn't a beastman shaken by such thing. Certainly, it was a disgusting past, and now it caused a disaster in this country. For that very reason, I cannot let that tragedy break the power of our bonds”

He looked at everybody with eyes filled with reassurance. In answer to that, they gave a small nod.

“The opponent is not only Kokurou. Accompanied by that fellow..... is the Former Demon King Avoros”

The sound of catching one's breath was heard over that name.

“Either way, what we have got in the last duel was huge. The power of the former demon king is on another level. Also, all of those guys who are under him possess an aura that is way far from normal either. However, this time, we [Gabranth] and the [Evila] will fight along together”

“Ah.....Hiiro-sama”

Leowald's cheeks turned with a faint smile at the name Mimir muttered.

“Ah, if we assume that Hiiro whom knocked me down will also give a hand, there will be no other thing as reassuring as this”

“But father! Kokurou is a beastman, isn't he?”

As if he doesn't like the idea of relying on an unrelated person, Lenion says in a bad mood.



"I know. Kokurou is a [Gabranth] and must be dealt by us"

"Father..... so you do get it"

"Of course. The matters of the [Gabranth] must be settled by the [Gabranth]. However, the enemy is not only Kokurou. Perhaps, if this becomes a war, the former demon king will spend some war potential, too. the possibility of us hitting a rough spot is high. To that degree .....is Avoros' strength"

Everyone swallowed their saliva at the fact that Leowald admitted.

"That's why. It is necessary to contact the [Evila], and quickly expand our war potential from now on"

No one said anything to the legitimacy of that proposal. But being worried about something, Lenion opened his mouth.

".....say, perhaps, are they by any chance cooperating with the [Humas]?"

"....."

Ever since, The [Evila] had deep connections with the [Humas]. They are only seized and treated as livestock by them. The majority of the [Gabranth] have similar thoughts, too.

"N-no way, Hihiro-sama is a human too!"

Lenion clicks his tongue on the scream of Mimir.

"I know that already! But I heard that that fellow was summoned from another world, right? In other words, he's not probably totally with the [Humas]!"

"th-that's....."

Surely, Hihiro was certainly classified as one of the [Humas], but as Lenion said, there are no basis to decide if he really was with them.

Though Mimir trusts Hihiro completely, he came from [Humas] where they have no relations. Even if he's a human, that doesn't

mean that you can rely on all the other humans.

She has also heard the story that he is a human being. Therefore she understood the reason for Lenion's uneasy feelings.

"Well, what do you think, father?"

He pressed Leowald for an answer. Then, he quivered his lips gently.

"There isn't any country in which the reigning king had a complete grasp of their arms at all"

"I thought so too"

Lenion gave a light smile.

"However"

"Huh?"

"If the country changes, it may be possible to negotiate"

"Haa!? What are you saying, father!"

Lenion who was completely relieved earlier, yelled reflexively at that remark.

"Just listen to me first"

"Guh.....just what is it?"

"Certainly, the present nation that King Rudolph had unified is untrustworthy. It's because that country was painted with full of lies. Even forming an alliance, we don't know when we will be stabbed in the back"

"Then, the more it's necessary to think about it....."

"But if that person changes, the country will also change, too"

Everyone who heard those words was amazed. However, only Leowald fixed his eyes on that person..... staring at Regulus,

“Explain yourself, Regulus”

And demanded an explanation from him.

“As you wish. If that person changes, the country also changes. Do you understand, Lenion?”

“.....”

Looking at him who still remained silent,

“Listen here, the current king right now, for me who is still immature, is imbecility in itself. Hero summoning, and even breaking the conference.....perhaps, they really are connected with the former demon king”

“Wha-!?”

“Hohou, so you noticed too, Regulus”

“Yes, otherwise tearing the conference apart won’t simply lead to the war breaking out. Probably, the former demon king negotiated with King Rudolf with some means and made a plan beforehand. Though we have got into it to take advantage, there should be someone who was set up to catch us off guard at any time”

Everyone was surprised, but only Leowald groaned with admiration.

“Simply because of the thought that they have planned something, rather than an alliance, they had called for a temporary truce. An agreement not to interfere with each other more than necessary”

“So?”

“King Rudolf, from the beginning, doesn’t want to form an alliance at all, simple as that. He thought of nothing but murdering the Demon King at that place. If it’s for the sake of the country, it is necessary to recommend forming an alliance, and he should have borrowed our hands to kill the Demon King. And yet, he didn’t make any objections against my demand at all, and for only killing the demon king, he even dispatched the heroes with us to act as a

decoy to the [Demon Country]. That time, he already.....No, he was already no longer a king for some time”

“ .....

“A grudge perhaps..... a personal grudge is clearly involved in this matter. Therefore, father isn’t assertive to make an alliance with them, right?”

“Ah, so it’s like that. But it’s also a fact that this is a good opportunity. With this, [Xaos] should be cleaned off and moved. However, even after they did this and that, one irregular had ended it all in a massive failure”

Of course, it’s Hiroyuki we are speaking of.

“A king who moves for such a personal grudge cannot lead a country to a better course. The country of the foolish king who doesn’t mind it’s people at all will eventually get corrupted later on”

“Is this the reason why you said something about the country changing, big brother?”

“Yes. The country will change. The people will have no choice but to change. Isn’t that right, Lenion?”

“ .....?”

“Not King Rudolf, but one who love his own country, his own people. If a person who loves peace above all stand on top, this will change the country”

“Is there such a human being?!”

“I don’t know”

Leowald have answered so.

“It has have never been managed in a political situation. However a person who has the power blowing it off completely must take the top, or the country won’t change”

## EPISODE 210: JUDOM RISES!

With King Rudolf having not come back yet, the royalty and the nobles were holding a meeting, discussing about the future measures, but most of it led to unproductive arguments.

Some say that the blunder of the king is caused the people who supported it, some blame the responsibility to each other, some try to solve that responsibility with money of all things, while some at this occasion try to grasp power, everyone has been dyed with their own interests and desires.

But with the king absent, now that the crisis in the country have come, they didn't know when the other countries will attack. They are hesitating to run as a leader and stood on top simply because of the thoughts of taking responsibility when they lost.

I want to stand on top. I want to use power. However, I don't want to fail. I don't want to take responsibility. Such thoughts make up the contents of the meeting.

But rumors flow to the citizens and insecurity is spreading. The soldiers who know the circumstances feared the time when the [Evila] will retaliate. With disorder after disorder, the country had started titlting.

Opening the meeting room door, a person entered. Although all the eyes now became focused on the newcomer, that person give off a sharp glint to the people who are not faced by his dignified behavior.

“How long will you intend to do such futile arguments?!”

He was the guild master, Judom Lankars. Judom grinds his teeth with anger at the nobles supporting the country.

“H-how rude!”

“We are talking right now.....wait, are you Judom Lankars?”

The nobility became aware of the identity of Judom Lankas stiffened.

“You bastard! You, to the king! Why are you not able to bring back the king!”

“Yes, that’s right! You who is the guild master should have given priority to the king’s life who was carrying the country in his shoulders above all!”

“It’s because of you good-for-nothing that we’re fighting in this situation!”

They really say what they want on him. But Judom does not feel anger for such words. Under this kind of situations, normally, other people won’t be able to stomach their attitudes which put blame on others.

Judom opened his eyes with fury, lifts his right foot, and then stomped the floor.

THUD!

That moment, from the center of the impact a ripple extended and greatly shook the room. A person with no self-confidence would have collapsed being unable to stand that alone.

“Wh-what.....!?”

Someone was heard muttering that.

“.....I want to ask something”

All of the eyes turned to Judom as he opened his mouth. Everyone fell silent and stared at him, dumbfounded.

“Is there someone who has the mind to mend the inclination of this country?”

“Why of course there is!”

“That’s right! They are the nobles given power to support this

country!”

“To begin with, why are you saying that our meeting is useless? That is what we are discussing all about in the first place!”

Though each of them have their own opinions, the persuasive power could not be felt on each and everyone of them.

“Hasn’t the information reached you already? That the king has undergone complete change”

Everybody went silent to those words. He considered this silence as a yes.

“In addition the cabinet minister, you have been aware of the commanding officer dying on the spot, right?”

“.....”

“This country has tilted in a big way right now. So, in order for you to correct that, you did this meeting....you said?”

“Y-Yes, that’s right.....”

“Then why doesn’t anyone issue instructions! The soldiers are restless, making all the people wrapped up in insecurity right now! Simply because of such situation, you who should be taking the initiative should lead everyone proactively!”

Almost all of them have averted their eyes from Judom’s filled with spirit.

“Making loud disputes in a small room, what can you change with that! If you still have the pride of representing the country, how about extending that feeble arms of yours to the people!”

It was a sound argument. No one can argue back, only being able to gush out the sweat from their foreheads.

“.....Anyway, you lot. You want to succeed in life, but you are scared of failing under your command, is that what you mean?”

“s-such reason.....we never think such a thing.....”

His voice as completely trembling. He was also exactly thinking the same.

“You want to rise up, but the responsibility is too heavy for you. That’s why you want to let somebody bear the brunt, so desperate to snatch profits from the back.....am I right?”

“H-how rude! We cannot do such a thing! In the first place the country isn’t that much weak and, in this way, arguing important matters.....”

“Shut up you cowards!”

He stomps the floor and everyone received the impact once again. Most of them are screaming while clinging to the table.

“Did you say I should have given priority to the life of the king? Wrong! The thing that you should protect the most is the country! The country that cannot exist without its people! If it’s not possible to move for the sake of the people, then what kind of country is that in the first place!”

“Hii!”

At his wit’s end, the person in argument with Judom flinched.

“Decide it here! To those who want to stand on the top of this country now, raise the hand of the person who would dare to give instructions to all!”

Then, to that people who are in the place, they can only watch each other’s complexions. It seems that no one wants to take the initiative to become the substitute of the king after all.

Surely, rising on top of a country in crisis is a critical situation, so the responsibility of defending the country will go to the top. And they are scared of it.

(.....is this the limit of what you can do?.....)



It's truly saddening. How long will this country remain so weak? Rather than seeking the smiles as they look their eyes at the future, these people only think of obtaining tomorrow's small change.

(Rudolf.....is this really the current state of the country that you established.....?)

He remembered the face of his close friend who completely changed as he grinds his teeth.

He then beats the table, making everyone startled.

"I know what you are feeling right now, but I'll say this once again. The qualifications of carrying the country's back depends your hands!"

And let out an overpowering bloodlust, coercing them.

"If you still remain being afraid, you will save nothing! This is something important! Even if it's difficult and painful to compare, you cannot protect anything if you run away!"

Once again, the nobles looked at each other.

"So If you think of raising the country up even a little and be recognized, go all out and display that fighting spirit of yours, you dullards!"

This also, even though he himself came from the common folk, he passed his anger at them, but felt disgusted at the nobles who didn't even feel the drive to retort away.

".....is that all you can answer?"

Even after he looked at them who turned their heads to each other restlessly, a short sigh spills forth.

".....I see. Then you protect your own house. You are fools whom want to be looked after, but, I guess you can protect your own family. If you cannot do it.....then you can sleep with the other people who can, can't you?"

When Judom finished his speech, Well, the captain of the nation's second armed forces appears from behind. And after bowing quickly,

"I have a report to all of you. This is a message from the queen"

Whether that is expected or not, the people whose complexions have improved came out. Perhaps they are thinking that the queen would protect themselves.

"This is a strict order from her majesty. Become everyone's leader and take responsibility to raise this country.....I appoint you, Judom Lankas-dono"

"Wha!?"

The people asked again as if doubting their ears, but,

"She decided to entrust the full power of the country to Judom. This is the letter"

He opened the paper which is held in his hand. The signature of the queen was written there too. Knowing that this is real, everyone turned pale.

".....the truth is, I really believe that there was actually a person who is more suitable than me here, but....."

He himself is of common blood to the last drop. Even though he has the title of the Guild Master, he came out to a place no one could reach. Therefore, he thought that a noble with reliable power should stand to the top, or so he thought.

However, to entrust it to any of the person here is impossible.

"This is sad.....though you should have been the same nobles who struggled for the sake of these people in the first place....."

Having a shadow on his expression, he tightened his face and immediately turned back. Then, he spoke his last words without facing them any longer.

“I’ll do something about this. To show my gratitude to my own country!”

To them who fell silent, Judom steps out of the room, being stared by without saying anything. Well gave a light bow too, and also went away.

After that, Judom gathered his reliable friends and first decided to strengthen the defense of the country. He himself takes the lead, goes out of the town proactively and informs the truth to the citizens.

Though if it is to avoid confusion, perhaps he should not talk of it in the first place, but since the nobles couldn’t believe it, he wanted the people to have a sense of crisis even a little.

Though he decided that he will protect them even if it costs his own life supposed the danger approaches, still, he isn’t confident that he cannot protect everyone as possible. For this reason, he wanted to do something for the people, too, in order to remove their insecurities even a little. Not shutting inside the castle and leaving the citizens alone, but facing them and giving them instructions is important.

Although many are confused with the attitude of Judom at first, gradually, they were able to put their trust in him. Thinking about it, in case of emergency, Judom always stood in the battlefront and became the symbol for everyone. Therefore everyone realizes that Judom is reliable.

And as for the soldiers, feeling admiration for his splendid leadership ability, Well together with Judom worked hard to meet their expectations.

(Rudolf, I don’t know what you have thought about, but this country, I won’t let you kill it)

He turned his eyes with all determination to the sky.

**[Lnwnepubs.wordpress.com](http://Lnwnepubs.wordpress.com)**